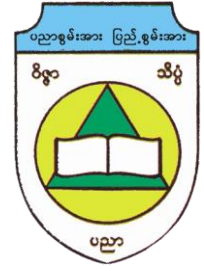


JOURNAL OF THE MYANMAR ACADEMY OF ARTS AND SCIENCE



Myanmar(Literature)

Vol. XVIII, No.6A, August, 2020

Myanmar Academy of Arts and Science

Journal of the Myanmar Academy of Arts and Science

Vol. XVIII, No.6 A

Contents

Myanmar (Literature)

Sr. No.	Title	Page
၁	ချောစုမာဝင်း၊ အလင်္ကာနယ်နိမိတ်အတွင်းရှိ စလေဦးပုညနှင့် ရှိတ်စပီးယား	၁
၂	ကြင်သာမြင့်၊ လယ်တီဆရာတော်ကြီး၏ ဩဝါဒတေးထပ်များ	၁၅
၃	ထွေးအိဝင်း၊ မြန်မာကျောက်စာများလာ သာသနာရေးဆိုင်ရာလေ့များ	၂၇
၄	ဇာနည်လွင်၊ ၂၀ ရာစုခေတ်နှောင်းမှ စာရေးဆရာမနှစ်ဦး၏ အတွေးအမြင် ဝတ္ထုတန်ဖိုးပုဒ် သုံးသပ်ချက်	၄၁
၅	အိအိဖြိုးနိုင်၊ အောင်သင်း၏ ထောင့်ရှားအတွေး ရသစာတမ်းများ လေ့လာချက်	၆၃
၆	မောင်မောင်ခင်၊ ရှုမဝမဂ္ဂဇင်းမှ ကျေးဇူးသိတတ်ခြင်းနှင့်ဆိုင်သောပုံပြင်များ လေ့လာချက်	၇၅
၇	အေးသော်တာ၊ ဇော်ဂျီ၏ ရှေးခေတ်ပုဂံပြည်ကဗျာတို့မှ စံသွေခြင်း	၉၅
၈	နှင်းနှင်းရည်၊ မြန်မာအက်ဆေးများ၏ အမည်ပေးခြင်းအတတ်ပညာ	၁၁၁
၉	ခင်ဆွေမြင့်၊ ကုန်းဘောင်ခေတ် မင်းနန်းစည်စေ့ချင်းများမှ ထူးခြားချက်များ	၁၂၇
၁၀	ရန်ငြိမ်းပိုင်၊ မင်းလူ၏ဝတ္ထုတိုများမှ ဇာတ်လမ်းနှင့်ဇာတ်ဆောင် ဆက်သွယ် ဖန်တီးမှု	၁၄၉
၁၁	အိအိမွန်၊ ပြည်သူချစ်သော အနုပညာသည်များစာအုပ်မှ လူထုဒေါ်အမာ၏ ရေးဟန်	၁၆၅
၁၂	အောင်နေမျိုး၊ မြန်မာ မဟာဂီတစာပေလာ ဘဝသရုပ်ဖော်အဖွဲ့	၁၇၇
၁၃	ခင်ညိုအောင်၊ မင်းသုဝဏ်၏ ကဗျာများလာ စာဆို၏စေတနာအမြင်	၁၉၁
၁၄	သူဇာအေး၊ ရန်ကုန်ဘွဲ့ဆွေ၏ ရသဆိုင်ရာ သဘောတရားများ လေ့လာချက်	၂၀၃
၁၅	ညိုညိုစိုး၊ ဦးပုည၏ပြဇာတ်များမှ စကားသုံးဟန်လေ့လာချက်	၂၁၇
၁၆	ခင်သန်းဌေး၊ အမိန့်တော်ပြန်တမ်းများမှ စာပေထိန်းသိမ်းမှုဆိုင်ရာများ	၂၂၉
၁၇	ခင်အုန်းမြင့်၊ ဖေမြင့်၏ဝတ္ထုတိုများမှ သရော်ဟန်	၂၄၅
၁၈	အေးမြင့်ခိုင်၊ သခင်ဘသောင်း၏ တိုင်းပြည်ရန်သူပြဇာတ်မှ ဇာတ်ဆောင်	၂၅၉

Sr. No.	Title	Page
	စရိုက်များ လေ့လာချက်	
၁၉	သီတာထွန်း၊ လင်္ကာရည်ကျော်၏ ဘဝသရုပ်ဖော် ဝတ္ထုတိုများလေ့လာချက်	၂၇၅
၂၀	ခင်နှင်းအောင်၊ အမေ့ရှေးစကားဆောင်းပါးများမှ လူထုဒေါ်အမာ၏လေသံ	၂၉၁
၂၁	မင်းမင်းသန်း၊ မောင်ထင်၏ နဖူးစာဝတ္ထုတိုမှ စံသွေခြင်းများ ဆန်းစစ်ချက်	၃၀၁
၂၂	မိုးမိုးအေး၊ ကလေးဝမြို့ မြန်မာ့ရိုးရာလောင်းလှေပြိုင်ပွဲတွင် သီဆိုလေ့ရှိသော တေးကဗျာများ	၃၁၅
၂၃	ဝင်းမင်းသန်း၊ နောက်ခံဝန်းကျင်နှင့် အနုစိတ်ဖန်တီးမှုအတတ်ပညာ	၃၃၃
၂၄	ဇင်မင်းဦး၊ ဦးမင်းရောင်ဘွဲ့ လေးချိုးကဗျာ ဝေဖန်လေ့လာချက်	၃၄၇
၂၅	သီသီခိုင်ဝင်း၊ ကဗျာရေးသူ၏ အတွေ့အကြုံနှင့် ဖန်တီးမှုရှုထောင့်	၃၅၉
၂၆	သင်းသင်းဆွေ၊ မြသန်းတင့်၏ 'ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သော ဝတ္ထုများမှ စာရေးသူ၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းလေ့လာချက်	၃၇၃
၂၇	ကြည်ကြည်ဝင်း၊ ရခိုင်ရိုးရာ ကျေးလက်ပုံပြင်များမှ အတွေးအမြင်	၃၈၇
၂၈	ဆုလာဘ်ထွေး၊ ခင်ခင်ထူး၏ မအိမ်ကံ ဝတ္ထုရှည်မှ ဇာတ်လမ်းဖန်တီးမှု အတတ်ပညာကို လေ့လာခြင်း	၄၀၃
၂၉	ကျော်သက်ခိုင်၊ ချစ်ဦးညို၏ 'မှူးမတ်များနှင့်တွေ့ဆုံခြင်း' မှ စာရေးသူ၏ အတွေးအမြင်	၄၂၅
၃၀	သင်းသင်းမော်၊ မင်းရဲဒိဗ္ဗဇချင်းမှ နန်းဓလေ့ယဉ်ကျေးမှုဓလေ့များ	၄၄၁
၃၁	စန္ဒာဝင်း၊ ညီပုလေး၏ 'ထက်မြက်တဲ့ဓားသွားပေါ်က ချိုမြေ့ပျားရည်စက်' ဝတ္ထုရှည်မှ လူနေမှုဓလေ့များ	၄၅၉
၃၂	ဇင်မာသန်း၊ မြေမှုန်လွင်၏ 'စက္ကူလေယာဉ်ပျံ' ဝတ္ထုတိုမှ ဇာတ်ကွက် ချိတ်ဆက်ပုံ	၄၇၃
၃၃	အေးစုငြိမ်း၊ တက္ကသိုလ်ကျောင်းက ငွေလမင်းသီချင်းကို စာပေရှုထောင့်မှ လေ့လာချက်	၄၈၃
၃၄	အေးအေးစန်း၊ ဒေါက်တာနန္ဒမာလာဘိဝံသ၏ စိတ်တည်ဆောက်မှုဆိုင်ရာ တရားစာပေများလေ့လာချက်	၄၉၃
၃၅	မင်းမော်သန့်၊ ရန်ကုန်ဘဆွေ၏ စစ်ဝတ္ထုများလေ့လာချက်	၅၁၅
၃၆	မြင့်မြင့်ခိုင်၊ ရာသီဘွဲ့လူးတားကဗျာများမှ ဝိသေသများ	၅၂၉
၃၇	ဥမ္မာ၊ မန္တလေးမြို့ရှိ လက်မှုလုပ်ငန်းများလေ့လာချက်	၅၄၃
၃၈	ခင်မာအောင်၊ ရှမ်းနီ(ဝါ)တိုင်းလိုင်လူမျိုးစုတို့၏ စကားပုံနှင့်ဆိုရိုးစကားများ လေ့လာချက်	၅၅၇

Edition

2020, August, 1000 Copies

Copyright

Ministry of Education

Published by

Dr Aung Min (00322) Chairman, Journal Publication Committee,
Myanmar Academy of Arts and Science

ISSN 2520-0186
LCCN 2003-323143

Printed by

U Win Aung (00171), Manager,
Universities Press, Yangon, Myanmar

t v ume , erw t wi;^{1/2} pav0;ynEi ^{1/2}wpy; , m;
acsmprmi;¹ at miaomi;²

pmwr; t u:0;

oaAm"mvum&u tajccaom jrerm tvum ur; rsm; vm tvumoabmw&m; rsm; Ei
Rhetorical Devices t*vytvum en; emrsm; u Ei; , Oavvmaomtcg tvum \
oabmw&m; e , erw rsm; u pppEicygon/ wppwpcacom pmaytzlu tvum [
owrww\i pum; u ajyyprijzp &eaomvn;aumi;? teuuqe;lu , rjzp&e aom
vn;aumi; zew;xm; onweqm qiroabmyg&on/ jrerm tvum ur; rsm; Ei
t*vytvumen; emrsm; u qupyEi; , Oavvmaomtcg &oEpoujci; u ay; Ei
on tvumrev\i Ei; , Owipm; rjzpci;? tpptreavmuwir^{1/2}&jci;? a^{1/2}ajymi;
o;jci;jzi tcutwel oabmaqmi jci;? xi^{1/2}m; ay: vir^{1/2}jci; [aom tajcc
oabmw&m; abmirsm; twi; üom^{1/2}ayon/ ppmwr; wi pav0;ynEi ^{1/2}wpy; , m; w
zew;xm; aom tvum rsm; on xoabmw&m; e , erw twi; ü^{1/2}ly;? &o
Epoujci; u ay; Eialumi; Ei; , Oavvmwijxm; on/

aomcupum; v; rsm; - Oyrm? orm"*P? r"&wm*P? personification,
alliteration, assonance

e'ge;

pmq(0g)pma&o \pwu; Ei bompum; ajymow\ \ pwu; t&tvum jzpxe;r
ta&twuon tq;r^{1/2}u; , 0e;Eiayon/ acwtququvom; w\ \ pwu;? b0
tawtuB u? pwvy^{1/2}m; cpm; rwdalumi pmaye , Ei bompum; e , wwi top
topaom tvumw\ ay: ayguaernomjzpon/ wpen; qaom vom; w\ pmay a&om;
aeoa^{1/2}? bompum; ajymqaeoa^{1/2}? tvum [on ^{1/2}aernomjzpon/ p pmwr; ü
tvumjzpxe;r ta&twu\ e , erwu uelwjc; r [wb? tvum \ oabmw&m;
e , erwu pppwijjci; jzpon/ p o pppwijj&mw i pav0;ynEi ^{1/2}wpy; , m; w
zew; aom tvum rsm; on xoabmw&m; e , erw twi; üom^{1/2}alumi; wijxm; yg
on/

1/ tvum \ e , erw rsm;

&opmaywp&ywiyg0iaom tvum \ e , erwu oabmw&m; abmiw\ jzi
yi; jcm; ovrwrnjzpon/ wppwpcacom pmaytzlu]] tvum}} [owrww\i xtzt
on pum; u ajyyprijzpap&evn;aumi;? teuuqe;lu , r jzppap&evn;aumi;
zew;xm; on weqm qiroabmyg&on/

¹ a'g uwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pmXme? en; ynmwuov? (r tyi)

² ygarmu? (iir;)? jrerm pmXme? &eue taemuyi; wuov

weqm qirallumi jzpvmaom tvumon Ei; , Owipm; jci; oabmyg&on/
 tvumon 'lavmuwitppter^{1/2}&yg/ tpptrerpjzpyg/ tvumonwpae&mr
 wpae&mo^U a^{1/2}ajymi; o; x; m; jci; jzi tcutwel oabma qmi&on/ tvumon
 pmzwo t m; oly; o m; talumi; t&mrsm; rwpqi roao; aom talumi; t&mu em; vn
 cpm; Eiap&e xi^{1/2}m; ay: vir&&on/ xoabmw&m; e, erwtwi; zew; x; m; aom
 tvumw^Uon &opmaywp&y\ tvazmxwrw^Uoe (Aesthetic Function) uauyepm
 xr; aqmi Eiayon/

11/ tvumon Ei; , Owipm; roabmyg jci;

tvumonygVpum;]]tvum&}} rqi; ouvmon/]]tqiweqm}} [t"ym, &
 on/ tvumon weqm qijci; jzpon [aom teuziyEiywouí ynm^{1/2}i
 to; o; u atmuygtwi; relquon/

'*e0; xe; jri \]]ygVoua0g [m&t b"me}} wi

]]ynm^{1/2}w^UEpouatmi weqm qíí a&om; z^Uqen;? , i; ola&om;
 xm; on tz^Utvum? tvumu jyqaomur; tqiweqm}}

(xe; jri? 1968? 409) [vn; aumi;?

v , w0; aum0'u]]u0bm&wur;}} wi -

]]tvumen; [on pmppmu; to; tEe; tz^Urs; rm jzpap? pum; ajymq&mr
 jzpap? vrm t0w? awmi; rmtuy [aom pum; uo^U tqiweqmijyi
 jc , o rrs; aywn;}} (aum0'? 1973? 37) [vn; aumi;?

^{1/2}ipE0&u]]tvumpt r}}wi

]]tvum [on ynm^{1/2}i w^Uz^Uqaom o'gvum&? twmvum& Epyg; yi
 jzpon}} (pE0&? 1995? 20) [vn; aumi;?

&euebaqu]]ye; oiou; a&en; x; um;}} wi -

]]tvum [on tjypui; aom trs; or; u y; z&wemw^Ujzi t0wweqm
 qiouo^U tjypui; aomz^Uqjci; u yívyatmi ou; weqm qijci; y}}
 (baq? 1966? 65) [vn; aumi;? to; o; ziqluon/

xoaAm"mvum&u tajccaom jrerm tvumur; q&mw^Uu tvumon Ei; , O
 wipm; on weqm qiroabm rygrjzpyg&jci; u to; o; relquouo^U taemuwi;
 tvumen; emur; rsm; uvn;]]tvum}} rev\ itouomru? teuuyg wpen;
 r [wwpen; weqm qixm; jci; jzpalumi; atmuygtwi; relquon/

[, &a½m u -

]]tvumen;[on pmzwow\pwxwi y&yjzpay:ap&e pum;v;rsm;u rv
teuxuveaom t m½cpm;rrsm;jzi weqm qixm;on/ pwu;rsm;xywn
rtjzpOyrm? ½yuw\uweqm qizly; pmzwo\ tjr it m½Ei t llum; t m½w\U
qaqmi í Epouz , cpm;rjz pap&e Asn; oausmjci;? jrn optvumponw\U
weqm qizlygon/}} (Shaw, 1905, 160) [vn;aumi;?

auwa0;v u -

]]tvumen;[on rvpum;v;a0g [m&\ t"ym,u ziqEionxur sm;jym;
aomalumi r½rjzpvtyaom 0aoovuPmu t"ym, ziq&e cucygon/}}
[qaomvn; tvumen;[on Oyrm? ½yuw\Uoaoom tvumpum;w\U
quE, ae½ru? pmaytz\wpc\ tEynmEivn; ouqiaeon/ xtvum
pum;wi Epurxyz\qjci;rsm;vn; ½wwygon/}} (Wales, 2001, 152-153)
[vn;aumi;?

uuovi;armem u -

]]tvumen;[on pum;v;w\ rv t"ym, xu pwu;jzi t"ym, ziqru
xi½m;atmiqupyrrsm;? Ei; , Orrsm;jy\vyxm;aom ½yu? Oyrm? ou½jywi
pm;jci;Ei two , 0wu0\ aom tvumpum; jzpon/ xtvum pum;wlon
uAsmbom pum;wi r½rjzpvtyayon/}} (Morner, 1998, 83) [vn;aumi;
to;o;re\q cluon/

txuygta½\wi;? taemuwi;ynm½ito;o;\ tqtre\lrm;u pppv(i
weqm qiroabmygaom tvumon wpcEiwpc Ei; , 0wipm; xm;c;u jzpayon/
xEi; , 0wipm;c;uon pum;uajyyprijz pap&eomru? teuuvn; qe;u , r
jz pap&eweqm qi&aumi;? uAsmwpn; &opmaywi tvumweqm qiron r½rjz
[q&avmuatmi ta&ygaumi; xi½m;vmon/ xotvumon Ei; , 0 wipm;r
oabmyg&on[aom e,erwwpcu xi½m;ap&e pav0;ynEi ½wpy; , m;w\U
pmayrsm;jzi pppwijyrnjzpon/ ue;abmiacw pmqawm pav0;ynon]]vri;
xuEpav;om}} aw;xywi cpore;uav;\ ruEmon vri;xuomatmi lunvi
at;jrray;Eialumi; Oyrm tvumjzi weqm qia&z\xm;on/

om"u/ /]]½pz, y0i;v\? vri;xuEpav;om? at;jrv\wum? jri&oaz
ouomw , ? a½r;ruEm lunve;v\av;/}} (yn? 0;? 1991? 92)

x tvumto;alumi re;uav;\ ruEm lunpi0i;yrui xi½m;ap½ru pmq\U
cpjrwE;ruvn; ay:viapon/ x\jyi]]q'eqiri;0w\}}wi rz&m;ob'g\ ruEm
awmuaivri;Ei xywijywipm;a&z\xm;on/

om"u/ /]]a½o;&jc , ? ||um&yv , rm? & , umarmum? ruEmai v? ½iyyEi?
cir0r;ajrmuyg avawm/}} (yn? 0;? 1991? 146)

ptzłwi]]ruEmai v}} [aom ½yut vumtżłumi rz&m; \ 0i;ylunvi
aomrsuEmon Epouz , ay:vivmon/ xłtw &wpy; , m; \]]½r , Ei *ł;v , u}}
jyZmwwivn; *ł;v , u \ x;jcm;ay:viao m t vu 0yrm t vumrsm;Ei ci;Ei;złq
xm;on/

om"u/ /]]Against the darkness like a jeweled earring hanging against the cheek of an
African.}} (Shakespeare, 2013, 35)

]]tmz&ue vrn;tr;or; em;ryeqixm;w em;uwv or[m ntarmirm
x;x;jcm;jcm;vyaew , /}} (oe;xe;? a'guwm?2013?35)

]]she outshines the other women like a white dove in the middle of crows.}}

]]u;rn;aw t v , rma&muaew q;Ei; vjzłaz;włcł;jł i u v}}
(oe;xe;? a'guwm? 2013? 35)

vrn;tr;or; \ em;wiyeqixm;aom em;uwav;on ntarmiwi
awm uawmuyyvaeouł *ł;v , uonvn; jriowłai;arm&avm uatmi vy
oav;jzłłumi; wipm;złqxm;ygon/ xłji]]u;rn;aw t v , rma&muaew q;Ei;
vjzłaz;włcł;jł i u v}} [aom0yrm t vumłłumi *ł;v , uEi , 0vłi t jcm;re;uav;
włonu;rn;włłł t u;n;weom;alumi;? oławmuyay:viao m t vw&m;u
r , 0Eib t ½;ay;&łrjzłłumi; xi½m;vmygon/ x t vumon *ł;v , ułwiw ,
vyyuomru? t jcm;re;uav;wł ½yq;ruyg? xiomjriom jzpom;apaomEpzu
om;0yrm t vumweqm qirjzpayon/

o&ejri&ev , uaom ½yqi;t*gwłuay:viap&e wipm;a&złoułł jriawł
&ecucaom pwcpm;rwłuvn; oomxi½m;ap&e t vumrsm;Ei weqm qia&zł
on/ pav0;ynu]]ułwce;wiaygi;ygr , }}aw;xywi cpo tay:xm;aom xm0&opm
w&m;u-

]]au;o0 jru , a&mirm ? vcawmijzpv n;/

[wrawmi&yx? vy0vłyap/

y½uawmi? i uau m i jzpapawm/

zuaEmicp be;urao?

aryvł c½½nap/

oraq omui? yg&ropmci? , r;vłr , i}} (yn?0;? 1991? 91)

[aom two , 0wt vumrsm; Eiweqmqi a&zuxm; on/ jrpr; a&miau; iuav; u
r; c; a&miciuav; jzpm; jci;? vyuaumi; uiwiyaeci;? aruyic^{1/2}u ^{1/2}nom; jci;
on rnontcgr\ jzpEirnr[wouo\? cpo tay:xm;aom opmw&m; wlon
rnontcgr\ rajymi; vEialumi; xt vumweqmqi rrm; alumi xi^{1/2}m; apon/

^{1/2}wpy; , m; on rjriEiaomcpijci; \ ^{1/2}ive; wu<uru ausmi; rtriyevm&
aomalumi wu<u^{1/2}ive; aeaomuav; i , Ei ci; Ei; wipm; a&zuxm; on/

om"u/ /]]A lover goes toward his beloved as enthusiastically as a school boy leaving
his books, but when he leaves his girlfriend, he feels as miserable as a schoolboy on his
way to school}}

]]cspo^{1/2}&muom; wltcg ausmi; oiwe; uijevmw uav; wpa , muv wu<u
^{1/2}ive; ygw , / cpoqu ccmvm&iawm ausmi; oiwe; om; &w uav;
wpa , muv pwyiye; vygw , /}} (oe; xe; a'guwm? 2013? 54)

xolaom wipm; zUqrwlaumi taumitxnr^{1/2}aom cpijci; w&m; \ wu<u
aysm^{1/2}iruvn; aumi;? Or; en; t m; i , ruvn; aumi; Epouz , awEion/ xlaumi
&opmaywiyyaom tzlwpcon Ei; , Owipm; weqm qixm; jci; ^{1/2}v\i]]tvum}} [
qxuayon/

1^{1/2}/ tvumon 'lavmuwi tppt rer^{1/2}&jci;

&opmaywp&wyiyyaom tvumon 'lavmuEi rui; aomvn; 'lavmu
wi tppt rer^{1/2}&yg/ tppt rerjzp&yg/ xoabm uxi^{1/2}m; ap&e erwyzew; rEi
ywouon aZm* \ relqc uuu; um; wijyrnjzpon/

]]pma&q&mon avmutrt&m? vUtrt&mw n; [aom' lavmuu a&on
vn; r[w/ 'lavmuEiui; í a&onvn; r[w/ 'lavmuEi!u!aom
talumi; alumi olüpwvy&m; r wpccjzpv mly; onaemu xpwyv^{1/2}m; r
wpcczijriaom? oaom? pwjripwo yoPme(0g)' lavmu \ erwyu
a&jci; jzpon}} (aZm*? 1998? 109)

xoU 'lavmuwi tpptre r^{1/2}aomvn; ^{1/2}oa , mi? tppt rer[waom vn;
[woa , mi? tppt rerjzpaomvn; jzpoa , miweqm qily; y&owcpm; Epou
vucEiatmijyjci; on tvumoabmyijzpon/ tvum \ tppt rer[waomvn;
zwo? emow Epou vucwwonoabmu ynm^{1/2}iwu atmuygtwi; relqc
on/ Ov [mreu -

]]tvumweqm qir[on pwEv; u , u&pruapaom tEynm/ y&owu
 , unEpourjzpaom tEynmjzpon/}} (Harmon, 1999, 385) [vn; aumi;?

uuovi;armemu –

]]tvumweqm qir[on pum;ajym&mwí or[w pma&;om;&mwí em;axmí o
or[w pmzwy&ow\ Epou, lunru jzpapaom tEynmizpon/}} (Morner,
1998, 187) [vn;aumi;? to;o;relqluon/

xyn^{m½}iB;rm;on tvum\ 'lavmuwi tpptrer^½aomvn; Epour
ay;pr;Eionoabmu relqluon/ x^ualumi 'lavmuwi tpptrer^½aomvn;
Epouz, jzpon tvumoabmu atmuygom"u rsm;wiawEion/

om"u/ /]]O;ynu jrermw\ ½wpy; , m; [í 0;a½u;l;uqclon/}}
(aZm*?2004?105)

p0gustqi0yrmon 'lavmutwi;½ vom;wp0;Eiwp0; \ waom *P&n
wpcpu xywiyzqxm;ji;jzpon/ xtzrsm;wiyg0iaom]]tEi;c}}Ei]]tEi;}} w
on jiyavmuwi½on tpptrevom;rm; jzpaomvn;]]tEi;c}}on]]tEi;}}
jzpom;ji;r[way/]]tEi;c}}on]]tEi;}}rjzpom;Eiyg/ wpen;q&v\i]]pav0;yn}}
[aom]]tEi;c}} y*von]]½wpy; , m;}} [aom]]tEi;}} y*v t jzp rajymi;om;Eiyg/
x^ualumi tvum[on 'lavmuwi tpptrejzprom;aom ci;Ei;wipm;cuom
jzpygon/

x^uji' lavmuwi tpptrerjzpeiaomoabmon &opmaywi tvum weqm
qirtjzp yg0ivmaomtcg Epouvucz, aumi;alumi;? pav0;yn\]]jyeay;
arwmpm}} wiawEion/

om"u/ /]]&went qc? ewo"m xri;yü? wpyavmu?
a½rpion? a&m0i í oygv\i? o"mbwb;at?
ar;csiwi;ar;apawm? a&t rapm telp í?
wuwpvu&awmon/}} (yn? 0;? 1991 ? 17)

txuygom"uwi wpyavmu]]rpi}}on ewo'g xri;ytwi; trewpu ,
0iom;ji;r[wb? pmq0;ynu wum0;qe; \ tajmtq? tij\trrm;u raueyaom
cpm;cursm;ay:atmi teuweqm qiz\xm;ji;jzpon/ &wpy; , m; \]]½r, Ei
*s;v , u}} jyZmwwivn;? avmuwi rjzpeiaomt&rm;u jzpeioa, miwipm;zqx
m;on/

om"u/ /]]cpoawpwa&m u , a&mwu , aygyg;ly; aysm½ivmlyq&i yiur|i
ay:rmvn; vr;av\muEiw , / aEO;&lav½;e\ ½uvion;Eiw , /}}

(ciu; avm&i) (oe;xe;? a'guwm? 2013? 77)

“lovers are so light they can walk on a spider web floating on a summer breeze”
(Shakespeare, 2013, 77)

**t xuygom"u t& yiur{ia:wi vr;av{mujci;? aEO; \av½;Ei½u v ijci;
wlon jiyavmwirjzpEiaomvn;? xtwo,0w t vumrsm;allumicpjci;
w&m;on t&m&muau smv m;Eiaom tpr;ow½allumi; xi½m;vmon/ xlyi cpo
twupe{pm;&aomtcpu xi½m;ap&e jriv, ov, aomt&mrsm;Ei wipm;a&z
ygon/ *sl;v, uu cpoEiomawqci&v{i rnont&murqvyEialumi;? ciu;
avm&iuajmaompum;rsm;wi 'lavmuü jy&ecucaomt&mrsm;jzi weqmqixm;
on/**

om"u/ “you can tell me to jump off the battle posts of any tower, or to walk down the crime-ridden streets of a slum or let me to sit in a field full of poisonous snakes. Chain me up with wild bears” (Shakespeare, 2013, 125.)

**]]wynawm u opwyar{mpiay:u cecci;Eiygw, / v worm;aw u:upm; w
vr;uav{muci;Eiygw, / araw½w ui;v, rmvn; xir, / Ou0½i;aw
½wvavmic{ x ou{;cw{xm;Eiw, /}}**

(oe;xe;?a'guwm? 2013? 125)

**t xuygom"u t& ar{mpiay:ucec{ci;? artjyn½aom ui;v,wi vr;
av{mujci;? Ou0½i;rsm;½aomavmic{ xwi ou{;cw{ci;rsm;on 'lavmwirjzp
Eiay/ olaomt vumjzi weqmqia&zUojzi? *sl;v, uontcpallumi t&m&m
&iqi&aom ow½otjzpxi½m;ly; Epouz, jzpvmon/ xallumit vumrev{i
'lavmuwi tpptrer½&? tpptrerjzp&[qci;jzpon/ 'lavmuwi tpptre
r½jci;? tpptrerjzpjci;on t vum \oabmw&m; wp&yjzpayon/**

1/3/ t vumon a½{ajymi;o;jci;jzi tcutwel oabmaqmijci;

**t vumwp&ywiyg0iaom ci;Ei;wipm;jci;rsm;on wpae&mrwpae&moU
a½{ajymi;o;jci;jzi tcutwel oabmaqmiayon/ wppwp&mwí ½wwjzpwwaom
oabmwpcu o;½;o;p0r[won t jcm;wppwp&mwíwipm;um t vumwp&yu
zew;Eiayon/**

o'gvum&zew;rwiyg0ion]]orm"*P}} oabmEi ywou í ½iurm&u-

]]0w{wpyg;? oabmrsm;u? wjcm;0w{? wipm;r? rw½orm"}}(urm&?½i?1958?209)

**[vn;aumi;? 0vs[mreu t vumur;vm orm"*Poabmou0ion
ygqeezau;½i; Personification u -**

**]]vom;wU \tjy{tr? oabmvuPm? ÓP&nÓPao;? pwvy½m; cpm;ryprsm;
½aeaoomow0g or[w t&m0w{rsm; \yoPme}} (Harmon,1999,385)**

[vn;aumi;ziqon/

x_ljy_i t vumweqm qirwiyg₀ion jrnopt vumoabmu umwum₀,
u -

]] t oEiqupya_{eaom} en;emwpc/ erwytr_{sl};tpm; wpcjzpon/
jrnoppum;v;rsm;on t ouwyxm;cu jzpon}} (Colwell,1968,34.)

[ziqxm;on/

xoabmw&m;rsm;ay:rwní t vumon o;_½;o;p0jzpon oabmw&m;rsm;u
o;_½;o;p0r [wb? wppwpc_{aom}ou_½ouray:wi ajymi;a_½o;ly; wipm;ji;jzpay
on/ wpen;t;m;zi t vumweqmqi&mwi ou_½vom; \oabmu ourwi
vn;aumi;? vr[waom tjc;m;ou_½ow0gtr_{sl};r_{sl};wi vn;aumi;? ou_½ow0g
wpr_{sl};r_{sl}; \oabmu ourwi vn;aumi;? tr_{sl};r_{sl};a_½ajymi;o;Eion/ xoua_½ajymi;
o;ji;oabmjzi &oEpoujci;ay;aom t vumwu zew;Eialumi; atmuygom"u
rsm;wi awEion

pav0;ynu]]otru;}} 0wwi tou(80)ausmr tvljy_{ci}&aom otru;
 \apwemxuoeyu t vumrsm;Eiweqmqi a&zuxm;on/

om"u/ /]]temxyPaom? arniyPaom? 0omcgao_m? r , cgaom? aemZmemr? w
rob;/ "e"ejryvci? ausmuru_½iwlon igocipuawmatmur jrlavmur
alu;rxu/}} (yn? 0;? 1991 ? 17)

pom"uwi _½iom&yw&u ,awmjrwu qr;vyau_i;ci&aomallumi rnon
ur(*_½rpupwrnewu_{uaeaom}otru; \ [eEitowu jria , mi llum;a , miap
on/]]jrlavmu}} [aom Oyrmtvumtzauumi jiyavmuwi_½aom tz;we
ausmuru &wemwlon t_½ijrw \z0g;awmatmua&mu om;aomtcg ausmuru
&wemw \ wez;aysmuom;ly;? jrlreavmuyi wez;r_½allumi;ay:viivmygon/ qi;&
Ecmve;aom b0jzpaomvn; _½iom&yw&u ,awmjrwu;u vlci&aomallumi
rnonur(*_½rpuaom? rnon t&mr rruarmawmaom otru; \ o'grmeon
xi_½m;vmon/ jiyavmu_½ rx;qe;aom jrlreav;on 0w\xotvumtjzp
a&muom;aomtcg Zmwaqmi_½uay:viaply;? &oEpouru cpm;&apon/

_½wpy; , m;u qeuuAsmwi tceuoc;Ei wipm;a&zuxm;on/ rr yiqi
aom t&m&mu]]tce}}u , om;wwonoabmu xi_½m;atmia&zuyggon/

om"u/ / “ Stealing away the treasure of his spring:

For such a time do I know fortify” (Shakespeare’s sonnet, 63)

]] tceuou & t z;rjzwEiwaE0;&moav;u c; , om;ou;y/}}

t xuygom"wiou_½womijvyEion c; , jci;tru taumitxnr_½aom
tcewi ajymi;a_½o;xm;on/ c; , jci; [aom pum;v;a[mi; wpcuo;avo;x r_½
aom taictaeopwpcwi a_½ajymi;o;vuoaomallumi tceuvom;w \ tz;

xuweaom t&rm;u rorom, om;wwon oabmon xi^{1/2}m;vmly; &oEpujci;
u cpm;&apon/ xlyi*sl;v, u \ xe;vi;awmuyaom tvujrivu&aom ^{1/2}r, \
cpm;csuu tvumrsm;Ei weqm qixm;on/

om"u/ / “ It is the east and Juliet is the sun” (Shakespeare,2013,45)

]]*sl;v, u [m a^{1/2}a'gi;n\ aeplumy/}} (oe;xe;?a'guwm? 2013? 45)

om"u/ / “ two of the brightest stars in the whole sky had to go away on business, and
they are asking her eyes to twinkle in their places till they return” (Shakespeare,2013,45)

]]aumi;uiwpcv;rm tawmuyq;euwEprsl;u owlu, pm; urmavmuu;
ut vi;a&miay;ztwu *sl;v, u \ ruv;tpu awmi;yeaelyayg/}} (oe;xe;?
a'guwm? 2013? 45)

xuolyi pav0;ynon cpotay:xm;aom rajymi;von arwmw&m;u
ay:viap&e two, 0wtvumrsm;jzi weqm qia&zlygon/]] "Olu, ajrcap}}
aw;xywi xolaomweqm qiru awEiygon/

om"u/ /]] "Olu, ajrcv? aeyawm aumi;ui/

a^{1/2}vrma'gi;jriap? aygi;rv\icmb;/

eAmer r&ci? b0wi re;pwru;/

vom;Ei ewunmi, ? owbmE0;/

jrausm uzsma&rm u;apawm? raob;wu, /}} (yn? 0;? 1991 ? 17/)

txuygom"uwi cpotay:xm;aom arwmw&m; \ cirmav;euyu ay:vi
ap&e rnontcgr jzprvmEiaom t&rm;Ei wipm;a&zlxm;ygon/ ou^{1/2}wom
jyEipr;on a&u;ji;tiy\ troabmu ourausm uzsmwi a^{1/2}lajymi;o;ji;zi? Opm
w&m; \ cirmav;euron xi^{1/2}m;vmon/

xlyi^{1/2}wpy; , m;on pum;v;rsm;u o;^{1/2}o;pOra^{1/2}lajymi;um talumi;t&mop
ay:wi o;Ee;a&zlaomallumi teuopwxivmon/

om"u/ / “the smiling morning is replacing the frowning night.” Romeo and Lawrence
(Shakespeare, 2013, 41)

]]ruarmiiluwaew n&lae&mrmlly;aew eeuci;a&mu vmyglyvm;/}}

(oe;xe;?a'guwm? 2013? 41)

pom"uwi]]ly;ji;}}]]ruarmiilu\wji;}}won ou^{1/2}womjy\wwji;
jzpaomvn;? xo;aeus pum;a[mi;wu touraomeeuci;Ei ntce[on
t ajctaeopwi ajymi;a^{1/2}um]]ly;aeaomeeuci;}}]]ruarmiilu\waeaomn}} [wipm;

a&zljci;jzi teuopxivmon/ tcptwuromr, m jzpaecomcpm;uron tcptwu lunE;aym^{1/2}irw ar^{1/2}m vip&mjzpvum &oEpouru cpm;&apon/

xalumitvumrev^{1/2}ia^{1/2}ajymi;o;í tcutwe^{1/2}oabmaqmiapci;jzi weqmqiwwayon/ xalumia^{1/2}ajymi;o;jci;jzi tcutwe^{1/2}oabmaqmií weqmqi;jci;on tvum\oabmw&m;wp&yjzpayon/

1^{1/4}/ tvumon pmzwo t m;cpm;em;vnEiap&e xi^{1/2}m;ay:vir^{1/2}&jci;

&opmaywp&ywi totm;jziao m vn;aumi;? teut m;jziao m vn;aumi;? weqmqixm;aom tvumon pmzwo t m;oly;om; talumi;t&ma [mi;rwpqi? roao;aom talumi;t&mopu tv,wu em;vnEiap&on/ pmq (0g) pma&o wlon p wu;ÓPtvu &opmayrsm;uziq&mwi pmq^{1/2}tcix; Poetic license t&touaom vn;aumi;? teuuaom vn;aumi;? toteuEpyg;v;u aom vn;aumi; weqmqiwwon/ xowe qmqi&mwi pmq^{1/2}tcix;t&rnonaoznrrr;u o;onjzpap? pmzwou em;vnEion/

xpmq^{1/2}tcix;Eiywou í ynm^{1/2}ito;o;u atmu ygtwi;re^{1/2}quon/

[, &a^{1/2}m u -

]]pmq^{1/2}tcix;[on pmq (0g) pma&owu tEynmqi&m tus;oua&mur jzpay:ap&etrsm;oabmwowrwxm;aomyp? pn;r0;pn;ur; tcuttvu? taw;tac:rsm;raozn í zew;aom vwajrmurjzpon/}} (Shaw,1905,291)

[vn;aumi;? 0v s [mreu -

]]pmq^{1/2}tcix;[on yretptp0? pum;v;a^{1/2};cs ,r? um&eor [w toxu r aozn x m;aom pmq^{1/2}lawmi;qcsujzpon/ acwto;o;^{1/2} pmqwi;on pum;ajy\ ^{1/2};pi;aom [eyetr t&mEi pn;ur;wi;luyrrsm;row\ tEynm uvwajrmuapvrjzpon/}}(Harmon, 1999, 396) [vn;aumi;?

auwa0;vu-

]]pmq^{1/2}tcix;[on vwajrmuryijzpon/ pmq^{1/2}trr;rs;wlon acwto;o; wi? bompum;qi&mprsm;jzpon o'g? pum;v; t"ym,wlraozn zew; xm;rjzi uAsmqi&mbompum;u ovrwluon/ (Wales, 2001, 304)

[vn;aumi;? uuovi;armem u -

]]vwajrmuvaompmqEi toptqe;uzew;vaom tEynm^{1/2}iwwu yre pum;v; ptp0rsm;raozn í toxuucsl;azmujci; or [w tjr ium&ewu zew;jci;jy\vyuon/ &oqi&m tus;oua&mur u atmijri ayguajrmuap &e pum;v;toprsm;u wxijci;or [w omrero;awmaom a^{1/2};uon

pum;v;rsm; u to;jy;ci;w\ jy\vyvmluon/} (Morner, 1998,168-169) [vn;aumi; to;o;ziqcon/

xyn^{m½}i to;o; \ t q treU rsm; t& pmq(0g) pma&;owlon &oqi&m tu s; oua&murjzpap&e? o;½;o;p0raoznaomta&;z\wu &opmayorU [w tEynm to;o;wi to;jy\vmuon/ xpmqtci x;t& zew;xm;aom tvumwlon toaoznr Phonological deviation? teuaoznr oabm Semantic Deviation wlou0i vsu½aomvn;? pmzwowu tv ,wu em;vnEialumi;u om"ur sm;jzi pppwiy om;rnjzpon/ pav0;yn a&;aom]]&weme'armue;" wi ri;we;ri; \ be;awmbU two , 0wtvumtzUjzi teuweqm qium a&;zUuygon/

om"u/ /]]wpurmvi? r[mjAa[? v\mua#jzi? qe;ae*P;n? *gxmpí? lu l;cruazm? qvnaomvn;? be;awmuve? taeueu? a0zec;ajrmu? ly;ra&mu vr/}} (yn? 0;? 1991 ? 119)

pom"uwi pmqpav0;ynon ri;we;ri;βu; \ bu;us ,rijrwvaom be;awmu jA[mβu;rsm;yi v\mua#zizU qao m vn; rjynpEialumi; t vetlu l; zUqygon/ ri;we;ri; \ be;awmβu;jrwron]]v\mua#}} [aomt vumpum;alumi teut"ym ,tm;jzi paorjzpaomvn;? 'lavmuwi rjzpEiaomt&mon jzpEi oa ,mi Epouz ,xi½m;ay:vivmygon/

xUjyi½wpy; , m;on cpjci;w&m; \ cere;&cuaomoabmu qelu;ibu teur sm;jzi tvumweqm qia&;zUxm;on/

om"u/ / “Beautiful things mulled together into ugly chaos. Feather of lead, bright smoke, cold fire, sick health, Still waking sleep. That is not what it is!” (Shakespeare, 2013, 15)

]]tc:pqwmvyw ,xiwt&maw a&max;ppn;ly; jzpay:v mwy&r; ywm telm½u;/ cw;uxuvmayr , avxrmviEiatmi aygyg;w\ iuar;awmil tvi;a&mie lawmuyw\ r;c;/ cr;at;ru zew;wr;awmur;v\ a&m*guyaew use;rmr/ E;lum;aep0rm Ep\cluwt yaysmr/ ½aeaomvn; r½ont&m? r½ aomvn; ½aewt&m/}} (oe;xe;?a'guwm? 2013? 15)

txuygom"uwi vyjci;Ei telm½? cw;Ei iuar;? tvi;a&mieir;c;? cr;at;rEir;awmur;v? a&m*guyjci;Ei use;rmjci;? E;lum;jci;Ei tyaysmjci;? ½jci; Eir½jci; [on 0a&m"tvumajrmuaom qelu;ipum;rsm;jzi a&;zUaomalumi cpjci; w&m; \ tpr;½ron ay:vivmon/ xUtw pav0;yn \a&onjz mwwi 0a&m" tvumajrmuaompum;rsm;jzi &oajrmuatmi a&;zUxm;on/

om"u/ /]]qx;awmβu;? wrmo;Ei? cg;pn;0wv?c\yplyu wtyEiw , vjrion pwy;uatmi vygw\ ra&on}} (yn? 0;? 1991 ? 62)

]]pwyu}} [qy;r]von}} [qci;on teuqe;u ,rjzpayly; &oEpou
jci;ucpm;&apon/ xUtw]]ol*P;oir, }} aw;xywi Asn;orm; ausm Alliteration í
o&orm;uausm Assonance íxi^{1/2m};ay:viatmi a&zUjci;ontvum weqm qir
wpr<;yi jzpayon/

om"u/ /]], Oye; , Ov? , Ojrauci? , Or<;ouvi? wp&awrU?
arvUriw , ? raw;wEi aoaZmiivUav;/}} (yn? 0; ? 1991? 115)

p oUwaompum;v;rsm;u xycgxycgol;ly; touc<omatmi weqm qia&zU
yu pav0;yn \ “jyeay;arwmpm”wi awUEiygon/

om"u/ /]]oua[mi;t&m? qonrmvn;? omoemou? b&m;ou? oUum;ou}}
]]^{1/2}oroua[mi;? pmA;awmi;ou? qu&uou? iuou? ouou? <uuou
rue? armuve^{1/2}maz? ooaUatmi? xawrr? oujymc;í? avmup;ym;? ou
vuqm;vn;? pm; í tweuecly/}} (yn? 0; ? 1991? 15-16)

]]ou}} [aompum;v;wu xycgxycga&zUaomallumi touc<omajjypap^{1/2}
ru pmqu wum0;qe;tay: raueycursm;u oa&m [elzi xxrracyonrmvn;
&ojrmuapon/ xUtw &wpy; , m; \ qeu (130)wi Asn;o? o&orm;u xyausm
a&zUly; toweqm qix^{1/2}ru? qeUuiEi; Oyrmtvumrsm;jzi weqm qixm;onrm
xi^{1/2m};ay:vir^{1/2}ly; Epouz , aumi;yg on/

“my mistress’ eyes are nothing like the sun;

Coral is far more red than her lips’ red;

If snow be white, why then her breasts are dun;

If hairs be wires, black wires grow on her head” (Shakespeare, 1975, 169)

t xuygon"uwi m, w, b, h [aomAsn;rsm; mistress, eyes, like, hairs, her [aom
o&rsm;u xyau sma&zUaomallumi toc<om^{1/2}ru teuuvn; xi^{1/2m};apon/ cpo
re;uav; \ ruv;u aeri;EiEi;aomvn; aeri;vr[w[qaomallumi?]]awmuyr
ui;aom touraomrsu0e;rsm;}} tjzpyay:vm on/ xUtw cpoUEwcr;rsm;u oEm
ausmuwe;Ei Ei;aomvn;? qeUuion oabmEi;aomallumi?]]ta&mitqi;raom
azsmazsmawmawm Ewcr;tp}} tjzp rEplrUz , yay:vm on/ cpo \&itpu Ei;yia v;
rsm;Ei Ei;aomvn; qeUuion oabmjzpaomallumi?]]oelpijci;? lunvi^{1/2}i;oeU
jci; ui;aomnpxyxy&itp}} tjzpyay:vm on/ xUyi cpo \qE ,rsm;u teu
a&mi0g , mE u<;rsm;Ei Ei; , Oyazmaomallumi? a^{1/2}ta&miqE ,av;rsm;uom *E0itv
tjzp ovrwaomEiiwi cpoonwe;0iaom tvrjzpEiawmay/ aumi;aomt&m
rsm;Ei Ei;aomvn; q;aomt"ym , ay:apci;on x;jcm;aom tvumweqm qir
alumijzpayon/ xUallumitvumrevU xi^{1/2m};ay:virjzpap&e touvn;aumi;
teuuvn;aumi; qe;lu ,atmi weqm qijci;jzi &oEpouru cpm;&apon/
xi^{1/2m};ay:vir^{1/2}jci;on tvum \ oabm wpcjzpayon/

lci o;oycu

&opmaywp&ywiygao m t vume,erwu jzpay:apon oabmw&m; rsm;u
pppavvmlunv*l*i Ei;, 0wipm;jci;oabm? 'lavmuwi tpptrrer½&rjzp&jci;
oabm? a½*l*ajymi;o;jci;lzi tcutweljzpjci;oabm? cpm;em;vnEiap&e xi½m;
ay:vir½jci; oabmw½&ayon/ tvumrev*l*i xtajcc e,erwtwi;om zew;
Eiayon/ tijetvetm;jzi xtajcc e,erwabmitwi; zew;xm;aom tvum
[oa½on tmeoi&oEpoujci;u ay;pr;Eiayon/ pav0;ynEi ½wpy; ,m;
w\vu&m tvumrsm;u pppavvmv*l*i xoabmw&m;wu t ajccí zew;xm; on/

x*l*alumi tvumjiweqm qixm;aom pmaywp&yu y&owucpm;Epoujci;
rm xtvum oabmw&m; e,erw (4)c*u*twi;r zew;xm;aom*l*umi jzpayon/
xoabmw&m;e,erwtwi; zew;xm;aom tvumon uAsm q*i*&m tvazmxwr
wm0eu auyepm xr;aqm iEiayon/ xEi;, 0wipm;jci;oabm? 'lavmuwi
tpptrrer½jci;? rjzp*j*ci;oabm? a½*l*ajymi;o;jci;jzi tcutweljzpjci; oabm? tv ,
cpm;Eiap&e xi½m;ay:vir½jci;oabm [aom e,erw (4)con tvumaumi; wpc
\ &oqi&mtu*l*;oua&muru wez;jzweiaomEe;prsm; jzpon/ ar;zm;u;jyi; &m
ae&ma'orw? "avx;prw? bmont ,0g'rwao m vn;? pmqawm*l*u;Ep0;on
wnaom tvum oabmw&m;en;emrsm;jzi urmpmayavm utwu tz;xupmayrsm;u
zew;c*l*ayon/

e*;

13&mpwi jrermw*l*pwia vvmci&aom]]oaAm"m vum&}}ygV tvumur;ro'g
vum&? twmvum&zew;ren;emrsm;Ei 20&mpwi jrermw*l*avvmci&aom Rhetorical
Devices tvumen;emrsm;u qupyEi;, 0 oawoejy/cygon/ xtcg bompum;
\oabmobm0ujm;ralumi? tvumzew;r en;emrsm;on xywxyr*l* rwn
aom vn; qupywnrrsm;rwpqi tvumzew;r\ t ajccoabmw&m; e,erw
w*l*u yi;jcm;cygon/ pav0;ynEi ½wpy, m;w*l* zew;weqm qiaom &ojrmu
tvumwion xoabmw&m;e,erwtwi;½*l*y; pmay\tu*l*;au;Z;u jyay;Eirn [c,
yg on/

u:r;u;pm&i;

jrermbmom

urm&? t½il (1958)/ *t vumye;u;l* &eue? [om0wyEywul
 aum0'? 0;? (v , w-)/ *u0bm&wur;l* &eue? ZpmyEywul
 pE0&? t½il (1995)/ *t vumptr ('ur)* &eue? a½y&yupmayl
 pau_{sm}i;q&mawm/ (1973) lo*wwl *t vumeo:op ('ur)* &eue? v , wr@li pmayXmel
 aZm*/ (2004)/ *&opmaytziEie'ye; ('ur)* &eue? pwu;cic tEynm/
 xe;jri ?0;/ (1968)/ *yqVoua0g [m&t b"mel* &eue? wuov_{rm};pm tyjypxwa0a&aumrwl
 yn? 0;/ (1991)/ *0;ynpmye;u; (y)wl* &eue? jyellum;a&0el u;Xme? owi;Eipme , Zi;vyie;/
 yn? 0;/ (1991)/ *0;ynpmye;u; (')wl* &eue? jyellum;a&0el u;Xme? owi;Eipme , Zi;vyie;/
 baq? (&eue-)/ (1966)/ *ye;oio u;a&en;x;um;l&eue?* , rempmayl
 oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (2013)/ ½wpy; , m; t on;Ev; \ pum;yv u;rsm; t rw(1)- ½r , Ei *l;v , ul
 Romeo and Juliet Shakespeare's Romantic Drama &eue? v mbr;appmayl

t*vybmom

Cowell.C. (1968). *A Student's Guide to Literature*. New York; Washington Square Press, Inc.

Ciardic, J and Williams. M. (1975). *How does a Poem Mean?* Second Edition, Boston: Houghton Mifflin Company.

Harmon, W. (1999). *A Handbook To Literature*. Eighth Edition. New Jersey: Prentice Hall.

Moner, K and Raush, R. (1998). NTC's Dictionary of Literary Terms. Chicago. NTC Publishing Group.

Shakespeare,W.(1993). The Complete Works of William Shakespeare. Electronic Version, World Library, Inc,
 www. gutenberg.org.

Shaw, H. (1905). Dictionary of Literary Terms. New York: An imprint of Pearson Education.

Wales, Katie. (2001). A Dictionary of Stylistics. New York : An imprint of Pearson Education.

]]v , wq&mawm u; \ lo0g'aw;xyrsm;}}

luionjri*

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on v , wq&mawm u; \ lo0g'aw;xyrsm;u pmay¹/₂axmirwijxm;
aom pmwr;jzpygon/ xolavvm&mwi v , wq&mawm u; a&;om;caom uAsmrm;
teulo0g' aw;xyrsm;u tavvmc[ovrwygon/ avvm&mwi (1) v , w
q&mawm \ ax¹/₂ywt u:0;? (2) v , wq&mawm u; \ uAsmrm;? (3) lo0g'aw;xy
rsm; avvmc;u [í tyi;(3)yi;cum oawoejy\ x;yg on/ polavvmjci;jzi
a&;pmaywiaw&aom jaw;xy) uAsmrm; \ pmaywez;u azmxwvjci; jzpygon/
po/ avvmjci;jzi a&;pmaywiaw&aom jaw;xy) tzlyprsm;u o&¹/₂ru? jrerm
pmayzjz;w;wurEi bompum; t u:0; jzpxe;rwu taxmut uij&e &n& , yg
on/

aomc;upum;v;/

/]]aw;xy? lo0g'? oa0*uAsm? avmu? arwmpm}}/

e'je;

ppmwr;on v , wq&mawm u; \ lo0g'aw;xyrsm;u avvmwijxm;aom
pmwr;jzpygon/ plo0g'aw;xyav;y'v;on (1900r1910) cEptwi; q&mawm
a&;om;caom lo0g'aw;xyrsm; jzpygon/ q&mawm u;on avmuow0g vom;w\
aumi;u:0;rsm;u vvm;pm aqmi&ucojzpon/ &[e;wyn? twaewynEi tb"rm
q&mEp0; t m; q;rxm;aom lo0g'rsm;Eiywou í avvmwijxm;yg on/

1/ ax¹/₂ywt u:0;

1208 ewawmvqe; (13)&u? t*gae? a&bllr? p&ip'y&i;llr? ,? pijyi&mwi
zm;jrion/ i , p0u &wemyaejynawm& q&m tau smrm;xwi ynmoi y; 1244 wi
r&mlrwi owi;o;on/ 1248 wir&mlr\ ta&ljrmubu awmtyuwxí
v , wwuu;u wnaxmiaomallumi v , wq&mawm [ac:on/ q&mawmon
wynrsm;u pmayycjci; Eii tEtjym;v nvní w&m;"ra[majmjci;? u? Em;?
owjzwrwum;jrpawmrjci;wu vyaqmicon/

y#uwqi&m uAsmvumeoqpon ur;aygi; (100) ausmijpcon/ 1273wi
t*r[my@wbwqyuyvLjci;c&on/ 1280wi &euewuovr ur;wwyg&*
'vpbU uyvLjci;c&on/ 1285 ouawm (77) Ep ysO;rem;llrwi ysveawmron/

* a'guwm? wzuygarnu? jrerm pmXme? &eueta0;oiwuov

q&mawm \ ur;*ersm;ur&mlr\U v , wawm&au;smi;wuwi au sm uxyt u&m wixm;
onu aw&on/

2/ v , wq&mawm;u; \ u&smrsm;

1900 jynEpr 1910 jynEpwi;a&zcaom v , wq&mawm uAsmrsm;u &maz
aom t c g ax;xyav;y'uomawcon/ paw;xyrsm;wi jyg&rorm& ygb} caw;xy
Ei jypn;&mt vyEi c jaw;xy? jxe;0;Ei xe;vc} aw;xy? jwpyi;alumi u uupm
&½cs}} aw;xyw jzpygon/

q , pEpwpctwi; v , wq&mawm uo vUv0&, u; í tce&o í pma&awm
raeom y*vwp0;tz aw;xyav;y'r\om a&om;pu;awmron qonrr, lun
Eip&mjzpon/ 1257cEp A'*g , mo b&m;z;up0 rEav;r&eueo r;&xm;jzi u&m
r;&xm;ay:wi y#porym'vum (13)y'u \y;p;pci;u vn;aumi;? &euerb*v m;ll\o
(5) &ucel yiv , u;oabmji om;&av&m b*v m;ll\o ta&muwi y#porym'vum
(13) y'\ tajzu vn;aumi;? b&m;z;c&p0twi; , i; tajzEipaygi; í y#porym'
'yeur;u vn;aumi; jzpay:vmon [aom tcsuwalumijzpon/

po uAsmvumen;yg;pci;rm wrjriyasm u u , aeaom alumiavm? (or [w)
cEpou&mZtwtus a&xm;pci;r&aom alumiavm? (or [w) tjcm;tjcm;aom 'yersm;
jy\paejci;? awm&aqm uwnaejci;? c&; , m , rsm;aejci; walumiavm [aw;awmz ,
jzpygon/ po;rsl;pv;on jzpEiygon/ 1262 cEprpí 1274 cEptx q&mawm \
b0ulunv\i poawEiygon/ 1262cEpwi r [mlr\iawm? 1263cEpwi a&awmi0;
awmi? 1265cwi v uyeawmi;awmi? 1266 wi y0;rem;? tilui;jriawm& ponw
wi awm&aqm uwnawm raeonuaw&ygon/ 1267cEpr 1284cEptx jrermEii
twi; e , vnomoemjyawmrygon/ rEav;? awmiom? jri;jc? &eue? jyn? [omw?
ppaw? yor? twz? armvjri\ll\w jzpygon/

w&m;a [m&e yia v\mu í vn;aumi;? yvya&m*g? Or;a&m*grsm;jzpí vn;aumi;?
r;raumi; í aumuyo;Ersm; ysup;rn ta&alumi vn;aumi;? xjr\U rsm;o\ ua&m uawm
rjci;jzpygon/ 1262 wi 'ye(1)ur;? 1263 cEpwi 'ye (4)ur;? 1265 cEp y&rw
ocyEi'yeur; (4)ur;? 1266 cEpwi o&P*0ep , ? e½w'yee ó , ? o'ocyur;
Ei 'ye(4)ur;? 1270 jynEpwi a&m*E&'ye? ppaygi;ur;aygi; (18)ur;u jyply;
jzpygon/ x\alumi uAsmvumbuwi t m;en;jci;jzpEiygon/

aw;xy (4) y'v;on ll o0g'aw;xyrsm;jzpygon/ rrwynrsm; jzpaom v , w
y@w? armi ll oZm? armia&miew t m;q;raom aw;xywpy'pEi 'umEp0;jzpaom
t b"rm q&m 0;xe;0;Ei 0;xe;vw t m; q;raom aw;xyw jzpygon/

**pwi q;rl0g'uxmEiywouí o;rsl;o;pm;&ygon/]]omoemavmuü
q&mjrrwlon rrwynom;wtm; q;rajymqallumi; pum;onuxmrn\}}/ xuxm
on**

- lo0g'uxm?
- tEomoemuxm
- "ruxm [í o;rsl;jzp\ / zp;Ercajymq q;rtyaompum;u lo0g'uxm?
rrmrwi;? acsmarmjci;jzi or;oi; , , qq;rtyaompum;u tEomoemuxm? ep
paomw&m;tp0jzi qq;rtyaom pum;u"ruxm [í rw , ty\}}¹ [í qjyxm;yg
on/

**ppum;t&qvqi v ,wy@wtm; q;raomaw;xyon tEomoemaw;xy
jzpí useaom aw;xyrsm;rm lo0g'aw;xyrsm;jzpygon/**

3/ lo0g'aw;xyrsm;av vmcsu

3? 1? yg&rorm&ygbcaaw;xy

**1264 cEp tvrrtaemubu a&awmi0;awmiwi awm&aquwn owi;o;
aep0wyn&i;jzpaom v ,wy@wtm; a&om;q;rawmrtyaom tEomoemaw;xy
jzpygon/**

**v ,w q&mawmwi &iy@wEi &iuw[aom vu&i;wyn Ep0;&ygon/
w&m;a[m&u&mwi vn;aumi;? awm&aquwn&mwi vn;aumi; tllac:om;av
&ygon/ xEpyg;onouw & ,w½yqi; t*gjynjz<;oyg ,luí tvelunniz ,
toiaqmiliuon/ vu½;Epquo t m;u;jci;uvn; c ,&avon/ &iy@wrn
1258 cEpwi v ,wq&mawmxa&muí ynmqn;y;ygon/ v ,wq&mawm b&m;u;
u ,wi xwazmc;u<;&avmuatmi x;clexurwojzpon/ &iy@w\pmoi
q&mawm OyZi ,rmvn; v ,wq&mawmjzpouo &[e;cay;ormvn; v ,w
q&mawmyijzpon/ v ,wy@wtz x;jcm;cujzpygon/ v ,wwuo a&muly;
rlumryi ygV? o'gü utr;u;ieiei;ojzi]]o'gy@w}} [í vn;aumi;? uAsmtztEl
ajymiajrmuojzi uAsmy@w[ívn; ausmlum;ojzpon/ xlyi &[e;jzply;rlumr
rmyi v ,wwuü;ü pncsy*v tjzp w;wuajrmu pm;jci;vn;c&ojzpon/ &[e;
o;0gt&wi (1262cEptwi;) v ,wy@Ei v ,wuwwu rEav;? r[m0o'g½
q&mawmu;xo ouwbomu oi ,avvm&e apvwawmrcon/ wpEpr tce
twi; ouwbomu aumi;repmwwajrmuuum v ,wauumi;wuol jyevmlluyg
on/**

¹ vyí? 1967? 137

v , wq&mawm \ 0gqawmp0Z , m; t& t v r l u taemubu a&awmi0;awmi
awm&wi (2)0gqonu aw&ygon/ a&awmi0;awmiawm&o v , wq&mawmon
1263 cEp? uqevqe; (13) &uwi v u^{1/2};wyn (2) 0;Ei tw <uawmrygon/

te;yw0e;usiaus;&mrm;jzpaom pe;acsmi;? vuyawm? atmir;paom &mrm;o
qr;c<uawmrygon/ &aomqr;rm ajymi;qr;om jzpaomvn; lre&upmbe;ay;awm
rygon/ q&mawm u;u on;cEioavmuu v , wy@wtz on;rcEijzp&ygon/

v , wy@won v , wq&mawm u; \ aemuygtjzpvuygí 0w u;0wi ,
jy/p&i; w&m;tm;xwaeao vn; rrcEmu , tm; jyp , , aeav&on/ taetxi
tpm;taomuqi;&jci;u on;rcEiojzpon/ &[e;oum(3)0gr &aeao;í Ee , vay
on/ y#ywxu y& , wüom xuoeaeiejzpí q&mawmEi twae&aomvn; awmü
aejci;u pwr0ipm;ay/ tpm;taomuüum; r&mrl u &[e;'um0;vu;? a':a&trwxr
 , í q&mawmroatmi uy , wp0;tm; cujy/waply; be;ay;apon/ on;rcEiatmi
v , wq&mawmu aemuygwynwu q;rly;jzpon/ wpaewi or;xm;aom pm;z ,
ypn;Ei r;wi;uyu jriawom;í jy;pmqyaigui;ly; r;wi;uyEi pm;z , rsm;u
vuuiawmia0;jzi acviiípeypvuon/ wynv , wy@wu vn; awmae&[e;
w\ tijttr[walumi;? rujriruu , pm;z , rsm;u ror;aumi;allumi;? b&m;
tvawmu;vn; r[walumi;&nvs;pmq;ron/ tm[m&'yeur;u jypouo
v , wy@wu vn; p tEomoe aw;xyua&om;í q;rawmron/ v , wy@wrm
a&be;u&í yg&rtaqmuttlu;ojzpon/ &[e;wapmio;tyaom ovoum
u vn; pmr&om;aumion rrtar;triu apmia&muouo pmr&om;aumix;
Ev;ríapmixe;ojzpon/ pmayy& , wwivn; pxm;avmuo? ÓPxujrwo[í
c;u;l;avmuovn; jzpalumi;u —

]]yg&rorm&ygb? wpomube;a0? pmr&x;taev o;raoov? y& , w
pra[rm? ÓPua0 c;avmuoy}}¹

[í a&zlawmrygon/

jrwpm b&m; \ omoemawmwi omoemo;&y&on/ y& , womoem? y#yw
omoem? y#a0"omoem[íjzpygon/ omoemo;&yon [ecunzvygon/
omoemo;&yv; pnyizjz;romv i omoemt"e&nygrn/ omoem0exr; &[e;w\
pomoemo;&yu pnyizjz;atmi bu;pm;&ygon/ v , wy@wrm y& , w omoem
twu pmayy& , wwi ajymp&mr&aomvn; y#ywEiy#a0"omoemtwu vao;on/
xlyjyioemoem0exr; &[e;won ovoumy'u apmixe;jci;? t"pw oumorm"
&atmitm;xwjci;? t"ynmoum? 0yóemynmym;jci;[aom oum(3)ygu apmixe;
luon/ orvn; omoempnyirn/ v , wy@wrm bmoemÓPola&mu&e tve
a0;umaeao;on/ xUallumi , xmbwÓPjzp&mjzpalumi;jzpaom oworZ0qaom

¹ vyí? 1967/138/

pum;rm v ,wy@wtwu cEivm; [íar;rnøjzpalumi; oww&m&ap&e q;r
xm;yg on/

]]pwEi ynm? omoemrev? b0emÓP tprmaxm teEa0;y, ? orZ0
qcirms;rmawm cEivm;ar;r , ou , }}¹

[í a&;om;q;rxm;yg on/ p o;q;r&mwí rrrwi; or;oi;q;rxm;onu
aw&on/

quvuí q&mawm u v ,wy@won r*zveAmeo om;a&mu&m] , mOEi
waom vuPma&;o;yg;? rwalumi;w&;o;yg; t m; ÓP t jri wiu; , u; , ae&mwu;
½rw&eu a , b , ueuuí cexm;on/ ce½r{omru a&;wpapavmurupn
bu;uwtm;xwici; r&ao;alumi;u —

]]vuP jriEe;u; , on? , m0o;o , ae&muji ay , smvemue?
a&;r{ru}}²

[í wynom; tay: u½Pma'goji q;rae [e ay:atmia&;zUxm;yg on/ aemuq;
wi y#uwo;yaqmiEiaom ÓPynrm uav;ÓPjzpalumi;? pmppmu;tEe;tZU
wi t m;oeaealumi;u —

]]y#uwuav;ÓProm? ta&;oeoeop&m xiav;}}³

[í a&;zUq;rxm;yg on/ p q;rcuon y#uwtjrioevaom v ,wy@wtz
t vewm;om q;rcujzpon/ t b , alumiqaom b&m;&iouawmxi&m;p0
jrwpmb&;on ynmrm etveaxmivm;aeom ayg|vrax&u pen;ji q;rcz;yg
on/ ayg|vrax&on a&;b&;cEpqw \ omoemü y#uwo;yaqmi & [e;jzpcz;ly;
 , cb&m;&ivuxuvn; y#uwo;yaqmií & [e;ig;&mu om0wjynaZw0e
aumi;awmü oilum;ay;vu&yg on/ xrax&b&;ix t cpm;0iaom t cg? t c;n;E;
to;ruaom ayg|vv mavm - [vn;aumi;? jyeom;aom t cg t c;n;E; to;ruaom
ayg|vxom;&ly}} [í vn;aumi;? o \rmeus;om;atmi relawmrav& on/ ayg|v
vn; y#uwnP&ioeoyy? igmp;mer*zv wr&jci;alumi? p o lac:awmrjci;
jzpalumi;? jyi;pmxwveoa0*&um oworZeizpí rnourtoray;b & [Em
rax&(30)aexiaom awmaumi;uom;avon/ rax&u;rm;uvurc? cEpEpom;
& [Em omraPuoem;í vucumen;jyygon/ & [e;w&;ur|me; b0em u bu;pm;
t m;xwaom alumi & [Enjzpc&yg on/ p talumi;u v ,wy@wuolaom y#uw
ÓP&ioeotz aoaocsmcsmoem;vn rnizpygon/ v ,wy@won & [e;abmi
aμly;r{lumr v ,wwu u; \ pmcsq&jzpv m jci;? o'gy@wuAsm y@ [xi&m;jci;?
au;Z;&iq&mawm \ t m;u;&aomwynu;jzpalumi;? r [m0o'g½ q&mawm u;u

¹ vyí? 1967/138/

² , i;/

³ , i;/

]]v , wy@w}} [tav;tjrwac:&ici;won v , wy@wtwu ynmrmewcexp&m
 jzpon/ x!alumi v , wq&mawmu rrwyn\ rmermeu Ercv í ½u\$;om;apv í
 owoa0*&eomomEi ememEuontaejzi]y#uw- uav;ÓP}} [qvujci;
 jzp[ewygon/ tcn;E;to;ruaom y@w[wu½urac:aomvn; ac:xu
 ouo!jzpalumi; aw;qxu ygon/

3) 2) ypn;&mt vyEicaw;xy

paw;xyon v , wq&mawmu rr\ te;ae wynwp0;jzpaom armiloZmu
 q;raom lo0g'uxm aw;xywpy'jzpygon/ paw;xyEirq;rci a&;u vn;
]ig;t m½t itp? cirEi aeuetpc}}aom aw;xywjzi oa0*&atmi q;rcygon/

]]ciomcuur rvuciv i truei yi &ao;avvrvm;?

ciomqur rcciv i t veiyi &ao;avvrvm;

ciomwe;ur r½e;ciiv i t ½;eiyi &ao;avvrvm;}}¹

[í epepemq q;rxm;yg on/ olaom armiloZmrm em;r0i [xiygon/ armiloZm
 rm avmup;ym; Opm&mazaom t vyEi wpaely;wpae wp&uly; wp&u uece;um/
 Eprsm;wpEply;wpEp ueaeygon/ vobm0wi ae&rnouwr;rmvn; pen;jzi
 om ueom;yg on/ aemib0twu (or[w) avmuw&mtwu u;iburr&b
 pen;twi;om tceueaernqv i rrtwu rnor(aumi;rnyr&yg/ pen;jzi
 aecozi oo&m0, cEm0euaqmic&onrm rsm;vyjzpygon/ polo o&mvnc&y
 Ei ruarmub0twu raumi;yu –

]]ypn;&mt vyEi? aeyyv &u [e? eparsm v touuew,? wuyzi
 raumi;}}²

[í a&;z\xm;yg on/

wpze puo! rr0r;a&;twu touar;0r;ausmi;aernqv i qi;&'uom
 yí yíaw\&ayawmrn/ , carmiloZmrm touav;q, t&, aEmi;aelyjzpygon/
 ptout&, a&muaecgr oku, avmi; vyciaeo;on/ rru, u rrrr&u
 yw0e;ui\ u&ljypwipum;wi; qlurnu rallumujzpaalumi;u-

]]ouar;r pce;yatmi 0r;uom eiausmi;? av;q, ausmt&, aEmi;cgr?
 oku, avmi;vyci}}³

¹ v , wq&mawm? 1911? 70/

² v , wq&mawm? 1911? 71/

³ , i;/

[í q;rxm;&m v ,wq&mawm u rrwynu oa&m v uon [qEirnxiygon/
oúrvn; rrvyjmrrrv jzpayvrrn/

quvuí armiloZm yematmi ,ctout&,jzpon vÚb0vvm jzpon
rm]] 'vbw&m;jzpon/ b&m;omoemEi buław&onrmvn;]] 'vb}} yijzpon/
r*zv&a&; a[majymq;rvr;ñejyoEi buław&onrmvn;]] 'vbjzpon/ pojzi
tajctaeau mi;? tsetcgaumi;Ei buławae&ygvu vjzpus;eyatmi riul;pm;b;
qví b0q;&mavvrrn/ r*zveAmeEi vayawmrn/

]]r;uely xercsEi? &U&mrn;jizpti? Em;tú; tarmoio v? ravqm
v í b0q;&mawm? tpw;eitqi vzomji }} ¹

[í r;verxecs}}]]Em;tú; tarmoi}} [aom pun;yq½;wjzi wipm;a&;zUxm;&m
teut"ym, xa&muvouo tv,wuem;vnEiygon/ ,cuoquvuily;
vyuiaqmi&uaernqví r*? zv? eAmeEiv½omru r;uelyjzpí xercEiawm?
ypn;Opm&maz&rn tceueyjpí tu&;r&? Em;tú; tarmoi í wwrnr[w? tou
ú;r Opm&maeí rx;jcm; [qxm;ygon/ ,c tsetxw&m;b0em r&mao;b; qv í
tcuú awzomjzpalumi;]w&m;orou0iví? tceuiúlawzav;}} ²

[ía&;zxm;ygon/

q&mawmon wynarmiloZm tay:oa,mZO tawmtwe&y&ygon/]]ei}}
[aomemrpm;uo;í]]ei}} on o;q,wpbb0 oo&mwi u:ivnc&ly;jzpalumi;
av;q,au sm t&,aEmi;umroú,avmi; rvyapcsialumi;? p;ym;&mru ravqmao;
b? w&m;b0em rym;rm;? w&m;oabm rou0iao;b;qv í vÚb0vjzp½;rn? eAme
r*zvEivrn? tcuúlrnponjzi qiuqiuq;r lo0g'ay;xm;ygonrm tuu
apvygon/

3? 3? xe;0;Ei xe;v tpcaw;xy

v ,wq&mawmon 1264 cEp a&awmi0;awm&ü owi;o;aep0? tvrúae
tb"rmq&m 0;xe;0;Ei 0;xe;vw tm; q;rlo0g'ay;aom aw;xyjzpygon/ pmay
ta[m tajymuom tm;oea[majymly;? ur]me;b0em? 0y ó em tvyut m;rxwlu
ontwu q;rjci;jzpygon/

tb"rmq&m 0;xe;0;Ei 0;xe;vwon ow&atmwarz,aumi;aom vEp0;
jzpygon/ tb"rmEi ywouaom ur;tapmiapmiu orsm;Ei rwatmi a[majym
Eiaom? ÓP&nÓPao; &or sm;vn;jzpon/ a[m&ajym&rnqv í taxax trs;r&;

¹ v ,wq&mawm? 1911? 71/

² vyí? 1967? 138/

ajymEiluygon/ ya'omyirv&m qwc; Eiouoajymv&mu ououvuvu
ajymEia [mEipr;or_{sm};vn; jzpygon/ b taumi;u v , w q&mawmu-

]]xe;0;Eixe;v? vr;p&mEpv? ur;"rtqqrm orwÓPom;?
ajyma [mrax t vm ya'om Ewv_{sm} uyg;}}¹

[í tpcia&zUxm;yg on/ t b"rmq&mEp0; \ pr;aqmi&n_{sm};u c;u_{sl};a&zUvuyg
on/

xUaem u t vypce; (or [w) w&m;bm0em u:u u u;uw t m;xw&e t [w
wu , jzpv m v i r qwueue vya eluaom vpm;r_{sl};r_{sm}; jzpluygon/ 0;xe;0;Ei
0;xe;vw on Oy ó emw&m; t vyqv i a&mi&m;aeluor_{sm};vn; jzpygon/
ruEajymi wu u m <u m;<u m;0g0gEi [w [e xwaeor_{sm};vn; jzpygon/ a [majym&m?
pma& &mwir t veouvucuc_{sm} ÓPom;or_{sm};vn; jzpluygon/ xalumi —

]]t vyEi t [ww , v i ? qwjy , jy , vpm;? wu , q a&miorm;? Ajymi
<u m;<u m; [ey? ajyma [mÓP pm ta&r mawm? v m uav;ouluou}}²

[í 0;xe;0;Ei 0;xe;vwrm rnuolaom vpm;r_{sm};jzpalumi;u a&pyou;xm;
yg on/

oUaomvn; rrwEp0;on xuoww&m;bm0emym;r_{sm};&e treovs uEi trm;
vr;ola&muatmi av m uvr;aeluon/ writalumi;&m í pum;u vn; tr_{sl};r_{sl};
ajymqaeluon/ b , b , nnnmponjzi [eaqmiu a , mia , miaygiaygi ajymqae
lu alumi;u vn;

]]ovs uom;Ei trm;c pum;x x&r , zUv b , wnmw a , mia , mi
aygiaygi? ajym u [eaqmi}}³

[í zUjyxm;yg on/

poom wu , t vypce;o rom;lub a&mi&m;um a , mia , miaygiaygi vyly;
aeluv i oo&m0* , uü ep lrepaern omjzpygon/ aem ub0aem ub0r_{sm};wi vn;
t uww&m;&vrrnr [w? t uww&m;Ei u mvr;ae&mawmrn [—

]]ep lrepz t vwa&mi v i ? t u w [aemiu mvr; &m v rav;}}⁴

[í oem;u ½ Pm a&Uxm;um t q;owa&zUxm;yg on/

t v l r Uae t b"rmq&m0;xe;0;Ei 0;xe;vwEp0;uom q;r lo0g' ay;ae
aomvn; 0;xe;0;Ei0;xe;vw Ep0;uo t b"rmq&m_{sm};u vn; q;raeouoU

¹ vy i? 1967? 138/

² , i;/

³ , i;/

⁴ , i;/

jzpaeygon/ tajymom[wly; t vyrwiu_s, orsm; t m;v;u q;raeon[xirw&ygon/

3[?] 4[?] wpyi;alumi usupm&½Ei t pcaw;xy

r&mlrUte;? qm;w&mae wynarmia&mieu ay;aom uAsmwp' jzpygon/]y#uw tp, c&aw;xy[vn; ac:ygon/ v, wq&mawmon wynarmia&mieu aw;xyt püyi wppwpyi;alumiaeo? usupm&½&aomo? t vecuono? luuwa&pm u&½zi rmermaxmivm;aeo? tajymu; tajymo eo? a'gormeym;ae oizpon/ rrajymon pum;Eiywouí apm'uwuum wzu, Olyiajymvmv|ir oreon u, reon oxuigjii;c wwaomvpm;vn;jzpon[í v, wq&mawmu wynarmia&mieu wyn&i;jzponEi t nq;rxm;yu

]wpyi;alumi usupm&½Ei cuygv oabmnu?

wurmetajymoew, ? a'gormexym;? apm'uwzu

vmv|i? oxuigjii;wvpm;}}¹ [íawU&ygon/

pwi]wpyi;alumi} [aompum;u v, wq&mawmon wrío;xm; ygon/ pwxm;yretwi; r[wb? rjno? ½;alunialumiEio t"yg, &ouo jrwpmb&m; a[mlum;aom "rceaygi;&paomi;av;axmiu jynjynpp roo[vn; t"yg, &aomallumijzpon/

xUalumi armia&mierm b&m;a[mw&m;"rcersm;u trewu, rww rob wwoav[e ta, miaqmiu nm0g;aeon-rru, u]y&rworm;} [talumi½u aeon/ xoaom talumiorm;rm;on rrwavmuw&m;"ru oor&[oxuig axmivm;armurmaelluon/ rrw\ toÓPwpxm avmuuav;jzi rnour rmb a[mwwajymwwonu

]b&m;a [mjrw"rceu? wwav [ea, mi0g;?

y&rwjyetalumiorm;aww axmivm;u oxuig?

t oÓP wpxmavmuu, Ei nmraxmua[mwwvyg}}² [í

a&zxm;jye&m y&rwjyetalumiorm;rm;? wwa, mi0g;rm; \ obm0rxi &m;vm&ygon/

xlyi owon w&m;emy&ow\ cs;u&l;axmremc&avatmi taumuÓPjzi Bu aqmiwwon/ owajymonu apm'uwvvi apm'uwvowu tjypwily; rrwomrealumi;? tau sm utuejii;u alumi;u-

¹ vyí? 1967? 143/

² , i;/

]]y&owaxmrematmi? apm'emÓP taumuawEi uetausmu
twi;ra&mi? jii;u vlabmi}}¹

[í a&zUxm;&m armia&miewuUoUaom wpyi;allumiw\ oabmryí ay:vivmyg
on/

p o b&m;a [m"rcersm;u wwav [eaqmium? quvuly; nm0g; lz; jze; ae
v i y#uwwwon [xirwly; rmep, axmiaernqv i xow\ om;&m vr;rm
tyg, i&om jzpalumi;u —

]]y#uwtp, axmi v i? tyg, abmiqi;&vrav;}}²

[wu^{1/2}u q&mawm u aemuq;oway;xm;ygon/

paw;xywi v , wq&mawm u wynarmia&mieu q;rlo0g'ay;aeaom v n;
acwt ququay:ayguwwon armia&mieu o wpyi;allumirsm;? wwa, mi0g; rsm;/
y#uwtp, axmi orsm;u q;rlo0g'ay;aeou oU&ygon/ armia&mie \ aemia&rm
pwratt; z, jzpou o x oUaom vpm; rsl; \ aemia&rm v n; pwav; z, jzpygon/
xUallumi v , wq&mawm u pum;y&, m, ro, b?] tyg, abmiqi;&vrav;}} [wu^{1/2}uwnw;
ajymqq;rjci;jzp [ewygon/

q&mawm \aw;xyrsm;rm t xuwilqou oU lo0g'aw;xyrsm;jzpygon/
avmua&uprsm;u a&zUxm; onr [w/ avmuw&ma&rsm;omjzpygon/ wyn o;0;
Ei 'umEp0;u q;rxm;ygon/ wyn o;0;wi& [e;wpyg;? vy* \ v Ep0;wyg0ion/
pmayy&, wwwojzi ynmrmeaxmivm;aeor sm;u q;rjci;Ei t&, veumr Opmypn;
paqmi;&mazaeou q;rjci; [í aw&ygon/

pmayy&, wwwor sm;wi] v , wy@w? armia&mie? 0;xe;0;? 0;xe;vw
yg0ion/ v , wy@wuy#uw uav;ÓPEi ta&oeo? armia&mieu wpyi;
allumi y&rwyrworm;? 0;xe;0;Ei 0;xe;vwu] tb"rm}} q&m rsm;jzpluygon/
y&, worm;rsm;ua&m? ypn;&m orsm;uyg q;r&mwio;wncsurm wpcuwn;om
jzpygon/ avmuw&m 0;wnc:ujzpygon/ avmuw&m 0;wnc:ujzpí li;ailz,
raumi;ay/ avmuobm0? vUobm0rsm;jzi o^{1/2}yazma&zUxm;aomallumi pw0ipm;z,
aumi;vonu aw&ygon/

¹ vyí? 1967? 73/

² , i;

lci o;oycu

v ,wq&mawm u;on v ,wwu u;ü w&m; t m;xwí wynpmoi om;wt m;
pmayo ilum; ycsojzpon/ xijiy&rw'ye #um u;r; aygi;wp&mu vn; jypcojzp
on/ vum? uAsm? pmayta&;tom;wivn; yg&*wpqjzpon/ q&mawmon ow0g
rsm; t m; tp0oem;on/ tom;pm;ji;u a&m ilu0apv on/ u? Em; tom; rpm;a&;u
wjynv; twi; twmEi a [majym vaqmcyg on/ xijyi q&mawmon jynwi;jyny
omoemjy\ vyie;rsm;aqmi&ucon/ bom? omoemjeym;atmi BuK;pm;cojzpon/
jrwpm b&; \ y&,w? y#yw? y#a0" [aom omoemo;&y[ecu nno&ap&
&n&,ly;q;rcon/ rrEi te;awynrsm; t m; q;r&i; jynow t m;vn; q;rxm;
jci;jzpon/

wpyi;alumiaeo? u:upm&½om&o? t vecuxeo no? rmermeaxmi v m;
aeo? tajym u; tajymo eoEi a'gorme ym;aeo wyn&i;rsm;u lo0g'aw;xyrsm;jzi
q;rxm;ygon/

xijyi q&mawmon t&uaopmaom upm;o? xx;0goemygo? jri;avmi; 0goem
xuoeow t m;vn; q;raom Jjarwmpm} rsm;vn;a&;con/ q&mawmon Eiijcm;
A'omoemjy\ tz u;u 1275 wi zpn;apcon/ bom? omoemjeym;&e BuK;yr;&i;
igwlbom? igwwi;jyne, cu typ;ru emun;ojzpon/ q&mawm u; \ omoema&;
aqmi&ucur sm;? jynor sm; tay:xm;&aom apwemrsm;u llunji; t m;jzi q&mawm u;
on omoemjeym;a&;twu pr;pr;wraqmi&uco jzpalumi;awEi ygon/

e*;

v ,wq&mawm \ lo0g'aw;xy av;y'rmvn; &[e;wyn v ,wy@wu
q;ronu wprsl;? arm illoZmu q;ronu wpo, armia&mieu q;ronu
wpen;? t b"rmq&mEp0;u q;ronu wpz jzponu aw&ygon/

q;rji;Ei tw xxaom y*v w u o laom v rsl;rsm; \ obm0rsm;yga t mi?
wpen; t m;jzi y#uwwwow \ Ó0? t b"rmwwwow Ó0? y&rworm;w \ Ó0?
q&mawmEi tw aeaom vn; arm illoZmu o v rsl; \ Ó0wrm ay:vixi&m;vmygon/
v ,wq&mawm u;on llum;wwaomem;? jriwwaom rupjzillum;jriEipr; &ojzp
on/ wp0;wpa, muu ajym qae aom vn;or sm;u ajym q&ma&muatmi a&;zU Eipr;
on q&mawm \ ta&;tz u avv mawU&&ygon/

u:r;u;pm&i;

ÓP'p/ t&i? q&mawm/ (1962)/ tz;we rev nuAsmrsm;? &eue? jynb;u;rPli y#uwyEywu/
 yg&*/ (1995)/ v , wy@w q&mO;armiib;u;? &eue? Ogr;at mipmay/
 armiib;u;? O;? v , wy@w/ uAsmrOL&/ 1961) / &eue? o"r0wpmyEywu/
 jrerm uAsmpmwr;rsm;/ (1983)/ &eue? pmayArme/
 vyib;O;? v , w/ (1967) v , w*E0iausmrsm;ori;? &eue? oc0wpmaywu/
 v , w? q&mawm/ (1911)/ *r&uAsmu:r;?&eue? trs;om;yEywu/

jrermau sm up m r sm; v m o m o e m a &; q i & m " a v r sm;

ax; t ci*

pmwr; t u s O;

bp mwr; on 2019 cEp? (19) uraj r m u 0 Z m E i o y n m & i r sm; o a w o e p mwr;
zwy t w u w i o i; z w l u m; a o m p mwr; j z p y g o n / b p mwr; on j r e r m
a u s m u p m r sm; v m o m o e m a &; q i & m " a v r sm; u a v v m w i j y c i; v j z p y g o n / b o l
a v v m & m w i y * a c w ? y i; , a c w ? t i; 0 a c w a u s m u p m r sm; w l u t a v v m c t j z p
o w r w a v v m o m; y g r n / b o a v v m & m w i t c e; (3) c e; c í a v v m w i j y g r n /
t c e; (1) w i a u s m u p m a 0 g [m & ? o a b m o b m 0 E i o r i; t u s O; ? t c e; (2) w i
A ' o m o e m E i j r e r m ? t c e; (3) w i j r e r m a u s m u p m r sm; v m o m o e m a &; q i & m " a v
r sm; [í w i j y o m; y g r n / j r e r m p m a y \ t & i; t j r p j z p a o m j r e r m a u s m u p m r sm; r
j r e r m p m a y \ o a b m u v n; o & e m; v n E i y g o n / A ' b m o m o m o e m u o u 0 i
, l u n w e z; x m; w w l u a o m o m o e m a &; q i & m j r e r m " a v u v n; p a u s m u p m
w r c e r e; a v v m t u c w E i y g r n /

a o m c s u a 0 g [m & r sm; / / o m o e m ? " a v ? b & m; q ? a & & n a &; ? a & t x w w i ?
a & q i; w ? y x 0 ? a p w ? * ? o v ? " r o m Z & y ? o u e; ?
y & u & m ? w c e x; ? a & y v i ? o r ? w w i; ? u s e ? v , ? a j r ?
e ' g e; p m ? a & p u c s ? y & w & w ?

e ' g e;

j r e r m p m a y t p y * a c w a u s m u p m u [q ½; & c l u & m , a e a c w p m a y r sm; \ t p o n
y * a u s m u p m r sm; r j r p z sm; c v m y g o n / y * a c w p m a y t p o n A ' o m o e m u t p j y l c o n /
j r e r m E i i w i y * a c w u t a e m & x m r i; E i & i t & [r a x & j r w w \ l u k; y r; r a l u m i o x
j y n r y # u w (3) y a & m u & v m & m y # u w (3) y u j y p & m r a x & 0 g ' A ' o m o e m p w i c a y o n /
x r w p q i j r e r m t u & m w x i u m j r e r m p m a y t a &; t o m; u j y l p y s k; a x m i E i c o n /
A ' o m o e m r t a j c c a o m t v l a u m i; r j y j c i; r sm; r m y * a c w p m a y \ t p y i j z p o n / r r w j y
a o m a u m i; r u r w w r; w i v a o m t c g a u s m u j y m; a y: ü a u s m u p m t j z p a &; x; r w w r;
w i c l u o n / x l a e m u y i; , a c w ? t i; 0 a c w a u s m u p m w w i a u s m u p m t a &; t o m; w
o n 0 y r m ? 0 y p m w j z i & o a j r m u a t m i a &; E i p r; & v m l u o n / t u s O; a &; & m ü v n; a u m i; ?
t u s , a &; & m ü v n; a u m i; j r e r m a u s m u p m w \ t a &; t o m; p r; & n r m x; j c m; v m o n /
x l a l u m i a c w t q u q u j r e r m a u s m u p m w \ t a &; t o m; ? p u m; v; t o; t E e; ? w; w u
w n l i r v m y w u a x m i p a t m i a v v m E i y g o n / a c w t q u q u j r e r m a u s m u p m w u
a v v m í j r e r m w \ o m o e m a &; q i & m " a v x; w r; r sm; u t u j z w o & E i y g o n / y *
a u s m u p m r sm; r a y: a w m r b & m; a u s m u p m ? & m Z u r m & a u s m u p m (474) ? o i l u; t b e E o
a u s m u p m (541) ? a w m i * e b & m; a u s m u p m (552) ? a c r m 0 & b & m; a u s m u p m (569) ? a p m r i; v w

* a ' g u w m ? u x u ? j r e r m p m x n e ? r E a v; w u o v /

b&m; ausmupm(593)/ yi; , acwausmupm^{rs}m; r ausmi; on i jyn n ausmupm(677)?
 cire&wem apwausmupm(694)/ ti; 0acwausmupm^{rs}m; r yw; o* & mZm ausmupm
 (761)? ri; l u; b; awm trw l u; ausmupm(793)? q i uapmpyausmi; ausmupm (802)?
 oajy&; & m b&m; va usmupm (836)wr o o e m a&; q i & m "av^{rs}m; uav v m o m; ygrn/

t ce; 1

ausmupma0g [m&? oabm o b mOEi ori; t u s0;

ausmupmpu m; a j y o n j r e r m p m a y w i a&; t u s q; j z p o n [r w , l u o n/

]ausmupm) [a o m a0g [m&Ei y w o u í j r e r m t b "mewi

]ausmupm-emr-ausmucy? ausmuwiwü a&; x; x m; a o m p m}}¹

[í v n; a u m i; ?

q&mvi0i; a q \]a&; a [m i; u r n; p m r s m; } [a o m p m t y w i —

]ausmupm [o n r m a u s m u a y: w i u r n; w i a&; x; c a o m r w w r; p m u
 ac: j c i; j z p a y o n}}²

[í v n; a u m i; a z m j y x m; o n/ x a l u m i a u s m u p m [o n a u s m u c y? a u s m u w i w
 a y: w i a&; x; x m; a o m r w w r; p m w p r s l; j z p o n/

v o m; w o n a c w u m v t v u r r w a j y m q a&; o m; o; p a e l u o n b m o m p m a y j z i
 r r w v y u i a q m i & u c l u a o m t a l u m i; t & m r s m; u a u s m u a y: w i a&; x; r w w r; w i
 c l u & m r a u s m u x u p m a y: a y g u c j c i; j z p o n/

ausmupmwon r s m; a o m t m; j z i t v r w w r; w i r s m; j z p l u & m a u s m u p m w p c y
 w i a , b , s t m; j z i t v l j y c s e? t v l & i? t v l & n & , c s u? t v l c y * v? t v l y p n; ?
 q a w m i; ? t r a 0? u s e p m w y g 0 i o n/ a u s m u p m w w i j r e r m b m o m j z i a&; x; a o m
 a u s m u p m u j r e r m a u s m u p m? r e b m o m j z i a&; x; a o m a u s m u p m u r e a u s m u p m p o n j z i
 a u s m u p m t r s l; r s l; & o n/ a u s m u p m a&; x; o y * v w \ t r n e m r r s m; u t p j y í
 v n; a u m i; p o n j z i a u s m u p m t r s l; r s l; & o n/ a u s m u p m a&; x; o y * v w \ t r n e m r
 r s m; u t p j y í v n; a u m i; ? a u s m u p m x m; & & m a e & m u t p j y í v n; a u m i; p o n j z i
 a u s m u p m t r n t r s l; r s l; a c: a 0: c l u o n/ x j y i a u s m u p m r s m; p a 0; x m; & & m a e & m u v u í
 r [m r e w w i; t w i; & a u s m u p m r s m; [í v n; a u m i; ? a c w u m v u v u í a u s m u p m r s m; u
 j c l i u m y * a c w a u s m u p m r s m; ? y i; , a c w a u s m u p m r s m; ? t i; 0 a c w a u s m u p m r s m; [í
 v n; a u m i; a c: a 0: l u a o; o n/

¹ j r e r m p m t z l? 2008? 27/

² v i 0 i; a q? 2014? 11/

ausmupmw\ oabm obm0t& ausmupmwwi rv t vL&iwa&x;con rv
 x;ausmupm rvx;ausmupmwi ta&;tom; wppwp&m jznpujci;r&b tyi? t&p?
 tow ten;i, omajymi;í jyevna&x;on qix;ausmupmEi]]rvx;ausmupm
 wi talumi;t&m toprsm; xyraygi;pyjznpuvua&x;}}²on pyx;ausmupm [í
 &on/ qix;ausmupmwü]]ausmupm\ tq;wi rvx;ausmupmu quoo?
 zw½o? a&;u;oEijyevna&x;aom cEp? v? &uwu jznpu xnoi;azmjav
 &onu vn; aw\&on/

jrer^mEiiori;wi aw\&aom taxm ut x m; rsm; t& urn;ausmupm a&x;jci;
 u ylacwwi tapm q;pwia w\&ygon/ ysl ocl;ausmupmr tu&m a&x;Ei vua&;
 vuom;rsm;on at' 4 &mpujzprn [oawowu re;qluon/¹ y*acwwir
 tyclycyno? jynom;rpí tyclyori;tx rraumi;ru ausmupmjzirwwr;wic
 luon/ tvL&itrsm;pon ri;? rz&m;? r;rwpon tyclyovwe;pm;rsm;jzplu&m
 ausmupmrsm;wi tvL&i \ *Py'rsm;uyg wpcr;wpem; xnoi;a&x;vmluon/

yi; , acwEi ti;0acwausmupmwwi ausmupma&x;aom talumi;t&m
 e,y, on yípvivmjy; ausmupm ta&;tom;wivn; tvmwjziwipm;a&x;vml
 luon/ v , ajrt&y t&i;ui;ap&e vL'ge;aom v , ajrrsm;u ta&twu twtus
 azmjav&on/ ti;0acwaem uyi; ausmupmwwi um&eaEmpum;ajy ta&;tom;
 wuyg xnoi;a&x;vmluon/ pojzi ausmupma&x;jci;"avon wppwpp
 w;wuvmjy; ue;abmiacwwiatni xi&m;qjzpon/ ue;abmiacw b;awmb&m;
 vuxuwi ausmupmrsm;upaqi;í topa&x;puxjci;? a&ajymi;xm;&jci;wjzi
 ausmupmrsm;u xe;or;xm;on/

xo|x e;or;xm;&cjci;allumi ausmupmrsm;on , aewito;wi v;u&jy;
 xi&m;qjzpon/ o&mwi , ciuausmupmrsm;u reu;n;ap tu&mjziom a&x;clu
 aom vn; , aeacwwir tu&m0ejzi a&x;av&luon/ xalumi&mZ0iro
 ausmupmEin [on pum;twi; acwtququa&x;caom ausmupmwu avv
 jci;t m;jzi xacwtyi;tjcm; \ cEpou&mZrsm;? ee;wuEptwtus o&jci;?
 ori;allumi;Ei tjcm;talumi;t&m rsm;uyg o&Eiygon/ xjyiw;wujymi;vv
 aom ausmupm ta&;tom;wuyg A [owtjzp avv mrwom;Eiygon/ xalumi
 acwwpacw\ alu;ruovv i xacwwi ay;xe;caom ausmupmrsm;t&cere;o&
 tucwEiygon/

¹ vi0i;aq? 2014? 15/

t ce; 2

၈'omoemEi jrermEi i

jrermwlon A'omoemu jrwe;lunncluaom A'bom0irsm;jzpon/ A'
[on (y)b&m;? ynm& ¹[vn;aumi;? omoem [on]]ome}} [aom ygVpum;t &
]]tq;tr}}² [í t"ym, &on/ A'jrwpm&m; y&eAep, jy;onaemu b&m;&i
u, awmjrw\ tq;trw&m; a'oemawmrsm;u vuemc, uio;aom umv tyi;
tjcm; Epy&ap' tyi;tjcm;u omoem [ac:lunon/ b&m;&i\ omoemu ig;axmiow
rwxm;aomvn; omoem [on urmwnontxwn&rn [vwu, lunlu
ygon/ A'oomoem [on rZira'orjrermjynola&mu vmaom omoemu qvjci;
jzpayon/

jrermjyno omoema&mu&vmyu q&mlu;jrauww(0;cr;jr)u wuovpmay
weaqmiwi-

]]jrermjyno omoemawma&mu&vmonrm c&pawmray:r bpav;&m
aumsce u a&mu&vmon [, qz, jzpon/ xr jrermjynajrmuyi;u
jzwí w&w? xi;? uarm';, m;Eiirsm;o a&mu&om;aom omoem*P;
rm r[m, 0*P;jzpí , i;ur[m, me A'bom [í trnwijy;
jrermjynatmuyi; (awmiyi;)o a&mu&vmaom A'bomu ax&0g'
A'bom ([e, me*P;) [í ac:a0:lunon/}}³

[azmjycon/

pwi jrermjynawmiyi; (atmuyi;)o a&mu&vmaom A'omoemtalumi;u
quvuwiyygrn/ rZira'or "rmaomuri;on b&m;&iy&eAepvejy;aemu
omoemjyeym;ap&e u;wi;u;Xmeo apvw&m o0Pbrt&yo a&mu&calumi;o&
rwom;&ygon/

o0Pba [on , cvu& oxjyn [vucxm;aom t&ya'ojzpalumi;?
o0Pbru]]a&ajra'o}} [teuay;xm;oonrm]]jrwao mta& vuPm&aom
ajra'o}} [qvluqlualumi;? b&m;&i\ omoemawm a&mu&m t&yjzponu tpjyí
ac:qlu [ewalumi; ynm&iwu, qclunon/ xalumi jrermjynawmiyi;
(atmuyi;) t&yo A'omoemawm jyeym;&ejy/paqmi&uunon y*irsm;rm rax&aome
Ei 0w&wjzplu oji ax&0g&*P; [ac:lujci;jzprn [, qclunon/

tcynm&irsm;uvm; A'omoemon y*jyno&i t& [ra&muao;r waumi;
acwuyi omoemawm\ a&mijcnon a&mu&aejyjpalmi; o;oyluon/ ponrm
waumi;jynü u&mZmlu;? u&mZmi, w x;ee;vlu&m nwi;csi; b&m;wpqwní

¹ "r ó mrb0o? t&i? 2005? 635/

² , i;-? 894/

³ jrauww? 1994? 34/

t v i j y ; o x ; e e ; & r n [b & m ; w n l u y u l u n v i A ' a & m i j c n o n w a u m i ; a c w
u y i x e ; a w m u a e E i j y z p a l u m i ; , q E i o n [q c l u o n /

x l j y i o a & a c w & m j r w i r e E i y s l w o n A ' O g ' r s m ; j z p a l u m i ; u x t & y r w ; a z m
& & a o m a & a y E i & y w r s m ; u o u a o c a e o n / t E & ' g (t a e m & x m r i ;) u , w i y i
& i t & [E i r a w r u A ' O g ' j z p a e y & a l u m i ; t E & ' m u , w i a & ; x ; a o m t w c u b & m ; r s m ;
ü] a , " r m a [w y b m 0 a w o a [w x m * a w m t m [} } t a l u m i ; a l u m i t u s l ; j z p & o n
[a o m t a & ; t o m ; t & A ' O g ' w & m ; & a e j y z p a l u m i ; o & E i y g o n /

y * j y n o A ' o m o e m a & m u c g p t c e w i j A [P O g ' v r ; r ; a e a o m a l u m i o m o e m
r x e ; u m ; v a o ; a y / A ' O g ' o n x ; v i & i u e p p r i ; v u x u a w m t c g r o e p i v m
a l u m i ; x ; v i & i r i ; y i v i A ó E ; e w r i ; 0 i p m ; v m o [í a & p n ; c a u s m u p m ü a z m j y c u
t & x c e x e w , l u n r u ; u , r r u i ; l u a o ; a l u m i ; o & o n /

t c e ; 3

j r e r m a u s m u p m r s m ; v m o m o e m a & ; q i & m " a v r s m ;

y * a c w w i A ' o m o e m x e ; u m ; v m o n E i t r o m o e m a & ; q i & m p m a y " a v
x ; w r ; r s m ; a y : a y g u v m c o n / x " a v r s m ; o n y * a c w a u s m u p m r s m ; w i x i [y v : u
½ y g o n / b & m ; ? a p w ? y x ; ? * a u s m i ; r s m ; w n a q m u j c i ; ? v ' g e ; j c i ; ? v , , m a j r r s m ; ?
a w m p r ; a j r r s m ; ? u t e ; r s m ; ? a & w i ; a & u e r s m ; ? 0 , s m 0 r s m ; ? w e a q m i ; Z & y r s m ; ? w e w i ; r s m ;
p o n w v l ' g e ; j c i ; w u a e m i v m a e m u o m ; r s m ; l u n n o ' g y m ; E i a p & e E i o m o e m
i g ; a x m i w n w a p & e ? x e ; o r ; a p m i a & m u u a p & e & n & , l y ; a u s m u p m a & ; x ; c l u o n /
a u s m u p m r s m ; t & j r e r m w l o m o e m a & ; E i p y v : 0 ; a o m t v l ' g e j y i y ? t v l y p n ; r s m ; ?
P w a e o a b m x m ; ? , l u n r ? u ; u , r ? q a w m i ; ? t r a 0 ? u e p m w u y * a c w w i p w i
a y : x e ; v m a o m a u s m u p m r s m ; ü a w l v m & y g o n /

3 1 / t z i * g x m E i t v l & i \ & n & , c u v m o m o e m a & ; q i & m " a v

A ' b m o m 0 i j r e r m w o n t v l ' g e j y l v y l y ; a o m r r t v l u a & & n w n w c i l r
a p & e a u s m u j y m ; a y : ü a & ; x ; c l u & m a u s m u p m w l t p w i y i b & m ; u 0 ; x y x m ; í
a & ; x ; w w l u o n u a w l & o n /

y * a c w & m Z u r m & a u s m u p m w i -

|| * — e a r m A ' g , ¹

u s u o a & r * v m E i j y n p a o m b & m ; t m ; & c ; y g \ [t " y m , & a o m p m a l u m i ; u a & ; x ;
w w l u o n /

¹ { a r m i ? 0 ; 1958 ? 1 /

x|tw y*acwacrm0&b&m; ausmupmwi-
]earmw ó b*0awm or^mor' ó }¹
 [b&m;&c;|ci;|zi| tpc|a&;x;x;m;on/
 yi; , acwausmupmwwi ausmi;on i|yn|nausmupmwi –
]earmA'm , o"}²
 [b&m;t m; &c;y| jynpygap [vn;aumi;
 t i;0acwausmupmrsm;wi q iuapmpyausmi; ausmupmwi-
]earmw ó w }³
 [vn;aumi;
 t i;0acw ri;|u;b;awm trw|u; ausmupmwi-
]0? ear^m w ó b*0awm t&[awm? or^mor' ó }⁴
 [vn;aumi; tpj|a&;x;x;m;ww|uon/
 po|ji| y*? yi; , ? t i;0acw ausmupmrsm;u av^vml|unaomtcg b&m;u
 0;xym;í ausmupma&;x; tpj|xm;|ci;onyi A'omoemxe;um;p tceausmupm
 pmay\ wez;uoEiygon/ b&m;u ||unn|av;pm; jrwe;½aoaom jrermw\
 pwxm;? Ev;om;u aw|jri&aom ausmupmrsm;jzpygon/
 ausmupmwwi t vL&iw\ &n&, cursm;onvn; b^mom omoemu a&;½ í
 vLaom t vLrwwr;wicsm;yijzpon/
 awmi*eb&m;ausmupmwi-
]o ó g&m;q0ji , cyu , aom [ue&mzpaom rnaom y[m tzp u0
 v0aom [a|u^mi]}⁵
 [qi;&cyor;ue&m b&m;qu &n&, xm;on/
 y*acw apmri;vwb&m;ausmupmwi-
]e&yec;romu0 v0aom a|u^mi}}¹
 [jir;at;|ci; eAmeu r|uar^mujy &n&, xm;on/
 yi; , acw cire&wemapwausmupmwi-

¹ {armi? 0;? 1958? 12/

² jir;armi? 0;? 1983? 1/

³ , i;~? 7/

⁴ , i;~? 64/

⁵ {armi? 0;? 1958? 13/

¹ , i;~? 52/

]]b&m;q u0 v0c:iaomaumi}}²
 [| b&m;jzpc:iaom qu &n& , x m;on/
 t i;0acw yw;o*&mZmau sm upmwi-
]]&wem oyg \ t u s;p;y m;zpprao m i m}}³
 [| b&m;? w&m; &wem(3)y g; twu xe;u m; jyey m;apvaom &n& , c s u jzpon/
 t i;0acw ri;β u;b;awm t rwu; au sm upmwi-
]]o oem i max m iwn praom i m}}⁴
 [| t v l&i \ o moema&q i&m &n& , c u w on b&m;q? eA meq? &wem(3)y g; twu
 o moemwnwapvaom q w t r sm;q; &n& , l u on/ jrerm v r s;w , a e x u w i
 l un n j r w E;aom qaw m i;on &n& , c u r sm; jzplu on/

 3? 2/ t v l y p n;Ei t v l j y \ v y y v m o moema&q i&m "av
 A' b m o m 0 i jrerm v r s;w on b&m;q i;wawm oe;v y y a Z m w w l u a o m
 jrerm&;&m ye;yyn m "av &l u on/ p on u au sm up m r sm;w i aw l &on/
 &mZur m&au sm upmwi rci \ t q i we q m r sm;u a&j zi t w y;aom b&m;u
 oe;v y a l u m i;u-
]]½ , t w y&m o i t q i y í }}⁵
 [| v n;aum i;? y*acwo i u; t b e E o au sm upmwi w i;c w b&m;ociu a&&n a&;
 a l u m i;u
]]w i a c w b&m;ociu 0 w m 0 c y y g i a v [| , &n& , \ }}⁶
 [| v n;aum i; jrerm w \ b&m;x v y y a Z m a o m o moema&q i&m jrerm "a v u a w l E i
 y g on/ x v y y;om;b&m;u r r w w w E i v i w w E i o v b&m;a&c j c i;? a&oe;j c i;
 w u j y \ v y w w l u a l u m i;? a&j zi t w y;aom b&m;u v n; oe;v y y a Z m w w l u a l u m i;
 a w l E i y g on/ y*acw w i a&u t&n u s ow v r;aom "a v w p&y u aw E i y g on/
 A' b m o m 0 i jrerm w on *b&m;y x;w n í l un n u;u , w w a o m "a v u
 au sm up m r sm;w i aw l E i y g on/ &mZur m&au sm upmwi —

² {arm i? O;? 1958? 7/

³ , i;-? 64/

⁴ j i r;arm i? O;? 1983? 52/

⁵ {arm i? O;? 1958? 3/

⁶ , i;-? 11/

]]x^{1/2}, y&mu Xmyem^{1/2}, | p&, t xw raom *y{\}}¹

[| a&;x;x;m;csu t& a&q;wu jrwpmb&;i\ u, pm;tjzp xvyum u;u, r
*b&; wnum a&q;wu Xmyemly; wnxm;u;u, rwion A'bomu ouoi
, lunluaom jrermw\ lunni|ci; tjriq;u jyaom jy, *rsm;yijzpon/

x|yi b&;? apw? yx;wnjci;rsm;u ay:awmr b&; ausmupmwi-

]]y[mav octy{\yx0avEpze}}²

[vn;aumi;?

y*acwapmri;vw b&; ausmupmwi-

]]apwEi u? apwu a&t xwwi? ovcw? b&;y{\}}³

[| vn;aumi;awlon/ pwi*wnjci;? apwwnjci;? b&;wnjci;wlon
omoema&q; i&m jrerm"avrm;jzpon/ apmri;vw b&;ausmupmwi apwu
a&twjy;aom t xwwijy; t xwu yrqe;u, ap&e cowcyEy weqm qialumi;
aw&on/ xalumi y*acwu a&? aipaom tz;weausmursrsm;en;w ov? ow
paom ypn;tjzp o;pav&alumi; bmoa&;? omoema&; tvlypn;tjzp to;jyav
&alumi; jrerm"avwp&yu aw&ygon/

ay:awmr b&;ausmupmwi tvl&ion-

]]aumiavy{\anmia&pyipu{\romZ&yavy{\

ueavwpcw{\omaEpa, muav&[er{\ oiueimaqnavy{ y&um&m

tulavy{ awpaEprm jcwcexyZm0{ e, |, urmjca v owmio{}}⁴

[| tvlyjy;u azmjyxm;&m b&;te;ü be;u;ausmi;wnaom"avrm, aexuwiyi
jzpayon/ b&;? ausmi;uewü anmiyipuaomtavon/ y*acwuyi xe;um;ae
lyjzpalumi;? anmiyi u jrwpmb&;yiawmr&m aAm"yitjzp tav;tjrwxm;alumi;?
jrermomoema&; "avwpctjzp orwEiygon/

jrermwlon oCmawmw xr w&;em&jci;u Epouluon/ ojzpi "rom
Z&yaqmu vyvL'ge;lujci;jzpayrn/ w&;a[my*vwEi w&;emy*vw w&;a[m
ajymEi&etwu "romZ&yaqmu vy vL'ge;lujci;jzpon/ jrermvrsk;w\ tvLrsm;
on b&;wn ausmi;aqmuly;v|i a&uew;azm vL'ge;wwaom "av&&m]ja&uew;
aom tvlu y*acwuyi aw&Eiygon/ a&vly;v|i]ja&tusk;q, yg; rawmi;b&&
ygv\ [qawmi;wwuao;on/ pau smupmwi vn; om;Epa, mu &[e;jyay;jci;
uluní]jrerm"avonom;jzpou yAZtar&iomraPtjzp owoi;cs;jri&aom

¹ {armi? 0;? 1958? 3/

² , i;-/

³ , i;-? 11/

⁴ jir;armi? 0;? 1983? 1/

aumi;ru boma&"av t jzp c , w w u a l u m i ; a w E i o n / x j y i o C m a w m w t m ;
y&u&m&pyg; t v l j y a y ; y u u n i o C m a w m w t w u y&u&m&pyg; t v l j y y t a& ; u ;
a l u m i ; a w & o n / x j y i b&m ; w i w c e x ; v l j c i ; ? x ; j z l v l j c i ; w j y v y w w u a o m
j r e r m b o m a& ; " a v u a w & y g o n / A ' b o m o i w t z l a e p o v a q m u w n j c i ; o n
t r e j r w q ; a o m b o m a& ; x ; p w p c y i j z p o n / t v l&iw \ A ' l o o g ' u a v ; a v ;
j r w j r w v u e m u i o ; y ? b o m a& ; c , c s u & i u s u l u y u a w E i y g o n /

y i ; , a c w a u s m i ; o n i j y n n a u s m u p m w i -

]] " r o m u 0 o y w \ } } ^1

[a z m j y y g & & m & [e ; o C m w 0 y o j y & e " r o m Z & y u o r t j z p i y e v n j y \ v y o r w c j c i ;
j z p a y o n /]] o u e ; r m u x e a u s m i ; r m o r } } q o n t w i ; & [e ; w t w u o r r & r j z p
v t y o u o t j r w q ; t v l [, q l u o n /

o i l u ; t b e E o a u s m u p m w i -

w i a c w y & m o c i u 1/2 , x a q m i { 1/2 , y v i j y { ^2

[a z m j y y g & & m b&m ; o c i u b&m ; o c i u x ; j z l t y r ; j c i ; a&x ; a i x ; a q m i ; j c i ; o n
& e t E&m , t a y g i ; u x ; u o t y r ; u m a y ; a p v a o m j r e r m c , c u " a v y i j z p o n / p w i
a&y v i j y \ [a z m j y y g & & m j r w p m b&m ; o w i ; o ; & m t y & m Z w y v i j y l a o m j r e r m " a v
j z p o n /

p a u s m u p m w i x ; j c m ; c s u w p c r m -

]] i m l u u 0 a v v l { t ? o r r , m u 0 a v v l { t o r l u u 0 a v v l { t
o r i , a r m i r u 0 v l { t } } ^3

[a z m j y x m ; & m b&m ; a v m i ; a 0 ó E&m u o l a o m x ; w r ; " a v t w i ; r r u , E i r o m ; p
y i q i a o m a u ; u e r s m ; v l v l a o m t v l r s k ; j z p a l u m i ; a w & o n / u e r s m ; u r r \
u , w i y p n ; O p m t j z p o a b m x m ; u m b&m ; u v l ' g e ; j c i ; ? r r u , u , b&m ; u e t j z p
v l ' g e ; j c i ; w r m b&m ; u e j z p & o n r m j r i j r w o n [c , o n x a c w u j r e r m w \ " a v
x ; w r ; p 0 v m y i j z p o n /

y * a c w a c r m 0 & b&m ; a u s m u p m w i -

]] u j c , o b i ? & , a y g u 2 ? i , a y g u 2 ? q r o i y w a v a n m i } } ^1

[t v l&i e m ; a w m i ; r s m ; r i ; l u ; o n r r t v l w i u j c , o b i v n ; v l a l u m i ; u j c ,
o b i o n t v l (y e ; c ? u a c ? a o & n ? E m ; v m ; ? r e ; r) i g ; r s k ; w i t v l r a j r m u a o m v n ;

¹ j i r ; a r m i ? O ; ? 1983 ? 1 /

² { a r m i ? O ; ? 1958 ? 11 /

³ { a r m i ? O ; ? 1958 ? 12 /

¹ , i ; - ? 30 /

y*acwu tEynm onrsm;yu e&aq;a&ye;crsm;t&o&on/ tjcmt vl ypn;rsm;u
vn;b&m;twu qr;0w? oiyw0wjzpa aomimvn;aumi;? a&ayguaygu?
aiayguaygupaom a&aiyiwu vn;aumi;vlaom jrerm"avu aw&on/

w&m;awm u vn; jrwe;wez;xm;wwluaom jrerm"avu aumupm rsm;wi
awEiygon/ ay:awmr b&m; aumupmwi t vljy&mü-

]]e'gezav wpu mr&{}}²

[vn;aumi;?

o iu;t beEo aumupm wi-

]]"rp lum? lwsmwaqmiav{t}}³

[vn;aumi;?

]]y#poryw lwsm w0avaqmi{t}}⁴

[vn;aumi;?

acrm0&b&m;aumupmwi-

]]y#uw y\wr \}}⁵

[vn;aumi; a&om;xm;on/ e'ge;pmwpur; "rp lumw&m;? y#poryww&m;?
y#uw(3)y wua&om;vl'ge;alumi; a&x;xm;ygon/ "rp lumw&m;awm u ay&u
xe&uay:wi tu&mwiaqmi vl'ge;ouo y#poryww&m;awm u vn; Ewwu
tm*aqmiapaom"avon omoema&wi av;av;jrwrweueu&i&i; ou0i
, lunluaom jrerm"avyijzpon/

y*acw acrm0&b&m;aumupmwi-

]]oioCmw0u0 rwm bg0em xmpaomim r,Eixe1050)⁶

oCmawwltm; w&m;b0emy;rsm;Ei&e ajrEixe; rsm;pm vlyuaxmu í jrermwon
b&m;t vl? w&m;t vluorru vu&oCmawmjrwu vl'ge;aom tav tvm on
omoemawm t"e&na&u &np;aom tav t xjzpaumi; aw&on/

yi; , acw cire&wemapwau smupmwi t vljy/vyaomaewi-

² {armi? 0;? 1958? 1/

³ , i;-/ 11/

⁴ , i;-/

⁵ , i;-? 30/

⁶ , i;-? 30/

jywnominyi? o iueq20? y&wc&m8yg;av 13p? Aqwuaqmi
be0r py&mav 13pr awmia0zeyjyw0 u&mav13p pyg taygium
1756 wiai 784 u sy}}¹

[t vlypn;w uazmjyyg&&m t vlypn;tptvivl'ge;alumi;oEiygon/ ya'omyi
cswqumvLwwaom jrerm"av? oCmawmw twu ypn;av;yg;jynp&e &np;um
cwi? ty&m? awmia0;? zey? ax;cponjzi tpvu vL'ge;wwaom jrerm"av? xlyi
qr;ur;jynpap&e pyg;? aiuywji jynpapaom jrerm"avu awl&ygon/

xlyi yi; , acw cire&wemapwau sm upmwi b&m;Ei oCmawmw tvy
taus;jzap&e v , use? , muersm;u pm&i;jypum vL'ge;alumi;u-

]]u;eum;iaumipi? t0pyu etaygium 27a , muaw}}²

[azmjyc;ut& b&m;?w&m;?oCm twu useuowowrwrwvL'ge;aom jrerm"
avu aw&on/

t i;0acwoajy&;&m b&m;vau sm upmwi t vlypn;rm b&m;EioCmawm
wtwu xe;yiEite;yirsm; vLalumi;u-

]]xew0u0vn ppiz&m v t moi yw0wqr0w zppr aomim}}³

[vn;aumi;?

]]teEiwew0u0 wrum aumiae rxnonvsi orrefi}}⁴

[vnaumi; azmjyyg&&m omoemawm t u s; twu b&m;u vLaom t vL oCm awmu
vLaom t vLwu o;yipm;yirsm;yg vL'ge;aom jrerm"avu lunniz , aw&on/

oCmawmw on b&m; \ om;awmrsm;jzpon [c , xm;aom jrermwon
y*acwuvn; &[e; oCmawmw u 0;xyxm; vL'ge;wwu onu awl&ygon/
&mZurm&au sm upmwi &[e;awmw a&llarmuü a&pucvL'ge;alumi;u -

]]ol* ja ['0? ol*aomexoiw0 \ tarmuaw \ ri& , aome \ }}⁵

[&[e;awmw \ btrnrsm;u rwrwom;om; a&x;rwwr;wi xm;onu awl&
on/ lu;jrwaom oCmawmjrrwu 0;xyxm; t vLaumi;rjy u m a&pucwwu
alumi; aw&on/

xltw awmi*eb&m;au sm upmwi *xmyemaom t cg &[e;awmrsm; y&w&w
alumi;u-

¹ lir;armi? 0;? 1983? 11/

² jir;armi? 0;? 1983? 13/

³ , i;-? 67/

⁴ , i;-? 71/

⁵ {armi? 0;? 1958? 4/

]]*xmyemaomlw0? y&w&waomum

oir[max&? oi*Pm&aov? oitu}}¹

[azmjyxm;on/ pausmupmwi &[e;awmrsm; a&armuwi uovaumi;rjyl&mü
raumi;on tE&m, rsm; t&twm;? twm;tq;jzpap&e y&w&wqwwluaom jrerm
"avu rwwr;wixm;on/

oiu;tbeEoausmupmwi oCmawmrsm;u oue;vllaumi;q;uyalumi;
azmjy&mwi —

]]omiue(15)qav y,{t oCm(100)aomav pmy,{t
oiu;wiacwav xri;0wy,{t}}²

[tvljysmyu azmjyyg&on/ A'bom0iwon tvlaumi;rjyl&mwi A'\om;awm
jzpaom &[e;oCmawmwitay: rnrsmtav;xm;alumi;? b&m;wynoCmawmwon
b&m;omoemawm^u apmia&muorsm;jzp&m taxmutyjp&e oue;vllaumi;?
&[e; oCmwa&Uarmuü ouaojyí a&puc:tvljyav&alumi;? &[e;oCmawmwu
y&w &wzwav&alumi;? xtvljyonaewi &[e;oCmawmwit^m; qr;quuy
vl'ge;aom "av&alumi;pon jrermw\jrijrwí jrwe;z, ? lunnz, "avrsm;u
a&x;xm;ygon/ polaom a&puc:on"av? y&w&waom "av? qr;uyvlyazmaom
"avwon jrermvrsm;w/ tvl'gejyvy&mwi rygryzp, aexuwi jy\vywwluaom
tvlaumi;r"avrsm;jzpygon/ x"avrsm;on y*acwuyi tpysm;calumi;? Ausmupm
rsm;u ouaojyaeygon/

xo/ tvljyaomaewi yvr;obitcr;tem;Ei vl'ge;ruvn; acrm0& b&m;
ausmupmwi —

]]apnc&gw&,y0yg trw&sm &[e;oCmEi wu a&piw0c{t}}³

[azmjyyg&&m tvl&iem;awmi;rsm; ri;u;\ tvl rnrsmcr;em;wiw, rnjzpalumi;
cere;o&&ygon/ tvljy\vyomaewi tvl&iEioCmawmten;i,Ei at;at;
cr;cr;a&puc:aom tvljy\y&ouo/ tvl&iri;? r;rw? rz&m;? Avyg? y&ow? wi;o
jynomm;wjzi aysmaysmyg;yg;? cr;cr;em;em; jy\vywwaom tvljysmyrsm;vn;&alumi;
jrerm"avu awEiygon/ ajAmpnw;ívlaom jrerm"avon y*acwuyi&calumi;
awEiygon/ pmay½axmirunvsmi vn; a&puc:onu a&piawmc:on [o;Ee;
calumi; o&ygon/ qr;pujysmonu xri;0way; \ [o;Ee;yuvn; o&on/

ti;0acwri;lu;b;awm trwlu;ausmupmwi b;awmtrwlu;\ ausmi;tvL
Ei ajrtvlu vl'ge;&mü r;ni;ri;w&m;lu;u, awmwi a&puc:vl'ge;alumi;u-

¹ {armí? 0;? 1958? 14/

² , i;-? 11/

³ , i;-? 31/

]]aumirtvltu0u0 imEi"yw &pygapaom [&, vuw0Ei
a&pic& trzc, wroawn}}¹

[ausmupmwi rwwr;wixm;on/ A;o;ajcmuu xi;íá&xnxm;aom u&m;u
cjcí;jzi a&puc:aom "avuvn; jrerm"avtjzp awEiygon/ tycyori; u, wi
a&puc: vL'ge;ay;onuvn; aw&ygon/ a&puc:cjci;"avon 0oaEajru;u
ouaowní rrtvlu a&puoe;c luji;jzpon/ jrermwon a&putwwc:cv(i
aemub0tx a&puygon[vuc, lunluaom vavmu? vra&qí&m avmu
t, tqx cpm;vuccluonuvn; aw&Eiygon/

xltw y*acw&mZurm&ausmupmwivn; om;awm&mZurm&\ tvlu zci
ueppom;rilu;u om"tEarm'em ac:callumi;u-

]]x0a&m0aw[riEpu&t&um aumiaviaw[aumiaviaw[
re&, {t}}²

[azmija&x;xm;& tvlaumi;rjyiy; xtvluom"ac:í a&puoe:cwwluaom
rejrwon omoema&qí&m"avuaw&on/ rrjy/vyontvLjzpap? owpyg;
jy/vyaom tvLjzpap]]om" om" om"}} [om"o;urac:í uovur(a0cpm;wwlu
onrm , aexuwi; jrermw&, wwluaom lunE;z, "avwp&yjzpon/ ygVpum;
om" ujrermjyeqí aumiaviaw[[o;yuvn; pmay½axmir ½jriEiygon/

lci o;oycu

jrermasupmrsm;uavvmí y*acwwi A'bomu tx;ou0i, lunaelu
ly;bmoa&;? omoema&Eiywouí &wem(3)yg;u 0;xyxm;aelulyjzpalumi;oEi
on/ b&m;wnjci;u tvlypn;tjzp trwwE; wez;xm;wwlu; tvLjyly;v(i
owi;ov aqmuwnwwluaumi;? rrwitvltay:wi *P, lunE;awwwlu
alumi;u tvL&iw\ tvLjylyrsm;u luníoeEion/ xacwu tvltwe;taeji
tvL&ito;o;\ Opmypn;&ontavsmujzpayrn/ jrermwon tvL'gejy&mwi
tvL0w ten;trsm;on y"mer[w apwemo'gw&m; xuoeronom t"ujzp
alumi;u acrm0&b&m; ausmupmrem;awm;rs; ri;lu;\ tvLcr;em;y ri;teEoze;
armiE\ tvlu;us,yEi yi;, acw ausmi;onijynnvir, m;\ omret&yom;
wp0;\ tvLjylywu Ei;, OlunvioEiygon/ jrermasupmrsm;vm omoema&;
qí&m"avrs;wi tzi*gxmtpcsyrm y*acw? yi;, acw? ti;0acw ausmupmrsm;
twwe;yg; xywxysrwnalumi; aw&on/ jrermw\ pwx? Ev;x? toxwi
b&m;&c;0;cjci;u pmayay:wivn; rwwr;wi0;xyxm;aom oabmawEi ygon/
ausmupm\ &n&, csuwrvm; b&m;q? eAmeq? omoemig;axmiwnw apvaom
qwuyi &n&, a&x;alumi; aw&on/ A'bomü y*acwjrmw\ , lunr
twi;twmu ausmupmrwwr;rs;u azmijcon/

¹ jir;armi? 0? 1983? 55/

² {armi? 0? 1958? 1/

t vlypn;Ei t vlyjyrmr y*acwon omoempwipnyixe;um; jyeym;ump
 jzpí t vlypn;yípvium t vlyjy yícr;em;lu;us, clualumi; aw&on/ yi; , a
 cwwi t vlypn;tr;trn pviaomvn; t vlyjyrm;rm y*acwuor;rm;pm
 lu;us, cr;em;pm rjy/vyluawmay/ ti;0acwwir ausmi;Eiajruom t"uxm;vlu
 alumi;aw&on/ rrwvlaom t vlypn;talumi;u lunnz, aumi;atmi a&x;
 xm;luonrm ausmupmrsm;t;v; twwyijzpon/ ao;i, aom t vL&ouo
 v, y, axmiEicly;vlon t vlvn;&on/ t vL'gely;vli 0oaEajru;t;
 wiwnontaejzi a&pucsvL'ge;rt vLu;jynpon [, lunluon "av&on/
 xalumi ausmupmrsm;uavvmí lu;lu, cr;em;aom t vLrsm;? jrWE;av;pm;z,
 aumi;aom t vLrsm;u o&rwom;ci&aomallumi jrerausmupmrsm;r t vLrwwr;
 rsm;on A'bom0iwtwu wez;xm;xuao ausmupmrsm;jzpygon/

e*;

jrerausmupmrsm; \ omoema&qí&m jrerm"avrm;pmwr;u avvmwijy;
 jzpygon/ omoema&qí&mEiywouí tcsu(2)cuizpaom ausmupm \ tpEi
 t vL&i \ &n&, cuqi&m omoema&"avrm;? t vlypn;Ei t vlyjyqi&muom
 wijycygon/ quvu pmwr;wi&ewi qawmi;? trla0? usepmwwi awl&aom
 omoema&"avu avvm&eueygao;on/ bpmwr;twu aus;Z;wixuo t m;v;
 u aus;Z;wiygon/

u;r;u;pm&i;

jrermptz/ (2018) *jrerm t b"mel* &eue? pmayArmeYeywu/
 jir;armi? 0;/ (1982-83) *a&a [mi;jrerausmupmrsm;(' -ww)* &eue? yEya&Eipm tyxwa0a&;
 vyie;aumya&;&i;/
 {armi? 0;? ygarmul (1958) *y*ausmupmvua&pil* &eue? ynmeEYeywu/
 "r ó mrb0o? t&i/ (2005) *acwryjVjrerm t b"mel* oe;xe;atmzqu? &eue/
 jrauwl (1994) *wu o/vp mayweaqmil* atmi0i;oe;yEywu? &eue/
 vi0i;aql (2014) *a&a [mi;urn;pmrm;f* &eue? *wpyEypu½/
 zw&avvm on pmt ypm&i;
 c;parmi? 0;? pEmrPl *A'bomqí&m taxaxA [owrmwumur;f* (1981) *o""r0w yEywu/*
 apmvl (1993) *y*acwjrermpm* &eue? pmayArmeYeywu/
 aZ, oc, ml (1963) *a&be'ge;f* &eue? [eom0wyEywu/
 aZm*;/ (1966) *&opmaye'ge;f* oaiyyEywu? rEav;/
 azarmiwi? 0;/ (2013) *jrerm pmaori;f* &eue? &mjynpmt ywu/
 vorel(1969) *y*acwjiui;u;f* &eue? ti;0xe;pmyEywu/
 oe;aq? 0;/ (1994) *ori;0i y*apwyx;r;f* &eue? jr0wyEywu/

20&mpaEmi;r pma&q&mrEp0;\ taw;tjri0w\wEpy'o;oycu

Zmenvi*

ဘဝင်းအကျဉ်း

**bpmw;acwop0w\pma&q&mrEp0;jzpaom *L;Eir0i(jrpi,) w\ 0w\wEpy'u
avvmo;oyxm;aom pmwr;jzpon/ xol avvwmwijy&mwi acwop0w\ww\
oabmobm0? twwynmEi cex;um xpa&q&mrEp0;\ 0w\wEpy'u 0w\w
zew;r twwynmEi cex;avvwmwijyxm;ygon/ bpmwr;rwpqi acwop
0w\wrsm;\ avvwm&mwi taxmutuiyEiygon/**

e'ge;

**bpmw;on cpm;otluur*Zi;0w\wrsm;(1)r 0w\w (2)y'u avvmo;oy
xm;aom pmwr;jzpon/ avvmo;oyon 0w\w (2)y'rm *L;\ opr;wp&0w\wEi
r0i(jrpi,)\ wr&yEi;q 0w\wwijzpygon/ avvmo;oy&mwi (1)0w\ \ tma**bm**?
(2)Zmwvr;qiy? (3) tjc;zew;re,y, rsm; avvmcu [í tyi;av;yi;cum o;oy
wijom;ygrn/**

1/ 0w\woabmobm0

**&opmay[onum; pma&o \ taw;tjri? cpm;rwu taiccuu pwu;OmPji
&ojrmuatmi yazmzuxm;aom pmaytzutEiyijzpon/ xola&zU&mwi pma&o \
apwem? talumi;t&m? a&zUy (yoPme)uvu í uAsm? jyZmw? 0w\ ponji
pmaytr<;tpm;rsm; uijm;om;ygon/ &opmayu tr<;tpm;clunvi uAsmEi pum;ajy
[í r<;&i;U; (2)c cEiy;? 0;wncuZmwvr;? Zmwaqmi? umva'own;[aom
0w\ t*g&yrm; yg0iluoncn;yijzpygon/ 0w\&nwi 0w\ t*g&ywu vtyov
us,jyepm xnoi;Eiy; 0w\wwir oiwi^{1/2}yrnPavmuom xnoi;Eiayon/
0w\wEiywou í ynm&irms;u tr<;r<;t"ym,ziqluon/**

q&m qijzLue;atmioe;u-

**]]0wa&o \ taw;tjritawU tUuEi cpm;cuapwemrsm;? a0'emrsm;u
pmzwox vijrepmay;yEi wijyEiaom quo,a&u&,rm 0w\
wijzpayon}} (pm 209)**

[vn;aumi;? o&, uEu-

* vuaxmuuxu? jrermpmXme? &eueta%lyi;wuov

]]0w\qonrm pma&o\ x;xi;0mPuto;jyí avmulu;\ taje
tae? tjzptyutq;taumi;? t½ytax;wu qijcip0;pm; aw;awm
ajrmrijy; obm0uatmi a&om;xm;ji;yijzpon}} (pm 30)

[vn;aumi;? q&mwuw;u-

]]0w\wwiZmwvr;? Zmwu uony"mer[w? Zmwaqmi\csuyiaom
b0uwpcur\ azmijEi\vi 0ww\upiy;ajrmuij [qEiyg\}} (pm 10)

[vn;aumi;? qr;rm;qurr\ tq u ausmatmi u-

]]0w\wwi pma&q&m buu pmrsEmrsm;rsm;r&ozi ta&lu;wmavmuy
ajymEion/ uewmupmzwou jznjy;p0;pm;&on/ aw;,&on/
pmzwo tawtu\ u;v\i\ u;oavmu totjri\ u, v\i\ u, oavmu
cpm;& , Eion/ ponrm acwop0ww\ oabmizpon}}

[vn;umi;? tu*gt , viy; \ tquri; , a0u-

]]0ww[onrm tm½usupm;rwpcwn; x;x;om&&rn/ wpxiwn;
zwEiavmuatmi w&rn}} (pm 3)

[vn;aumi;? 0;lu;armi (ai0a'gi;) u-

]], aer*Zi;rsm;wiaw\&aom wpy'wn;jzi tq;owon0w\rsm;u
0ww[trsm;u totrwjy\luon}} (pm 17)

[vn;aumi;? q&mri;ausmu-

]]twawmi;q;tceyi;twi; ten;q;Zmwaqmiw\ vy&m;ror[w
tjzptyuor[w tm½cpm;ru pmv;ta&twu ten;Eiq;jzi
uspupv;pvp a&z\wijaom v\taumi;pmwu 0ww[qvi
rm;vrrn [rxiyg}} (pm 117)

[vn;aumi; tr;r\;tqjycluon/ 0wwwoabmu teuziq&e cucyu q&m
atmioi;u-

]]0ww\oabmu teuzilu&mü pozivuv\i x0ww\rsm;u
u\seae\ / xoteuzivuv\i p0ww\rsm;u u\seae\ / 0ww
[oru tus\;0iatmi teuziye\vi vn; &opmay[or\ 0ww\cn;
jzp&awm rnuo\ &aeavawmon}} (pm 4)

[qxm;&m 0ww\oabmrm us , jye\vy;teuziq&e cucvygon/ x\alumiww
\oabmEiywouí ynm&iwtqjy\luonu jclunv\i0ww[on pma&o
ajymvaomt abmu Zmwaqmiw\ tjzptyurwqi pmzwo tm; wppwpcuom
cpm;r? wppwpcuom taw;tjriu ay:ayguvmatmi pmv;a&ten;q;? Zmwvr;
Zmwuuwu u;0;u;0;jzia&z\xm;aom &oajrmupum;ajytzwpr\; [, qEiygon/

2/ 0w\w t *g&yrsm;

0w\zwí&oiáom t*g&yrsm;uavvmlunv\ 0w\wwijzpap? 0w\&nwi
jzpaptajcctm;ji wnaom t*g&yrsm;&ygon/ 0w\wt*g&y [qaomvn; 0w\&nwi
tusk;0ijy;? 0w\&nt*g&yonvn; 0w\wwi tusk;0iygon/ tc\Uaomynm&irms;u
0w\wpy'wi&oiáom t*g&yrsm;uazmjy&mwi o& , uE u-

[(1) 0w\ \&n& , csu

(2) 0w\om;

(3) 0w\tajm

(4) 0w\aeuuc

(5) o½yazmr

(6) usk;allumi;azmjycsu

(7) obm0ur

(8) t½ytax&i;vi;csu}} (pm 262)

[í 0w\ \ t*g&yu ovrwcon/

wuovbe;Ei \ 0w\&n [on pmwr;wi-

[(1) apwem (2) Zmwalmi; (3) Zmwaqmi (4) Zmwuu (5) Zmwvr;

(6) en;ynm (7) [e}} (pm 24)

[vn;aumi;? q&mri; , a0u vn;]]&opmaywi 0w\ [aomtzu &tyaom t*g&y
rsm;rsm-

(1) Zmwvr;

(2) umva'oyw0e;u;i

(3) v\obm0tzl

(4) b0jy ó em

(5) taxaxo½yazmtz}} (pm 166)

[í 0w\ü&oiáom t*g&yrsm;u azmjycon/ 0w\ü&oiáom t*g&yrsm;u wijy&mwi
ynm&iw\ \ t , tqrm;ujym;aom oabmw&m;rm twwyijzpyg on/ jc\íunv\i
tajcctm;ji wnaom 0w\wt*g&yrsm;rsm-

(1) tmabm

(2) Zmwvr;

(3) Zmwaqmi

(4) umva'oaemucwizpygon/

2¹ 1/ t mab m

t mab m q o n r m p m a & ; o t " u a j y m v a o m q v & i ; y i j z p o n / 0 w \ w w p y ' q ; v i p m a & ; o a j y m v a o m t a w ; t j r i w p c u a w \ & r n j z p o n / x t a w ; t j r i u t m a b m [a c : y g o n / 0 w \ t m a b m E i y w o u í q & m a t m i o i ; u -

]] t m a b m q o n r m 0 w \ w p y ' u c s \ j y ; p 0 ; p m ; v u v i x i & m ; p m a y : v m a o m y " m e q v & i ; y i j z p y g o n / a v m u t a l u m i ; ? v \ t a l u m i ; E i y w o u í 0 w \ q & m u w i j y v u a o m x i j r i c : u y i j z p y g o n } } (p m 11)

[í t m a b m \ t " y m , u w i j y x m ; y g o n / 0 w \ w p y ' w i t m a b m t a & ; l u ; y E i y w o u í q & m a t m i o i ; u -

]] 0 w \ a & ; o o n o \ b 0 t a w \ t l u \ w p c c r t o t j r i w p c c u c p m ; o v m w w y g o n / x t o u w y g ; o t m ; c p m ; o o r \ a 0 a y ; v a o m q E a y : v m y g v r r n / x a p w e m o n y i o \ t m a b m j z p v m y g v r r n / x t m a b m u a y : v i a p E i a o m t a l u m i ; t & m u z e w ; & v r r n / x t a l u m i ; t & m o n 0 w \ Z m w v r ; w i t a & ; t l u ; q ; t p w t y i ; j z p & v r r n / p o v i Z m w v r ; ? Z m w u u E i y p n ; r s m ; u y g & m a z & y g v r r n } } (p m 319)

[q x m ; o n / x t q t & p m a & ; o o n r r c p m ; o v m & a o m t o t j r i w p c u p m z w o t m ; r \ a 0 a y ; c i o n t c g r r a j y m v a o m a p w e m E i v u z u a o m t a l u m i ; t & m u & m a z & o n / x t a l u m i ; t & m u o i a w m a o m Z m w v r ; ? Z m w a q m i ? u m v a ' o j z i 0 w \ w p y ' u z e w ; & o n / x o p m a & ; q & m \ a p w e m u a y : v i a t m i a z m j y j c i ; o n y i v i p m a & ; q & m \ t m a b m j z p o n / x a l u m i 0 w \ w p y ' w i t m a b m o n t a & ; l u ; a o m t p w t y i ; j z p o n t j y i 0 w \ u y u i x e ; a y ; a e a o m y " m e t u : q ; t * g & y v n ; j z p y g o n /

2² 2/ Z m w v r ;

0 w \ w \ t * g & y r s m ; w i Z m w v r ; o n v n ; t y g t 0 i j z p y g o n / 0 w \ w w i a w \ & a o m Z m w v r ; \ o a b m u y n m & i w t r s ; r s ; z i q l u y g o n / t ; t r a z m p w m \ t q u q & m a t m i o i ; u -

]] q & m l u ; a z m p w m \ t m a b m u c s y l u n v i Z m w v r ; q o n r m t j z p t y u r s m ; u u s ; a l u m i ; q u p y j y x m ; a o m j z p p 0 ? j r y u u u a v ; r s m ; x n o i ; j c i ; t m ; j z i E p o u z , j z p a t m i j y \ v y E i o n / p o l , & r n x i y g o n } } (p m 138)

[q x m ; o n /

]] Z m w v r ; q o n r m Z m w a q m i w \ b 0 v r ; a l u m i ; t o t j r i u r a r \ m v i b a j y m i ; v o m ; a p o n t j z p t y u u u s ; a l u m i ; q u p y j y x m ; a o m j z p p 0 w p c [q c i r y g o n } } (p m 143)

[vn; Zmwvr; \ oabmuziqxm; on/

Zmwvr; \ ta&;ygyEi ywouí q&mwuw;u-

]]0wZmwvr;on ta&;lu;von/ zwoonZmwvr;u t^{m½}jy\on/
Zmwvr;ü pw0ipm;ru y"mejy\on}}

(pm 115-116)

[qyg on/

q&mri; , a0u vn; 0w\wt *g&yrs;pmwr;wi-

]]Zmwvr; [on Zmwaqmi tci;ci;aom vn;aumi;? ZmwaqmiEi
ta&;up wpccaom vn;aumi;? Zmwaqmirms;Ei o \ twi;pw oEme
aom vn;aumi;? qeui bu titm;ptm;jy\i&mr ay:xu vmaom
oabmjzpygon/ x\alum i0w\jzpv\i Zmwvr;oabmon ten;q;
t&y ta&mir\ ygwwoncn;jzpon}} (pm 168)

[qxm;ygon/

x\alum i Zmwvr; [on jzpp0oabmxu alum i;u\;qupyr oabmu vr;r;
aejy; Zmwaqmiw\ t m;jy\ir? b0tcu tcrsm;jzpay:vmap&e qavsm&m tjzptyu
rsm;u u\;alum i;qupyazmjyxm;aom pma&;o \ zew;rwpc [qEiygon/

2? 3/ Zmwaqmi

0w\wt *g&yrs;wi Zmwaqmionvn; t"utce;u@ryg0iaeygon/
Zmwaqmiqonrm Zmwvr;twi;ygy0ivy&m;aeorsm;jzpygon/ xZmwaqmiw\
jyr? vy&m;? aw\uyrs;u p^½u [ac:ygon/ Zmwaqmiw\ uo;yg;? trt&mu
vuí p^½uaoEi p^½u&i [í cjc m;Eiygon/ ZmwaqmioabmEiywouí q&m
atmioi;u-

]]Zmwaqmiqonrm tb , en; [ar;v\i? Zmwvr;u jzpay:aporsm; [
q&ygrn/ wzeZmwvr;qonrm tb , en;qv\ivn; Zmwaqmirms;
 \ tjy\tr? jzpp0aywn; [q&rnjzpygon}} (pm 74)

[qxm;on/ Zmwaqmiw\ p^½uobm0u-

]]Zmwaqmiw p0; \ p^½u [qv\i omrmetm;jzi o \ u , Ew? Ev;o;yg;?
trt&m tavtxuqv on [ajmEion/ o&mwip^½uao? p^½u&i
obm0wi omrmeuo;yg;trt&m r\;xu b0tjri? u , u\iw&m;pon
wEiywouaom uo;yg;trt&mwuom y"mexm;lualum i; owjyr
ygon}} (pm 205)

[vn;aumi;? q&mwuw;u-

]]ta&;t om;rnryi aumi;apumrvn; vlobm0? vlp½uwu o½y
raqmi v(i (o½yaqmi&mü ratmijriv(i)x0w\wrm pmayq&majrmu
on [qEiz| c , 0;vayon}} (pm 119)

[qxm;on/

p½uaoEi p½u&i jcm;em;csuEi ywou í q&matmioi;u-

]]p½uaoon pum;vq;? pum;vaumi;ponji jywom;pmwiy
Eion/]]p}} wpcujy í t m;u s b , ? puqyb , ? cs;rr;b , ? ½wcsb ,
wu jyuyuxixi ay:viatmi cpm;Eiapon/ p½u&i yoeaom
Zmwaqmiu; vlobm0u; (0g) yxZ0w\ obm0u;u wwEior
u , pm;jy/aeonjzpaomalumi]]p}} rjzpEiawmijy}} (pm 204)

[vn;aumi; p½uaoEi p½u&iw\ oabmu-

]]p½uaoon b0t m;rmeuay;Eion [qv(i p½u&i on b0t b"rm
uay;on [qc;iygon}} (pm 204)

[qxm;ygon/

xalumi Zmwaqmiqonrm Zmwvr;jzpay: vmapor;m;jzp í p½uao
Zmwaqmi jzpay? p½u&iZmwaqmi jzpay 0wZmwvr;u t"uyy;ay;aeor;m;jzplu
on/ p½uaoEip½u&i jcm;em;ralumi a , s b , s t m;ji Zmwvr;y"me0wEi
Zmwaqmiy"me0w\ [í om jcm;em;om;Eiygon/

2) 4/ umva' oaemuc

0wwpy'wi umva'oaemuctzon ta&;ygaom tzlwp&yjzpon/ 0w
xwi umva'oaemu aemucxnoi;&jci;rm Zmwvr;u ']'ravmu&jzp&yEi
watmi xnoi;&jci;jzpon/]]umv}} qonrm]]Zmwvr;jzpwn&macw? tce}} jzp í
]]a'o}} qonrm 0wZmwvr;jzpy m;&mae&mjzpon [qvjci; jzpon/

umva'oEiywou í q&maumatmiu-

]]0w\&nrm Zmwaqmiw\ trn? aexi&mZmw? tceumvwuajym&
on/ 0w\wwium; wpcgwp&Zmwaqmion trnro/ wpcgwp&
Zmwaqmiwpa , mu? aumirav;wpa , mu? c&;om;wpa , mu? ppo m;
wpa , mu? ae&ma'ou vr;wpvr;? jr\wpjr\--- avmuy azmjyv(i vn;
jzpon}} (pm 43)

[í vn;aumi;? o& , uEu-

]]0w\wiygaom Zmwvr;? Zmwuu? Zmwvuwon acwumvtce
twi;obm0us&rn/ obm0ru:v\i 0w\au mi;rjzpEiig;u ue;acgi
acgi ouEm&wi vuouar;ouo\jzpac:rn}} (pm 262)

[ívn;au mi;? q&mausmatmiu-

]]0wwon tceumvueowcu&on/ jy;awmtalumi;t&mw n;q
aomueowcu vn;&on/ olaomvywv natmi aemualumi;jye
ajymontcg ouqioavmuuvmu qeEion/ a'oujzeEion}}

(pm 100)

[ívn;au mi;? q&mri; , a0u-

]]0w\wwi;yi umva'o0e;usi ygjrjzpygon/ o&mwitcs\rm umv
a'o 0e;usi u oi½omwiyxm;on}}

(pm 171)

[ívn;au mi; qxm;yg on/

x\alumi 0w\wwi 0w&nrmavmu umva'oaemucu tus,tjye txi
t&m; rjyEiaomvn; 0w\waumi;wwi acwumvtajctaeon xi[y ay:viae
onomjzpon/

3/ *L; \ opr;wp&0w\w

3/ 1/ Zmwvr; t us0;c\y

*L; \ opr;w&0w\w\ Zmwvr;t us0;c\yrm 0goemEitvy ruunwwy?
{nvr;new\ jyc:iaom 0e;usiEi Eiiijcm;{nonw t m½puwwaom0e;usi uijm;y?
Eiiijcm;{nonw\ oabmxm;tjriEi p½ur sm;? Eiiijcm;{nonw\ oabmobm0
wu a&z\xm;ji;jzpon/

3/ 2/ 0w\ t mabm

*L; \ opr;w&0w\won t mabmy"me 0w\wjzpon/ 0w\w\ t mabmulun
v\i y"met mabmEi tjcm;t mabmrsm;[íaw\Eion/ tyi; (4)ce;yg0iijy; (1) yi;pwi
t mabmwpcpjzi t mabmav;r\;yg0ialumi; aw\&on/

tyi;(1)t mabmu wuqlunv\i {nvr;newi;on vyie;0e;usiEi
ouqion b\&&or sm;r[wuyg/ b0&ywnrtwu touar;0r;ausmi; vyie;u
a&c; , \u&i; {nvr;netjzp vyuiaeor sm;vn; &wwyg on/ p oabmu
pma&ou

]]wuovr rnonb_Uzi at_mi_jricygov [aom ow\ar;ce;u u_ler
 ajzwi; ow_tloom;luav&ygon/ "mwaA't"u_jzi oyb_U&con
 [aom tajzu ow_v;0ar_Um_virx_m;rmaocsm_{on}/ owb_muar_Um_viv_r
 rnqwm u_ler&yrygon/ ta&Uawm_it_m&Eiir_m; \ ,0aus;ror[w
 vra&aA'qwmr_s;? rE ó aA'qwmr_s;? a&a [m_i;oawoeor[w j_rerm
 pmlunwu 'yvrmb_Uqwmr_s;? ori;t"uor[w j_rermp_mt"uqwm
 r_s; ten;q;awm yx0b_momt"u_jzi 0Zmb_U&x_m;z owar_Um_vilurn
 jzpon}} (pm- 11)

[í a&z_Ux_m;on/

x_ljyi0goemEi b0&ywnrtwu touar;0r;alumi;tvyu a&c_s , &m
 wivn; wom;wn;ruswwyg/ v_tr_m;pr_m touar;0r;alumi;twu rr0goemEi
 ruunaomvn; vyci&aom tvyu vyui_U&alumi;u-

]]t retwi;ajym&v_Ui b&m; ta [m_i;aw? j_rU ta [m_i;aw? ori;aw? vra&
 awu u_lerpw0ipm;conr[w? u_leru"mwaiUawu pw0ipm;on/
 j'y_lpiaw? "mwaygi;aw? tuwrEi armv_Us_U;? tEj_rLA;Ei "mwa&mijcn
 r_m;u pw0ipm;on/ omrerupjzi rjri&aom wppwp&m \ jyi;xepm
 tpr;xuvaom t_it_m;owr_s;u pw0ipm;on/ x_lalumi_vn; "mwaA'
 t"ub_momu ,con/ o_laom u_lercpaom tuwraw? y¹/₂we? t_vu
 x&eawon u_lerb0&ywnrEi touar;0r;alumi; tvytwu
 ten;i ,ryi taxmutuay;c_ici;r&ay/ "mwaA'ynm&i [aomb0u
 pwu; ,0cz;aom u_leron pw"mwu_s&m_r em_Us₀;pm & ,armronb0
 o_l wjzn;jzn;a&m_Uvmcon/ ,cawm_Ueron u_lerb ,we;ur
 tyrurrucz;aom u_lerEivuzuvrrn [b ,we;ur rxicraom
 & ,p&maumi;on tvywpcuvyaeriy/ _Ui;r_m{nvr;netvyi
 jzpon/ u_ler\te;yw0e;u_ir oi ,c_ii;r_m;? rwaqr_m;u rr0goem
 ygaom tvyEi rrvyuici&aom tvywwxywn; usygov_m; [_l
 ar;un_v_Ui u;q ,ig;&mciEe;u jii;q_luvrrn/ x_lalumi_vn; u_ler
 on vu&tvyu jilppwy;up&m talumi;r&yg}} (pm-12)

[í ajym [ejzi o¹/₂yazmx_m;on/

t_xuyg t_cuwulun_v_Ui tyi; (1)\t_mab_mon]r_m;aom t_m;jzi rr&&aom
 b_UEi b0&ywnrtwu touar;0r;aumi; t_vya&c_s ,rwon wom;wn;rus
 wwov rr0goemEivyci&aom tvywonvn; wom;wn;ruswwyg}} [í
 jzpon/

tyi;(2)wi Eii_jcm;om; {nonr_m;on j_rermori;? j_rermAoum? j_rerm
 tEynmw_xu r_Uarm_Uvaerb0u pw0ipm;wwon/ _Ui;u -

]]owtm;v;on jrermEiiutvepw0ipm;|uon/ o|aom u|erar(mvi
xm;aom pw0ipm;rEiawm wxywn;ru:yg? u|errmawm u|urwv|u&
on jrermori;? jrerm ,Oau;r? jrermAoum? owar;awm u|er
rxixm;onar;ce;rsl;aw? oe:ycg;vr;xm;on re;uav; wpa ,mutm;
jriont|cg u|erupyp|uon}} (pm-14)

[vn;aumi;?

]]wcsl{nonawu a&w*b&m; apmi;we;ajc&i;r pmuav;vwyu
pw0ipm;|u \ /}}(pm- 15)

[vn;aumi;?

]]vr;ab;r a&ca&a&mi;on ap;onuav;r;m; \ wpae0iaiu u|ertm;
ar;jre;|uon/ u|erjywurm owpw0ipm;Eirn a&a[mi;ypn;rsm;
jyv|ac:om;c|ewi jywura&mur vr;ab;wpae&mü 0uom;wwx;
a&mi;aeon t|xr;onrav;wp0;ur owpw0iwpm; |unluje \ }}
(pm-16)

[vn;aumi;?

]]owon o[moeyvixuyí opazmiqon tvyorm;u pw0i
pm;|uon/ p0u;ri;acgi;avmi;xuyí uewuatmurm we;pw;&i;
&ejzpaelluon a ,mum;? re;rwppw|u pw0ipm;|uon/ rEav;
a&a[mi;jywur pb&m;vww 0wconqaom 0wpw|xuyícnxn
&uon &uue;pirsm;? *ucwvyie;rsm;u pw0ipm;|uon/ (pm-17)

[a&zuxm;yg on/

tyi; (2)tq;wi pma&ou ,w|u]]owon jrermw \ vra&tjri? Eia&
tjriwuocion/ jrermori;Ei jrermAoum? jrerm tEynmwu owEiirm pmt
rsm;rwppqi jynppmzwEioEion/ o|aom jrerm b0 tou&i&ywnr yprsm;uawm
b ,pmtyxrmr jynppmroEi/ jrermEiio a&m uwe;a&mucu eueu¹/₂i;¹/₂i;
pyprom oEirnr[wygv m;}} [ía&zuxm;aom tcsuon tyi;(2) \ t mabmjzpon
[qEiig on/

tyi; (3)wi]]jrermEiio vma&muluon {nonwon jrermEiitay:
oabmxm; tjritrsl;rsl;&ww|uon/ &n& ,c|utrl;rsl;jzi a&m uvm|uon/}} [aom
tcsuon tyi;(3) \ t mabmjzpon [, q&ayon/ {nontrsl;rsl;w \ tjri
trsl;rsl;? oabmxm; trsl;rsl;? p¹/₂utrl;rsl;u ¹/₂axmi trsl;rsl;jzi o¹/₂yazmxm;jci;jzpon/

tyi;(4) \ t mabm on 0w \ y"met mabmjzpon [q&ygrn/ 0ww \ trn
yiv|i y"met mabm tjzp ou0iaeaumi;aw|uon/ opr;wp&quwn;u &i;E;
ur;0ijci;r&aom oabmrm ay:v|aeygon/

]]{nonrsm;on treuomajmwwluon/ jrermEiiuvm&wp&w [m
tjcm;Eiio;c om;v&avmuatmi aps;u;w,}} xpum;uuler jy;ae&
\\ um&mtauw;0i;rm jrerpum;v;ji oqaeom re;uav;
wpa,mu\ oci;ouem;axmi&i;]] [monoci;u xi;oci; r[w
vm;? igow,}} xpum;uvm; uerjy;ae&\\]aemuav;ig;Ep lum&i
jrermEii [m 'vvaead; r, xivm;}} xtar;u uerraizyg/ oltar;x
witajzygy;jzpaey;jzpon/]jrermaw [m ½y0wypn;csllwayr pwxm;
jrijrwc;r;omlluw, /}} xpum;uawmuler aueypmijy;aeron/
bmyjzpjzp owltm;v;on opr; wp&qrsm;omjzpluon/}} (pm-23-24)

[azmijxm;&m ptzlwulunv;i 0ww\ ttabmy"merm xi&m;pmay:vi aeygon/
]]Eiijcm;{nonrsm;on jrermEii tay:urnoao m tjrir; &ll uonjzpap owltm;v;
on jrermEii \yuwtajctaeEi &i;E;ur;0ijci;r&aom opr;wp&qrsm;om jzplu
on}} [aomtcuonyi 0ww\y"met mabmjzpon [, q&ayrn/

3/ 3/ Zmwvr;qiy

pma&oon ttabmEivuzurn {nvr;nevyie;u aemucxm;um0ww
uzlpn;xm;on/ ttabmwpccsi;pu ay:viEiaom Zmwuursm;u zew;&mwi
ttabmi o [Zmwjzprn a, b, Zmwuursm;jzi zew;a&zlxm;allumi; awllon/
Zmwvr; [q&avmuatmi tjzptyuwonvn; rnrn&r&ac/ {nvr;ne
vyie;Eiywouaom tawltluwuom [wpuu? onwpuu jyom;jci;jzpon/
Zmwvr;oabmjzi pmzwou ruv;ay;om;jci;r [wb {nvr;nevyie;tawltlu
a&zlwijyywji pma&ouqaqmio m;jci; jzpon/ Zmwvr;Zmwuunltm;xu?
{nvr;nevyie; tawltlu? Eiijcm;om;w\ oabmxm;tjriEi p½uobmOu
ovpwuom 0;aqmiaeygon/ owto&vpw [q&ygrn/ owto&vpwEi
ywouí q&matmioi;u-

]]Zmwvr;t& a&llbmjzprv [aom ovpwr;Eirwyg/ b0tallumi;?
avmutalumi;? oyynmtalumi;? pwynmtalumi;? aq;ynmtalumi;?
aricavmutalumi;pon owrsm;u ovpwr; jzpygon}} (pm-290)

[qxm;on/ vobm0t& vwi;on u, talumi;uu, ocipw&ygon/ xiyi
rrtay: tjcm;ow\ tjriuvm;ociwwuygao;on/ xrwpcici;wuí
u, jrll? u, Eiiponji tjcm;ow\ tjriu ocivmwwygon/ ptcuu
oabmayguaom*sl;on {nvr;nevyie;u aemucxm;jy; a&zlwijyy ur;u;irEi
aygi;pyum owto&vpwu E;qEion Zmwuursm;jzi p0wwu zew;a&zlxm;
xm;on [qEiygon/ p0wwwi tyi; (4) yi;yg0iygon/

tyi; (1) tzipmy'wi pma&o \ 0w\wzew;rtwwynmu aw\Eiyy on/
]]wuovr rnonbljziamiricygov [aom ow\ar;ce;u uier
 ajzwi; ow\toom;luav&ygon/ "mwaA't"ujzioyb\ &con
 [aomajzu ow\v;0 ar\m virxm;maocsm \ / ow\bm ar\m vivrrn
 qwm uier&yrygon/ ta&lawmitm&Eiirm; \ , Oaus;r or[w
 vra&aA'qwmrsl;? rE ó aA'qwmrsl;? a&a [mi; oawoeor[w
 pm\unwu'yvrm bUqwmrsl;? ori;t"uor[w jrerpmt"uqwm
 rsl; ten;q;awm yx0bomt"ujzi 0ZmbU&xm;zlowar\m vi llurn
 jzpon/ (pm-10)

tzipmy'üyi pmzwo\ocipwu E;aqmonoabmygvmon/ owqwm b , o
 awv/ bmalumi"mwaA'b\onqontay: tlo&wmv/bmalumi txuwiqc
 aombawu ar\m vi&wmvponji pmzwo\ taw;u wpqici;wuapiy; a&qu
 ovpu E;um;vmapygon/ xjyiy"meZmwaqmijzpaom Zmwalumi;ajmo
 \ vyie;0e;usiuv&yrov&vmapygon/ Zmwuu (1)\ tzipmy'uunvivi
 n; pmzwo\ a&quocipwu E;q Eionobm&alumi; aw\Eiayon/

]]{nvr;nevy&wmaym&Uvm;-- [wppwpa , muu ar;vmv\iten;
 i , weqwawa0iy; aemuraymygw , -- [ajymron/ wpcgwpcg
 & , p&m?wpcgwpcga'go xup&m? wpcgwpcg pw½yp&m? wpcgwpcg
 t&u&p&m ptvyon uiertm;pw∨pu wpjy\iwn; ay;con/
 o aom uiertvepw0ipm;ygon/}} (pm-13)

txuygpm'ywi a&tce;rsm;wi llaw\&rn {nvr;nevyie;\ oabm
 obm0ut&ytrwji pmzwou ruv;ay;xm;ji;jzpon/ xjiyZmwalumi; ajmo
 \ vyie;tay: oabmxm;uvm; oomapygon/ tyi;(1)yi;pw ½axmiwprsl;jzi
 pwium pmzwouqaqmixm;ygon/ xlalumityi;(4)yi;wi ½axmi(4)rsl;aw\Eiyy
 on/ tyi;(1)yi;pv ½axmitopwprsl; aw\&aomallumi pmzwo\ ovpwr
 mji;ai\rom;Eiawm b pw0ipm;r topjzpaEiyyon/ Zmwuurm;u zew;&mwi
 r;uarmuacw vrb00e;uiwi Eiijc;{nonw t m½puww\uaom a , b , s
 0e;usi;zi Zmwuuqixm;onuaw\&on/ tcyq&aom Zmwvr;[í ajmyavmu
 atmir&ay/ Zmwuurm;jzi Zmwalumi;oabmou0iatmi zew;xm;ji;jzpon/

3? 4/ Zmwaqmi t z\

0w\ygZmwaqmirm;rm Zmwalumi;ajmo (y"meZmwaqmi)Ei Eiijc;{nonw
 jzpygon/ y"meZmwaqmirm {nvr;netrsl;or;jzpon/ ajmoemrpm;½axmi (uier)
 jzi vyie;taw\tu\ u jyevnajmyae [eji a&zUxm;ji;jzpon/ pma&oEi
 Zmwalumi;ajmo\um; tumta0;uwu\unvi pma&o\ tou rlum;&b

Zmwalumi;ajymoEi tjc;Zmwaqmirs; \ touomlum;&on/ xalumi0w\wwi
pma&;oon &yuno tjpom &wnaealumi; aw\&on/

Zmwalumi;ajmo \ {nvr;nevyie; tay: ½jriaom½axmiulunvī y*vp
rygb t&oabmtwi;om ½jrixm; jci; jzp&m qEprygb "r" | me½axmi rom ½jrixm;
on [q&ygrn/

y"me Zmwaqmip½uu wulunvī pijZmwaqmip½ujzpon/ {nvr;ne
jrerm tr<;or;rsm;wi&oiaom t&ntci;Ei u, uiw&m;u jyEi&etwupij
Zmwaqmi tjp zew;xm; jci; jzpon/ p t<uu-

]]uertwuawm {nvr;netvyon uerwjrermt r<;or;rsm; \
t&ntci;Ei u, uiw&m; tay: Eiiwumuav;pm;z? em;vnz?
unajz&i;ay;Eiaom t vyyijzpon}} (pm-23)

[aom a&zuxm;cuwi txit&m;aw\Eiayon/ xalumi y"meZmwaqmi p½uon
vom;yoatmi ½yv<;urvmaomvn; yuwvom; tjp vucEionum; x;jcm;cu
jzpon/

Eiijcm;{nonwp½uulunvīvn; u, pm;jyp½uEi zew;p½u [í (2)r<;
aw\&on/

]]uieraw\z;aom loplw; , e;vr<;rsm;on aysmaymaewwu \ / bmur
vn; tav;teurxm;/ jrijrior< tay: taumi;jripw&uon}}

(pm-19)

[vn;aumi;

]]*smrevr<;rsm;uawm ten;i, £ajEi; \ / wusajzmireruluuon/
orar\ajjyp \ }}

(pm-20)

[vn;aumi;

]]jiopvr<;rsm;uawm t*vypum;ajymwwygvu u, Ei tyiye;rcv í
vm;? r<;c;ppwalumiyvm;? {nvr;neu jyioppum; uir;apvaom
apwemallumiyvm; ro t*vvyvrajym b jyiopvajymuon}} (pm-20)

[vnaumi;

]]uieraw\z;aom t*vvyvr<;rsm;uawm uerwEiitay: tawmtxi
ao; [e& \ / (jrermvr<;rsm;u rrvuatmu usa&mucz;aom uve
vr<;rsm; tjp jriaeqvm;roEiyg)}} (pm-21)

[ía&zuxm;on/]]vr<;rsm;uawm}} [aom to;jzi t xuygvr<;rsm;wi&wwaom
a, b, s p½uvuPmwjzi yazmxm;on/ xalumi u, pm;jyp½u [qxm;jci;
jzpon/ pae&mwi *s<; \ ore, y, u abmiuexm;on oabmuvn; aw\&on/

]]u_{eraw}l_z;aom}} [aom t o;ji l_{op}w; , e;vr_{sk};rsm;Ei t*vyvr_{sk};rsm; \ p^{1/2}u u
abmiue_{xm};onu aw_U&on/

{nvr;nevyie;wi aw_Uu_U&wwaom tjzptyuwp_{cs}Uu*yevr_{sk};wpa , mu
b&mZ;vr_{sk};wpa , mu? *s_L;vr_{sk};wpa , m uponji Zmwu uqi zew;_{xm}; onu vn;
aw_U&on/ x_lalumi xZmwu uwwiaw_U&aom p^{1/2}u uzew;p^{1/2}u [o;_{xm};ci;jzpyg
on/ pae&mwivn; vr_{sk};rsm; [ro;b vr_{sk};wpa , mu [íom o;p_{xm};onu owjy
oiygon/ *yevr_{sk};wpa , mu \ Zmwu uwi vwwvywwaom p^{1/2}u u oa&m o
jzi jy;p&mjzpatmi zew;_{xm};ygon/ b&mZ;vr_{sk}; wpa , muEi *s_L;vr_{sk}; wpa , muw
 \ Zmwu ur_{sm};wi {nvr;netr_{sk};or;w u_U&wwontE&m , u oway;_{xm};onu
aw_U&on/

tcyt_m;jziq&v_i *s_L; \ opr;wp&0w_Uwwi Zmwaqm_{irsm};u u , pm;jy
Zmwaqmi? zew;Zmwaqm_{irsm};jziom zew;_{xm};&m p^{1/2}u obm_{0rm} ye;y^{1/2}yu o^{1/2}yv;
<urvmb ye;c_{um};cyuo_l p o_lpy&avon [íom jriaw_U&ygon/

3¹ 5/ t_{jcm};zew;re , y , rsm;

*s_L; \ opr;wp&0w_Uwr Zmwalumi;ajymo \ ^{1/2}axmiulunv_i u , wiajym
^{1/2}axmiijzpygon/ ajymoemrpm;]u_{er}}} [aom emrpm;o; í Zmwalumi;u ajym_{xm};on/
p_{0w}wi *s_L; \ x_{jcm};aoma& [eu aw_U&on/ a& [eEi ajym [eEpr_{sk};pv;o; í
a&;om;_{xm};aom vn; ajym [eoabmr_{sk};ou₀iaealumi; aw_U&on/ Zmwalumi;u
tu&mpmv;r wpqijrivm&on oabmr [wb Zmwalumi;ajymo \ torwpqi
Zmwalumi;ujrivmatmi t_m;xwx_m;onuaw_U&on/ tv₀riywajymae [e ₀gu
r_{sm};uo; í a&;z_Ux_m;aomallumi Zmwalumi;ajymo \ tajymaemu o t^m_{1/2}ryu wpaygi;
wn; yg₀iom;apon/ a&;oEizwor [wawmb ajymoEiem;axmio oabmr_{sk};
a&m u_{om};apalumi;aw_U&on/ pa&; [ealumi pma&;oEi Zmwalumi; ajymo t_m;
wpom;wn; jzpom;apcon/ p_{0w}wu zew;_{xm};on [jrirvmapawmb wu ,
tjzptyu? taw_Ut_Uur_{sm};uom wpqijyeajymaeon [xivmatmipr;aqmi
Eiaoma&; [ejzpon/ x_lalumi Zmwaqm_{irsm}; \ p^{1/2}u on vom;yoatmi ^{1/2}yv;
<urvmaom vn; yuwvom;rsm; tjzp vucEionrm pa&; [ealumi yijzpygon/

x_{jyi} *s_L; \ t_{jcm};aom tao;pw t_m;xwx_m;rrsm;u vn; aw_U&on/ 0w_U
a&;yi;wi-

]]{nvr;nevy&wmay_{sm}&U_{vm}; . . . [wppwpa , muu ar;vmv_i
ten;i , we_Uqwawa_{0jy};aemur aysmygw , .. [ajzron/}} (pm-13)

[vn;aumi;?

aem uq;yi;wi-

]]u!ert m; t vyrmay&v m; [ar;vmwi; u!eron aEmiaE; we!qw
pm ay&mygw , [ajzc&y g \ } (pm-23)

[a&;om;xm;onulunv\i 0ww\ a&lyi;ajym [ewi]]{nvr;nevy&wm}} [ajymxm;jy; aemuq;ajym [ewi]u!ert m;t vyrm}} [cjc;ajymxm;y t& pmzwou {nvr;net vyEi &i;E;uir;0ijy;jy [oabmxm;allumi; aw!&on/]ten;i, we!qewa0jy;aemur}} Ei]aEmiaE;we!qwp m}}]ajzron}} Ei]ajzc&ygon}} [aom to;tEe;u cjc;ajymxm;onrm *sL; \ tao;pw t m;xwrrsm;yijzpygon/ 0goemEi touar;0r;aum i;t vyw wpom;wn;ruaom tcg jzpay:aeaom pwcpm;rtajc taeu-

]]u!eron pw"gwus&mr emun;pm &, armronb0o! wjzn;jzn;
a&muvmcon/}} (pm-12)

[vn;aumi;?

]]u!erEi vuzuvrrn[b ,we;ur rxicraom&, p&maumi;
on t vywpcu vyaeriy}}(pm-12)

[aom a&;zlxm;yulunv\i *sL; \ pum;t o;tEe;t m;xwrrsm;u aw!jriEiygon/

t c y t m;jziq&v\i *sL; \ opr;wp&0wwon Zmwvr;urexm;aom 0ww [qEion/ Zmwvr;jzi ruv;ay;ci;r [wb pp0wijyy uir;uiriqi&m 0w/zew;r twwynmrsm;jziom pmzwou qaqmixm;ji;jzpalumi; aw!&ygon/

4/ r0i (jrpi ,) \ wr&yEi;q0w!wav vmcsu

4? 1/ Zmwvr; t u0;

Zmwalumi;ajymoEi rpr;pr;Eirm rwaqrsm;jzpluon/ Zmwalumi;ajymo [íom o;Ee;&ji;rm o\trnu 0wwpy'v;wi raw!&aomallumijzpon/ ow o;Ee;&ji;rm o\trnu 0wwpy'v;wi raw!&aomallumijzpon/ owEpa, mu on wpa, mu\ tEynmt&ntao;u wpa, muuav;pm;on/ wpa, muEi wpa, muem;vnr&aom tEynmorm;ci;jzpí pum;ajym&onu Epjcuon/ xalumiwp0;wn;aeaom rpr;pr;Eix r!umcPom;a&mu vnywcon/ olaom owlon cporm;r [wuyg/ rwaqrsm;omjzpluon/ u, wiqxm;aom ye;cum; u rpr;pr;Eix vuaqmiay;con/ wpaewi rpr;pr;Eiq;allumi; orwjrr alu;ee;pma&muvm on/ rpr;pr;Ei tra&mur owEp0;uyw0e;usi u vir, m; tjzp txivaeallumi;aw!&on/ owEp0;rnryi jzLpi½;om;luaomvn; "avxpu cirjyac/ jrerm"avx;pwi aqr&rawmaom a, mu&sm;Eire;ron vir, m;r [wb twaecir&ac/ rpr;pr;Eiu owEp0;vir, m;jzpon [0ecxm;allumi;u xtcer

oci&on/ xalumi Zmwalumi;ajyou owEp0;tjzpu &iempjizi rpr;pr;Eiu
oay;xm;aom Ei;qlur;y ye;sum;uai;um-

]]rpr;pr;Ei. . . ciAsm;aemub0rmvn; Ei;qlur;je jzp&e a[mon
avmulu;xrmawm rzpeawmAsm vwvywaw;ac:rawu jrWE;vw
ciAsm;twu tq;tpr&w vwvyw r;aumi;uilu;u lu\qaermyg
a[m . . . [rmav wr&yawlum;u Ei;qwpyi}}

[íZmwor;con/

4? 2/ 0w\ \ t mabm

r0i (jrpi,) \ wr&yEi;q0w\wi xi[yaeaom t mabmu&mazlunv(i
]]vw\ jzlpí½;om;ron "avx;p\ pn;r0;atmuwi&on? rnr\jzlpí ½;om;aeap
umr "avx;pu cirj/aomtcg *Poumu paw;&wwon}} [aom tcuonyi
0w\ \ t mabmjzpon [qEiygon/ p tcuu Zmwalumi;ajmoEi rpr;pr;Eiw \
ajympum;wi t xit&m; aw\Eiygon/

]]oumw ow\qwm y*iva&e\ t"uywouw, / wu, wr;uawm
vaw&\ u, u;iw&m;u 0;paewm"avx;py/ vaw [m"avx;p&\
owrwc\ u w&m;atmurm vurccib vuc&vrr, }}

] "avx;pu trww&m;r r [wwmAs}

] 'gayr, t rww&m; twu "avx;paw ay:aygucwm&i}

]u, u;iw&m;b, avmuauumi;aumi; "avx;pucirjy&ia&mi&r, / t.
..ra&miEib x;azmuxur, q&ivn;? *Poumu paw;&vrr, /
(pm-51)

[aom ajympum;onyi 0ww\ t mabmjzpalumi; aw\&on/ xalumi 0ww\
t mabmulunv(i]]u, u;iw&m;on "avx;p\ owrwc\ atmuwi&on}} [í
jzpygon/ olaom 0wwu aocmzwunaomtcg txuwiqcaom t mabmxu
us, jyeonuaw\&on/ u, u;iw&m;Ei "avx;pEiyw0e;u;iw\ 0a&m" oabm
rs; ou0iaeonunv; aw\&on/ avmuobm0tjriu t uetowrxm;
us, jyepm wijyxm;aom t mabmjzpon [vn; qEiygon/

4? 3/ Zmwvr;qiy

Zmwalumi;ajmoon]]uleawm}} [o;xm;aomvn; ajmoemrpm; ½axmiu
o;rxm;b Zmwerwijzaprnl ueowo½axmioabmr& ;o;í a&om;xm;onu
aw\&on/ pen;uo;í Zmwalumi;ajmo\pwomru rpr;pr;Ei\ ½axmi?

rpr;pr;Ei \ cpm;rpwtaw;wuvn; pmzwo tm; ten;i, xawlapon/ wpcg
wp& rpr;pr;Ei \ pwtaw;u Zmwalumi;ajymo u, wi r&yrvub pmzwouom
0;w0g;em;vnciay;con/

ben;uo;ji;zi rpr;pr;Ei talumi;u luuovwiyeion/ or \ taw;
uivn; Zmwerwyp? jryuuyjzi jyEiaomallumivn; Zmwvr;jzpp0u Zmwuu
azm&mwi taxmuty&jyeon/ xalum i ½axmia&cs, yreueon [q&ygon/

Zmwalumi;ajymo on rpr;pr;Ei tay: "r"[me½axmir lunoavm/ y*vp
½axmir lunoavm [o;oylun&mwi y*vp pygaeon uaw&on/ or \ talumi;
uav;pm;pw? txilu;pw? cs;uL;pw? cppwwjzi ajym on/ xpwu azmjyEion
a0g [m&rsm;? 0gu:sm; rlumcPo;pxm;onu aw&on/

xlyi Zmwalumi;ajymo Ei Zmwvr;tumta0;u wulunv i Zmwalumi;
ajymo jzpontji Zmwvr;oabmt&vn; y"meZmwaqmi rpr;pr;Ei \ Zmw½yEi
rvr;rur;wi &aejyeon/ xalum i Zmwalumi;ajymo Ei Zmwvr;tumta0;w on
re;ve;ra0;ve;aom ae&mwi&aeon/pma&;oEi Zmwvr;tumta0;u wulunv i
vn; pma&;o \ tou rlum;&b Zmwalumi;ajymo \ toEiZmwaqmiw \ touom
lum;&on/ r0i(jrpi,)on Zmwalumi;ajymo \ tajymEitjyzi Zmwvr;u zew;
xm;on/ ajmuursm;wi Zmwvr;u aw&jy; jyuursm;wi ZmwerwEi jryuuwu
aw&on/

tce; (1)on Zmwalumi;Ei rnoirrqiyg/ olaom Zmwvr;utm;jzn
ay;Eiaom t"ym, rsm; eu½i;pm yg0iaeygon/ 0gu:tm;jzi (2)alumi;om &aomvn;
t"ym, av;euon/ t"ym, u Zmwvr;q;aomtcgrom oci&on/

]]wpcgwp&ü avmuu;xu vwpa, mu&ü Ev;om;wpcu omve
wwygon}} (pm- 39)

[aom 0gu: on Zmwerwujzpapon/ xlyi 0w \ tmabmu tm;jznay;aom pmy'
jzpygon/

tce; (2)wi Zmwvr;pwiygon/ y"meZmwaqmirpr;pr;Ei aoq;alumi;
alu;ee;a&mu vmyEi Zmwvr;u pwi xm;yg on/ aemu alumi;jyeen;uo;í
Zmwalumi;jyeajym [ejzi Zmwvr;qixm;onu aw&on/ rpr;pr;Ei \ yye;oiyi?
t&ntcsi;rm;u jyeajym [ejzi Zmwvr;quxm;jy; Zmwalumi;ajymo Ei rpr;pr;Ei
w \ ywour twi;twu jryxm;um pmzwo \ ocipwuE;qxm;on/

tce; (3)wi Zmwalumi;ajymo \ ypuumvtaw;jzi rpr;pr;Ei \ aqrsl;
r&aom tjpui pmzwo tm; ociay;con/

]] ja':pr;pr;Eiaoq;}

] t jrevmyg}

qjy;allu;ee;ay;yorm &yuuvlu;rsm;w or&ub0on rnr\tx;ueqe
vuygoen;/ or\ta&lu;q;tc:ewi rom;pr&/ tazmr&/ &yuuvlu;rsm;on
uleawm \ vypmuyi b , o&mazo&conroay/}}(pm-46)

[ía&z\xm;on/ Zmwalumi;ajmo \ vypmurno&&con ro[aom tc:uon
aemuyi;tce;wir jryuutjzp o;xm;on/ Zmwalumi;ajmoon orEiuleawm
qpn;c&yu ajmyjcsiygao;on/}} [íZmwvr;u aemualumi;jyeen;zi aemu
wplur xyo;xm;con/ yretm;zi aemualumi;jyeen;u wplurwn;
awmuav\muro;b ypuumvtactae twwumv tjzptyuwjzi Zmwvr;qi
xm;onrm pmzwo\pwu rji;ailapb tpOE;lum;apaomen;jzpygon/ xalumi
pma&oon Zmwalumi;ajmy twwynmwi Eiei;ur;u:ion[q&ygrn/
ben;u tce; (4)ü &yuuvlu; wpa , mu \ ajypum;u awlEiygon/

tce; (4)wi Zmwvr;wpcv;r jryuuuiyeazmxm;aom tce;jzpon/ p
tce;wi rpr;pr;EiEi "avx;p\ t;m;jy\ir? Zmwalumi;ajmoEi "avx;pw\
t;m;jy\irrm;uaw&on/ a&tce;r Zmwerwrsm;u p tce;wi jyevnazmxwxm;
alumi; awl&ygon/

Zmwvr;ucylunv\i Zmwvr;y"me0w[í qvr&Eiay/ Zmwvr;oabm
xu Zmwalumi;oabmuuaeonu awl&on/ Zmwalumi;onyi 0w\ ttabmu
azmaqmiEiatmi t o;jyzew;xm;jci;jzpon/ xalumi0ww\Zmwvr;on ttabm
u tajcwní zew;xm;jci;jzpy; Zmwvr;oabmwi ttabmxnoi;xm;jci;
r [waomallumi tqitwe;jriaom 0wwpm&i;wi xnoi;&ayrn/

4? 4/ Zmwaqmi t z\

Zmwaqmirms;rm Zmwalumi;ajmoEi rpr;pr;Eijzpygon/ tjznZmwaqmi
tjzp &yuuvlu;wp0;omaw&on/ Zmwalumi;ajmo u]]uleawm}} [o;Ee;xm;
onuaw&jy; trnuro&ac/ r0i (jrpi ,)on y"meZmwaqmi jzpaom rpr;pr;Ei
talumi;u ajm [eEi a& [eEprsl;pv;o;um o½yazmxm;on/

Zmwaqmirms;pr;Ei talumi;u

]]oronp;ym;a&t& tawm tweta&ygaom txujrermjyn c½ijr\U
wpjr\Uwiaexiygon/ tonjr\U&U boma&toi;tz\wpcu xaxmi
xm;w a&a [mi;y#uwpmlunwuwi orupmlunwurl;tjzp vyui
ygon/ pmlunwurl;qw cnm;vaom tac: ynwuyiqiaomvn;
or&U0iai u omrmepma& 0exr;wpa , mu&U vpmxuryalumi;
uleawmoxm;ygon/ olaomor&U tvyuawm tawmav;jrwe;y&yg
on/ (pm-42)

[í a&zlxm; ygon/ ptzlon rpr;pr;Ei \ p;ym;a&tajctaeEi tvytui
talumi;u ajym&mwí or \ tvytay:c, c u u -

]] ta [mi;awlu m; rmae&w uier&iceoe taw;awuorm; xu yop
aewm aocsmw, &i/ bmvvqawm t'ta [mi;awu uieruvi,
wpa, muv wjyewwvly/ uierawmaymw, /}} (pm-42)

[aom ajympum;wi awlon/ xlyi rpr;pr;Ei \ yoPmetout&, Ei use;rma&
tajctaerm;u Zmwalmi;ajymo \ ajympum;wiawEiygon/ xlyi

]] or \ ruEm on tjc m;re;uav;aw jyi qiwluw a&mipjc, o
jci;r;r [waomvn; acwraom&owpr;u Epvpmcpm;&&Eiyg
on/ jy;awmor& 0wpm;qi, iyu acwuvuí zu&ixici;
ui;ayp/ wu, qv i use;rma&raumi;ojzi u, EUcEmu, u
yiqiw touo;q, ausm re;rwpá, mu&tvon pr vwqw
aezraumi;ay/ olaom orvygon/}} (pm-43)

xlyirpr;pr;Ei \ tEynm t&ntao;rm;u vn; awlon/

]] oron uAsm ta&aumi; \ / pr;o&trnjzi a&om;caom r*Zi; ruEm
ay:uor&uAsmrm; usyg;aomvn; pmayloZmlu;rm;allumi; uleawm
vucxm; luygon/ jy;awm oron ye;csm;u vn; cpm;ww \ / a [mv
*wmpv uEi atmiajronZywy;u uir;uipm w;cwjyEi \ }} (pm-44)

ptcurm;ulunv i rpr;pr;Ei \ pmay*wye;cponjzi tEynm&yr;p vupm;
ojzpalumi; awlon/ pma&ou or \ b0c, cuu ajym [e? a& [e Epr;p v;zi
azmjyxm; onu vn; awlon/ pw"gw cirmjy; re;r qeaom oronre;r0g" wp0;
jzpalumi;u-

]] oruo re;rwpá, muu b0quwi; re;rjzpcsiygallumi; ajymawm
uleawm toz;on/ a, musm;aumi; wpa, mujzpzxu re;raumi;
wpa, mujzpzycuw, &iw? jrermjynrm re;raumi;awaygwm oy
usuoa&&ow}} (pm-44)

txuyg ajympum;rm;ulunv i 0gu tq;owpum;v;jzpaom]w}} qaom pum;v;
rm;wi tlo [evr;aeon oabmuawlon/ or \ taw;tac:tay:wi tlor
oabmrm ay:v iaeygon/

]]]oumw? ovwqwm? y*va&e t"uywouw,? wu, wr;
usawm? vaw&u, u i w&u 0;p;aewm"avx;py? vaw [m "avx;p
&u owrwc;uw&atmu rm vurccsibvn;? vuc&vrr, }

] "avx;pwi;u trew&m; r r [wwmAs}

'gayr trew&twu "avx;paw ay:ayguc&wm&i? u , u i w&m;
b , avmuaumi;aumi; "avx;pu cirjy/&ia&mi&r , / t . . . ra&mi b
x;azmuxur , q&ivn; *Poumu paw;&vrr , } }(pm-56)

[ía&zlxm;on/ p t c u u l u n v i r p r ; p r ; E i \ t a w ; t a c : j r i r m ; r u a w l & o n /
a e i v m r n Z m w u u r m ; E i c e x ; l u n v i o r o n a & l a & a e m u a & ; l u l a w ; w w o
j z p a l u m i ; a w l & o n / p w i o r \ x ; q e ; a o m p w x m ; u t l o z , a w l & o n / p o
v m a e o n u o r t b , a l u m i r w m ; j r p o e n ; o r o n o t a y : w i o a , m Z O j i w , a e
j c i ; a v m (o r [w) " a v x ; p t a y : * 1 / 2 r r j c i ; a v m [í a w ; p & m r s m ; a y : a e y g o n / j c l í
l u n v i r p r ; p r ; E i o n r r u , u , l u n r & o n / & 0 y i v i ; o n / t a w ; t a c :
x u j r u o n / t v t y ü p w r 0 i p m ; / t E y n m t & n t a o ; & o n / r e ; r r q e a o m v n ;
r e ; r a u m i ; j z p c i o n p o n j z i & m ; y g ; a o m Z m w a q m i w p 0 ; j z p a l u m i ; a w l & o n /

4? 5/ t j c m ; z e w ; r e , y , r s m ; a v v m c s u

r 0 i (j r p i ,) \ w r & y E i ; q [a o m 0 w l a c g i ; p 0 o n e r w y q e a e u m q a q m i r
& a e a l u m i ; a w l & o n / E i ; q q o n r m E i ; q y e ; u q v j c i ; j z p a l u m i ; e m ; v n E i j y ;
w r & y [a o m p u m ; v ; r m a r m l u n a o m t c g a u m i ; u i a y : w i a w l & w w a o m w r & y a v m
[í p 0 ; p m ; p & m j z p a e y g o n / p t a w ; j z i y a z m l u n a o m t c g e * g ; y ? q i y p o n j z i
w r & y r m ; x i a e o u o E i ; q y e ; y a y : a e a o m w r & y [t " y m , o u a & m u a e o n /
p m a & ; o \ 0 w t r n a y ; y u 0 w x w i & m a z l u n a o m t c g -

] o r o n E i ; q y i u o t v q ; y i c \ / t c l j r q ; a r ; y l c \ / j y ; a w m
o r & l v w v y w a e x i r w i q ; E i w a o m u , u i w & m ; a w j z i c l e j r a p a v
j y } } (p m - 50)

[a o m t a & ; t z l o n o r u E i ; q y e ; E i w i p m ; x m ; j c i ; j z p a l u m i ; a w l & o n / x j y i

] u , u i w & m ; b , a v m u a u m i ; a u m i ; " a v x ; p u c i r j y \ v i a & m i & r ,
t . . . r a & m i b x u r , q & i v n ; * P o u m u p a w ; & v r r , } } (p m - 51)

[a o m t z l w i u , u i w & m ; E i " a v x ; p w \ 0 a & m " t a j c t a e u a w l & o n /

] r e ; r w p a , m u w n ; a e w t r r m a o ; o m ; r p y w a , m u s m ; w p a , m u r l u m
c P v m w n ; & r v m ; A s / o u v n ; v u r c & b ; / ' g q & i u s l y w t a e e
c i A s m ; v m w t c g w i ; a p m i l u n j y ; 0 i ; z r ; r m a j y m a w m ' r e ; r u b m a j y m w ,
r w o v u l e r & l a , m u s m ; y g q & i b m j z p r m v w ? ' g q & i a w m u s l y w b m r
a E m i , u p & m r v a w m y g b ; v l a j y m r p w y s u v u y ; u a c g i ; j i r 0 e c o m ;
w , A s m } } (p m - 53)

[v n ; a u m i ; ?

]] [m. . . t'g v;0r [wb;? ciAsm;w 0i; zr;r, qw tptp0u;u
 ueawmw/ & 1/2; om; ru wwvi;vi; apmum;zuq;ypwmr oacgi;nw
 v u wmyjzpr, / ueawmw v;0 1/2; om;w, / & ye&meaewmAs/ "av x;p
 y, v b, &rv}} (pm-53)

[vn;aumi; a&z uxm;onu awU&on/ ptzWuicUunv i Ei;qyiuoivyjy;
 u, u siw&m; [on q;&aomEi;qye;Eiwon [rpr;pr;Eiu wipm;xm; jci;
 jzpaumi;awl&jy; xwr&yEi;qqonrm vwvyaw;ac:ru jrwe;aomortwu
 vwvyao m taw;tac:&on avmuu;Eiom t0iciu;jzpEion oabmu
 qvjci;jzpaumi; ay:vivmygon/ xalumi0wtrnon Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmi
 t mabmwu ay:viapaom trnay;rjzpon [q&ygrn/

xlyi r0i (rpi,) on vwqwaom taw;rm;u v n; xnoi;zew;xm;Ei
 alumi;awU&on/

]] ta [mi;awUum; rmae&w uer&iceoetaw;awu orsm;awxu
 yopaewm aocsmw, &i/ bmvvqawm t'ta [mi;awu ueru
 vi, wpa, mu v wjyewwv/b? uerawm aysmw, /}} (pm-42)

[vn;aumi;?

]] a, mu sm;aumi; wpa, mu jzpzxu re;raumi;wpa, mu jzpzycu
 w, &i}} (pm-44)

[vn;aumi; o;Ee;xm;onuunv i vwqwaom taw;tac:rm;u awU&on/
 xlyi to;tEe;vwqwí Zmwaqmip 1/2uu ay:viapaom to;rm;u v n; ae&m
 wu s o;wwygon/

]] oron 1/2; om;pm &0ygon/ yiv i;pm, Oaus;ygon/}}

]] q;Eiwaom u, u siw&m;}}

]] aq;Eiz 1/2upm waw;rscrygon}} (pm-44)

paom to;rm;uunv i pma&ornr t m;xwxm;onu awU Eiygon/ yp xwjy
 jci;rm;omjzp í tjc m;aom t m;xwrrsm;vn; trsm;tjym;useaeygao;on/ Zmwalumi;
 aymo wn;c&mraeciewi rpr;pr;EiEiay;awlyrm wuqirwpcu zew;xm;on
 oabmjzpon/ olaom Zmwvr;xcuapEiavmuao m nuur s; [íum; rawU&yg/
 xalumi r0i(rpi,) \ wr&yEi;q0wwon 0w/waumi;wpv' [q&ygrn/

lci o; oycu

jrerm0w/wori;wpavm u 0w/a&q&m trsm;pon 0w/wyprsl;u qe;op
wxivmcl u&m ,aeacw 0w/wtrsm;pon Zmwvr;y"me0w/wrsm;? Zmwaqmi
y"me0w/wrsm;xu pma&o \ taw;tjri (tmabm)u t"uxm;aom 0w/wrsm;u trsm;
q;a&zlv mconuawl&on/ bpmwr;wi avvmwijycon *sl;Eir0i (jrpi ,)
w\ 0w/wEpy'uunv i Zmwvr;Zmwaqmi tom;ay;roabmxu pma&o \
y*v u taw;tjri (tmabm)u tajccia&zlxm;aom oabmu yrav;euon u awl&
on/ tqyg0w/a&q&m Ep0;pv;on rrw\ 0w/wrsm;wi Zmwvr;tjzptyu u
ygonq½r om a&zlxm;alumi;awl&on/ Zmwvr;u talumi;jyí rrw0w/wrsm;u
qaqmijzpap&exu 0w/wyg taw;tjri (tmabm)u pmzwo t½pu vmap&e
tm;jyxm;on [em;vn&ygon/ qv onrm 0w/wrsm;wi Zmwvr;oabmu ar;re
aejy;0w/xr Zmwaqmi \ taw;u tvi;ay;roabmu yrtm;aumi;aeon [xijri
rji;jzpon/

pma&q&m Ep0;pv;on Zmwalumi;ajymo½axmiu]uleawm? uier} ½axmir
, um 0w/wrsm;u a&zlxm;alumi;awl&on/ 0w/xr Zmwaqmi \ ae&mwi pma&o
y;uyuma&zljci; oabmyijzpon/ xo pma&ou,wi y;uyaeontwu rr
ajymvaom taw;tjriu Zmwaqmijzpq i 0ia&muajmqyici&aeon/ p½axmi
on tmabmy"me 0w/wtrsm;pwi awljriEiaom ½axmijzpygon/

*sl;Eir0i (jrpi ,)w\ 0w/wEpy'pv;on tce; (4)ce;pyg0iaomvn; a&zlv
ytm;jzirwlu yg/ *sl; \ 0w/wwi Zmwvr;oabmxu Zmwalumi; oabmu uaejy;
r0i(jrpi ,)\ 0w/wwi Zmwvr;oabmu ten;i ,awl&on/ *sl;ono \ 0w/w
u Zmwvr;r 0w/w oabmjzpatmi tm;xwxm;on uawl&on/ rnoiyijzpap
pma&oEp0;pv; \ 0w/wrsm;on olen;o [eEivya elujy; ow\ tEynm tm;xw
rEi zew;rtwwynm tpr;u cs;usl;&rnjzpygon/

e*;

bpmwr;wi 0w/wtwwynmtalumi;u ynm&irms; \ tq trersm;tay:
tajccum 0w/wEpy'jzi p;pr;avvmrygon/ avvm&mwi pma&ow\ 0w/w
zew;r twwynmyi;u tm;jy\avvmxm;ygon/ xolavvm&jci;rm 0w/wEpy'u
Zmwvr;oabmxu pma&o \ taw;tjriu 0w/wzew;r twwynmjzi tm;xw
a&zlxm;aomalumijzpygon/

u;r;u;pm&i;

ausmatmi/ (1979)/ Eijcm;0w\wpmwr;/ 0w\wpmwr;rsm; (yxrw)/ &eue? pmayArmeEywu/
 lu;armi 0; (ai0a'gi;)/ (1979)/ jrerm0w\wori; 0w\wpmwr;rsm; (yxrw)/ &eue? pmay
 ArmeEywu/
 cpm;o tlu(ur*Zi;0w\wrsm; (1)/ 1996/ &eue? 0w&vri;yEywu/
 wuw;/ (2002)/ urmau sm0w\wrsm;Ei wuw; \ &i;jycu/ &eue? t ilui;0;yEywu/
 atmioe; (qijzLule;)/ (1979)/ 0w\wjzi b0"avo ½yazmji;/ 0w\wpmwr;rsm; (yxrw)/
 &eue? pmayArmeEywu/
 ri; , a0/ (1979)/ 0w\w \ t *g&yrs; / 0w\wpmwr;rsm; (yxrw)/ &eue? pmayArmeEywu/
 ri;au sm/ (1979)/ 0w\wtwwynm/ 0w\wpmwr;rsm; (yxrw)/ &eue? pmayArmeEywu/
 o& , uE/ (1957)/ 0w\la&;vaom/ &eue/ o'yEywu/
 atmioi;/ (1978)/ pmaya&;&maqmi;yg;rsm;/ &eue? 0r;r;yEywu/
 atmioi;/ (1999)/ atmioi; \ tlu\uq;0w\wrsm;Ei o;o;oycursm;/ &eue? rsl;jrerpmpaywu/
 be;Ei (wuov)/ (1981)/ 0w\&nori;/ 0w\&npmwr;rsm; y-w/ &eue/ pmayArmeEywu/

atmioi;\axmi&m; taw; &opmwr;rsm;avvmcsu

t\z;lz;Ei*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on atmioi;\ &opmwr;rsm;r axmi&m;taw;Ei x taw;uay:vi
atmizew;xm;ysm;u avvmwijyxm;aom pmwr;jzpon/ xowijy&mwi
&opmwr;ay:ayguvmy? &opmwr;oabmobm0? axmi&m;taw; [on? atmioi;
\ axmi&m;taw; &opmwr;rsm;u avvmwijy ygrn/ p o wijyji;zi
jrermpayavvmrEi &opmwr; zew;re , y , u t u sl;jy/Ei&e &n& , ygon/
aomcsua0g [m& - &opmay? &opmwr;? axmi&m;taw;? zew;r/

e'je;

ppmwr;on atmioi;\ &opmwr;rsm;r axmi&m;taw;u xi&m;ay:vi
apaom &opmwr; (3)apmiu avvmwijyxm;ygon/ &opmay[aom tEynm
ypn;wpc xwvy&mwi pma&o\ b0tawtu? b0cpm;r? b0ow? b0
tow&m;won pmayzew;ouvuí ujym;wwon/ &opmaya&zlowon
A['rsm;on yw0e;u;Eiawuilaomtcg b0cpm;r jzpvmeiygon/ b0cpm;ralumi
a0zeyi;jcm;Eiaom b0toay:vmEiygon/ xb0tojzi avmu\ taumi;tq;u
, Owjywwaom taw;&vmEiygon/ &vmaom taw;u tow&m;ygaom apwemu
yuiay;ji;zi &opmwr;aumi;rsm; ay:xe;vmon [qEiygon/ wpen;t m;ji
&opmwr;a&o\ axmi&m;taw;ji ojriaw;vmjci;? zpn;a&om;Eijci;walumi
&opmwr;rsm; ay:vmon [qEiygon/ atmioi;\&opmwr;rsm;wi talumi;
t u sl;u cirmvmatmi wijy&mwi owpyg;raw;rEiaom axmi&m;taw;rsm;jzi wijy
zew;xm;onu awEiygon/ ptjrijia&om;aom atmioi;\ &opmwr;rsm;
avvmwijy&e &n& , ygon/

1/ oawoear;ce;

atmioi;\ &opmwr;rsm; pppwijy&mwi atmuygoawoear;ce; (3)c
ay:xuvmaygon/

(1)atmioi;\ &opmwr;rsm;wi pmzwoEpouvucvmap&e axmi&m;
taw;rsm;jzi tmabmoa&matmi rnuoyaqmioen;/

(2)atmioi;\&opmwr;rsm;wi pmzwou , wi wprprquaw;&e rnuo
taw;cicoen;/

(3) x taw;u ay;&mwi xa&mur&ap&e rnuo l en;vr;rsm;u o;o;oen;/

* vuaxmuuxu? jrermpmXme? &euewuov

2/ en;em

**t xuygar;ce;wu taj&mazmw&mwí pmayoabmw&Ei pmayqi&m
pm typmwr;rm;? u;r;rm;& pmayen;emwji c:0;uyí avvmwijyxm;yg on/ xltji
pma&;ou,wi zew;xm;caom &opmwr;rm;uwpqi &&onen;vr; rm;uvm;
tajccí avvmwijyom;yg rn/ o½yazmqe;ppavvmen;u tajccí atmioi; \
&opmwr;rm;u avvmwijyygrn/**

3/ &opmwr;ay:aygu vmy

**]]jioppma&;q&mll u; rewe;(1533-1592)on o \ tuaq;pm tyu (1580)
jynEpwi a&;om;xwa0cygon/}} (0i;re? wuov? 1987? 8) xtcerpí
tuaq;[aom ta&;tzU owowrwrw ay:xe;vmcon [quon/ ollaomvn;
rewe;rwir uyi xta&;tzUrs;rm;awU&c&on [vn;qygon/**

**]]rewe; \ tuaq;pm tyxwa0jy;aemu 17 EpU maomtcg t*vypma&;
q&mll u;abue(1561-1626)u (1597)cEpwi o \ tuaq;pm tyu a&;om; xwa0c
yg on/}}(pm-8) xtcgrpí tuaq;ta&;tom; yrcirmvmjy;? wpp wpp &ioezUjz;
vmc&ayon/**

**]]jrer&opmwr; tajcwnay:xe;ump acwumvrm uveacw0;r (1934)
cEp0e;u;iumvt x jzpalumi;}}(pm-10) qreUcl uon/ jrermwon t*vypmayu
avvmoilum;&onEitr t*vvy0w/rm;? jyZmwrsm;? uAsmrsm;? tuaq;rm;
uvm;zw&ci&con/ xtcg tuaq;ac: &opmwr;ta&;tom;u pr;oya&;om;cU
on/**

**]](1928)cEp lo*wwxw *Eavmur*Zi;wi t*vvytuaq;q&mll u; tu'qi
 \ t*vvytuaq;wpy'u bmojyexm;aom jcpa&;luUua&;wi tlu0mPawmi;q
jci; tpr;pm}yg&con/ xtuaq;on jrermEiwi yxr0;q;zw&ci&caom bmo
jyetuaq;jzpon/ xr*Zi;wiyi (1928)cEp atmuwbmvü t*vvytuaq;q&m
]]pw;}} \ tuaq;u bmojyexm;aom]]armiuv tpr;pm}} (1931) cEp Zee0g&v
wi t*vvytuaq;q&m]abue\ tuaq;ubmojyeon]]twwynm oilum;
&jci; *Paus;Z;talumi;tpr;pm}} wvygvmonu awU&&ygon/}}(pm-16/) xumvu
tuaq;u tpr;pm [jyeqa&;om;cUygon/**

**]](1934) cEp ausumvwi q&mve;? v ,wy@w0;armiU;? arm b q&moe;?
' ;'w0;bc&? 0;z;usm;? yr;ei;? aZ ,? 0mP? 0;y*í? yym;0;ausm&ipaom pma&;q&m
rm; \ pmwr;tcUonvn; tuaq;qevmonu awUEion/ xq&mll u;rm;
a&;om;caom tuaq;ac:&opmwr; oabmou0ionprrsm;u twetoiawU
jri&ygon/ xpmwr;rm;teu tcUpmwr;rm;on &opmwr;oabm tjynt0aqmijy;**

tcuupmwr;rsm;rnr tuaq;Eiaqmi;ygtlum; [, r;on , r; &aeonuaw&on/ }
 (0i;re? wuov? 1987? 17-18/) olaomvn; tuaq;[í o;o;oeoe emrn
 c , jci; r&ao;ay/

oyarmi0? armiat;armi? armioe;[e? armi0e? armiuowon a&;&;
 ta&;tom;rsm;Eirw x;jcm;aom ta&;tom;rsm;u pr;oya&;om;cl uon/ xta&;
 tom;rsm;u acwpr;pm[trnay;con/ (1934)cEp rwvwi acwpr;yjirsm;
 yxrwuxwa0jy; ausmi;o;pm ty jylme;vucerpí tpr;pm? tuaq;ac: &opmwr;
 ta&;tzlon yí tajcwn cirmvmc&on/

uaumjrkipmwe;? pwyiv , pmwe;? az , spmwe;ponjzi tuaq; pmtyrsm;
 tpt& xuay:vmcon/ , cqviarmi&irm(au:smi;ue;) \]]vwvypmvr;qwci}}
 &opmwr;rsm;u (2015)cEp?]]aEaEmi;nwpnū va&miEi avni;uaw&jci;}} &o
 pmwr;rsm;u (2017)cEpwwi tr&;om; pmayqyi tyEi;cjy;jzpon/ jyiop? t*ve
 wwi tajcjyicaom tuaq;on &opmwr;[aom jrerpum;v;jzi tr&;om;
 pmayq&ontx 00xnxnEi tajcwu:ae&m&cjy [q&rnjzpygon/

4/ &opmwr;oabmobm0

jrerpmpaywi owpmayEi &opmay[í (2) r&;&on/ &opmaywi uA:sm? Ow?<
 jyZmwwlyg0ion/ ,ctcgwi &opmwr;u;vn; &opmaytwi;owoi;í avvm
 cluygon/ ,ctcgwi &opmwr;[trnwiaeaom ta&;tz&;u , ciu
]]tuaq;}} [wu&uac:ouoU]tpr;pm?pmwr;?pmwe;?pmre?&o pmwr;i , } ponjzi
 tr&;r&;trnay;cluygon/ ppmwr;wir &opmwr; [om o;Eie;wiyom;ygrn/

&opmwr;on]]16 &mpwi jyiopEiiü jyiopbmomjzi tuaq; (essai) [<
 pwitrn&cjy; rlumrrmyi t*veEiiü t*vymbomjzituq; (essay) [quvu
 trnwiu wppwppz&jz&;vmaom pmaytz&;yijzpygon/}} (0i;re? wuov? 1987?
 17-18/) &opmwr; \ oabmobm0u ynm&i to;o;u tr&;r&; ziqc&uon/

aZm*s u

]]tuaq;ac: xpmrwr&non pmzwy&owü Epour&oujzpapoi
 on/ &ojzponEi twwu b0 olr [w yw0e;u;itotjriu;vn;
 jzpapoi on/}} (aZm*s? 1978? trmpm/)

[qx&;ygon/ u , wiou rwr&nz&Euxm;aom t&wpc [qx&;jci;jzpon/
 wup;u;vn; &opmwr;oabmu

]]tazwpa , muEi at;at;v&xium opum;uem;axmiae&on
 Eiwon [q&awmrn/ xtcg 0r;ajrmu &ive;p&mrm;? avmubom;

w\ ci vwp&m t jyp t e m t q m u a v ; r s m ; ? r a w m r w n [m o t u u
r s m ; u r r v n ; t u a q ; a & ; q & m E i t w u m ; & ? j r i & ? c p m ; & o u o l j z p u m
y w y m ; & o n / } (wup;? 2017? 43/)

[q x m ; y g o n / y w E i w u t o t j r i u a y ; a o m p m a y t z [q x m ; j c i ; j z p y g o n /
w p z e j r o e ; w i u v n ;

] t u a q ; q & m q o n r m] u l e a w m q w v u a w m ' v v y ? u l e a w m u a w m
' v j r i w y ? c i A m ; a u m b , v x i o v } [a j y m a e o j z p y g o n / u l e a w m
x w E w a y ; v u o n t u a q ; r s m ; x w i] p u m ; a j y m p & m t c u t v u
u a v ; } a w y g o n / o i u , w i & m c i v n ; j a e m u x y p u m ; a j y m p & m
t c u t v u u a v ; r s m ; } u a w v r 0 ; r n x i y g o n / p m a & ; q & m w p a , m u
t m ; o i w l j y e E i a o m a u ; Z ; r m o l t m ; r w a q w p a , m u o z , o a b m
x m ; & e y i j z p y g o n / o i o n o u E p o u c i r i o m ; y g o n / o i u p w 0 i
p m ; a t m i v y o m ; w w y g o n / o a b m w & e j z p a p ? o a b m x m ; u & e j z p a p
o i u E ; q o m ; y g v r r n / } (wup;? 2017? 43/)

[v n ; a u m i ; z i q x m ; y g o n / p m a & ; o E i p m z w o w p o m ; w n ; j z p o m ; a p a o m t z [q
v j c i ; j z p y g o n /

armiciri ("EjzL)u

] t u a q ; w i p m a & ; o u o a & ; v a o m t a l u m i ; t & m w p c c u o u , w i
a w ; r j r i r ? c p m ; r o v a & ; j y o n / o t a w ; t j r i u t m ; j y l a z m j y o n / o p w
u z i v p j y o n / z w c i p z , p u m ; a j y t a & ; t o m ; r s ; j z i w w u s 0 ; u s 0 ;
z l j y o n / p m z w o u & o E p o u r a y ; o n / }

(armiciri("EjzL)? 2003? t r m p m)

[q y g o n / & o p m w r ; o n t a w ; t j r i c p m ; r u t a j c y i w w u s 0 ; u s 0 ; j z i & o
E p o u r u a y ; o n [q c j c i ; j z p y g o n /

& o E p o u r o a b m u a t m i o i ; u

]](1) t o y n m & í E p o u j c i ; /

(2) t E y n m ü E p o u j c i ; /

(3) v u a w l q i j c i c i & í E p o u j c i ; / }

(a t m i o i ; ? 2009? 110)

[a z m j y c o n / & o p m w r ; w i p m z w o u & o E p o u r a y ; E i j c i ; o n v n ; & o p m w r ; \
v u P m a u m i ; w p & y j z p o n / & o E p o u r u a y ; E i a o m & o p m w r ; j z p a v p m a y a v m u
w i u e & p a v j z p o n [q E i y g o n /

&opmwr;on taw\|t\|u\|wpc? taw;tac:wp&yu tajccíoi;oi; 0e;0e;
 a&;z\|wiyao m paytz\yo Pmewpcjzpon/ wwu:0;u:0; ajym&rn/ jzpEiv\i
 wpxiwn;zwEi&ayrn/ Epouruvn;ay;pr;Ei&rn/ Epoujci;&oEiwu
 b0t ou ay;ygyuayumi;ygon/ taw;u v n; p;&aom taw; jzpoion/ axmi&m;
 taw; jzpygyuayumi;ygon/ ta&;u v n; ay;xm;aom acgi;p0u r;armi;x;jyEiaom
 ta&;jzp&rn/ pmzwoEi pum;xiajymaeouo\ vwvyaygyg;pm a&;z\|Eiygyuí
 aumi;ygon/ pum;v;rsm;u v n; ouvuue\jrl;pm yazmEi&ayrn/ x o\ taw;a&m
 ta&;ygjynpygu tqitwe;jriaom &opmwr;rsm; jzpvmayvrrn/

5/ axmi&m; taw; [on

&opmwr;on talumi;t&m u toay;vjci;xu taw;tjriuc;jyvji;u
 a&;laqmiyg on/ pma&;oaw;jyaom taw;tjri cpm;ruom yíta&;\u;vayon/
 pma&;o wiyao m taw;on pmzwow raw;raom taw;r\;v n; jzpaewwygon/
 &m;&m;ygy; taw;r\; [qEiygon/ p;&;ly;owum rjriEiaomaxmiu aw;jya&;jy
 aomallumi pmzwor sm;tz tloEpoujci; jzpap&on/ p taw;r\;u axmi&m;
 taw; [ac;qEiayvrrn/

axmi&m;tjri [, qEiaom tabmu The Random House Dictionary wi

]]o;oe\ tabmwpc(or[w) talumi;wpcEi ywouí pma&;
 q&m\ taw;Ei cpm;r aygi;pyv\ u x;x;jcm;jcm; tEpwjc , re;
 a&;zav&aom wawmi;on pmaytzwpr\;jzpon/}}RHD, 1976,45

[ziqxm;ygon/ pma&;o\ taw;u ta&;v v zi yazmxm;aom pmaytz jzpon [q
 vji;jzpon/

atmioi;u v n;

]]Essay aumi;jyq&i taw;ygw , / ta&;vw , ? t'rmxyly; ajym&
 &i taw;u axmi&m;taw;? vwi;rjriEiw axmiuaw;w
 taw;? t*vvyvq&iawm unnoticed corner v\ac:w , /}}

(armiarmijrio; 2003?45/)

[qygon/ axmi&m;taw;tjri cpm;rjzpygu yrtqitwe;jriaom &opmwr;
 jzpvmrnyu qxm;jci;jzpygon/

wpzearmiciri ("EjzL)u

]]pmzwo taeji wpcgr qupyrw;zaom taw;r\;u v n; vi;ce
 v uce jyEipr;&ygon/}} (armiciri("EjzL)? 1987?75/)

[qyg on/ &opmwr;on pmzwo ro? rjri? raw;b;aom&axmir aw;jya&jy
jci;jzpon [qxm;jci;jzpygon/

wuov0i;reuvn;-

]a&om;wijxm;aom talumi;t&mxu pma&o \ tji? pma&o
 \pwtm; xuoer? cpm;ru tuaq;ac: &opmwr;i , wiyí
ta&;u;on/}}

0i;re(wuov-):1987?143/

[qyg on/ &opmwr;wi pma&o \ taw;u p;&xujrupm aw;jricpm;ronom
y"meuyu qxm;jci;jzpygon/

jzZiu

]pmwr;i , a&oon ox;xi;jrixm;aom tuuwpuuu
vvyv &i&iyy;wijxm;alumi; aw&on/}}

(jzZi? 1987?114)

[qxm;ygon/ &opmwr;wi pma&ou owpyg;rjiEiaom &axmir aw;um
wijyaom oabmu qvjci;jzpygon/

&opmwr;wi axmi&m; taw;u wijyEiygu yíxujruvmluygon/ &o
pmwr;aumi;rsm;on trsm;t&jzi axmi&m; taw;rsm; jzpaenou awEiyg on/
atmioi;onvn; axmi&m; taw;rsm;jzi &opmwr;rsm;pm zew;cojzpygon/
atmioi;zew;aom &opmwr;rsm;r axmi&m; t&jrizi zew;on&opmwr;rsm;u
quvuavvmwijygrn/

5? 1/ rxi&m; íom

]rxi&m; íom} &opmwr;on tjzptyuwpau tajccí aw;&mr jzpay:vmaom
&otou wijxm;on &opmwr;jzpon/ llumcylzpaom u , awljzp&yu qijci
o;oy&mr&vmaom totjriu wquíyxm;on/ xowqu&mwi r;avmion
jriu i;? iaeaom trs;or; \jriu i;? 0i;0e;unyjriu i;? 'uxrocu &mluyjriu i;
rsm;u cwquum o;oywijxm;on/

r;avmiaomjriu i;u

]ueawmvn; r;avmi&olajy;yg on/ vawuvn; woo? r;ou
vn;w [[? ajy;lu? vm;lu? [pluEi r;avmion ½ci; [or tve
allumup&m aumi;on [xiyg on/ r;avmionu vwi;vvjriz;lu
aomallumi½ci;u o&yrazmcsiawmyg/ pmzwoompwu; ílunygawm/}}

(pm-43)

[wijon/ vo? r;o? v[e? r;[ewu tyi0gu:wji wiixm;onrm pmzwo
u [ea&toyg jria, mī? llum;a, miapcon/ xrpwu;í lunci;on/ pmaw\lEi
vuaw\ u xi[yapji;ji pmwr;tpuyi jriui;xurxuciati mi qupyriap
ji;ji aemijzpawmrn tjzptyuu zew;ay;on [q&ygrn/

wpze r;Ei\vw ½yax;ae&mr r;llir;ly; tr∨wpa, mu ia<u;aeu-
]]traicajcmuv;ce avmily;aemu r;llir;om;ygon/ r;llir;ly;aemu
tr∨wpa, mu \ iouum;&ygon/ xtr∨ \ trrrr;xyg
om;on r[wyg b t b, alumi iygoen;/}} (pm-43)

[pma&o \ tar;pum;u pw0ipm;ru E;qaeouo&ygon/ tjzptyuu tar;qí
xm;aomallumi aemu j ó emwpcu ar\m vir jzpay:apc&on/

r;avmicoxwi iaeotr∨ryg? om;or;av;a, mu&ly; ciye;vn; trwi
r&ay/ r;atmou pwvy&m;&mr rwaqrsm;u unyjií i&on tallumi;u

]]aowmpw? awmi;pwawuom um;ay:wirv\$u pe? a&vu0wvupm;
xnaom aowmuc:exm;con/ awmallumirsm;u vn; onv tuur&sl;
uom apmiaelujci;jzpon/ jyevm íypn;rs;u um;ay:ucr ow&awm
on/ tz;weaowum; r&awmly/}} (pm-44)

[r;avmiaom tytji aowmay:mu on tyuyg xyumijcon/ pe? a& ai?
&wemxu vltouu rEajrm b wez;xm;r vaeaomvlobm0u qe;ppjy con/

wpze q;½;epemrci; waomvn; we;z;xm;rrwygu pwtajctaeyg ajymi;v
wwygon/ rxi&m;aom q;½;epemrrsm;tallumi;u-

]]om;jzpo pmcip&wtwu rci \ peem;uyu a&mi;c;v\i]allom.....ig \
rcion igtwu pe\vw&mayon/ [totrwjy\uygao; \ or;jzpo
ruEmi, &mrnp;í t&, &ao;vu aemu traxmi riyao m zcirq;z \
pe\vwruvn; (av;euon rav;euon tyxm;) totrwum;
jy\uygao; \ / prci \ q;yg;rr&sl;uum;]igwallumi epemq;½;ayon}
[om;?or;rs;u b, awmr p0;pm;rrn r[w yg}} (pm-45)

[azmijcon/ xjy, *Epcwi wez;xm;rrwallumi;u v;pvsljy\wwluaom v\pw
tajcaeupijcon/

xlaemu tepemc&i; b0v;yg;yg;c&on orsm; \ jzp&yu-

]]rciwi u, cvuz, r&aomllumi ausmi;aeci r&br;zacsmi? uav;
xe;tjzp b0w;om;&maom tpru;rs;u uleawmtveoem;ygon/
arminrrsm;u ynm&&iyv, wiigao m vn; ocrsmwi vllum;xyi
pum;rajym0&myg/ ynmww arminrrsm; \ aiguoqrmeor c&ww&m
ygao;on/}} (pm-45)

[í tepemcru t o trwiy/rc∨ \ rxi&m;aom b0jy ó em tpu azmjycon/
 xol tepemcaevs uEi rp&ow \ rxi&m; íom t jzptyur;sm; u aw;qjycon/
 rxi&m; íom &opmwr;wi q;½;&jci; \ t ajcctcsu uaw;jyon/ yxr
 taw;Ei 'w , taw;w \ ujym;c;uu

]]om;or;sm;r&v\ i r; [r; [q onEi wply\ieu pypn;sm;uow &z ,
 r&yq/ x o l q v \ i pypn;sm;u q;yq;z , r&yq/ om;or;sm;allum iom
 pypn;sm;u q;½;ygon/ o aomrciu pypn;sm;u q;½;&jci; w&m;c
 on om;? or;sm;jzpon [b , awmr pO;pm;aernr [wyg/}}

(pm-44)

[azmjycon/ om;or;sm;u v n; x o aw;rnr [waom l u m i t j y e t v e w & m ; c u
 azsm u v u l u o n / q u í a v m u ü w & m ; c a z m x w j c i ; r & a o m t r r s m ; r n r & r n e n ; [
 taw;u c;jycon/

rxi&m; í wez;rxm;c&aom t jzptys u u a v ; r s m ; u u , c i ; p m l u n a p c s i a o m
 &opmwr;&i \ o a b m u v n ; j r i a , m i v m a p & o n / x o l p m a & ; o w i j y v a o m a x m i & m ;
 taw;u x i & m ; a p & e r ; a v m i & m w i u a v ; r s m ; u o m o w & l y ; t z ; w e a o w m u
 a r a v s m c a o m t r s l ; o r ; \ t j z p a r m i n r r s m ; y n m a & ; t w u r ; z a c s m i 0 i u m u a v ; x e ;
 b 0 j z i p e l v w t e p e m c c a o m t p r u ; \ a u ; Z ; u r j r i w w t o t r w r i y \ w w l u a o m
 t j z p p o n r x i & m ; a o m a u s ; Z ; & i u ; r s m ; \ a u ; Z ; u & m a z a z m x w u m j r i w w q y
 w w a p v a o m & n & , c u u a & m u a p & e o w u m j r i a v r & a o m a x m i r w i j y x m ; o n
 & o p m w r ; w p y ' j z p o n [q E i y g o n /

5? 2/ q v n u v m ; x i a y : r m

]]q v n u v m ; x i a y : r m) & o p m w r ; w i p m a & ; o o n q y i n y q i w i q v n
 u v m ; x i a y : w i x i u m q y i n y c a e & i ; r r \ i , b 0 t a w ; u a w ; j y c o n / u a v ; b 0
 q y i n y o n t c g w i q v n u v m ; x i a y : w i x i & a o m v n ; a e m u r a o m t c g a &
 l a j c e i ; c u r x ? a & l a j c e i ; c u x a o m t c g a e m u r í r & E i a y / x o l a & a e m u r r E i a o m
 r r u , u r a u e y b 0 r ; e n ; j c i ; p w t m ; i , j c i ; w j z p c & o n / o a o m q v n
 u v m ; x i a y : w i p m a & ; o t c e o m ; x i í r o m ; a o m t c e u o w r x m ; c r a y / p o n r m
 l u l ; p m ; t m ; x w j c i ; r & c í o w r x m ; r j c i ; [v n ; a u m i ; ? q E w p c t l y ; a e m u q E w p c
 a y : v m a o m l u m i v n ; a u m i ; ? j y n 0 c a o m q E r s m ; u a y s m & i 0 r ; a j r m u j c i ; r & b t a w m
 r o w E i a o m q E r s m ; u v u v j z n q n ; a e & a o m a l u m i v n ; a u m i ; j z p y u

]]acg i ; i x m ; & i ; l u n v u a w m a j c e i ; c u a v ; u j r i & y g o n / e i ; c s i p & m
 a v ; y g / ' ' g a y r u l e a w m a j c a x m u E i t a 0 ; ß u ; / u l e a w m u a j c w a v m i ; u a v ;
 a e m u r u v n ; r x ? a t m u u v n ; r x ? u l e a w m p w x t v e a t m u w e ;
 u s o n [x i r y g o n / v l u ; a w u l u n v u v i a e m u r u t u s o m ; r ?

ei;cu tceom;ajcwily; qyinycaeyrm tve|tve tm;up&maumi;
 aom xn0gr[xiygon/ aemurqonrm rzxm;ji;jzpygon/
 uleawmrr&yg/ ei;cqonrm ei;zxm;ji;jzpygon/ uleawmrei;&yg/
 u, |tjzpu tverausrey jzprwwygon/}} (pm- 52)

[|azmijycon/ uav;yijzpaomvn; yxZ0w\ obm0twi; jrivsuEi to;jy|
 cir&aom t cg raureypwjzpryu aw;jyon/

wpzeauseyp&mrm; aw;ryu|

]]qvnuvm;xiay:xi&i; uleawmqEjyn0r? atmijrirrm;uiyely;
 at;at;aq;aq; p0;pm;|unaerygon/ qyinycaeyrm p0;pm;v? aw;v|
 taumi;q;tcejzpygon/ xuol p0;pm;vu|yeawm vn; atmijricwm
 aw? qEjyn0cwmau ren;ygv; [|atmuarrygon/ auseyp&mygyvm;
 [vn; aw;rygon/}} (pm-53/54)

[|azmijycon/ pma&ou &u? v? Epw\ wupm;ralumi ajmi;vvmaom t&,
 uvu|atmijrir? qEjyn0rrrm;pmwu &&cygon/ olaom xt&mrm;twu rru, u
 *P, jci;? c;u|;ji;r&cay/ ,ctcg qvnuvm;xiay:wi rp&mriEi ei;p&mu
 ei;Eiaomt½, on rnontceu a&muconu rocay/ rrvci awmiwcaom
 qEon jyn0vmaom t cg wez;xm;&e c , 0;om;wwluon/

x|yi |y;ajrmuijynpcaom qErsm;on arxm;c&wwly; tq;r&aom qErsm;
 aemuol tm;xm;ar|mviwwluon voabmu

]]rwaqrmvn; atmijriraw? qEaw trsm;|u;jyn0crm rcjzpygon/
 aemuay:vmw qEawbmawu cParxm;ly; u, atmijri jynpcwmav;
 awu cPwjzlwem;ly; t&omclunpr; ygv; [|wuwe;vygon/}}
 (pm- 54)

[|azmijycon/ pma&ou rrpr;aqmiEicaom atmijrirrm;u wez;xm; oialumi;
 u, wiu, u: cpm; oialumi; aw;jyon/ tjcm;orm; raw;raom talumi;t&mwpcu
 pma&ouaw;rum wijyxm;aom axmi&m; taw;ygon &opmwr;wpy'jzpon/
 pmzwou pwxm;wwap&e toay;Eicygon/

5? 3/ a , mi , r;ly; aygirwe;rapz

]]a , mi , r;ly; aygirwe;rapz}}&opmwr;wi pma&oon bwpum;apmiae&i;
 em&lunvu? bwpum;ar|mviuzi pwavmyyaeacon/ xoyyaeaaomvn; tu\$;
 x;rvmb u, 'uu, &mjci;omjzpalumi; aw;rcon/ rr\pwaomuon rnon
 t&mur| ajmi;vray;Eialumi; oww&m;0icon/ ptaw;xi&m;vmap&e pma&o
 i , p0u bv , ux;ontcg jzpwawaom tavwpcEi cwquaw;jyon/

bv, ux;ontcg u, &n&, on ui;xo0i&e t;mwum x;luygon/
oaoomvn; rrx;cu wr;apmi;om;yg u cg;apmi;vu? aygiwe;vu? yg;&vujzplu
yu-

]]pipptm;ji u lwEix;vuly;onEiwplyieu abmv;u oloabmu
oagmion;ly/ u, u bmrwwEiawmly/ cg;yapmi;aeae? aygiwe;aeae
abmv;u olvr;alumi;twi; oom;awmrnomjzpon/ bonu
aemuuvuly; ua, miuwr;Ei aygiwe;aerluonrm tyouou
u, 'uu, &aejci;om jzpon/ oaoom u, tw? u, qE? u, avmbEi
ywou vmavawm a, mi, r;ly; aygiwe;rrwuonrm yxZ0wobm0
[yi q&avrnvm;ro}} (pm- 132)

[azmjycon/ voabm vobm0twi; rr\qEEitww vr;r;aomtcg topww
vwí ropww bu;p;om;wwyu qijciaw;qjycji;jzpon/ twpw, Ovmontcg
avmbpw? a'gopww clyxe;&e cucom;wwy obm0u aw;qjycon/

xlaemu pma&ou pmzwontcgrs;wivn; wi;wpyg;om;rm;u jrermvrs;
aumi;alumi; awmalumi;rm;u a&om;xm;í zwvuontcg txyxy zwc;ircalumi;
jrermvrs;w\ ny? avmyrm;u zw&v\i [wonr[wonrcjcm; p0;pm;jci;r&b
a'goon a&lajy;tjzp a&muvmwwalumi;u azmjyon/ pma&o\ y"metmabmu
rzt;qyEib? rocia, miaqmium y"meu omrnvyjci;? omrnu y"mevyjci;
walumi 'l"rtrew&m;w aysuq;om; wwyu

]]bv, ux;cp0u u, tw? u, qEalumi a, mi, r;ly;aygirwe;ratmi
owxm;c&on/ , cawm pmzw&mwi u, tw? u, qEalumi a, mi, r;
ly; aygirwe;ratmi owxm;ae&jyeygavown;f}}(pm- 135)

[azmjycon/ pma&ou avmuwi jzpav&aom obm0twi; vw\ tw? qErsm;\
O;aqmiappm;ratmuwi a, b, s,trew&m;w z;tyom;wwon oabmaw;jyon/
xo0ji pma&ouarm[alumi yuwtrew&m;w wrjryrom;ap&e owumrri
wwaom axmi&m;tjrir wijxm;on/ pmzwou toÓPyivi;apon &opmwr;
wpy' [q&ayrn/

lci o;oycu

&opmwr;on pma&ou, wi aw;awm? buq? a&zjyaom pmayrs;jzpon/
&opmwr;on taw;tjricpm;ru talumi;tcu ouaoom"ursm;ji tus;oi
talumi;oi jzpatmi a&om;&ygon/ taw;tjri cpm;raumi;av &opmwr;aumi;av [q
qEiygon/ pmzwou&oEpour ay;Eijci;onvn; &opmwr;\ vuPm
wp&yjzpon/ &oEpouru ay;Eiaom &opmwr;jzpav pmayavmuwi ue&pav
jzpayon/ axmi&m;tjriji a&zEiygu yí tmeoi xuavjzp&ayon/

[[rxí&m; íom}} &opmwr;on vn;we;r;avmirjzpp0wpcwi r;pm tjzp ar[mvi
xm;aom tron r;xrygaomvn; rar[mvixm;aom &wemaowmon awmalumiw
vuo| a&muc&on/ xojzp&jci;rm Opm&wemxu om;or;&wemwuyyae&
aomallumijzpon/ xtjzptyu\ w&m;con om;or;wjzpon[oabmrxm;yg/
xo| w&m;cu azsmuzuluon trrsm; rnryirsm;aealumi; aw;jycon/ rxí&m;aom
au;Z;&irsm;u aravsmawwom vlobm0u vwumrjriwwluaom axmi&m;tjrir
xi[yaw;jycjci;jzpon/ ponu xi&m;ap&ejriEiaom j'y0wlrsm;rwpqi rjriEi
aom pw0wlrsm;xa&muatmi taw;tqiqiu yazmjyon/ pma&o\ b0tawturbur
taw;tú? totjri? cpm;rw xujruvmyu azmusl;xm;on[q&ayrn/

[[qvnuvm;xia:y:rm}} &opmwr;on pma&oqyiny&i; i,b0 qyiny
qiwi jzpcam taw;u azmjycjci;jzpon/ uav;b0 qyinyontcg vlu;rm;uo|
qvnuvm;xia:y: tceom;xi&i; qyinyu tm;ucon/ rrx&t&,o
rnontce? rnont&,wi a&muconu rrwrcaci/ talumi;rm qErjynci
tc&ewi aemuqErsm;ay:ayguvmwwaomallumi jzpygon/ jynpc aom qErsm;twu
rru|,uaueyjci; *Pjyic;ajrmujci;r&cay/ ponrm tawmrowEiaom vtiqErsm;
allumiom jzpalumi; axmi&m;tjrir aw;jycon/

[[a,mi,r;ly;aygirwe;rapz}} &opmwr;wi pma&oon bwpum;apmi&i;
pwavmyyaecon/ p;&rpww tu&;rjzpxe;Eiyu aw;jycon/ i,p0u bv,ux;
ontcg rrar[mviaom vr;alumi;ura&mub ten;i,wr;apmi; om;ontcg
a,mi,r;í aygiwe;rcaom rrtjzpu azmjycon/ xjiyi pmzwon tcgwi vn; rrEi
oabmxm;jci; rwuqiygu jzpEi\ rjzpEi\ aw;awmcseq jci;r&b a'gopwonom
O;aqmi vwwwyu axmi&m;tjrir a&zjycygon/

atmioi;\ azmjycaom &opmwr;rm;ulunv|i tqwpcu0;pmwijyum
u,awtawtúEi ñEi;ly;? w&mw&m talumi;tcursm;pí taw;tjrirms;u
jrioxujriatmi aumucucjyon/ tq;ü&opmwr;\ &n&,csuu wijyconu
aw&on/ wpen;tm;jzi o\axmi&m;taw;u ay:viatmialumi;u&;jy zew;a&z
on[q&ayrn/

e*;

ppmwr;on atmioi;\&opmwr; zew;yu pppwijyxm;jci;jzpon/
atmioi;\ &opmwr;rm;on b0totmeoi&oygaom &opmwr;rm;jzponu
awEion/ &opmwr;rm;u yaumi;yv&atmi a&;yaw;jyEion[vn; qEiygon/
atmioi; on taw;euojzpon/ o\&opmwr;trsm;pon vtrsm;owrjytraom
axmi&m; taw;wpccu aw;jya&jyaom &opmwr;rm;jzponu awú&ygon/
atmioi;\ axmi&m;taw; &opmwr;rm;u avvujci;jzi atmioi;\ &opmwr;

zew;r tEynmuawjriEiouo &opmwr; avvme,y,zllz;ruvn; taxmu
t u jyEivrrn[, lunrygonl

u;r;u;pm&i;

ciri? armi("Ejzl)/ (2003)/ *//pmq/b0? pmq/apwem? pmq/vu&mj//* &eue? vi;vi;pmayl

ciri? armi("Ejzl)Ei tjc;/ (1987)/ *//pmwr;i , pmaypmwr;rsm;}}yw/* &eue? pmayArmexw
jynolvuppp0l

aZm*Ei tjc;/ (1978)/ *//uaum/rripmwe;}}//* &eue? py , 0;pmayl

wup;/ (2017)/ *//pmorm; l pmaygi;cly(1)//* &eue? pwu;cicll

armiarmijrioe;/ (2003)/ *//a0zea& t v/ &myawm}}//* &eue? pe;a&mi&epmayl

jrZiEi tjc;/ (1987)/ *//pmwr;i , pmaypmwr;rsm;}}yw/* &eue? pmayArmexw jynolvuppp0l

jroe;wil (2016)/ *//rermiye &opmwr;rsm;}}? 'lur? &eue? Epumvrsm;pmayl*

0i;re? wuolvEi tjc;/ (1978)/ *//pmwr;i , pmaypmwr;rsm;}}/'w/* &eue?
pmayArmexwjynolvuppp0l

atmioi;/ (2005)/ *//vv/uwmaemEi/ tjc;&opmwr;rsm;}}//* &eue? Zeyi pm tywul

atmioi;/ (2009)/ *//owa&&maqmi;yg;rsm;}}//* &eue? Zeyipm tywul

t*vybmom

Stein, Jess and Laurence Urdang. (1976) The Random House Dictionary of the English
Language, College Edition New Delhi.

$\frac{1}{2}$ r0r*Zi;r au\$;Z;owwji;Eiqiaom yji rsm;av vmcsu

armiarmici*

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on $\frac{1}{2}$ r0r*Zi; $\frac{1}{2}$ uav; $\frac{1}{2}$ r0u@r au\$;Z;owwji;Eiqiaom Eiiwum
yji rsm;uoapvaom &n&,cuji wijyxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ uav; $\frac{1}{2}$ r0
u@utaiccí Eiiwumyji rsm;u av vmctjzp wijyxm;yg on/ pmwr;wi
uav; $\frac{1}{2}$ r0u@? yji oabm obm0? Eiiwumyji rsm;r au\$;Z;owwji;Ei
qiaom yji rsm; [í tyi;o;yi;zi av vmwijrnpjzpygon/
aomcsua0g [m&rsm; - yji? '@m&? $\frac{1}{2}$ &myji? xa [mi;yji? ori;yji/

e'je;

ppmwr;on 2011c? {lyvwi a $\frac{1}{2}$ a&mi vi;yEywu uyEyly; oi;pmayrxwa0c
on uavmip\ $\frac{1}{2}$ r0yjiaygi;clypm tyw E , 0? apmrni? wuovpe? c:pp&m?
wiwi&? c:pci? ciav;E , pon pma&q&maygi; (110)a&om;aom yjiaygi;(212)y'
yg0ion/ $\frac{1}{2}$ &myji?(183)y'Ei bomjiye Eiiwumyji (89)y' teur (24)y'u
av vmxm;yg on/ yji rsm;on vrsl;ra $\frac{1}{2}$? bomra $\frac{1}{2}$? rsl;quwpcr rsl;quwpcr
vuqiur;ay;aom , 0au;r tarrsm;yijzpygon/ uav;a&m? vu;twuyg
pwvuaygyg; ouomaym $\frac{1}{2}$ ipm zw $\frac{1}{2}$ c&aom vp0xw $\frac{1}{2}$ r0r*Zi;yg yji rsm;u oi;
pmayrppn;um]] $\frac{1}{2}$ r0yjiaygi;cly}} tjzpxwa0con/ yjiaygi;clyu tav vmctjzp
vuuijy\ aom vn; r&i;r*Zi;pmr:uEmrsm;Ei wuqiav vmcygon/

]],ae vi , ? aemi0 , vu;}} [aom q&maZm*s\ uAsm twi; , ae uav; vi ,
wonvn; aemi tcgvu;rbrsm; jzpvmluvr0;rn/ vw\ qEon yji rsm;xwi
ay:wwon/ yji rsm;on uav;vi,wu pwu;apon/ trruruap on/
xuav;vi,w\ trrursm;? pwu;rsm;on rlu mrtau mitxnay:vmayvr
0;rn/ xalumi , ae uav;vi,w\ atmijrirtrruu vuqiur; taray;Ei
rn [&n $\frac{1}{2}$, arqmre;í poawoepmwr;u wioi;yg on.

1/ uav; $\frac{1}{2}$ r0u@

$\frac{1}{2}$ r0r*Zi;u 1947 cEp? Zevr pwixwa0cygon/ tw1? trw 1 ron
1956 cEp arv txqv\i tw 9 tx xwa0cly;jzpygon/ wpwv\i 12 tyzpi
tw9 qv\i q , Epu;v 108 tyxya0ly; jzpygon/ $\frac{1}{2}$ r0yjiaygi;cly rmwumwi

* a'guwm? ygarmu? XnerL? jrermptXme? or0g , rwuov(ppui;)

1/ vr;reo (ri;azm? 1956? {ly) upwií 212/ 'v;av; (armiri;a0? 1968?
'Zibm)wi tq;owygon/ 1956? {ly ½r0r*Zi;on tw 9? trw 107 jzpí 1968?
'Zibm ½r0r*Zi;on tw 21? trw 247 txjzpygon/

]]oawoe\wm0eon treutaxmutxm;ji azmxwzjzpon/
treu azmxw&mwí ,ciurawcaom topuazmxwci;vn;yg
on/ ,ciu wr;apmi;caom tcursm;u wnrway;ji;vn;ygon/
,ciu jynjynpp rawlao;aom tcursm;u jznay;ji;vn;ygon/}}¹

[q&m8u; a'guwmciat;u]]csporsm;u q;p&ijci;}} pm tywi ziqcygon/

½r0yjiaygi;clywi yjitrwp0 1 r 133 txu ½&myjiirsm;tjzp azmjiyí
trwp0 134r 212 tx onEiiwumyji(or[w) bmonjeyjiirsm;tjzp tp0
twi; azmjyxm;ygon/ 134/ ntpuo;a ,mu(ri;vw? 1955? azazm0g&) bmon
jeyjiijzpygon/ xalumí uav;½r0u@on ½r0r*Zi;tw *? trw 92 r pwi
on [½r0yjiaygi;clyt& q&ygrn/

½r0r*Zi;pwi xwa0onr tya& 91 tytxwi uav;½r0u@yg0ijci;
r½ao; [yjiaygi;clypm tyt& oEiygon/

yajymon tavtxon wi;jynwi;wi½on/ vrsl;wi;wi½on/ vrsl;p
wi;wi½on/ ptavtxon rnontceavmuwi pwiay:aygu cygoen; [ar;vi
vawpum;ajymwwontcer pwiay:aygucygon [ajzq&ygrn/ uav;
v8u;ra½;? qi;&cr;omra½;? au;vulrUay:ra½;? vwe;pm;aygi;p cpm;Epouly;
totjrirm;&p&m awEiaomyjiirsm;u uav;½r0u@r wi quay;ji;on trsl;om;
a&uov aumi;rwp&yu jy/&ma&muon [q&ygvrrn/

2/ yji oabmo bmo

ou8u;pum; oui ,lum; [aom q½;½ontwi; wi;jynwpcwi tou
t& ,8u;owu aemivmaemiom; oui ,owt m; rrw rbb;b m;rsm;xr lum;z;aom
jyirsm;u wpqiajymjyav½ygon/

jrerm t b"mewi-

]]yji^yeAsi^e- tp0tqu uajymvmaom tjzptyuZmwalumi;/²

[ívn;aumi;? a'guwmxiatmiu-

]]yjiu t"ym ,tu0;clyziqví vrsl;wprsl;xr peremjyp&m talumi;rsm;
jzpon [q&rn/³

[ívn;aumi; ziqjyxm;ygon/

¹ ciri?armi("EjzL)? 2010?19/

² jrermptzL? 1991? 196/

³ xiatmi? a'guwm? 1948? rwqu/

yji \ oabm0Ei ywou í jrerp , pur; tw 11 wi-

]]yjiwon rsm;aomtm;jzi vom;wtm;oway;cu? oeo iq;rcu
paom &n& , cursm;yg^{1/2}ozi uav;oi , rsm; avvmetwu oiawm
aom oice;pmsm;jzpayon/¹

[vr;ñeazmjyxm;ygon/

wpzearmi xi u-

]]tlur;ajm&vi '@m& on tallumi;t&mwp&yu twc;í jyeajymaom
tzljzpon/ 0wum; '@m&yjiwxu twei , cuxiaom tzljz
on [rw , Ei&mon/²

[qygon/

xallumi yji [on '@m& (zew;ajmq&a&om;aom yji)ru 0wruaom
tzljzply; a^{1/2}; tp0tquu &n& , cuwpcczi pw0ipm;z , jzpatmi tqe;wu ,
a&zuxm;on pjy/p&m tjzptyu rwr; [qEiygon/

'@m&yjirms;u wxia [majm í avmuu;t m; tvi;a&miay;cluaom? weqm
qicluaom? q;ryjyicluaom urmym^{1/2}u;rsm;trsm;yi ^{1/2}ygon/ , i; ynm^{1/2}rsm;teu
a^{1/2};tu;q;jzponqaom ynm^{1/2}i u;rmtpw³ yijzpygon/ '@m&yjirms;u wxi
a [majmum avmuu q;rEicavon/

^{1/2};&myjiipmaypmwr;rsm; ('w , w)wi 0;ri;Eiu-

]]yji on 0wxuyrí xa&muon/ wwEiv&i;a&muon/ &n& ,
cu? 0;wncu^{1/2}on/ oice;pmu vn;aumi;? taw;tjriopuvn;
aumi;ay;on/ pw0ipm;z , vn; jzpon/}}⁴ [azmjyxm;ygon/

wpzejrerm0wt ñe;wi rvcu —

]]vr;wi; vr;wi;ü rbq&mwon yaqmi í ajmq q;rwwavon/
povivwe;pm;wuy? vtztptn; vy^{1/2}m;^{1/2}e;uerrsm;lum;r v\
tawtluon en; , z , ? Epouz , yjirms; jzpvmluavon/
0won yutajccí w;wujzpxe;vmaom pmaytzl yoPnewpr;
jzp \ / yonvtawtlu? vtallumi;u ypjyijzpay:vm&ouoyi 0w
onvn; vtawtlu? vtaumi;u ypjyipmr; jzpayon/ yjion

¹ jrerp , pur;? w-11? 1970? 233/

² xi? armi? 1974? 42/

³ jrerp , pur;? w-14? 2012? 439/

⁴ ri;Ei? 0;? 1989? 140/

Eporry;&i;? Epouz ,jy/&i;? en;ay;vr;ñejy/aom 0;wnc;ujzi
ay:aygucjci; jzpav on/}}¹

[| ziqx_m;yg on/

x|jyi Eii jcm;yjyioawoyn^{m½}iwp0;jzpaom ruprvmqou
]]jyipmayqon a^½;we;uwrsm;? jiyavmur wec; £'yg'^½or_{sm};
taumi;u ajymqcluon taxmutx_m;jzpon/}}²

[í qygon/

yn^{m½}ir_{sm}; \ ziq^½i;jycur_{sm};t& yji [on x;qe;tloz , &m? tw , z , &m?
oice;pm , z , &mEi aw;awmqijciz , &m_{sm};yg^½onu avvaw^½&ygon/ yji
zw^½&jci;jzi pmzwor_{sm}; \ pwutye;ajz tyi;ajyay_{sm}^½iapEi^½ omru ow&oEpjzm
uygay;pr;um pwurqpavmuav;upv | bu;rm;on jy|jyiajmi;vrtx oice;pm
wpcc ay;pr;Ei on pmwpy'yi jzpayon/

q&mru;a'g uwmcioe;0; \]]cpm;r? qijcirEi&mZ0ix o c&;om;jci;}} pmtyr
]]' @m&r_{sm};Ei &mZ0ix u 'waygi}} aqmi;yg;e*;wi-

]]rnoyiqap&mZ0ix u 'waygion '@m&qevon/ o&mZ0iwi
vm í cwquaeao m arwmZmwvr;rm;on '@m& qeve;vygon/}}³

[qx_m;yg on/

Eiiwum^½;&myjyipmwr;wioq&maumatmiu —

]]^½&myjiu au;s;vuyji [í vn; ac:luygon/ au;s;vuvxajyon
yyir_{sm};yi jzpygon/ taemuEii pmaywwi o ae [ac:luygon/ o
[aom pum;rm omrev omret&yom;llr^½u;om;r [won au;s;½mae
vx jzpygon/}}⁴

[zwlum;wioi;cygon/

x;a [mi;yjiEi ywou í jrerp , pur;tw-5 wi-
]]rvuvlori;q i&m trwonm_{sm};jzpaomvn;? aemiaomtcgumv
a^½lav_{sm} í Zmpjrpu aEmi;vwau_{mi};pm rrwrlojzi pwu;qe;lu ,
aom taumi;t&m_{sm};tjzpzi use&paom yjiwu x;a [mi;yji [ac:avon/}}⁵

¹ rvc? 1970? *-C/

² v? 0; (vx-)Ei tr_{sm};? 1976? 27/

³ r;ajr? r? 2018? 180/

⁴ au_{sm}atmi? 1989? 91/

⁵ jrerp , puse;(w-5)?1961/

[ziq^{1/2}i;jycyon/

ori;yjiEi ywouí jrerp , pur; tw-11wi-

ori;yjion vw\wu , tjzptyuEi yíe;pyaom yjyir³;jzpí
 , wr;yjiouou r[wac/ ori;yjyirsm;wi a^{1/2};tcgu trewu ,
 yi tou^{1/2}icorsm;talumi;u azmjyav^{1/2}on/}}¹

[qx^m;ygon/

q&m^bu;a'guwmcia t; \ jrerp mayc&;wi —

1934 cEpwi acwpr;yji}}Ei acwpr;uAsmw ay:ayguvmon/
 acwpr;pmayu vuc^uqorsm;wi q&m^bu;yr;ei; ² vn; tygt0i
 jzpon/ q&m^bu;on 1935 cEp? Zvixw*E0i avmur*Zi;wi
 acwpr;uA^{ma}0zepm}}? 1936 cEp *Eavmu r*Zi;wi acwpr;yji
 a0zepm}} wua&;om;u acwpr;pmay ay:ayguvmjci;u Or;ye;wom
 uqon/ }}³

[uveacwpum;ajy taxaxwi qx^m;ygon/

3/ Eiiwu myjyirsm;

yajyiaom tav tvm? yem;axmiaom tav tvm on vn;acw? vu&uue;
 acw? ^{1/2}yao;acw? ayy&yuacwü w;y m;on/ av , m0yacw? cnpuacw? ^{1/2}y^{1/2}iacw?
 pmyEypuacwwwiu m; acwajymi;t^m^{1/2}ajymi;ozi wraumvmawmra , mⁱ^{1/2}on/ , c
 tcgri;o0P? 0;xiatmi? vx0;v? E,0paomy*vrsm;u xyjyirsm;u pp
 aqmi;aqmi;vyum pmxayxolowoi;vmlu ozi Or;omz , &mjzp&ayon/}}⁴

q&m^bu;ri;o0Pu Eiiwu myjyirsm; [ro;b]Eii&yjcm;yjyirsm;}}⁵ [xwa0c
 ygon/ xpm ty rmwumcyuo b p mwr;w iavvmrn Eiiwu myji(27) y'u
 azmjyygrn/

u&; , m;yji

1/ zm;wpjyea rwpjye (E , 0? 1963? atmuwbm)

*&yji

2/ o;asmi;om;Ei 0yav (E , 0? 1963? atmuwbm)

¹ jrerp , pur;(w-11)? 1970? 234/

² baomi;? Avri;? 2002?331/

³ ciri?arni("EjzL)? 2014? 436/

⁴ wup;? 2005? 327/

⁵ ri;o0P? 2016? 3/

***yeyjyir_{sm};**

3/ ye;yiapaom t z;t(wiwi&? 1964? ar)

4/ t i , q;om;(nat mi? 1959? Zee0g&)

5/ t tuaumi;aom *ir(wiwi&? 1961? 'Zi b m)

6/ t b;t \ vnuu(pr;a0? 1965? 'Zi b m)

***_{sm}reyji**

7/ pi'&v m; (E , 0?1959? at muwb m)

pyeyji

8/ jrn;emav;yub v(E , 0? 1957? at muwb m)

w^{1/2}wyjiir_{sm};

9/ yiui , av;r_{sm};(ciav;E , ? 1958? Zee0g&)

10/ om;Eirb(nat mi? 1959? {ly)

11/ yiv , vuaqmi(yorcpci? 1959? E0i b m)

12/ o t u s;aqmi u , t u s;at mi(1/2 ue;? 1960? Zvi)

13/ t b;tEipr;ac_{sm}i;(armi v oi? 1968? azazm0g&)

wAujiyir_{sm};

14/ uaqmiwom;armi(cpp&m?1958?Ze)

15/ t un;weu v(cpp&m?1957? Zvi)

16/ a^{1/2}ayv m(armiat ;au_{sm}?1960?puwi b m)

17/ v0ipm;Au(cpp&m?1965? ar)

w&uyji

18/ o&aumi;av;*Zi(cpci?1961?ar)

x i;yji

19/ yn^{m1/2}i opcworm;(wu o vpe;?1957?azazm0g&)

A , ueryji

20/ t qpwp&m0g;(E , 0?1963? azazm0g&)

1/2&m;yji

21/ qe , mEi em' , m(cipe;ar? 1966? {ly)

tjcm;Eiiyji

22/ ewbv;0uye;(0;av;uuu;? 1962? Ze)

23/ Epxyur;b&iuawm(apmrni;?1961? atmuwbm)

24/ 0;xyeuav; \ jzwx; (oe;p;? 1959? atmuwbmv)

t*pyji

25/ ty'umpiEi zey(wi;u;? 1963? atmuwbm)

q&mr;u;a½uarEi; \ a':av;yajmr , Eiijcm;yji;rm;e'ge; pum;wi-

]] [;t&i 1988 rwiciu &euellr\Urm ½;puw w½wo½;u to v yji0w
uAsmawygw tEynmpmayvu&mawu vuaqmiay;w, u/ , 0au;r zv ,
wmayg/}}¹

[w½wbmouae t*vbybmomyeqxm;aom yyipmty&yuqon/ xol t*vy
bmomyeqly; Eiiwumyjiyvuaqmi&ou jrermbmomyeyji;rm;u a&;om;rn
xiygon/ cpp&mon wAuyjiio;y'? wiwi&on *yeyjiEpy' bomyeq
on/ x;jcm;onrm q&mr;u; E,0on u&;,m;? *&? pye? jyiop? A,uer
yji;rm;u bomyeqxm;alumi;awl&on/

txuwiazmjycaom yjiw\ oabmobm0ulunv\i yjion 0w\ tajcc
jzpon/ yjion vavmu\jzp&y;rm;u tajcwní yajmo\pwu;zi c\ xium
yjiem;axmioEi pmzwowü pwcpm;rtrsk;rk;u jzpay:apon/ yji\ tq;wir
yji tay:wi Epoujci;Eitw b0towpccu &½apygon/ uav;i , rsm;tygt0i
vom;won cpm;ru Epouuon/ yjion uav;pmayjzpon/ yjiu uav;i ,
rsm; em;axmiav½onrwpqi cpm;wwvmluon/ &ocpm;rtpu yji;rwpi
tavtui &vmluon/ xol yji\ aemuol vuyg&i; vtrsk;rk;u awlu&on/
avmu\jzp&ytrsk;rk;u olu&on/ jzp&y;rm;rwpqi vloabm vobm0rsm;u
awl;rivmly;v\i avmuüaqmioia½mioiaom oabmw&m;rsm;? tu;sk;jzp tu;sk;rap
aom tallumi;u em;vnoabmayguvmapon/ b0c&wpav\mu tqiaiyacmarlpm
aexiwwontui u yji;rm;wpqi Epoujci;u ay;pr;Eion/ trsm;t;zi yji
rsm;u uav;rsm;t;rb? tz;? tzm;? 0;av;? a':av;pon aqrsk;rsm;? q&morm;rsm;u
ajymum;onrwpqi lum;orwom;lu&on/ ojzpontavsmu xow\ rr&iao;
w? om;? ajr; ponwtay: aumi;apvaom t&yygongtavsmu yjiem;axmiow\
pm&wwnrwapvaom apwemygonuawl&on/ yjiwwi apwem? arwm tail
toursm; cpm;&aprEitw uav;i , rsm;u qaamiEiaom pmayjzpon/ yjit&om
cpm;&mrwpqi yji;ray;aomtaw;tjri? tavtu;iaumi;rsm;urwom; vuem
vmluon/

¹ arEi;? a½u? 2015? e'ge;/

yjyion vi , pmaywpr; jzpon/ yjyir; on avmu jzp&yu cxiem; qici
vmatmiaym í 0wuoyi 'lavmu utajcy; yajmo \pwu; pwoe; rsm; u
xnoi; ajmqEion/ uav; i, w\ Ee, aomtaw; wi tlor? xwver? &&ir?
wnlunrpon &ocpm; rtr; r; 0ia&mu vmatmi zew; &í yjiwipw0ipm; z,
Zmwvr; rsm; yg0ivmon/ yjyion uav; y&owu&nñe; ly; 0wwir t½, a&mu ly;
ou&nñe; onjzpí yjiEi0w; jcm; em; on/ 0wwipwvy½m; rygaomvn; 'l"r
vavmuEi tvr; ra0; oiay/ qijciww&m;½ly; vrsm; twu vobm0uon[
, lunvmatmi 'l"ravmuEi tumta0; re; ra0; x; oion/ yjyir tawt u?
toÓP Ee, aom uav; rsm; jzpí x; jcm; aom tlor? xwver? &&ir? wnlunr
paom cpm; rrrsm; xi [yvmapatmi yjyiq&mu vavmu"avjzp½; xu tvr; umatmi
pwu; jzi jznpuzew; ajmq&on/ xtcuonyi 0wEiyji jcm; em; on tcsujzp
on/ wncurm 'l"ravmu utajccl; pwu; Eijznpuum Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmi
umva'oaemuc ygici; jzpon/ pwu; jzizn&mwí 0wuor[w '@m&qeaom
avmuu vn; zew; Eion/ yjyitq; wi uav; i, wi; Epou&eta&; u; on/ o
jzpap&e yajmou jznpuzew; Zmwvr; u cxiívn; aumi;? uav; i, pwwi
olavm olavm ovpw xuoeap&evn; aumi; pwu; , Ortr; r; Ei zew; x; yg
on/

yjyion uav; i, w\ pwcpm; rtaw; tjríwEi e; pyr½on/ ojzpí yjyir
Zmwaqmiw\ jzp&yon 'l"ravmuwivn; uunr½&on/ toi, wxu
tav; u&on/ yjyiq&m\ pwu; twwynmallumi uav; i, rsm; i, p0uyi
cpm; wvwrrsm; Eitw tout½, Ei xuoion trtuiaumi; rsm; &½apon/
uav; t½, Eiveon ooioxuaom A[ovrsm; &½vmon/

ppmwr; wi yjyizwen; rsm; rwpqi pwu; rsm; ay: viatmi Zmwvr;?
Zmwaqmi? aemuczew; rrrsm; u yji (3) y'jzi om"uy avvwijyygon/

3) 1 0; xyeuav; \jzwx;

0; xyeuav; \jzwx; yjyit u; c; yrm ye; yynm½itz; twp0; on acsmi;
wpc\ ur; yg; wpzuwi½aom ajcmuaoUaeaom opiwwwpcu ye; ytjrexvyav
on/ tz; t\ vupr; alumi tvevyaom ½yxjzpvm on/ xtem; o v\ u; wp0;
a&mu vmon/ xorm ye; c; q&mt u; wp0; jzpon/ xye; yq&m u; on vyaom ye; y
½yu aq; jc , ay; v u&mr yí vyaom ye; y½y jzpvm on/ xt½ytem; o t0wclyww
aom tr, twp0; a&mu vmon/ t½yEiwi; í t0wu0wqiay; on/ ye; y½yon
vom; wr\ vyaom re; ryav; jzpvm on/ xoo; 0; on ye; y½yulunum c; u; l;
em; ael uon/ xtcewi Em; au sm i; om; wp0; a&mu vmon/ tvecpci arwmou0i
om; on/ ye; y½yuav; t m; rrEicpwi; pum; qEi&e vy½m; ygEri , [aw; oci;
q&m tou0ivmon/ Em; au sm i; om; tcpu vucí twxucmrnqq xo; 0; u

yi qia l u m i ; a j y m o n / x o j i i ; c & m w i v t r s m ; p a 0 ; v m l y ; b & i u ; x a & m u 1/2 o m ; o n /
 r i ; j r w u a 1/2 * g ; i g ; & m p e l y ; a v ; a , m u t n t r c , y g / r e ; r y s u b @ m a w m t j z p
 o r ; r n / q ; j z w c s u u r a u s e y l u a y / w & m ; r w a t m i q ; j z w o i g ; & m a y ; r n / r r e r
 a o ' P u s c & r n / l u n a e a o m 1/2 m o m ; r s m ; x r 0 ; x y e a q m i ; a o m v y a v ; w & m ; p & i r n [&
 0 p m x u v m o n /

1/ ye; yq&m on opiwr xvyí zci jzpxu on/

2/ ye; c&q&m on acsmarm vy&eaq; jc , í 0; av; jzpxu on/

3/ tyc&y on re; ron acsmarm vy pjynwiw , at mi q i , i & m rci jzpxu on/

4/ re; uav; t 1/2 yrm Em; au sm i ; o m ; \ a r w m x m ; o a l u m i t o u 0 i v m o n
 jz p o n t j y i E p 0 ; o m ; w p 0 ; E i w p 0 ; c p c i u r ; 0 i l u í v i a , m u s m ; j z p x u
 o n /

[í q ; j z w a y ; c o n / b & i r E p o u a o m v n ; y & o w r r e o n a j y m o n t w u b & i u ;
 o n q ; j z w o t m ; i g ; & m a y ; v u o n / y e ; y ? y e ; c ? t y c s y q & m w 0 r ; o m r q ; j z p u m
 E m ; a u s m i ; o m ; E i r e ; u a v ; w b 0 c & ; v r ; w p a v (m u a y s m 1/2 i o m ; & a v a w m o n /

3¹ 1¹ 1 Zwvr;zew;y

xyjiZmwvr;tpwi

]uav;w trtci;wppwp&m jzpy m;con q l u y g p ? i ; t r t m ; w & m ;
 o j z i p & i q ; j z w j c i ; u j z w x ; } [a c : o n / , c u a v ; w z w & t & a o m
 y j y i o n 0 ; x y e u a v ; \ j z w x ; (o r [w) 0 ; x y e u a v ; \ w & m ; p & i
 q ; j z w y j z p o n / u a v ; w a y s m 1/2 i j r L ; x ; p m z w E i l u y g a p } }¹

[p n ; 1/2 ; x m ; y g o n /

0 w r s m ; w i Z m w \ t p Z m w y s l ; y i ; u u m v a ' o a e m u c j z i v n ; p E i o n /
 y j y i w i v n ; a e m u c j z i p E i o n / 0 ; x y e u a v ; t p w i p r ; v e ; p j y n a o m j r u c i ;
 t v , w i a c s m i ; i , p ; q i ; a e o n / a c s m i ; w p z u w i a j c m u a o l a o m o p i w 1/2 o n /
 t u i ; a j c m u r w p y g ; t j c m ; b m r r 1/2 / i u i , E p a u m i e m ; a e o n / e e u c i ; a w ; o q & m r
 1/2 w w & u j y e a j ; o n [a & ; o m ; x m ; o n /

y j y i y i j z p a o m v n ; a e m u c t z U t a v ; x m ; o n / a e m u c t z U p w 0 i ; p m ; z ,
 a u m i ; o n / a e m u c t z U r m t a l u m i ; r r [w / Z m w v r ; ? Z m w a q m i w E i q u p y u m a 1/2 U
 q u & r n Z m w v r ; r s l ; j z p o n / y j y i a j y m o o n Z m w v r ; t p w i a e m u c E i p x m ; o n /

¹ uav mip? 2011? 761/

aemuctzlon a^{1/2}qurnZmwvr; erwuiyon/ yjiZmwvr;jzapumr tww
ynmoabmygatmi wijyEionu aw&on/

yjiZmwuuyi;wi Zmwaqmirs;jzpaom ye;yq&mtu;? ye;csq&mtu;?
tycyon tr, tu;wEi opiwwu qupyay;on/ Zmwuwpwuuy;wpuu
azm&mwí yxrZmwuü ye;yq&mtb;ta&muvmly; opiwwtm; re;uav;tjzp
xvyon/ xZmwuwi tvevyaom re;rylay:vmjci;jzi yem;axmiotm; tlo
apon/ tlor&ojzpvmaecuwi xyqitloru cpm;apon/ yji\Zmw^{1/2}e jriay;
vuici;on em;axmiotm; &ocpm;r jriwuvmapon/ ovpxuoevmapon/
xtcewi ye;csq&mtu;wp0; a&muvm on/ t^{1/2}yuye;cs;oon/ rsm;rur
re;uav;^{1/2}yr vyuwuo jc,oEionu aw&on/ xrwpmi tzm;tu;
a&muvmly; t0wtpm;cyí qi,iay;& tvq;jzpm;í o;0;v;Epouvmon/
Zmwvr;u Zmwuuyi;wi ye;y? ye;cs? tycyonwjzi tloapon/ ovpx
wpqily;wpqi jriwuvmapon/ yjia&o Zmwvr;r&yap&e a^{1/2}ola^{1/2}u vsm;ap&e
Zmwaqmiop Em;ausmi;om;u zew;vuon/ Em;ausmi;om;r arwmzUaw; ouL;&m
wi re;rylav;r vom;tpjzpvmm x0Ep0; arwmou0iluavon/ Zmwu
yi;wi pmzwow ovpxtjriq;a&muvm on/ Em;ausmi;om;Ei re;rylav;w
twae&ejzpvmon/ 0wrsm;wi tm;lylirygouo yjiwivn; xnoi;xm;on/
yjiwi Em;ausmi;om;Ei re;rylav;w twae&eu ueuutm;lyiaom Zmwaqmi
wp0;ay:vm on/ tm;lylionZmwaqmijzpaom b&ion twqege? tPm^{1/2}i
qege p&iq;jzwrEi Zwvr;u t xwtxyola&uatmi zew;xm;on/ Zmw
xi;ola&muatcg b&iEi 0;xyeuav;w tm;lylirzi pw0ipm;ru yjriwu
vmapon/ 0;xyeuav;on trew&m;^{1/2}maz&mwí &&iouvupmjzi tajzu
azmijontqio a&muvm on/

Zmwuxuyi;wi ye;yynm^{1/2}ion zci? ye;cynm^{1/2}ion 0;av;? tycyonon
rci? Em;ausmi;om;on via,muvm;jzpxualumi; qjzway;on/ Zmwqi;yi;wi
jynowtm; rwjyeEií b&iri;jrwu 0;xyeuav;u ig;&may;vuon/ Zmwor;
yi;wi Em;ausmi;om;Ei re;rylav;w vr;wpav(muaym^{1/2}iom;lyjzi yjiem;axmi
owtm; aueyaym^{1/2}itm;wuapon/ yjiwpy'v;on 0wvpy'yr tEynmzew;
rrsm;Ei a&zUxm;onu aw&on/

]]tEynmr&o [qtyaom EpouunE;r? auey0r;ajrmu^{1/2}ive;r
wpccay;Eijci;on tEynm\ tu;jriq;*P&n? tErrjzpaom *P&n
[qEiygon/}}

]&opmay\oabmr &ovr;r;ae&rn} [aomtqt& yjiwvav(muwi
tlor&ovr;r;ae&mr tq;wiEpoujci;&o cpm;&apon/

&o*, u taejzi avmuwi trew&m; ta&u;ly; trew&m; O;aqmiay;&e v ty
on/ trew&m;vucay;aom jyno^{1/2}&rnjzpaumi;u uav;yjyirsm;r aumi;pm
ay;pr;xm;onu awl&on/

3¹ 1² 2 Zmwaqmizew;y

yjyiwi Zmwaqmi \ ta&ygyu yjyixrZmwaqmirms;on vavmu vip^{1/2}uu
u, pm;jy\xm;jci;jzi avvm^o^{1/2}&ygon/ pyjyiwi Zmwaqmirms;t m; onretm;jzi
unv\i ye;yq&m? ye;cq&m? tycyon? Em;ausmi;om;? b&iEi0;xyeuav;pon
jzi pma&o on Zmwaqmirms;tay:wi yjiem;axmiow cpm;Ei&e taw;rsm;azmjy
xm;onu awl&on/

ye;yq&mon acsmi;ur;yg;eab;^{1/2} opiwwuluní

]]igonrlumci tri;rpr;jzp&awmrn/ xtcgrnont^{1/2}yur\xEiawm
rnr[way/ xalumi,ctcg igüxi;xEiaom pr;t m;^{1/2}cewi
popiwwtm; t^{1/2}y tjzp xi;ayawmt}}¹

[a&xm;on/ ye;cq&mtaw;wivn;

]]igye;c\vu&melom 're;uav;t^{1/2}yu jc, ovu&&i? urmay:rm tacsm
q; tvq; re;uav;t^{1/2}yjzpv&r , }}²

[azmjyxm;on/

xZmwaqmito;o; \ taw;rsm;wi yem;axmiouav;rsm;t m; vr;neapv
on/

ye;yq&mtaw;wi twwynmu rraoaom avmutu^s;1/2ap&rn[joiao
om;aom} uAsmjzi q&maZm*s u vr;nexm;ygon/ ye;cq&mtaw;wi rrtEynmu
o0urxm;b jynocpm;Ei&e avmutvcpm;&rn[aomtaw; ay;xm;ygon/
tEynm^{1/2}iwi; wi;jyn? jyno? urmavmutwu xm;&p&rn[aomtaw;u ay;aom
yjyijzpygon/ xuol pwxm;tr;s;s;1/2ap&e aueyEirn taw;u

]]tr; u\ywo;a, mu&U twwynme aygi;pyvuawmry urmay:rm
tvyq; re;uav;wpa, mu jzpvmayawmw , }}³

[lyiawajym\ uavon/

xitzwi ynm^{1/2}ito;o;pn;v;&rn/ Eii? vrs;s;? avmutu^s; paygi;
aqmi^{1/2}u&rn[ne;qae ygon/ yjiav;rsm;on yjyizwow\ taw;? tou

¹ uavmip? 2011? 762/

² , i;/

³ , i;? 763/

ueowrr^{1/2} omretm;jizwv*l*i em;qic:ipz,jzpon/ euepmaw;owtzt*r* yji
q&m \&nne;csuu wez;^{1/2 1/2} b0t o&^{1/2}apEiygon/

xyjiwi Em;ausmi;om;on Zmwv*r*;tou0iapon/ t*l*or o**g&&*oyg0i
atmi zew;xm;on/ b&iu;rrm t*m*Pm^{1/2}i qeaom Zmw^{1/2}yjzpon/ acwtququ
Eiiwi;wi aw^{1/2}&av^{1/2}on/ O;xyeuav;on trew&m; \ j*y*, *jzpaom urmEii
to;o;wi rw&m;rrsm;^{1/2}aeonu we;veEiaom ynm^{1/2}ijzp&e *u*l;pm;oialumi;
taw;uay;on Zmwaqmiwp0;jzpon/ yjizwowon O;xyeuav; \ q;jzw
cuu Epouatmizew;xm;on/ trew&m;wijy&mwi t*u*s;oitalumi;oi
y&owvucEirn taw;uay;pr;aom yjiizpon/

3¹ 1² 3 umva'oaemuc

yjiq&on umva'oaemucu Zmwv*r*? ZmwaqmiwEi qupywijr
aumi;reonu aw^{1/2}&on/ txuazmjyyg O;xyeuav;yjion Zmwv*r*;oabmt&
lunv*l*i 0wutwwynmto;Ei nnwon/ pmzwo \pwu pn;^{1/2}qaqmiu
Zmwv*r*;pp0azmjyon/ Zmwuwpuu*y*;wpuu zew;rzi Zmwwuyi;u
tq;owon/ pmzwo t*m*; Epouray;Ei^{1/2}ru b0t o tmeoiygaom &o [q&rn/

Zmwv*r*? Zmwaqmi *u* ,pm;jyle ,y , *u* s ,jyeon/ urmEii? vr*s*;to;o;
vucEion/ trew&m;t*m*; tav;xm;azmjyaom oabmyg0ion/ avmu^{1/2} tww
ynm^{1/2}i? toynm^{1/2}ito;o;won rrwpaygi;nnm t*m*;xwí avmuu t*v*qiEi
rn/

Zmwor;wi 0wut&zew;Eirxu arwmw&m; ta&B*u*;yu tom;ay;xm;on/
t^{1/2}yrmvyaomvn; tour^{1/2}? Em;ausmi;om;arwm aus;Z;allumion tou0ivm&
on/ rnonvyie;urq arwmEitrew&m;om av;eualumi; Zmwaqmirms;r
wpqi ay;pr;xm;onu aw^{1/2}&ygon/

traw&m;Ei arwmw&m; \ aus;Z;onom wez;B*u*;rm;allumi; avmuu t*u*s;jy
allumi; tq;t*r*u avvmaw^{1/2}&ygon/

3² 2 t b; t \ vnuu

t b; t \ vnuuyjion *yeyjiizpon/ yji \&n^{1/2} , curm tajrm t*r*i^{1/2}
aom *yev ,orm; t b; t*u*;allumi awmiajc^{1/2 1/2}m uav;r ^{1/2}m o^{1/2}m;w touab;
cr;om&m&allumi; azmjyxm;on/ ta&ay:upay:v*l*i tajrm t*r*i*u*;rm;ly; t*r*sm;t*u*s;
aqmi^{1/2}u vaom t*u*s;w&m;allumi vrm;cr;om&allumi; wijyxm;ygon/

]] t b; t \ vnuu}} yji t*u*s;0;c*s*yr*m*

]]a½;veavly;aom t c g *yejynwi]wmrm} ac: v , orm; t b; t l u;wp0;
½avon/}}¹

t b; t on t veyipwoabmxm;aumi;ly; ÓPynmvn;½on/ trrm
jrirm;aom awmixywi½on/ trab; 0 , mwi v , ui;½on/ owi ajr;uav;
] , ee} ½on/ awmiapmi; u s , u s , jyejyewi v , ui;rm;½on/ t vyvyorm
awmiajcwiaeon/ ½mrm yiv , Eiawmitlum; ½on/ v , orm;won aep0 eeuü
awmiay:wuv , vyly; naeawmiay:rqi;í ½m o jyeon/ aqmi; t c g or , wi
pyg;w0i;0gaeon/ wpnae t z; t wmrEiajr;won a0;vaom r;uwpu0i;r
x;jcm;rawl&on/ rnaom wrwe;won yiv , rr;aumi;uioi x;wuaeon[
xi&on/ wrwon yiv , ausmí rrwxa½vsm;vmonu aw&on/ ajr;tm; r;z
r r;putjre , ci;ly; pyg;yirm;u r;½uon/ x t c g awmiajcrv t rsm; awmiay:wu
vmluon/ pyg;yirm;u r;ir;owuon/ xor;ir;ow&e ½m om; t m;v; awmiay:
wuluon/ t z; t u yiv , zuvnlunyg[ajymon/ wrvyu; yiv , rur;py
oí vi;v;tjzp t ½eiyi;pm0ia&muvmy; ½mav;uz;vr;om;on/ a&v;Ei tw
trrm;ygom;on/ ½m om;w 'w , t ur t z; t xa&muom;on/ t z; tr;½laomallumi
½m om; t m;v; awmiay:a&maeí v touab;r a0;&on/ ynm x;xi;ÓPo;í
t oursm;pmu u , wicon/ ½m om;w trtwu pwryu? toucr;om&í t z; t
tm; aumi;c;ayluon/

3? 2? 1 Zmwvr;zew;y

Zmwy;yi;wi Zmwaqmiwv;u aemucuygazmijyum tpy;on/ t b;twmrm
on yjiZmwvr;twu ta&yg on/ awmixytr½jci;rm Zmwvr;twu ta&yg
on/ Zmwwuyi;wi awmiapmi;v , ui;jyir t vyvyo½m om;w awmiajcrm
aeaomumv aqmi;0;ayguumv pyg;&wcseazmijly;r &n½ , cuu ajymi;jyexnoi;
azmijxm;on/ a&vr;r;rab;rvwatmi t b; t on pyg;yirm;u r;½jci;jzpon/ x
t jzptysuazmij&mü yjyivjzpp0jyra&b jzp&yo½yazm a&om;xm;on/
xoabmu t b;twmrmEi ajr;av;w lun½allumi;u

]]e&aeaom aeri;u;on yiv , wi;oí uqi;aysmuu , om;avly/
xcPrmyi a0;vvon r;uwpu0i;qr x;jcm;aomjriui;wp&yu
t b;twmrmu jriawlvuavon/ lun&i;uyi t b;t on wevy
ajcmujcm;om;ron/ ojriawlvu&on t jci;t&mrm rneuarmaom
wrwe;u;wpcon yiv , a&jyiq r;aumi;uioi x;wuaeov
xi&on/ xwrrn t we;u;rm tlirraeb wpa0a0vnywum

¹ uavmip? 2011? 950/

yiv , jyi u au smjzwv:u rrwbuqo a^{1/2} v sm; vmaeallumi; u vn;
ov u&on/}}¹

[tEpwo^{1/2} yazma& zU x m; on/ jyi u o jzpp0oabma& v i jyi t&omcpm; Eirn/
tEpwoabmallumi jyizwo t m; tlopwjzpay:vmapon t b; t u , eet m;
xi;pr sm; u r; yxr, apí r; ^{1/2}Uapon [azmjyly; , eetaeEi t b; t t m; ^{1/2}; oyom;
on [azmjyx m; on/ jryu u o; x m; í yjiem; axmiotz ovpwjzpay:vmon/
jyion uav; i, r sm; \pwu E;qay;on Zmwuuygav^{1/2} on/ awmiajc^{1/2} v r sm;
a&m u v m u m t b; t t m; tjypwi u y u

]]ciA sm; ß u; ^{1/2}; aev m; ? b m jzpv t z; we pyg; Eawu r; ^{1/2} & w m v }}²

[a'gojzi ar; ou azmjya& zU í yjiutou0iapon/ r; ^{1/2}U&on tallumi; t&i; u
jryuux m; x m; on/ Zmwxyi; wir pyg; yir sm; u t b; tr; ^{1/2}U&jci; zi tajzu
azm xwx m; on u awU&on/ xoab m twi; yjiwi jryu u azm xwx m; on u
tjrit m ^{1/2} jziwiy&m

]]vi; v; ß u; on t ^{1/2}ejyi; pmjzi ^{1/2} m uav; u z; tyom; ly; aem u a&r sm; jye
t u wi rrw \ truav; r sm; t m; v; a&v; ß u; r sm; Eitw ar smygom;
onu jrillu&avon/}}

[azmjyx m; ygon/ o^{1/2} yazm tzU o; x m; aomallumi Zmwvr; wi wevyxwvez,
&ovcpm; &on/ tjzpreu o^{1/2} om; aom ^{1/2} m om; r sm; u rrw \ touu t b; t u , wi
allumi; au; Z; w&m; u o^{1/2} vm&on/ aetrq; ^{1/2}; jci; xu toucr; om& &jci; zi tq;
owx m; on/ yjiwi obm0 toynm ß u; r sm; aomallumi yw0e; u i om , mr&^{1/2} allumi;
o^{1/2} vm&on/

3? 2? 2 Zmwaqmizew; y

pyjiwi t"uZmwaqmion *syet b; t wmrjzpon/ wmrmon t ajrm
tjriß u; r sm; aomallumi tjcm; ^{1/2} m om; r sm; u o r aeb obm0ab; ui; &e awmixywi
aeon/ rrwp0; wn; touab; ui; aom vn; ^{1/2} m om; r sm; touq; ^{1/2}; rnu
rvvm; aomallumi tre; cum jzwx; ÓPo; í pyg; ci; r sm; u r; ^{1/2}Ucon/ toynm ^{1/2} aom
allumi tr sm; t u s; o , y; von/ rruo c r; omapvon/ ynm ^{1/2} aomallumi avmu
om , mat; cr; on [aom taw; u toay; x m; on yjiwpy'jzpon/

^{1/2} m o^{1/2} m om; r sm; \ p^{1/2} uuyazm& mwi vobm0Eit n azmjyx m; on uawU&
on/ v , ui; t m; r; ^{1/2} & m a'goxu&aom vn; tre; w&m; oaom au; Z; wiluav

¹ uav mip? 2011? 952

² , i; /

on/ trew&m;uem;vncpm;wwaom p½u½on Zmwaqmirms;jzponuyjiir
wpqi o½vm&ygon/

3? 2? 3 umva' oaemuc

t b;t \vnuuyjiwi ÓPynm&u;rm;o \ u, ? Ew? Ev;t r t&m rsm;u
aw&ygon/ Zmwaqmi vy½m;&e aemucu Zmwvr;Eit n zlxm;ygon/ t b;t \
trawmiapmi;ywvnwi v, ui;rsm;pm½on/ awmiajcwí ½m½on/ t b;t \tr
on yiv, Eiawm ilum;wi½on/ aemuctzlrsm;on Zmwaqmit b;t u v, orm;
w \ touuu, Ei&e u wioEion aemuctjzpZmwvr;u taxmut u jy a&z
xm;on/ awmiEiyiv, lum;½ ½muav; \ Zmwvr;tjzptyuuo½ap&e Zmwvr;
u toi, w½atmi tu s;oit alumi;oi a&zlxm;onu aw&ygon/ pyg;yirms;u
urm \ toÓPtwu jy/rvy½m;&e toi jzpapon/

o jzpí aemuctzlon Zmwvr;? ZmwaqmiEivuzuatmi taxmut u
jy lxm;onu aw&on/

3? 3 om;Eirb

]]om;Eirb}} yjion w½wyji jzpygon/ Zmwvr;tu0;rm a½;we;u
w½wjyn½ llawma [mi;wpcwi &upuaom w&m;o u;wpa, mu½on/ v trsm;u
allumu½re;w;luon/ wpcgu vcr;omwp0;uowypcaomvn; t jypray;
tjypr½o qi;&om;au;uerm;u zr;q;í bur'Pay;con/ wpae a0gitrn½
oepr;oon b&ixcpm;ly; w&m;o u; \&upuru avm u wion/ oaom
ta&r, ay/ aem u wpaewi a0gi tom;a&mi;&eqio xuvmon/ &upuaom
w&m;o u;on qi;&om;tzm;tu clyaxm i oac:vm on/ a0gion
w&m;o u;Eitzm;t ½&m vr;ay:ajy;om;um om;v;"g;Ei w&m;o u;uowum tzm;t
xuajy;&ejym on/ a0gion b&iri;jrwx om;a&mutzr;ccon/ w&m;o u;u
a0giu zr;clyrrwici own [ajym on/ a0gi \rwaqrsm;on b&iri;jrwxom;
í a0giucsr;omay;&avm u on/ oaom b&iri;jrwu ow&eqEom½on/
aemuq;vi, av;wp0;on b&iri;jrwx awqciawmi;um rron uav;
ig;a, mut eu tlu;q;jzpon/ zcir½v i rciEiuav;rm; 'ua&murn/ zci tpm;
rrtm;ow&e awmi;ccon/ b&iu;u rbarwmau;Z;uoaom om;allumi a0gitm;
tu0;axmir vwapon/

yji \&n½, curm w&m;o u;qonrm w&m;r wreueaom q;jzwru
ay;&rn/ jynotm;rw&m;Eypuni;ye;&e r[way/ trew&m;uom t"uyjí
trew&m;u&iqioialumi; toay;vjci;jzpon/

3? 3? 1 Zmwv r;zew;y

]]om;Eirb}} yji \&n½, cuon w&m;ou;wi;wi trew&m;½&evon/
tycyowi;wi trew&m;½&evon/

Zmwvr;wi w&m;ou;wp0;yg0ion/ xoon vwi;u rw&m;Eypuon/
owon/ xvr&u; avmuz;uq;ou awmveo½&rn/ awmveoZmwaqmitjzp
a0giuzew;on/ rw&m;ru&iqion/ t;m;lyirtjzp rw&m;ou;u a0giu b&ix
avm uwiaomvn; tEir&cyg/ 'w, Zmwuutjzp qi;&otzm;tu rw&m;
c&yaEmaomali a0giu w&m;ou;u "g;Eicwv on/ a0gitaeEirnor on;c
Eiz, r½ í w&m;ou;uowjci;rm u&allumi;oion/ yem;axmioon w&m;ou;u
re;w;um a0giu u½Pmpw? t;m;upwrm; jzpum a0giu o &&ivpwrsm; jzpay:vmap
on/

yjion uav;i, uwu½uray? &ocpm;rrwpqiay;on/ avmuwi vq;
vaumi;cjcm;wwvmapon/ cpoioucpí re;oiou re;wwvmapon/ b&ix
wi tzc&mr ao' Pay;aomZmwuurm Zmwtemq;jzpon/

Zmwwuyi;wi a0gi \ pelpm;ce;jzi y&ow \ ovpwu zew;xm;on/

Zmwxwyi;wi a0gitm; ao' Pay;c&onu em;axmio taejzi a0giu rno
u, wirnen;? aornvm; [aom ovpwrsm;jzpay:vmygon/

Zmwxwyi;wi q;jzway;&e Zmwaumiopoi, avm uxm;yji azmjyxm;
on/ o&mwi a0giEirnoawmpyonu razmjyay/ 0wuoyjiwi jryuuzi
azmjyon/ tq;wir a0gi \ om;u;jzpalumi;o&í b&iri;jrwu pwajymi;aply; yji
zwo tm; pwauseyapcon/

xZmwu u u yajymo \ tajmjzi rwijyb Zmwaqmi \ tajmjzi

]], ctu0;cae&aom a0girm uleawmr& \ zcijzpygon/ uav;ig;a, mu
½on teu uleawmr&rm tu;q;jzpygon/ uleawmr& \ rcirmvn;
uleawmwEi tw zc itm;rcaexi&ojzpygon/ xallumi uleawmr& \
zcir½v\i uleawmwon t vew&tw'ua&mu&ygawmrn/}}¹

[wijyxm;ygon/ Zwaqmiajympum;jzi azmjyí yjiuyt ou0ivmaprEi tw
u½Pm&ou cpm;&apygon/

Zmwxuyi;tajztjzp oi, av;t; l uieomoem;um a0giu vway;on/
Zmwxuyi;on yjiem;axmiouav;rm;t; auseyapon/ a0giEi uav;i,
qupaeron zci \ u½Pmpw? trew&m;uvvm;aompwEi au;Z;w&m;u ay:vi
apygon/ zciEiom; \ &&ipwEi trew&m;uvvm;pwon tu& jzpxe;apon

¹ uavmip? 2011? 749

[aom taw;uay;xm;ygon/ &ocpm;rtrsl;rsl;u Zmwvr;tertjri? twu t usji
wiyxm;ygon/

3? 3? 2 Zmwaqmizew;y

]]om;Eirb}} yjiwi Zmwaqmitjzp &upulur;luwaom w&m;ou;t;
lyizutjzp trew&m;uvvm;aom;i,? b&iwyg0ion/ Zmwvr;t&
yg0ivy½;aom Zmwaqmiuaw&on/ yjion uav;i,wit; trew&m;u vvm;
aompw? &&iaompw? u,ci;pmemaompw? rbau;Z;uowwapaom pwaumi;rm;
ue;atmi;vmatmi jyjiaay;on/ a0gion&iíluimaomojzpon/ trew&m;
twu toupe&on/ yjizwow]]a0gi}} uEpouí]]a0gi}} uopwxm;rsl;
ue;atmi;vmatmi jyjiaay;on/ a0gion &iíluimaomojzpon/ trew&m;
twu toupe&on/ yjizwow]]a0gi}} uEpouí]]a0gi}} uopwxm;rsl;
ue;atmi;vmatmi &n½, on/]]a0gi}} \om;jzpo oi,av;on rbau;Z;opw?
rbtwu? trew&m;twu toupe0on/ rw&m;aom w&m;ou;bu &ywnon
b&iEi&iqion/ t"uZmwaqmi? Zmwvr;uajymi;apojzpon/ Zmwaqmito
lum;vmap&e

]]uleawmw\zci½vi uleawmwon t vew&mtw'u a&mullu&yg
awmrn/ xalumi uleawmw\rbEi ni,? nri,rm;twu uleawm
tm;t v½aom tcita&wpc ay;ygciasm;}}¹

[a&om;azmjyxm;ygon/ wu½uajympum;o;í pmzwowtm; u½Pm&ojzpapon/

yjiq&mon yjia&&mwí uav;i,wü &ocpm;rjzpay:atmi tx;tav;xm;
onoabmu awl&ygon/ w&m;ou;p½urm tve&upuojzpon/ w&m;ou;
rjzpxuojzpon/ avmuü vreae&mrer½í jynowcpm;&ru azmjay;Eiaom
Zmwaqmijzpon/ b&ion jyno toem;raxmib 0exr;o½yreurob 0ayumjy
aom acgi;aqmiuxi [jyon/ a0gi \ om;onom au;Z;w&m;u r;armi;x;jyon/

3? 3? 3 umva' oaemuc

0wtpu aemuczipxm;on/ 0wtpwi &upulur;luwaom w&m;ou;
tm;jynotm;v; allumu½ure;w;yzi wiyxm;on/ yjijzpon tavsmu acwaemu
cü rnonri? rnonacwjzponu twtusrazmjyaomvn; w½wri;rm;
tycyp0umv &upuaomw&m;ou;on jynoutEiu;ilum jynou0ayumjy
on/ jynorm; qi;&pmae&aom acw½allumi; yjiuazmjyaon/ ori;uwwu;u

¹ uavmip? 2011? 749/

razmjyaomvn; yjiaemucrm cirm on/ uav;i, pwü wu, ½on[cirmap
on/ tycyoEijynolum; jzpay:ruwijxm;aom yjiyzpon/

lcio;oycu

½r0yjiaygi;cypmtywi ½r0r*Zi;yg uav;½r0u@ 1955 r 1968 tx
azmjycaom yjirms;u ppn;wijxm;on/ bpmtywi E, 0? wuw;? apmrni;
armiaqwi? wuovpe;? &eatmiarmiarmi? qijzLule;atmioe;? a½lrwaomi;wi?
uuu;pon pma&q&m (110) a&;om;aom yji (212) y' yg0ion/

xyjirms;xwi Eijcm;yjirms;u bmojyexm;aom yjirms;pmyg0iygon/
wpEiEiwpEii? vr;wpr;Eiwp; rwnluaomvn; pmaytEynmrsm;u
cpm;&mwijnon/ yjirms;on uav;i, rsm;twu &n½, aomvn; toÓPr&i
usuaom vi, rsm; \pwu pn;½; qaqmiyg0iatmi pwu;tE tEynmoabm
yg0i&on/

ty&m0iyji [qontwi; tr&icixoc0ium yjiu em;qiepouarlavsm
luon/ pwu;, 0ci&on/ tm;ustw, pw jzpvmon/ ojzpi ty&m0iyji
wpqi pwu;, 0ci&con/ tem*wwijzpoi jzpxuam tr&aumi;om;
tr&aumi;or;rm; jzpvmapEion/ avmuuzsuq;rn raumi;aomvq; v, wrsm;
rjzpatmi a½miu0vmapon/ yjion pwuyjiay;on/ xtji tveEe, aom
uav;i, rsm;pwuyjií tveorarEe, on/ pwu;ououomru i, p0uwn;
u pxivmcaom yjirms;on toÓPu&iuuvmapaom yjirms;jzpvmon/

]]0;xyeuav; \jzwx;}} yjion i, p0ty&m0iyjitaEilunv(i x;jcm;
pw0ipm;z, aumi;on/ yjiyopm pwu;, 0r tav;uon pwu;, 0ralumi
yjiuEpouvmapon/ twei, t½, bu;vmaomtcg yjiq&mne;qvaom
tEynm½i? twwynm½irms; paygi;tm;zi avmutvqiEiy? arwmau;Z;w&m;zi
atmijriEiyoabu em;vnapygon/

]]tb;t\vnuu}} yjion rnonEii? rnonvwe;pm;wijzpap to
ÓPynmji trsm;tus;o, y;Eiyuazmjyon/ ½;½i;aomyjiuyi jryuu; zew;
xm;on/ ynm½o \ au;Z;w&m;em;vnoiyu ne;qon/

]]om;Eirb}} w½wyjirmr acwwpacwu aemucjy\um tycyob&i? tycy
rupwr0ipm;aom t&m½rsm; \ jynouEypuyEi trew&m;u &iqi0ioom t"u
uson[aom taw;torm;u tw, z, Zmwaqmirms;zew;um Epouz, b0toay;
aom? rbau;Z;owwaom om; tjzpaw\ygon/

ojzpi yjiq&m \ pwu;twwynmEi apwemtay:rwnum uav;i, rsm;
pwEv;aysm½ilunE;um &ocpm;apygon/ pwu;ÓPu, jye\apygon/ 'lavmu

tajccpwu;ÓPjzi yyuua&zllcaom yjyirsm;on tem*wt rsm;t u& o , y;Eiaom
vi , rsm;jzpay:vmaprn [xijrirygon/

e*;

½r0yjiaygi;c&ypm tyr au;Z;owwji;Eiqiaom yjyirsm;? avvmaom
yji \ Zmwvr;zew;y? Zmwaqmizew;yEi umva'oaemucwu t"uxm; avvm
cygon/ yji \&n½, cu twi; uav;i , rsm; u&allumi;qijciww&m; em;vnr
taxmutylujzpaygon/ Eiiwumyjiyirsm;on Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmiujym;aomvn;
taw;tjriaumi; yg0irrmr wnygon/ oljzpí Eiiwumyjiyirsm;u quvuavvm
qe;pplunoion [xijrirygon/ ½r0r*Zi;r au;Z;owwji;Eiqiaom yji
rsm; avvmcupmwr;on qe;oponjzpay? rqe;oponjzpay ½;trom;b tlrwr;
pw0ipm;z , yjyirsm;tjzp quvuwn½aernjzpoz jrermppm? jrermppm;w;wu
xe;um;a&twu wpaxmiwpae&mr t m;jznvu½aernom jzpon [wijyvyg
on/

usr;u;pm&i;

uavmip/(2011)/ ½r0yjiaygi;c&yl &eue? oi;pmayl
ausmatmiEi armijrerm/(1989)/ ½;&myjiipmaypmwr;rsm;(y-w)/ &eue? uaum0w&npmayl
ciri? armi("Ejzl)/ (2010)/ cporrm;u/ tq;p&ijci;/ &eue? uaum0w&npmayl
ciri? armi("Ejzl)/ (2014)/ jrermppmayc&(y*acwru/veacwt x)/ &eue? &mjynpmayl
aZmaZmatmi? (2000)/ pmayoabmw&m;Ei pmaya0zea& tajccji;? '-bur/ &eue? ra½;pmaywu/
wup;Eiri; , a0/ (2005)/ jrermppmrwqu? pww-lur/ &eue? pww;c&c&l
xi? armi/(1974)/ urmpmaytñe;l &eue? pmayArmeYEywul
xiatmi? a'guwm/(1948)/ jrerm½;&myjiyirsm;/ &eue? pmayArmeYEywul
baomi;? Avrl;/(2002)/ pmqawmrsm; twyww? y0r-lur/ &eue? uaum0w&npmayl
r;ajr? rl/(2018)/ cpm;rqiijciirrm;Ei &mZ0ixol c&om;jci;/ &eue? p;r'vi rom;ppmayl
ri;Ei? 0;Ei qijzlu&e;atmi&e;/ (1989)/ ½;&myjiipmaypmwr;rsm;('w)/ &eue? pmayArme
yEywul
ri;o0PI/(2016)/ Eii&yjcm;yjiyirsm;/ &eue? uaum0w&npmayl
jrermppmtzl/(1991)/ jrerm t b"nel &eue?0uau smyEywul
jrermpp , pur;(tw-5)/(1961)/ &eue? pmayArmeYEywul
jrermpp , pur;(tw-11)/(1970)/ &eue? pmayArmeYEywul
jrermpp , pur;(tw-14)'-bur/ (2012)/ &eue? pmayArmeYEywul
v? 0; (vx)Ei t rsm;/ (1976)/ paepmay0i;pmwr;rsm;/ rEav;? Bu;ym;a&yEywul
atmi&e;/ (2017)/ , ae'vi , ? &opmay? yjiEipmayloZm &eue? Zeyipmtywul

aZm*^s \ a&;acwy*jyn u^osmwr paojci;

at;aomwm*

pmwr; t u^o;

bp^opmwr;wi aZm*^s \ a&;acwy*jyn u^osmwr paoaom t^uz^ursm;u oawoejy^u
avv^umwijyx^m;ygon/ aZm*^s \ tw^uywt u^o;[?] paojci;oab^m? aZm*^s \ a&;acw
y*jyn u^osmwr paojci;rsm;u oawoejy^u avv^umwijyx^m;ygon/ paoaom
t^uz^ursm;r x;jcm;aom&opr;ti? av^um uob^m0Ei b0taw; tjr^ursm;\eu&i;ru
cpm;em;vnEi&e&n& , ygon/

aomc^uupum;v;rsm;l l u^osm? pum;v;[?] ori;[?] tw^uyw? aozn

e'ge;

ae^up0Ei tr^ul wjzn;jzn;w;wuajym;v^uv^uu&aom b^umompum;twi;r a&;[e
av^uvrwi b^umompum;pn;ur;rsm;[?]prsm;u aozn^ucs;azm u^o;aomen; wpr^usl;jzpon
paojci;on ta&;ygaomen;wpr^usl;jzpon/ x^olta&;ygaom paojci;tz^ursm;on
wpr^usl;wpb^um om x;jcm;opviaely; pmzwo \ pwt^um&u zr;pm;Eion tzu^uau^umi;
rsm;jzpayon/ q&maZm*^s \ a&;acwy*jyn u^osmw^ulwi b^umompum;pn;ur;uaoznjy;
o;ci&aompmq tci x;r paojci;en;rsm;jzi pw0ipm;z , pwu;qe;oppm a&;z^ulxm;
onuaw&ygon/ x^ulall u^umiq&maZm*^s \ a&;acwy*jyn u^osmwu tav^uvmctjzp
a&;cs , jy;paojci;en;tq^uirsm;jzi wpqip oawoejy^uavv^umwijyx^m;ygon/

1/ aZm*^s \ tw^uywt u^o;

aZm*^s \ trn&i;r^um 0;oe;[ejzpon/ 1907cEp {jyv(12)&u^oaomllumaewi
tz0;a , m tra':penewr zsm^uyjr^ulwi zm;jriy;ar;cs i;(9) a , mu^uteu tlu;q;om;0;
jzpon/ 1912c r 1919c x zsm^uyjr^ube;u;au^usmi;[?] x^ulaemu jrermau^usmi; x^ulaemu
zsm^uyjr^ul t*vy-jrerm tp;& txuwe;au^usmi;wwi ynoi , con/

1925-26 cEpwi &eu^uewuovo wua&mucon/ aemi t^ucgwi yxq;aom
acwpr;u^uAsmwp^uy'jzpv^umrn q&maZm*^s \ yawm uye;u^uAsm u a&;0;pm [o^umall u;r
pmapm iwi azmjycon/ xEprmyi Oypmwe;at^uijriy; jrerm^upm trwt rsm;q;&i
om';at^umiq&&con/

1934cEpwi&eu^uewuovü r[m0Zm oiwe;om; (t*vypmayEi jrerm
pmayEp^ubom) tjzpa^uv^uvmcon/ 1936cwi&eu^uewuovr r[m0Zm bu^ux;jcm;pm

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm^upmXme? u^usl;i;wwuov/

bmom&yEpr<;jzi&&con/ 1936-38 cEpwi rEav;Oypmaumvyü jrermphen;jyq&m
tjzptrxr;con/ 1940 cEpwi pmlunwu'yvrm&&con/ 1941 cEpwi
txuwe;jyq&mr a':apm&iEivuxycon/ 1942cEp 'w, urmpptwi; jrerm
tp;&ynma&0ellu;Xme 'w, nelum;a&0etjzpqi&uc&i; pmayEipmlunwuXmec
uivn; wm0e , aqmi&ucon/

ppjy;acw 1946 cEpwi &euwuovpmlunwur; tjzpw0exr;jy; wi;jy
jynjyvwawm&Ei a&aumuyaumr&i&;witx;t&m& tjzpaqmi&ucon/ 1948
cEpwi 0Pau smxibwqy&&con/ 1951 cEpwiynma& avvma& tz0i tjzp
t*ve? tar&ue? ruquEi uae'gEiirm;ol om;a&muavvmcon/

1952cr 1957cx ynma&Xme au smi;o;pm tyjyipa& (xwvya&)nelum;a&0e
tjzpaqmi&ucon/ 1959 cEpwi jrermEiiori;aumr&i 0u|wm0exr;con/
1961c arvwi *Px;aqmijrermmygarmutjzp wm0exr;cjy; xEprmyi o&ycs
blwqy&&con/ 1976 cEpwi Eiiori;oawoe0;p;Xme tluay;y*v tjzp
aqmi&ucon/ 1979 cEpwieivm; [csp'uEitjcm;0w/wrsm; bmonjyepmtyjzi
bmonjyepmayq&&con/ 1987 cEpwi b0wuovpmaywu u q&maZm*s \
a&acwy*uAsmrm;Ei tjcm;uAsmrm;pm tyuxwa0cjy; xpm tyjzi trsl;om;pmay
(uAsm)q&&cygon/

q&maZm*s on pmaywm0ersm;xr;aqmi&i; 1990 jynEp puwibmv(26)&u
A' [;ae? eeu5;30em&wi&euejr? A[e;jrle , ? uarmZvr;? trw (10-u)aetrwi
u , vecon/

2/ paojci;oabm

vwp0;pwil u , yi [e&ouo| pma&ow\pmrm;wi xi&m;aoma& [ersm;
ay:vipm&aewwon/ a& [eupjzpaombompum;t o;jyly pn;ur;rm;? prsm;Ei
rnb aozno;aom to;rm;on ruEmpm oabmizpon/ ruEmpm oabmEiywou
í q&marmiciri("EjzL)u a& [eynme'ge;wi

]aozno;aom to;rm;on yreto;rm;xr a&ruEmpmox;xuijy;
xi;ueay:viaewwayon/ awl&;awlp0to;rm;Ei rwbopvi
ve;qe;ae;gon/ a&ruEmpmrm xi;ueay:viaeaom opvive;qe;
aeaom bompum;t o;tEersm;u pmzwo\ pwtm&u qaami
Eionrmobm0yi jzpon/}¹

[&i;vi;wijxm;ygon/ bompum;o;Ee&mwi pum;ajyxuuAsmon yr
vwvyr&on [xi&aomvn; uAsmZen;pn;ur;t& topep? um&epepEi tw

¹ ciri(armi)"EjzL?2011? pm-189/

pum;v;teu t"ym, upv;ppmjzi &n&,cuay:viap&e a&z&aomallumi uAsm
 \vwvyre,y, u;0;ajrmi;avon/ oltwu uAsmpmqwon pn;r;0;pn;ur;
 rsm;u aoznumpmq \tcix;tjzpa&z ou;cluon/

pmqwlon pum;v;opzew;&mwi aoznrtjzppaojci;jyly; a&z;zew;av
 &luon/ aoznqon pum;v; \t"ym, u jrerma0g [m&t b"mewi

[aozn-lu?a&mivon?qeuiion}² [ziqxm;ygon/

*uz&vcu³

]uAsmqi&mbompum;on oabmwncsuuqeuiapEion/ wr;,r;
 vr;vapEion/ tx;o;zi o;&o;p0bompum;Ei ujym;jcm;em;on/
 tcuon xi&o;riv,apaomteuu&í tcuonvqu0uoyon;aom
 teuuqmion/ xt&mwonaozn \wez;talumi;&i;jzpon/⁴

[relqxm;ygon/

0u(b)pwm;t b"mewi

]p?Ee;r wpccrab;acsmxuon/ vr;von/ yirvr;allumi;rxuom;on/⁵

[t"ym, ziqygon/

a& [eqi&mb"mewi

]bomaA'taqmut0 \ pmaypn;r;0;rsm;uc&z;ujci;Ei yveo;pjci;wjzpon/⁶

[ziqxm;ygon/

aZmaZmatmiu

]aoznjci;qonrm bompum;prsm;Ei tjcm;vra&t&owrwxm;aom prsm;
 avmuowrwcuprsm;u au smveazmuzuji;on aoznjci;yi jzpygon/⁷

[rwc;ujy\xm;ygon/

paojci;qonu q&marmiciri("Ejzl)u -

]bompum; \pn;ur;rsm; prsm;uaozn&azmuí o;onen;jzpon/ x
 en;emupaojci; [ac:on/⁸

² jrermpt z?1999/340/

³ Geferry Leech

⁴ Leech, GN, 1969, 5.

⁵ Webster s New World Dictornary,1991,377.

⁶ Wales,Kaite,2001,103.

⁷ aZmaZmatmi?2016/285/

⁸ ciri(armi)"Ejzl?2011? 189/

[re^lqxm;yg on/a'g^uwmaZ^mxe; \ b^momaA'Eipmaypmaya&; [eynm^rwquwi]pmaya&; [eynm \wm0ewpcrm rnont, tqre on rnont, tq
rm; on [burvub uAsmq&mwpo; \ b^mompum; on rnr^laoznaom
vuP^mrm;yg&jy; rnontyi;rm;ü aoznonu q;jzw&ejzpon/}⁹

[qyg on/

paojci;¹⁰rm;uavvm&mw i pum;ajywwi tawl&en;jy; uAsmwwiyjy;
rm;jym;pm aw&lav on/ xojzp&jci;rm pum;ajya&; [ewi pn;ur;rm; wi;uyjci;
r&b uAsma&; [ewi zlx;pn;ur;rm; wi;uyxm;aomalumijzpon/ xowi;uy
xm;aomvn; wpzurbmompum;u vwvypm to;jyciwpn; pn;ur;u aozn
o;ci&aomalum i pum;ajyxuuAsmwi rm;jym;pmaw&jci;jzpon/

paojci;rm;uavvm&mw i-

(1) pum;opaojci;?

(2) pum;v;zlypaojci;?

(3) a0g [m&paojci;?

(4) 0gu;zlypaojci;?

(5) teut"ym, paojci;?

(6) ta&;yoPmepaojci;?

(7) pmy' twi;paojci;?

(8) a'o, to;paojci;?

(9) to;upaojci;?

(10) ori;acwpaojci; [ícjcm;avvmEiav on/

(1) pum;opaojci;?

pum;opaojci;q onrm lluwilowrwxm;aom pum;wpv;u uAsmzen;
pn;ur;Ei t0iciu;zp&etwu pum;v;&to t pwt yi;wlu ajymi;vjy; azsmuo;
jci;? xyw;o;jci;? um&euuatmi o&oajymi;o;jci;? pum;wpv; \ a¹/₂aem uAsn;
o∨rm; ae&m vv, o;jci;won pmq \ tcix;jzpjy; o;&o;pOr aozno;aom
pum;opaojci;rm;jzpon/⁹ aZ^mxe;(a'g^uwm) ?2015'45/¹⁰ deviation

(2) pum;v;zlypaojci;?

pum;v;wpv; jzpvmap&etwu xpum;v;xu yrao;i, ontpwtyi;
wu aygi;pyzlpn;&mwi yrezlpn;ruajymi;vjy; pum;v;tzlpn;rsm;u a&aemu
ae&majymi;jci;? pum;v;wpv;u Epyi;co;jci;wlon pum;v;zlypaojci;jzpon/

(3) a0g [m&paojci;?

a0g [m&paojci;Eiywoujy; q&marmiciri("Ejzl)u-

jpum;v;opxi;jci;? pum;v;trsk;tpm; ajymi;o;jci;wujzi o;aeu:abmiucsl
o;Eejci;wu a0g [m&paojci; [owrwon/}¹¹

[relqx;m;ygon/ pma&;oon pum;v;zlx;en;vr;wu razmuzub yreto;r
a0g vaeom a&;om;zlrwp&yjy;jci;jzpon/ xen;upum;ajyEi uAsmEprsk;v;wi
aw&on/

(4) 0guzlypaojci;?

0guzlonpn;ur;u aoznij;0gustwi;r y'rsm;uae&majymi;jy; a&;zljci;jzpon/ q&marmiciri("Ejzl)u a&; [eynme'ge;wi-

jirerm0guzlx;pn;ur;t& (uwm;+u+lu, m)ypjzi zl&on/ lw, mu0gust
tq;rmxm;&on/ wen;q&v|i 0guuwl, mizi tq;ow&on/ emrtx;jy
y'uenra&u xm;&on/ lw, mtx;jy'y'ulw, ma&uxm;&on/ uAsmq&m
won um&e? touiuiu&evtyvmv|i 0guzypn;ur;u paojy; y'rsm;u
ae&majymi;i a&;zav&luon/}¹²

[&i;jyxm;ygon/

(5) teut"ym, paojci;?

bmompum;pn;ur;jzi em;vnryEiaom teut"ym, wEi rnnwb
aoznij; ajymi;vo;Ee;rrsm;u uAsmwi trsm;q;awEiavon/ tvumtzrsm;
jzpaom ½yutvum? two, 0wtvum? 0a&m"tvum tizrsm;on teut"ym,
aozna&;zlrwp&yjzpjy; x0laoznji;onyi x;jcm;qe;oprwp&yjzpayon/

¹¹ ciri(armi)"Ejzl? 2011? 193/

¹² ciri(armi)"Ejzl? 2011? 196/

(6) ta&yopmepaojci?

pma&owon yrea&zrypr&r paoa&zryjci;u ta&yopme paojci; [qEion/ q&marmiciri("Ejzl)u a& [eynme'ge;wi-

]pma&&mwi a&&a&p0twi;r [wb pmv;rsm;utlu;tao; a&ma&jci; rjzw &rnpmv;rsm;ujzwí&jci;? uA&ma&&mwiw*yay:atmi wpv;? Epv;? o;v; ponjzi wpv;pw;om;um ypc&a&jci;r&u oU tr&rs&azma&jci;? Ow\pm ty rsuEmz;wi Ow\trnuao;ao;av;a&jy; 0wa&o trnu rwewq tlu;lu; a&jci; pomen;emrsm;jzi ta&yopmeuyrer [wb aozna&om;jci;jp on/]¹³

[azmjyxm;ygon/

(7) pmy' t wi;paojci?

paojci;rsm;uavvm&mwi pum;otqir0gustqitx paorwrmxion jriom&ayon/ olaom 0gusrsm;ucwqua&om;jy; pmwpy'tqi? xrwpqi pmwpy'tqioU a&mu&vmon t cwi paojci;trwv uPmwon 0gustqitx paorwavmu xionjriomr&aomvn; avvmazmxwí&ayon/ q&marmiciri ("Ejzl)u-

]pmwpy'u e'ge;wi tpcí tq;wie*;c&y&onrm yreoabmyijzpon/ yre oabmEiaoznum pmue'ge;jirpb tv ,uazmu jypci; e*;jizitq; rowb wp0ujzi&yxm;jci;won paoaom oabmvuPmrsm;yijzpon/]¹⁴

[relqxm;ygon/

(8) a' o , t o;paojci?

a' o , t o;paojci;u avvm&mwi pma&owon 0w? aqmi;yg? uAsmpon wwi ae&ma'otav\muujzpap vrtqitwe;tav\muujzpap toxu? o'g? a0g [m& t o;tEe;wujym;rrsm;u xnoi;a&zlav&uon/ a' o , t o; paojci;Ei ywou í q&marmiciri ("Ejzl)u-

]pma&o t&i;c to;jyonpum;oiyiEi xixi&m&m;to;uaom paorrrsm; jzpon/ a' o , tailtouxixi [yiy; wpr&wpz x;jcm;aom t zrrsm;jzpon/]¹⁵

[azmjyxm;ygon/

¹³ , i;? 199/

¹⁴ ciri(armi)"Ejzl? 2011?200/

¹⁵ , i;?201/

a'o , t o;paojci;rsm;wi pum;tqutpyt& pma&oqvon teu
t"ym , u azmxwvvmEijy; a'o , t o;rsm; xnoi;a&zxm;ron wprsk;
wpbmom x;jcm;qe;opaeonu avvmaw&Eiavon/

(9) t o;upaojci;?

t o;upaojci;rsm;u avvm&mwi pma&owon yret"ym , oua&muap
on t o;rsm;r paorjzpaomAe;pum;rsm;? oa&mpmrsm;u lum;nyo;jy; pmzwo
&ijy;z , jzpatmi a&zljci;rsl;jzpon/ q&marmi ciri("Ejzl)u-

]ppo;? Oya'o;? v , , mo;? ueyslwm;ponji vyie;tvuuaom t o;u
rsm;? pm o;? tajmo;? tvycio;? Ae;pum;t o;ponji quo , rtvu
uaom t o;upum;rsm;u pmqtcix;t& wrixno;jci;jzi pm \ tmeoi
xujruatmi zew;av&uon/}¹⁶

[aumucuc;jyxm;ygon/

(10) ori;acwpaojci;?

acwumvtavqm u bompum;rsm;on ajymi;vvu&jy; , cacwo; a0g [m&
rsm;Ei *Eio;a0g [m&w\ teut"ym , ujym;r&wwon/ , cacw a&om;aom0w?
pum;ajyrsm;EiuAsmwwi , cacwt o;pum;v;r [waom a&acwpum;v;rsm; o;Ee;
av&wwon/ ori;acw 0gu:zlypn;ur;upaojy; 0gu:twi;r y'wu t o;twi;
r [wb paojci;Eiywouí q&m armiciri ("Ejzl)u-

]wpacwrwpacwo ajymi;vvmon bompum; \ obm0u tm&rjy\b a&o;
Eiacwo;u tww[rw , um tp0tvm tjzp o;jci;rsm;vn;&on/ a&o;
pum;rsm;u , cacwwiwrio;um toujyeoi;jci;rsl;vn;&ozi a&
tp0tvm tjzpo;jci;vm;? writoujyeoi;jci;vm;qon u ae&mwi;rm
cjc;zrv , yg/}¹⁷

[&i;jyxm;ygon/

p o;ji paojci;tzrsm;on a&[eynmavvmrwi yret o;rsm;u aoznij;
a&ruEmpmo xixi&m;&m;ay:viatmijylaom tzlursm;jzpiy; vyqe;oprEitw
pmzwy&owu pw0ipm;rjzpay:apaom tzlau mi; rsm;jzpayon/

¹⁶ ciri(armi)"Ejzl? 2011/202/

¹⁷ , i;/ 204/

3/ aZm* \$ \ a&;acwy*jyn uAsm rsm;rpaojci;?

q&maZm* \$ \ a&;acwy*jyn uAsm rsm;wi paoaom tZrsm;jzi uAsm uvyqe;lu ,
atmiEi uAsmcpm;rpr;&njriatmi zew;a&;zlxm;onu avvmawU&&ayon/

3'1/ pum;opaojci;?

pum;v;wpv;u o;&;o;p0r aozno;aom pum;opaojci;wi-

(u) toazsm uí o;jci;? (c) toxyw;í o;jci;? (*) um&euuatmi o&o
ajymi;o;jci;? (C) pum;v; \ Asn;o o&orm;u a&laemuae&m vv , o;jci; [í
avvmEiayon/

q&maZm* \$ \ a&;acwy*jyn uAsmwr toazsm uí o;aom pum;opaojci; tZ
rsm;u avvm&mwi pmqonpum;v; \ tpo? tv , o? tq;owu vtyov
azsm uo;av&onu aw&on/ tpoazsm uaom to;rsm;u]on; \ arwmzrmyw
uAsmwi

] tZrmum;? useppom; [? om;awmurm? olausmupmü? vr;p&mrsm;? oqxm;Ei}
(pm-293)

[vn;aumi;?]a&*lu;rqaumi;o}uAsmwi

]on;csmom;v? urm&on? bpwlunvi? aumi;&m jriatmi? a&pi&yw?
tm&jyp&m? tyEi;vm \ /}
(pm 303)

[vn;aumi;?pmqon &mZurm&u] urm} Ei]urm&} [tpo]&mZ}u azsm uí aozn
o;xm;ayon/]&mZurm}qon tce tnm;pum;v;r tpoazsm uum cppE;toiizi
um&e , a&;zron rbEiom;or;wU \cpm;csu cparwmoabmu yray:viapjy;
pum;v;aymaymi; [euaw&on/

q&maZm* \$ on] ty , &wemb&m;rt p&m}uAsmwi

]nopqi;? ri;uxyrqvmiye \armiEEpyg;? useppom;Ei ouxm;y , lui?
&wemciw} [vn;aumi;
(pm-283)

] ty , &wemon? opmarwm? ouygtyEi;? useppri; \ ? wuqi;b0?

ow&í? umvem*w? &iri;jrwü} [vn;aumi;
(pm-283)

]useppri;lu; oow?tp&m& xow?}
(pm-286)

[vn;aumi; o;xm;on/]useppom;] [aygaygyg;yg; or&;uo;ouo]useppri;]
Ei]useppri;lu;} [ajymi;vjy; pn;v;nnwru*&jy/&eEi um&ennwap&e
paorjzio;Ee;xm;ayon/ pmqon]om; \ arwmzrmyw} uAsmwi

]ppom;ri;lu;? x;ee;pEp? Epq , &pve'ewxtu;? tr;r;wi?} (pm-293)

[ueppom;ri;u;u]ppom;ri;u; [tpo]ue}uazsmuíuA:mpwu;ji a&;zUxm;jy;
pmq \ pwu;aumi;yuawEiavon/

q&maZm*s on]a&pn;cuyawm v} uA:smwi

]u;ypir? aqmiwiyEi? Eciq u? a&pn;cü?Ei (pm-260)

]olyguw? aqmiwiyü? x;uov? qe;ovwn} (pm-261)

[weaqmiwiyu]aqmiwiy} [í tpo]we}uazsmu jy; a&laemuy'natmi paorjzi
o;Ee;xm;on/

pmqon tpoazsmu jy; aozna&zU&mwí

]a&mi;ue00? ap;c v [? a&mi;u0 , u?ric& \ ?} (pm-261)

[í q&maZm*s on t00u]00[tpo]t} uazsmuíaozno;xm;jy; a&mi;&eypn;
rsm; &aeonuvn; yray:viapygon/ xlyi

]c\rm0 , m? ajra [muyg \ ?c\rmjrci? acgi;cuí \ } (pm-284)

[pmqon tcsu]cs} [tpo]t} u azsmuíy'natmi vn;aumi;

]jzpp0qupy? o'wavmi;awm? xywazm \ } (pm-278)

[q&maZm*s on twywu]xyw} [tpo]t}u azsmuívn;aumi;tpor sm; azsmu jy;
pum;v;na&zUxm;ygon/

pmqon ye;warmu]warm} []ye;} [aom tppum;v;rsm;u azsmu jy;paorjzi
a&;zUxm;ygon/

]yawmallu mallu m? warmE&i? wiw , von} (pm-278)

]uEwau mau;? warmao;u} (pm-296)

]lumaumll mau;? warmao;u} [zUqxm;on/ (pm-296)

pmqon jrerm tEynmvu&mwu c:pcipwjziunwwouo t&m&mu
tao;pw ½jriwwojzpayon/ y'oabm t& wpv;jzw? wpv;jznjy; ye;warm \
tEynmvu&mu c:pciuiempwjzi a0g [m&trn wpcu tjynrac:b wp0u
jzwac:jy; tEpwvu&oabmu yray:viapygon/ pmqon tpoazsmu&mwí

]umvem*w? &iri;jrwü} (pm-286)

]a0 , sm0p? jy&o;o;? wpaewwn;ü} (pm-329)

]cppmrji;? oor;w? o;o;auye} (pm-350)

]&ruen;v? ruen;v [? qccat;? qawmi;ao; \ } (pm-341)

[o;Ee;xm;ygon/ q&maZm*s on]tem*wuem*w?]to;o;uo;o;?]tru

en;vur_suen;v} } [tpor_{sm};uaz_{sm}uij; a&z_lx_m;ygon/ tonnw ap&eEi
a&laemu t oc_somjy; &wq&v , u&etwu paorjzia&z_lx_m;ygon/

pmqon]ra [mo^m \arwm} uAsmwi

]nopqi;?ri;vn;t_m;u^s igvn;u_s \ } (pm-376)

[]t_m;u_su]u_s [tpo]t_m;uaz_{sm}uij; o;ee;x_m;ygon/]vn;} Epcxyx_m;on
twu oabmwnrjzpjy; oabmu_{on} teu t^{ym} , aumu , &Eiayon/

pmqontv , oaz_{sm}uaom to;rs_m;jzi vn;aозна&z_lx_m;ygon/

]r_lum_xlaemu? &iygarmu_{on}? aygu_m&mr^y*rwn

o;v twi;?c&jyi;0 , ?} (pm-356)

[a&z_lx_m;ygon/pm qon]&i[']omygarmu} u]&iygarmu} [í tv , pum;v;]'om}u
az_{sm}uij;a&z_lx_m;ygon/ q&maZ_m*_{on} uAsmwiwuroabmxutoi qe;roabm
u tav;ay;z_lqiy;]ygarmu} qona0g [m&u tx;jy_{um} ori;&mZ0i &[e;wpyg;u
toay;wiy a&z_lx_m;ygon/

q&maZ_m*_{on} rejrer_mri;u]re-r_mri;} [tv , pum;v;jre}uaz_{sm}uij; pao
a&z_lx_m;ygon/

]re-r_mri;tp? avmi;p_{nou}? aygu_m&mr taw_{tl}u_{kyg}} (pm-276)

[a&laemuy'u vrr&at_{mij}z_{wjy}; wxion oabmygat_{mi} a&z_lx_m;ygon/

pmqon]vuywue b&m;&pc;} uAsmwi

]uov&iuouov? tr_ltr_{ay}a0u? om["]Earmac:csiv?} (pm-332)

[]om["]tEarm} u]om["]Earm} [tv , o]t}uaz_{sm}uij; totntnwjzpat_{mi}
o;ee;a&z_lx_m;ygon/ o'gvum&Eitwmvum& p , pygat_{mia}&z_lx_m;onu aw
Eiavon/

q&maZ_m*_{on} tq;oaz_{sm}uaom to;rs_m;jzi vn; a&z_lx_m;ygon/

]y*ri;&y? t&r'wi? v;qypom;} (pm-289)

]rs_m;pma0ae? lun_nlav [? apwo [V? qy'u } (pm-313)

]pwnpp&m? te_lm_u? t_mremau_{sm}i;tr? jriyr&} (pm-341)

[pmqon]t&r'ewi}u]t&r'wi} [í]e]tq;oaz_{sm}u í vn;aumi; a0ae , s u
]a0ae } [tq;o] , s}u az_{sm}u í vn;aumi;? te_lm_u]te_lm } [tq;o]½} az_{sm}u í
vn;aumi; paorjzia&z_lx_m;ygon/

pmqon pum;v; \A:n;oo∨u a&laemuae&m vv, o;jy; aoznrjzi
vn;a&zlygon/ pum;v;rsm;u a&laemuae&majymi;jy; pum;vroabmrsk; o;jci;jzp
on/

3'2/ pum;v;zypaojci;?

pu;m;v;zypaojci;wi(u)pum;v; tpwtyi;rsm;u a½/aemuae&m ajymi;jci;?
(c) pum;v;wpv;u Epyi;cypci;wuawEiavon/ q&maZm* \ a&acwy*jyn
uAsmrsm;wi xen;Eprsk;v; to;jya&zxm;onu avvmau&&on/ pum;v;
tpwtyi;rsm;u a&laemuae&majymi;jy; paoa&zljci;wi pmzwow pw0ipm;r
jzpatmi a&zlxm;on/

pmqon]u:eppom; \ yym;uw}uAsmwi

] &pumpvsm;? ay;xr;jrm;rn ?Epyg;pr wajr;v? (pm-276)

[paoa&zlxm;ygon/]pvsm;&pum}u] &pumpvsm; [vn;aumi;?]xr;jrm;ay;rn}
u]ay;xr;jrm;rn] [vn;aumi;? 4'3'2 um&euuatmi y', a&zlxm;ygon/ uAsm
pmqon pum;oijyitaetxm;t& ajymi;vo;Ee;rrm toptqe;jzpij; av;eur
oabmaqmionuaw&ygon/

]acwoa&? atmutalu0, (pm-271)

]oa&acw }u]acwoa& [vn;aumi;?

]yawo [? e&ri;zsm;? om;ajr;rsm;wi} (pm-359)

]o [yaw }u]yawo [} [vn;aumi;?

]roab;'P? &ermecyor; (pm-285)

]ab;ro}u]roab;} [vn;aumi;?

]acvo}u? apm v;rmealumi} (pm-281)

]o}uacv}u]acvo}u [vn;aumi;? pum;v; tpwtyi;rsm;u a&aemuae&m
ajymi;a&zlxm;ygon/

pmqon pum;v;wpv;u Epyi;cypjy; paorjzinvn; a&zlxm;on/
pum;v;wpv;u &wzw&v, uap&etwu um&etowEi uunap&e Epyi;c
o;jci;jzpon/ q&maZm*on]&i'omygarmuEiuAvice}uAsmwi

]xa'or? tm&ri;r? uAviemr? ri;lu;ce} (pm-354)

]ri;lu; emr? uAvice} u]uAviemr? ri;lu;ce}

[aozna&zlxm;onrrm uAsmqejy;E;naysmaysmi;aeon [qEiygon/

aZm*s on]useppom; \Ev;v}uAsmwi

]bowp&m? cr;em;rmvn;? r [m"r&mZ ?useppri;w&m;

o|pwxm;ü?ausm om;&i om;?rcjcm;b? (pm-272)

[pmq on tcr;tem;u]t}tq upum;v; rsm;azsmu jy;]cr;em;} [í o;Ee;xm; on/ useppom; \ yym;uw}uAsmwi

]yepm;yeue? i&reon? y*r mu? q;umv0, } (pm-274)

[pmq on]u;q;} [aom a0g [m&uEpyi;cjy;]u}Ei]v}u um&e, a&z\xm; on/ qe;opaompwu;]zi &;&i; vypma&;z\xm; ygon/

q&maZm*s on]ri; tEoZe;armiEaumi;roabm}uAsmwi

]pwu;yaE;? , 0ci ao; í? ai;aw;aep0?} (pm-323)

[]pwu;yaE;} [aom t o;r taumit xnj'yr&aom]pwu;}q onpum;v;u]yaE;} q oncpm;rjylw, mEi wzujy; yveaom teut"ym, wpc yg0iatmiEpyi;cjy; a&z\xm; onrm x;jcm;vygon/

3? 3/ teu t"ym, paojci;?

teu t"ym, paojci;tjzp pum;v;rsm;uavvmq;pp&mwi tcs\pum;v; rsm;on &, &iy; z, jzpaomvn; , i;w\ aemu u, ü av;av;eueu&nne;aom teut"ym, wpcuyv\$u wn&aewwayon/ q&maZm*s on a&;acwy*jyn uAsmwwi teu t"ym, aoznaom t\ rsm;jzi vyq;oppm a&;z\xm; ygon/

q&maZm*s on]useppom;Oriye;cswi} uAsmü

]0r;or'&m? t**gu? qmawmr ívnjyeoavm} (pm-358)

[aozna&z\xm; on/ 0;yn \]umu0v, 0w]roomeo\ xri;yom;aom umu0v, r, m;u vr;wibv;u pm;&etwu vuqjy; zr;q;ceü \ur;armi;aom pum;Ei teuqiwavon/]0r;or'&m? t**g}[aom ½yutvum to;aumi;? two, 0wtvum to;aumi;rsm;Ei tw trewu, r&aom]0r;or'&m? t**g}[aom t o;jzi trewu, & [e a&;z\xm;aomallumi teu t"ym, paor jzpapyg on/

pmq on] ty, &wemb&m;rt p&m}uAsmwi

]b&m;*wi;?plue&? ye;csyw? zew;&mcs? jc, conwn?} (pm-283)

[íy*acw b&m;?yx;?*?ausmi;e&wwi a&;jc, xm; on ye;csvu&mwir ye;cs ynm&iw\ ynm*Puc;rr;um]y} [aompum;v;jzi av;pm;orteu t"ym, ay:viatmi o;Ee;a&z\ [euaw\&on/ pmq onynm&iwu *Pjy\&mwi lw, mEi emruuyo;jy; emr0ao oerygbvyatmi a&;z\xm; ygon/ q&maZm*s \]y*jr\Ua [mi;

Ei uleawm} & opmwr;wi v n;]ye;&ey} [o;Ee;x m;ygon/ pmzwo \ pwwi
pxiue&patmi ororar\ar\jzi a&;z w i j x m;ygon/

pmqon]a&*u;b&m;r qawmi;o} uAsmwi

]ajrrxujyL? aillumjzLoU? a&*rnom;? *b&m;u} (pm-303)

[y*acw a&*u;b&m;Eiy*&mZ0iu qupya&z w i j y j y; a&*u;b&m; \ wiw,
oym, lunnz, aumi;vyu]ajrrxujylailumjzLoU} [aompum;v;jziyrorar\
aomteut"ym, jzpatmi aozna&z u x m;ygon/

3?4/ pmy' t wi;paojci;?

bompum;jzi pma&z u o u;&mwi pum;otqir pmy'tqitx tqiqi
cswqua&om;&ayon/ tpwipmwp'yzi e'ge;cia&om;jy; tq;üe*;c\y a&om;
jci;rm yrea&om;rwp&yjzpon/ o&mwi yreoabmrpaojy; pmue'ge;ry\;b
tv, razmuum e*;jz it q;rowbwp0u&yxm;rtjzp pmy'twi; paojci;rsm;
aw\&wwayon/

q&maZm*on]ee;b&m;r v r;p&m} uAsmwi

]nopqi;?ri;uwxm;?ee;b&m;u?um;&aprn? qconwn

lumjywpv? Epvwi;wi;?o;vc0;on? ri;arciarigrar?} (pm-295)

[í uAsmzU&;zp0oabmobm0t& e'ge;tpurazmjyb talumi;t&mu o0u [eji
a&zujy;aemur y*&mZ0ioriaumi;uquíwiycon/ pmzwo \ tm&unli
zr;pm;jy;aemu pmqwiyyvontalumi;t&muazmjyji;jzi uAsmon yrtou0i
vmon [qEiayon/

3? 5/ a' o , t o;paojci;?

jrermjynt0r;wi yx00i taet x m;? ae&ma'orm;ujym;ontavsmu o;pao m
a'o , t o;rsm; ujym;r&onuaw\Eion/ pma&owlon pum;ajy? uAsm? 0wwwi
a'o , t o;rsm;xnoi;a&zlav&uon/

pmqon]ee;b&m;r m v r;p&m uAsm}wi

]b;t wpa , mu?wwaomu v \ u? Em;aumuiyevm?Em;v n;yg \ }/ (pm-297)

[naeqn;qm &ci;t v u j y&mü t b;twp0; aq;wwaomu u m Em;rsm;or;jy;
trjyevmonvyie;cijriui;u] Em;aumuiyevm? Em;v n;yg \ } [aom yw0e;usi
to;jzi a'o , \ tailtoux i [y a&z x m;on/

q&maZm*on]u seppom;Oriye;c} uAsmwi

]aexe;wpzsm;? ausmveom; í? pm;ceaomuce? tcewere;?} (pm-358)
 [í t n m o t n m o m ; w a e r i ; u l u n j y ; t c e e m & c i w u y u] a e x e ; w p z s m ; } [a o m
 a' o , p u m ; j z i v y p m o ; E e ; a & ; z l x m ; o n /

q&maZm*s on] o b m 0 t v y * r } u A s m w i

] o w v u o w v u ? t y v u p & & ? w & i q o l ? n n m y o e ; ?

t y w e ; j y e l l u ? a w m u s ; t w l ? w p r r u ? a v ; i g ; r u ? (pm-252)

[n a e a p m i ; t c e t y w e ; j y e l l u a o m i u i , w a u m i ; u i ü p p a 0 ; a 0 ; n n n m n m
 t y p z u m y o e ; v m y u] w p r r u ? a v ; i g ; r u } [a' o , p u m ; j z i a & w u j y x m ; o n r m
 x ; j c m ; v y g o n /

p m q o n] y * a c w u a j r ; t z ; } u A s m w i

] & a 0 p ? v , a j r q a l u m i ? p u o v i ; ? t a l u q i ; í ? } (pm-288)

[j r e r m j y n \ t x u t & y u t n m a t m u t & y u] t a l u } [a o m a' o , p u m ; j z i a & ; z l
 x m ; o n r m x ; j c m ; q e ; o p v y a e y g o n /

3? 6/ o r i ; a c w p a o j c i ; ?

a c w E i t n a j y m i ; v w ; w u r a & p ; a l u m i ; t w i ; p 0 q u r j y w p ; q i ; a e a o m
 b m o m p u m ; \ o b m 0 u t m & r j y \ b a & ; a c w E i , c a c w o ; p u m ; v ; r s m ; u t w w r w
 , j y ; a e m u t p 0 t v m t j z p o ; j c i ; ? w p c g w p & a & ; o ; a y g & m P p u m ; v ; r s m ; u w r i t o u
 j y e o i ; j c i ; p o n e n ; v r ; r s m ; j z i p m a & ; o w l o n o r i ; a c w p a o r j z i a & ; z l a v & l u
 o n /

q & m a Z m * s o n] t i ; 0 a c w [o m 0 w a c w u r i ; E p y g ; \ a e m i w } u A s m w i

] & , o r ; a o ; a o m ? a o ; w w y a v ? n w p a w w l ? p p a j r p u m ; ? l u m ; & e m ; t ? i g t j y [?
 Z m e n i g b e ; ? v u & ; w p z u ? y c ; x u ü ? l u i b u o u v ? n w p p u ? }
 (pm-410)

[a & ; z l r r] n } [í o ; x m ; y g o n / a w m i i a c w r e 0 e l u ; A n m ; ' v \ & m Z m " & m Z t a & ; a w m
 y u r ; w i a r t a v m r m y c ; o l a & m u l y ; r [m a ' 0 x 0 i a & m u u m A n m ; E l r m l u m ; c o r u
 a v m u w i a o m t c g r [m a ' 0 u j y u & , j y l o n o a b m j z i j y l ; l y ; a r ; o n r m

] n u m ; v m r n ? q \ ? v m r n u i g r , }

[í a & ; o m ; x m ; l y ; x n q a o m o r i ; a c w p a o r u q & m a Z m * s \ u A s m w i x ; x ; j c m ; j c m ;
 a v v m a w l & & a y o n /

jclio;oycu

q&maZm* \ a&acwy*jyn uAsmwr a&[eynm&yjzpaom paojci; rsm; u
vuvr;ror avvmwijxm; jci; jzpygon/ paojci; on a&[eynm \ oiyyi
v uPmwp&yjzpjy; bompmayw; wurtwu t"utcuwpcjzpayon/ paojci;
tztzrsm; on uAsma&[eynmwi t&et0glu; rm; ygon/ q&maZm* s on pum; o
paojci; wi tpo? tv, o? tq; orsm; uazsmuo; aom en; vr; rsm; Eitw pum;
v; zly paorwjzi a&zlxm; on uvn; pw0ipm; z, aw&ayon/ teut"ym,
paojci; wi?]0r; or'&m? t**g? }]ye; cys} paompum; v; wjzi yreteut"ym,
xuyveaom teut"ym, yg0iatmi a&zlxm; on/ a'o, to; paojci; wi
]nmalu? }]Em; aum u? }]aexe; wpzm; } paoma'o, pum; rsm; zi x; jcm; qe; oppm a&z
xm; ygon/ q&maZm* s on ori; acwpaorwi]n} to; jzix; x; jcm; jcm; rwwr; wi
a&zlxm; ygon/ q&maZm* \]a&acw y*jyn uAsm) wr paojci; tztzrsm; u
avvm azmxwjci; zi bompum; twi; & a&[eynmr paojci; rsm;
ta&ygyuo&Eirn jzpayon/

e*;

a&[eynmr paojci; rsm; on opvir? tou0ir? xa&murwjzi
bmom pum; zljz; ru taxmutyjaeon[qEiygon/ paorjizilqxm; aom
q&m aZm* s \ ta&tzwon pmzwo \ &ixoyrpjiz, jzpayy; tmeoi&aom
a&[e [vn; qEiygon/ aemivn; &ioeaeaombompum; wwi a&[eynm \
paojci; tce; u@on quvu&ioeaernjzpalumi; Ei paojci; rsm; u oawoejy
azmxw Ei&e arqm virygon/

u:r;u;pm&i;

jrermbmom

ciri? (armi)/ "Ejz/ (2011)/ *'Zibm? a&[eynme'ge/* pwu;c\c\pmay/

aZm*/ (1988)/ *uA:maygi;cyl* &eue? pmayavmuyEywu/

aZmaZmatmil (2016)/ *paoro0&? o&zaqmi;yg;rm;l* &eue? pwu;c\c\pmay/

aZmxe;? (a'guwm)/ (2015)? *bmomaA'Eipmay/* (pmaya&[eynm rwqu) &eue? Epumvrsm;
pmay?

wi?0;(0eaxmu)/ (1969)/ *uA:AEom&u:r;/* &eue?v , wr@iyEywu/

xe;jri? 0;/ (1968)/ *ygVoua0g [n&t b"me/* &euewuovrsm; pmtjy/p xwa0a& aumrw/

Eiye;v? (2005)/ *&mZm"&mZ ta&awmyu:r;/ t|rtur?(rwv)/* tm;rneoppmay/ &eue/

jrermuAmpmwr;rm;/ (1983)/ &eue? pmayArmel

jrermptz/ (2005)/ *jrerm o'g?* &eue? pmayArmel

jrermptz/ 1991/ *jrerm t b"me/* jrermptz/ &eue? yEyxwa0a&Ei pmt y xwa0a& /

atmijri0;?(a'guwm)/ (2005)/ *vrbmomaA'oabmw&m;l* &eue? ynmweaqmiyEywu/

t*vybmom

Leech, Geoffrey. (1969), A Linguistics Guide to English Poetry, London Group Ltd.

Wales; Katie (2001), A Dictionary of Stylistics, Second Edition, Longman.

Webster's New World Dictionary (1991)

jrermtuaq; rsm; \ trnay; jci; twwynm

Ei; Ei; & n^{*}

pmwr; t u; 0;

ppmwr; on jrermtuaq; rsm; \ trnay; jci; twwynmu av\vmwiyxm; aom
pmwr; jzpon/ trnay; jci; on tww ynmwpr; jzpalumi; av\vmazm xwEi&e
twu jrermtuaq; rsm; u tav\vmctjzp ovrwxm; ygon/ av\vm&mwi
jrermtuaq; trnrsm; u w&mwmppn; í u@rsm; cum trnay; jci; twwynm
u azm xwxm; ygon/ ppmwr; ygtcutvur; on jrermpayav\vm&mwi
talumi; wp&ytaejzi taxmutuiy\ Eirn jzpygon/

aom; cua0g [m&rsm; - jrermtuaq;? twwynm? talumi; t&m? qvcu? trn?
taw;? Zmwaqmi? tjzptyu? umva'ol

e'ge;

v\avmuobm0wi vuawly; xo \ trnu pw0ipm; wwou'ol x; jcm; aom
trnu pw0ipm; & mr vupw0ipm; av\vm tucwwwygon/ & opmayavmuwi
v\avmuobm0Eirw? pmuzwly; r xpm \ trnu pw0ipm; jci; r&/ pm \ trnu
pw0ipm; & mrom pmuzwcivmon tpr; ow& on twu trnonpmuzw&e
wuwe; Eiaom tpr; ow& ygon/

0w? aqmi; yg;? jyZmw? tuaq; paompmwpy'upwizw& on tgcg xpm \
trnon pmzwoEi pwixaw\& aom t& m jzpon/ xpm \ trnu pw0ipm; rtm; 8 u;
v\il; u; ou'ol xpmurjzpraezw&e wuwe; aeou'ol jzpon/ , aet csetcgwi
r*Zi; rsm; Ei pmapmirsm; wiyg& aom 0w? aqmi; yg;? tuaq; rsm; u ppn; ly; aygi; csky
pmtyrsm; xwa0luon/ uertyt0i pmzwor; on xaygi; cskypmtyrsm; &
rmwumyg trnrsm; uzwy; rrpw0ipm; & mu 0; pm& mazzw& av\& luon/ pojyr
wwyulunji; tm; jzitrnonpmzwou pmzwjzp& ewuwe; Eily; pmzwo tm;
qaqmi Eionrm xi& m; ygon/

pmzwopw0iwpm; zwcivmatmi trnay; Ei jci; on pma& jci; twwynm
wpr; jzpalumi; aw; jrirí ppmwr; uijp& jci; jzpygon/ pma& ow \ trnay; jci;
twwynmu azm xw& mwi jrermtuaq; rsm; u tav\vmctjzpa& cs , xm; ygon/
o\jzpí ppmwr; u jrermtuaq; rsm; \ trnay; jci; twwynm} [trnay; xm; yg
on/ olaom0w? aqmi; yg;? uAmpaom & opmayw \ trnay; jci; twwynmrsm;
onvn; oabmw& m; ci; won twu tu; 0iygon/

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrermpmXme? & eueta& lyi; wuov

1/ trnay;ci;twwynm [on

0w? aqmi;yg;? uA? tuaq; (ac:)pmwr;i,pon pmayto;o;wi
pmzwowEi pwixaw&aomt&mrm trn (or[w]acgi;p; (acgi;p0) yijzpon/
pm \]] trn}} pw0ipm;p&maumi;v?i xpmuzwcivmwwon oabm&&m pmwpy'ü
v trsm;pw0ipm;rn]] trn}} wpc&&e vtyygon/

]]0w? aqmi;yg;? uA?mw \ trnonvn; ta&ü; \ /trnay;y
aumi;v?i pw0ipm;z, ?zwcipz, jzpvu? trnay;ynv?i yi;&
||i;ai'z, jzpEiavon/}}
(&eatmi? 1973? 148)

[aom q&m&eatmi \ tqtwi;yi pmzwoEipwixawum xpmuzwcivm
atmiqaqmi&aom]] trn}} on pw0ipm;z, jzp&ayrn/ pw0ipm;z, aumi;aom
trnjzp&e pma&owon]] trn}} u ay;cio vay;í&ay/ trnup0;pm;a&c, &e
vtyvmygon/

oijzpí pma&owon pma&awm\rnqvi]] trn}} u pwií p0;pm;&ygon/
xio p0;pm;&mürra&om;&e pwxupp0xm;aom talumi;t&mrm;ay:ü tajcwnum
p0;pm;&avon/ p0;pm;ly;aemu tcu xpm \ trn(0g) acgi;p;ua&ly;r pmupa&ü
\\ tcu um;pm \ talumi;t&mu aw;xm;a&xm; \ / xaemupmwpv'v; a&ly;rom
trnuay;wwu \ /

trnay;&e pma&ow/p0;pm;a&c, yEiywouí pmayynm&i rsm;uto;o;
reqluygon/ xreqlursm;uav/vmici;jzi trna&c,ron twwynm
wpcjzpalumi; pmzwow&ypm;rapEiontwu tcu aompmayynm&iw \ tq
trrsm;u ten;i, wiyvygon/ 0w(wi)]] trnay;y}} Ei ywouí q&mwiw, u -

]]0w(acgi;p;(0g)0w \ trnon rra&om;rn0wZmwvr;Ei qavsm&ay
on/ oiaom pae&mwirw&ewpcu& \ / , i;tcu rsm; (0w
emrn(0g) 0w(acgi;p;on a&awm\rn 0wZmwom;u rnontcgr
bm;bm;ü;ay:í raeap&) [aom tcuyijzpavon/}}

(wiw, | ? 1974? 36 - 37)

[vn;aumi;?

]]0w \ trnon Zmwalumi;u0uvn;r0uve;ap&? azmvn;razmve;
ap&ay/ Zmwvr;wpcv;ucliraom pw0ipm;z, &m trnrsm;om
jzpoiayon/ qe;ve;v?ivn;raumi;? &;wmve;v?ivn;raumi;/
0w(emrnnon 0w \ uzwe zwac:wuwe;vUaqmay;aeaom emrnrm;
omjzpavon}}

(wiw, | ? 1974? 41)

[vn;aumi;wiyxm;&m]]0w\trn}}ay;&mwi 0w\yg talumi;t&m? 0w\Zmwvr;wEi
avsmnat^mip0;pm;umzwo vn;em;vnEirnZmwvr;uwp pwwpa'oazmne;Ei
aomr&;ve;? rqe;ve;aom trnr<;jzpoiyyon/ 0w\trnupmzwow jrivu
umr\Ei 0w\uzwc:ivmatmi qaqmiEir&&evn; vtyon [qEiyyon/
armiatmireuvn; -

]]acwpma&;q&m^{rsm};ur pmzwo t^m;0w\yg talumi;t&m^{rsm};u 0w\trn
Eiqupyí u ,wiaw; ,apontx 0w\wa&;en;pepon jrirm;
w;wu^vmygon/ x^lalumi0w\wwpy'\ emrn onpmzwo t^m;
qaqmi&mwiomru 0w\yg talumi; t&m^uazmxw&müyirnr\ ta&;u;
allumi; jyoaeonr [wygv^m;/}}

(atmire? armi? 1973? 149-150)

[í]]pply;acwjrrerm0w\wrsm}} pm tywiazmjyxm;ygon/ q&m&eatmiuvn;]]0w\?
jyZmw? aqmi;yg;? uAsma&;en;ynm}} pm tywi -

]]0w\? aqmi;yg;? uAsmwu trnay;&mwipmu ,wiygaom talumi;
t&mEi qavsmpy [y&rⁿ/ talumi;t&mEirqiaom trnr<;u
ray;&ay/}} (eatmi ? 1973? 149)

[o\ t , tqu wiyxm;ygon/ a'guwmarmiarmⁿuvn;]]0w\wa&;en;
twwynm}}wi

]]0w\wwpy'ü v^{rsm};pw0ipm;rn acgi;p;(0g)trnwpc &ty\ / , i;
trnon 0w\w\qvc:uu azmjyaomtrnjzpon/ 0w\w\
aomc:u^vn;jzp\ / wpcgwp& 0w\w\ talumi;t&m^uazmjyon/}}
Oyrm-oe;azjri\ ja&e)? wpcgwp&0w\wxr Zmwau^miwp\ trn/
Oyrm- armixi\ jua'gi;? wpcgwp& 0w\w\Zmwau^mi\ trnEi
tjzptyu^uazmjy\ / Oyrm- oe;azjri\ jaⁱpeavav^m&i; wu^u<;
jci;/} wpcgwp& 0w\wxrtalumi;t&m ouou^uomazmjy\ /
Oyrm- jroe;wi\]q , urajrm^ut vna&m^uuji;/ q&m0earmioi\
jc:pao;opm/ja'guwmarmiarmⁿ\ ja&m*^gqe;/}

(armiarmⁿ? a'guwm? 1994? 45)

[í pma&;orsm;]]0w\trn}} ay;yEiyyouí OyrmEiwu &i;jyxm;ygon/
pmwpy'\]]trn}}u tc<;Uaomowu]]acgi;p;}} [vn; ac:a0:ozi]]acgi;p;}}
[aom a0g [m&\ t"ym , u av\vm\unaomtcg -]]jrrerm t b"me}}wi

]]pm ta&; t om; pmppmu;wpcc\ tc<;yoabm^uazmjyaomtrn?
acgi;p0}} (jrrerm^u t zu ? 1991? 53)

[í azmjyXm;&m pmwpy' \]] trn}} on pmyg talumi; t&m \ tcyoabm u azmjyaom
trnrsl; om jzpoiyygon/

o jzpí pmzwow t m; pmwpy' uzwciv matmi qaqmi& mwi ta& yg von
]] trn}} ay;& mwi x trnon pmyg talumi; t& mu0u vn; r0u? azm ve; jci; vn;
rijzpapo iyg/ talumi; t& mwpcv; u lcliry; x talumi; t& mu t& yjyEirn r& ve;
r qe; ve; aom? pmzwo t m; xpm uzwciv matmi zwac: vUaqmEion pw0ipm; z ,
aumi; on]] trnrsl; }} jzp& ayrn/]] pmzwoEipmu pwirwquly; pmuzwcivm
atmi qaqmiEion pmwpy' v; \ qvcu tcy}} jzp& ev tyayon/

o jzpí & opmaytE , 0ijzpaom 0w? aqmi; yg;? uAsm? tuaq; (ac:) pmwr; i ,
paom pmaywwi trna& cs , ron ta& ; u; alumi; xi& m; yg on/ trnay; jci;
on vn; twwynmwpc [, q& yg on/

2/ jrerm tuaq; rsm; \ t rnay; jci; t twynm

jrerm tuaq; wpy' u zw& mwi pmzwou yxrq; xaw l& a om t& mrm
]] tuaq; \ trn}} yijzp \ / pmzwow on trnupw0ipm; & mr pmuzwcivm
wwonoabm& í tuaq; rsm; uzew; & mwi pmzwy& owu qaqmiEirn v trsm;
pw0ipm; rn]] trn}} wpcu a& cs , zew; & e v tygon/

xozew; & mwi]] tuaq; \ trn}} u tuaq; yg talumi; t& mEi qav smatmi
zew; & e v tyouo & ve; jci;? qe; ve; jci;? pmzwo em; rvnavmuatmi
0u ve; jci;? tuaq; yg talumi; t& mu azm ve; jci; [on tpe; av; yg; rui; vwum
]] trn}} ujri v u mr jzi pmupw0iwpm; zwciv matmi pmzwo \ ovpu
E; qEion trnrsl; jzp& evn; v tygon/

o jzpí jrerm tuaq; rsm; uav v m um jrerm tuaq; rsm; \ t rnay; jci;
twwynmrsm; u azm xw l u naom tcg -

- (1) qvcu u azmjyaom trn
- (2) talumi; t& mu azmjyaom trn
- (3) pw0ipm; z , aumi; aom trn
- (4) taw; uE; qaom trn
- (5) Zmwaqmi \ trn
- (6) Zmwaqmi \ trnEi tjzptyu u azmjyaom trn
- (7) umva' ou azmjyaom trn

[í cjc m; av v mwi jyxm; yg on/

2¹ 1 / qvcu uazmjaom trn

tcaom tuaq;trnrsm;on pma&oazmjaom tuaq;yg talumi;t&m \
tcy(qvcu)u azmjaom trnay;xm;onuaw&on/ pmzwowtaejzi tuaq;
trnuzwly; tuaq;yg talumi;t&mEi qupyum qvcuu p0;pm;&maz&onrm
wpr&wpzpw0ipm;ru jzpapygon/

q&matmioi; \]]apmipn;r}} tuaq;wi]]rru, uapmia&mu xe;or;o
on owpyg;u xe;or;apmia&ujci;}}vn;rnalumi; Oyrmrsm;zi azmjaom i;vi;xm;
on/ rru, uapmipn;rr&vi tjc;ow \ tu&p;ym;uyg zuq;&ma&ualumi;u
wiyxm;on/

]]te;pyq; tv, q;wpcu Oyrmaomi i;vyuyg&ap/ vuaq;malajcaqm
&wwowp0;u a&c;r;piuaoma&cuu, om;vuuyqygpl wpyg;
aomc&om; a&iwor;u a&t;ujriae&yg v;u a&aomuzcuom;ly
r [wygv; / a&cu, om;vuoon owpyg; tu&p;ym; tcitvr;u
zuq;yp&m a&murom;ayb;vm;}}

E, p;Ei trsm; ? 2010? 482)

[wiyumvwi; rru, uapmipn;r&e vtyalumi;tuaq; \ qvcuu trn
ay;xm;yg on/ qvcuay:viap&e tuaq;yg talumi;t&mwi;wi ov, oam
Oyrmrsm;zi vwi;]]apmipn;r}} &&evtyalumi; wuwe;a&om;xm;onrm
rwom; z, aumi;vygon/

q&moe;oe;xe; \]]qEyiv, }} tuaq;trnon vw \ tvqE [orqrm
tq; tpr&yiv, wr&u;rm;us, ajymvalumi; azmjaom vjci;jzpon/

]]b, awmr raobaeciw, / urmavmuwpcv;ujriEiw
ruv;vn; &ciw, /}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm; ? 2008? 115)

[azmjaom xm;on/ poyiv, wr&u, ajymvaomaqErsm;u a&om;von pma&o \
qvcuu]]qEyiv, }} [trnay;xm;jci;jzpon/ pen;jzi trnay;jci;on
pmzwo taejzi pma&o \ qvcuu&i;vi;pm ojrici&apygon/

2² 2 / talumi; t&mu azmjaom trn

tcaom tuaq;rsm; \ trnrsm;on talumi;t&mu wu&uazmjaom xm; onu
aw&on/ q&marmiciri ("EjzL) \]]ig;jym;ap}} tuaq;wi ig;jym;ap \ tbubuu
to;0iyuazmjaom xm;on/ ig;jym;ap talumi;u ajymrnqonu pmzwouvn;
Bulwioxm;ly;jzpon/ xlaemuwir -

]]ig;jym;aplonaiu;avmuwi ori, von/ or^m*Pj'yr&? ta&
vn;ryg?ruEmvn;rv/ olaomotpr;owuav;Eio vwum \
t qiajru wwEior \ jznqn;ay;on/}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 102)

[ig;jym;ap \ to;0iyuazmjy&i; vavmuwi [w[er&? &;om;íowi &aom
pr;&nji v trsm; t qí aya t mizew;ay;Eiaom ig;jym;ap vvr<;&allumi;Ei ig;jym;ap
vvr<;jzp&v í vjzpu<;eylyxíallumi; pma&o \ v b0 Eiywouaom taw;tjri
cpm;cúu wiyt q;owxm;yg on/ xíallumi p tuaq;wi ig;jym;ap \ to;0íru
wiyj&i; ig;jym;ap talumi;r vjzp&jci; \wez;u o;oyxm;on twu -]]ig;jym;ap}}
[t "uazmjyaom talumi; t&mu trnay;xm;jci;jzpon/

xltwwuov0i;re \]]qm;' , }} tuaq;trnonvn; qm;' , \ talumi;
uwijyrnjzpalumi; buwítoay;xm;ly;jzpon/ olaom -]]qm;' , Eiywou í
rn owijyrnen;}} [aom pw0ipm;rujzpaply; tuaq;uzwizpapygon/

b0c&;uav<mu vr;&mwí rrv&mye;wira&mb csm vncsm vnEi bu<;pm;
oavmu t&mrxiaom t c g pwyu t m;avsmjci;jzpron/ i , b0uiyeaw;raom t c g
qm;' , p;cp0uacsm i;&;wpav<mu ü qm;' , jzicsm vn csm vn jzpcp0 t m;avsm
qwepjci; rjzpc onu ow&ron/ ojzi u , u , u q;r&i;b0a&p;allumi;wi
csm vncsm vn jzpap0;awmí aymaysm bu<;yr; avmcw&clyjzpalumi; azmjyt q;ow
xm;yg on/ pma&o \ i , b0 qm;' , p;con taw t u<cpm;cúur b0toc , cu?
b0tm;rnewu ay;pr;Eicygon/

xltw armiazoe; \]]pavmi;z;wpcsy}} tuaq;trnuzwly; pavmi;z;
wpcy talumi;ajmrnu buwíto&Eiygon/ zeyaygu í aicaxmu temjzply; &;rwu
Eiaomaewpaewi trüysí;&i;aiúce? trrtwu vtyaompavmi;z;wpcsyu jyvy
jzpavon/ bmr<vyp&mr&b t m;vyaep0cpm;&aom yi;&i;aiúce? trrtwu
vtyaom pavmi;z;wpcsyallumi aym&ic&ygon/ pma&o \ xcpm;cúu -

]]pavmi;z;wpcsyjy<vyly; í &&aomaueyron0w\wpy'a&;ly; í
&&aomaueyrr<;Eiqiwaen u uleawm t lopmaw<ygon/}}

(0? armi (oy -)Ei trsm; ? 2008? 111)

[í azmjyxm;on/

p u o l talumi; t&mu azmjyaom tuaq;trnrsm;on pmzwy&owu rr
wiyvaom talumi; t&mu buwítoay;xm;ly;jzp í pmzwo taezi x talumi; t&m
upw0ipm;yg u a&;cs , &mazzw&Eion t u<;jzpxe;apygon/ tuaq;trnu
zwly; pw0ipm; í tuaq;u quvuzw&jci;jzp í pma&o taezilun v í rrp mu
pwrygvuryg 0wauwe;au zw&aejci;r [w/ rrtuaq;u trewu ,

pw0iwpm;zw&aom pmzwy&owu&&apon/ oljzpí taumi;t&mu azmjyao
trnon &&i;aomvn; pmzwoa&mpma&;oyg Ep0;Epbutu&;on uowjyryg
on/

2? 3/ pw0ipm;z , aumi;aom trn

tc&u aom tuaq;trnrsm;on pmzwo\pwuzr;pm;Eily; pw0ipm;z ,
aumi;onuaw&on/ xtrnr&;on pmzwo t m; xpmurjzprae zwjzpatmi
wuwe;Eipr;&ygon/

pma&;q&mau smaZ\]]tarom;0u}} [aom tuaq;\trnuzwly;]]om;yu
aumi}} uajy;rií]]tarom;0u}} [on]]om;yuaumi}}uqvcionvm;/ bmu
ajymcioen;[pw0ipm;ron/ tar[on om;or;wrnont&,u a&mu a&mu
uav;[omxi\ / om;or;wtay: arwmp;r;t m;βu;rm;pm aep0yi tE&m ,ui;
apalumi; qreaumi;awmi;aeon taumi;azmjyly;-

]]t v;paomab;won

t<ui;t uer&aom t m;jzi

ui;piviaysmuygapueown; }}

(E , p;Ei trsm;? 2010?135)

[]]Em;rom;0u}}trn&*gxmu tq;owazmjyxm;ygon/ xlaemu-

]]rciarwrm opmjyEiavmuatnicilrv\ }}

(E , p;Ei trsm;? 2010?136)

[vn;aumi;?

]]tarwi;[or]]om;0u}}aelluygwum;}}

(E , p;Ei trsm;? 2010?136)

[vn;aumi;azmjyumu]]tarom;0u}}[on rciwi;uom;or;rm;ab;&e rusa&mu
atmi rciavmi;b0wi]]Or;lumwu}} ü0uxm;onu p,awmo;awu tv,
twi;rm taprsm;u xe;or;apmia&muwwyji azmjyly; aw; ,apcon/ uav;b0
t&,wivn; &ityrumapmia&muclly; rci&icir a0;uom;aom t&,wi
ab;ro&ercatmi om;ab;&eui;&e arwmy&i; om;0uluyazmjyxm;on/ rci
arwmo&y yjiaponEi tr]]rciom;0u}} tuaq;trnu pw0ipm;&mrzwrly;
pma&;oqvonu em;vn ci&cygon/

]]rciom;0u}} tuaq;trnon &;ve;jci;? qe;ve;jci;?pmzwo em;rvn
avmuatmi 0uve;jci;? tuaq;ygtalumi;t&mu azmve;jci; [aom tpe;av;ygr

ui;vwum tuaq;trnu jrivuumrEixtuaq;u zwcivmatmi pmzwo
 \ovpwu E;qay;Eicygon/

wuovri;arm\]a&jryyrm}} [aom tuaq;trnuzwly;]vib0 [on
 or'&mxuu a&yuyrmcPwm}} [wipm;ajmqav&onu trw&ron/]pon
 uyiqvciouv;}} [pw0ipm;ron/ xtuaq;uzwraomtcg Zmwaumi uleawm
 on pmar;yajz&etvipvEi xuvmr&mx;rygvmay/ um;ajymi;p;&e q;av
 b&m;vr;rwviwi um;apmip0 r;u&ww&utm;ji on;on;rn;rn; &mcav
 on/ opyatmuwi r;caomvn; r;ua&miui;í &maeouorpcay/ talumi;rm
 awmi;&r;pm;aomu&aom tr,tu o\zm&AvyEix;u oltm;r;ay;xm;íjzpon/
 r;&mwí; tr,tuow&y; wpcgwp&r tr,tuaw&on/ umvtweumly;aemu
 uleawmaq;aumi; wuciewpaeü tavmi;cpw&e tavmi;ut0wvyraomtcg
 tr,t\ourcEmtm; aw&avon/

taerv? taorvcaom tr,t on]a&jryyrm}} cPwmb0&ioeciewi
 wwtm;or\ apwemxm;couo cpw&etavmi;&m;yg; vaomq&m0eavmi;rm;twu
 o\cEmu, uwez;&& to;cctjzpay;qyc on/]a&jryyrm}} b0wmwiwez;&aom
 &ioeci;Eitw wez;&aom aoq;ji;ujyEicaom tr,t\ b0u wijyxm;onrm
 pmzwowtm; pw0ipm;rEitw b0tou&&apygon/

q&mr&mouye (awmiiaqmi)\] avmu,&xm;? a&',Eit;onue;u
 trü;}} tuaq;trnuzwly; avmu,&xm;? a&',Ei t;onue;u trü;w
 rno qupyaeoen;[pw0iwpm;zwron/ t;onue;u &xm;Eiom;aomtcg
 yw0e;uijriui;rm;Eiwu Epaqmilyitru; wnaqmuxm;yuyg azmjyxm;on/
 xt;onue;u trü;wi a&a[mi; a&',ü;utvecenm;von/ &euejyeajymi;
 &aomtcg o,, yaqmia& p&wu;rm;í a&',ü;u xm;c&avon/

]ulerona&',vi;aygi;puzr;íronitcgwi; a&a[mi; a&',ü;
 u ow&ov &xm;Oloolum;wi;vn; t;onue;u rom;p
 ppviviaecz;aomtrü;u &ixrmvuueaatmi vr;ryg\ / }

(0 ? armi (oy-)Eitrm;? 2008 ? 557)

[avmu ,&xm;? a&',Ei t;onue;utru;u qupyjy&i; tuaq;u
 tq;owxm;yg on/

pma&otüi(ausmi;ue;)\]ulerqonrm}} tuaq;trnuzwly; ueron
 vom;wp0;0;u azmne;xm;rn [aw;xiron/ olaom]b ,vvwe;pm;? vütoi;
 t0i;u ueruajymvoen;}} [pw0ipm;con/ xopw0ipm;&mr zwcivmon
 twu]ulerqonrm}} tuaq;trnon pmzwo\ pmzwcipwu E;qEicyg
 on/ olaom pma&ojymvon uierum; -

]]ulerEi rwquay;&0;rn/ trm;ae&rm tre0iEi&etwu b0u
 wppwpp wwwtye;tyl to;com;&on czuav;rm;uo
 vn;aumi;? aemu;A'xyg;rm &yb0 uw&m;taeEirru, utavmi
 tur;cumeomer;zi yaZm&on tar;wiav;rm;uo
 vn;aumi; uerb0u vn; ajcei;avum;crm vpwuei;cl; ra[m
 *ea&mi trlur;ci;u;ay:rm ajc&mrxi&avatmi vwi; \ ajcaxmup
 u zerer;rm;uowoiay;ae&on oe&i;a&tvyorav;]ajcowc
 yg&i/ }} (z;u sm;? 0;Ei trsm;? 2015? 59)

[azmjytq;owxm;yg on/ pma& oajymc;ion ueruoci&ygyl/ rrb0u
 ay;qyly; tjcm;owt qiaiyatmi pr;aqmiay;aeaom czu? tar;wi? ajcowc
 uolaom &m;yg;vom;rm;vn; uerwvavmuwi&uygon [vn; taw;ym;rygon/
 ay;qyji;ji&i oaeaaom v/tz;wer;rm;u trw&apygon/

p ojzi pw0ipm;z , aumi;aom trnrsm;uavvmlunaom t cg &n&n
 vsm;vsm;trn rsm;ay;wwuonuvn;aw&on/ &n&njzpap? wwjzpap ay;ci
 ontwi;ay;Eiygon/ olaom trnuawvuv i pw0ipm; í zwci pz , jzp&eom
 vtygon/

2 ? 4 / taw;uE;qaom trn

jrerm tuaq;q&mwon pmzwowt m; tuaq;yg taumi;t&mrsm;u tuaq;
 trnEiqupyí u , wiaw; , apontx tuaq;a&en; pepon jrirm; w;wu
 vmygon/ a&uarEi; \]]0;acgi;cwpcEi pum;ajymci;}} tuaq;wi pma&oon
 oc;i;te;wiaexily; naeae0icewi oc;i;eab;at;aq;pm vr;avm uxu&i;
 b&m;av;te;wi xiem;on/ av&L&i; rpuwpaem a&muom;con/

]]vuwpur;omom jruawmxwi v0;acgi;wpc/ v0;acgi;
 [omq&on/ tyn t pawmr [wawm/ a&lyi;rsuEmr&awm/
 aemuwpcr;om }}

(0? armi (oy)Ei trsm;? 2008? 166)

[azmjyxm;ly; p v0;acgi;con tou&p0u p;ym;a&? vra&? tc;pa&? rom;pa&
 rsm;Eiywouí turur p0;pm;aw;ac:rrsm;u t m; xwc&ayrn/

]] p , aewium; 0;acgi;con t ;jcr;ywpcyrm }}

(0 ? armi (oy)Ei trsm; ? 2008 ? 168)

[azmjyum tq;owxm;yg on/]]0;acgi;cwpcEipum;ajymci;}} [aom tuaq;
 trnu zwr&zi0;acgi;cEi trewu , pum;ajym í r&onuoygon/ olaom
]]pma&ou rnonuwipm;voen;}} [aom taw;ji tuaq;u zwunaom t cg -

]]oc*xi*;u u*er*u*u* \ }}

(0? arm*i* (oy)Ei*t* rsm;? 2008? 165)

a&u*ar*Ei;u*u*o*u*o u*er*u*u*Ei*y*/ oc*xi*;te;trwi ae&za0;p? ae0ic*e*
oc*xi*;ab;vr;av*u*muzq*v* om*í*ya0;ygon/ 0;ac*gi*;cwpcEi pu*m*;ajmz*v*m;
om*í*om*í* a0;ayawmr*n*/ pma&;o0;ac*gi*;cu*l*un&i; aw;raom taw;rsm;on pmzwo
(u*er*)x u;pu*v*mcygon/

uZmwq&mzew;or*l* b0*l*0r;en;ji;? 0r;om*ji*;? atmijri*ji*;? u*s*&; ji;?
ci*v*warwm*x*m;ji; 0ayumy*m*;ji;won aoq;ji;laem*u*wi rn*on*wez;r*l*r&/
avmu*l* jzpyurwpcom/ t*ce*umvwpcwizpwn a&u*v*m;rwpcomjzpa*u*mi;
avmuobm0? vobm0u qupyj*x*m;onrm vavmu*t*ay: &jrio;oyp&m taw;
wpcu &i0 , ar;zm;vmapcygon/

tuaq;trnuzw*ly*; aygyg;aom taw;ron tuaq;uzw*ly*; av;euaom
taw;qo*l* yaqmiay;Eiaom taw;uE;qaom tuaq;aumi; wpy'yizpon/

vwvytr*l*]]puluawm*l*r*u*av;}} tuaq;trnuzwraomcg]]b ,*l*r*u*
ajymo*en*;}} [pw0ipm;rEi*tw*]]puluawmyEiwaom *l*r*u*yoPmeuajymvovm;/
pma&;obmu ajymv*oen*;}} [taw;puE;qay;avon/ o*l*Zmw*l*r*u*av;wi
ur; , mqi*r*sm;aygrsm;y*u* -

]]vr;u*vr*;u*m*;? vr;orvr;rsm;ygru*e*? ur; , mqiawu
jriaw*l*&aom t*cg* }}

(0 ? arm*i* (oy)Ei*t* rsm; ? 2008 ? 405)

[azmij*x*m;ly; t*jc*m;aomv*u*&nqi? vlyppypn;qirsm;onrwn*l*r/ wpEp cel*t*um
ywom;u*a*omv*n*; ur; , mqi*r*sm;uawmzily; ywonr&/ p;y*m*;jzpluon/ pma&;o
ajymaom*l*r*u*t*al*umi;wi ur; , ma&m*i*;oEi ur; , mpm;o;or*sm*; xajymvao*l*r*u*
t*al*umi;u zw&aeaomv*n*; puluawmEi*w*ly; taw;ray:ao;y*g*/ xlaem*u*wi

]]ur; , mqi*r*sm;wi uawm*x*;&e vma&m*i*;u*a*ompm tyrs*m*;wi
u*le*awm*t*uupm tyrs*m*;ygv*mw*wygon}}

(0? arm*i* (oy)Ei*t* rsm; ? 2008 ? 407)

[v*n*;aumi;

]]Eajrmpwjzi u*le*awmuowu ur; , mv*l*i puluawmjzi rxn*b*
yvypwptwizixn&e <uyuytwo;&e t*lu*ay;cz;ygon/}}

(0? arm*i* (oy)Ei*t* rsm;? 2008? 408)

[v*n*;aumi; zw&&aom t*cg*r puluawm*l*r*u*av;}}rm ur; , ma&m*i*;o? pm;o? ur;
 , Oau*s*;rrsm;z;vr;&m *l*r*u*av;u wipm;ac:a0:alumi; ojri*v*m&ygon/

ajrvwarmijrio \]]i uuav;u &u v\yg}} [aom tuaq;uzwly;]]i uu
 bmtwualumi bmaumi&u&oen;}} [taw;jzp&on/ xtaw; Eitw uer
 zwcz;aom]] pmb;awmi;}} aqmi;yg;wi pm0w;i uuav;rsm; ow\ toursm;u av'P?
 r;'Pumu, Eily; vyaooyvu&majrmupm pepwuaquvy aexi wwaumi;u
 ow&r \ /]]pmb;awmi;}} aqmi;yg;yg pm0w;i ursm;avmur royr&y? trwijzpov
 aerí &ujci;vm; [taw;ym;um tuaq;uzwrygon/ pippum;pma&o \ trt0i
 txuvr;ay:ü tyqi;aeon rzvui;wi Awciurwpaumion tou0yumvm
 aeon/ wpaewi Awciuwpaumi \ t vewum;atmoaumi tay:armun
 aomtcg u;ue;wpaumion tmomie;ie;Ei tvpacsmi;aeonu aw&avon/
 xaerpi u;ue;\&eu owxm;&i; umu,apmia&mu aeonlum;rtvpwi
 Ouav;Epv;onr&awm? Awciuuav;rsm;vn; raw&awm/ pma&oon tx;ue
 touyuuuav;ujriwi; -

]]ig trt&y igice,erwrm pwc:vjc\,xiv\ em;caewi uuav;
 wpaumi&u ,llu u;pm;ruawmi &atmipr;aqmi umu,ray;Eiw
 igygvm; }} (E, p;Ei trsm;? 2010? 289)

[owpyg;jc0i;r Awciuoawuuum;wi; &uwwwuleawmvyjymu tp0ojzi
 wapajcmuaealumi; azmjytq;owxm;yg on/ u, t&yu caeoi uuav;u ab;ro
 &ercatmi umu,apmia&mu vaom pma&o \pwapwemu c;uL;av;pm;&i; wm0e
 rauyecozi iuuav;u&u&on talumi;&i;u ojrici&yg on/

puo\ tuaq;trnuzwly; pmzwo\ taw;u E;qEiaom trnrsm;on
 pmzwo\ pw0ipm;ru tjriq;&&Eionuaw&on/ tuaq;\ trn? Pmzwo
 aw;raom taw;Eipma&oajymc:ion talumi;t&muqupyum p0;pm; tajz&m&
 onrm pmay \ t&omwpr& ;jzpayon/

2 ? 5 / Zmwaqmi trn

tcs\Uaom tuaq;trnrsm;on Zmwaqmi \ trnu trnay;xm;on/
 tuaq;trnuzwly; xZmwaqmi \ talumi;u a&om;xm;jci; jzponu buwi
 o&Eion/ tuaq;uzwly;aemu pwwipruEpouav Zmwaqmi \ trnEi
 talumi;t&mon pmzwowi pliavjzpon/

tar;qwqwjlzlaeom alimirav;talumi;u a&om;xm;aom tuaq;u
 wuov0i;reu]]rjzL}} [trnay;um pmzwow\ tm; Zmwaqmi \ oiijir&mEi
 Zmwaqmi \ trnu rwquxm;onuaw&on/ x\ twpma&ori;ausmuvn;
 q&mO;atmiu;talumi;u a&om;xm;aom tuaq;u vn;]]O;atmiu;}} [yitrn
 ay;xm;yg on/

'*ewm&ma&aom]]rvau sm}} [aom tuaq;trnuzwly; rvau sm trn&aom
jrerm trsk;or;wp0; talumi;u a&;om;xm;jci;jzprn [pw0 , xirwron/
x tuaq;u zwlu naom t cgr -

]]rvau smrm&& trsk;or;jzpí or \&&; trnr m v , iemjzpon/}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm; ? 2008? 61)

uo&on/ oonb vepmwr;a&;e acway:jrerm pay talumi; av\ vmaeowp0;
jzpon/ ta&lwí;tpm;tpmEi ta&lwí; , 0au;ru Epouowp0;jzpon/ ponjzi
rvau sm \ talumi; a&;om;xm;aom tuaq;u]]rvau sm}} [Zmwaqmi trnu
tuaq; \ trn t jzp ay;xm;jci;jzpon/

2? 6 / Zmwaqmi trnEi t jzptyu u azmijaom trn

tcaom tuaq;trnrsm;on Zmwaqmi \ trnEi t jzptyu u wí trn
ay;xm; onuawU&on/ xotr nay;jci;jzi ZmwaqmiEi twt jzptyu u wí
rwro&apon/

ri; , a0a&;om;aom]]O;&mau sm \ aumi;r}} [aom tuaq;trnon O;&mau sm
jy/caom aumi;rtaumi;ua&;om;xm;rn [xirwcon/ olaom

]]O;&mau sm u , veaom t cgr ue&powon pae&mwiv trsm; tye;ajz
xiem;&eEricpmjzi twcwnum O;&mau sm twu aumi;rjyici;jzp
on/}} (0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 83)

O;&mau sm u , vely;o \ tw*u trsm; em;c&mtwctjzp aumi;rjycon
talumi;u Zmwaqmi trnEi aumi;rjycon t jzptyu u wí trnay;xm;aom
alumip tuaq;u ueri, p0b0uwn;u zwrwz;caom vn; , aewirarcay/
ponrm ZmwaqmiEi t jzptyu u y;wí trnay;xm;jci; \ tu sk;wn;/

q&matmioi; \]]&evU tr}} [aom tuaq;trnon Zmwaqmiac; \ trn
Eioaexi&m trtalumi; [pmzwowu wioEiygon/ q&matmioi; on
o \ ar;aewi uav;rsm;t m;bom;qejiyw ac:íau;av&on/ q&ml trEiav;ig;tr
avmujcm;aom truav;wi ntpuEpa, mu&on/ tpuu tou(7)Epce? nu (5)
Epce? owtyaelu í tre;csi;rsm;uE;ay;lu&on/ ow t m;bom;qejiywv m
aom u&ermcon/ olaom ntpuEpa, mu awmawmEiay:rvm íwpcg xyom;
vuriyeygon/ x t cgrtpujzpou rsuEmopaeaom vn; nurxao;/ tpujzpo
u -

]]u um? igawmO;av;evu om;awm r , ? ri;bomri;vmclayawm/}}

]]at; . . . igbmomigvucr , /}}

]]b , trvn;ajmc}}

]]&evUtrum}}

]]uleawmrm toxuly;r& , ratmi ren;xe;xm;vu&on/
&evqonrm uleawmtru ac;jzpon/}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 92 -93)

uav;won 0;atmioi;truero/ 0;atmioi; \ac;&evUuomoluon/

]]owtzi &evU0;atmioi;aeaom trwiaenr [w/
0;atmioi;u&evaeaom trwiaeci;om jzpon/}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 93)

[vn;aumi;?

]]0;atmioi;tr b , trv [ar;v\i b , uav;r\ornr [w/
&evUtr [ar;vu v\i uav;wi; ornmaocsm on/}}

(0? armi(oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 93)

[vn;aumi;?

]]x\ tji &evn;vygon/}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 93)

[vn;aumi;? &evEiywouaom tjzptyu uazmjyxm;onrm &evEi tr
taumi;? ZmwaqmiEi tjzptyu u xivi;jriomacygon/

2? 7 / umva'ouazmjaom trn

tcaom tuaq;trnrsm;on tceumv wpccuaomvn;aumi; ?ae&ma'o
wpcc uaomvn;aumi; trnay;xm;onuaw\&on/ xtrnrsm;on umva'o
uom &&i;pmwu&u azmjyxm;aomvn; xumva'oEiywouí rnon
taumi;t&mua&rnur pmzwoEiyg/

aers\]]repm;ausmi;q;ce}} tuaq;trnon tceumvuazmjyxm;aom
trnjzpon/ repm;ausmi;q;ceon ausmi;om;vi,wi; awu\cl&aom tce
wpcjzpí pmzwo\pwu zr;pm;Eicygon/ olaomrepm;ausmi;q;cersm;on
ausmi;om;ausmi;owtwu pm;csi&mpm;? upm;csi&mupm; tm;vycejzpí trsm;p
twu aysm&ip&mtcejzpygon/ olaomq&maers\;u -

]]urmay:rm uleawm tre;q; tce [m repm;ausmi;q;ceygy}}

(0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm;? 2008? 231)

[azmjyxm;on/ rez;tvtavmu &otzUrepm;q;ceon aysm&ip&mjzpaomvn;
 rez;rygv mouav; oi,wtwur tre;q;tcejzpalumi; ptuaq;av;u to
 ay;cavon/]repm;ausmi;q;ce} tuaq;on uertzaysm&iz, &ouay;pr;
 crn xirwcaomvn; trsm;en;wuav;yy re0,pm;csiaomvn; 0,rpm;Ei í
 ar(mai;&aomb0rsm;u u&Pmou&onEitr tcewpc? jzp&ypcon v
 wpa,muwi aysm&ip&mjzpeiaomvn; wpcsewn;rmyi tjc;owp0; wpa,mu
 twu 0r;en;p&mjzpeialumi; b0totjriu&apcygon/ uav;rsm;repm;ausmi;
 qi;ceEi buwi;ptuaq;av;u ow&rjci;Eitw pw0iwpm;Ei uav;rsm;\
 yw0e;ui uav/vmrygon/

armixi\]ajrmi;jr}[aomtuaq; trnuzwly; ajrmi;jr\U talumi;a&rnu
 pmzwo tm;u\wi toay;xm;yg on/ oao m ajrmi;jr\U Ei ywou í rnon
 talumi;t&mu a&xm;onu pmzwo tzocipwEitw tuaq;uzwcipw jzpay:
 vmon/ Zmwaqmiarmivr; i,p0uaexicz;aomajrmi;jr\U u jyevna&mu&ly;
 ,ciEirwaom ajrmi;jr\U \ talumi;u a&om;xm;on/ r\U oir\U om;rsm;rmvn;
 tcs\U vn;ao? tcs\U vn; tjc;m,e,rsm;o ajymi;a&U om;luon/ i,oi,csi;rsm;Ei
 q&mrsm;u vn; oww&Ei jyevnawqcion talumi;rsm;ua&om;ly; oon
 ar;uetayasmom;&mr o\ taw;tyrutwi; aw\U u&oru azmuoncxm;
 jci;jzpon/ ojzi ajrmi;jr\U Ei ywou í oaw;raom taw;rsm; ua&om;xm;aom
 tuaq;u]ajrmi;jr}[om rrazmjyvaoma'o\ trnay;xm;jci;jzpon/

uatmiri;or;\]&euer\U talumi;}} tuaq;wi ,ae&euer\U ae vwe;pm;w/
 \ jzpy;u vy&m; aexiy "avp&uwu oa&m [eji a&om;xm;on/ x\U alumi
 &euer\U talumi;azmjyxm;jci;jzpí tuaq;\ trnuvn;&&i;pm]&euer\U
 talumi;}} [om trnay;xm;on/ &euer\U talumi;azmjyxm;onjci; tww \ir;cr;
 oviu o\ tuaq;u]t ... &eue}[trnay;xm;on/ xotrnay;&m wi
 a&U u]t} qaomto xwveontcg &wqron tmar#wpum;jzipum trnay;
 xm;on/]t} qaompum;on t"ym,rsm;pmwom;ly; &eue\ talumi;u]tlopm
 ajymc:ionvm;} [pw0ipm;pm zw\unrygon/ &euer\U twi; vwe;pm; b0rsl;p?
 tjzpty;ursl;p? acwpeprsl;p? jriu;rsl;pwu yazmu ma&om; xm;aom tuaq;jzpí
 &&i;pm&eue[trnay;jci;xu]t... &eue}[trnay;um -

]wu ,awm\&eue[m b ,awm\rrtyw? b ,awm\rr&ywew\U u;
 yA}} (z;usm;? 0; Ei trsm;? 2015? 290)

[vn;aumi;?

]&eueontlrwr; &euejzpayvrn/ &euer\U u;u v;zíerem
 ,\unv\ivn; &eueontlrwr;&euejzpaeyi}}

(z;usm;? 0;Ei trsm; 102? 2015? 293)

[vn;aumi; &euer\ ou0ivy&m;rtzzu wijyxm;ayon/

xoumva'ou trnay;ji;on xumva'otalumi;a&rnu pmzwo
 buwio&apon/ xumv? a'oEiywou ípmzwopw0ipm;vî xtuag;u
 zwc:ipwjzpay:ly;zwjzpatmi apapmwuwe;Eiygon/ olaomxtrnrsl;ay;ji; \
 tm;en;curm umva'ou&&i;ve;pmwu&u trnay;xm;í xumva'oEi
 ywouly; pmzwopwr0ipm;vîx tuag;u zw&&ea&mi&m;om;Eiygon/ oijzpí
 umva'our&ve;? rqe;ve;aom pmzwopw0ipm;rn trnay;oiygon/

lcio;oycu

0w? aqmi;yg;? uAsm? tuaq;ac:pmwr;i, ponpmayto;o;wi pmzwoEi
 pwixaw\rwqu&aom trn(wpen;tm;ji) acgi;p0onta&ygygon/ trn
 pw0ipm;p&m aumi;vîxpmu zwc:ivmatmi qaqmiEiontwu trnay;ji;
 on twwynmwprsl;jzpon/

jrerm tuaq;rm; \ trnay;ji;twwynmu avvmazmxwunaomtcg
 pma&owon rrEpouov tuaq;trnu &n&nvsm;vsm; ay;onvn;&\/
 &nji;? wji;ont"urusay/ trnonpmu pw0ipm; vm aply;zwc:ivmatmi
 qaqmiEi&eom ta&βu;yggon/ xijipmyg talumi;t&mEi rqiaomtrnrsl;
 ray;r&eowjy&ayrn/ talumi;t&mEi qavsm&e vtyygon/ xalumitray;
 awmrnqvî pmygtalumi;t&m wpcv;u lcíi íp0;pm;ly;r ay;oiygon/

pma&owon tuaq;trnjzituag;\ qvcuttabmu xe;jy ouo?
 talumi;t&mu vn; vr;newwygon/ tuaq;ygZmwaqmi\ oijyir&mEi p&u
 obm0u vn; azme;jyoxm;onuaw\&ygon/ xolazme;&mwi tuaq;yg
 talumi;t&mEi tuaq;trnuqupyí pma&oqvonttabmu pmzwow
 u, wiaw; , apontx pmzwo \taw;u E;qEionu vn; aw\&ygon/
 pmzwo \taw;u E;qEiavav xpmuzw&epw0ipm;avavjzpon/ xalumip
 mzwow \taw;u E;qEiaomtrnon pmzwo \pw0ipm;Eplcúru t&,Eiq;
 aom trnjzponu avvmaw\&&ygon/

xalumituaq;tygt0i pmwpy'u trnay;&mwi trnujrivuumrEi
 xpmuzwc:ivmatmi? pmzwo \pwuE;qEily; pmygtalumi;t&mu0u? azmoabm
 rsl;yg0iatmi r&ve;? rqe;ve;? r0uve;? razmve;aomtrnrsl;ay;&e vtyygon/

e*;

pmwpy'wi trnay;yaumi;v|i xpmupw0ipm;pmzwc:ivmly; pmaumi;
aomvn; trnay;ynv|i xpmuquí zw&&eyi;&om;wwí trnay;ji;on
twwynmwpc[, q&avmuatmi]]pm \ trn}}on pmuqaqmi&mwi ta&;yg vay
on/ ojzpí pma&;or;sm;a&m pmzwor;sm;yg trnay;ji;on pma&;ji;twwynm
wpr;sl;jzpaumi; vucyg v|i bpmwr; jyip&u;sl;eyon [qEiygon/

u;r;u;pm&i;

wiw , / (1974) / *0w/a&;en; ta'ciyl* &eue? aomluml
E , p;Ei trsm; / (2010) / *jrerm t uaq; 101* &eue? pwu;cslcl/
z;u;sm;? 0; Ei trsm; / (2015) / *jrerm t uaq; 101* &eue? pwu;cslcl/
armiarmil? a'guwml / (1994) / *0w/wa&;en; twwynml* &eue? aomwml/
jrermptzU / (1991) / *jrerm t b"/mel* &eue? jrermptzU 0;p;Xmel/
&eatmi / (1973) / *0w/? jyZmw? aqmi;yg;? uA;ma&;en;ynml* &eue? py , 0;/
0? armi (oy-)Ei trsm; / (2008) / *jrerm t uaq; 101* &eue?pwu;cslcl/
atmire? armi / (1973)/ pply;acwjrerom0wiwrsm;/ *pm typmay? yxrw/* &eue? pmayArmel/

ue;abmiacw ri;ee;pn{ci; rsm; r x;jcm;csu rsm;

ciaqjri*

pmwr; t u:O;

ue;abmiacwwi ri;ee;pn(ppui;ri;) (b;u;awmb&m;) twuzlqaom{ci;
(6)apmiawu&on/ wi;oi;wu0er[m pno\ b'urmc{ci;? u:uo&nez;cs
{ci;? rz&m;0eaZ, soc, m o&Eaumsxi\ neve;r*vmc{ci;? taemu0e
o&pnooc, m\ r*vmatmiajrc{ci;? aZ, eErwau sm o\ atmir*vmc{ci;
wwiawu&aom x;jcm;csu rsm;u avvmxm;on/ tzlcri;om; wpyg;twu
pmqtrsm;u {ci;a&py&mw i {ci;oabmobm0yi;wi wnaomvn; wpapmiEi
wpapmi apwemtav;ay;yji;? uijm;ontavsmu wijy[erwaom x;jcm;csu
rsm;u avvmwijyxm;on/

aomcsuaog [m&rsm; - {ci;? be;awmbU? Zmwrme? rsl;½;? ajym [e/

e'ge;

{ci;uAsmon b&iom;awm? or;awm? ajr;awm? jrpawmrsm; ycuwir*v
tcr;tem;ywi oq&aom uAsm vumjzpon/ {ci;tzlcri;om;? ri;or;i, av;rsm;
tyaysm&etwuoq&aom ee;wi;uav;acsmoci; jzpon/ {ci;uAsmrsm;wi tzlcri;
om; ri;or;\ trsl; tE, uijaom ri;qut zU rsm;? a&ab;awm b;awm crn;awm
Ei aqawmrsl;awmw\ be;wec;awm uyr be;awmbU rsm;? wi;a&jyna& aqmi&u
csu rsm;? llrwntcr;tem;rsm;? wuyatmiyrsm;Ei ee;"avx;wr;p0vmrsm;u pum
p0uma&zUuon/ pmqon{ci;tzlcri;om; ri;or;witm; ab;avmi;awm b;avmi;
awmw\ pr;aqmicu rsm;u o&aply; tm;utw, ap&e &n&, a&zlon/ tycslyae
aomb&i\ be;awmbU rsm;vn; {ci;uAsmüy0i&m {ci;um;em o taygi;on tycsly
aeaomb&i tay: tm;u;pw? , llunpw? llunnlav;pm;pw? tm;uspwrsm; jzpay:ap
on/ ycwwitcr;tem; wua&muorsm;rsm;vn; {ci;uem;qi&ly; Zmwrme
pwjzpay:apon/ {ci;tzlcri;om;? ri;or;i, bu;jyi;vmaom tcgwi vn; rrtwu
zlaom{ci;u em;qi&jci;jzi Zmwrme pwxuo evmEion/ tzlcri;om;on rr\
ab;awm? b;awm? crn;awmwu o ri;aumi;? ri;jrwjzpciaompw"mwrsm; jzpay:ap
on/ ab;awm? b;awm? crn;awmwu av;pm;pwjzpay:apon/

ri;om;? ri;or;rsm; Zmwrme jzpay:ap&e &n&, a&zlaom {ci;rsm;wi
ue;abmiacw b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) (1143-1181)\ ajr; ri;ee;pn(ppui;ri;) (b;u;awmb&m;)twu
a&zlaom{ci;rsm;vn;yg0ion/ y#uwawmori;Ei uAsm AEom&ur;t ri;ee;pn{ci;(7)apmi&alumi;
jyqxm;aomvn;? , aeltx (6)apmiu

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pmXme? &eueta½lyi;wuov

yEyr? vuEypur? vua&rtjzp awl&on/ yEyr t jzp 0;wi0; wn;jzwxm;aom
 wi;oi;wu0er[mpnoa&on]b'urm}}c{ci; (owi35y'? oaygu15y')?
]usuo a&ñez;}}c{ci; (owi 33y'? oaygu ty' 20y')? a&wup; 0;w;a&on
]r*vmarma&c}}c{ci; (owi 87y'? oaygu 17y')wu awl&on/ vuEypur t jzp
 a&a[mi; pmayoawowp0; wn;jzwxm;on rz&m;0e aZ, oc[m? o&eEau sm xi
 a&aom]neve;r*vmc}} {ci;owi (69)y'? oaygu (27)y'Ei taemu0eo&
 pnooc, ma&aom]r*vmatmiajrc{ci; owi (63)y'? oaygu (11)y'wuawl&
 on/ x{ci; (2)apmiv; \ e*;y'rsm;wi {ci;pmqu, wi rrt rnrsm;u xnoi;
 pyqxm;on/ vua&rtjzp aZ, eErwau sm o \ atmir*v m c{ci; (owi 55y')u
 awl&on/ x{ci;(6)apmion {ci;tzcricom; ri;ee;pntwu &n&, a&zljci;
 wluao m vn; x;jcm;cursm;&aeonu awlEion/

ppmwr;wi 0;w; \ r*vmarma&c{ci;rty use{ci; (5)apmi \ x;jcm;cursm;
 u avvmwiyxm;on/

ue;abmiacw ri;ee;pn{ci;rsm;r x;jcm;cursm;

ri;ee;pn(ppui;ri;) (b;u;awmb&m;)ri;om;on ue;abmiacw b;awm
 b&m; (A'ri;) \ ajr;jzpon/ b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) \ ajrmuee;rz&m; o&r[mpEma'0wi
 zm;jrion om;u;a&awmiri; ow;"r&mZm (tra&U ri;)Ei b;awmb&m; A'ri; \
 awmiee;rz&m; o&y0&r[mr*v m&wema'0r zm;jriaom or;awm awmiwi;u;lrupm;
 o&r[mw avmu&wema'0u vuquap&r ou&mZ 1146 c? 0gacg ivqe; (7)&u?
 aomluma& (23? Zvi? 1784)zm;jriaom om;jzpon/ zm;jriiy;(7)&utlum ou&mZ
 1146 c? 0gacg ivqe;(14)&u? aomluma&wi jrycuwion/ b;awmb&m; A'ri;u
 ppui;lrUuay;oem;on/ xallumi ppui;ri;[ac:on/ i, trnr m armiee;pn
 jzpon/ {ci;tzcricom; ri;ee;pn(ppui;ri;)twu a&pyaom{ci;(6)apmirm
 tzcricom; wpyg;twu {ci;a&pyrwaom vn; x;jcm;cursm;&on/

1/ {ci;tzcricom;wpyg;twu pmq trsm;u {ci;a&pyjci;

ri;ee;pnon ue;abmiri;quxaxmio be;wec;t mPmpu u;rm;o
 tavmi;b&m; \ jrpjzpci;? b;awmb&m; (A'ri;) \ c;prwE;ar[m vit m;xm;&aom
 ajr;0;jzpci;? tra&U ri; (a&awmiri;) \ om;jzpci;? b;awmb&m;u (0ay:ajymireb&c)
 qijzLawm u&c&ejzply;? ri;om; \ crn;awmEi bax;awmwu &ciu or;yuEice
 jzpci;rsm;u {ci;tzcricom;twu {ci;trsm;tjym; a&py&jci;talumi;jzpon/
 {ci;rsm;ulunyg u pmqwp0;u {ci;(2)apmitxa&jci;? pmq trsm;u {ci;rsm;pm
 tyi a&lujci;uawlEion/

{ci;tzc ri;ee;pnri;om;on &iciyut&, uwn;u b;awmb&m; \ cpci
jrwe;ru&y; ri;tjzp&rn ajr;0;&wemri;vsm tjpz ovrwcxm;&ojzpí ee;wi;
pmq rsm;xwixi&m;aom wi;oi;wu0e r [mpnoEi a&wup;0;w;wu {ci;zlo
ouo/? taemuaqmierz&m;rsm;Ei&i;E;o rz&m;0eaZ, oc, m? o&Eau sm xiEi?
taemu0eo&pnoc, mwu vn; {ci;zpylujci;jzpEion/ xlyiaZ, eErw
au smoonvn; {ci;a&pycon/ aZ, eErwau smoon ee;wi;Ei &i;E;uir;0i
aom pmqynm& ri;rxr;wp0;jzpEion/ ({ci;a&pyru luní cere;ci;jzpon/
twyweí ywouí pmaytaxmutxm; rawl&ygl) tzlc ri;om; wp0;wn;twu
pmq trsm;u {ci;rsm;a&zllujci;on x;jcm;on/

{ci;on {ci;tzlc ri;om;? ri;or;rsm; \ ycuwitr;tem;wi oq&aom
uAsmjzpon/ {ci;on {ci;tzlc ri;om; ri;or;wtm; rrrs;½;twu *P, pw?
tm;upw? tw, vpwrsm; jzpay:atmi a&zlaom pmayyy Zmwrm ejzp&? rwo m;&?
uav;acsm&? tyaysm&epmqrsm;u &n&, a&;uon/ ri;ee;pnri;om; twu a&zll u
aom {ci;rsm;on tzlc ri;om;av;ri;aumi;ri;jrwjzpa&u 0;wna&;uon/

2/ {ci;wpapmici;pwí wijyyujym;ci;

{ci;rsm;wi ri;qu&mZ0itZ? be;awmbU? ee;"av tp0tvmtzU rsm; yg0i
on/ {ci;rsm;wi rsl;½;Zmwrm ejzpapaom tcursm;u t"uxm; a&zll uon/

2? 1/ wi;oi;wu0er [mpno \]b'urm}}c{ci;

wi;oi;wu0er [mpno \ b'urmc{ci;wi ri;qur sm;uom t"uazmjy
xm;on/ {ci;pmayü ygav&aomwuyatmiyEi ee;"av, Oaus;rtzU rsm;rygay/
be;awmbUrm ten;i,omygon/ ri;qur sm;uazmjy&mü {ci;tzc ri;om;av;
\ rsl;½;on r [morwri;r qi;ouvmo [jyqaomvn; tjc m;{ci;rsm;uol tus,
rijay/ ur;*evmri;quEi oa&acw&mri;quwi xi&m;aom ri;uomzljyon/
y*ri;qurpí be;wec;ßu;rsm;aom or'&mZri;? yslapmx;ri;Ei taem&xm ri;wu
zljyon/ useppom;ri;rpum ee;uau smptx tp0twi; ee;wuEp? ee;pEprsm;u
azmjycon/ yi;, ri;(7)qu? ppui;ri;(7)quEi ti;0ü ti;0ri; (14)qu? &r;ri;
(3)qu? vuatmuc ri;(3)qu tycyyuziqon/ xri;rsm; \ ee;wuEp? ee;pEpr
rsm;ujy&mü tclri;rsm;ü &mZ0iEiuvaen/ au smupm rsm;Ei u;um;a&om;alumi;
pmqu,wiqxm;ojzi wureueaom ri;p0ri;quZ, m;jzpa&u 0;wnxm; [e&
on/ xlyipmqon ri;rsm; \ ee;wuEp? ee;pEprsm;omru xri;w\ aumi;uu
q;uur sm;u xnzlon/

y*ri;qur uv m;uri; (e&o)Ei om;awmri;, 0e&ocwrm ee;ou(3)Epom
p;palumi;u {ci;y'a& (4)wi-

]]uvm;uEi? e&oc? ri;om;rum;? umvlumwi? rjriciwn? viciwly?
o;Eppr? t nomp? pn;prcon}}

[a&zljyon/ uvm;uri; jno tay: Eypuruvn; {ci;y'a& (4)üyi-

]]jynowum? rsuEmiapmi;? rcaumi;om;? yyanmi;wyu? uvm;u}}
(wi0;? 0;? 1961? pm 12/)

[a&zljyon/ {ci;tzcrici;om; oice;pm, Ei&e jzpon/ 0;uvm;&mZ0i yxrw
pm-187 ü e&ori;on ee;pn;pr (3)Ep[qaomvn; reee;&mZ0i pm-189 ü
ee;pn;pr (4)Ep [qon/ {ci;Ei&mZ0i uvaeon/

y*ri;qur e&ywpnori; \ ee;pEpu zU&mü xri;be;wez;u;rm;ru {ci;
y'a& (5)wi-

]]ZrLci;om;? tri;ri;xy? pu&yr;jze? &ep, new? &n"eü pnjzm?
rueomwn? pluma&av? p;&pap[}} (wi0;? 0;? 1961? pm 12/)

[a&zljyon/ e&ywpnoo n ZrL'yguë;ua&muz;o? pluma&avu yip;o? qijzl
(39)p;yio [zljyon/ pmqon xi&m;aomri;rm;u tao;pwjyon/ ri;om;av; \
r&½;ü t"uuaom y*ri;e&ywpnorpum tr&tE, qi;ouvmyujyon/ ti;0
r;ni;ri;w&m; \ tr&tE, u twtu&zlon/ anni&r;ri;quü ta&twuomij
on/ pmqon t"uuaom tr&tE, uom tao;pwjyly;? tcsUuomreomijon/
ue;abmiri;quujy&mwi tavmi;ri;w&m; qi;ouvmyu tao;pwjyon/ {ci;
tzlcrici;om; \ ab;awmjzpci;? ue;abmiri;qu xaxmiojzpci;? tavmi;ri;
w&m;om;awm? b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) tycy&e jzpci;alumijzpon/ tavmi;ri;
w&m; \ r&½;*Pujyly; ri;r&ppreorm; ri;jyaeji; jzponu {ci;lum;emorm;
o&y;? lunnlav;pm;Ei&ejzpon/ ri;om;av; \ ab;awm? bm;awm? crn;awmEi
r, awmw \ r&½;quE, yu tao;pwjyly; ri;om;av;on tjc&tr&tE, rujym;
b tavmi;ri;w&m; \ ao;om;t&i;jzponu {ci;lum;emorm; o&Ei&ejzpon/
pmqu, wivn; ri;r&reaomri;om;av;twu *P, pw? lunnpwjzi {ci;
zljci;jzpeion/ tzlcrici;om;av;uvm; rrr&½;*Pu&Ei on/ ri;om;av;
on tr&tE, twu *P, Eily; Zmwrmepw jzpay:apon/ pmqon ri;om;av;
tm; rrtr&tE, u apmia&uEiaom ri;aumi;ri;jrwwpyg; jzpav[e&on/
tzlcrici;om;av; r&½;Zmwrmepwjzpatmi {ci;pmqu vaqm&mwi ri;om;av; \
b;? ab;? b? bi tE, awmtququon ri;r&jzpalumi;u urm0;tp r[morw
ri;r tpc&um oa&acw&m? y*? yi;, ? ti;0? ue;abmirquí ri;om;av; \ b;awm
A'ri;? zcrn;awm? (tra&ri;om;)(a&awmiri;)tx jyxm;on/ xori;qur&m;
azmjyron ri;om;av; \ t"e&nluwmwnwcaom? jrijrwoepiaom r&½;*Pu
ijci;jzpon/ ri;om;av;on rrr&½;twu? jrwe;wez;xm; *P, Ei&e? umu,
apmia&uEi&e? r&½;Zmwrmepwjzpa&ejzpon/

2? 2/ wi;oi;wu0e r [mpno \]]u s u oa&nez;}}c{ci;

wi;oi;wu0e r [mpnoa&zlaom u s u oa&nez;c{ci;wi ri;qu&mZ0i
tzrsm;omru ri;om;av; \ ab;awm? b;awm? crn;awmw \ vu½;&n? Ev;&n
pr;aqmiatmijrirrsm;? tuiioVEi pwaepwxm;rm;uiyon be;awmbUrm; aw/
&on/ {ci;tzcric;om;av; t m;ustw , Ei&ejzpon/ {ci;Eiri;qu? ri;quEi
be;awmbUon a&m , uaeygon/ be;awmbUrm;u tzcric;om; \ rsk½;aumi;reru
jyqyg on/ {ci;wiygao m be;awmbUrm;rwpqi ri;om;av;on rrrsk½;tay:
jrwE;wez;xm;pw? *P , pw? umu , apmia&mu vpw? rronvn; ab;b;rm;uo
be;wec; xe;awmuaom ri;aumi;ri;jrwzpatmi bu;pm;von pw"mwrsm;
jzpvmapon/ ycuwitr;tem;o <ua&mu vmaom vuatmuca'or ya'o&mZ
b&ii , e , pm; llrUpm;rm;Eitrwrsm; ee;wi;trxr;rm;on tzcric;om; \ trsk;
tE , tay: txi u;av;pm;pw? alumu½pwjzpay:apon/ alumu½Uppwalumi
yeuerrsm;r&awmb opmclui wi;jynat;cr;ap&m {ci;on wi;jyntwu pn;½;
a&;vueu jzpapEiygon/

p{ci;wi ri;om;av; \ ab;awm? b;awm? crn;awmwiatmi be;wec;
xe;awmuyu tu s , w0izUqx m;on/ be;awmzU{ci;jzpon/ pmqonbe;awm
bUrm;ua&zU&mwi twwuovualumijzpaom be;awmbUrm;omru vuaw/
aqmi&urEi , Oaom be;awmbUrm;u vn;{ci;ü zqon/

p{ci;wi y'a&-13 r y'a&-17 x tavmi;ri;w&m; \ wi;jynxaxmiy
pr;aqmicuEi wuyatmiyrsm;uzlon/ y'a&-20r y'a&-30 tx ri;om;av; \
b;awm b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) \ omoemiy? llrUopwny? wuyatmiy vuatmuc
e , rsm;r vuaqmirms;a&mu yu a&zUxm;on/

{ci;tzcric;om;av; \ ab;awmtavmi;ri;w&m;be;awmu zlaom wi;jyn
xaxmiypr;aqmicuUq&mwi tavmi;ri;w&m;on &r;jyn , ejynr apmbm;a'o
rsm;tx be;wec;jzeu uEico jzpyu {ci;y'a& (15)wi-

]]jrecU tpe;? yiv , 0e;Ei? &r; , e;wv m;? apmbm;apmue? ruse v , u?
or;u&; , í}} (wi0;? 0;? 1961? pm 6/)

[a&zUcon/ tavmi;ri;w&m;on ≺ow&jci;? prcecraumi;rejci;? wu&n
cu&n&jci;alumiom jynytx loZmtmPm jzeu uEijci;jzpon tavmi;ri;w&m;
 \ vuawlaqmi&urEi , Oaom be;awmu zUqx m;jci;jzpon/

tavmi;ri;w&m; \ wuyatmijrirbe;awmu yq&mwi tavmi;ri; w&m;on
rq;z&mucwyjyum rewuppqicon/ rewutli;rajyb tavmi;ri;w&m; \
cwyu0e;&ywq wucuy tavmi;ri;w&m;u llrywvn vueuav;jrm;wji
ccwucuaomallumi &eowwyyuy? ajrwi tw; t½;aoallu yup;lluy? tavmi;ri;
w&m;bur atmiyqiEiyu {ci;y'a& (13)ü-

]]a&r\ywn? &eowonu? pujcn;&e&e;au:smuore;í? jze;jze;
 &u&u? wuvizuu? vueuav;jrm;? v"m;yppe? t0ersm;ajrmi?
 o'au:micyi;? w;v;ci;vu? rei;au:maumi;? wmaomi;avmupi?
 ao;acsmi;jrion}} (wi0;? 0;? 1961? pm 6/)

[íz\jycon/ prcecr? ppqir? 0;p;0;aqmij\Eirwizi jynpaom tavmi;ri;w&m;
 \ be;awmu jyqci;jzpon/

tavmi;ri;w&m;on , ;' , m;a'oo ppqi&mwi &eorsm;alum^{1/2}uxwve
 p;&rrizi xuajy;&ontx atmijricon/ \rrrmvn; , ivy\y\uontx jzpon/
 bonu {ci;y'a& (17)wi-

]] , ;' , m;o? z0g;cei;? a&puci;í? &ewi;viacsmu? xwci; ayguu?
^{1/2}alumuxwve? p;&r0ev;u? rve&uEi? \rr\U\y\ivn;? \zi; , i
 ywn}} (wi0;? 0;? 1961? pm 7/)

[a&z\jyxm;on/ pmqontavmi;ri;w&m; \ wuyatmijrir be;awmu
 jy&mü tavmi;ri;w&m;on&ersm;u atmijri&mí &etm;v;u vixwacsmu vwy;
 ta0;a&muatmi vyEicon/ ten;i , r\om atmijriji;r[wb xwci;aygu
 om;ontx atmijriji;jzpon/ &eorsm;on tavmi;ri;w&m; \ ppqiralum
 alum^{1/2}uxwve\uy; rrtouwi;jyna&\a&twu p;&r\uontx jzpluy pw
 cpm;c\utp0uyjyqcon/ pmqon tavmi;ri;w&m; \ wuyatmijrir be;awm
 uy&mü teu t"yg , jyn0\y; qupyr&on]]viacsmu}}?]]xyci;aygu}}?]]alum
 xwve}}?]]p;&r0e}}paompum;v;rsu;u to;jycon/ xtavmi;ri;w&m; \ wuy
 atmijrir be;awmrwqi tavmi;ri;w&m;on ≺ow&o [{ci; zw^{1/2} lum;em
 wojrium alum^{1/2} , \untm;u;vmap&e jzpon/

pmqon b;awmb&m; (A'ri;) \ be;awmuzl&mü ≺ow&o? tr&y& \rr\op
 ee;opwnEio t jzpz\jyon/ x\jyil\ropee;opwnly;aemu yvr;obirsm; pnpn
 um;um;usi;y&m om;p0ajr;qu vu;vi , taygi; tlowu;ajymqp&m jzpcyuvn;
 y'a& (22)wi-

]]a&r\y;v\i? o;o;ppti? ppw&ijzi? obiuac? jrpv;a0r? Awmiajc
 awmiur;? rr;rr;nwnw? xwxwaomi;aomi;? ^{1/2}uanmi;a&u;&i?
 yxi\u;xp? ajr;jrpaemivm? ajymy&mjzi? a&cgt;tr;? rjrib; [? cs;uL;
 &iv? u\uuu\qvu? 0;jzLO;eu? pvunwaysmi;? ^{1/2}ranmi;wn}}
 (wi0;? 0;? 1961? pm 8/)

[ía&z\jycon/ b;awmb&m; \ pr;aqmEirpr;&nu azmxwjyaoam be;awmb
 jzpon/ {ci;tzcricom;av; tm;us*P , tw , vmEiaon be;awmb\ jzpon/
 pmq \ rrt&ib;awmb&m;(A'ri;) tay: cs;uL;*P , Eiaom pwcpm;ruvn; awEi
 on/

x|yi b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) \ be;awmallumi wp&maomri; taygi; u a&? ai?
 qi? jri;vuaqmiy@mrsm; ay;yUuly; be;wec;xe;vi;cy twwaumi;ru bu;rm; í
 qijzl&aomri;jzpy? jynorm;tm; tav;wi;awmi; rereueue vyui pm;aomu
 Ei&e vr;ñeay;y? 'geovEi jynpaomri;wpyg;jzpywu zljyon/ b;awmb&m;u
 be;wec;u;rm;o? jynou pwyi;qi&mjy|jyio? acgi;aqmiaumi; yootjzp
 jyqxm;on/ pmq \rrt&iocib;awmb&m; tay: c;ajrmu*P, vaom tzlc
 ri;om;av;u tw, apvaom pwapwemu awEion/

wi;oi;ri;u;on uuo&nez;c{ci;ü {ci;tzlcricom;av; \ b;awm
 (A'ri;)w \ be;awmbUrm;u|vn; O;pm;ay;zlon/ {ci;a&zUceü b;awmb&m;
 typ;czejpaejci;? pmqu, wivn; b;awmb&m;allumi txwtjrwa&muvm o jzpc
 jci;? b;awmb&m;u, wivn; pmqazmne;ouo be;u;rm;aom ri;jzpcjci;
 allumi b;awmb&m; \ be;awmu t"uxm;zljci;jzpon/ tavmi;ri;w&m;?
 b;awmb&m;(A'ri;)w \ be;awmrsm;uom tx; tav;ay;a&zljci;jzpon/ p{ci; \
 x;jcm;c u jzpon/ pmqon {ci;tzlcricom;av;tm; be;u;rm;aom ri;aumi;
 ri;jrwwpyg;jzpac;iaom apwem&n&, csualumi jzpEion/

2? 3/ rz&m;0e o&eEau smxi \]]ñeve;r*vmcs}}{ci;

rz&m;0e o&eEau smxia&aom]]ñeve;r*vmcs}}{ci;on owi 69y'? oaygu
 27 y' ygon/ p{ci;ü ri;qu&mZ0ibU? wuyatmiytzU? be;awmb? ycubU?
 ||rbUrm;u {ci; \ oabmobm0twi; pmqua&zlon/

pmqon ri;qu&mZ0iuzU&mü y'a& 1 r y'a& 8 tx urm0;tp r[morw
 ri;rpum oa&acw&m? y*? yi;, ? ti;0ri;qursm;uzljyon/ ti;0ri;qu zlaom
 tcg ti;0b&i r[mo[o& (jynperi);tx zljyon/ y'a& 9r y'a& 23 x
 tavmi;ri;w&m; \ trsk;tE, qi;ouvm yu ui;qurjwapb tao;pwzUjyxm;
 on/ tavmi;ri;w&m;on urm0;tp r[morwri;r ply;qi;ouí jrermri;
 tavmi;pno? yi;, ri;wpp;&io[or quvuqi;ouvmaom ri;½;reaom
 rsk;E, jzpaumi;jyon/ y'a& 24 r y'a& 27 tx tavmi;ri;w&m; \ wuyatmiyEi
 uovjyysm;uzlon/ pmqon tavmi;ri;w&m; \ vu½;pr;tm;rm;u zU&i;
 {ci;tzlcricom;av; \ b;awmjzpo b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) \ be;awmu tv0;oi
 ov a&mízlom;on/ ponu {ci;y'a& (26)wi-

]]ig;yg;ov? pm*peU? 0&ay;ur;? avU&r;avmu v? om;awmywi? &ir
 orm? aAm"vsm [? >ruumxwazm? &ib;awmu? rajrmvelU;? x;í
 cs;rr;}}

(aZ, oc, m? o&eEau smxi (rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 185/)

[a&zlyuaw&on/ b;awmb&m;(A'ri;)on ig;yg;ovapmixe;o? tx;ay;ur;
peuwwojzpí crn;awm tavmi;ri;w&m;u om;awmrsm;xwi b&m;avmi;ygy [xwí c;rr; ,&ontx tuiovpilu ,ojzpalumi; zlyjxm;on/ i ,p0umv
uwn;u b;awmb&m; \ u ,uiw&m;aumi;reru ri;om;av;Ei {csi;um;emorsm;
ojritw ,Eion/

ri;om;av; \ b;awmbu; aemiawmbu;ri; \ be;awmuz&mwi tra&ri;om;
b0uwn;u tavmi;ri;w&m; \ jynwi;jynypn;rwuyrsm;wi &y&ycicwuEi
ojzpí xi&m;ojzpalumi;u {csi; y'a& (28)wi-

]] [om0w? Xnewpxn? &r;jyn ,e;ajr? c;avor? ar;bvu½;? or;us;
&m&m? twygv;u? ee;vsmuyi? ausmapxi&i}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&Eausmxi (rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 185/)

[a&zlxm;on/

aemiawmbu;ri;vuxu Avweu ErEi;aomwuyu zU&mwi Avweon
tavmi;ri;w&m; \ opmu rapmixe;y yeueí Ereí&alumi;? Avwetm; raumi;r
uu E;aqmontwu ouoacs;zuoouo raumi;aompwrsm;0iaeí wu&alumi;
u y'a& (28)wi-

]]ab;awmopm? jrw t mPmv{i? 0r;rm&vu? raqmi&uwn}}

[ívn;aumi;? y'a& (29)wi-

]]raumi;ru? aqmprí? t u0eav;? a&murnab;alumi? oacs;y u on;
oaxen;o? yyn;wpm? &erpmu}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&Eausmxi (rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 186/)

[ívn;aumi; zlyjon/ tavmi;ri;w&m; \ a&mi;&i;bujzply;? wu&ncu&n&o?
≺ow&o Avweon xuajy;&e;u;pm;aomvn; vu&zr;q;Eicalumi;u vn;
y'a& (29)Ei y'a& (30)wwi-

]]aev{r;aomu? a&mijcnawmuu? Ei;aygujrLao;? onvia0;o?
xuajy;B u;yr;? vw&mvr;on >yr;yr;&ru? ajccsi;&ur? tw
uu½uucr;? zr;iior;on}}

]]urmbu;jiyw? ye;rvwwn? &ibwcww;? ac;wp;r? c&ppr;
az&mvr;vn;? tyvr;a&be;? r;o;ice;í? ½e;vn;u ,yi rveEiwn}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&Eausmxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 186/)

[zlyon/ b;awmbu; aemiawmbu;ri; \ wuyatmiyrsm;wi xi&m;aom ri;acgi
aem&xm(0g)Avwewuyu pmqutao;pwzlyjon/ {csi;tzcricom;Ei trsl;ye;
pyaom b;awmw \ wuyrsm;u p{csi;ü tao;pwzlon/ tjcm;{csi;rsm;ü tao;pw

ryg ízljci;vn;jzpEiouo? ri;om;av;u vn; vu½;pr;t m;xu jr uap&e &n&, y&on/

bax;awm awmiipm; jcm;em; í aemiawm u;ri; Ereí;aomwuyu y'a& (31)Ei y'a& (32)wwi-

]]awm iiauw? Ei;ci;jylaom? jr\wcoi? cpye;yíom;? Ocib;&i;? Aemiawmri;v\i? oi;yí;ppm? av;t*gzi? r\umaqm v\i? ppy&iaom? oqijri;wy Avxxyvn;? &y&y ci;awm u? r\U&i;a&m uat m i? taxmurvi? Eivuvíí}}

]]be;t m;xur;? b;awm u;v\i? &yo;awmii? cawmr vn;? w rui;? b;awm&i;w? oi;yí;rsm;pm? pt*gEi? ae&mXme? wue;c v u? rsm;v Avx? ppy½aom? ZAloci? p;rn&ion? r\Ujyíu s;xy? &yum&yum? jynoyto? voxu? 0&tajrmu? vuuiazmuaom? ra&m uumaE;? em;aq;xnjzL;? ru;r0i? be;awmEi&i? ajrmjrior? t tlu v u? awZv\i;? b;awm u;vn;? &iw;veu? igny[? zev t m;&r;? cs;rr;awmr? r\U awmiiu? or; , uepi? jyecv\ion}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&eEau smxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 186/)

[zljycon/ aemiawm u;ri;Einawmrsm;jzpaom ajr';ri;? tjriri;? A'ri;w bax;awmawmiipm;yeueonu Ereí;cyu ue;abniqu r[m&mZ0i u; yxrw wi-

]]b0&i ri;w&m; u;b&m;vn; r\Uxyu r\p;jyp;wí aoewv ueu ypvwonu av;pm;awmrr? &cgqip;awmron? &cgjri;p;awm rí eeuci;? naeci;? r\Uuywrat m i rjywnawmronu rl;awmrwawm Avrl;wyrL;wu awmii r\Uwi;rm rq;vuau m i;rsm;von/ r\Uxyu ypvwon ajym;aoewvn; xxyvonroi yg[em;awmav m u u onu igolaom ri;{u&mZu rnovuau m i;0rn[t reawm&y;v\i r\Uu rjyw vnr vnawmron}}

]]b0&iri;w&m; u;b&m;vn; qíawmav;ue;&eat m iu t jyi;vwly; v\i vuxyí r\Uta&UruEm aipiwcg;u 0íawmron/ rno wpp wpa, mur\ vurnx0í awmiiwpr\Uv;u ou&mZ (1123) wpaxm i wp&mEpq , o;c wywvqe; q , &uae t vawmjyn \}}

(armiarmiwi? 0;? 1967? pm 260/)

[azmjyxm;on/ p{ci;ü aemiawm u;ri;u bax;awmawmiipm;u Ereí;aom wuyu tao;pwzljyxm;on/ {ci;um;em o y&owt m;opmrapm ioygu tp0 t vmrm Ereí;at m ijricyu yly; opmapi oEi&e vr;ñeouo t zcri;om;Ei

aqr;quye;aom b;awm;u;ri; \ atmiyuiy; ri;om;av;u;vn; b;awm;u;ol
 vu^{1/2};pr;t;xujru& &n&, jci;jzpEion/ xjyaemiawm u nawm;u
]iny[? zev t;m;&r;? c;rr;awm;r}}allumi; {ci;üjyq;x;m;o;zi b;awm;u; \ ntpu
 tci;ci;cpcir pn;v;ru jriawEion/ ri;om;av;vuxurvn; b;awm;u;
 en;w cpcipn;v;&? p;n;r t;m;jzi &etaygi;u umu, Ei&e neyxm;jci;
 jzpon/

pmqon {ci;ü ri;om;av; \ b;awm b;awm b&m;(A'ri;)on wawm p0u;
 ri;xr x;ee;or; , yu y'a& (38)wi-

]urm0;u? a&mijrl;x;e;y? aeEiv u? awmiwonE, ? rw&, | buum?
 ael u&mwi? r[myn? orm&Ei &mZvuPm? av;jzm£'? orwEi?
 Zmw0&? rvx;jrw? xe;0*walumi? ewvn;unjl? vvn;0r;om?
 jA[maumi;c;? to;o;v|i? be;u;ou&n? ym;pnoem? a&mi0g
 yivi;? aqmirnri;[}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&eEau;smxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 187/)

[urm0;vwaeEiv u awmiwo u o? ri;jzp&e erwygly;om;jzpaom v? ew? jA[m
 wu oabmuEpouaom b;awm b&m; x;ee;&, p;pcalumi;? om oem xe;vi;atmi
 vyrnri;[vewjA[m t;m;v;u ovrwualumi; yg;eypm{ci;üjyq;x;m;on/
 ip0u;ri;x;ee;u arav;maec;eü b;awm b&m;u x;ee;or; , calumi;u y'a& (39)
 wi-

]to&m on?]urm, i;a&ü? , pr;araom be;a[rmC? a'0Emv|i?
 o&&xy? be;jriEyí}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&eEau;smxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 187/)

[zlijon/ to&m , pr;cse olum;ri;u wm0womu or;yuyzi Oyrmay;x;m;ly;
 b;awm b&m;u olum;ri;Ei ci;Ei;x;m;on/ b;awm b&m;(A'ri;) x;ee;or;yu
 onrm jzpoiaom t&m [{ci;üum;em orsm; rwxivmatmi pmqzljci;jzpon/

pmqon {ci;y'a&-41r y'a&-48tx b;awm b&m; \ rropwny? Om oem
 jy/y? r'gbouc , yrm;u tjcm;{ci;rm;uolzon/ y'a&-49rpm ri;om;av; \
 talumi;uzon/ ri;om;av;t;m; b;b;m;rm;ucpciy? b;awm b;m;awm;u x;ee;
 on ajr;twujzpon [qjrny? wpee;wi;v;u tx;*^{1/2}puluy? b;m;awm rsm;u
 ajr;av;t;m;unum a&;uovualumi&aomajr; [ajymqluy y'a& (56)wi-

]0w&u xnr;? rp;awmiw? ralumiluw n? rnr;rcsü? igajr;z[? ri;w
 o&z? xm;awmrEi unjzlc;pym;? b;m;b&m;vn;? oem;a&a&;? uov
 ay;om;? igajr; igajr;? &iao;oup? iru^{1/2}[? ccrem;? vu0g;ay;wi?
 xm;wirjyw? ^{1/2}prwon}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&eEausmxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 191/)

[zljyon/ i , p0uwn;u b;b;m;rb ee;wi;orsm; \ arwmu &&caom ri;om; [jyqci;jzpon/ ri;om;av;tay: b;awmEib^m;awmwu cpcijrwe;wez;x^m;u on cpm;rtrt&mu awljriEion/

pmqon {ci;ü {ci;tzc^{ri};om; rrZmw rra'ou cpcijrwe; wez;x^m; aom pwrsm;0iap&e tr&y&r^ubu {ci;y'a&-60 r y'a&-63tx zljyx^m;on/ tr&y&r^uuz&mwi r^ut*giynpaom^mr^u? luuyrupnum;aom^mr^u? qijri;o& tajrmaoewwji jynpaom^mr^u? jynxa&upüE^{ou}r;uiaom trwrsm;&onr^u? ÓPynm tajrmtjriEi jynpaom wcg;rl;sm&aom^mr^u? wpnv;al;armi;w;um ee;awmu vnywapm^{ia}&mu^{aea}om wm0eau;aom ri;r^xr;sm&aom^mr^utjzp zlx^m; on/ xjiyitr&y&r^u ee;wi;trxr;sm;uceygu uleumi;vuP^m(6)&yEi jynpo? wnluno? x;ee;ta&t&m^{ur};uiowua&cs , ly; wm0ece^xm;alumi;u vn; pmqu y'a& (62)wi-

]]0eEiwi;0e? ce&eor;u^s? vw½;p&i? twi;jyiü? &pti jyna^umi;? uleumi;vuP^m? t*gaicmurn? wnluntr? jynpou? a&; , oe!oe? o;jcm;ce&i}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&eEausmxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 192/)

[zljyx^m;on/ x;ee;a&u twi;u^s oaomri;r^xr;pmqyy x;ee;"av x;wr; p0v^{mr}sm;zlx^m;ru tjcm;{ci;rsm;xu x;jcm;on/

pmqon b;awmb&m; \ be;awmuzlygu b;awmb&m; \ vuaw^u aqmi&u rEi , Oaombe;awmu t"ux^m;zlonrm x;jcm;on/ b;awmb&m;on trup wi;u raygravsm cujci;aqmi&uo? Eiiawmuc^uxium tr^s;av;yg;w^u p;ym;Opm jynply; 'geo^{va}qmi&uEi&e eAmea&mu&e vr;ñejyoEiojzpalumi;u y'a& (62)wi-

]]rayg&ep? rnr^uraE^{mi}? ratmijyn^x? rprn? q , yg;oEi? Eii u^s , 0e;? omx;qe;vu? yive;aymaysm? av;abmr^s;jym;? tjcm;jcm;w^u? p;ym;u^v? ovxí ur;ceAme? a&mu^{al}umi; oeon}}

(aZ , oc , m? o&eEausmxi(rz&m;0e)? vuEypur? pm 192/)

[zljyon/ pmqub;awmb&m;on tr^s;av;yg; \ avmuavmuw&m aumi;u^s; rsm;ujy/vyay;o ri;aumi;ri;jrw jzpalumi;jyq&i; tzc^{ri};om;av;vn; t^m;us tw,Ei&ejzpon/ jynot^m;v; at;csr;jynppmaexiEi&erm ri;aumi; ri;jrw\ wm0eomjzpalumi; ri;om;av;t^m; toay;von [ewon/

pmqonb{ci;ü b;awmb&m;xⁱ&m x;jzl&ppi;aqmi;x^m;aom o [oeyvi \ cr;em;wiw , r? ee;aqmⁱrs^m;u;r^m;xn0gr? oa&acw&m? y*? yi; , ? ti;0?

[om0wri; rsm; onyi ppt*g(4)yg;ü &xm;rygaomvn;? b;awmb&m;rm ppt*g
av;yg;Ei jynprwuzljyxm;on/ pmqonrrt&ioci b;awmb&m; tay: cpci
jrwe;*P, aom pwutajccum zljci;jzpEion/ ri;om;av;vn; tm;uEi&e
jzpon/

pmqrz&m;0e aZ, oc, m? o&Eau smxion]]neve;r*v m}}cs {csi;u a&zU
&mü ri;qu&mZ0itzU wuytzU be;awmb rsm;u tjc m;{csi; rsm;uo {csi; obm0
Eit na&zUon/ olaombe;awmb rsm;ü tzUcb&irsm; \ nawm? ri;rxr;? jyno
tay:xm;aom pwcpm;r? ri;om; tay:xm;aom b;b m;rb \cpm;rwujriatmizUon/
pmqonee;wi;ü &ioe!u;jyi;oyy x;ee;"avx;prsm;u tv:0;oio v xnoi;
a&zUxm;onrm x;jcm;on/

2? 4/ taemu0e o&pnooc, m \]]r*vmatmiajr}}cs {csi;

taemu0e o&pno oc, ma&aom]]r*vmatmiajr}} cs {csi;on owi 63 y'?
oaygu 11 y'ygon/ p{csi;ü {csi; \oabmobm0twi; ri;qu&mZ0i? wuy?
be;awmbU? ycub rsm; a&zUxm;on/

{csi;tpwi {csi;tzc ri;om;av;on omoemxe;vi;aom? atmiajr jzpaom
tr&y&rU \ t&ioci b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) \om; tra&U ri;om;r zm;jriaom ri;om;
av;twu {ci;av{m ux m;allumi; a&zUxm;on/ {csi;tpmyi b;awmb&m; (A'ri;)
 *Py'? tr&y&rU \ *Py'rsm;uzUxm;on/ xlyi{csi;tzc ri;om;on b;awm
bm;awmw \ x;ee;taru qucrnri;om;tm; {csi;vu mav{m ux m;rn jzpalumi;u
y'a& (2)wi-

]]b;awmb&m;? bm;awm alu;r? be;yiyu? appom, m? av{m urn rmum;}}

(o&pnooc, m? (taemu0e)? v uEypur? pm 198/)

[zljyon/ {csi;tzc ri;om;on b;awmbm;awmw \ alu;roz, ½unr0Eiaom?
aem itcgri;tjzpc, rno jzpalumi;? b;awmbm;awmw \ arwmu &, xm;aom
ri;om; jzpalumi;jyqjci; jzpon/

pmqon y'a&-2 r y'a&-13 x ri;om;av; \ tr&tE, qi;ouvmyu
urm0;tp r[morwri;rpum ou:om u0iri;? oa&acw&mri;? y*ri;? yi;, ri;rsm;
tx qi;ouv mcalumi; jyqon/ yi;, ri;quwi wec;ßu;rm;aom ig;p;&iausmpm
on ri;om;av; \ tr&tE, jzpalumi;u y'a& (7)wi-

]]ig;p;rmwi? qijzl&iv i? ociw r&? E, ½;{ue? trequE, ?

wec;<u, \? quo, r&aygi;? py&nalumi;u? oanmi; av{m u&m?
rsm;ao;pmvn;? ocba&? ri;ae!rUjy? ajymi;<uo;jcm;? wnalumi;rsm;u?
a&em;emci? tv:0;oií? {&ivluL;? av{m ucO; t}}

(o&pnooc, m? (taemu0e)? v uEypur? pm 199/)

[zljyon/ ri;om;av; rrtr; tE, tay: *P, Eiap&ejzpon/ {ci;ü ppui; ri;qu? ti;0ri;qu? anmi&ri;qu? ue;abmiri;qu? x qi;ouvmyu azmjyxm;on/ y'a& 9 r y'a& 12 x tavmi;ri;w&m;qi;ouvmy tE, awmu ui;qujywapb tao;pwzlon/ pmqon taemu0etjzp ri;rxr;ojzp&m ee;wi;trxr;rm;? rz&m;rm;Ei ywouquE, r&í tavmi;ri;w&m;tr; tE, u 2zu v; r tao;pwzljyonrm x;jcm;on/ {ci;wi;wi tzlcri;om;? ri;or; \ r;½;jrijrwoepirEi t"e&n lumwn&con ri;r; jzpalumi; ay:viapon ri;qu &mZoitZrsm; azmjylrjzpaomvn; ri;ee;pn{ci;rm;ur tjc;{ci;rm;Eirw x;jcm;r&on/ ri;ee;pn(p0)[aomtrnuyi x;ee;tp0tqu? ri;p0ri;qu [aom t"yg, &on/ r[morwri;rpí ri;r; tp0tqur qi;ouvmo? ue;abmi ri;qu tavmi;ri;w&m;r qi;ouvmo b;awmb&m; \ x;ee;taru qucrno [aom t"ym, aqmion/ xalumi ri;ee;pn {ci;rm;wi r[morwri;rpum ri;om;av;tx qi;ouvmy tao;pwzljyji;rm x;jcm;ygon/

pmqon y'a& 15 r y'a& 34 x tavmi;ri;w&m; \ wuyatmijrirEi be;awmbUrm;uzlxm;on/ tavmi;ri;w&m; \ jynwi;jynypn;aom wuy atmiyrm;u zU&mü tavmi;ri;w&m;u ajmijyae[e Bu;0g;ae[eypr;zi zljyxm; on/ ci0;pm;icinU tavmi;ri;w&m; Ereijuyj&mwi y'a& (18)ü-

]]oiqr\vu? lur;rmcu vn;? igvuawmr? b, vw&t? &vpwawm?
&na&mvsuom? ab;xucmv\i? cumpuci;? qirv\i;aom? ci;umyu?
icpnlon? wulz\w;0i? vmonwir? ab;&iapmxw? &nñejzwr?
relvwtmPm? ig&&mo? eivmcpr;? t&izr;t}}

(o&pnooc, m? (taemu0e)? vuEypur? pm 202/)

[zljyon/ tavmi;ri;w&m; \ Bu;0g;[eEi pwu;u taiympum;ji jriomatmi zljyxm;onrm tjc;{ci;wijyEi rwaom p{ci; \ x;jcm;cuizpon/

tavmi;ri;w&m; jynwi;jynypn;aom wuyaygi;rm;pmu {ci;ü tao;pw zlon/ pmqon ri;rxr;yy {ci;ü {ci;tZlcri;om; \ ab;awm tavmi;ri;w&m; \ atmijrirrm;u cs;uL;zUq&i; ri;om;av;vn; tm;us tw, Ei&e vu½;pr;tm; jynpaom ri;aumi;ri;jrwwpyg;jzpvmap&e &n&, y&on/

pmqon y'a& 37 r y'a& 56 tx b;awmb&m; \ be;awmbUrm;? b;awmb&m; vuxuee;"av, 0au;r tp0tvmrm;u {ci; \ oabmobm0 twi; zljyxm;on/ y'a& 57 rpum {ci;tZlcri;om; talumi;zlon/ ri;om; talumi;zU&mwi ri;om;av; \ r, awmu b;awmb&m;u tcppy? ri;om;av;u zm;jricge;ü aq;q&m orm;awmEi ta&t&rsm;on aenapmi&y? r, awmu ee;wi;ü ac:xm;yw u y'a& (58)ü-

]]&ir, awmri;? ewr, i;u? cpi;ci;us;au sm? &ib;awmr? ½aysm rn;?
igor; [? \c;c;jrijri? a&Ewzií? &iurusEm? jrie;cgv\i? ocg&v\vi;?

aⅇwi;0, ? &yci;omve? trAreEi? aumi;re , , ? aeap&\?
 luyr[;&m;? orm;rEme? wwyeoo? vrv , &? aenapmiiu? pvi
 pmv(i)} (o&pnooc , m? (taemu0e)? vuEypur? pm 212/)

[zljyon/ ri;om;av; \ r , awmon zcrn;awm b;awmb&m; (A'ri;) \ arwm
 u&aom or;jzply;? ri;om;av;rmvn; rci0r;ü&p0uyi tm;v; \ *½pujci; arwm
 ay;ici;u c&ojzpalumi; pmqjyvici;jzpon/ pmqontaemu0e&m;x;Ei ri;rxr;
 oyyee;wi; taetxm;Ei rz&m;rm; talumi; utao;pwoaeojzply; {ci;ü jyevn
 wijyzljqi;jzpon/

pmqon ri;om;av;twu ycuwir*vm tcr;tem; ui;yyEi&aom
 vuaqmirms;u {ci;y'a& 59Ei y'a&60ü zljyxm;on/ ri;om;av;twu bm;awm?
 bu;awm? a';awmrsm;Ei aqrsk;rm;u ay;luaom vuaqmiawmrsm;u y'a& (60)wi-

]taygi;a&ai? jriaw&wem? rsm;pmlyy? vuzlwjim;? bm;xw xm;Ei?
 ewvm;pau? bu;awmoci? a';awm&ivn;? a&mixiausmup? tme
 b , u? cewuz;rm;? ywrm;vuauu? vlawmua&mi0i;? ajccsi;
 a&xw? cppwujri? ay;xyqi \ ? zri;r , awm? xiay:www?
 ajrmuee;ewvn;? vnywrup? 'gve*? ponaxjym;? upm;pb , ?
 o , o , rsm;aw? jznjzl; ayvu}}

(o&pnooc , m? (taemu0e)? vuEypur? pm 213/)

[zljyon/ vuaqmiay;oEi ay;aomypn;rm;u wwusu wijyxm;on/
 ee;wi;a&&mup rsm;ü twi;usu oaeom pmq \ taetxm;u oEion/

p{ci;ü {ci;tzcric;om;av; \ zcrn;awmtra&ri;om;(a&awmiri;) tm;
 b;awmb&m;(A'ri;)u &ciuor;& apvwalumi;u jyqxm;on/ a&wup;0;w;
 a&aom r*varmiaaccs{ci;ür &ciu or;yuatmijrilyzpalumi; zlxm;on/

ue;abmiqu r[m&mZ0iü; yxrwei 'w , wwi ri;om;av; \ ar;zm;cie
 on ou&mZ 1146? 0gacgivqe; (7)&u? aomlumae jzpon/ ycuwitcr;tem;
 ui;yceon ou&mZ 1146? 0gacgivqe; (14)&u? aomlumaejzpon[jyqxm;
 on/ b;awmb&m;u &ciuor;& tra&ri;om;tm; apvwceon ou&mZ 1146?
 weaqmire;vqe;? (4)&u ? &ciwpjynaxniv; or;yuEiceon ou&mZ 1146?
 jymovjynausm (8)&u? jzpon/ &cior;yuly;cerom ri;om;av;twu pmqrsm; u
 {ci;zpylujci;jzpEion/

pmqtaemu0e o&pnooc , mon p{ci;uzlpy&jci;rm {ci;tzc ric;om;
 ar;zm;cierm b;awmb&m;(A')ri; qijzl&ciejzpci;? tra&ri;om;(a&awmiri;) &ciu
 or;yuEicejzpci;? {ci;tzcric;om;rm b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) \ ajr;0;jzpci;? pmq
 u , wirmvn; b;awmb&m;(A'ri;) cs;jriajrmupm;ici;u c&ojzpci;walumi jzpEi
 on/

pmqon p{ci;ü {ci;\obm0twi; a&pyaomvn; ee;wi;a&&mrs;u
 xx0i0ioaom taemu0eri;rxr;yy ee;wi;tallumi;t&mrs;u tao;pw wijyEi
 on/ {ci;pmay\ oabmvuPmtwi; cenm;wnliraom a&[ejzi a&zlaomvn;
 tavmi;ri;w&m; \wuyatmiy? be;awmbUrs;wir tavmi;ri;w&m; \taw;
 cpm;rrsm; ygatmiwijxm;Eionu awl&on/

2? 5/ aZ , eErwau_{sm}o \]]atmir*v_m}}cs {ci;

aZ , eErwau_{sm}o \]]atmir*v_m}}cs {ci;on y'a&(55)y'&on/ p{ci;wi
 ri;qu&mZ0i? be;awmbU? tzlcri;om;bU? ycubU? llrUbu? arwmBUrs;yg on/
 pmqon y'a& 16r 33x ri;qurs;u zlon/ r[morwri;rpí omu0iri;
 rZrwuri;? o[Vri;? jrermri;? (oa&acw&m? y*? yi; , ? ppui;? ti;0? anni&r;
 ri;qurs;u tqurjwapb tu0;csyazmijon/ polazmijci;jzi ri;om;av;
 on r[morw? omu , ? aeewrsl;E , r qi;ouvmojzply; t"e&nnumwn&con
 ri;rs;jzpalumi; ay:viapon/ p{ci;wi-

]]omu , [? ouwE , ? wpo , wpallumi;? ri;aumi;ri;jrw? orw
 wrsl;? wp½;wpom;? aee*g;w? on;lum;jrwpp? ajr;jrpoepi? lpyi
 wpcu? py , upaygi;? qi;oualumi;u aumi;aumi; rwyg}}

(aZ , eErwau_{sm}o? v u a&r? y' 15/)

[a&zuxm;rt& ri;om;av; \ trsl;tE , qi;ouvmu r[morwri;? omu ,
 ri;rpí a&zljyrn [qxm;on/ tzlcri;om;av;on ri;ee;pn(p0) [aom trnEi
 vuzupm r[morwri;r qi;owvmojzpalumi;u-

]]orwr? ou0um? u&mZmEi? Oumrc? tpriyw? aeewqu vn(v:0)?
 qi;ou&ní? ri;pnonm? xupmemr? tEwjzi rcrnawm? tallumi;
 ay:atmi? cai:ocsl}} (aZ , eErwau_{sm}o? v u a&r? y' 30/)

[jyqcon/ ri;om; \ rsl;½; t"elumr jrijrwoepiru ay:viapon/

ab;awmtavmi;ri;w&m; \ tqu tE , u y'a& (37)r y'a& (40)xjyon/
 jrermri;qu y*ri;tavmi;pnorply;? ti;0ri;r[mo [o&tx x;ee;pri;tjzp
 awl&on/ r[mo [o& (jynperi;) \ om; pvi;pm;ow;aumrpí aemuyi; tE , 0i
 rsm;on llrUpm;? &mpm;tjzp awl&on/ ri;om;av;on r[morwri;rpí ri;rs;tp0
 tqur qi;ouo? tavmi;ri;w&m;? ue;abmiri;qur qi;ouvm? b;awm
 b&m; \ x;ee;aru qucrnotjzp {ci;üjyq&m ri;om;av; \ rsl;½; oepir*Pu
 awlEion/

p{ci;ü ue;awmbUrs;u y'a& (41)r y'a& (51)x a&zuxm;on/ tavmi;ri;
 w&m;u&wemoCue;abmi llrUu wnaomri;tjzpm y'a&(41)wizlon/tavmi;ri;

w&m; \ wuyatmiyrm;urxnjci;rm tjcm;pmqrm;ua&zll;y;í tallumi;t&mwu
 xyrzuciíjzprn/ b;awmb&m; \ be;awmuyzlon/ b;awmb&m;on {ci;tzc
 ri;om; \ b;awmjzpci;? {ci;a&zllceü tycsyaom ri;jzp aeici;? pmq\ t&ioci
 jzpci;allumijzpon/ b;awmb&m;u ypl'yeaqmi&ucu jzpon tr&y&rllwnri;?
 atmiajravmuapw 'g, umri;? omoemjyri;? 'geovEi jynponri;? ri;usiw&m;
 q, yg;? o*[w&m; av;yg;Eitn tycsyaom ri; tjzpyon/ a&be;u&u;rm;aom
 ri;tjzp a, m&sm;jrww\ vuP^{m80}Ei nñwon? orww&m; 4yg;? pu⁴ yg;wEi
 jynpon? tm, ? 0P? oc? Av? y#bme[aom t&u≪ 5yg; &&on ri;tjzpzlon/
 b;awmb&m; \ be;awmb&rsm;on ri;om;av;twu *P, p&mjzpouo {ci;
 llum;emo taygi;vn; av;pm; llunnpw jzpay:apon/

p{ci;wi pmqon tr&y&rllbu y'a& (3? 6? 7? 9? 12) wü zljyxm;on/
 llrlluz&mwll jrijrwaomllrll? atmiajray:wi wn&aomllrll? &umzvy;? jynou vllcr
 ay;Eiaomllrll? p;ym;a&jynply;? ynm&aygrsm;aomllrlltjzpzlon/ ri;om;av;twu
 Zmwajru jrwe;w, wwwez;xm;wwap&ejzpon/

{ci;wi ri;om;av;tm; b;bmrbrsm;u cpcijrwe; *½puluyu llunE;
 Epoup&maumi;atmi wijyxm;on/ {ci;yxry'rmyi ri;om;uar;zm;vmon
 twu ee;wi;rvrsm; 0r;ajrmu0r;omjzpluy? u, tvyu, rvyEiawmy? ri;om;
 av;em;ü 0i;taeyu-

]]aⅇt v;? &iily;llunvi? qiluxy,? cg&vyvsm;? wpjcm;tr
 jyjzpatmiyi? alu;jriu0P;? ½wi;rsuEm? b, nmywvn? llunvn;
 rli;? c;vn;rue}} (aZ, eErwau&mo? v&a&r? y' 1/)

[zljyxm;on/ ri;om;av;on ee;awmwi;ü vt&m;v; \ cpciru &&aomotjzp
 zljyici;jzi ri;om;av;on rryw0e;ui& vrsm;u cpcionpw? jrwe;wez;xm;
 pwrsm; jzpay:vmrn/ xrwpci ee;wi;rom;prsm; cpcinñwr&vmrnjzpon/

{ci;pmqrm;on {ci;rsm;ua&zll&mü wnlirce'n&aom pm[ejzia&zllu
 on/ p{ci;wir awmi;yeavqm ux&m;[e t&itaomrsm;jzi up, [ezljyxm; on/
 pmqon {ci;u zll&mü uav;obm0Ei uav;acsm&aomow\ taetxm;u ay:atmi
 p{ci;ü zljyxm;on/ ponu-

]]b, ciE;aEm? ajyma[mrecs? b, uqon? ouxyp? b, trji?
 b, otmPm? allumi;jcmb, r? pwrwv? vspvslaysmi;EU? Eee&axx;
 acgi;0;ymi? &iuqwc&u? ajcvucwcg? b, allumi;jcmallumi? jylygb
 vn;}} (aZ, eErwau&mo? v&a&r? y' 8/)

[zljyyüaw&on/ pmqu ri;om;av;on oyaomvn; rtyb? u, vut*
 g tr≪rs≪vy&m;um? i, aeontwu? i&ontallumi; ar;aeon[ejzi tou0iatmi

a&jyon/ uav;ioub;awm? b;m;awmrsm;lum;yg {ci;oqorsm;tm; a'goxu
tjypwirnu alumuvalumi;? {ci;qorsm;upmemoem;oi alumi; awmi;ye [ejzi-

]]awmiee;? ajrmuee;? p;jre;nmwi? &paomi;&iw? cyiewem;? io
lum;aom? av(muxm;omñi;? wppoi;w? aw;csi;rq? aomalumii[?
ocsaiguai;? ruawm&rn? alumu von&i? woigu? pmemwpaumi;?
puygaumi; \}} (aZ , eErwau_{sm}o? v ua&r? y' 8/)

[a&zUjyon/ xji ½uu;wiii u m ejzpaen ri;om;alumi talumi;&i;
wppwp&m&mr&aom? a0cr&aomalumi {ci;oqow ajymae [eu-

]]ri; , OEUrm? jyprwici;? ri;y& , m , ? Oyg , rm , m? &mwwygb? aysmi;t
½ui? iciivv? bmjy\vn;o}} (aZ , eErwau_{sm}o? v ua&r? y' 30/)

[azmjyxm;on/

ycuwitcr;tem;wi &aelluaom ee;wi;orsm;? {ci;oqorsm;u ri;om;av;
tiww&e pwaysm&i&e bu;pm;luyu -

]]Epaxmi;tiuu? pwawm&u uatmi? u sL;½uu leawm? rw az_{sm}on?
aysmaysmyg;yg;omwnav}} (aZ , eErwau_{sm}o? v ua&r? y' 8/)

[zjyxm;on/ ri;om;av;Ei ee;wi;ow \ obm0uaw;jri íri;om;av;uusp , ly;
a&ontzUrm;on p{ci;\x;jcm;rjzpon/ xuo uav;obm0trt&m? vloabm
obm0tr&mrsm;u ue;abniacw "Eau_{sm}o0;loa&on b;awm&i{ci; (1119 zm;
tavmi;ri;w&m; \ e0rajrmu&iao;awm)üawUEion/

p{ci;\ ri;qu&mZ0itzUrm;on ri;om;av;\ rsl;½;&nllumr? jrijr
oepiruijon/ be;awmbUrm; zU&mwi wuytzUrm;u O;pm;ay;rzUb? b;awm
b&m;u tuiovjynpaomri;? omoemjyri;? a&be;u;u;rm;ly; a , musm;jrww \
vuPmEi jynpaomri;tjzpzon/ p{ci;ü tr&y&rU bZU&mwi ri;om;av;
Zmwajru jrwe;w , wwwez;xm;wwap&e om , mat;cr;aomr t jzpzon/ {ci;
pmqtrsm;pon {ci;zU&mwi wnircnm;aom pm [ejzia&zUuaomvn;? p{ci;ü
t&itaomav;rm;jzi talumi;t&mu cwqua&xm;onrm p{ci;\x;jcm;cu
jzpon/

lci o;oycu

ri;ee;pn(ppui;ri;)twu a&zluuom {ci;rs;wi {ci;\oabmobm0
twi; ri;qu&mZ0itZU? rU bU? be;awm bU? ycu brsm;ji a&zluuonrm wnon/
tzlcri;om;wp0;twu pmq trsm;u {ci;zpyluron x;jcm;on/ pmq tm;v;on
x;ee;0e;uiEi ywouquE, aeorm;jzpon/ {ci;uzUpy&mwi wi;oi; wu0e
r[mpnoa&aom b'urmc{ci;wi ri;om;av; \ rsl;½;jrijrwoepiru azmjyvon
twu ri;om;av; \ qi;ou vmyrsl;½;u vn; t"uxm;zlon/ &mZ0iur;u jypco
pmqon pmq \ tav txtwi; ausmupmrsm;Ei b&irsm; \ ee;pEpee;wuEprsm;u
nEi;um &mZ0iqeqe {ci;ua&zlon/ ri;qur sm;uzU&i; xri;rs; \ aumi;uu
q;uursm;u vn; xnoi;zqom;on/ pmqon{ci;r wpqi wureueaom
ri;p0ri;quZ, m;jzpa&u 0;wnxm;on/ tzlcri;om;av;rmvn; rrrsl;½;jrijr
woepiruo&um *P, wez;xm;wwap &ejzpon/ pmqon{ci;(2)apmizrn[
&n&, xm;ontwu ri;quo;oe a&zUjci;jzpEion/ wi;oi;wu0e r[mpno
 \ uuo a&nez;c{ci;rmr tavmi;ri;w&m; \ wi;jyn xaxmiypr;aqmicuEi
wuyatmiyrs;u tav;ay;zlon/ wuyatmiyrs;zU&mwi xi&m;aom wuyrs;
omzlon/ tx;ojzi wi;oi;wu0er[mpno on tavmi;ri;w&m;Ei b;awm
b&m; (A'ri;)w \ vuawlaqmi&urEi, Oaom be;awm bUrs;u{ci;ü tav;ay;z
on/ tzlcri;om;av;u ab;awm b;awmwuol pr;&n xujruo ri;aumi;ri;jrw
jzpa pciaom apwemoua&murtwi; a&zUjci;jzpí be;awm bUrs; tav;uaejci;
jzpon/

rz&m;0e o&Eau smxia&aom neve;r*vmc{ci;wiygao be;awm bUrs;
on tjcm;{ci;Eirw x;jcm;on/ ri;om;av; \ ab;awm tavmi;ri;w&m;Ei b;awm
b;awm b&m;(A'ri;)w \ om;awm? nawm? ri;r xr;? jynotay:xm;aom pwcpm;r?
ri;om;tay:xm;aom b;b;m;rzwlcpm;rrsm;u awUjriEion/ pmqon rz&m;0e
&m x;u&&xm;oyy{ci;ü x;ee;"av x;prsm;u tv0;oi ov xnoi;a&zUxm;
on/ taemu0e o&pnooc, ma&aom r*vmatmiajrc{ci;wir ri;om;av; \
rsl;½;tqutE, u tao;pwzlon/ ycuwi yü&aom vuaqmiypn; rsm;u vn;
wwuuzUxm;on/ ri;om;av;on rar;zm;ciuwn;uyi b;awm b;awm b&m;
(A'ri;) \ tcpyjci;c&ojzpalumi; zUjyxm;on/ pmqon taemu0e&m x;Ei
ri;r xr;oyy ee;wi;talumi;t&m rsm;u jynjynppzUjyxm;on/ {ci; a&zU[eür
wnlirce n m;aoma& [ejzpon/ aZ, eEmrwau sm o \ atmir*vmc {ci;rs;rmr
vobm0? uav;obm0 trt&m rsm;u ay:viat mia&jyEion/ t&ioaomav;rs;jzi
talumi;t&mu cwqua&jyxm;on/ ri;om;av; \ ycuwi yrm aysmay&i&ioq
Ei&e aygaygyg;yg;a&jci; jzpEion/

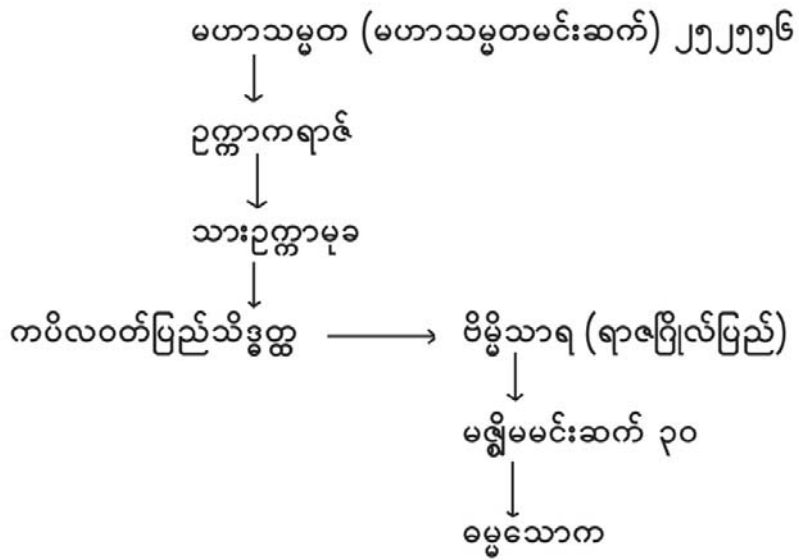
{ci;(5)apmiv;on tzlcri;om;av; ri;ee;pn ri;aumi;ri;jrwjzpa&u
0;wnum pmqrsm; \ "avp½utwi; a&zluuonu awUjriEion/

နိဇ္ဇာ:

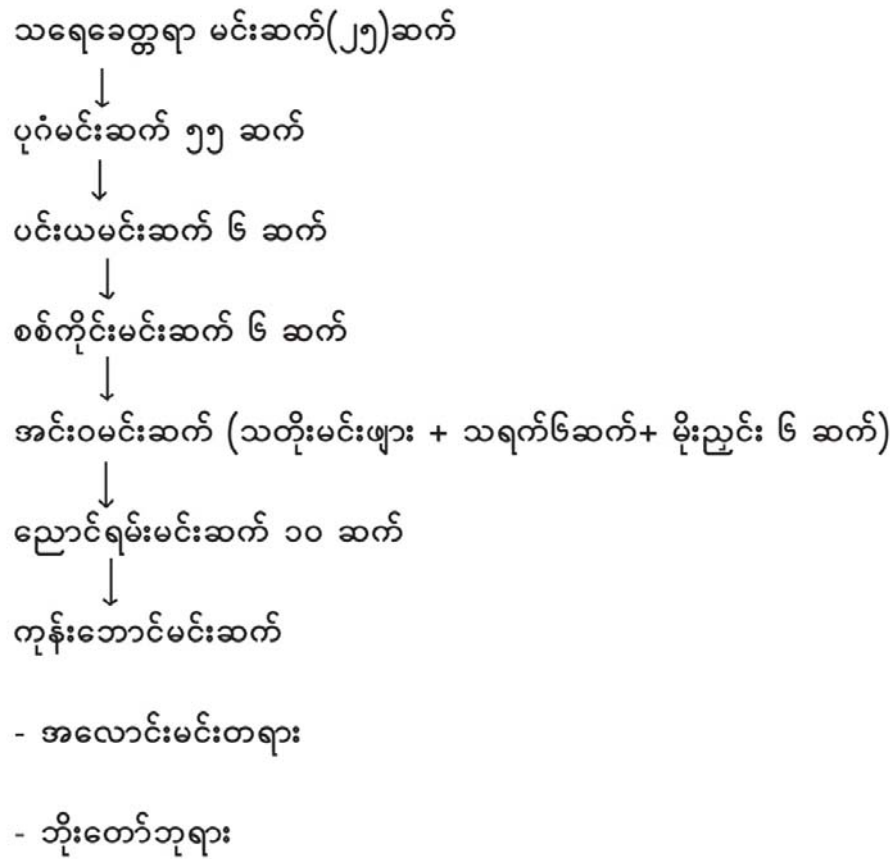
ppmwr; rwpqi jrermaye , & {ci;avvmru@wi taxmutyay;Eirn [, lunrygon/ pmqtrsm;u tzlcricom;wpyg;twu {ci;rsm;tly/i a&;uaomtcg {ci;tp0tvma&;aeluypwi pmqwp0;ci;p\ pm tavtwi; u , yi [ersm; aygi;py um a&;zll uon uawEion/ tzlcricom;tm; ri;aumi;ri;jrwjzpa&;u 0;wnum rrwwwpr;oavmu a&;zll uaom pmqrsm; \ pwapwemtvuvn; ojri cpm;Eiygon/

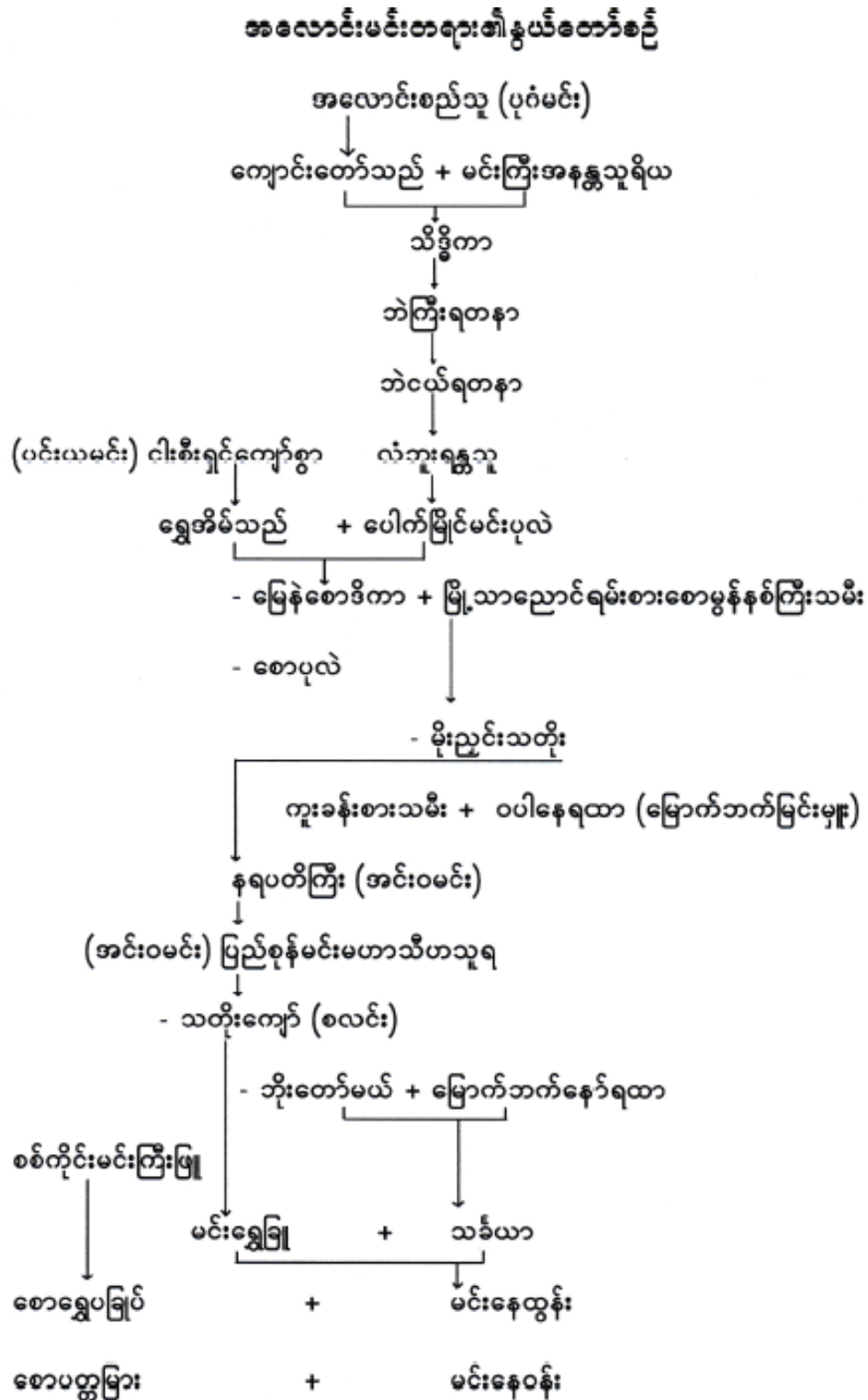
ur;u;pm&i;

- 1/ aZ , eErwau sm o / (cEpryg) / *Ja t n i r * v m j c* ? ociri;pnrl;awmp0{ci;vua&;r/
- 2/ aZ , oc , m ? o&eEau sm x i (rz&m;0e) / *J n e v e ; r * v m j c { c i ; /* v u Eypur/
- 3/ o&pnooc , m / (taem u 0e) / *J r * v m a t m i a j r j c { c i ; /* v u Eypur/
- 4/ wi ? 0; (y*0eaxmuri;) / (1969) / *u A m A E o m & u r ; ?* &eue ? v , wr@liyEywu/
- 5/ wi0; ? 0; (wn;jzwo) / (1961) / *r i ; e e ; p n { c i ; o ; a p m i w /* &eue ? jrermEiioawoet oi;/
- 6/ ynm&t rsm; / (1992) / *r e e e ; & m Z 0 i a w m u ;* (yxrw) ? ('-ur) / &eue ? owi;Eipme , Zi;/
- 7/ r [mpno(wi;oi;wu0e) / (1968) / *w i ; o i ; j r e r m & m Z 0 i o p* (yxrw) ? &eue ? r*vm yEywu/
- 8/ r [mpno(wi;oi;wu0e) / (1968) / *w i ; o i ; j r e r m & m Z 0 i o p* ('w , w) ? &eue ? r*vm yEywu/
- 9/ r [mpno(wi;oi;wu0e) / (1968) / *w i ; o i ; j r e r m & m Z 0 i o p* (ww , w) ? &eue ? r*vm yEywu/
- 10/ r [mo&aZ , o ? ri;u; (ri;Ei;rlupm;) / (2012) / *y # u w a w m o r i ;* (q|rtur) ? &eue ? &mjyn pmt ywu
- 11/ armiarmiwi ? 0; (wn;jzwo) (1967) / *u e ; a b m i q u / r [m & m Z 0 i a w m u ;* (yxrw) (w-ur) ? &eue ? v , wr@liyEywu/
- 12/ armiarmiwi ? 0; (wn;jzwo) (1967) / *u e ; a b m i q u / r [m & m Z 0 i a w m u ;* ? ('w , w) (w-ur) ? &eue ? v , wr@liyEywu/
- 13/ armiarmiwi ? 0; (wn;jzwo) (1967) / *u e ; a b m i q u / r [m & m Z 0 i a w m u ;* ? (ww , w) (w-ur) ? &eue ? v , wr@liyEywu/
- 14/ a&;a [mi;pmayoawowp0; (wn;jzwo) (cEpryg) / *r i ; e e ; p n { c i ; 2 a p m i w* ? wrjriyaeaom ue;abmiacw{ci;rsm; (pwww) ? &eue ? a& , repmay/



မြန်မာမင်းဆက်





ri;v \ 0w\wrsm;r Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmi quo ,zew;r
&eir;yi*

pmwr; t u;0;

ppmwr;\&n^{1/2}, curm pma&q&mri;v \ 0w\wrsm;u zew;&mwi to;jy\
aom Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmiwupuyí 0w\wrsm;tjzp zew;,yu avv
wijyvji;jzpygon/ ri;von 0w\wrsm;ua&om;&mwi wwEiv&i;
a&muatmi zew;wijav&ygon/ xol wijyuavvm&mwi t"uZmwaqmi
wp0;0;utajccí ZmwaqmiEiZmwvr; wom;wn;jzpatmi qupyzew;
, on en;pepu aw&ygon/ ri;v \ 0w\wrsm;wi Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmiw\
on wpaygi;wppn;x twwa^{1/2}vsm;ly;v\i zjz\w;wwom;atmi zew;
, ontwynnu avvmau&ontavsmu Zmwvr;Ei Zmwaqmiw\
quo ,zew;ru pmwr;jypwijy&jci; jzpygon/ ppmwr;wi tavvmc
tjzpri;v \ 0w\waygi;clypmtyr pmwr;acgi;p0Eiqavsm on 0w\w
(2)y'u avvwmijyom;rnjzpygon/

aomc:ua0g [m& // 0w\w? Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmi? tm;lyir? zew;r

e'ge;

ppmwr;on jri;v \ 0w\wrsm;r Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmi quo ,zew;r}} u
avvmwijyxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ 0w\ \ ta&ygaom t*g&yrs;jzpon Zmwvr;
Ei Zmwaqmiwon rnontcuu ta&ygonqaom oabmujoyóemtjzpxm;í
aq;aE;wijyxm;ygon/ xowijy&mwi 0w\wpma&q&mrs;xr ri;v \ (1) uywe
yji (2) vr;jzwu;aom Ev;om;0w\w (2)y'u tavvmctjzp wijyxm;ygon/
xolavvmaomtcg ri;v \ 0w\wrsm;on Zmwvr; [í 0;pm;ay;wijyon oabmxu
yw0e;usiwiawjri&aom b0tuuwpuu? &n^{1/2}, cuwpccu taw;wpcpo
a&muatmi wijyxm;onoabm om aw&ygon/ xtaw;ay:vm atmizew;&mü
olyw0e;usiwi awjri&aom wu ,avmur Zmwaqmirms; u pwu;zi ouvu
aygyg;pmzew;a&om;Eiaom twynnu aw\&ygon/ rnontalumi;t&murq
zwíauumi;atmi zew;a&z&mü Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmion wp0;Eiwp0; o [Zmw
jzpatmi quo ,a&om;ron t"uuonu wijyom;rnjzpygon/

* vuaxnuuxu? jrermpmXme? &euet a0;oiwuov

1/ 0w\wr Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmiw\ oabm

0wwon &opmaytzyppwpcjzpon/ tjzptyu? talumi;t&mwpcu
pum;ajyzi Zmwvr;Zmwaqmiw qupyzew;um zwcipz,jzpatmi a&om;xm;
aom pmaytzyppzpygon/ 0wwon0w&nuo 'l"rvavmuu tajcc&on/
pma&o\ pwu;Eijznpuí pma&q&m\ apwemqola&muatmi a&om;&ygon/
0wwEiywouí jrerm t b"met u;O;cyü

]]Zmwaqmiwp0;(o)trsm;u tajccxm;í tjzptyutjci;t&mu pw0i
pm;z , ziqxm;aom talumi;t&m}} (pm-164)

[azmjyxm;ygon/ 0wwEiywouí ty*0v\ tq xivi;ubmom jyeq
&mwí-

]]0wwon ½;½;&i;&i;tzrsl;jzpon (o)jzpoion 0ww\
&n½ , csurm wpcwn;aomtjci;t&mu uuuuui;ui; xjrivm
atmiazmjzyijzpon/ 0wwon pxuwn;u pmzwo\ t m½u
zr;pm;um wpcsuav;r\rav\mapb t xwtxyo&muonwi
wjzn;jzn;csi; qiipn;jriwií , om;&rn/ 0ww\ twi;t&n
on pmzwo\ t m½p;pur lunoioavmuom &oion/ pmzwo\
t m½0 , tjcmaom tjc;t&mrm; xy0irvmci pmzwopwranmi;ci
'i;ue ly;q;vu&ayon}} (pm- 271-272)

[qxm;ygon/

pmzwow\taejzi 0wwqontoEizw&mwí 0w&nuotjzp tyursm;pm
u ar\mvirxm;oiay/ t m½p;purwpcwn;om ar\mvixm;&ayrn/ w'*twi;
wpxiwn;jzpyur talumi;t&mu ovaZ&luon/ 0w&nuo pwt m½u
&ywejzwawujci; rjy\vuay/ pmzwopwxwi li;aijci;r&ci tq;oway; &rn
rm 0ww\ oabmvuPmjzpygon/

0wwwi Zmwvr;yg&on yjirwpqi wjzn;jzn; w;wwajymi;v vmaom
0wwpmaytzyppwivn; yjiuoyi Zmwvr;ygci;u pmzwy&woww Epoulu
on/ Zmwvr;Ei ywouí uuoi&i;remEi&uypwu-

]]Zmwvr;qonrm rrjzppavom tu&oua&mur &ap&etwu pma&
q&mu jzp&yrm;u pepwuspp0xm;aom jzpp0jzpon/ tcwtqu
raomjzp&yrm;u a½;cs , íxuay:vmaom tu&qurms;u pepwus
a½;cs , pp0&on/ wpen;t m;jziqaom t m;ly\irjzpay:ap&Ei t m;ly\ir
t&eu&qi;ap&e pma&o\ a½;cs , pp0rjzp&ygon Zmwvr;jzpon/}}
(pm-167)

[qxm;ygon/

pma&;oon 0w\wpy'ua&;om;&mwi &n½, cu&&rn/ x&n½, cuo
a&mua tmi jzp&yrsm;u pepwuppp0xm;&on/ 'l"ravmur vwp a, mu\ b0on
jzpcio v jzpaewwon/ rx;jcm;aom jzp&yrsm;on quwujzpcijzpaEion/
x;jcm;aom jzp&yrsm;rmvn; jzpvuyuvuEi alumi;usk;qupyr& jzpaewwon/
vwpa, mu\ b0tjzptyursm;u jzpontwi;a&;jyvuv\i zwcspz, Zmwvvr;
jzpvmrnr [way/

pma&;oon v\avmuwijzpyuaeaom vrsm;\ t jzptyursm;u cpm;em;vn
atmi lu;pm;ly;v\i xjzp&yrsm;xr pw0ipm;z, ? pwvy&m;z, aumi;aom jzp&yrsm;
u a½;c, í pmzwo tyi;rjzpEion? jzpEiac&on [vuc, lunvmatmi
Zmwvvr;qiwij&on/ Zmwvvr;twutu&ap&Ei Zmw&ewuvmap&etwu
tm;ly\iru zew;ay;&ygon/ tx;ojzit m;ly\iru Zmwuwuyi;wixnoi;&ygon/
tm;ly\ir\ teu u uo&i;remEi &u&ypwu —

]]tm;ly\ir qonrm Zmwvvr;wpy'twi; vy&m;rrsm;u jzpay:apaom
qeUibu titm;prsm;twi; ½e;u ewucur}} (pm-43)

[ziqxm;ygon/

tm;ly\irEiywouí t jyEitajm (Showing and Telling) pmt ywi
avma&;tbwu —

]]tm;ly\iron uEyw\Zmwuursm;ü uEyw\qEvci aom t&mjzp
on/ tm;ly\iron pmzwo tm; pw0ipm;ru zew;ay;on/ Zmwvvr;u
a&Uola½U&e armi;Eiay;on/ tjcm;en;rm tm;ly\iron Zmwaqmirms;\
qErsm;Ei , i;qErsm;u uzu, zuvyon tc\laom taEmut, u
twm;tq;rm;Ei ywouon/ xtwm;tq;u Zmwaqmiw\vr;wi
cay;jci;tm;zi Zmwvvr;tm;ly\iru zew;Eion/}} (pm — 14)

[qx;m;ygon/

Zmwvvr;zew;&mwi t"uu aom tm;ly\iron Zmwaqmirms;u yg0i vy&m;ay;
&jci;jzpygon/ tm;ly\irEi ywouí rm*&uvcu —

]]Zmwvvr;wi Zmwaqmitaejzi rrtm; [ewm;vnaom taEmit, u
rsm;u rno&iqirn or[w&iqirr&? o\ye;wi rnuo atmijri
pm a&mu&on (0g) uq;onu azmjyxm;ygon/}}
(pm — 72)

[qx;m;ygon/

xtqulunv\ivn; tm;ly\iron Zmw&eww&etwu jzpaomvn; wu,
wr; yg0ivy&m;&onrm Zmwaqmirms;omjzpon/ tm;ly\irt&eaumi;ap&e

Zmwaqmirms;u oom;rnvr;c&wi tcuttcjyóemrms;u csm;ay;&on/ x
tcuttcrms;u Zmwaqmion rnuo &iqijzwoe;rnqaom talumi;uiyaom
tcuon Zmwvr;yijzpon/ xoabmulunv\i Zmwvr;twutm;lyiru
Zmwaqmirms;u yg0ivy&m;&on/ Zmwaqmiw\p½uon o½yyjiyiv\i? p½utz
tm;aumi;v\i tm;lyironvn; tm;aumi;vmrnjzpon/ Zmwaqmitwu ½e;ue
vy&m;&rn Zmwuuaumi;rsm;u Zmwvr;u zew;ay;xm;&on/ xalumi Zmwvr;
Ei Zmwaqmion quo , aeygon/

tm;lyirwi pwwi;tm;lyironvn; &ao;on/ tcsUOwrsm;wi Zmwaqmi
wp0; \cpm;cursm;? taw;tjrirms;jzi 0w\wpy'v;u a&;om;on/ xola&;om;
&mwi Zmwaqmiw\ pwwi;tm;lyiruo;on/ 0w\ (o) ½y&i? jyZmwrs;wi
ZmwaqmiEi pmzwowcpm;r wpom;wn;jzpm;r &oajrmuon [qluon/
pmzwoxo &ocpm;ra&mu&ap&erm Zmwaqmirms;u Zmw0ice;tvu oem;p&m?
c:pp&m? re;p&m? av;pm;p&m ponjzi p½urs; p jzpay:atmi pma&;ou zew; , &on/
Zmwvr;aumi; wpy'jzp&etwu Zmwaqmi \ ta&;ygyu " The Fiction Writer's Work-
shop" pmtya&;om;o *s;ZuEbmUApu-

oiZmwaqmirms; bmutrsm;q; wez;xm;aqmi½uonu pp0&rn/
xalumi Zmwvr;jzpay:ap&e owu wucuci;yg/ b0? tcp? ai?
tvyw\wu wuy0ici;yg/ oi\Zmwaqmirms;on bmur{*½rpu
v\ioyw0e;ui& Zmwalumi;jzp&yrs;on ||u&m uye;jzpvmrn}}
(pm — 71)

[qxm;yg on/

xtqon Zmwaqmizew;ruomru Zmwvr;zew;rtwu ta&;ygaom
tcujzpon/ Zmwvr;zew;&mwi Zmwvr;Eivuzuaom Zmwaqmirms;u a½;c ,
ly;zew; , &on/ xZmwaqmirms;wivn; vom;yyb0? tcp? aialu;ponw\jzi
ywouon &nre;cuwpcc&&rn/ orom Zmw&euwuvmapon/ tm;lyiru
jzpay:vmaprn/ qzui;u r*Zi;0w\wrsm; a&;en;pmtywi —

]]oiZmwaqmirms;on oepr;&e? cirm&EijzpEiac&&e vtyon/
ow\taeEi jyóemwpcuajz&i;&e vtyonjzpí oitaeEijrvy&m;
rrsm;xu cpm;rrsm;uo;&e a½;c , &rn/}}

(pm — 133)

[qxm;yg on/

Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmi qupyroabmu tm;lyiru t"uazmjyaeon/ tm;lyir
wpctwu ½e;uevy&m;&e Zmwaqmiw\ p½utrsl;rs;u zew;ay;ci;jzi pmzwoü
Zmwvr;tay: ovpwjzpvmapontji Zmwaqmiw\ cpm;rrsm;u\vn; u;pu

a&m u&v m w w y g o n / w p c g w p & w i x ; j c m ; a o m Z m w a q m i r s m ; u z e w ; j c i ; j z i v n ;
Z m w v r ; o n q a q m i r & v m w w y g o n /

0 w / a u m i ; w p y ' j z p & e t w u Z m w a q m i o n t a & ; y g v o n / p m z w o p w u
q a q m i E i & e Z m w v r ; 1 / 2 y a x ; j c i ; r m Z m w a q m i r s m ; \ j z p & y r s m ; 1 / 2 y a x ; v m j c i ; y i j z p
o n / 1 / 2 y a x ; a o m Z m w v r ; t a y : w i t E i t 1 / 2 ; t w u & i q i a e & a o m Z m w a q m i r s m ;
a e m u o l a r s m y g & i ; Z m w v r ; \ t & o m u y g c p m ; l u & o n / Z m w a q m i r s m ; o n o 1 / 2 y r e v i
Z m w v r ; o n o 1 / 2 y r e o n / Z m w a q m i r s m ; o n t a j y m i ; t v j r e v i Z m w v r ;
t a j y m i ; t v v n ; j r e a y r n / Z m w v r ; t a j y m i ; t v j z p a p & e t w u Z m w a q m i r s m ; \
p w u a j y m i ; v j y i j y i a y ; & o n / x o t m ; j z i Z m w v r ; E i Z m w a q m i w o n t j y e t v e
q u E , a e l y ; 0 w w a u m i ; w p y ' j z p v m E i y g o n /

p m a & ; o a y ; v a o m a p w e m & n & , c u o l a & m u a t m i y a q m i & m w i Z m w v r ; u
y t a & ; y g o n ? Z m w a q m i u y t a & ; y g o n [r q E i a y / E p c p v ; \ t E y n m z e w ; r
a j y m i a j r m u r o m 0 w a u m i ; w p y ' j z p E i y g o n / Z m w a q m i o n Z m w v r ; E i q a v s m a o m
Z m w a q m i j z p & r n / Z m w a q m i & y w n & m b 0 E i v u z u a o m u o ; y g ; t r t & m r s m ; & a t m i
z e w ; & r n j z p o n / t c s l 0 w w r s m ; w i Z m w v r ; u r r w r a w m a o m v n ; Z m w a q m i r s m ;
u r p u e & p c y g o n / p p m w r ; w i Z m w v r ; E i Z m w a q m i q u o , r ? 0 w a u m i ;
w p y ' j z p & e Z m w v r ; E i Z m w a q m i w t w v u w i n n w a t m i a y g i ; p y a y ; & e v
a l u m i ; r i ; v \ 0 w w E p y ' u t a v v m c t j z p w i y o m ; r n j z p y g o n /

2 / r i ; v \ 0 w w r s m ; r Z m w v r ; E i Z m w a q m i q u o , r

p m a & ; q & m r i ; v o n 0 w w r s m ; p m u a & ; c o j z p o n / o 0 w w r s m ; \ x ; j c m ; c u r m
t r s m ; t m ; j z i v i , w \ o b m 0 r s m ; u a y g a y g y g ; y g ; ? o u o u v u v u z q w w j c i ;
j z p o n / o \ 0 w w u a v ; r s m ; o n 0 w w y y w a o m a l u m i v n ; p m z w o E p o u l u
o n / o \ 0 w w u a v ; r s m ; o n v t m 1 / 2 r a n m i ; n m r ' i ; c e l y ; q ; o m ; w w o n / l y ; q ;
o n E i z w o p w x w i w p p w p c u e & p a t m i z r ; p m ; E i p r ; & y g o n / r i ; v o n
t a o ; t z t a l u m i ; t & m a v ; r s m ; ? t r w r x i j z p w w a o m t a l u m i ; t & m a v ; r s m ; u v n ;
a y g a y g y g ; y g ; 0 w w t j z p v n ; B u u o v z e w ; , E i p r ; & o n u a w & o n /

2 ? 1 / u y w e y j y i

u y w e y j y i 0 w w o n (1985) c E p a z a z m 0 g & v x w p y , j z l r * Z i ; w i a & ; o m ; c
o n / Z m w v r ; \ t u ; 0 ; r m u y w e a v ; w p 1 / 2 u o n b w p u m ; p y , , m ? p m a & ; r a v ; ?
p m a & ; B u ; ? o u o m v u z u & n q i r p m ; y x ; ? 1 / 2 ; t y B u ; ? o ; b ; u m ; o r m ; ? o ; b ; u m ;
i m ; p ; o r e ; u a v ; ? t v u e q i & i t r s ; o r ; B u ; ? x r i ; c s i y & a o m r e ; r u ; w x o
t q i q i u ; a j y m i ; a & m u & o m ; y u a & ; z i x m ; y g o n / u y w e a v ; \ 0 a o o v u P m r m
u y w e t v , w n w n u x u y i ; p w j y a e l y ; p u l j z i j y e u y x m ; j c i ; j z p o n / x 0 w w

av;wi u;syweav;u rnourrvvm;ub rrwvur tjreq;vwajrmu atmi
 bu;pm;luon/ aemuq;wi xri;c;ivuy&aom qi;&onre;ru; vuxo
 a&muvm on/ xre;ru;on ruprjrirpr;Ei u;sywetpwav;u pw;qiyi&i
 re;ru;xr vuc&, cici;jzpon/ vr;xyur; , mqioloí u_{sm};yraum
 aq;aygvvEi r&r;jym;wpxy, ly;? qiuauaiav;on u;syweu jzelunly;v*i*
 jyevey;yg [qon/ re;ru;on u;syweuiye, ly; ac;ctuxr rwapwpapu, ly;
 aumiav;t;ay;vuon/ aq;vyr0, awmy tc0xyom0, , con/ trojye
 a&muao mtcg ajr;jzpou xuywetpwuav;u aq;vyqirmom;í aq;vy0,
 rn/ xqirtzm;u;on rupraumi;aom alumi tpwurjriy vucvrrn [i
 ajymqon/ xtcgtaru;u owpyg;pwrcr;omatmi rjyvyg [qon/ xtcg
 uav;rav;u &iapmyb&m; tvlcy;xxnrn [ajym on/ re;ru;u acgi;wiwicg
 on/ a&b0utvL'gerpilu, í , cb0wi 'uwwpyi;jzpaec&on/ tvlq
 onrm oe&i;&rn/ xalumi u;sywetpwav;u ro;bxm;rn [q;jzwvuon/
 re;ru;on yuqtpwav;u uyypay:rmci;xm;aom zmatmuo tomt, m
 x;xnvuavon/

u;syweyji0wwwi Zmwvr;[í rnrn&r&b u;sywetpwav; oo&m
 vnyEi pwaeaalumi rnourvurcvb y&, m, o;um rrwvur tjreq;
 vwatmi bu;pm;luywomyg0ion/ ajcroeí axmei;axmei;avmu ae&aom
 xri;c;iiyon qi;&aomre;ru;ur u;sywetpwav;u&í rrcpm;&ovrsl; tjcm;
 orsm;t; rcpm;apvaomalumi or;xm;vuici;jzp&yonom Zmwvr;jzpon/
 xZmwvr;wav;xwi vw\ twu azmu_{sl};xm;on/ u;sywetpwav;wp¹/₂uu
 tajcwní vom;w\ twp¹/₂uEi y&, m, trsl;rslo;yu Zmwvr;qixm;on/ x
 Zmwvr;wi t"uZmwaqmirm u;sywetpwav;yijzpon/ xuywetpwav;u
 A[jyí bwpum;py, , mu pma&rav;vuxo ajymi;ay;on/ pma&rav;on
¹/₂;ola&mur tv, wnwnu xuyi;pwjyaeaom wpu;syweu pulzi jyeuym;
 alumi;o&on/ pma&rav;on tpwtjyu ovurcví qyjymz;ai om;oi;&mwi
 xnay;vuon/ xuywetpwav;u pma&u;u jii;q&mwi

]] [mAsm... ciAsm;wu tpwtjyreor 'rmcsn;vmay;wmy/ [u:v ai oi;
 wtcg cPcP pum;rm;&w, }} (pm — 209)

[ajym on/

pma&rav;u bPxuoi;&rm [qumxm;con/ pma&u;vur wpqi
 pm;yx;av;x a&muom;on/ pm;yx;av;uaivmv&mwi pma&u;u u;sywe
¹/₂u tpw a&wuay;vuon/ xtxwiu;sywetpwav; xnay;vuon/ ouom
 vuzu&nqi aumiwwixiaomou vuzu&nvaomuo ¹/₂;tyu;t; m;
 aijyet r;&mwi u;sywetpwav;u xnay;vuieyon/ ¹/₂;tyu;u-

]] a [aumi...? u;sywewp¹/₂u jyevey;um? tpwu;}} (pm - 210)

[qon/ aitr;ou –

]]u;uweu 'gy&vlyg? ce½;ay:u om;tr;vmwm tpwz;u 'gaemuq;
u:ewmy/ o;vlygw, q&m&}} (pm – 210)

[ajymon/ ½;tyu;u –

]] [m &r , rxib;u? pwwtjyi Er;vn;Er;aeao;w , }} (pm – 210)

[qon/ vuzu&nqir aitr;ou –

]]v , ygw , q&m& , ? aemuae;vn; vuzu&naomu t;rmy? t'awmr
jyeay;ayg}} (pm – 210)

[q \ / ½;tyu;on tpwuvurcí jii;qaomvn;r&ay/ aitr;ouvn;
u;ywetpwuvurcay/ * , uteutaeEi pwjywaeao m t&on wez;rom;
on/ wez;rom;aom t&mu aipulyijzpaomvn; vurcvluon vloabm? v
obm0? v t w r s m ; u Z m w a q m i w p 0 ; l y ; w p 0 ; a j y m i ; v u m o ½ y a z m x m ; o n / ½ ; t y u ;
on o ; b ; u m ; p ; & m w i x u y w e t p w a v ; u a y ; c o n / u m ; o r m ; r o r c m c e
v n x u l y ; c y o w o w a v m u o m ; o n / r e ; u a v ; w p 0 ; o n o ; b ; u m ; u v r ; w m ;
on/ o ; b ; u m ; p ; l y ; a i a j c m u u s y & i ; & m w i i g ; u s y w e E p ½ u u a y ; o n / x t c g
o ; b ; u m ; q & m u u s y w e a v ; ½ u u j y e t r ; o n / o ; b ; x u o m ; a w m r u s y w e t p w
u a v ; u a w l y ; v r ; a t m a o m v n ; r & a w m a y / r e ; u a v ; o n a c g i ; a v m & n 0 , & m w i
t v u e q i & i t r s ; o r ; u ; t m ; x u y w e t p w u x n a y ; v u o n / a c g i ; a v m & n
q i & i u ; o n v n ; u s y w e t p w u a v ; u v u r c y g / a j c a x m u r o e r p r ; E i x r i ; c s i
v m y a o m r e ; r u ; t m ; y c a i w p u s y a y ; & m w i u s y w e a v ; u a v ; a c g u a c g u l y ; r e ; r u ;
v u x o x ; x n v u o n / r e ; r u ; o n r o & m a y / u s p u s y g a t m i q y l y ; a x m e a x m e
j z i j y e x u o m ; o n / r e ; r u ; \ b 0 o n y i y e ; o n / b 0 u l u r m r v a y / a j c u v a x m e l
a x m e l E i r v r y c s l , i ; a e o n / o l & m w i u s y w e p w a v ; j z w o e ; v m & m v r s m ; p m w i
r & o n p w t v & o n / u s y w e u a v ; a w c & a o m v t m ; v ; \ t w r s ; x r e ; r u ; ü r &
x r e ; r u ; o n p m a & ; o u p m z w o w t m ; p j y ñ e ; q v a o m p w t v y i & i j z p o n / o \
b 0 o n q i ; & í t * g c s l w a e a o m v n ; o e p i l u n v i o n / j z l p i j r i j r w o n / a q ; v y
q i r u s y w e t j y a v ; u r , a o m t c g w i o t w u a q ; v y r 0 , a w m b u a v ; r a v ;
t w u t c 0 x y o m 0 , v m c o n / u a v ; r a v ; u v i , y y u s y w e t p w u a v ; u t r s m ;
o i g u o l x y q i v n j z m ; u m o ; r n [a j y m o n / x t c g r e ; r u ; u –

]] [...rvyaumi;b;? taru;awmi 'yuqu&awm awmawm pwrc;r;om
jzpom;&ao;wm/ orsm;awvux a&muom;&ivn; 'vycpm;&rmayg}}

(pm – 212)

[ajmqon/ uav;rav;u &iapmyb&; tvlcy;x xnrnqaomvn; vurc
cay/ pma&;oon pmzwo t m;ajmvaompum; (o) 0w\&n^{1/2},c;uu re;r;u;
tajmji zi wijon/ re;r;u; \ trt&mu vn; -

]]acgi;uwiwi cg on}}

(pm – 212)

[azmijon/ xjiyi tajmu vn; -

]]rvyygeU , ? [b0u vL'ge;wmrpiu , cv | 'b0rm 'uwwpyi;
vmjzpaewm/ aemub0u quygaeyg t;r , / vLw , qwm oe|oe|&i;&i;
pwxm;ru/ ti; ... 'yuqu ro;b xm;vuwm taumi;q;gyav}}

(pm – 212)

[ajmqon/ trt&mu vn; -

]]re;r;u;on usywepwuav;u uyypay:rmci;xm;aom zmat mu
o| t om t , m x;xnvuavon/}} (pm – 212)

[azmijxm;on/

x0ww\ Zmwvr;uunv| i ourZmwaqmijzpaom tv ,wi puluyí
zmax;xm;aom usyweuav;rygb rjzpEiay/ usyweuav;u vw\ p^{1/2}ur sm;
t|um;wi wp0;ly;wp0; \ tpeypcae&aom taicrtaer? twnt|irron vom;
wp0;ym cpm;vm&atmi pma&;oua&;zwijyEion/ xuoolourusywepwuav;
u Zmwaqmitjzp taicwnly;v|i um;py , , m? pma&;rav;? pma&;u;? aumiwxio?
^{1/2};tylu;? o;b;um;im;p;ore;uav;? tvueqi&it r;or;u;pon t&e
Zmwaqmirms; \ twp^{1/2}ur sm;Eiaygi;pyum wez;r&awmaom t&mwpcu vwu
wez;rxm;ci|uqon oabm o^{1/2}yuay:viatmi wijyxm;on/ vw\ twp^{1/2}u
wpcwn;u Zmwaqmit r;sl;r;sl;ajymi;í usywetp wuav; \ b0 tajymi;t v u
ou v u v i jrep m wpuuly;wpuu wijyom;on/ t&eZmwaqmiwp0;ci; \
jzp&y r sm;u t u s , ra&;b twp^{1/2}uay:1/2? voabm vobm0 ay:1/2 omaznily; Zmwvr;
on v i jrepma^{1/2}u v sm;om;on/ Zmwvr;wi ajypum;r sm;u xnoi;&müvn;
ajypum; \ oabm twi; pum;ajymly;v|i Zmwvr;ona&|o a^{1/2}u v sm;ajymi;v &r njzp
on/ usyweuav;on Zmwaqmiwpa , muly;wpa , mu \ usyweav;tay:
rEpouralumi pum;ajym|uqluly;onEi a&|o a^{1/2}u v sm;om;on/ rwnaom
Zmwaqmit r;sl;r;sl;w\ wnaom twp^{1/2}u u xi;ceay:vmatmi wijyEion twu
&n^{1/2}, cuay:viaom Zmwvr;jzpvmygon/ t&eZmwaqmirms; \ twp^{1/2}ur sm;u
wpcujci;? wpuujci; jc , re;jy^{1/2}zi Zmwvr;on v i jreou v upm a^{1/2}u v sm;om;
on/ tjypraom usyweav; (o) b0emc&aom usyweav;Ei vom; \ twu
tm;lyixm;on/ xt m;ly|iralumiyi usyweav; \ oo&m vnyu oaely;jzpaom
pmzwor sm;yiv|i usywetp wuav; \ tq;owem;ae&mu ovpw xuoevmlu

on/ t q;owv*i* xowEiqueu*i*vu q*i*;&aom? axmeaxme*v*r;av*u*m*u*&aom
re;*u*; \ u ,ci;pm*p*wjzi tem;owx*m*;on/ xre;*u*; \ $\frac{1}{2}$;om;ajzm*r*waom?
jzLpiaom? u ,ci;pmw&m;jyn0aom pwtv*r*sm;jzixrr;ly; uyweav;u zmatmuü
tem;ay;vuygon/

0w*w*i Zmwv*r*;[í zwaumi;atmi zew;rx*m*;aomvn; pma&o \ tEyn*m*
allumi Zmwv*r*;ygaely; vwi;ox*m*;aom talumi;t&mu wijyonZmwv*r*;onyi
pmzwo*t*m; pw0ipm;z ,jzpapon/ xopw0ipm;&jci;Ei t q;wiEpour&o cpm;
&jci;rm Zmwv*r*;wiyg0iaom ourZmwaqmi uywetpwuav;Ei t&eZmwaqmi
rsm; \ titm;alumijzpon/ aemuq; Zmwaqmi*r*e;*u*;rm t"uZmwaqmijzpon/
Zmwv*r*;u tajmi;t vjzpa*p*ly; vpwvEv;om;u*v*n; ajmi;vwnrway;Eiaom
Zmwaqmijzpygon/ uyweyjiZmwv*r*;on wplurzwrv*i* pve;woz ,jzply;
x0w*r*ay;aom b0toonvn; vUpwvEv;om;u twavsm;y;ui;piatmi jyjiy
ay;Eipr;&ygon/ xojzpa*p*&e Zmwv*r*;EiZmwaqmiu pma&ouqupyjy/í
o [Zmwjzpa*t*mi zew;x*m*;onu aw*u*&ygon/

2? 2/ v*r*;jzwu;aom Ev;om;

v*r*;jzwu;aom Ev;om;0w*w*u (1977)c? Zevxw aiwm&r*Zi;wi ri;v
a&om;c*i*;jzpygon/ pma&q&mri;von rnontalumi;t&mu*y*i a&apumr 'l
avmuu pwu;jziaygi;pyzew;&mü o $\frac{1}{2}$ yyjiy*v*ly; Epouz ,jzpv*m*on/ v*r*;ay:ü
a&ca&a&mi;aom rbraumiav;wpa ,muEi v*r*;ay:wiuwrea&mi;aom tar
rq;*u*;om&on re;ri ,av;wp0;w \ b0ci;wn&mr c*p*or;sm;b0o a&muom;
ontalumi;uyi ri;von zwci*p*z ,jzpatmi a&om;con/ armipon ar;ly;
em&yi;avmutlumwi o*t*arq;om;on/ tazvn;r&ay/ aocge;taru }armip} [l
trnay;con/ armipon q;avb&m;te; &omrewu (,ci&m;r;Ei ruEmc*i*;qi)
r[mAEivv*r*;ab; trw 1? 3? 13? 14 bwpum;rwwi*r*sm; wp0uwi a&ca&a&mi;
on/ armiptwu avmuwitpprew&m;on a&cw;Eia&ca&jzpon/ a&cw;on
ob0jzpon/ rw;on r[mAEivv*r*;wi uwrea&mi;on/ uwrea&mi; aomvn;
uwrerpm;b;ac/ armip \a&ca&ur wpaev*i* o;cutvum;aomuon/ armipEi
rw;on armipüaiwpuyaumu&aomtcg re[i;cg;wpu*y*z;0 ,í twwpm;on/
rw; \ar;aewi*v*n; re[i;cg;wpu*y*z;0 ,í twwpm;on/ rw; \rci ton;
toerrmaomalumi awmojye&on/ armipon rw;uvr;qw usecon/ rw; \
tarurw;u touav;q ,t& , rq;zuav; av;a ,mutaz w $\frac{1}{2}$ w*u*;wpa ,mu
Ei ay;pm;awmrn [owi;um;&on/ armiptx;alluu&on/ armiponq;av
b&m;ay:o wuly;qawmi;on/ rw;&eueo*j*yevmatmi vyay;yg [í jzpon/
rw;on w $\frac{1}{2}$ w*u*;Ei vurxyyxuajy;vmon/ armipEiyeaw*u*&mwi armipu
rw;uc*p*a&qon/ rw;u*v*n; vucvuon/ owEpa ,mu c*p*ojzponaewi

topviq; t0wtpm; rsm; u0wí weaqmiwiyawmü vnywlu on/ cpor; sm;
 jzponaeu trww&tjzp armipuaq; rialumix; on/ ar^{1/2}y? ton; yjrm; pu
^{1/2}yysm; ux; &epwu; y; r]]owc}}u olvuwx; rn [ajymqcon/

xZmwvr; wi qi; &om; vwe; pm; b0w vi, Ep0; cpßuuluon/ b0u
 tw^{1/2}e; ue&i; oa, mZOjzpluon/ qi; &on lum; ryiaysm&irrm; u rla0cpm; luon/
 xlaemu Zmwvr; obm0twi; awuqon/ uon/ rw; on rcirrmí &mojye&on
 vr; ce; uvn; xnoi; a&zuxm; on/ xvr; ce; rm rw; tm; rciu touav; q,
 ausm rq; zw^{1/2}wu; Ei ay; pm; rn [aomowi; jzpon/ armipvr; aq; emui&on/
 rw; Eiawlap alumi; q; avb&m; rm qawmi; &on/

rw; on &mrxuaj; vmlly; armipEijyeawlum cpor; sm; jzpon; luon
 Zmwvr; rm cpßuulu? u? aygi; orm^{1/2}; usZmwvr; yijzpon/ xorm^{1/2}; usZmwvr;
 uyi pmzwopwwi EpoulunE; rjzpa&e Zmwaqmi p^{1/2}ur; sm; u zew; , xm; on/
 Zmwvr; zwcspz, &vm&ontalumi; t&i; rm Zmwaqmiw\ p^{1/2}uvuPmrsm; yi
 jzpon/ x0wwwix; jcm; aom Zmwaqmizew; jci; jzi y&owwpruluon/
 Zmwaqmi\ x; jcm; aom ^{1/2}y&nt&ntao; &vi ZmwaqmiuZmwvr; u 0; aqmi
 om; on/ ri; v\0wvrsm; wi Zmwaqmirms; u orm; ^{1/2}; us cp? buulu? nm; ? u
 Zmwvr; utou0ií &ojrmuatmi 0; aqmi&on/ x0; aqmiom; aom Zmwaqmi
 Ep0; on x; jcm; aomZmwaqmirms; jzpaomvn; y&owtuutacsm tv txuwe;
 vmrsm; r [wlub trajc&majcyir&aom atmuq; tvmr vEpa, muizpygon/
 ol&mwiri; von Zmwaqmirms; \ titm; jzi Zmwvr; uououuvvu jrl; jrl;
 <u<uEi u^{1/2}Pm&ovn; ajrmu? [mo&ovn; ajrmuatmi zew; xm; onu awu&on/
 armipuzl&mü —

]]q; avb&m; te; &omrewu ruEmci; qi? r [mAE\vvvr; ab; trw 1?
 3? 13? 14 bwpum; rwwirms; wp0uon ola&ca& jzejzL; &mXmejzp
 on/}}

(pm — 13)

[orori, i, taetxm; u pum; v; cece xnxnji a&aomalumi &, arm
 &iily; z, jzpon/

pma&; oon armip\ a&ca&a&mi; yu —

]]ac; ajcwpc tay: wi oy; 0i; &on/ oy; 0i; ay: wi a&cuwi&e oqecg
 &on/ oqecgEi quvuwowiuav; wi a&ppo; c tqiqi&on/
 tay: q; a&ppxwi a&cw; tao; wpw; &on/ oqecgay: wi a&cw; u
 pyus, pjzi z; tyxm; on/}}

(pm - 13)

[o¹/₂yazma&om;xm;on/ armip\ b0vyie;u o¹/₂yazmxm;on/ armipon oy
ynmuem;rvn? a&cjzpyu em;rvn? a&cw;onob0/ a&ca&zi vtrsm;u
lir;at;apon/ armip\ oijyivUPmuvn; -

]]armipon ye\ / rn; \ / qyiny&e yuqr&aomallumi jzpavon/
oturm tzm&mtax;&maw& \ / xixm;jci;r [wygac/ wu ,
ayguilyaeaomallumi zmxm;jci;jzpavon/}} (pm - 13)

[a&zlxm;on/ xaemu pma&oon armipEi vuzuon rw;qon Zmwaqmi
u zew;wijyyeon/ rw;tallumi;u -

]]armiptallumi;ajymv\i rw;tallumi;yg&rn/ rw;rmcg;r&acs/ Or;Au
en;en;p \ / o&mwi0awmr0/ oqxm;on wrmo; xuawm;u;/
rmvumo;avmuawm&rn/ upqllr;u;pxm;aomtcg jym;Epq , we
tlumau;Eiwavon/ oom;rm;on rnnmac/ om;rwuaomallumi
oom;t&i;yi;rm;on t0ga&mijzpael / armipur a&uyxm;on [
xiravon/}} (pm - 14)

[o¹/₂yazmxm;on/ pma&q&mri;von Zmwaqmirsm;u zew;wijy&mü pmzwo \
tm¹/₂wi & , & , armarmEi x;x;qe;qe;jzpvmatmiz0n/ Zmwaqmiuyazm&mü
a& [euvn; taxmutuyjxm;on/ yptm;zi wrmo? rmvumo;wEi Ei; , 0í
upqjr;u jym;Epq , we tlumau;EiEi; , 0on/ om;rwuaomallumi om;rm;
0gaeonuyi yvv;rm;u a&uyxm;on [xirypon ta&tz0rm;allumi rw;on
pw0ipm;z , Zmwaqmiijzpon/ rw;on uwrea&mi;aomvn; uwrerpm;b;
yg [aom twitijzivn; u¹/₂Pmouz , jzpaon/ armip\ rw;tay:xm;aom
tc;puyazm&mü-

]]wpcuv\i wpq , ig;jym;wwweaom armip\ a&ca&u rw;on
wpaeo;cuavmu tvum;aomuon/ oa&mi;aom uwreur
armiptm;wpcgr\ rau;b;ac/ o&mwi armipaueyon/}} (pm - 14)

[a&zlon/ xonuyi pma&ou armip\ tc;p [a&zlon/ tveqi;&vaom
vr;ay:u a&ca&on av;Ei uwre0nav;w\ tjetve arwmw&m;u -

]]rw;? igyuqwpusy;u; aumu&w , / eibmpm;csiv ig0 , au;r , }}

]]igvm; v [mjiyaps;u acguqjy\wallumvn; pm;csi w , ? lly;awm zm v'g
vn; aomuci w , ? lly;awm}}

]] [m... 'avmu;u;awm igb , wwEiygrv? aumu&wmuwpu.ywn;
& , }}

]]ei u bmpm;csivq\ igpm;csi&majym&wmy? 'vvyav? eia&miga&m
pm;v\&atmi rel [i;cg;wpusyz;om;0 , lly; Epa , muwwpm;r , }}(pm- 14)

[aom Zmwu uav; rsm;? ajypum; rsm; u xnoi; xm; & m u^{1/2} Pmouz, ? lunE;
z, jzpapygon/ xtwyirw; u oar; aewivn; re[i; cg; wpu; yz; uo m0, í
twwpm; Eiluon/ rw; u oau; rntaumi; ajym& mü-

]] armip? eibmpm; rv igau; r, }}

]] tmv;? eib, we; u ig0, au; b; v\ v}}

]] wu, ajymwmyg [? 'aeigar; aeav }}

]] tr, ? eiu eiar; ae u ov\ vm; }}

]] owmayg [? puwibm 3& uaew? 'aey igta': u ajymvuw m? eiaum
eiar; ae u ov\ vm; }}

]] [iti; rob; }}

]] t'g xm; pr; yg0;? eibmpm; ci v }}

]] 'aygu xri; }}

]] [, ? t'gawm igvn; rwwEib; }}

]] 'v\ vyav? eia& m iga& m pm; v& atmi re[i; cg; wpu; yz; o m; 0, ly;
twwpm; luwmayg }}

(pm - 14)

[a& z\ xm; yg on/ xoEpa, muwi aiwpu; xuyí r& b; ac/ tpm; taom u
wivn; wpu; yz; xuyí rpm; Eia y/ o& mwi wp0; Eiw p0; tjetve arwm xm;
luon qi; & o m; jynow\ b0u o^{1/2} yazm on/ tcpu o^{1/2} yazm on/ u^{1/2} Pm vn;
ouly; lunE; p& m vn; aumi; aom Zmwaqmiw\ p^{1/2} utz\ rsm; u ajypum; rsm; jzi
ououvuvu wijxm; on/

ri; v\ 0w\ wi Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmitz\ w on xi; ri; av; vjci; r& b
ououvuvu & ae on/ xalumi vn; Zmwvr; on ououvuvu a& u\ v sm; ae
avon/ armipon rw; ucspontwu o0ewon/ xoabm u vn; -

]] rw; aem olum; v; a& m i; waumiawe oyta& mr0ie? owuajcov;
trw iaw }}

(pm - 15)

[ajym on/ trajc& majcr& aom armipu ajcov; trw iaw [ajymvujci; jzi u^{1/2} Pm
& oomru & , p& m ly; p& m vn; jzpapon/ armip\ o0ew pwav; rm aygaygyg; yg;
& , & , armarmEixron/ armipon xxuyí rajym& ay/ ajym& etceaw& ao; w, [ajzon/
xtcgwivn; pma& q& m ri; v u-

]] o& mwi tceEia& cw; on vurapmiac; }}

(pm - 15)

[jznpuay; vujci; jzi armip\ b0on yí& , armp& mjzpvmon/ u^{1/2} Pmoup& m
vn; jzpvmon/

pm&q&mri;von t veqi;&Er;yg;vly; t&, Eirvuatmi rrbm&maz
 pm;aom uaelu&aom vi, av;Ep0; \ b0taetxm;Ei arwmpwu o½yazmyrm
 ouvuaygyg;aomvn; u½Pm&oajrmuapon/ rw;uawmojyern taumi;
 Ewqupum; ajymontce;wi —

]] [a&mu&i igqpma&aem}}

]]rw;u acgi;cg on}}

]]bmjzpv/v [, }}

]]ra&csiygb;}}

]]a&yg [, ? bmjzpv/v}}

]]igr pmrwwb}}

]]eipmrwwb; [wvm;}}

]]at; eiaum}}

]]igvn; rwwb;}}

(w - 15)

[a&zlxm;on/ xjyipmxnyg [yi qxm;aomvn; armipwipmxn&e vypmr&
 ac/ armip\ae&mon treygr&/ vr;eygr&? &yuutrnr&ay/ treawm
 armiprm trajc&maicyi twnwur&yg/ &euer armipxo ay;ygqv/i armipxo
 rnoa&muynen; [a&zlxm;on/

pm&q&mri;von u, tm;u, u;ae&aom vi, av;Ep0; \ b0Eitcpu
 c:pp&m? oem;p&maumi;atmi a&om;Eicon/ ZmwaqmiwEi vuzuaom toi
 oPme? t0wtpm;? toÓP? ajypum;? cpm;rrsm;uvu vuzuzua&om;
 Eiralumi0won obm0u; &oajrmuon/ tve oem;p&maumi;on [a&p&m
 rvb tx;yi u½Pmoup&mb0rsm;u pmzwow em;vncpm;vm&on/ armipon
 rw;a, mums; , om;ly [um;aomtgcgcpm;ru-

]]a&ca&on tveat;puae \ / o&ion jcpjcpawmuyaeon/ a&cy;
 wia&puuav;aw uyaeluon/ armip\ruEmwi ac;puawuyae
 luon/ ir;cr;a&a&ca&? ir;cr;a&a&ca& t&iuowu<upmatmc
 on/ cawmratmEi iiiiui; wwqwpm&yaeon/}}

(pm-16)

[a&zwiijyxm;yg on/ a&cw;Eionb0u &ioeae&aom armipem;vn onrm
 a&cw;omjzpon/}} qaom ta&tzion Zmwaqmi \ b0u yíay:viapon/ armip
 on otaw;? oto? olcpm;rEi rw;twucpm;yu q;avb&m;& qi;wwpq
 a&wixium vutycs í qawmi;yEiazmijon/ armipu -

]]rw;u wynawm wu , cpygonb&m;? rw;&eue jyevmatmi vyay;
ygb&m;? w¹/₂wu;u aoatmi vyvuygb&m;}} (pm-16)

[tajmtqon ob0taetxm;Ei vuzuaomallumi & , arm&iy\;z , vn;jzp
on/ u¹/₂Pmouz , vn;jzpon/ armipurw; jyevmatcgwi cpa&qyuwiy
aomtcgwi -

]]rw;? igceajymwm b , v\}}

]]bmuv}}

]]ei iguijely; ['i;ry\Eib;vm;}} (pm - 16)

[jzpygon/ xtcgrw; \ &uao; uaeaom trt&mu ri;vu-

]]rw;u acgi;ixm;on/ olvuon;xuac;rm;u wwacmi;uav;jzi
x;xwaeon/]ajymyg [m]}/

]]ig rajymcib; [m]}}

]]bmjzpv\ [i]}}

]]aeraumi;v\}}

]] [i? [wvm;? atbp'aomurvm;? igajy;0 , vur , av}}

]]aeygap? atbp'u &iwew , [? ceq&marmiaq;ere0 , aomuxm;
w , }} (pm - 17)

[aom tajympum;rm;u vn; qi;&onlum;r luiemruav;rm;u azmjyaeygon/
atbp' 0 , wurn [ajmy? q&marmiaq;ere aomuxm;w , ajmyrm;jzi qi;&om;
vwe;pm;w\ b0uo¹/₂yazmxm;on/ weaqmire;vjynaewi rw;u tajzay;on/
rw;ajmyu -

]]igu vn; eiu ['i;jy\ygw , }} (pm - 17)

[ajmavon/ armipon yvuazmi;ay:wi ' ;axmuxicí q;avb&m;u
yqeaygu eawmavon/ weaqmire;vjynnwi cpojzpon txr; trwtjzp
qi;&aomvn; cpo b0u aysm&ipmqiEluyu-

]]rw; \ r;uEmwi aygi'gawaz;aeon/ armip \ r;uEmrmvn; aygi'gaw
az;aeon/ owonowtzt topviq;aom t0wtpm;rm;u 0wxm;
luon/ (pm - 17)

pma&q&mri;von Zmwaqmiw\ ¹/₂yt oi? t0wtpm;? tajmtq tij\tr
rm;u ow&ywnaeaomb0p¹/₂uEi vuzuatmia&z\Eliaomallumi Zmwaqmip¹/₂u
o¹/₂yyjiy;v\i Zmwvr;on toi , w&aejci;jzpon/ cpojzponae txr; trw
tjzp armipu aq;rialumix;von [aom pwu;av;rmvn; obm0uson/ armip

on]owc}} [x;vuyji qí;&aomb0xr cpou&atmi&mazEion avmu"u
&&ipm&iqiom;rn armipjzpalumi; xi&m;apygon/ pma&q&mri;von tve
qí;&aom ow\ b0uaeaymatmi? vyon [cpm;&atmi yazma&zlav&ygon/

vr;jzwu;aom Ev;om;0wwav;on qí;&om;w\ cpiu\uji;? uumici;?
aygi;oi;ji;qon omreZmwvr;omjzpon/ xZmwvr;wi xnoi;xm;aom
Zmwaqmirms;on rcr;om? racsmvaomvn; pw0ipm;z ,aumi;atmi pma&ou
ae&mwu zew;wiyEiontwu Zmwaqmi p½utm;aumi;onEitr Zmwvr;
onvn; y&owpwwi aygaygyg;ygi;wpxiwn;zwí ri;aiEiatmijzpapon
0wwav;jzpygon/

txuazmjyypma&q&mri;v\ uwyeyji? vr;jzwu;aom Ev;om;0ww
av;rm;\ Zmwvr;on rqe;opvyg/ ½;½;pi;pi;Zmwvr;uyi pmzwow/pwü
b0iuEpouatmi pma&ou Zmwaqmiw\lp½uu wpy'Eiwp'y'zew;y rw
ujym;atmi a&om;jc , re;ji;ji;zi pw0ipm;z , 0wirms; jzpvmapon u aw\&ygon/

0wwirms;wi Zmwvr;rygb 0w\jzpEion/ Zmwaqmirygb 0wirjzpei
qxm;onuaw\&on/ tcsUvn; Zmwvr;? Zmwuur&b Zmwaqmiw\ wp0;
ci;p½utrt&mirms;u a&om;jci;ji;zi 0wirjzpei [vn; qluygon/ rnoyiqap
Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmion wpcuwpctjetvequo ,tm;jy\um 0wwaumi;
wpy'jzpe &ywn aeon [q&ygon/

jci o;oycu

pma&q&mri;von 0wwirms;ua&om;&mü v\avmuyw0e;usiwi trwrxi
awjri&aom tallumi;t&mirms;u 0wwaumi;av;rm;tjzp puse&patmi zew;wiy
Eiojzpon/ uwyeyji0w\on aelp0Eitr uwywai pulav;rm; wpvur
wpvuo a½vsm;a&maeon/ uwyetoprsm;u wez;xm;luaomvn; ta[mi;?
tEr;? tpw? tjywrsm;ur wez;ron [qum rrwvuü rxm;v\uay/ xoabm
on vwi;oly;oabmjzpon/ oly;om;oabmwpcuyi pma&ou pw0ipm;z ,
aumi;aom Zmwvr;wpy'jzpvmap&e ourZmwaqmi uwyewav;u tajcwní
t"uZmwaqmi tjzp ajcaxmuroeom taru;uzew;um Zmwvr;qixm;ygon/
t&eZmwaqmitjzp vwe;pm;trsl;rslyg0ion/ xvwe;pm;rm;on vloabm?
vUobm0? vUtwuu ,pm;jy\laom Zmwaqmirms;jzpygon/ Zmwaqmiwu zpn;
zew;y x;jcm;aomallumi Zmwvr;ygaom 0w\laumi;wpy' jzpvmap&ji;jzpygon/

vr;jzwu;aom Ev;om;0wwrmvn; vr;ay:wiaw\&ww? jri&wwaom
qí;&om;vwe;pm; vi ,av;rm;\ b0Eitcpu rvaomvn; Epouvmatmi
pma&ou zew;wiyxm;onu aw\&ygon/ o\Zmwaqmirms;onvn; Zmwvr;
Eivuzuly; rar&up&maumi;on Zmwaqmirms;jzpygon/

**xo t m; zi ri; von Zmwvr; u0; pm; ay; í rp0; pm; b b0 \ t u uwp u u
u o m tal u mi; t & m Ei q a v s m on Z m w a q m i r s m; u o ½ y r e j z p a t m i z e w; í a & ; o m;
w i j y a v & o n u a w l & y g o n /**

e*;

**0 w w a & ; z l & m w i Z m w v r ; E i Z m w a q m i o n o [Z m w j z p & e v t y y g o n /
p m a & ; o o n p w u ; a u m i ; v l i a u m i ; o a v m u w u , a v m u w i a w l & a o m j z p & y u a v ;
w p u u u y i , í 0 w w a u m i ; j z p a t m i z e w ; E i l u y g o n / Z m w v r ; E i Z m w a q m i w
o n w p c E i w p c q u o , l y ; w p c u w p c u t a x m u t u j y j c i ; j z i 0 w a u m i ; j z p v m
o n q o n o a b m u t j c m ; a o m 0 w w r s m ; j z i v n ; a v v m E i y g o n /**

u r ; u ; p m & i ;

ri; v / 2018 I 0 w w a y i ; c i y (' w , t l u r) l & e u e ? i g w p m a y y E y w u l

j r e r m p m t z l I 1991 I j r e r m t b " m e l & e u e ? j r e r m p m 0 ; p ; X m e l

x i v i ; l 1979 I b m o m j y e 0 w w w ? 0 w w p m w r ; r m ; (' w , t w) l & e u e ? p m a y A r m e y E y w u l

King, Sophie, 2008, How to Write Short Story In Particular. Basion, Houghton Mifflin Company.

Laurie Alberts, 2010, Showing & Telling, Writers Digest.com Cincinnati, Ohio.

Lucke, Margaret, 1998, Schaum's Quick Guide To Writing Great Short Stories, New York Me Grow, Hill,
11, West 19th street.

Novakovich, Josip, 1995, Ficition Writer's Work Shop, Ohio: Story Press Cincinnati.

Mornor, Kathleen and Raush Ralph, 1998, NTC's Dictionary of Literary Terms, Chicago NTC Publishing Group
Lincolonwood, Illinois.

jyn oc:paom tEynmonrsm;pm tyr vxa': t rm \ a&; [e

t tre*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on vxa':trm\ tajypum;ji a&;om;xm;aom a&;[etalumi;u
o½Ei&Ei qavsmreuepm to;jy/a&;om;Ei&e &n½, íwiyxm;aom pmwr;
jzpygon/ a&;[eynmizi avv&mwi armiciri("Ejzl)\ a&;[eynme'ge;u
to;jy/í vxa':trm\ jynoc:paom tEynmonrsm; pmtyu tavvmctjzp
owrwavvmygon/ ppmwr;wi pum;o;Ee;[e? Oguszl[e? tvumo;[eEi
tqutpyrsm;u avv&wiyxm;ygon/ p ppmwr;yg wiycursm;on tajm[eji
a&;om;xm;aom a&;[eynmtalumi;u aicajcjrjrp o½Eirnizply; jrermpay
a&;om;rtwu taxmutuijEirn jzpygon/

aomcupum;v;rsm; -pum;o;Ee;[e? Oguszl[e? tvumo;[eEi tqutpy

e'ge;

pu;m;ajy (o) uAsm [on pmaytzl tElwpc ay:aygurwi pma&;o? a&;on
talumi;t&mEi pmzwo [aom t*g&yrm; yg0iaeonu awl½&ygon/ xt*g&yrm; \
wpcEiwpc tjetve quo,ron tveta&;ygygon/ si;t*g&yrm; \ oabm
obm0uvu ívn; a&;[etrsl;sl; ujym;om;Eiygon/ a&;[euavv&mwi vwp0;
ci;\ a&;[euvn;aumi;? vwppwpzlc;si;\ a&;[euvn;aumi;? vrs;wprsl;\
a&;[euvn;aumi; avv&Eiaom ynm&yjzpygon/

a&;[ewi pma&;o \apwem? &n½, cu? oabmxm;ponwuvu í talumi;
t&mwprsl;wn;yi a&;[etrsl;sl; ujym;om;Eiygon/ pu;m;ajyua&;om;&mwi pma&;o
on rr\qvcuu pmzwox reue½i;vi;pm? wu:ajyppm a&m u½Ei&e a&;om;
luon/ vxa':trm\ jynoc:paom tEynmonrsm; pmtyonvn; pmzwox
reue½i;vi;pm a&m u½Ei&e tajypum;ji a&;om;xm;aom pmtywptyjzponu
awl½&ygon/

1/ a&;[e [on

vy*(vwp0;Eiwp0; 0wpm;qí, ir? aexipm;aomur? ajymqquqr? vy½m;
om;vmrponwwi wp0;Eiwp0; ujym;jcm;em;luygon/ xltw pmaya&;om;&mwi

* a'guwm? vuaxmuuxu? jrermpmXme? &wemywuov

vn; acwumv t v u? ae&ma' o t v u? cpm; r t v u a& [e t r s; r s; ujym; l u o n u a w l & y g o n /

a& [e E i y w o u í NTC's Dictionary of literary Terms **w i**

a& [e q o n r m Z m w a q m i \ p ½ u a z m & m w i p m a & o \ a j y m [e u q v o n / a& [e w i p w u ;? t p t p 0? p u m ; v ; a ½ ; c ; , r ? e r w y ? 0 g u s z l y ? e & x y w v v a & j c i ;? t q u t p y ? t o t a v ; t a y g ? t a v ; x m ; w i j y r ? p n ; ½ ; r E i a v o w y g 0 i o n /¹

[z i q x m ; y g o n /

q & m b u ; a r m i c i r i ("E j z l) u

p u m ; a j y t z l w p c u a v v m & m ü t y i ; E p y i ; c í a v v m E i y g o n / b m u a & o m ; o n [a o m t y i ; E i b , v a & x m ; o n [a o m t y i ; w j z p y g o n / b m u [a o m t y i ; o n t a l u m i ; t & m E i q i í b , v [a o m t y i ; o n a & [e E i q i o n [a , b , s t m ; j z i q E i y g o n / r e y g o n / p m w p y ' \ a & [e [o n x p m u b , v a & x m ; o n [a o m o a b m y i j z p y g o n /²

[w i j y x m ; y g o n /

q & m r r r ; a j r u

& o p m a y a & o o n t a l u m i ; w & m ; E i v u z u í q a q m i r ½ a o m u , y i a & [e ½ & e v t y y g o n / a & [e o n y i p m a & o \ p w ? p m a & o \ a p w e m ? p m a & o \ c p m ; r r s m ; j z p a e a o m a l u m i j z p y g o n / x p w ? x a p w e m ? x c p m ; r r s m ; u a & [e j z i y i p m z w o x o t a & m u y a q m i í p r 0 i y s l E a p r n j z p y g o n /³

[í z i q ½ i ; j y x m ; y g o n /

x l a l u m i a & [e [o n p m a & o \ y i u p ½ u y i j z p y g o n / p m a & o w p 0 ; E i w p 0 ; y i u p ½ u o b m 0 r w n l u a o m a l u m i a & [e r s m ; v n ; u j y m ; j c m ; e m ; l u y g o n /

2/ v x a' : t r m \ t w l y w t u s 0 ;

v x a' : t r m u o u & m Z (1915) c? E 0 i b m v (29) & u ? w e v m a e w i r E a v ; l r k u * E e & y w i a r ; z m ; c y g o n / z c i r m 0 ; x i ? r c i r m a' : p j z p í a r ; c i ; (12) a , m u w i p w w a j r m u j z p o n / t r n & i ; r m t r m j z p y g o n / (1920-23) w i [r ½ ; a u s m i ; [a c : a o m w ½ w w e ; t r s ; o r ; a e ½ i e , a u s m i ; w i ' w , w e ; t x y n m o i , c y g o n / t r s ; o r ;

¹ Morner & Raush, 1998, 214.

² **c i r i ? a r m i ("E j z l) ? 2004? 255/**

³ **r ; a j r ? r ? 2009? 312/**

ae½ie , au_{smi}; yuaoma_umi (1923-31)wi ww , we;r e0rwe; t x_{ABM} au_{smi};ü
quv uynmoi , con/ (1933)wi A [tr_{sk};om;au_{smi};r (10)we; at mijricygon/

(1933-35)wi rEav; Oypmaumvyo_l wua&mucygon/ (1934)wi j]azaz
jzl;o}} [aom aq_{mi};yg;u yxrq;a&om;cygon/ (1936)wi &euewuov bat
atmuwe; wua&muaep0umvrpí t;a0r*Zi;? Bu;ym;a&r*Zi;? b_m;rm; *sme , wwi
civ0i;? jrrÍltrn_{jzi} 0w_l? aq_{mi};yg;rsm; pwia&om;cygon/ ti;v_{sm};aq_{mi} o [m ,
Ei pmzwoi; twi;a&rl;tjzp xr;aqmicygon/ 'w , au_{smi};om;oyw_u;wi
vn; yg0icygon/ wuov jrerpum;ajymlyiywi jci;lum;r_{ru};Ei tw yxrq
aizv_m;u &½cygon/

(1939) E0ib_m (13)wi Bu;ym;a&0;vEi vuxycygon/ (1964) arvwi
j]jynoc:paom tEynmon_{rsm};}}pm tyu a&om;xwa0cygon/ xpm tyon jrerm
, Oaus;rEi tEynmqi&mpmay yxrqu&½cygon/ vxa':trmon (1988) wi
rEav; jA [p&vr_{una}&t oi;ßu;ü 0;aq_{mi}em , u tjzp aq_{mi}½ucygon/

vxa':trmon civ0i;? Zrl'ygatmixe;? zciatmiEi? z;omatmi? jrrÍl?
trm (wuovoywarmuau_{smi};o)? ti;v_{sm};au_{smi};aq_{mi}owp0;? vxa':trm
[aom uavmitrnrsm;jzi v;ci;pm ty_{rsm};? owi;pmacgi;ßu;rsm;? aq_{mi};yg;rsm;?
bomjye0wwrsm;? yiua&0wwrsm;? ½yyv_{rsm};? trmp_{rsm};u a&om;cygon/

vxa':trmon tou (93)Ept½ , (2008) {lyv (7)&u ee_u (8)em& (37)
repwi Ev;a&m*gjzi u , vetepa&mucygon/4

3/ jynoc:paom tEynmon_{rsm}; pm ty_r vxa':trm \ a& [e

jynoc:paom tEynmon_{rsm}; pm tyon tEynm½irsm;ta_umi;u a&om;x_m;
aom vxa':trm \ pm ty_{rsm};teu xi½_m;aom pm tywptyjzpygon/ (1964)wi
jrerm , Oaus;rEi tEynmqi&mpmay yxrq& pm tywptyvn; jzpygon/ xpm ty
wi owi;ßu;on ri;or;rax;av;? ½yao;ri;or; q&myßu;? jrajcusi; railr_{li}?
aumvypeac: rjrvi? aer_{sk};Avausm ob_l& ½mpm;peaA'g? ee;awma½_lq&mwi? to
ri;or; avbmwrjr&iEi lrl_lrlir;w\ tEynmvy½_m;rrsm;? tEyn tay:x_m;½aom
oabmx_m;c , curs_m;u a&om;x_m;ygon/

3[?] 1/ pum;o;Ee; [e

pu_m;o;Ee; [eq&mü pu_m;v_{rsm};u rnorny o;Ee;x_m;onu qv_{jci};
jzpon⁵

[q&mßu;ar_{mi}ciri ("Ejzl)u zi q½_i;jyx_m;ygon/

⁴ p twywtu0;u yawmuyiop r*Zi;Ei 0i;wi \ b0Eipmay&up_{rsm}; pm tywr u;um;ygon/

⁵ ciri? ar_{mi} ("Ejzl)? 2011? 63/

jrajcusi; railrli \ tEynmatmijriru a&om;&mwí

railrii $\frac{1}{2}$;atmiuucyaw pvr;c&yawu lrea& $\frac{1}{2}$ ua& ajymjyrnoaw
, ct x 'Eia'; $\frac{1}{2}$ ygaon⁶

[a&om;xm;ygon/]lrea& $\frac{1}{2}$ ua&? 'Eia'; [aom tajymo;pum;v;rsm; o;Ee;xm;
onu awl&ygon/]lrea& $\frac{1}{2}$ ua& [aom tajymo;pum;v;allumi jrajcusi; railrliEi
ywouvi c;uL; írq;? ajymírq;? Or;ajrmuOr;omjzpírq;? lunE; írq;Eiatmi
 $\frac{1}{2}$ aeluaom y&ow\ pwcpr;rm ay:vivmly; pmzwow\ pwEv;uyi ywizpap
ygon/]'Eia'; [aom tajymo;pum;v;allumi jrajcusi;railrii cpcijrWE;luaom
y&owtitm;uivn; ojrici&ygon/ i, $\frac{1}{2}$, $\frac{1}{2}$;rup0u ri;or;u $\frac{1}{2}$;atmiuuc
yrm;u u;&iaomt $\frac{1}{2}$, x lrea& $\frac{1}{2}$ ua& ajymjyEijci;rm ri;or; \ tEynmt&ntao;
u acwoacwom;wi;u vucluíomjzpygon/ t $\frac{1}{2}$, ra $\frac{1}{2}$;u txilu;av;pm;
jrWE;u ívn; jzpygon/ x tajymo; pum;v;allumi tEynmuzew;oEi tEynmu
cpcijrWE;owum;wi; $\frac{1}{2}$ aom lunE;z, arwmoauwuvn; o $\frac{1}{2}$ yay:apygon/

xijijrajcusi;railrion yculrlo om;a&muuyp0 xlrtrtxuwe;
aumi;om;rsm;on np0ylunaeluaomallumi aumi;reatmirwuluay/ xallumi
aumi;tyq&m&u;u ycul ta&yíEiawly; yrersm;yway;yge awmi;qavon/
ta&yíu wpvv;uiyaeon railrli \Zmwu yreywvuavon/ jrajcusi;
railrion quíra&aomallumi aemuq;nEwquytajzi uaomtcg y&owu;
u tm;ay;yu

yrer&awmí railrirm quruEiawmojzi jyeawmrn [aemuq;n
tjzp Ewquyurnqí uontcg railrli \ ton;py&owu;u
caeatmivmí lunluon⁷

[a&om;wijxm;ygon/

jrajcusi;railri \ tEynmutm;ay;luaom y&owtitm; rsm;jym;onu]cae
atmi} [aom tajymo;pum;v; o;Ee;xm;allumi; awl $\frac{1}{2}$ &ygon/ x tajymo;allumi
jrajcusi;railrii $\frac{1}{2}$ jynvcaeatmi tm;ay;luaom y&owtitm; rsm;jym;ru xi $\frac{1}{2}$ m;
ay:viapygon/ jrajcusi;railrli \ tEynmt&ntci;allumiivn; y&owrsm;pm \
cpcijrWE;r? tm;ay;ruc, Eijci;vn; jzpygon/

wpze tori;or; avbmwrjr&ion taetxitajymtqü pn;ur; $\frac{1}{2}$ o
jzpalumi;u

vjuawuouyppvucw ajymonuivn;ouciirjay⁸

⁶ trm? a': (vx)? 199? 170/

⁷ trm? a': (vx)? 199? 140/

⁸ , i; -? 387/

[a&;om;xm;ygon/ xta&;tom;wi vxa':trmon]yppvucw} [aom tajymo;
pum;v; o;Ee;xm;onu awl^{1/2}&ygon/ ntcer;a&miatmuwi vjyur;Eiwí
ujyazmajz to;awmc&aom tñirri;or;wpa , muijzpaomvn; pn;ur;½pm? taE
oumu;pm ajymqjy/raexiwwaom avbmwrjr&i\ p^{1/2}uobm0rm xi^{1/2}m;vmyg
on/ jyu v;jzpaomvn; ri;or;u wez;rxm; *Poum*ui*;r vtxitjriao;p&m
jzpavmuatmiajmonu cirjyalumi;awl&ygon/ xlaalumi vjyur;u;vn; rjr&i
tay: wez;xm;av;pm;aeonoabm ay:viaply; rjr&i\ u , u*uiw*&m;Ei *Poum
vn; jriwu vmapygon/ , aeacwri;or;rsm; tw , oiaomtcu;vn; jzpygon/
ñi;tji

rjr&iu wu , buuo? aovatmibuuoaw trsm;u;½cygon/ xo
rsm;rma [;vm;0g;vm; umvom;rsm; r[wu⁹

[a&;om;xm;&mwí]aovatm*i*?]a [;vm;0g;vm;} [aom tajymo;rsm;u awl^{1/2}&ygon/
xtajymo;rsm;alumi rjr&iu buuEpuor;sm;r rjr&i\ tajym? tq? tu? tvw
wi , pr;um ½;½;r;r; pvr;wyrueaom vi , uav;rsm;r [wb o\ tEynm?
u , u*uiw*&m;wtay:wi av;pm;wez;xm;um EpoujrwE;í & , yiqi vaom vu;
vaumi;y*vrsm;jzpalumi; ujym;pm oomvmapygon/

xlaem u avbmwrjr&ion i , p0uyi tEynm tawltu^{1/2}owp0; jzpalumi;u
rjr&irm obir;½;yijzpí tuu i , p0uyi rbEpyg;xu rup&n
em;&n0jci;jzi wwcon¹⁰

[azmjyxm;ygon/ xazmjycuwi]rup&nem;&n0} [aom "avo;pum;v;o;Ee;
xm;onu awl&ygon/ tñum;tjrir;sm;ci; tawturbur;sm;ci;u]rup&n em;&n0} [ac:
ygon/

rjr&ion obir;½;xr qi;ouvmaomallumi tuynmui , p0uyi rb
Epyg;xr tñum;tjritawltu(rsm; &½callumi; wipm;o;xm;ci;jzpygon/ xto;
alumi avbmwrjr&ion yg&r^{1/2}ijzpon tji r;½;AZEiyw0e;u;i\yy; tm;jznr
alumi tEynmt&ntao; jyn0owp0;jzpalumi; oomxi^{1/2}m;vmapygon/

xjiyvxa':trmu]ñrñir;]aqmi;yg;wi taemuEiirsm;ü oci;wpy'jzpv
ap&etwu w;v;u^{1/2}mazo? pmom;½m í ou;a&pyo? w& , mw;rwo [í owm0e
Eio vyaqmilu&alumi; a&;om;xm;ygon/ q&mlir;rnr *wouvn;oyi^{1/2}m&on/
oci;pmom;u;vn; oyia&;&on/ prcec&müvn; oyivyaqmi&avon/ xlaumi
ñrñir;on *wwpczew;&mwí tptq;wm0e , &o;jzpalumi;u

⁹ trm? a': (vx)? 1997? 388/

¹⁰ , i; -? 365/

q&mlir;rm aowmarmu xu&onrru ywpmcmzsmor; t xwm0e , &
o jzpavon¹¹

[a&;om;wiyxm;yg on/

x ta&;t om;wi ywpmcmzsmor; [aom "avo;pum;uaw^{1/2}&yg on/ yly;í
qi;0i;rArsm;wi uyxm;aom ywpmrsm;ucmici;? y lun&eci;xm;aom zmrm;or;ici;
u jywpmcmzsmor; } [ac:yg on/ jly;q;ont x? q;ce;wiatmi } [t"ym , &yg on/
Zmwobirsm;r ay:aygu vmaom pum;v;jzpygon/ xpum;o;allumi llrllir;on *w
wpczew;&mwi tpr tq;wi rrwp0;wn;om vyaqmiojzpallumi; oomvmapyg
on/ tEynmwi bupx;cleaom ynm^{1/2}iwp a , mutjzp xi^{1/2}m;vmygon/ xo
tbubur jynpaomynm^{1/2}iwp a , mu jzpjci;allumi vyie;tpr tq;x vyaqmi
ay;Eijci;? wm0e , Eijci;vn;jzpallumi; aw^{1/2}&yg on/

vxa':trmon jynocpaom tEynmonrsm; pmt ywitalajymo;pum;v;rsm;?
"avo;pum;v;rsm;u oae&mEio t0iciuo;xm;on a&; [euaw^{1/2}&yg on/
tajymo;pum;v;rsm;on aep0ajymqa&;om;o;Ee;aeaom pum;v;rsm;jzpon twu
pm [erm aygyg;ouvu aely; tEynm^{1/2}irsm; \ tEynmaqmi^{1/2}ucursm;rm vn; tou
0i^{1/2}ioaeon u awlEiygon/ "avo;pum;rsm;onvn; vwaep0 ajymaeaom
pum;rsm;wi tom;uaeici;? vxa':trm \ pum;o;ur;uijci;allumi tEynm^{1/2}i
w \ tEynmt&ntao;rsm;rm ay:vixi^{1/2}m;vmonu aw^{1/2}&yg on/

3? 2/ 0guzU [e

0gu:son wp0;Eiwp0; quo , &mwi tajccusaom tpwtyi; (, ep) jzpyg
on/¹² vxa':trmon jynocpaom tEynmonrsm; pmt ywitalumi;t&mEi
qavsmvuzuaom 0guwu ae&mwus a&;om;xm;onu aw^{1/2}&yg on/

jrajcusi;raillrion w& , mtrsl;rsl;w;wwyu jyq&mü yxr0guuwi uwm;y'
u azmjyí aemu0gursm;wi uwm;jrlyxm;on tqiweqmrygaom 0guzU [eu
aw^{1/2}&yg on/

raillrion ywvm;vn; w;wwon/ bm*smvn; qwwon/ pE , m;
vn; w;Eion/ apmi;uawm em;o^{1/2}om^{1/2}on¹³

[0guwrsm;jzi a&;om;xm;aom a&; [euaw^{1/2}&yg on/ ^{1/2}i;vi;ajyyp on 0guw
to;allumi pm [eouvvumly; jrajcusi;raillrii \ w& , mtrsl;rsl;u ur;uiipm
w;cwEionpr;&n? em;vnEion t&ntci;wrm xi^{1/2}m;ay:vivmygon/

¹¹ trm? a': (vx)? 1997? 431/

¹² ciri? armi ("EjzL)? 2011? 112/

¹³ trm? a': (vx)? 1997? 161/

ri;or;wpa, muon tuynmwionru w&, mrs;pu em;vnEiei;pmw;cwEi
on p, pynm^{1/2}iwp0; jzpoialumi;u ruarmuacwtEynm^{1/2}iw av;pm;tw,
pw0ipm;vattmi wijyEiaom 0guwa&; [eu avvmaw^{1/2}&ygon/

lee;awma^{1/2}q&mwii}aqmi;yg;wi q&mwion jzwx;ÓPaumi;oizpalumi;
oci;a&;tvejrealumi;? wpcgwp&wi oci;wpy'u wpxiwn;a&;pyay;Ei
alumi;wu

q&mwirm wcPywÓPaumi;oizpon/ oci;a&;tvejreon/
oci;wpy'u wpcgwp&wici;oa^{1/2} wpxiwn;Ei a&;pyay;Eiojzp
on¹⁴

[0guwrsm;jzi a&;om;xm;ygon/

0guwrsm;quum a&;om;xm;aomallumi q&mwii\ tEynmpr;aqmiEir
t&ntci;rm;rm yíxi^{1/2}m;vmygon/ yiuÓPxuoeowp0;tjzp ay:viatmi
azmjyEiaom 0guwa&; [eu aw^{1/2}&ygon/

lowi;u;on ri;or;rax;av;aqmi;yg;wi Zmwca;wi awúri&on
ri;or;rax;av;\ u, [etaetxm;u

ri;om;tyg;wi &y&onjzpa? vjyutyg;wi &y&onjzpa&yae v*i*
rax;av;u b, awmraicpr&y? rwrwu;vn;rae? aicwpbuu zaemi
u<uí 'uñw;u, uav;u, íxm;ly;r acgi;uav;uygarmí&yon¹⁵

[0gu^{1/2}njzi a&;om;xm;aom a&; [eu aw^{1/2}&ygon/

x0gu^{1/2}nzú [ewi jzpa...jzpa? v*i*? í? ly;? r} [on pum;qursm;jzi
aygi;pn;a&;om;xm;aom 0gu^{1/2}njzpalumi;awú&ygon/]b, awmraicpr&y?
]rwrwu;vn;rae} [tajymo;pum;v;rm; o;Ee;í tq;c0bwrygb a&;om;xm;
aom 0gu^{1/2}zú [eu aw^{1/2}&ygon/ tajymo;pum;v;rm; o;Ee;a&;om;xm; aomallumi
ri;or;rax;av;on Zmwca;wi rnontEynm^{1/2}irsm;Ei , 0í&yaeonjzpa
u, taetxm;rm EUEliaEmi;aEmi;Ei &yaeon [eyerm xi^{1/2}m;ay:vivmygon/

ri;or;\ rcw^{1/2}ú&yaeon [etrt&muvn;]zaemiu<u?]'uñw?]u,
uav;u,]?]acgi;uav;arm} [aom 0guwrsm;jzi quumquum a&;om;xm;onu
avvmaw^{1/2}&ygon/ xlaumi ri;or;rax;av;\ uEUuv [eyetrt&mav;rm
pmzwo\pwrupwi jria, miivmapygon/ ri;or;wpa, mutwu ta&;ygao
[eyetrt&mu azmaqmi&mwii wpzuwpvr;r taxmutuijyaeom 0gu^{1/2}zú [e
qEiygon/

¹⁴ t rm? a': (v x)? 1997? 309/

¹⁵ t rm? a': (v x)? 1997? 20/

3? 3/ t v u m o; [e

t v u m r m [t v u m & } [a o m y g v p u m; u j r e r m r j y \ x m; j c i; j z p í] w e q m q i j c i; }?
[t q i w e q m] [t " y m , & y g o n / ¹⁶ v x a': t r m \ j y n o c s p a o m t E y n m o n r s m; p m t y
w i t q i w e q m r s m; j z i a 0 a 0 q m q m a &; o m; x m; a o m [e r s; u v n; a w ^{1/2} & y g o n /

] o w i; u; o n r i; o r; r a x; a v; } a q m i; y g; w i r a x; a v; \ u E & m u [e u
a z m j y & m ü w u , x y a w m r n i u u o ¹⁷

[c i; E i; a &; o m; x m; o n u a w ^{1/2} & y g o n / r a x; a v; u E & m u a e o n [e t r t & m
(t E i; c) u x í y & e t w u t a w m i y u c w a e o n i u \ t r t & m (t E i;) E i c i; E i;
a &; o m; x m; y g o n / x o c i; E i; x m; a o m a l u m i r i; o r; r a x; a v; \ u E & m u u a e o n
[e r m p m z w o \ p w r s u p w i j r i a , m i v m a p y g o n / r u j r i 0 y r m j z i c i; E i; a &; o m;
x m; j c i; a l u m i p m z w o t m; ^{1/2} i; v i; v , u p m j r i a , m i v m a p a o m t v u m o; [e y i
j z p y g o n /

] t o r i; o r; a v b m w r j r & i } a q m i; y g; w i r s u a r m u a c w t E y n m ^{1/2} i r s m; o n j y n o
r s m; t m; u j y a z m a j z a o m t c g t a 0; r y l u n j y n o r s m; u o c i; o y y o o r l u m; & y u

j c i j r n o a v m u ¹⁸

[c i; E i; a &; o m; x m; a o m 0 y r m t v u m o; [e u a w ^{1/2} & y g o n /

r s u a r m u a c w t E y n m ^{1/2} i r s m; o n t a 0; r j y n o r s m; l u m; a t m i r o q E i a o m t o
(t E i; c) u j c i y 0 a o m t c g l u m; & a o m t o (t E i;) E i c i; E i; a &; o m; x m; o n u a v v m
a w ^{1/2} & y g o n / x a l u m i r s u a r m u a c w t E y n m ^{1/2} i w \ t o l o Z m r ^{1/2} y r m a y: v i
x i ^{1/2} m; v m y g o n / v x a': t r m o n v t r s m; o e m; v n E i a o m j c i j r n o E i c i; E i;
a &; o m; x m; a o m a &; [e u a w ^{1/2} & y g o n /

x j y i] l r r l i r; } a q m i; y g; w i q & m l l r l i r; \ c E m u , r m a o; a o; o , o , ^{1/2} o n /
u e; r m a &; r a u m i; a o m t c g c E m u , r m y í y i a o; í c y c y v y v y ^{1/2} y u

q i e i; , y v ¹⁹

[c i; E i; a &; o m; x m; a o m t v u m o; [e u a w ^{1/2} & y g o n /

l r r l i r; \ c E m u , o n u e; r m a &; r a u m i; a o m a l u m i y í y i y g; y g; v v s ^{1/2} y (t E i; c)
u r v u y i j y m; u y a e a o m , y a w m i o n q i e i; x m; a o m a l u m i y í y i j y m; u y a e y
(t E i;) E i c i; E i; a &; o m; x m; o n u a w ^{1/2} & y g o n / x a l u m i l r r l i r; \ u e; r m a &;
r a u m i; p 0 ^{1/2} a e a o m c E m u , y o P m e r m p m z w o \ p w w i j r i a , m i v m a p y g o n /

¹⁶ c i r i ? a r m i (" E j z l) ? 2011 ? 150 /

¹⁷ t r m ? a ' : (v x) ? 1997 ? 21 /

¹⁸ - , i ; - ? 369 /

¹⁹ - , i ; - ? 484 /

u, yiwxioyrmjzi ci;Ei;a&;om;Eiaom vxa':trm \ tvumo;Eirpr;&nrm
av;pm;tw, z, aumi;vygon/

xlaemu jee;awma^{1/2}Uq&mwijaqmi;yg;wi q&mwion uvee, cslqeuia&;
twu trsl;om;a&;u vUaqmaom? e, cslwuyu axmucaom? Zmwao;Zmwrm
wu<uapao oc;ism;u a&;pyou;um jynoEitw vuwwuyOiaom tEynm
^{1/2}iwp0;jzpon/ jrermEiion uvee, cslvuatmu uia&muaecsewi e, cslu
qeui vaom wuyOivaomqErsm; w;ym;vmaeonu

uvee, cslqeuia&; 'a& ²⁰

[tvumo; a&;om;xm;onu awU&yggon/

e, cslu wuvaom qEon tceEitr qji;xepmizpay:vmjci; (tEi;c) u
w&y&wu vmaom 'a&(tEi;)Ei xywy a&;om;xm;aom ^{1/2}yu tvumo; [eu
awU^{1/2}&yggon/ xlaumi Zmwao;Zmwrmepwrsm; wu<uum trsl;om;a&;oc;ism;u
a&;om;ay;aom ee;awma^{1/2}Uq&mwil rsl;cppwxuoeru xi^{1/2}m;ay:vi vmapyggon/

vxa':trm \ jynocpaom tEynmonrsm; pmtyr tvumo; [eu avvm&m
wi vxa':trm \ pwu;toprsm;zi zew;vuaom tvumoprsm;u awU^{1/2}&yggon/
Oyrm tvumrsm;u trsm;q;a&;om;xm;aom a&; [eu awU^{1/2}&yggon/

3¹ 4/ tqutpy

tqutpyon twi;tqutpyEi jiyitqutpy[í Epyi;^{1/2}on/ twi;
tqutpyq&mü pmwpy' \ tpwtyi;ism; wpcEiwpcqupyru qvjci;jzpon/
jiyitqutpyq&mü pm \ jiyijzpaom pma&;oEi pmzwow pmrwpqi quo, ru
qvjci;jzpon/²¹ tori;or; avbmwrjr&ion obirsl;^{1/2}r qi;ouvmo
wp0;jzpalumi;u pmy'wpy'wn;jzi qupywiyxm;yggon/

[rjr&irm obirsl;^{1/2}rvmo jzpon} [aom yxr0gujzi 0;aqmiazmjy a&;om;xm;
yggon/ 'w, 0guwi rjr&i \ tb;vn; ri;om;? tazvn; ri;om;? tarvn;
ri;or;jzpalumi;u qupywiyxm;yggon/ xlaemu rbEpyg; \ ZmwEi tEynm
vyie;vyuiy? zciu, vey? rcirm tEynmvyie;u quvuvyuiy? Zci
u, vecsewi rjr&irm (4)Ept^{1/2}, om^{1/2}í arriav;rm (2)Epm^{1/2}ao;yu qupy
wiya&;om;xm;yggon/ aemuq;0guwi rjr&ion obiaZrm ar;uwn;u ygcí
rcirm uuuvvnq&mjzpalumi; 0gu:ci;qupyí wiyxm;onu avvmawU^{1/2}&
yggon/

²⁰ trm? a': (vx)? 1997? 323/

²¹ ciri? armi ("EjzL)? 2011? 218/

vxa':trmon jynocpaom tEynm^{1/2}irsm; talumi; a&;om;&mwí rru, wí
taw^Utu^Bijzivrnaumi;? owpyg;tm; ar;jreppr;ívn;aumi; qupywiyxm;
ygon/ tEynm^{1/2}irsm; \ atmijrir? bu^k;pm;rrsm;uwij&i; , aeacwtEynm^{1/2}irsm; \
tm;en;cursm;u^vn; qupya&;om;xm;ygon/

lc*i*o;oycsu

jynocpaom tEynmonrsm;pmtyr vxa':trm\ a&;[eu avvw^mwiy&m
wi pum;o;Ee;[e? Ogus^UU[e? tvuo;[eEi tqutpy[í avvw^mwiyxm;
ygon/ pum;o;Ee;[ewi tajymo;pum;v;Ei "avo;pum;v;rsm; o;Ee;xm;onu
wiyxm;ygon/ tajymo;pum;v;rsm; o;Ee;xm;aom alumi pum;ajrmaygyg; ouvu
aeonu aw^U&ygon/ tEynm^{1/2}irsm; \ vy^{1/2}m;rrsm;rmvn; tou0i ^{1/2}ioeaeyg
on/ "avo;pum;v;rsm;u^vn; oae&mEio t0iciu: o;xm;onu aw^U^{1/2}&ygon/
x"avo;rsm;alumi^vn; tEynm^{1/2}iwl\ pwoEmersm;rm xi^{1/2}m;ay:vivmaom [e^{1/2}
alumi; aw^U^{1/2}&ygon/ Ogus^UU[ewi OguswEi Ogus^{1/2}nrm;on talumi;t&mEi
vuzupm a&;om;xm;aom [etjzp aw^U&ygon/ Oguswto;en;aomvn; ^{1/2}i;vi;
ajjypí pm[eouvu^aom? talumi;t&mEi vuzuaom Ogusw^UU[eu aw^U^{1/2}&yg
on/ vxa':trm\ Ogusw^UU[e ur;uiralumi tEynm^{1/2}iwl\ t&ntci;rsm;rm
yíay:vivmygon/ Ogus^{1/2}nzU[ewi pum;qursm;jzi aygi;pn;csUxium a&;om;
xm;aomvn; teut"ym, ^{1/2}yax;rr^{1/2}b qv&i;t"ym, u xi^{1/2}m;ay:viapygon/
q&mr^U; \ Ogus^{1/2}nzU[e Eiei;ralumi tEynm^{1/2}iwl\ t&ntao;jrirm;r? tEynm
zew;rpr;&nEi av;pm;z , pw"mwwrm yí ay:vivmygon/

tvumo;[ewi ov,jriv,aom t&mOw\ talumi;t&mrsm;Ei ci;Ei;
a&;om;xm;aom Oyrmtvum? *P&nwEpcu xywjií ci;Ei;a&;om;xm;aom ^{1/2}yu
tvumrsm;u aw^U^{1/2}&ygon/ xtvmrsm;wi talumi;t&mu xi^{1/2}m;pmojriapvao
apwemjzi a&;om;xm;on Oyrmtvumu trsm;q;aw^U^{1/2}&ygon/ talumi;t&mEi
vuzur^{1/2}aom Oyrmtvumrsm;alumi pm[ermyíouvu^vmygon/ tcsUOyrmt
tvumrsm;on u,yiÓPjzi a&;om;xm;aom Oyrmtvumrsm;jzpalumi; aw^U^{1/2}&yg
on/ xalumi pmzwowtm; Epouruyg ay;pr;Eicygon/

tqutpywi Ogusjci;qupyji;? pum;xyausm qupyji;rsm;jzi a&;om;
xm;aom [eu aw^U^{1/2}&ygon/ q&mr^U; vxa':trmon jynocpaom tEynmon
rsm;pmtytrnEivuzupm jynoucpaom tEynmonrsm;Ei jynoucpaom
tEynmonrsm; \ tce;u@upmzwowpw0, Epouz,jzpvmatmi wiyxm;
alumi;aw^U&ygon/ q&mr^U; \ pum;ajya&;[ealumi tEynm^{1/2}irsm; \ b0? tEynm^{1/2}i
rsm; \ t&ntao;? tEynm^{1/2}irsm; \ wxiqe;oprrsm;on xi^{1/2}m;ay:vi vm&ji;jzp
ygon/ tEynm^{1/2}iwtay:xm;^{1/2}aom q&mr^U; \ apwem? pmzwou toay;vaom
apwemwu ay:viapon pum;ajya&;[ejzpygon/ jynocpaom tEynm^{1/2}iwu

rorrvuon pmzwy&owwtwu tz;rjzWEiaom pum;ajya& [ejzpon [xijri, qrygon/

e*;

jynocpaom tEynmonrsm; pmtyon jrerm, Oau;r tEynm tay:wi jrWE; wez;aom? av;pm;*P, aom? oa, mZOu;rm;ve;aom q&mru;vxtrm \ pmay vu&mwpjzpygon/ xpm tywi tEynm^{1/2}i (8)0; \ av;pm;z, ? jrWE;z, ? t m;us tw,z, aumi;aom vyaqmicursm;u t^{1/2}ut^{1/2}wi;? t jriut jritwi; a&om; xm;alumi; avvmaw^{1/2}&ygon/ oltwu pmzwy&wowt aeji tEynm^{1/2}irsm; tay: lunnipw? av;pm;pw? *P, t m;upw? cspjrwE;pwrsm; jzpay:vmapygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

jrermbmom

ciri? armi ("Ejzl)/ (2004)/ *pum;ajyoabmw&m; pum;ajytwwynm* (p-ur)/ &eue? jreEmpm tywu/

ciri? armi ("Ejzl)/ (2011)/ *a& [eynme'ge/* &eue? pwu;csc\pmay/

r;ajr? rl (2009)/ *ow^{1/2}noabmw&m; ow^{1/2}ntwwynm* &eue? a^{1/2}uaum pmaywu/

t rm? a': (vx)/ (1997)/ *jynocpaom tEynmonrsm; (yI-ur)/ rEav;? bu;ym;a&pm tywu/*

t*vybmom

Morner Kathleen & Ralph Raush. (1998). *NTC's Dictionary of Literature Terms*. NTC Publishing Group Lincoln Wood, Illinois.

jrermr [m*wpmayv m b0o½yazm t z

atmiaer^{sl};

pmwr; t u:0;

bp^{mwr};on jrermpmay?wpmayu@r jrermr [m*wpmaywi &m;yg;vonb0
o½yazm t z^lrm;u avvmwiyxm;on pmwr;jzpygon/ polavvm&mwi
jrermr [m*wpmay pmqwt m½uupm;ron talumi;t&mEi xtalumi;t&m
rno^lz^lqoen;[aom z^lqyu avvmwiyxm;yg on/ polavvmwiy&mwi
jrermr [m*wpmay\ oabm o b m0? b0o½yazm t z^lEi jrermpmay? jrermr [m*w
pmayv m b0o½yazm t z^lrm;[í u@ (3)&y yi;jcm;avvmq;pp wiyxm;yg on/
*wpmayavvmrwi taxm utu jyEirn jzpygon/ jrermr [m*wpmayoilum;r?
oi , rwi t u^{sl};oua&murn jzpygon/

aomc:ua0g [m&rsm;/ /*wpmay? o½yazm t z^l? t m&u:upm;r? pm;0waerb0?
t ouar;r/

e'ge;

jrermpmaye , wi r [m*wpmaayon Epaygi; (200)ce^lumv twi; wpqily;
wpqil w;wu v maom pmayt z^ltEijzpon/ *wpmay\ aqr^{sl};&i;csmrsm; jzpluaom
jyZmwpmay? obirocrtww? w&,m*wtwww^l w;wujci;Ei tjetvetr
o [jy^lv^lu z^lz^l;caompnay t z^ltEijzpygon/ jrermr [m*wpmayon w&,mEi
aw;om;z^lpn;ru tajcy^lv^lu t"utr^{sl};tpm; (7)r^{sl};cjc m;xm;yg on/ tr^{sl};tpm;ujym;
aomvn; talumi;t&mtaeji jynbrb^lbe;awm b^l? obm0yw0e;usiom , my
tz^l? vi , armir , w^l\ tcptlu^lutr&mtz^l [(3)r^{sl};om x;x;uu vr;r;ae
on [rwom;cluygon/ vrb0u o^lyazmz^lqrrmr en;yg;vygon/ ol&mwi
vw^l\ touar;r b0Eie;pyon t z^ltEi ten;i , ur jrer m r [m*w pmaywi
&m;&m;yg;yg;aw&yg on/ awl&or^l b0o^lyazmoci; (3)y'u ဤpmwr;wi avvm
wijyygrn/ b0o&yazm t z^lcsn;ouou z^lqjci;r^{sl};um; r [wyg/ obm0yw0e;usi
t v b^l vi , armir , w^l\ tcptlu^lutr&mtz^lwwi wppwwpa'o t jzp
yg0ijci;omjzpygon/ a&;tp0tvm jrer mocr t Eynmwwi 'lavmu^law^lul&on
yiye;q i;&rw^lu z^lqren;yg;yg on/

1/ jrermr [m*wpmay\ oabm o b m0

tyc^{sl}yo vwe;pm;wp&yon om;p0ajr;qu quctyc^{sl}yEiavmuatmi
tajctaey;con wi;jynwi;wi awm0iaqp0r^{sl};quEi pyqiontrt&m? "av
x;wr;? tavtx? to;taqmi? tEocrcpm;Epourw^lon o;jcm;toitijiji

* a'guwm? ygarmu(XmerL;)? jrermpmXme? uav;wguov/

&aeluygon/ , i; o aom t o i t j i E i e ; p y v m v \ i j r e r m r s r [m q e o n [o ; E e ;
w w l u y g o n / j r e r m o c r t E y n m e , y , w i v n ; a & a j r o e i ; r i ; { u & m Z w l e m ; q i
E p j c l u c l u a o m o c s i ; * w t p u r [m * w [a c : a 0 : l u y g o n /

] r [m] [a o m y g V o u a 0 g [m & o n l b u ; a o m ? j r w a o m [t e u o a b m a q m i y g o n /
u r m 0 ; t p v l t z l t p n ; u y x r q ; w i a r m u o n] r i ; } \ b r n r m] r [m o r w r i ; }¹ j z p y g
o n / j r e r m r i ; t q u q u w l o n u r m 0 ; r [m o r w r i ; r w a 0 ; r j y m ; q i ; o u v m l u o n
[, l u n x m ; l u y g o n /

] r i ; [o n v l t z l t p n ; \ t u ; t r l ; j z p \ / o u ; r l ; u y u o n v l t z l t p n ; \
l u r m u t q ; t j z w a y ; E i o j z p o n / o a w ; u ? a j m q ? j y r ? q ; j z w o r \ r e u e j c i ; ?
r m ; , i ; j c i ; w l \ t u ; q u u o t z l t p n ; u c p m ; & o n o m j z p y g o n / x l a l u m i y i
r i ; { u & m Z t m ; t r s m ; E i r w o n x ; u a o m p n ; p r u c p m ; a p l r j z p y g o n / ဤ o l c p m ; a p & m
w i o c r a z m a j z r o n t a & ; y g o n p n ; p r j z p y g o n / l i r ; c r ; ? r \ w ? o r a r U ? y i E i p m
a q m i & u ? q ; j z w E i o n t & n t a o ; u t E o c r t m 0 i p m ; r j z i & i u s u a p & y g o n /
t E o c r o u o u x u j r u r j z i & E i o n r [w a o m v n ; r i ; w u i s i & m a o m t u s i r s m ; u
r y u r u u u s i u j c i ; ? r i ; w l a p m i p n ; t y a o m w & m ; w l u a p m i p n ; j c i ; w l s t E o c r
c p m ; E i p r ; j r i r m ; j c i ; o n t m ; a u m i ; a o m t a x m u t u j z p o n [q v y g o n /
x l a l u m i y i a w m i i a c w u w y i a & x ; o n p v i ; l r l u t m ; o r ; y u & e 0 e ; & p 0 y w q i ; y n m
& i r s m ; \ t o u t E & m , u r x y g ; r a p & e r m l u m ; z ; y g o n /² a n n i & r ; a c w t a e m u z u
v e r i ; u v n ; a e m i a w m a w m i i b & i e w o l i a e m i x r a p m i ; w w ? n i ; w w ? y w w w ?
E w w w l u a w m i ; c c z ; y g o n /³ j r e r m & m Z 0 i w i r i ; { u & m Z w l p a q m i ; l u o n
v t i t m ; w i p m a y n m & i ? t E o c r y n m & i w l \ t a & t w u o n t a e t x m ; w p & y t x
r s m ; j y m ; o n [q E i y g o n / t E y n m & i u a l u m i l u u i ; u i ; j z i & y w n E i a t m i
t a u m i ; q ; a p m i a & m u E i o j z p j c i ; o n v n ; p p n ; E i j c i ; \ t a l u m i ; w p & y j z p r n [,
q & y g o n /

r a 0 ; v a o ; a o m & w e m y a c w u t a j c i y v s u r i ; { u & m Z x y g ; w i c p m ; a z m a j z &
o n o c r y n m & i t i t m ; u c i w u v y g o n / v u 0 v u , m q i ; a w m (2) z l ? a p m i ; ?
r a u s m i ; ? a t m i ; u a v ; ? n i ; ? y w v m ; ? y a v t w ; t r w y n m & i r s m ; E i t q y n m & i r s m ;
y g 0 i o n a & a w m a j y ; t z l ? p n a w m p t z l ? a & a w m a j y ; t ; p n t z l ? p n a w m p t z l ? t i r a w m
q u t z l [ဤ p p a y g i ; t i t m ; (1 0 0) c e l u y g o n / t r a & r i ; E i e e ; & r z & m ; b u ; (4) y g ; w i
v n ; t x u y g t i t m ; p r l & a o m o c r y n m & i t z l u , p & l u y g o n / c ; r i c o \ t q i
t w e ; u v u ဤ t a & t w u u m j c m ; o n p n a w m p t z l w i o m 0 ; a & a v s m y g ; r & y g o n /
w i j y c a o m t i t m ; p t j y i e e ; a w m w p a v m u v ; E i o u q i o n p i a w m b u ; ? p i a w m
u a v ; ? j r e r m Z m w u ; ? , ; ' , m ; Z m w u ; [o n o b i 0 e u q i q t y c s y a o m o c r t z l

¹ u v m ; ? 0 ; (2 0 0 6) (y x r t y) / 4 6 /

² u v m ; ? 0 ; (2 0 0 6) (' w , t y) / 1 6 8 - 1 6 9 /

³ u v m ; ? 0 ; ? (2 0 0 6) (w w , t y) / 1 4 1 /

rsm;vn;&ygaon/¹ txuygtitm;p Ep&yaygi;v*i* ee;wi;ocr titm; on
(500) 0e;uice*U*&rn [cere;&ygon/

xocrtitm;pw/ oq&eoci;rsm;u xi&m;ayguiyojzi a&aumucs;ajrmu
xm;on pmqu0wu ziqay;luayrn/ xoci;? uAsmw*U*\au;Z;alumi ri;ruay
ojzi cr;om&orm;&cayrn/ a, b, s q&v*i* jrermiya'o&mZacw ri;rxr;trsm;p
on pmayynm&irms;jzpluygon/ pmayy&, m, ? tEocry&, m, jzi ri;lpwu
orar*U*ajzm*r*watmi t*m*;xwcl*u*on/ ri;{u&mZu,wiuvn; rrtwuau;Z;
u;rm;vaom *wpmaywu pepwus*r*wwr;wiapon/ wn;jzwowoiapon/
bu;awmppui;ri; w&m;vuxuwi ri;\awmi;yerjzi 'w, ra&aZw0eq&mawm
ut&y&ypmpoci;prsm;uppn;on/ ra&rwp [trnwiyyon/² ri;we;ri;
vuxuwi jr0wri;u;0;pu xyrppn;rrwr;wiyyon/ uveacw0;wi
txuygppn;rEpcu aygi;pywn;jzwowoiy; 0urpw0eaxmuri; 0;vwu
oA*wuryumoe ur;uiypon/³ oaygapmbm;u; apmceqi\ awmi;yecut&
ppn; wn;jzwjci;jzpygon/ , i;aemuwir jri;iclrlynmtiyri;0;vi? 0omE0;y*i*?
pE&m;q&m*r*'*i*? 0;iy;cs? 'w0;bc*s*? aAv0q&mwi? rmP0powu trntr*s*;r*s*;jzi
ppn;xwa0c&m]r [m*w } [aomtrnon twius, q; trnjzpvmygon/ (1952)
cEprp*U* r [m*wpmay rrejyipa&ut*z*tpn;z*U*ly; pwiaqmi&uygon/ wn;jzw
oelpiy;on oci;pmrrsm;u yEyxa0ygon/ , i;u]Eiiawmrr [m*w } [ac:a0:
ygon/⁴ r [morwri;\ tE,awm{u&mZw*U* em;qiluojzi r [m*w [wi [ewygon/
on/

jrermr [m*woci;rsm;on ou&mZ(1000)r(1247)twi; ay:aygucon [
qEiyyon/ r [m*wupepwus pwiazmaqiorm anni&r;acwaEmi;wi xi&m;
on 0e*U*;ya'o&mZm [trwtom;&ygon/⁵ qcaomEpaygi; (200)ausmumvtwi;
xe;um;con *wpmaytallumi;uajymv*i* r [m*wuom y"mexm;uajym&ygon/ t&y
xwi ooigigquon oci;rsm;&Eiaomvn; rwwr;raw*U*&jci;alumi *wpmaywi
t*U*;r0iEicyg/ aw*U*&wworuvn; au;vuaw;tjzpom pm&i;wi&ygon/

jrermr [m*wpmayon rnontallumi;t&m*r*s*U* trsm;t*m*;jiz*U*quygoen;/
q&maZm*s*U* jrermr [m*wpmaypmqwon rrt&ioci\ be;awmEiwi;awm
jynawmpnum;om, my? awmawmia&ajr obm0yw0e;usi\ vr;qwz, om, myEi
vi, armir, w\ lunE; z, tcsp t*U*um;jiz*U*qav&on

¹ armiar*U*miwi (1)?0;? (2005)/ 218-219/

² ra&aZw0eq&mawm ('w,)? (1965)/e'ge;/

³ vw? 0;? 0urpw0eaxmuri;? (1999)/

⁴ Eiiawmrr [m*w? (2005)? e'ge;/

⁵ xe;&nEi trsm;? (1976)? £/

[qcygon/¹ ppn;ly;on r[m*wpmayprsm;uavvmv|i q&maZm* \ tqon
a, b, ,uon [qEiygon/

jrermr [m*wpmaytztEUsm; ay:ayguvmyu qpyi;wiyvygon/ taemi
Zmw? &mrZmw? or'aCmoZmw? ocywZmw? auomo&Zmw[aom ee;wi;Zmwu;
rsm; \ Zmwy? Zmw0iaw;tjzpa&zUcon ocii;y'a& (97)y'? yce;ri;om;u; jyp'Pr
vwc&on atmiajrompywys;? jr0wri;u; jyp'Prvwc&on ue;abmiaeri;
ywy;? ee;rawmrjra;v; \ cpm;rEiqupyaen cporuywys;? Epu, opm ywys;?
e0&wu, a&mipywys;? vixyacgiwi \ cpm;ruazmu;on abmv, rsm;? ri;cr;
ri;em;rsm;wi quoi;on [trwtom;&on bu;oci;bloci;? oci;c (23)y'
wlu paygi;vuvi zUq&jci;talumi; AsywtcitrmawU&&on ocii;y'a&rm
(150)celom&ygon/ AsywazmEionjzpap? razmEionjzpap q&maZm*wiijycon
talumi;t&m (3)rsl;r rvwonu avvmawU&&ygon/

၍ oqvi jrermr [m*wpmayon vtztUtpn; \ aep0aexi pm;aomur
b0Ei touar;0r;alumi;rb0u pw0ipm;jci;r&c [q&ma&muygon/ wsmci;rsm;
u zUqcon anmi&r;acwpmq 0eiu;ya'o&mZmrwyg; r [m*wpmayu zUqclun
pmqwl \ t_၈uupm;ron vrb0ora&muc [qEiygon/ olaom v;0ui;vw
cluonum;r [wyg/ vonvuom pwt0ipm;q;jzp၍ vwU \ touar;r b0
o&yazmtzrsm;on ta&twu yien;aomvn; jrermr [m*wpmay \ &m;yg;aom
talumi;t&mrm;tjzp yg0ivsu&eygon/ , i;wlu avvmwiijygrn/

2/ b0o^{1/2}yazmtzEi jrermr [m*wpmay

၍ u@uwijy&mwi]ocrtEynm [on tvu&mazly; tvuzew;on/
[aomtqay:wi &ywnwijyrnjzpygon/ tEocryn&iwU jriontvon
qe;lu, ygon/ owljriouo vwumjriEipr;r&uyg/ owU \ tjriu tvtjzp
jyevnwijyrom jrici&ygon/ a0'emua0'emtwi; jyevnwijyvqir tvtjzp
jri&e cucvygon/ tEynm&ir[wowon tEynm&ixr tvuomarqmviluyg
on/ tb,alumi[r ovrwwpr;on tEynmzew;ru tEynm&iuom
wwajrmujci;alumi jzpygon/ xalumi tEynm&itzU tvuzew;jy&e wm0eon
y"mewm0ejzpygon/

omretm;jzi vom;w \ pm;0waerb0u tv [jriEi&e? tvtjzpjyevn
wijy&e? vygayon [cpm;r&ecucygon/ obm0yw0e;usi awmawmia&ajrtv?
vom;pr;yum;jzi zew;xm;aom ocrvu&mtvwon xi&m;jriomvygon/
, i;tvwuc;u;v i vu&m;i0r;ajrmuayvrrn/ tjcm;ou0iowuvn; r'wm
pwjzpluayrn/ vwU \ aeUp0b0u tvtjzp zew;vqir xolaom ou0itm;ay;rrsl;

¹ aZm*? (2014)? 133/

&ayrn [wpxpcrqEiay/ t_m;omc:uwp_{cr}m vonvuom pwt0ip_m;q; jzpon
 [aom "rwmaumi t_jcm;aom t_vr_m;u jcw_i;y_u}v montcg vom;b0u t_m n_w
 v_mwwygon/ , i;onobm0"rjzpygon/ t_m n_wr? apwemoua&mur? qn;y;
 oi, x_m;aom ocrtwww [ec:unnaygi;pyraom t_{cg} t_vw&m; t_jzpc_{pm};Ei
 aom b0o_yazmtz_ur_m;u &&v_ygon/ 0e_iu;ya'o&mZm \ w_mc_i;r_m;Ei aumupu
 aw;? arm_i;ax_mi;aw;pon au_s;vuaw;r_m;wi ဤ oabmuaw&ygon/ au_s;vuaw;
 r_m;Ei r [m*wpmayon t_{ly}(ixe;um;cygon/

r [m*wpmayon Zmw0ipmay? ruajzpmay? be;awmb_upmaytjz_p x_e;u_m;c&
 u_m; pm;0waerb0u z_uqren;y_g;v_ygon/ pmq_tm;v;v_von au_s;vuZmw_rm;
 omjzpluygon/ au_s;vu [onr_mv_n; ee;r_l r_l;t_jyibu_o a&muonEi aw_lEion
 a'o_oe;u_ijzpygon/ vrb0taw_tu_uonv_n; ow_u, wiaw_lcon taw_tu_u
 r_m;omjzpygon/ t_b, al_umi vrb0ur_zu_qluygoen;/ a&;uee;wi;pmq_won
 pmayz_lq_jci;u w_m0e \ ta&;ygon t_pw_ty_i;t_jz_p ow_rw_u [ewygon/ r [m*
 pmayv_m t_zu_tE_lw_{on} w_m0eEiwm0eal_umijzpay: on pwt_m;x_uoert & z_uq_{cl}u
 [ewygon/ t"uwm0erm v_la_qma&;w_m0eEi az_smajza&;w_m0ejzpygon/ vrb0
 taw_tu_uta_lu_mi; t&m_rm; on t_xuygw_m0e_u x_r;Eiaom tal_um*i*; t&m_rm; r [w
 yg/ u_m, u&i_rm;u rrw \ b0yw0e;u_iaw_lor? Bu_or_uzic_{sl}y; vuwe; o_ql_u
 jci;omjzpygon/ a_u;al_um_jci;? nn;w_m;jci;? aw_mi;q_jci;pon to_it_jy_i r_m;u
 raw_l&y_g/ rr \ taw_tu_uu_uu_uovajym_jyon oab_mr_lomjzpygon/ pmwpap_mi
 aywpzjz_papaw_m [on &n&, c_uv_n; & [erwyg/ q_vonr_m b0o₁/₂y_u az_mjy
 aom t_zu_wu j_rerm_v t_zu_{tp}n; on pmz_la_um*i*; on [c, r_tm;en;cygon/ j_rerm
 pmayEpwpax_mic&;wi 0e_u;ya'o&mZmEi aw_miwi;&i_li_r;r, w_uom t_xi_t&m;
 aw_l&ygon/ u_m, u&i_rm;u, w_iu_vn; rrw_ly_ie;q_i&or_l owpyg; oapaw_m?
 u, c_i;p_mapaw_m [at_uarc [erwyg/ p_mayutEynm_wm0ewp&y tae_jzi c,
 z_lq_lu&m_wir w_m0e_uta_um*i*;q; au_syeat_mi t_m;xw_luygon/ p_um;to;tEe;
 rp_l , 0onx_u, 0at_mi t_m;xw_luygon/ vrb0o₁/₂y_u az_mu_sl&m_wir yuw
 t&c_{pm};ru z_it_we;xw_vuaom oab_mr_lomjzpygon/ tEynmaj_rm_u t_m;xw_r
 t_m;en;ygon/ x_lal_um*i* t_vt, 0t_zu_tE_len;y_g;ygon/ j_rerm_v t_zu_{tp}n; on
 b0tajctaeu tEyn_mtjz_pzew;a_um*i*; on [c, r_uv_n; t_m;en;ygon/ x_lal_um*i*
 r [m*wpmaywi b0o₁/₂yazmtz_u en;y_g;jci;jz_p [ewygon/ o_lwiat_mi ten;i,
 r_laom r [m*wpmayp_mq_won b0ut_vtjz_p Bu_l;p_m;j_c, re; w_ijy_cz;ygon/ , i;
 Bu_l;p_m;ronv_n; obm00e;u_it_vEi arm_ir, t_cp_tu_uu_u c_{pm};r \j_ri_ui; w_pu_u
 tae_jzi x_noi;j_c, re;jci; omjzpygon/ ta&twuen;y_g;onwi t_m;xwEip_r;
 or_l t_m;xw_{cl}uy_u av_vm_wi_jy_grn/

3/ jrermr [m*wpmayvm b0o½yazm t z]

b0o½yazm t z [q&m၌ omrejynow pm;0waerjznqn;&et v/im vyui
pm;aom u/aom tjzpoepm;t m; xi&m;at m i z qjci;uom qvygon/ , i;o
aom t z t E rsm;yg0ion jrermr [m*woci;(3)y'u a&c s , avvmwijyygrn/ x
oci;i;rsm;r m jawmiorevi;u ucyo u; } jrpaw;uevelo u; } Ei] , reemywys; } w
jzpluygon/ ဤ oci;i;(3)y'v;wi a&z lo t r nro&yg/

awmiorevi;u ucyo u;u O;pma vvmwijyvygon/ b0o½yazm t z
yyjiyi r [waomvn; awjriaeur [won talumi;t&m u z qxm;onu avvm
awl&&ygon/

ri;vi ri;vi ri;ty

avjynavni;owyg vav; / /

uqe e , ecsecg? jynlu;awmiv u , m?

aomi; , Zem u s , 0e;?

awmiorewn ti;/ ¹

[aom t z t & t r&y&aumi;pm;p0 umvu z qcon [, q&ygon/ t r&y& r lawmr
unv i awmioreti;on rupwpq; u s , 0e;ygon/ , i;upmqu jaomi; , Zem
u s , 0e; } [wipm;z qygon/ pmayt z t E wijzap? pum;ajym&mwijzap twi;twm
ym P&onu r&ouo lom wipm;z qav&ygon/ ဤ t z t E wir awmioreti; \
u s , 0e;ru twi; twmyrm P&ouo x;jcm;pmz l qxm;ygon/ oci; \ 'w , y'rp၍

jrpci; jrpci; [i;ie? vi;wn vi;ay:p

ig;we ig;we ig;we c;r

ig;v;or; ig;v u;u Ze; rawm&wnav²

ponjzi ig;w u z l ygon/ anni&r;acwaEmi;pm q 0e u;ya'o&mZm \]owm owm
jrom; } tpc၍ um b u? i u b u bu k;oci;Ei]om , m om , m jrnava u; } tpc၍ i u b u k;
oci;w u t m;u y; ig;b u u;oci;u z qon [yi xirw&ygon/ w&pme ci;yi
wapumr i u \ t q i;? to? obm0on ig;xuy၍ om , m l un E;z , jzpalumi;
xi&m;ygon/ , i;orxi&m;onu pmquEpouz , ? pw0ipm;z , jzpat m i t m;xw
ygon/ 0e u;ya'o&mZm \]o'g u k; } oci;၌ jrpaw;iu? pia&miuw bmombm0
aym l r l; l u y u

¹ bc၍? 0;? (wn;jzwo)?(1935)/21/

² - , i;- /21/

jrpaw; jrpaw; pia&m? jrl;wn jrl;&iaym¹
 [၍ zllqxm;ygon/awm iorevi;lu ucyo lu;၌ ig;jrpci; \ trt&mu
 jrpci; jrpci; [i;ie? vi;wn vi;ay:p²
 [၍ zllqyggon/zlyci; wpxywn; jzpygon/
 tcptu utrt&m tzl \ oabmon tEocrt m၍ u:upm;ou pwnw
 apwwaom oabm&ygon/ xalumiyi pmqu
 ig;we ig;we c;r
 ig;v;or; ig;vu;u Ze;rawm&wnav/³
 [၍ zllqyggon/ ဤ tzl tEonvn;]om , m၍ u; }oci;vm
 ocwn at; at;
 y , wn y , ax;ax;
 pmay;cll u cpa& cia& rlygvav;⁴
 [aomtzt tEupwu;u & , clxizllqxm;ji; jzp [ewyggon/ ဤ en;w]o'g၍ u; }
 oci;r
 vyjy mav yuom; [rm onrm em;⁵
 [aomtzt tEu
 ripi , av zm;vsm; ig;aemu ig;aemuom;⁶
 [၍ oPnew zllqyggon/ ig;aemuom; \ aexiwwon tav txu
 ur;em;rmc llycn cnav⁷
 [o;o;jcm;jcm; zllqvuygon/ oci;u tq;ow&mwir our0e;uiEi ou&
 w \ vy&m;yu aygi;pyv;u
 *vi *vi nnw? vi;yi vi;lu ucy u , Ei av;/
 a&eurm &iaysmjrl;luav? acnwu , jrio r;rav/
 a&euu , &iaysm jrl;cncn? x; axvmavwn x; ax vm/⁸

¹ bc?O;?';'w(wn;jzwo)?(1935)/1/

² - , i; -/ 21

³ - , i; -/21

⁴ - , i; -/1/

⁵ - , i; -/1/

⁶ - , i; -/21/

⁷ - , i; -/ 21/

⁸ - , i; - / 28/

[Epouz, zqxm;yg on/ omretm;zi jri&ecucon jriu i;uo_၅yazmxm;ji;
jzpygon/ *wpmaywiomru jrermaytz_၁tEe, y, wiyi &m;yg;vaom tz_၁tE
jzpygon/ig;pon a&aeow0gr_၁;Ei ywouon tz_၁tEwu ueb_၁oci;rsm;wi
aw&onwi txuygtz_၁tE_၁r_၁ &m;yg;yg on/

jrpaw;ueveou_၁;}¹ oci;r_၁m_၁ jrerm_၁[m*wpmaywi taw_၁&en;yg;von
yiv, _၅ci;u aemucjyzqxm;on bu_၁;oci;jzpygon/ jrerm_၁qwon]or'_၅&m_၁u
aw_၁bu_၁r_၁;0ionrm lumlyzpaomvn; jrermwi;&i;a0g [m&jzpon]yiv, } [aom
a0g [m&t o;ur ue;abmiacw v, wiay:xe;on wi;oi;wu0e r [moa&pno
blc 0;xe;n\]r [mZeuy_၁U]wir pwiaw_၁&&on [q&mri;o0P\ oawoet &
o&&ygon/³ jrpaw;ueveou_၁; [on wigonueypou lum;&on jrpaw;
iu\ xwvewlum;jzpy? atmrnyuzqxm;on bu_၁;oci;jzpygon/ jrpaw;iu
ueveyu

aomiur; aomiur; azmwn tazmryg

r u&m [om jrpaw; yiv, 0i, rm luL;&ia<u;

jrpaw; ueo vewnav;⁴

[zqyg on/ tazmrp&mon jrpaw;iuav;\ txwwve trt&may:vi vyy
on/ jrpaw;iuzav;u o\ tazm iurav;u&m&i; wig\ueypou txwwve
jzpouo? iurav;u_၁vn; xwveyu

wpryg aevn&m iw;wm wigrq;

yiv, 0u jz\wc_၁n;om;? r, bm;ueo vec_၁nav⁵

[zqyg on/ jrpaw;iuarmiEw uw_၁t_၁u_၁;ay;cpm;&yu zqxm;yg on/ jrpaw;
iuarmiEt_၁; xwveapcon wig\ to itjyi

wu_၁u;_၅&n wu_၁u;_၅apm u

ui;wn ui;car_၁uu, Ei _၅yaz_၁muu, vm

iw;wmavm wigavm

_၅yaz_၁muu, vmygon iw;wm?wig [wu [wuav⁶

[zqyg on/ to itjyi\ tqitwe;u]iw;wm} [aom emryn_၁wzi azmjyon/
]iw;wm} [aom emrynwon _၅yqi;t*g t& lunay_၁sm_၅ay_၁sm r&avmuatmi toi

¹ bc_၁?O;?'; 'w(wn;jzwo)(1935)/28/

² ri;o0P/ (2004)/ 17/

³ bc_၁?O;?'; 'w(wn;jzwo)(1935)/28/

⁴ - , i; - / 28/

⁵ - , i; - / 28/

⁶ - , i; - / 28/

cs\wou ay;av&on trnemrjzpygon/ ouqi&m y*lv\yiu, emnr[wyg/
 to itjyiu vuly; yw0e;u: iuac:a0: on emrynwonjzpygon/ þemrynwu
 ti;0acwaEmi;u pñaw\&ygon/ pavyawmia'o_၆ tajcy\vsu ti;0b&iu yeue
 jcm;em;l uon oyenaemi Ep0;\ trnrm iw;wmEiijyn0w/ jzpluygon/¹
 ue;abmiacw0;a&muaom to itjyi rwiw, ouac:aom emrynwtjzp to;wi
 vm[ewygon/ ue;abmiacw p0u;ri;vuxupmq a&awmieEo\arlEe;&ue
 wiiw;wm\ to itjyiu ui;carmuqi, i vsuaw\&ygon/² ui;carmu [on
 0g;zw? op&uwu carmuay: onq_၈r_၇ ly;pv, jy\vyxm;aom carmu jzpygon/
 tc\op&ut&, u;v\i wp&uwn;uyi uawmcleoz, wpyEi w, vsuj\vyly;
 0;acgi;uaey?r;p ouom_၈aqmi;uon carmur_၈;jzpygon/

jrpaw;iu armiEw t jriwi ow t m; t xwwve jzpapcaom wig t m; jrpaw;
 iuarmiEwu jri&on to itjyiu pmquu, pm;0ia&m uz_၇q ay;ji; [, qryg
 on/

wigon\ to itjyiu –

yq; rpi;?

ig;pr;ji;i, Ei

tjyi;ap;r avmpav

yu vmw iawmi;i, wi

criazmuon vmpav

azmuon vn;vm qeryg

wigiwpav/³

[၍z\qygon/ pmqon ဤjzptiuz_၇q&mwi jrpaw;iuarmiEbur v;v;
 vsm;vsm; &ywnygawmon/ jrpaw;armiEwu xwveapcon wigonon &ww
 or_၇ ig;pi;pr;wu avi, wiwi၍ ap;travm\? ig;Eiqevv, &e azmuonu
 ar_၇m\ / azmuon vmygaom vn; qerygoji wigiw&yu [mopu၍a&z\xm;on/
 wigon\ xiwi;raygu ontjzpu jrpaw;iuarmiEujrily; oabmusav [e
 a&z\ygon/ wigon\ to iEi b0tajctaeu vn; azmijEion tzu tEijzpyg
 on/ jrermr [m*wpmaywi ocsi; tr_၈; tpm;(7)r_၈;? y'a&(500) 0e;u: ice&&m p ocsi;
 wiuo iuEi vw\ y#yuz_၇Elyr_၈;u vn;aumi;? wigon\ pm;0waertwu
 t m; xw&ytrt&m tzu tEuvn;aumi; zuqxm;onu pwp'ywiomaw&ygon/

¹ r [m&]om&? &i? (1928)? 3/

² a&awmieEo? (1969)? 5/

³ bcs? 0;? 'w (wn;jzwo)? (1935)/28/

, reemywys;wir pmqon , reemjrpiyir wiguu , ci;pmaompwji zUqyg
 on/ *w0aom"eu;r;wir owmawmiajcbU ajrvywy;uav;[azmjyygon/¹
 ဤywy; \ talumi;t&wna qmuym bmbm0 aymjrl;uon aus;iubmbm0
 0r;pm&mluon uwigw\ trt&m? waygi;wec;umv jrp, ၵci; \ vr;z , aumi;y
 wu aygi;pyzUqxm; jci;jzpon/ jrermpmzwy&owEi jrermpmqw zUav&aom
 tzUrs;jzpygon/ ဤywy; oci;wi aus;iuw\ trt&mu bmbm0 armir,
 aymjrl;uon tcptuu trt&mjizlaomvn; vom;w\ obm0ur touar;r
 b0jizizUqiyon/ b0twuvy&m;ၵe;ueru vr;qwz , jriui;tjzp yazmxm;yg
 on/

jrp , ur;em;wi awl&wwon [omarmiEw\ trt&mu

, reem — owmawmiajc0;rmvav

oem;b , vE , ac:ox;vav

luNE;z , r , wpu ,

a&[omarmiEiuu , w

luiazmrmluiazmbuu , Ei

waysmav b , cgpuyg&

vn , uum owv .../

r zac:o vE , o[e

azmumoaq;apbze/²

[ဤzUqvuuygon/ aomi , ur;em;ၵ , 0w0yaeon [omarmiE\ toitiyion
 yiuu tazmEia0;umou vr;apaq;ap&e zew;v;u&alumi; zUjyygon/ xaemu
 pmqon , reemjrptwi;ၵ ig;&maeon uwigqo ajymi;vy aqmiuvuygon/

x ig;luiawqe ig;weaw aomia&p;rmv

uwig av , mOp;yg v

yuB;u;eU a&c;vm/

a'gi;'i;o omomEi wigavavmi;q i;/³

[aomtUon jrpiyaomipyၵ uewpvujzi ig;&m&on uwigjyryu wu:pm
 zUqvuuygon/ avi , wppi; uewpvujzi jrpa&uscEaomiwr a&yg;ၵ ig;&m
 onuwigon rrueyprnuEcuၵ ig;r;m;pa0;aeap&e aveuwu;ၵEi acguly;

¹ bc 0;? ' ; 'w (wn;jzwo)? (1935)? 157/

² bc 0;? ' ; 'w (wn;jzwo)? (1935)? 157/

³ - , i; -/

ajcmuveon/ xtjy\truyi pmquu, csi;pm pwEiz\qyg on/ pmq\ u, csi;pm
pwu-

]uwig}

]a'gi'ioomom}

[aom pum; t o; rsm; u ay: viapon/

waygi;wec; umv jrp, onjrlc; rsm; zi qi; a0aeav&yg on/ ig; wjrl; aom
umvv n; jzpygon/ ajrmuavjyely; awmiavjrl; p jzpygon/ aeyncr; tcgor,
vn; jzpygon/ , i; upmqu-

t e'wi; rmv Ei; aiaqm

cr; vw? rvau; w, u, a&; ulawmaem

waygi;wec; r; om; l uL; av; aqm vmy

e'wi; rmv uig; lui; w yuwi; rm owce¹

[၍z\qyg on/ r; avui; &i; ly; tat; "mwrueao; aom umv a&jyiajrji om, maom
umv? tx; oziig; ow0gw jrl; x; ont&, a&mucseEi ig; w\ obm0u pmqu
yjiipmz\qon/ weaqmire;? ewawm? jym o? wyw? waygi; vw on wigwav0;
ponvv n; jzpygon/ pmqur aqmi; tue aEt u; \Ei; ui; Ei; use a0qi; aeyEi
xEi; wa0q jrpjiwi avi, wppi; Ei ig; &maeon uwig \ trt&mw on tvr;
u v\aqmae aomjriui; rsm; om jzpon [c, y&yg on/ tvr; o₉yu

vr; avyy yyym; ygv t m; uue

aomi, rm armiEi uu, w

vnci; , u yg v Eu maysm p aq; apzze

l uiazmu ow 0umy w, |

onaomi, u rcm&uw, |

lucuvlye;;²

[၍z\qyg on/ vr; qwz, jriui; wonvn; aumi;? awl&ejri&ecu on xwve
z, jriui; wonvn; aumi;? jrily; onaemu rcr&yEi on cpm; rrs; yijzpaomjim;
vn; wzeje၍ rlunbraeEijci;? om, mrEi, 0on jriui; rsl; jzpcv\iv n; lun
၍r0Eiatmijzpci; [aom pwobm0rsm; jzpay: wwygon/ xpwobm0on tEynm
zew; vpw jzpay: atm i v\aqmay; wwygon/ pmq on၍ obm0rsl; u ay: viatmi
tm; xwxm; yg on/

¹ bcs? 0;? 'w (wn;jzwo)? (1935)? 157/

² - , i; -/

pmaytzljzppap? tEynmzew;rjzppap pv , q;talumi;o;yg; nnwji;on
 tEynmajrmujci; \ ta&ygon *P&nwp&yjzpygon/ owmawmiajcbU ywy&wi
 tziu jrp, ur;em;S au;iuwjrl;aymaeluyEizion/ uwig \ vyie;ci b0ji
 pmzwou tzU tEU \ e, y, xo or;oi;on/ aqmi;tueaEtu;umv jrpyi
 jriui;jziyi tzU tEUe*;c&yxm;on/ ywy&oci;rsm;wi ojzeygav&ygon/ oje
 tzlon oci;wpy'v; \ tEpc&yvn;jzpygon/ ဤywy&wi ojzey'u-

&poe;i , um

, reem aiaomipu

vr;yu ajzr&ib;

ayt iyr;/

aiEi;i , v\

avni; wnnEi

a&q i;o * , u0i;i ,

vi;xvp;/¹

[zlqxm;ygon/ wijycon ywy&wpy'v; \ talumi;t&mu tEpc&ywiyxm;
 ouojzponu avvmawU&&ygon/

lcio;oycu

b&iEib&irom;pon EiiEiEiiom;w\ ou0;qyi rsm;vn;jzpluygon/
 b&i \ pwcpr reorlon oyw0e;uiEi owi;jyn \ ullurm tvntajymi;yi
 jzpom;Ei&um; b&i \ pwEv; orarlajzmireap&e tEocrvu&mre tr&rs;jzi 0e;&
 xm;&ygon/ , i;ocrynmmwi r[m*wpmayonvn; tygt0ijzpygon/ xalumi
 r[m*wpmayon ri;o;p;o;pmayjzpygon/ r[m*wpmaypmqwuvn; ri;em;p;em;
 Ei qavsmvuzuatmi zUqluygon/ xtcgzUorlon cr;em;vyr? Epvz , aumi;r
 Ei jynpaeygon/ owiatmi pmqwonn0xr vom;rsm;om jzpluaomtcg
 b0uzUvlu [ewygon/ xalumiyi r[m*wpmaytzlxS b0u o,yazm&e tm;xw
 rwppe;wpp jriawUvm&ygon/ olaomtvtwyi tmUupm;rrsm;corrm; jzplu
 &um r[m*wxrb0on vyv;uom &ao;on [q&ygrn/

¹ bc&? 0;? ' ; 'w (wn;jzwo)? (1935)? 157/

e*;

၍pmwr;on r[m*wpmayvm b0o_၅yazmtzlyg0iaom oci;(3)y'u xwEw
 avvmwijxm;ygon pmwr;jzpygon/ tce; 1 wi jrermr[m*wpmay\ oabm
 obm0? tce; 2 wi b0o_၅yazmtzEi *wpmay? tce; 3 wi jrermr[m*w pmayr
 b0o_၅yazm tzU_၇sm;talumi;u avvmwijycygon/ polavvmwijyji;ji jrerm
 r[m*wpmayEiywouly; t^{1/2};tp0rwom;em, cluaom tqtreU_၇tcU_၇ zqe
 ouoU jzpaeygon/ olaom bpmwr;on r[m*we,y,u;xr wppuwpa_၇ymur
 aomtpwtyi;u &mazc0;uy wijxm;ji;omjzpygon/ tp0tvmtqtre wlon
 vr;clqijciy;r xwaqmijycon tqtreU_၇sm;jzpluly;? bpmwr;rmrrr0;wn wijy
 von tqEiuunon pmaytzU_၇Eu xw, om"uaqmixm;ji; jzponu 0ec
 vygon/ 0goem[aompum;u em;vnwwpuyi pr;Eiorq_၇n;y;con r[m*w
 ynm&ytwuvn;aumi;? jrermmayy&*bltwu oawoeu;r;jyp wioi;con
 r[m*wpmay avvmrtwuvn;aumi; quvu_၇jznqn;&e wm0e&on[em;vn
 oji poawoepmwr;u wioi;ji;jzpygon/ r[m*wpmayEi ywouí
 vn;aumi;? r[m*wynm&yEiywouívn;aumi; quvuq_၇n;y;qjzp&m xyr
 aw&or_၇u quvuazmxwrnjzpalumi; wijyvygon/ bpmwr;on r[m*w
 pmayavvmrú taxmutu jzprn[, qygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

uvm;? 0;/ (2006)l 0;u/vm;r[m&mZ0iu; (ww, ty)l &mjynyEywu? &eue/
 uvm;? 0;/ (2006)l 0;u/vm;r[m&mZ0iu; ('w, ty)l &mjynyEywu? &eue/
 uvm;? 0;/ (2006)l 0;u/vm;r[m&mZ0iu; (yxrt_y)l &mjynyEywu? &eue/
 ri;o0Pl (2004)l jrermmayynm&i wi;o*i*;ri;u; pwu;ccl_yEywu? &eue/
 aZm*_l (2014)l pm_၇ci;(1)l pwu;ccl_yEywu? &eue/
 xe;&nEi trsm;l (1976)l 0eu;ya'o&mZm l peye;lr_iiyEywu? &eue/
 Eiiawmrr[m*wl (2005)l arwmr;pmay? &eue/
 bccl? 0;? ' ;'w(wn;jzwo)l (1935)l *w0aom"e l ' ;'w? &eue/
 r[m&|om&? t&i l (192*)l yawmiEiarmue; l "0yEywu? &eue/
 armiarimiwi(1)? 0;/ (2005)l aⅇo;a0g[m&t b"mel &mjynyEywu? &eue? l
 ra&aZw0eq&mawm? 'w , l (1965)l ra&rwp l [om0wyEywu? &eue/
 a&awmieEol (1969)l ar/Ee;&ue l [om0wyEywu? &eue/
 vw? 0;? (0urpw0eaxmuri;-)l (1999)l oA*wuryumod oe;oe;0; pmay? &eue/

ri;o0P \ u^{smrsm};vm pmq \ apwem t jri

cinatmi*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on q&mri;o0P \ u^{Asmrsm};uazmjyaeaom pmq \ apwem t jriu
avvmwiyjrnpmwr;jzpygon/ xolavvmwiy&mwi q&mri;o0P \ u^{Asmrsm};r
wpqi? jrerm^{1/2}&m , Oau;r"av? jrerm t r t u i? jrerm pwxm;p^{1/2}uwu jrwe;
wez;xm;on pmq \ apwemsm;u ovm&on/ xrwpi jrerm , Oau;r
"avx;prsm;ujrwe;wez; xm;vpw? xe;or;apmia&m uvpwrsm; jzpay:vmapyg
on/ xu^{Asmrsm};rpmq \ pwu; ÓPqe;opruavvmapon/

aomc:ua0g [m&rsm; - arwm? Oyoapmi? oajyo;aumu oajynl? y:O;riww? armiac;z!
ti; , m;ueo t uw? v , apmiw/

e'ge;

poawoepmwr;on q&mri;o0P \ u^{Asmrsm};uazmjyaeaom pmq \ apwem
t jriu avvmwiyxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ jrerm pmayori;tp y*acwron
, aetxu^{Asmrsm};u yp tr^{sl};r^{sl};Ei ay:xe;cygon/ uveacw rwiru&caom
a&acwjrermasmori;alum;wivn; pmq to;o;u u^{Asmrsm}; u jrerm paytwu
wxii^vr;ci;ay;Eicluon/ uveacwwivn; jrerm Zmwrmu E;qay;Eiaom?
u^{Asm}vr;allumi;u pmqwonyazmEicluon/ olueb0rvwajrmuly; vvvyaom
jrermEii [í jzpvmap&e Zmwrmu^{Asmrsm};jzi wuy0icluon/ 1920wi wuov
asmi;om;oyway:aygucon/ xtceEi wpquwn; &euwuovrpwium
a&;tp0tvmrcxuvmrn pmayrsm;uqe;opwxivmclun/ xolacwu qe;op
apcon acwpr;u^{Asmrsm};u q&maZm*s? q&mri;o0Pwu0;aqmum *Eavmu?
wuovausmi;wu r*Zi;? t;a0pmapmiwwi a&;zicluon/

wuovarmi oelpi? armiw;atmi? rciapr? armibaomi;? aparmiarmi
wonvn; acwpr;pmqrsm;jzplun/ acwpr;pmqrsm;yy jrerm b0? jrerm t v?
jrerm yw0e;u i t v? jrerm , Oau;r t v rsm;u u^{Asm}jizoum Eiicppwu wpen;
wpz E;aqmEicluon/ q&mri;o0Pon acwpr;u^{Asmrsm};u q&maZm*Ei tw
O;aqmii a&;zicluon acwpr;u^{Asm} acgi;aqmiwp0;jzpon/ q&mri;o0P \
u^{Asmrsm};u ppiu^{Asmrsm};u acwu^{Asmrsm};? oajyn^{Asmrsm};? y:O;riwwu^{Asmrsm};? uav;u^{Asmrsm};?
iuu^{Asmrsm};? taxaxu^{Asmrsm}; [í tyi;rsm;cum xwa0con/ taxaxu^{Asmrsm};
wivn; q&majymvaom jrerm , Oau;r? jrerm^{1/2}&m"av? wi;jyncppw?
tr^{sl};om;a&;pw? jrerm^{1/2}ci;? jrerm t v? jrerm , lunu;u , rwu pvipmyg0ia&;zuxm;

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pXme? jynwuov/

on/ yxZ0wUrnnon rruivn&mwUwi yaq;ww? p;&rww? pwyu t m; i ,
 wwao m pwapwemrsm;? 0r;ajrm uww? llun&iww? &&iwwao m pwapwemrsm;
 jzpay:wwUon/ yxZ0wp0;jzpaom q&mri;o0Ponvn; pwapwemtrsl; rsl;
 jzpay:apaom tawUtuksm;pm&cayon/ xtawUtuksm;utaicci pmqon
 o\ uAsmrsm;wi o\apwem tjrism;uazm xwiyocayon/ pmqiyocao m pmq\
 apwem tjrism;upmq\ uAsmrsm;rwpqi avvmwijyrnjzpygon/ pmq\ uAsmrsm;
 [q&mwu uAsmrsm;t m;v;u rqvyg/ pmq\ uAsm tcsUuavvmly; xuAsmrsm;vm
 pmq\apwem tjrui avvm wijyrnjzpygon/

&n& , cu

pmqri;o0P\ uAsmrsm;wiaw&aom pmq\apwem tjruiavvm&mr
 wi;jyncppw? Eic:ppw? A'omoem? , llunu;u , r? jrerm , Oau;r? jrerm
 ½;&m"av? jrerm t r t ui? jrerm pwxm;p½u? jrerm½ci;? jrerm0e;usi t v rsm;tay:
 wez;xm;rvmaprnjzpon/ pmq\apwem tjrui? pmq\pwu;qe;oprsm;u o&
 v mly; pmzwowUtwu t u sl;au;Z; rsm;pm &&vmaprnjzpon/

q&mri;o0P\ t wlyw

q&mri;o0Pon 1909c aZmazm0g&v 10&u A'[:aelwi [om0wc½i?
 ur;lcue;lrUwi 0;vr;yi? a':rwUrzsm;jrion/ ar;ci;(7)a , mu teu 'w , ajrmu
 jzply; rejrermsl;½;jzpon/ tou 7Epcelwi ur;lcue;lrU? a&usiausmi;wu
 q&mawm 0;£Em0oxwi ynmpwioi , on/ q|rwe;xoilum;con/ 1921 cwi
 ur;lcue;lrU trsl;om;t xuwe;ausmi;wi aym;ia½lynmoi , on/ uAsma&en;u
 ausmi;aezu 0;tumoe;xroi , con/ q|rwe;xaecon/ 1923 cwi &euclLU
 pe*le;ausmi;ü yOrwe;rpwi wua&uon/ 1926 rwvwi t*vy-jrerm
 tv , we; pauvm&p pmar;ywi pwwt qijziatmijrion/¹

'*er*Zi;? ' ;'w*me , ? llawo{bm;rm;r*Zi;? u0rurer*Zi;wUwi uAsmrsm;
 a&;con/ pe*le;ausmi;tyq&m u; Aviu;u ausmi;t m;&ur sm;wi t*vyuAsmrsm;
 oiay;on/ ausmi;pmapmiwi 1927 cEprpi jrermu@zivpum pmqri;o0Ptm;
 jrerm uAsmrsm;a&;apcon/ t|rwe;rpí q&mrwu; tyaqmiwi ausmi;om;rl;vyí
 b&m;pm? w&m;pm rsm;zwjy&on/ a':jarre;uav;nau sm;wi tywp0tvnu s
 pmoiay;&on/ 1929 wi pe*le; ausmi;r 10we;pmar;yu yx0*Px;jiziatmion/
 x t cex uAsmy'a& 100 celU a&;ly;avly/²

¹ ri;o0P? 1997? 353-354/

² wir;Ei t jcm;? 2019? 509-510/

wuovau_{mi};wu Epvnr*Zi;wi uAsm(5)y'pwi azmjyc&on/ Oypm txuwe;u 1930 wiatmijrion/ 1932 wi wuovau_{mi};wu r*Zi;ü bu;atminmw,0wu azmjyji;c&on/ 1933wi jrerm_{pm}0Zm*Px;we;u yxr tqijziatmion/ xUaemu tceyi;en;jyvycon/ 1935wi r[m0ZmbU&ly; tceynen;jyzpvm_{on}/ ³

1936 puwibmvwi ynmoiq&í t*vejyn atmupzu'wuovwi ouw? ygV? wAu taxaxbm&yrs_m;u oi, on/ 1939wi bvp(Blitt) ac: pmay 0ZmbU&on/ xUaemu ta&Uwi;ynm&yrs_m;Xneü jrerm_{pm}vuaxmu uxutjzp trxr;on/ ⁴

1942 wi ynma&Xme bmojye pmayXmecwi trxr;on/ 1948 wi &eue wuov bmojyeEipmtyxwa0a&Xmezivply; XmerL;tjzp aqmi&uon/ 1952 wi tar&ueEii? e,;a,muUrrU? a,;vwuovwi bmoA'ynmu (6)Epcel qn;y;con/ 1961wi &euewuovü jrerm_{pm}Xmeygarmutjzp trxr;on/ 1962wi bmojyeEi pmtyxwa0a&Xmewi jyevntrxr;con/ ⁵

1968wi ynma&tX;t&m½? 1970wi jrermEiioawoetoi; Ou|tjzp aqmi&uon/ 1975 r 1979 x *yeEii? tqmumEiijcm;bmoioi wuovwi jrerm_{pm}{nygarmutjzp wm0e,aqmi&ucon/ 1984wi ½wpy;,m;\ v,mri;ßu;jyZmwubmojyecon/ xpmtytwu trs_m;om;bmojye(&o)q &½con/ 2014 lo*ww(15)&uaewi u,vecon/ ⁶

jrermowyn;usr;? wuovjrermtb"me(5)w? rvwe;jrermzwpm? 'w, we;jrermzwpm? ww,we;jrermzwpm? pwww;jrermzwpm? [uluAsm jrn;p&m wUu lypcon/ jrerm bmojzi(56)ty? t*vymbomjzi(6)ty? bmojyepmty(7)ty wn;jzwaompmty(14)ty? uavmitrn(35)rs_m;jzi jrerm_{pm}maytus_m;u o,y;con pmqynm&ißu;jzpon/ 0Pau_{sm}xibUEi o&yrcb_{rs}m;uivn; &&con/

ri;o0P \ u_{sm}rs_m;vm pmq \ apwem tjri

ri;o0Pon acwpr;tp 1930r 20&mpuecge;tx uAsma&caom orm&i 0g&iuAsmpmqßu;jzpon/ acwpr;uAsmacwü xi&m;aomuAsmpmq o;0;&con/ aZm*? ri;o0P? wuovarmioelpiwljzpon/ wuovarmioelpion acwpr; aemuyi;ü uAsmra&awmay/ pmoilum;a&bur ygarmuwm0exr;aqmi&i; jrerm pmayu tus_m;jycayon/ jrermuAsmori;ü aZm*? ri;o0Pwon tus_m;au;Z;rs_m; orsm;jzpluon/ ri;o0Pon jrermuAsmori;wi uav;uAsmopujznay;con/

³ ri;o0P? 2015? 251/

⁴ - , i; -? 252/

⁵ - , i;- ? 257/

⁶ - , i;- ? 255-256/

x\w iuuAsmpu\vn;jznay;con/ x\Utyi taemuyi;bv'uAsmypo, í oU
rmwr;? z;arivmly uAsmrsm;ua&z\con/ vu&majymiajrmuaom cpm;rtre tcp
tvr;uAsmrsm;u\vn; a&z\Ueicon/ au;vuaew\ trt&mrsm;u\vn;a&z\í
au;vuucpciwwatmi au;vuaemucjy\UAsmrsm;u\vn; a&z\Ucayon/ ri;o0P
\uAsmrsm;u au;vuUAsmrsm;? tcptvr;uAsmrsm;? oajyn\UAsmrsm;? ysO;riww
uAsmrsm;? uav;uAsmrsm;? iuuAsmrsm;ponjzi tyi;rm;cu m pmq\apwem tjrirm;
u avvwijyon;rnjzpygon/

au;vuaemucjy\UAsmrsm;r pmq\apwem tjr i

ri;o0Pon au;vupmqyy jrermu;awmo? au;awmo;w\ c\pz,?
av;pm;z, trt&mrsm;u azmxwuma;vuU cpciwwvmapvaom apwem tjr i
rm;jzi z\Uqwwayon/ au;vuUAsmrsm;tjzp 0gwi;cse? ajAmo? vuaqmijye?
z;aomllum uAsmrsm;u aw\Ueiayon/

pmqon]0gwi;cse} uAsmjzi au;vu"avuiyqxm;on/ eeuapmapm qr;x
cu&e? alu;pnw;í tr\Ua0&e? &m0;au smirallu;pnoEiqr;awmcu&i <uvmy? u&i
vxuvmaomaeU? csuaom [i;vsrm ig;iycujzpy? au;s&m"avEiy&y taxaxu
jria, mivmrapon/

]i uuav;up;p? p;p

0i;aygurmjrn

csewely nrax;&U

qr;cupav;/ /

0;aygi;uqr;awmwi

o;acsmi;axmuyi

ovivialu;pnw;v

xe;wqr;/ /

tr\wo;ura0

oe;wanmia&

rmygapurmom;

atm uxuevsm;/ /

&m0;ualu;pno

ausmi;a0V0e/ /

qr;awmcu&i'uvr

qr;tyjiy/ /⁷

ponjzi uAsmuzl qxm; on/ au;vuaewon eeuapmapm xí omoema&twu
qr;cuji;? b&m0wyla u;pnxum trla0ji;? qr;csijyici;? vi, obm0 qr;c
u&iEi qr;avmi;onvri, \ tcsZmwvr;? &ivijern&u ar;aom tcs wp0g
0w&etm;cxm;y ajym qae [ewu uAsm&oem;vnv, atmi a&zlxm;on/ jrerm
pmzwy&owt m; jrermrtaxax uem;vnapcsiaom A'omoemu tav;xm;
apvaom jrerm, Oau;ru o&apvaom pmq \ apwem tjrirsm; [qEion/

jyvwjAle;&, el

awmiue;&mompce;qu

a':a&ar? O;a&cr;i, w

omoem? OgOgve;&ew

qe;vuwa jAmopn/ /⁸

[aomajAmouAsmonvn; au;vu uAsmwp'y'jzpon/ jrerm"av? jrerm^{1/2}u?
au;vuaevryEi armi&iavmi;w\ vi, obm0wuxre;um ajAmouazm uL;
xm;on/ puAsm t& q&mri;o0Pon au;vuaew\ b0? au;vu&jrermr? rerm
p&uEplcuy? jrermr&zvm, Oau;ru xe;or;apmia&mu tre;wivaom pmq \
apwem tjriu oEiayon/

p0jzi pmq \apwem tjrirsm;ji zlxm;on au;vuaem ucjy uAsmrsm;
on zw^{1/2}ou oabmu Epouapaom uAsmrsm; [qcsiygon/

t csp t vr; uAsmrsm;vm pmq \apwem tjri

q&m u;on vi, w\ obm0u cpm;em;vnum tcs? t vr; uAsmrsm;u jy/p
a&zcon/ cpm;rtreji pwx cuz, jzpatmi ta&aumi;aom uAsmrsm;jzpluay
on/

vi, wp0; \ cpoEie;pyvaomvn; cpo \ b0on rrvr;rrEiaom tjrir
jzpaey? cpoEi e;py&e u;pm;zlv, y? cpoonvr;ír&Eiavmuatmi t vr;
uma0;vaom tjrirye;wp yi uo jzpaeypon vi, wp0; \ cspci;arwmEi
ywouí]]cirom}} uAsmji pmquyazmon/

⁷ ri;o0P? 1973? 102/

⁸ - , i; -? 75/

]]ruiom on? ciygv:uvn;

yixuv\0i;? Ziairi;oU

buLoi;a0o? jriaomalumi}}⁹

[ícpcipvr;wwaom vi, obm0cpm;r? cparwrmrsm;ua&zUxm;on/ cpoEp0;
 \ b0um[cuu cpm;vr;armrapaom? tqitwe;umjcm;aom cpoEp0;\ tcsp
 tay: u½Pmourapaom tjzpu yazmxm;Eion pmq \apwem tjrirsm; [qEion/

]]yiv, aA}}uAsmwi cspotwu trU;pm;aeaomoon cpoeia0;&müoU
 om;c&y? cspotwu oq&e aw;uAsmua&rwy; oqay;vy? cpoeia0;&mü [[
 ononvnywom;vmaec&y? cpoxyjevmaom tcg cpoxyg;ü lui, mEior;?
 om;ajr;rsm;eijzpaey? olaomvn; cpoEitm;v;twu o\aw;uAsmrsm;jzi aysm&i
 ap&e vyaqmiay;rntalumi; zUqxm;aom uAsmav;jzpon/

]]unomcia&?ociay;}} [aom tq;cspmom;u ty'wi;üawU&ozi tcsp
 twucpm;ae&aom o\ tjzpu ay:viapon/ cporom;pu aysm&iray; rnotjzp
 zUxm;onrm uAsm½oxcualuupm cpm;&apon/ pmq \ tvr;oeaom cpm;r tre
 u azmxwjyEiaom uAsmav;jzpon/ pmq \]]w&m;O;a [m vnyg}}?]]EpZmwwppw}}?
]]wa, m&i}} uAsmwlonvn; tcsp tvr;uAsmrsm;yijzpon/ xuAsmrsm;wivn;
 armiEir, \ tcsp tvr;rsm;u azmjyxm;onu awUEion/

oajyn\U&smvpm pmq \apwem tjri

tr&om;pmqB; q&mri;o0Pon jrermvrs&? jrermEii? jrermpayu orw
 atmicpcowp0;jzpon/ jrermvrs&wtwu tm;rmewuapaom uAsmrsm;uzew;
 Eicon/ oajyn\U&sm [q&aomvn; ouleb0rvwajrmuap &etm;xwa&
 twu]]oajyn}} ?]]Zmenx;}}?]]armiwlci}}]]ayguiynü}} uAsm rsm;jzi jrermZmwrmu
 jriwiay;caom pmq \apwem tjrirsm;u wijvygon/

pmqon]]armiwlci}} uAsmjzi -

]]armiwlci

ulewi;rsm? raysmc:ieU

tw, O? armiEi½e;&ezU

oabmc:n? 0wxnre;umy

o;zU z:iu}}¹⁰

⁹ ri;o0P? 1973? 75/

¹⁰ ri;o0P? 1973? 72/

[ívn; trs;om;trs;or;w\ 0omEpw"mwu jriwiay;con/ trs;om;
vwajrmua&;twu rrwUjrerms;w\ csnur;? ziyie0wjci;jzi &ywn&e
Bul;pm;oiallumi;axmujiyon/ pmq\ jrermEia&;tjri c ,c:uaumi;u azmxwxm;
aom? 0omEpw"mwu w;ym;apaom uAsmjzpon/ jrermxuueu t;ay;ly; Eijcm;
jzptxnutm;ray;b ulewi;r½e;xuapvaom pmq\apwemtjrium; Bu;rm;vyg
ayon/

]]Zmenx;}} uAsmü

]]vwvyao mtcg? tjrer mwU

csLcsm EleU? wtm;EUu

nmiaxmuaw;? om;i ,ax;ol

jiya&; nouluapri;}}¹¹

[í vwvya&;aomtcg &iao;i,wUtm; rnoquvuuiw,llu&e? use;rm
Bulcií ≺eiynpaom om;aumi;&wemrsm;jzpvmluap&e? pn;½;qaqmioxm;aom
uAsmjzpon/ tem*wwi ,rsm; \b0u t;m;me&apc:ion apwemyijzpavon/

boUjzi pmq\ jrermjyntay:c:prwE;aom apwemtjri? jrermjyntv
tay: ywt [ejzi lun&vaom pmq\pwcpm;c:ur sm;u jria ,micpm;rayon/

b0tm;rmeEi Zmwrm u smrsm;vm pmq\apwemtjri

acwpr;pmq;u;q&mri;o0Pon jrermjyntm;oUueib0r vwajrmuatmi
wuy0i&e uAsmrsm;jzi vUaqmcon/]]ys0;riww}} uAsmon pmq\tx; ausmum;
aom uAsmwpjzpon/

]]ys0;riww}} uAsmwi -

]]xyiiww? ys0;rtion

ppuvn;βu? jctvn;jzp

"m;xpv n;c? aev\vn;wu

avji;cuvsu? riu0;acgi;}}¹² [ízlqon/

q&mri;o0Pon ys0;riwwuAsmji avmuu&iqi&vmatmi? b0u&&00
Bulcipm aUquvr;Eivmatmi? b0latmiye? to;tyirms;jzi rm;rm;rwrw
&ywn&vmatmi t;m;rmersm;ay;pr;Eicon/ b0witm;i ,r? qi;&yiye;rrsm;u

¹¹ trm? a':? vxEit rsm;? 2007? 27/

¹² trm? a':? vxEit rsm;? 2007? 49/

&iqiausmv; tEi,wwvmapon/ atnirirtaxaxu t&,Eivmon/
ponum; y0;riwwuAsm a&;o\apwemrsm;allumiyi jzpayon/

ri;o0P\]]ormwr;}} uAsmwivn; &eoe, cslwjrycaom A;iwu wurí
ao tqajymuu sm;pponav;Ei &m o&m om;w ar;jre;ajmq ajzum; uyjzp&yu
Zmwvr;qium a&;z\xm;on/]]ormwr;}} uAsmü

]]tarmaajymuu sm;? wi;jynt m;u

bmrsm;rmcvoen;/

c&;rwww? vr;cvwwi

u, vwa&micm? c&yg í

t m;emcallumi;ajmygav/}}¹³ [z\qx m;on/

ajymuu sm;&abmav;on wi;jynt m; t m;emcallumi;ajmqcon/ zuqp
awmvea&;üuq;c&aom &abmrsm;uomru vwvya&;wuy0i &abmrsm;\ au;Z;
u\vn; lunnn\pmcpm;vrrapon/ pmqon vwvya&; wuy0i&abmrsm;\ au;Z;
Ei vwvya&; \wez;u oapciaom apwem tjriEia&;z\con [q&ayrn/

ri;o0P\ pm&ou t m;rmeay;aom? oulercpwu xi&;apvaom? EiiEi
vr;:tay: opm&apvaom pmq\apwem tjrirsm;u]y0;riww}]]ormwr;}} uAsmrsm;ü
txit&m;aw\&on/

uav;uAsmrsm;vmpmq\apwem tjr i

ri;o0P\ uav;uAsmrsm;wi armiac;z\ uAsmrsm;on x;jcm;vayon/ xuAsm
rsm;on uav;rsm;tz\ waysmwyg;&wq\ u&i; A[ow totvrmwu &,Ei
uayon/ uav;uAsmrsm;wi]]ye;on}}?]]uuwa&;}}?]]oyo on}}?]]ouyg}}?
]]v, apmiw}} uAsmrsm;on xi&m;on/]oyo on} uAsmwi

]]qr;tyee? tar&uv?

eujzereu? ausmi;xur, ?

arivn; vur, ? cserxm;eU?

tarom;awm? yi;vw, }}¹⁴ [ízlqx;aom]oyoapmi} uAsmon
uav;i, wltm; eeupmapmx í qr;cujci;? qr;tyee&uvvu be;u;ausmi;o
om;jci;pon jrerm"avx;p? trt&mrsm;u EpoujrwE;vmapon/

uav;won

¹³ ri;o0P? 1997? 23/

¹⁴ ri;o0P? 2015? 34/

]]armiav;& , ? xygawm?

a&miev m v a y g}}¹⁵

[aom]ye;on} uAsm x u u o| armiErci;cpci , , v m l u a y v r r n/]]wwa&Og;}
uAsm x u u o| rci t a y :cpcir y v m a y v r r n/

o l j z p í r i ; o 0 P \ u a v ; u A s m r s m ; o n u a v ; r s m ; t m ; t E i r c t & ; r a y ; p w ?
o b m 0 w & m ; u c p c i w , w m p w ? & y u s k ; & m u s k ; o n y ; v p w r s m ; a y : a y g u v m a p o n /
x U a l l u m i u a v ; u A s m r s m ; o n t z ; w e a o m u A s m r s m ; t j z p & y w n c a y o n /

i u u A s m r s m ; v m p m q \ a p w e m t j r i

r i ; o 0 P o n u a v ; i , r s m ; \ & i x w i w & p m e u a v ; r s m ; u c p c i p w ? o e n ;
p w r s m ; a y : a y g u v m a t m i j c , r e ; a & ; z l j y o n / x u A s m r s m ; u z w & & i ; u a v ; r s m ; t o
t v r m ? A [o w w ; y m ; v m a p o n / u a v ; r s m ; t w u v r ; n e x m ; a o m v u a q m i r e a v ;
r s m ; j z p a y o n / i u u A s m r s m ; w i]] y e ; w r z i u } } ?]] w p w w ; } } ?]] u (; u m } } ?]] u r ; x ; i u } } ?
]] i u r s u l y r s m ; } } ?]] a & Z ; u u } } p o n u A s m r s m ; j z i u a v ; w t m ; i u r s m ; j z i r w q u a y ; o n /

]]a&Z; u u } u A s m ü p m q u -

]]ae l c g u s ; a l l u m u ? n c g a & m u r

armiat m u x u & ? o b m 0 a l l u m i

{& m r s u 0 e ; ? j z p a y : x e ; o n } }¹⁶

[í Z ; u u \ n t c g r t j y i x u & a o m o b m 0 ? r s u p j y l ; u s , a o m t j z p u u a v ;
r s m ; t m ; o a p l y ; j Z ; u u } i u t a l l u m i ; u v n ; p w 0 i p m ; v m a p o n /

ye;wrzi u u A s m w i -

]]ez;e&? Ewo;rn;

o p a c g i ; x u i j l x u v m

-----www? w p a e l v ;

a e y w e ; v n ; ? w a c g u w m } }¹⁷

[í y e ; w r z i u \ y y e ; o i j y i ? t a & m i t q i ; E i w u v y & m ; y j r i u i ; u u a v ;
r s m ; t m ; o & a p o n / u a v ; r s m ; p ; p r ; v p w j z p v m a p o n /

]]w p w w ; } } u A s m ü -

¹⁵ r i ; o 0 P ? 2015? 35/

¹⁶ - , i ; - ? 78/

¹⁷ - , i ; - ? 207/

]]u , rnu , azm? wpaumi u m;

wpww;iur [wv m;}}¹⁸

[ízljy u m o t r n o a z m l y ; a t m w w y ? u i ; v , r s m ; y u l l u m ; t u E i ½ ; j y w a w m ü
a e w w y ? r ; p w a & p w a e w w y r s m ; t m ; z l q x m ; o n / w p w w ; i u \ o b m O E i a e x i r
" a v t a y : o & v m a p a o m u A s m a v ; j z p o n /

B u l ; l u m u A s m w i l l u l ; l u m \ y p ? z r r c c m y ? u s l a w m ü t o u v y a e y ? t o o m y
p o n j z i u a v ; r s m ; t m ; o a p o n /

]]v n & n a j c & n E w o ; & n

o l O ; a c g i ; u c y e e l

o a t m o n u m ; o m , m v

c & m r w o q a v l u }}¹⁹ [í z l q j y x m ; o n / l l u l ; l u m i u t a l u m i ; q u a v v m
& e v n ; E ; a q m x m ; o n / Z ; u u ? c i y y i u ? ' ; ' w i u ? v i a u m i y ; i u r s m ; t a l u m i ; u
]] i u r s u i y } } u A s m ü a z m u s l ; x m ; o n / u r ; x ; i u \ o a o m i p y q m ; u i ; r q m ; v u p m ; y ?
t y c e w i v i E l y r m w e ; v e ; q t y y p o n x ; q e ; a o m t a j c t a e r s m ; u v n ;]] u i r ; x ;
i u } } u A s m w i j y q x m ; o n /

p o r i ; o 0 P o n o u r ; u i a o m t E v u & m r s m ; j z i u a v ; r s m ; \ & i ü a u s ; i u
r s m ; u c p c i p w ? y r o v í p ; p r ; v p w r s m ; j z p a y : v m a p v a o m a p w e m t j r i r s m ; j z i
] i u u A s m } r s m ; u z e w ; j c , r e ; c a y o n /

l c l i o ; o y c s u

p m q r i ; o 0 P o n a c w p r ; p m a y ? a c w p r ; u A s m r s m ; u a & ; z l c o a c w p r ; p m a y
a c g i ; a q m i w p 0 ; j z p o n ? ? q & m r i ; o 0 P o n a u s ; v u \ o a b m o b m 0 r s m ; ? a u s ; a w m
a e w l \ b 0 r s m ; u a u s ; v u a e m u c j y l u A s m r s m ; j z i z l o c o n / r c i a r w m u z l o a o m
u A s m r s m ; ? t c p t v r ; u a z m u s l ; a o m u A s m r s m ; ? w i ; j y n c p p w ? E i i c p p w u & i o e
a p a o m u A s m r s m ; ? j r e r m ½ ; & m , O a u s ; r " a v x ; p u j r w E ; w e z ; x m ; r a p a o m u A s m r s m ; u
p v i a t m i z l q E i c o n /

]] c g a E q e ; a w m v r ; r w , } } ?]] a j A m o } } ?]] 0 g w i ; c e } } ?]] E i ; q y i } } w l o n a u s ; a w m o ?
a u s ; a w m o m ; w l \ c p j c i ; a r w m u j r i a w l E i a o m u A s m r s m ; j z p o n /

]] v , a p m i w a v ; } } ?]] z ; a r m i v m l y } } ? p a i r u ;]] p v , u i ; } } w l o n a u s ; a w m a e
v , o r m ; w l \ b 0 u y j y i p m z l q E i a o m u A s m r s m ; j z p a y o n / r i ; o 0 P o n u a v ; u A s m
u p w i a & ; z l í v r ; j y E i c o w p 0 ; j z p o n / u a v ; u A s m r s m ; w i a r m i a c ; z l u A s m r s m ; } } o n

¹⁸ r i ; o 0 P ? 2015? 208/

¹⁹ - , i ; - ? 210/

xi^{1/2}m;on/ uav;uAsmrsm;on uav;rsm;twu jrerm? jrerm"av? jrerm^{1/2}ursm;
 yw0e;u^sia^mutvwu cpcijrWE;vmapaom uAsmrsm;jzpon/ uav;rsm;twu
 iuuAsmrsm;uzew;í au^s;iuw&pmersm;u ovmlly;cpciwwvmatmivn; a&;zlc
 on/ oUjzpí ri;o0Pon acwpr;pmq? r^{sl};cppmq? au^s;vupmq? uav;pmay
 zci^u;omru? jrerm^{pmay}EiuAsmu au^s;Z;rsm;pmjy/caom? apwemtjrixuoeaom
 pmq^u;jzpon [o;oywi^{jyvygon}/

e*;

ri;o0Pon apwemtjri &ioeojzpon/ pmqon ye;Eiyipn? jrerm^{pm}
 jrerm [aom zw&m^{rsm};u^{vn}; a&;oeicon/ uAsmEiywouívn; au^s;vuAsm?
 tcptvr;uAsm? tr^{sl};om;a&; pw"mw&ioeapaom uAsmrsm;? jrermruazm^{u^{sl}};aom
 uAsm?jrerm trtui? jrerm^{pxm};u azm^{u^{sl}};jyaom uAsm? jrerm ,0au^s;ru o^{1/2}vm
 apaom uAsm ponjzi uAsmr^{sl};patmi vn;a&;zUeicao;on/ uav;uAsmrsm;jzivn;
 uav;w\ pwEv;ü avmutvw&m;u ^{1/2}jriwwvmapon/ t&m&m tay:axmuxm;
 nmwmpwrsm;c0ivmapon/ oUjzpí q&mri;o0Puoynm &irsm;u tajrmtjri
 Bu;pmjzi apwemr^{sl};aprsm;? Bu^{jzelum} jypEicici;allumi jrerm^{pmay}? jrermuAsmon
 avmuu tvqiv^u cirmpm&ywnEic&jci; jzpayon/

u;r;u;pm&i;

wir;Ei tjc*m*;/(2019)*low/jriaonri;o0Pl* yxrtiurl &euel pwu;c^{sl}c^{sl}pm tywu/
 ri;o0PI(1973)*l ti; , m;ueo/tuwl* yxrtiurl &eue? Zpm^yEywu/
 ri;o0PI(1997)*l ri;o0PuAsmaygi;cyl* yxrtiurl &euel pmayavmuyEywu/
 ri;o0PI (2015)*l uav;uAsmaygi;cyl* yxrtiurl &euel the key collection.
 jrerm^{pm} tzlO;p;Xmel(2008)*l jrerm t b"mel 'w , t* iurl &euel ynma&;0e^u;Xmel
 0i;re? wuovl(2006)*l acwopuAmrwzl ww , t* iurl &euel &mjynpm tywu/
 trm?a':?vxeitrsm;l(2007)*l a&v0i;wri;o0Pl* yxrtiurl &euel trww&pm tywu/

&euebaq \ &oqi&moabmw&m; rsm; av vmcsu

oZmat;*

pmwr; t usO;

ppmwr;on &euebaq \ &oqi&moabmw&m; rsm;u av vmwijyxm;aom
pmwr;jzpygon/ xolavvm&mwi &euebaq \ ye;oiou;a&en;x; pmtyr
&ooabmw&m; rsm;u tavvmc tjzpowrwygon/ ppmwr;wi tvumur;u
tajcyijy; xur;rsm;r &oqi&moabmw&m;Ei a&pmayom"ur;m;uol pmzwowu
em;vn&ercucapb v , u&i;vi;pm em;vnv , aprn ruarmuacw pmaywu
om"uaqmium a&om;xm;yu av vmwijyxm;ygon/
aomcupum;v; - &o ? &ooabm? &ota&twu

e'ge;

pmay ye;c? ye;y? obi*w paomtEynmupw|wi ro;rjzpta&ygaom
pum;wpv;r m]&o]jzpygon/ &o [aom ygVpum;u om , maomcpm;r [teuzijy;
t&om [ívn; jrermrjy|uon/ oci;em;axmi&i; ye;cum;lun&i;? ylun&i;
pwxwijzpay:vmaom cpm;ron om , maomEpouaom cpm;r? t&om½aom cpm;r
jzpjy; xcpm;ru &o [ac:jci;jzpon/

x|alumi &o [on tEynmwpcu cpm;&ontwu pwvy½m;cpm;r rsm;
jzpay:ly;v|i tq;wiom , mEpour jzpay:vmjci;jzpon/

ppmwr;wi t"uwijyvaomtcurm tvumur;vm &ooabmw|u pma&
q&m &euebaqu o\ye;oiou;a&en;x;pmtywi trsm;em;vnv , atmi
pw0ipm;z , aumi;atmi om"ur;m;jzi ziq½i;vi;jyxm;yu av vmwijyxm;jci;
jzpygon/ ppmwr;uavvmjci;jzi &oqi&moabmw&m;wu yrem;vno&Eirn [,
qrygon/

pma&o \ twlyw t usO;

q&m&euebaqon 1916 cEpwiar;z m;jy; 1986-cEpwi u , veygon/
u , vecewi tou(70)½jy; 0w|rsm;? ur;rsm;? rwwr;rsm;? aqm i;yg;rsm; trsm;tjym;
a&om;caom q&m|u;jzpygon/ pmta&tom; ajymiajrmuaom pma&q&m tjzp trsm;
av;pm;luygon/

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pmXme? jynwu o\ v

q&m \Zmwr m a';'&jrllle, ? a&y0^{1/2}mjzpon/ q&m ui, p0u au sm i;raec/
tpuutrrm pmoia y;on/ q&m uye;c q&epw0ipm;on/ i, p0uye;c x;cie
on/ be;lu;au sm i;wi ou, oau sm i;tyjy; y#uwur;pmr sm;tx avvm on/
touq, av;ig;Epwi trrxuajy;jy; ye;cynm? tuynmwu avuioiium;on/
1932 cwi &eueo|xuajy;vmjy; ye;cia&q touar;&i; pma&jci;twwu rjyw
avvmcon/

1933-34 cewi ouapmir*Zi;ü 0w(r sm;pa&on/ }varmi}? armivaq}?
]ow;aq} uavmitrnr sm;, on/ e*g;e*sm e, wi]0g;c, rvarmi} trnjzivr;
a&on/ xm;0, baq(aem izqyvaci;aqmi)Eiuijym;atmi }&euebaq} [aom
trnu, on/ 1939-41 wi e*g;e *sm e, t, 'wm tzl0i jzpvmon/

*yeawmvea&wi zmyc^{1/2}i ajratmuawmvea&u pe|vwí ye;cqjci;?
pma&jci;? jyZmwpp0wi quci; rsm; jy|vyon/]&euetp;&} jzpaeciewi pp&wy&i;
(4) \ t&wy&i;zi x m;0, jrllor;wuy? ti;pewuy? om, 0wc^{1/2}i wuyr sm;wi
yg0icon/ Avrl;c|ya [mi; armiarmi w oawmie, abm*v||u;1/2mrm tzt;c&onu
u, xw&e wyz||u0;aqmicon/

xlaem uwyrxu í pmaytEynmavmuwi jyevnvy^{1/2}m;on/ jrermEii
pma&q&mt oi; traqmi? 'Ou|? Ou|wm0ersm;u aqmi^{1/2}ucon/ 1972 c? Zviiv
wi jynyolxucmij; 1980 jynEp? lo*wvwi jrermEii jyea&mu on/ 1981 cwi
Eii*P&n b&on/ pmay? ye;c? jyZmw? 1/2y^{1/2}i tEynmr sm; wi Epyon/

q&m&euebaqpmayr sm;r m rwwr;? 0w^{1/2}n? 0w|w? jyZmw? pmaya&&m ur;
r sm;? uAsm b omijyer sm;ponjzi trst;tpm;pvion/]wuy [on? cavaom vn;?
wu, &on ru&nwpaygujwrm 0w| [ejzia&om;aom u, aw|rwwr; r sm;jz
on/]aoaom rwn alomaumi; \? jrermjynom;? py, wacw} wirm&mZ0i (ori)
aem uc0w(r sm;jzpon/ onr;onav? acw \om;aumi? ee; [mA;? o&pau sm} pon
0w^{1/2}n r sm;wi acwo^{1/2}yx i [yon/ 0w|wr sm;vn; tr sm;tjym;a&om;on/ e0a';
jyZmw? ri;om;u||u;aumi; jyZmwwu vn;a&om;on/]cspZe;o}rm traxmia&
vr;neur;jzpon/ umv'o \]r;wrwre}u 0;aom ZiEiwzu í b omijyeon/

]pum;eu} rm b ompum;Ei pmaya&&m aqmi;yg;aygi;c|y jzpon/]ou;
ye;oia&zciaom}?]ye;oio u;a&en;x;um;?}]pma&jci;tw w} [aomp may
ta&t om;q i&m pm ty(3) tyu vn;jypcon/

1/ &o oabm

&oqonrm pwcpm;Epouryijzpon/ &oon tveorar|eueaompw
upjzpon/ acwtququwi urmynm^{1/2}i? jrermynm^{1/2}i to;o;w|on &o
oabmu p;pr;azmxwcl u&mr &oEiywouaom t, u*P; r sm;p may:xe;c

on/ jrerm paywivn; oaAm"m tvum&ur;u tajcyí tvumen;emrsm; &o
oabmw&m; rsm;u us, us, jyellavvmclun/

jrerm tvumur;w\ vu0;q&mr oaAm"m vum&ur;jzpy; oaAm"m vum&
\q&mr vn; &opmaywi tvumua½we;wicaom '@\ umAsm' óur;jzpyg
on/ xUallumi yi ygVoaAm"m vum&ur;ü &o oabmu us, us, jyejye azmjyji;
r½cEio v jrerm tvumur;rsm;üvn; tvumEi*Puom a½we;wiy; &ou
a½we;wi tus, razmjyEicji;jzpon [ynm&irms;u o;oycluygon/

xUallumi ygVEijrerm tvumur;rsm;on &opmaywi tvumua½we;wicaom
ur;rsm;jzpcji;Ei ax&0g'A'b m om0i& [e;awmrsm; \ 0;aqmiratmu wi½cji;
allumi xur;rsm;wi &ojzpay:rtu&w&m;rm a½we;olra&mucb zew;r
tallumi;w&m;jzpaom tvumEi*Pyi;om a½we;ola&mucon [qEiygon/

2/ &ota&twu

tveoraraom &o\oabmu ynm½iw\ tp0tquavvmp;pr;cluy; &o
ta&twuuyi jycluon/ &ota&twuazmjy&mwi ynm½iwt, tqci; ujym;
jcm;em;rsm; ½luygon/

trsm;em;v nvucxm;aom &ota&twurm]]&ou;yg;}} jzpon/ x t, tq
on y*acwuyi jrermEiioa&mu½aejy [qaom oaAm"m vum&ur;ut&i;caom
t, tqjzpon/

oaAm"m vum&ur;wi &ou;yg; [ovrwjci;on &weaumour;u trij\í
qji;jzpalumi; a, mri;ßu;0;z;viu relqxm;yg on/&ou;yg;u jrerm pygarmu
0;{armi u]cp½ioem;? wnum;ur;lu puqyalumu½U? &0tlo? aemt&om} [í
rwom;&v, atmi a&zUxm;yg on/}}¹

&o ½pyg; [aom t, tqrm]]tr&aumo#umwivmaom t, tqjzpon/
xur;wi o*g&&ou (1)"ro*g& &o(w&m;u cpjci;)? (2), 'o*g& &o(ppwu
onuc;pEpoujci;)? (3)umro*g& &o(re;r a, m u sm;w\ cplu\ujci;) [ío;r&;
ujym;jy;aemu oE&oon "ro*g&&oyijzpaomallumi oE&ou o;jcm;criyawmb
o*g& &oxoioi;um &o½pyg; [í ac;qji;jzpon/}}²

&oq, yg; [aom t, tqvn; ½yg on/]]]&ob} rnaomur;ü &o u;yg;wi
0pv&o [aom &owpyg; xyxnum &oq, yg; [qji;jzpon/

]]&oav;yg;om ½on [aom t, tqvn;½yg on/ o*g&&oxo [ó
&ouoi;on/ ½'&oxo u½Pm&ouoi;on/ 0& &oxo tAw&ouoi;on/
0bp&oxo b, meu&ouoi;on/ o*g&? ½'? 0&? 0bpwlon y"me&orsm;jzpy;

¹ ciri?armi("EjzL)2010?138/

² - , i; -/

[ó? u½Pm? tA\w? b ,meuwon xy"me&oto;o;\ qiym;jzpaom ty"me&o
rsm;jzpon twu pipptm;zi &oav;yg;om ½on [qygon/]]³

&oo;yg; t , tqrmr q&maZm* \ t , tqjzpon/]]q&mu tvum ur;xu
&ou;yg;u jrerm t&yom;w o;pav½aom]tvr; taq; taom] [aom oabmo;&y
Einum tvr;&o? taq;&o? taom&o [í o;pcjcm;xm;yg on/ o*g&? tA\w? 0&
oE&owu tvr;&o [í vn;aumi;? u½Pm? ½'? 0bp? b ,meu&owu taq;
&o [í vn;aumi;? [ó &ou taom&o [í vn;aumi; o;ccjyji;jzpygon/]]⁴

&owpyg; [aom t , tqvn;½on/ xt , tq t& oE&oonom wp0;wn;
aom tpptre&ojzpí use&o½prsl;on rrw \ o;jcm;taumi;rm;aygi;q jzpay:r
alumi oE&orxuay:vmlujy; o;jcm;taumi;rm; clyjir;yaysuom;onEi wpjyi
eu oE&otwi;o iyv%;aysuu ,om;luon/ o]jzpí oE&owpcwn;om
wu , ½aom&ojzpí use&o½prsl;rm wu , r½b ½on [xi&aom &orsm;jzplu
on [qalumi; q&mlu;0;a&atmiu]&opmay \&o} ur;wi relxm;yg on/
oE&oonjirouon/ or'&ma&jyiEiwí use&o½prsl;won , i;a&jyi \ vi;rm;
Eiwuon/ or'&ma&jyiom wu , ½í? vi;rm;um; wu , r½u [Oyrmay;xm;yg
on/ xalumi &ota&twuu p;pr;avvmjci;on &ouem;vnatmi llul;pm;&mü
wpen;wpvr; taxmutyivrrn [qEiygon/

3/ &euebaq \&oqi&m oabmw&m;rm;av vmcsu

pma&owp0;on a&p&mtalumi; t&m½jy; xtalumi; t&mu &n½ , csu wpcc
jzi yazma&zlav½&m x&n½ , csuwi o \apwemEioabmxm;c , csuwi xi[y
v½u½yg on/ xalumi &euebaq \]]ye;oio;u;a&en;x;um;}} pmtyi vn;
pma&o \ apwemEi&n½ , csuwu awljrio½&ygon/

q&mu bpm tytrmpmwi]]ppmon pma&oua&om;jyipygon/ [qaom
vn; pipp pma&o l u/ , yiÓPjzi a&om;jyipxm;jci;r [w? on oem ou&mZ 1696
cEp avmuu o [Vule;üri;jycaom y&urAm [ri;vuxuwi t&ioCm&uw
rax&a&p&i tyaoam oaAm"mvum& trn&on tvum ur;xr tpwtyi;tcslu
bpma&o \ , qcsluwljzi wpqia&om;wijyji;jzpon/]]⁵ [azmjyxm;jy; tvum
ur;rm;vm &oabmrsm;u tajiym pmayavvmow v , u½i;vi;pm em;vn
Eiap&etwu om"ursm;jzi azmxwwijyxm;yg on/

rvur;&i;jzpaom oaAm"mtvum&ur;βu; wpcv;on pm? uAsm a&zluou;
en;ur;βu;jzpy; tyi;βu;(5)yi;cum azmjyxm;yg on/ x(5)yi; teura&q&m
tqqwon tyi;wp? Ep? o;Eiig;wu pm? uAsm ou;vaom ynm&mr;owl

³ ciri?armi("EjzL)?2010?139/

⁴ - , i; -?138/

⁵ baq?&eue?2017?(c)/

en;vn oabmayguv,atni tu;cs;í a&om;jy\pcaomalumi ur;rsm;tajrmu
trsm;vn; ay:xucjy;jzpygon/ trsm;pru A&ma&z\vwotwu &nne;jy\plu
aom ur;rsm;jzpy; bpmprmr pma&vwotwu wpen;qaom 0wa&vwotwu
tx;jy\&nne;í a&om;jy\pcjci;jzpalumi;u vn; azmjyxm;ygon/

qμon &oabmw&m;Eiywouí azmjy&mwi Xm ,bm0ac: pma&ow\ a&z\
tyaom jzpjrtalumi;(9)cEi xtalumi;wu trjyí ay:vmwwaom pwEv;wü
cpm;z ,t&om(9)c? xt&omw\jzpvmaomalumi Zmwaqmiüvn;aumi;? zw½cpm;
owüvn;aumi; twwuxcu;jzpy;uwwaom wevyromwumbm0(8)c? x\tyi
talumi;aumi;wuri Zmwaqmiw\üjzpay:vmwwaom u ,pww\ xcucpm;&r?
A:bpmbm0(33)c? xlaemu re;rw\pwvy&m;ruazmjyaom u ,trt&m (rm,m=
tEb0)(40)w\üi;vi;csuEiwu u:urw&eazmjyxm;ygon/

yxr0;pm oaAm"mtvum&ur;t& Xm ,bm0u;yg;Ei &ou;yg;u qupyjy&mü
Xm ,bm0on tjcm;qeluisibujzpaom oabmw\alumiysup;wrjryrr&b yuw
twi;om wnaewwaom oabm&aomalumi Xm ,bm0[ac:qjci;jzpy; Xm ,bm0
(9)r<Ei &o(9)r<;wwnalumi;u -

- (1)&wXm ,bm0-o*g& &o (c<jci;)
- (2) [moXm ,bm0- [ó &o (& ,½ijci;)
- (3)aomuXm ,bm0-u½Pm&o (oem;jci;)
- (4)aum"Xm ,bm0-½'&o (lur;lulujci;)
- (5)Z*pmXm ,bm0-0bp&o (puqy½\ure;jci;)
- (6)b ,Xm ,bm0-b ,meu&o (alumu½\ujci;)
- (7)0e ,Xm ,bm0-tA\w&o (tlojci;)
- (8)0 ó [Xm ,bm0- 0&&o (&iwu<ujci;)
- (9)orXm ,bm0-oE&o (jir;at;jci;) [í jyqcygon/

ygvbmomt<jzi Xm ,bm0(9)r<wEi &o(9)r<won o'g torlomx;jcm;í
teut"ym ,twwyijzpon/ tu<;&o\trnu talumi;Xm ,bm0Ei ,0jy; jyq
jci;omjzpon/

o*g& &o \oabm

tvumur;w\ \ tv t& o*g& &ou "ro*g& &oEiumro*g& &o [í Epr<;
&alumi;jyqon/ o*g&&oon cpciEpourt&omjzpon/ vviy<? vryw<cpci
Epouluyu a&z\laompmayta&t\on o*g&&oajrmuaom ta&t\jzpon/

]]tvumur;rsm;wi o*g& &ou armiEir ,raygi;&ao;r c<jrwe;&aom cpm;r
(ta ,m*o*g&&o)? armiEir ,aygi;zuji; c<jrwe;aomcpm;r (oarm*o*g& &o)?

armiEir, cplu/uy; uuom;&ontwu jzpay:aomcpm;r(0ya, m*o*g& &o)
[ío;r;cjyon/

xlyi "ro*g& &o(w&uEpoujci;)Ei, 'o*g& &o(ppwujci;u Epou
jci;)wuvn;jyxm;on/ ollaom"ro*g& &ou oE&oEitww[, Eion/
, 'o*g& &ou 0&&oEitww[, Eion/ o*g& &o [qvī a, musm;Eire;rw
axmiig;&marwmjzic;puaom talumi;t&mu zlaomtzu [cjc;rw, on/ tcsu
rbaqr;tcsp? w&u;rwe;on tcs? oi, ci; rwaqtcprsm;zuvivn; o*g&
&oajrmuon [em;vnaelun/}}⁶

qμ&euebaqu 0ya, m*o*g& &ou yr;ei; \aen\ n0wr Zmwaumi
n\ nEiarmixe;ciw\ talumi;jzi on"ujycon/ Zmwaumin\ n\ on oltcpu
armixe;ci \jii;y, jci;uc&aomtcg]n\ n\ onum; ajcvr; &re;ro? bmurowr?
tb, uom;on [ír trwrxm;rouo\jzpum t½;ym arwpc;u avsmwpc;u
vmcav&m Z&yua&mure;roa&muvmcav \ /}}⁷ [0ya, m*o*g& &o \ tEpw
cpm;ru ay:viatmiziqjyxm;on/

xalumi qμu]]&opmayzew;&mwi a, musm;Eire;rjzpap? vEi w&pme?
vEit&m0w? t&m0wEi t&m0w\ tci;ci;jzpap? wpcEiwpc pve; Epouluaom
tjzpay:apij; o*g& &o\jzpvmatmi a&azmen;u o&&evty ygon/ xa&azm
en;xrmvn; tci;ci;rawrcp&í p;&rawmiwrcpm;csu ay:apaom ta, m*?
tci;ci;aw\cpae&í auey\unE;r? cpr0rpwcpm;csu away:apaomoarm*?
tci;ci;cp\uygvu auui;&ygaomyiaomu cpm;csuw\ uay:apaom 0ya, m*
tm;v;yg0iaomo*g&&o;rs;u cjc;azmjy&evtyayon/}}⁸ [ziq&i;jyxm;ygon/

[ó &o \ oabm

tvumur;rs;wi [ó &ou &, armjy;&, jci; [ziqxm;jy; &, &ijci;u
jzppawwaomoabmalumi [ó &o [í , \ [&i;vi;azmijon/ yrejp½; jzpp0
twi;r [wb azmuiyeaomtoioPme trt&m? tjytr tajmtq wua&zlaom
pmayta&tzuon &iaomcpm;ru ay:ayguapontwu [ó &oajrmuaom ta&
tzljzpon/

&, p&mtalumi;alumi Zmwaqmiw\ pwwijzpay:aom &, ½ipw([mo Xm,
bm0)u trt&mtajmtqrs;jzi azmjyvuaomtcg y&owwi [m ó &o ay:aygu
vm&on/

⁶ ciri?armi("Ejz)?2010?90/

⁷ baq?&eue?2017?131/

⁸ - , i; -?163/

q&m&euebaqu [ó&ooabmuazmjy&mwi]]rrerueazmuyieaom= vy½;
 vyp0r[waom tci;t&m? pum;? to itjiw\jzpjy; xt&i;ctalumi;u rwn í
 vw\ur[wwm ,wr&wmawj\vyjyici;on eueaom taw;tac:rygon & ,p&m
 ououyijzpalumi; azmjyxm;on/ om"utaeEi q&m&u;ocibaomi; a&;om;
 caom q&m0eygy jyZmwta&;tom;u azmjyxm;on/ q&m0eygb jyZmwygZmwaqmi
 w\ajypum;rsm;? Zmwvr;zUpn;y? Zmwtrwnaqmuyw\on jzp½;jzpp0r[waom
 toiw\jzi zew;xm;aomalumi [ó&oajrmaom Zmwvr;jzpalumi; azmjyxm;
 on/

x\tyi jyZmwa&;onjzpa? 0w&a&;onjzpa & ,p&mZmwalumi;jzpa&e jzp½;
 jzpp0r[waom toi? tjzp? tajmrsm;jzi zew;&evtyalumi;? olaom twi;
 uvx;jy; & ,ci;ovrjzpoialumi; vr;neazmjyxm;ygon/

x\alumi[mopma&q&mw\on rjzpEi? r[wEionw\u twi;vyluij;
 vw\u & ,ci;aejci;on [mo\taiccoabmw&m;u oraraom0mPra&mpub
 tlur;twi; o;paejci;jzpalumi; eueaom taw;tac:rygon & ,p&mrsm;om
 jzpon [qEiygon/

u½Pm&o\oabm

u½Pm&oon pmemoem;rEi ,0aom&ojzpon/ pmayta&;tzlwpcu zwjy;
 aemu pmemoem;aom cpm;r? 0r;en;r? aluuaoomcpm;rwu ay:ayguv\i u½Pm
 &oajrmaon [q&rnjzpon/

tvumur;wi u½Pm&ojzpay:apaom Xm ,bm0onaomu Xm ,bm0jzpon/
 u&Pm&ou umrEiqiaom u&Pm&oEi "ru&Pm&o[í Epr&;&alumi; aomu
 Xm ,bm0a&muatmi yyep;&rz ,tjzpEi talumi;rsm;u ay:atmiazmEir pmzworsm;
 u oem;pwjzpay:vmatmia&;z\Eir u&Pm&oajrmaualumi; azmjyxm; on/ a0 óE&m
 Zmwr r'a'0aomua&muytzlon oem;pwu v\aqmay;Eiaom tzljzpon/
 om;or; Eiauii;&ontwu aomua&muaeaom r'a'0\trt&mrsm;? i,jrnwr;
 aompum;rsm;on pmzwou oem;pway:ayguvmapon/ xta&;tz\u Epoupm
 zw&i; oem;pway:vmejci;on u½Pm&ojzpygon/

u½Pm&oEiywouí q&m&euebaqu]aw;on}} [aom ruarmuacw
 0w\wpy'jzi om"ujycon/ x0w\wi tEynmorm;wpa,mu\ pwcpm;c;uEi
 tajtae w\uom"ujycon/ xtzwiciye;on\ aemiww&m;Ei p;&ryyejci;
 w\uazmjy; u½Pm&oajrmauatmi zew;a&;z\xm;on/

x\alumi u½Pm&o jzpay:&aom talumi;on oem;pz ,jzpa&aom talumi;
 p;&ryyeae&aom tjzpalumi (aomuXm ,bm0)u½Pm&ou cpm;&jci;jzpon [qEi
 ygon/

½'&o \ oabm

t vumur;ü cuxelur;u\wici;? truapmirme xm;ici;qon aum"Xm ,
bm0on ½'&oyizpallumi; ziqxm;on/ 0ewpw? rmpwEi rsuarmi uyici;on
½'&o \ 0bm0jzpon/ rupeici;on tEbm0jzpalumi; ziq&i;jyxm;on/ om"u
tjzp aum@"merax&on tuiovpilu ,aomvn; ,cib0u u tusk;qu
allumi xrax&\aemuyg; rmw*gr(trsk;or;)wpa ,muuvuygaeon [tjc;owu
xiluon/ xallumi ig&ion 'ó vjzpon/ rmw*grEitjraeon [pypu&u&m
rax&jrwu]oiwlon ovrpilu ,o? re;ruaqmi ,ww aomo [aom
lur;wr;aompum;jzi ajymiajmiwpzeEwce;veon cuxelur;u\wojzi wn;}}
[jyeveajymqici;on ½'&o \ 0'ye0bm0jzpy? rEpouír&uontwu tmvre0
bm0 jzpy? trua'gojzpum lur;wr;aom½'&o jzpyw\lazmijon/

½'&o \ oabmu q&m&euebaqu t*vytrsk;om;pma&q&ma&on jrerm
&mZ0iaemuc 0w\wpy'jzpon She was a Queen Eiom"ujycon/ x0w\wi
Zmwaqmib&iu rz&m;apmvu xri;ymtqycwvuon/ oueyü apmvu a&&
atmiyuci;jy; t&uccaomallumi &ewjyeici;jzpon/ olaom pm;rnqq b&iu;
u o&om;aomallumi trua'goxu&awmron/ x0wwiZmwaqmiw\
tjyetveajympum;rsm;u jyi;xeom trua'gouazmijaejy; ½'&oucpm;&apyg
on/

xallumia'gotru xuici;tjzpola&muvi lur;u\waom½'&o oabm
ay:vivmon [qEiygon/

0& &o \ oabm

0& &oon &&ir? wu<urEi , 0í ay:ayguvmaom &ojzpon/ wec;? vv
ponwizi wu<upm\l;yr;t m;xwaom tjzptyutrt&m? &&00aqmi½uaom
tjzptyutrt&mwuzlaom pmaytzlrm;on 0& &ajrmuaom tzlrm;jzpon/

t vumur;ü 0&&oon &&ijci; 0ó [Xm ,bm0jzpalumi;? 0&&o (3)rk;
&allumi; ai;w\rm ppwu&mü&&ijci;? tvlay;&mü&&ijci;? w&m;&&mü &&ijci;w\
jzpalumi; om"ursm;jiazmijyxm;on/ ppwu&mü&&ijci;qon 0&&oabmu
rm&ewri;t m; b&m;&iuatmijriawmrce;Ei om"ujyxm;ygon/ tvlay;&mü &&i
aom0&\ &ooabmu b&m;tavmi;awm Am&mPooaX;on rm&ewri; zeqi;
xm;aom r;uwi;o\ ouqi;vl'ge;cyjzi 'ge0&&o \ 0'ye0bm0ujyon/

w&m;&&mü&&ijci; "r0&&o \ oabmu rCa'0vum qawmi;ay;ce;(175)wi
yg&aom vumpy'jzi ziqxm;on/ pypü avema&m*gxuvu&aom &iom&yw&m
on ew\ya ,m*alumijzpay:vmaom E\qr;urpm;&ici;allumi avema&m*graymurí

ig\ twon tjyioXuuvu touab;rvn; aoap? rtyaomqr;uigrpm;
[relqyrm w&;"rEipyv;O;aom &&ir0&&ou cpm;&apygon/

q&m&euebaqu 0&&o\oabmu]]0&&oqwm Bu;yr;ralumijzpv&w
&ojzpjy; ruarmuwi toitr;rs;Ei&wwalumi; toitr;rs;Ei Bu;yr;&mw
aumi;wmvn;&jy; raumi;wmvn;&alumi; aumi;wmjzpap raumi;wmjzpap Bu;yr;
vatmijrijy; atmijrivtu;cpm;&wm [mocjzpjy; atmijriaomvn; tu;rcpm;&
ygu 'ujzpalumi;u urmausm0wEi½y&ium;rm;u om"uijy; &i;vi;ziqxm;
on/ [ri;a0;\]]tb;tEiyiv, }} 0w? *epwi;bw\]]yv}} 0w ponwlon
'uEi, Oaom 0&&orm;uay;pr;Eijy; ppa[;0yyg0iaom]]eujzevn; i&vr0;r, }}
[aom½y&irm ocEi, Oaom 0&&ou ay;pr;Eialumi;azmjyxm;on/

b ,meu&o\oabm

ab;&eolla&muaom tjzp (b , Xm , bm0)ay:viatmi azmjyEijci;alumi
alumup&maumi;jci;jzpaom t&om(0g)alumu&lz , aumi;ru b ,meu&o [qv
on/

tvumur;wi bv;? om;& ponw\ tqi;uawljrií alumuveljci;? q;0g;
euus ,aom tor;u;um;í alumuveljci;on b ,meu&ojzpalumi; ziqxm;
on/ om"utjzp to'o&cepjynaxmiri;w pm&ontalumi; azmjyaom tce;wi
yg&on &otzeremu azmjyxm;on/ cepjynaxmiri;wlon pmuzwtjy; tou
vyjym vipirww aove;yg;alumu&uy? ovrwnEiy? pm;v;u&aom pm;awmyu
tq;rowEiatmijzplu&on jzpp0uay:viatmi jyqxm;onrm alumu&lz ,
b ,meu&ou cpm;&apygon/

q&m&euebaqu alumup&mtjzpalumi alumupway:&jci;on b ,meu &o
jzpalumi;? alumup&mtjzpu jri&? o&? zw&aomtcg alumuvm oncpm;r tqio
ra&mur aemub ,vrsm;jzprv [aom p;&rpwv;wxixi0ivmatmi pmzwou
qaqmiEipr;&ygu b ,meu&oay:atmi jyEion [qEialumi; azmjyxm;on/
om"utaeji jrermtr;om;0;v'i bmojyeaom arm&pauwvp a&;om;caom She
was a Queen pmtyr o [ori;u;Ei trwu;&mZouew\ talumi;u azmjyxm;on/

]]xlaemu xyríviajrmuvu? tp,Eicízr;vu tururvyae&m
o [orm t½;rm;u;íalurum rcs rqa0'em cpm;ae&awmon
qi;u;on o [ou airo;í a&ajcwpacsmi;jzi &ibway: ei;xm;jy;
Emarmi;jzi vursm;ajcrsm;u wpcpqí cmavawmon/ aemuq;ü
0;acgi;u qjzwwvuav \ /}}⁹

⁹ baq? &eue? 2017?298/

[aomtzoŋ pmzwy&ow\pwu vy&m;vmapjy;alum&vmaomumi b , me
&ou cpm;&apygon/

xalumipmzwo\pwxwi alum&xwveŋEitw Epouoabmuŋon
cpm;r yg ay:ayguvmygu b , me&ou cpm;&on [qEiygon/

0bp&o\oabm

0bp&oon t&tŋ;t&om? puqyaomt&om jzpon twu 'lavmuwir&
Eiaom&or& jzpon/ 'lavmuwipuqyron t&omEir, Oyŋ/ Epouz,
raumi;yg/ &oavmuwir puqyrEi, Oí Epouom, mr ay:ayguEion/ ao;?
tyy ponwaalumivn;aumi;? rwyrujci;alumivn;aumi; jzpay:aom puqy
½½mji;u Z*pXm, bm0[ac:on/ 0bm0? tEbmoWEi aygi;zlvuaomtcg , i;
Xm, bm0on 0bp&ojzpvmon/ tvumur;wi 0bp&o uziq&mü ao;? jyn
ponwu awujriaomtcg pwwavyí puqy&&mji; tyyaumiponwu
awljriaomumi xwveŋipuqy&&mji;? ar? ui;? armponwu awljri&
aomumi p;&rípuqy&&mji;? raumi;aomtetoualumi Enacgi½½í&miv
z, cmji;? rvcirjricia, miaqmiavmuatmi puqyji;oabm [jyqxm;on/

q&m&euebaqu puqy½½montqix ra&muapumr re;p&mrEpjrŋ
p&maumi;on cpm;rr&ay:ayguvŋi 0bp&o [yiyygon/ armi&iarmi rr, r 0wir
armijrwomon re;p&m? rEpjrŋp&maumi;aom Zmwaqmijzpouoŋ 0;vw\
a&jynp;0wir 0wvawm& armiaomi;az\ o½yyutjyŋtr rsm;onvn; rEpjrŋ
p&maumi;aom trt&mjzpon/ *g&0e0gw yu, i;jy; zciuyi ½ao&aumi;re;rob
uvm;xirm tcom;xijy; tem;uzmay:wivaeaom zciupum;vr;ajymon jriui;
rm rEpjrŋz, aumi;vygon/ puqy½½montqix rji;xeapumr rEpjrŋon
cpm;rr&uum;ay;pr;Eiygon/

xalumiao;jyn? tytptywuomru vtrt&m tjzptyursm;u puqy
½½m z, ? re;z, ? rEpjrŋz, a&z½yaqmioxm;aom pmaytEynmrsm;u cpm;on
y&owtzi puqy½½mre;w;onEitw a&z½yaqmírrsm;u Epou om, maom
cpm;rr&ay:ayguapon twu 0bp&oon 'lavmuwir&Eiaom x;jcm;on &or&
jzpon [qEiygon/

tAŋw&o\oabm

tAŋw&oqonrm avmuürjriz;? rŋum;z; x;x;uutz, o&jzponu
ŋum;oawljri&aomowŋü tŋojci;oabm tAŋw&oujzpay:cpm;apon [tvum
ur;wiazmjyxm;yggon/

q&m u;&euebaqu tA\w&oon jzp½;jzpp0rjzpb avmuuvejy;
 tx;tqe;jzp&yalum i jzpay:av&aomvn;]ajrv\;r;ys? ay:apaysmuap? r[m yx0
 ajr\u;ororcgap? r[mor'&m u;u zm vvyjy;*s\i;um;nyvmEiap}} qaomwec;&i
 qeque? ruvnqequetjzpr\;rom tA\w&ojzpay:cpm;&on r[walumi; omre
 vw\ taw;tac? t j\trajmi;vcu? jy\vyu? ajymqcursm;onvn; jzpjryjr
 r[w b ajmi;vazmuiyeom;yg u t\oz, tA\w&ojzpeialumi;u pma&q&myg&
 bomiyexm;aom taomujyZmwEi om"uiycon/ xjyZmwwi taomuri;u;u
 urm&u v u½;&nEiatmiEijy;aem u vomrew½wcn; ajmi;vEicaom ajmi;v
 en;r\jzi urm&u vwvyaiay;½omru olwi;jyn\ t&iocijzpalumi; &&ipm
 pelvwjyvuci;on yw0e;ui&vtm;v;u tloom;apcon/ x\alum i q&m u;u
 jzp½;jzpp0u yveom;atmijzpy? zew;jyrtA\w&oo a&muapci; r[walumi;u
 vn; &i;vi;azmjyxm;yon/

x\alum i jzp&jzpp0xu veuaomjzp&yw\alum i tlo&aomcpm;ron tA\w
 &ojzpy; pmaytEynmrsm;ucpm;&i; xolaom tlopwrsm; ay:ayguvm&jci; onyi
 tA\w&oucpm;&jci;jzpon [qEiygon/

oE&o \oabm

t vumur;wi oE&oqonrm jirouaom&ajEEiwu jirouwnlun
 cicelaom pw&awmrueaom b&m;&[Empaom oawmaumi;wlu z;jri&aomtcgü
 vn;aumi;? lunviaompw"mw\ at;jir;wnwpm&jci;on oE&orn\ [ziq
 xm;on/ pmaytEynmwpcu cpm;&mwiaem uq;ü pwlunE;at;cr;om;on
 oabm½ontwu aem uq;tqion oE&oo qua&muon tqijzpalumi;
 tqtre½ygon/ 0w\wpy'uzwaep0]cp&ioem;}} pon &otr;r\;cpm;jy;
 aem uq;Zmwor;yi; a&mu aomtcg pmzwo\pwxwi auseyEpouonqv\i x
 cpm;ron oE&oyijzpygon/ &owpyg;om½on [aomt,tqt& oE&o
 wpyg;omtpptrejpí use&orsm;on twta, mi&orsm; jzpon [qygon/

q&m&euebaqu tuiiovaumi;reo? tm;u;tm;xm;jy\jci;cxuo?
 c;jrwe;rc&o? rbq&mrwaqaumi;wEiwu jrijrw,lunxuaom w&m;"r?
 om,mlunE;z,aumi;aom ½ci;wEi wu½uxaw\jci;alumivn; tcutwel
 tm;jziwnjiraom u,? Ew? Ev;u&vmapEijy; oE&oucpm;&apEialumi; om"u
 rsm;jziazmjyxm;on/

yxr0;pm q&myg&* jrermiyexm;aom a*gwryjZmwwi uoa*gwron om;i,
 aoq;jci;alum i yyeia u;jci;? A'b&m;&i'uvmjy; oywawmEi reni;ap tawmi;
 ci;jci;? uoa*gwru aoor&aomtr wptrr\&alum i; av\muxm;jci;? xlaemu
 rrtm;omoemabiü vucawmryg&e av\muxm;jci;wlu zw&aomtcg uoa*gwr

\ yavmiaeaompw aomujir;at;om;onpwwu pmzwow\ pwEv; üvn;
xcuvy&m;vmjy; oE&ou cpm;&apygon/

xU tjiyi w&m;"rEipyqirrs;omru avmuEipyqiaom wnjiirroE &ovn;
&alumi;u q&m0;pewi(oyarmi0)\ acwpr;yjiyxrwr aA'gaqmi;yg;Ei om"u
jyxm;on/ xaqmi;yg;wi Zmwaqmiarmivat;\ tyrnqqwirtyEib vq;rsm;
ualumujy; rwnrjirjzpaey? xUaemu llunviaomva&mi? jynv\ aomjrpji?
vwvypm arsmgyaeluaom aA'gye;jymjyav;rsm;u z;vri;uyv&na&miEi jze;ay;ae
onjriui;on armivat;\ ruv;xwi ½rce;EiatmiunE;Epoury? xUalumi
cyapmapmualumu&U wevyaec&aom vq;rsm;u aom;um pwwnjirr &cywu
azmija&zUxm;on/ jrpjiyi \ tvalumi pwyjci;? pw½yax;jci;wr acwcPjir;at;
wnjirom;jci;on(orXm , bm0) oE&ou cpm;&jci;jzpalumi; azmijxm;on/

oE&oon avmuw&mup? w&m;"ruptwu ouou [omqv\i avmu
a&;&mjzpaom pmaytEynmupü oE&ou xnoi;azmijp&m talumi;r½yg/

xUalumi avmuw&mupjzpap? avmuupjzpap pwwiat;cr;r llunE;ru
cpm;&onqv\i oE&o [rw , &rn [qEiygon/

jci o;oycu

&euebaq \ &oqi&m oabmw&m;rsm;uavvmlunaomtcg pma&oon
pmay0goemygon/ pma&;ciorrsm;twu v , upm? pepuspm? &oajrmupm zew;
a&;om;Ei&etwu&n& , jy; &oobamu tus , ziq&i;jycon/ &ou;yg;u
om"ujy&mü tvumur;rsm;r om"ursm;omru o \ 0wrsm;tygt0i acway:0w\ rsm;r
om"ursm;üvn; xnoi;&i;vi;azmijxm;aomalumi yrv , upm em;vnEiygon/

&oobamuziq&mwi tvumur;trsm;prm a½;tp0tquu &[e; ynm½rsm;
a&;om;cjy;? om"ujy&mwiüvn; a½;acwpmayrsm;r om"ursm;ujyxm; aomalumi pmzw
ow\ twu em;vn&cuapygon/ q&m&euebaqur tvumur;r &oobam
w&m;en;emrsm;u ½i;vi;a&;om;&mwi a&tvumur; rsm;rmuo pmlu;aylu;qeqe
a&;om;jci;rsk;r [wb zwíem;vnv , atmi? tazuur;u&i;jyaeon ypji a&;om;
xm;aomalumi pm[euujy; tou0iygon/ tajym [ejzia&;om;xm;ontwu
a [majymaq;aE;aeonu em;axmia&ouoU pw0ipm;z , aumi;atmiygon/

pma&oon rwom;z , &mrsm;u o&rwom;ap&e toay;vaom&n& , cuEi
Epouoncpm;rwU ay:ayguapvaom &n& , cuwUeia&zUxm;ci;alumi ow
oabmEi &oobamwlaygi;zUaeom jrermpay \ tp0tvmu azmne;aeon [qEi
ygon/ &o \ oabmw&m;u ½i;vi;azmijy&mwi bm0? 0bm0tEb0w\ quE , aey
jzpp0Eiwu tajccu;u; qupyazmijxm;ygon/

e*;

pma&;owp0;wi a&;p&m talumi;t&m&jy; x talumi;t&mu &n&,c&uwpcc
jzi yazma&;z&av&&m x&n&,c&uwi apwemEi oabmw&m;c,c&uw xi[y
av&ygon/ x&alumi bpmwr;wivn; pma&;o \ apwem&n&,c&uw&u aw&ri
o&Eirn [, qrygon/x&tji &opmayavvmo ausmi;om;? ausmi;orm;twu
vn; twi;t&wmpctx taxmutu&jyEivrrn [, llunrygon/

usr;u;pm&i;

urm&?t&i/(1980)/t vumye;u;('w , t&ur)/&eue? wiwiat;y#u&wpm tyqi/
ciri?armi("EjzL)/(2010)/c&porm;u/t q;p&ijci/&eue?uaum0w&n&pmay/
ciri?armi("EjzL)/(2016)/v i , rm;t wupm q/rwq u/pm rwq ul&eue? aumi;oel&pmay/
pau&mi;q&mawm/(1989)/t vume ó , o&(qXrt&ur)/&eue?aZmwuyEywu/
aZ , lArm ta&;Ei/tEynm tao/&eue?jyn o&pmaywul
aZm*?(1976)/&opmaytziEie'ge/&eue?ci;wi;pmay/
baq?&euel(2017)/lye;o i o u;a&;en;x;um/&eue?pwu;c&c&pmay/
b;vi?0;a , mjr±twi;0el t vume ó , l
a&a&tmi?0;/(1980?Zv i v)/&opmay l &ol &eue? omoema&;0;p;Xme/

O;yn \ jyZmwrsm;rpum;o;Ee; [e av vmc:u
n/n/p;*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on pavO;yna&;om;caom a&onjyZmw? 0Z , jyZmw? aumov
jyZmwwr t;m;aumi;aom pum;o;Ee; [etZlaumi;rsm;u xwEwí avvmwijy
xm;aompmwr;jzpygon/ pmwr; \ tce;(1)wi pum;v; [on? tce;(2) pum;
o;Ee; [ersm;? tce;(3)O;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r pum;o;Ee; [e av vmc:u [í avvm
wijyxm;ygon

aomc:ua0g [m&/ - O;yn? a&on? 0Z , ? aumov? pum;o;Ee; [e

e'ge;

jyZmwq&mwon Zmwvr;u Zmw&nvnatmi zew;&mwí Zmwaqmi
tci;ci; tjetveajypum;rsm;? wpu , wn;ajypum;rsm;jzi zew; , av&on/
pavO;ynonvn; o \ jyZmwrsm; Zmw&nvn ap&etwu Zmwaqmiw \ ajypum;
rsm;u zew;&mwí t;m;aumi;aom pum;o;Ee; [ersm;u t0iciuxnoi;azmijav
&on/ O;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r pum;o;Ee; [ersm;uavvm&mwí q&mB u; arniciri
"EjzL \ a& [eynme'ge;vm pum;o;Ee; [ersm;u en;em , íavvmxm;on/ rrcex;
avvmrn pum;o;Ee; [ersm;ygrygu tao tcsmqe;ppí tcutvuaumi;
to;tEe;aumi;rsm;u xwEw wijyxm;ygon/

1/ pum;v; [on

]]pum;v;qon pum;ajym&m pma&&mü wpv;ci;ció;Eiaom t"yg , &on tao;q;
tpwtyi;wpcpu a , b , s t m;jzi qv|ci;jzpon/}}¹

jrerm t b"mewi

]]pum;v;/Z*ve;/ e- teu t"yg , &aom pum;wpc}}² pum;ajyoabm
w&m; pum;ajy twwynmwi

]]pum;v;qonrm vrupwpcptwu &nñe;aom oauwwpcpu
tlur;t m;jzi qv|ci;jzpon/}}³

* uxu? jrerm pñXme? uey:lwmmwuov (awmii)

¹ ciri? Armi? 2011? 63/

² jrerm t b"me? 2018? 91/

³ ciri? armi? 2017? 83/

2/ pum; o;Ee; [er_{sm};

]]p_{um}; o;Ee; [eq&mü p_{um}; v; r_{sm}; u rno_{rny} o;Ee; x_m; o n u
q vjci; jzp on/ }}¹

]]teu_{jypum}; v; q on_{rm} teut"yg, t xit&m; &aom p_{um}; v; r_{sk}; jzp
on/ to; jyp_{um}; v; q on_{rm} rrw_{cn}; teut"yg, t xit&m; r&b
Ogu_{xwi} teu_{jypum}; v; r_{sm}; u rno_{rny} o; x_m; alumi; uom azmjy
on/ }}²

]]taumitx_{njypum}; v; [on v? ac;? tr ponjzi taumitx_n
j'y0w_{rsm}; u &nñe; aom p_{um}; v; jzp on/ oabmjyp_{um}; v; [on csp?
re;? oem; ponjzi taumitx_n j'y0w_r &aom p_{um}; v; r_{sm}; u
a, b, s_{ci} &nñe; aom p_{um}; v; jzp on/ }}³

]]0aoo; p_{um}; v; [on taumitx_n oabmw&m; wpccu o; o;
oeoe 0aootx; jy_v s u &nñe; aomp_{um}; v; r_{sk}; jzp on/ a, b, s
o; p_{um}; v; [on taumitx_n r_{sm}; p_{um}; v; r_{sm}; u a, b, s_{ci} &nñe;
aom p_{um}; v; r_{sk}; jzp on/ }}⁴

]]p_{um}; v; wpv; wi omre&nñe; rr_{sk}; om&aom rv&&i; p teuynw
teuEi rv t"yg, uau_{sm} veí x t"yg, \aem uwi wu, wr;
&nñe; vaom teur_{sm}; *, u^{1/2} uov ygvmwwon/ teur_{sk}; u
*, u teu [ac: on/ }}

]]wo; aelujzpaom p_{um}; v; pwpp \ t"yg, r_{sm}; twi; t vuoi
aum u, ír&aom t"yg, uaqmiaevli xp_{um}; v; pon "avo; p_{um};
yijzp on/ }}⁵

]]teuw p_{um}; v; r_{sm}; u alumi; wou? teuwtoiu? p_{um}; y&, m, ?
a00p ponjzi tr_{sk}; r_{sk}; ac: ygon/ teuwq&mü ynwteu (teu^{1/2};
won [q vjci; jzp on/ }}⁶

3/ 0; yn \ jyZmw_{rsm}; r p_{um}; o;Ee; [ea v vmc; u

tav vmc; jyZmw_{rsm}; jzpaom a&onjyZmw? 0Z, jyZmw? aum ovjyZmw_{wr} p_{um};
o;Ee; [et r_{sk}; r_{sk}; teupmw_r; jypo av vmrnen; em(6)cs uzi aocsmppm qe; pp cex;
av vm wijxm; ygon/

¹ ciri? armi? 2011? 63

² ciri? armi? 2017? 91/

³ ciri? armi? 2017? 93/

⁴ ciri? armi? 2017? 96

⁵ ciri? armi? 2017? 96

⁶ ciri? armi? 2017? 96

3;1/ 0;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r teuypum;v;Ei to;jypum;v;

a&onjyZmwr teuypum;v;Ei to;jypum;v;rm;u avvmllunvli

]]aw;awmraxmu? ayguaygu^{1/2}? awEiworb}}¹

[a&zlxm;on/]rb}} [aom to;jypum;v;on tve tve q;or;ru^{1/2}i;o?
&upuow\ t,tqu tx;ay:viapon/ a&ona,mu;u rrqi;&alumi;
wpu,wn;nn;ñ&mwivn;

]]aiUE,alu;E,? b[mE,rm;u? u,aviywywaysmu}}²

[ía&om;xm;on/]E,}} [aom to;jypum;v;u tūuro;xm;aomallumi
a&ona,mu;u twu aia&alu;a& &maz&cucyu ay:viapygon/ xen;w 0Z,
jyZmwwivn; 0Z,ri;om;u rrq;or;&um;ontalumi; lum;orjriori tue
rwilum;bpum;ceí ten;i,rom wilum;on trwrsm;t; ttyp'Pay;oi
alumi; o [Am [ri;βu;t; avlmui&mwí

]]um;wi;jriwi;? q;,wwi;u? [wwi;rwí}}³

[ía&zlxm;on/]um;? jri? q;,w? rwi'' won teuypum;v;rm;jzpon/ x
teujypum;v;rm;u]wi;}} [aom to;jypum;v;jzi qiumqium o;xm;on
twu 0Z,ri;om;\ q;or;&um;ru lum;aejriae&onrm wpurwpcgr [w
tūur tgcg lum;aejriae&alumi; ay:viapygon/ tveyi q;or;&um;on
0Z,ri;om;\ p^{1/2}uuxi&m;apon/

aumovjyZmwwi Am&mPori;βu;u aumovri;βu;xol yaom&mowi

]]rpmyPm;? c&rm;í? ur;yg;jywü uonnu}}⁴

[ía&om;xm;on/]rpmyPm;? c&rm;? ur;yg;jyw? u}} won teuypum;v;rm;
jzpluon/]í? ü? onu}} won to;jypum;v;rm;jzpluon/]í}} [aom to;jy
pum;v;on yPm;βu; c&rm;on talumi;u&nñe;on/]ü}} on usa&uon
ae&muñe;on/]onu}} on a&u talumi;t&m tjzptyu wpcv;u&nñe;on/

poteuypum;v;Ei to;jypum;v;u o'gen;uus reuepmo;pici;jzi
qv on teuay:atmi a&zlxm;ygon/

¹ yn? 0;? 1996? 17/

² yn? 0;? 1996? 1/

³ yn? 0;? 1957? 12/

⁴ yn? 0;? 1962? 36/

3;2/ 0;yn \ jyZmwrm;r taumitxnjypum;v;Ei oabmjypum;v;

pmaya&zU&mwí taumitxnjypum;v;rsm;rsm;o;Eiav teut"yg, ay:vi
avjzpon/ oabmjypum;v; to;rsm;ygu teut"yg, ay:vi&ecucon/ oaom
oabmjypum;v;vn;jzp }emr} pum;v;vn;jzpon pum;v;u taumitxnjy
pum;v;vn;jzp }u, mpum;v;vn;jzpon pum;v;Ei wpyo;aomtcgwi qvon
t"yg, ay:vionu awU&ygon/ OZ, jyZmwü OZ, ri;om;Ei r, u0P awlce;r
a&mvwvuaom au; uer sm;jyervmí ri;om;qaompum;wi

}}bv;obu? rmetru? vurveci? igbe;awZ? pr;&njyí? &epu
xi&atmi}}¹

[íá&zUxm;on/ }rmetru? igbe;awZ? pr;&n? &ep} won taumitxn
r&aom oabmjypum;v;rsm;jzpon/ }emr}pum;v;rsm;jzpon tji uwm;? utjzp
o;xm;on/ , i;wu }jy? xi} [aomtytrujriomapon taumitxnjypum;
v; }u, m} jziwpya&om;xm;on/ poa&zUjci;alumí j'yrwu j'y&rsm; tjzpri
omapon/ ri;om; \ ≺ow&r? tm;rmejyn0ruyg ay:viapaom a&; [ejzpon/
r, u0P \ uer ac;a, mi aqmice;wir u0Pmywwuwivn;

}}uavom a½wu u? aom½u vUxm;? zirno ay:vmcv? txu, m;}}²

[a&zUxm;on/ }uavom} on j'yr&aom oabmjypum;v;jzpon/ }tvwn;n;
awmuyji;}} [aom*P&nvn;&on/ }a½wu} onj'y&on taumitxnjy
pum;v;jzpon/ }tvwn;n;awmuyji;}} [aom*P&nvn;&on/ po *P&n
jci;waom }uavom} Ei }a½wu}u xywjya&zUjci;jzi oabmjypum;v; jzpaom
}}uavom} u taumitxn wpctjzp jriomvmygon/ quvuí}aom}}? }½u}
[aomtaumitxnjypum;v;rsm;jzi tm;jzna&zUvuaomtcgwi t"yg, ay:vi
on a&; [ejzpvmygon/ uavom tm½umr*Pu cpm;cir&oji rcir&jzpaom
bv;ru0Pm \ cpm;cuujriomapon/

aumovjyZmwü Am&Pori;βu;u aumovri;βu; \ rz&m;uac:í wi;jyn
ol jyece;r rz&m;wiaompum;wi

}}&yce ar;wvli? ao;rriou? vyjymui;au? wpyi;ao? on;ajcy;u
r t ouqzm;? alumu t m;yve;vygw, }}³

[íá&zUxm;on/ ptzUwi }vyjym? tou}womvi oabmjypum;v;jzply; ue
pum;v;wrm taumitxnjypum;v;rsm;jzpon/ po taumitxnjypum;v;
rsm;u vivio;jci;jzi pp½;oaumovri;βu; \ rz&m;βu;allum½Uru xi&m;ay:viap
ygon/

¹ yn? 0;? 1957? 39/

² yn? 0;? 1957? 36/

³ yn? 0;? 1962? 45/

0;ynon o \ jyZmwrsm;wi Zmwvr;t& oabmjypum;v;rsm;u o;&aomvn;
aumi t xnjriomatmi zew;yazmEipr; &onu awl&ygon/

3;3/ 0;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r 0ao o o;pum;v; a , b , s o; pum;v;

a&onjyZmw \ a&ona , mu sm;Ei a&onre;rawUqce;wi a&onre;r
0w&onxbu

]]pwayaxmixre? tpyuwp&m? tzmUA&Asp? armiuatmi npygywqpt r}}¹

[ívn;aumi; a&ona , mu sm;0w&on yq;u

]]cg;0wvn;r? rvpipp? rujrijzpí rppomb;? Avcmclwic?

zm;zuawmr ray:½? vatmi tEiz;&w , }}²

[ívn;aumi; twtu:0aooy a&zUxm;on/ a&onre;r \ xbontqip?
ta&mitao;p? yptp&aom ywptrsk;rsk;Ei clyxm;aom pyxbjzpalumi; x
pyxbay:& taygutlyu z;xm;&aom tzm tax;t&m rsm;r vn; tver sm;vaumi;
txntv0wp&mx b en;yg;aomallumi wpxnwn;u lum&npm0w&í ayw;
npywaeallumi; ay:viygon/ a&ona , mu sm; \ yq;rnr zmax;xm;ci;r&aomvn;
tlytur sm;aom yq;jzpalumi;? xyq;u0wqi&mwi taygutlyui;on tyi;
av;jzi zm;zuawmv½r z;xm;&alumi; jriomapon/ pola&on a , mu sm;Ei
a&onre;rw \ xb? yq;rsm;u tao;pway:viatmi 0aooya&zUxm;ci;alumi
Zmwaqmiw \ qi;&rtay: pmzwow&woww \ oem;pwu , zwvmapon/ , ae
wivn; t0wtpm;qi;&rEi ywouvmvli rarEiaom pjyciEi;p&m Zmwaumirsm;
jzpvmygon/

0Z , jyZmwü 0Z , ri;om;ewEiawUce;r vum'yule;v , o/ a&muí ule; \
om , myu ri;om; ajymq&mwivn; awmobm0 tvw&m;u a , b , s tzU 0ao o tzU
yiyiEiEijzi azmu sL;a&zU xm;on/ awmawmixwi ye;rsk;pwjzi wiw , yu

]]Ei;aomuwri? ñmo , qiwe;? emrnjiziqe;ayvr? b , ye;ci v
oEiwwly}}³

[ía&zUxm;on/ pwiye;w \ trnu twtura&b]]emrnjzi qe;ayvr?
b , ye;ci v oEiwwly}} [om a , b , s oabmjzi a&zUxm;on/ tu , í ye;emrn
rsm;u Ei;q? py , ponjzi twtu 0aooya&zUygu pmzwow \ pwwi Ei;q?
py , riom jriomrnjzpon/ awm \ obm0t&qvli 0 , sm0lcajruo/ ye;yitrsk;
trn ten;i , riom&onr[w ye;rsk;pvirnomjzpon/ pola , b , s oabmjzi

¹ yn? 0;? 1996? 3/

² yn? 0;? 1996? 4/

³ yn? 0;? 1957?28/

a&zUxm;ji;allunio m pmzwow\ pwwi rrw&i;E;aomye;? r&i;E;aom ye;w
&rnjzpalumi;? ta&mitao;tr&sk;rs&? yo@metr&sk;rs&&aom ye;wz;yaern
jzpalumi;u aw;awmjria, mivmapon/ polvyaomye;w\ trnu ,ctcg tw
turoEiaomvn; wpcye;w\ trnu o&aomtcgwi ow\ tvEi avsmn
aom qe;jym;aom emrnrm&ayvrrn[aom ri;om; \pwtaw;u vn; ay:viap
on/ xye;av;w\ z;i[etr&sk;rs&u vn;

]]riwpc&U iwpc&UEi? rvp&movi[e&uw, }}¹

[í a, b, s oabmjziyi a&zUxm;jyeygon/ xalumi z;ui;pt½, rpí zUzUxm;xm;
yive;vmon tx z;yi[e tr&sk;rs&u jriomacygon/ quvuí ourjzpaom
ye;av;rm;u ou&Eiwipm;í]]vi}} [aomu, mu o;pxm;ontwu awm
ye;av;w\ tvu ou0ivy&m;vmapygon/ xola&mipyem; z;yaieaom
awmawmixwi wmpma&u;allumaeaom iuuav;rm;u vn; cg? bw? c&sk;ponjzi
twtu trnay;í ra&zUzb

]]iujziiuy? om&umvm; wrmvm;? bUjcm;v&cEib;}}²

[í a, b, s oabmjzia&zUxm;on/ xalumi iuaygipw yoe;jrl;x;ae[e u vn;
aw;awmEpour jzpacpygon/ awmw&pmer&pw uivnu;upm; aeyu vn;

]]y, wpu i;pm? v, ci;omrm? pnrPv {Pv? u, cwzizi c&myy
ygvv c&0i0iEi *Eiuuoa&}}³

[í a, b, s oabmjzi a&zUxm;ygon/ pol tr&sk;pvipm&aom ye;? au;iu?
awmw&pme rsm; talumi;u? úcirap&e a, b, s oabmjzi a&zlaomvn;
awm&u;awmi bu;xwi ri;om;&aomae&m te;w0uwir a&ueon wpcwn;
om&Eion/ xalumi a&ue&u; \ tvu ay:viatmi wnae&mu vn;aumi;?
yo@meu vn;aumi; twtu 0aooy a&zUxm;ygon/

]]awmip, ur;apmu? cg;ye;avmuu? pr;ayguwa& iru#pe;
iu½e;½e;rm? 0u0e;ac? awmiajcatmuu? ewaomuwuerm}}⁴

[í zUqxm;on/ xalumi a&ue&u;on awmip, ur;yg;apmu atmuwnwn
awmiajcw&i&allumi;? titpe;av;u 0uacv&u&allumi;? tveat;jrlunviaom
a&rm;&aomallumi ewrsm;om aomu o;aom a&uejzpeialumi; teuay:viapygon/
polvum'yule; \ tvua&zU&mwia, b, s to; 0aooto;yiyeiEiEijzi e;vu
a0;vu? erwjriwji a&zUxm;onrm tveEpouz, aumi;von/ awmawmi
tvua&zU&mwii wwEijriui;us, us, jriomapon/ xalumi jrepmayavmuü

¹ yn? 0;? 1957/29/

² yn? 0;? 1957/29/

³ yn? 0;? 1957/29/

⁴ yn? 0;? 1957/29/

awmawm i t v z l r s m ; w i p v u m ' y u l e ; \ t v z l o n v n ; , a e w i p m a y r w w i w p c
t j z p & y w n v u & y g o n /

3;4/ 0; y n \ j y Z m w r s m ; r y n w t e u E i * , u t e u

a & o n j y Z m w i A m & m P o i r U a j m u r u E m r a & o n a , m u s m ; p u m ; q c e ; w i

]] [, - o a o m v n ; a , m u s m ; ? u a & U u o m ; u x m ; & m [? r E e y g b ; } } ^1

[a & ; z U x m ; o n /]] a , m u s m ; } } [a o m t o ; o n]] b 0 & y w n a & ; t w u p r ; a q m i & n
j y n 0 o } } [a o m * , u t e u x i [y a e y g o n / 0 , s m O a w m t w i ; t r a & U r i ; o m ;
(a & o n a , m u s m ;) u 0 ' , r i ; ß u ; t y a y s m a e p 0 v y u & e l u p n c e ; w i

]] [, - a , m u s m ; w & m ; q u q ? o a w m a u m i ; o a b n E i ? A v m u u

B u v i v n ; y p y e t u s ; q u p ; y m ; a & ; y u w w o n } } ^2

[a & ; z U x m ; o n / p t z U &]] a , m u s m ; } } [a o m p u m ; w i]] b & m ; t è u u w & m ; r v u b
y p y e t u s ; t w u r q i ; t w v y a q m i 0 o } } [a o m * , u t e u x i [y a e y g o n / p
p u m ; E p & y v ; u Z m w a q m i a & o n a , m u s m ; w p 0 ; w n ; r a j m q a o m p u m ; r s m ; j z p o n /
y x r ' a , m u s m ; } } [a o m p u m ; o n r r \ q i ; & r a l u m i t m ; i , p w y u c e w i a j y m a o m
p u m ; j z p í ' w , p u m ; o n a & m i & j c i ; r & a v m b a Z m w u a e c e w i a j y m a o m p u m ;
j z p o n /]] a , m u s m ; } } [a o m p u m ; w i o m r e t m ; j z i * , u t e u r x i a o m v n ; o ; o n
a e & m u v u í * , u t e u x i [y v m y g o n / p w i v n ; a & o n a , m u s m ; \ p w o b m 0
a j y m i ; v r u v u í * , u t e u x i v m j c i ; j z p o n / ½ ; o m ; a o m p w ? n p n r ; , w r m a o m
p w w j z i v w \ a r m i w p c g v i ; w p v n & a e a o m p w o b m 0 E i a v s m n a o m a & o n
a , m u s m ; \ p w t p 0 u a y : v i a p y g o n /

0; y n o n o \ j y Z m w r s m ; u j y i y a v m u o b m 0 E i u u n a t m i a & ; z U a v & o n /
x o a & ; z U & m w i j y i y a v m u o ; p u m ; v ; r s m ; u p m a y x w i x n í o ; & e r o i a o m p u m ; r s m ;
v n ; & o n / x o a o m p u m ; r s m ; t p m ; * , u t e u , 0 a o m a y m a o m p u m ; r s m ; t p m ; x ; o ; í
' | " r a v m u o b m 0 u ; u a y : v i a t m i a z m ñ e ; a & ; z U a v & o n / 0 Z , j y Z m w w i
r , u 0 P \ u l e r a c ; a , m i a q m i c e ; w i r , u 0 P E i r , ' u w v u m ' y u l e ; o v & m
x u & i ; r , u 0 P a j y m a o m p u m ; w i

]] q i ; 0 g ½ y v r v ? a r l m q t c i l l u i a z m z l e ? w e r w e ? [e y e c i v l t o i
i g p r r , y ? r v v l i o m ; v v l i c g ; ? o m ; t & o m c g ; w P m ? l o Z m o ; E i v ½ ;
v m ; } } ^3

¹ y n ? 0 ; ? 1996 ? 1 /

² y n ? 0 ; ? 1996 ? 16 /

³ y n ? 0 ; ? 1957 ? 38 /

[ía&zúx;on/ zr;p;&raomvom;rsm;xr ½y&nacsmarmaom a, mu sm;om;qvli
luiazmluizujyrn/ ½y&nriwiw, ygu pm;aomurnjzpalumi; ajymaompum;
jzpon/ pwi½i;aomlur;aom *, uteu&on pum;v;rsm;tpm;

'om;?]cg;}} [aompum;v; tpm;x;í o;x;on/ t&omtwu]om;}} ?wPm
twu]cg;}} [tpm;x;o;ji;zi pm[ewiw, apon/ bv;ryy tpm;lu;? wPm
lu;yuvn; tv, wu jriomapon/ 0Z, ri;om; r, u0PEi awlce;wivn;
bule[eaqmíou bv;rre;oí ri;om;qaompum;wi

]]allumíovE, ? t&i;rxw? p;ym;vyw yicyon}}¹

[ía&zúx;on/]yicyon}} [aompum;on to;tEe; , Opmaympmijzi qvcsiaom
teuu xi&m;ay:viapon/ llur;wr;½ipi;aom ri;om; \p½uEivn; avsmnaom
pum;jzpon/ polo;Ee;ji;zi vn; ri;om; \tajmtq llur;wr;ru 'l"ravmu&
q;or;&r;um;ow\ tajmtqlur;wr;yEi wpom;wn;uapon/ 0Z, ri;om; \
llur;wr;aomp½u&on Zmwaqmíou½y yiyivmov? a, mu sm;om;rsm;u jrlq, jzm;
a, mi;wwaom r, u0P\ re;robm0u vn; xi&m;vmapygon/ 0Z, ri;om;u
r, u0P uEiaomallumi r, u0Pií ajymaompum;wi

]]apwawmú; x;wivly;lyr? x;ure;r? bur0g;jcr;Eijir;uve?
ypx;Ei? v;v;r, 0, êuawmw, }}²

[a&zúx;on/]b&m;ly;jir;zu}} [aomq½;pum;u tus, clla&x;m;ji;jzpon/
xpum;on rvuyi*, uteuxi[yv;u&on/ Zmwvr;Ei qupyvuao mtcg
yítm;aumi;aom *, uteuxi[yvmygon/ 0Z, ri;om;on r, u0P\
tutnizi vum'yule; \t&iocijzpaom bv;ri;Ei bv;taygi;wu izci;Eily;
vum'yule; wpcv;uor;yuEiy? xee;&vmaomtcgwi omoemyEi&e twu
yg&rjznrnoon vrz&m;jzpr oiaawmrnjzpaomallumi bv;rjzpaom r, u0Pu
Eiy paomZmwalumi;tp0u jyevnjria, mi vmapon/ Zmwaqmíjzpaom
r, u0P\ tjzpu vn; pmzwowoem;vmatmi zew;a&zúEiaom a&;[eyijzp
on/

aumovjyZmwr aumovri;u; \&iao;uav;u rz&m;tret& tyawwu
oomeo om; íypce;ü tyawmri;oZm qaompum;wi

]]ewuav;wpau mi ušywarmi&, ? a&llaqmívu cy? ewu uwabmZ0

aygupre wpwEi? yawmúuwiyr, }}³

[ía&zúx;on/]ewuav;wpau mi}}]ayguprewpwEi yawmúuwiyr, }} [aom
to;wi Zmwaqmíri;oZm\ rau:reyji oa&mvaom pwcpm;csu *, uteuu

¹ yn? 0;? 1957? 42/

² yn? 0;? 1957? 67/

³ yn? 0;? 1962? 52/

xi[yaeygon/ wi;wpyg;om;w\ v uatmiwiae&aomumi cu;&mraeom
 b0uraueyy? rrt&i\&iao;u aumi;pmapmia&mucir&b oomewipeyp&í
 tveyi 0r;en;alu ae&yujriomapon/ xiyi vomruewuyi t;m;u;ír&
 aomumi t;m;rwermeavlm&aomvn;ceci? t½wucion vobm0uyjiap
 on/

po*, uteu t;m;aumi;aom pum;v;rsm;u o;pEiralumivn;0;yn \
 jyZmwrsm;r Zmwaumiw\p½ursm;on , aewiatmi vobm0Ei uunaom
 t0iciuaom p½uyi&irsm; jzpaeygon/

3;5/ 0;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r "av o;pum;rsm;

a&onjyZmwon t&yot&yom;rsm;u t"uZmwaqmixm; a&zlxm;
 aomumi "av o;pum;rsm;u , 0on/ a&ona, musm;u rrqi;&alumi;u nn;ñ
 &mwi

]]0r;pmccu? r&i;xri; c0aygi [i;Ei? qewi;ueu ve;v}}¹

[ía&zlxm;on/ “qewi;ueu ve;v” [aom to;on a&ona, musm; 0r;pma&
 &mazpn;aomu&onrm cucyiye;vaom teu uay:viapon/ tna'owi a&c&
 a&oe&&e aomua&wi;u tveeupepm;azm&ontavu tpyxm;on/ a&on
 a, musm;u a&onre;ru y;ye;pum; q&mwi vn;

]]twit vn tpyziwnvayg? *siycsi;aygu llup}}²

[ía&zlxm;on/

“qi;&om; tcsi;csi;aygi;zuji; “ [aom teuzi o;xm;ji; jzpon/ *iywon
 vnywEipr;t;en;on/ llumumrvnEiay / *siycsi;tyi aygu lujci;jirEi
 t½;r& we;w&nw oabm&on/ , aeacwwivn; “Ewcr;ycsi;r;rw” [ío;
 on/ a&ona, musm;Ei a&onre;r w\ p;y;w t½, ci;rlaom teu uay:viap
 ygon/ a&onre;ru rr\aiav;a½;t; x;e;or;ay;Eirn a, musm;&m;ve;í viom;
 r, tyu;vyae&alumi; ajymq&mwi

]]pn;pruu? x;vtyí clyrnou? wpqa, musm;? ZrLrm&m;ve; v?
 viom;r, tyuvyí? ½utyoy&w, }}³

[ía&zxm;on/ to;tErsm;u rnatmi t½ursm; z;tyxm;&mwi t½u\ tjiü
 tyaiU r&aomvn; t½ursm;u vyvuaomtcg tyaiUrm;u &ygon/ po to;tE

¹ yn? 0;? 1996?1/

² yn? 0;? 1996?6/

³ yn? 0;? 1996?5/

tyon"avu tpyí]½u'tyo;y}} [ío;pxm;on/ vroatmi wwwc; yyeae&
aom a&onre;r\ aomuuvn; jriomapon to;jzpon/ tra&ri;
(a&ona, mus;) u 0', ri;u; tyaysmaep0 vyue&upnce;wi

]opi&upu ciye;zuv? 0upm;ui;aum byacsaom? awmEir, |
rxiygb;av [, }}¹

[í a&zlxm;on/ a&ona, mus; tra&ri;jzpv&jci;rm 0', ri;u;u csajmuxm;
jci;alumijzpon/ xaus;Z;u raxmuxm;b 0', ri;uowí x;ee;v&e ðupn
onu]0upm;ui;aum}} [ío;on/ 0ur±aomuly;aomtcg rrwtm; tpmxn
au;on pm;ui;uyi x;armuypav&on/ xtavutpyí o;jci;jzi aus;Z;ue;&e
ðupnaeaom a&ona, mus;\ avmbpwu pmzwow re;w;puqvwvmatmi
o;Ee;a&zljci;jzpon/

0Z, jyZmwr 0Z, ri;om;u wi;jynEice;ü rz&m;u;qaompum;wi

]ri;rrno wpa, muami;i, r acgi;rjyL}}²

[ía&zlxm;on/ "ri;r" [aompum;v;on "unaz;ron? apmia&mun/"
[aom teuizpon/

tutn taxmuty&&ewwion "av? vri;wion"avu tpyí o;xm;
on/ jyó emwppwpcjzpollum;vli pw0iwpm;jzi trjywi;aygu rsm;r acgi;jylí
lunwwon/ om;a&munwwuon/ unvpwr&ygu acgi;jylíyi r lunww
luac/ pwi 0Z, ri;om;u unrno r&yu]acgi;rjyL}} [o;xm;on/ r;rw?
jynowu 0Z, ri;om;u tay:xm;on Epourr&aom pwapwemu jriomapon/

0;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r "avo;pum;rsm;on owacwtcg u ow"av? ow
obm0u alu;ryrm jriomapygon/

3;6/ 0;yn \ jyZmwrsm;r teuwpum;v;rsm;

0;yn \ aumovjyZmwwi teuwpum;v;rsm;u tm;aumi;pm o;xm;onu
awl&on

Am&mPori;u;u rr\ tr&sl;*Pu azmusL;&mwi

]ab;p&ump;? b;pu&w? brEww 0e;ywa00w avor'u}}³

[í a&zlon/ Am&mPori;\ tab;? tb;? tbwon p&um0aw;ri;rsm; jzpluon/
[ípum;v; wpv;wn;jzi wpcgwn; rajymb teuwaom pum;v;rsm;jzi tr&sl;rsl;

¹ yn? 0;? 1996?16/

² yn? 0;? 1957?16/

³ yn? 0;? 1962?23/

xwazma&om;xm;on/ pm[eucentm;apí teut"yg,u av;euapygon/
pum;v; wpv;wn;uom txyxyo;pí a&zuxm;ygu Am&mPori;\ r&½;*P&eu
wiw,pm ay:vir&awmrn r[way/ Am&mPori;xol aumovri;u vma&muí
cpm;jci; r&aomallumi talumi;t&i; o&atmi 0ewu om;a&muppr; ygrntalumi;
ajym&mwi

]]a½be;awmr;? 0&Zexpc&e;? r;êu;re;o? yuyeyew;? ab;βu;aw&ygvrrn}}¹

[a&zuxm;on/]]0&Zexpc&e;}}]r;êu;re;}} won]r;êu;ypn}} [aom teuyi
jzpon/]]0&Zexpc&e;}} [aom to;oncnm;í “r;êu;re;}} [aomto;on
½&i;on/

Am&mPori;\ be;uvma&mu ,0yiluvli r;êu;ab;awí yup;&ouo
yup;rnjzpalumi;u]]0&Zexpc&e; r;êu;re;}} [íteuwpum;v; Epczi o½yazm
o;Eee;xm;onrm tvetm;aumi;von/ Am&mPori;\ be;wec; t&et0gu
wpygwn;ay:vi / aumovjyno om;a&muí ppci;rnalumi; Am&mPori;Ei
trww ajympum;wivn;

]]om;rsm;oei;? awmri;o [? auo&o vlvciun? tEe;½í yaumi;
on}}²

[í a&zuxm;on/]]jcaori;}} [aomteuu]]om;rsm;oei;}}]awmri;o [}} [aom
pum;rsm;zi tr&r&o;Ee;xm;on/ xpum;v;w\ *,uteuwon wpqipyí
av;euvm on/ a&z&mwivn; *,uteuen;&mrrsm;&mo wpqily;wpqi e;e;
uyuyxm;ly; a&zuxm;onrm tveEpouz,aumi;von/ jcaoon om;aumi
zr;&mwíu;oni,on u y"merxm;b βu;pmaomvv tm;xwí zr;p;ww on/
rronvn; aumovjynu wucu&mwi vlv0&, βu;pmxm;í wucu&rnjz
alumi; ajymq&mwi Am&mPori;\ vlv0&,u vn;aumi;? jcaori;\ vlv0&,u
vn;aumi; xixi&m;&m; ay:viapon/ aumovjynu tEi&ly;aemu
aumovri;\ rz&m;βu;u Am&mPori;u av&muampun;wi

]]&ycear;wvli? ao;rrirou? vyjymui;au? wpyi;ao? on;ajc
ysur| touqzm;? alumu tm;yve;vygw, }}³

[í a&zxm;on/]]alum u½&jci;}} uay:viapon teuwpum;v;rsm;u txyxy
o;Ee;jci;jzi rz&m;βu; alum u½&r o½yuyyjiyi a&zuxm;on/

¹ yn? O;? 1962/25/

² yn? O;? 1962/32/

³ yn? O;? 1962/35/

lci o;oycu

O;yn \ a&onjyZmwon t&yot&yom;rm;u t"uZmwaqm i xm; a&zU
&aomallumi "avo;pum; tveyi'u , 0on/ pum;o;vwvypmo;Eiaom Zmwjzp í
teuwaom tzu tErm;u rsk;patmi zUEom;onuaw&on/ 0Z , jyZmwon q;aw
aom ri;om;i , Ei ayyuyup½u&aom bv;ri;or;wu Zmwaqm i iy a&zU
aomallumi pum;o;rm;lur;on/ * , uteuxi [yaom pum;v;rm;u o;aomvn;
taumitxn jriomatmi zew;a&zU Eipr;&ygon/

vu'm'yule; \ om , myu tx;wvn rr;rzUqxm;onrm pmzwow
pruapaom tzu rm;yijzpon/ aumovjyZmwwir ri;aumi;ri;jrwwu Zmwaqm i iy
a&zUxm; aomallumipum;o; e , y , uOajrmi;on/ to;tE;won cnm;xn0g
on? wnliron/ Ae;pum;rm;? "avo;pum;rm; o;pren;ygon/

y'v; \ pum;o;Ee; [erm;on Zmwaqmiw \ p½uEiv uavm naxpm
o;Ee;xm;onuwl&ygon/

e*;

jyZmwpmayon &opmaytzwprsk;jzply; cpm;r&oEi aw;tjriu ay;pr;Eiaom
pmayjzpon/ O;ynon b&i? rz&m;? ri;nri;om;w \ awmi;qrt& jyZmwrsm;u
a&om;cygon/ ee;wi;ta&rm;ajyvnr&&ap&eEi ri;nri;om;w Epou í
pwoabmxm;rm; aumi;rereuevmap&e twu pum;o;Ee; [e trsk;rsk;zi a&zU
tvi;ay;Eion/ xalumi pmzwowtm;Epoujci; b0totjrius , jyeapjci;
[aom tu sk;w&m;rm;&&apygon/ xalumitjcm;aom jyZmwpmayrm; \ pum;o;Ee; [e
trsk;rsk;uvn; quvuavvmoion [, qrygon/

usr;u;pm&i;

ciri? armi ("EjzL)/ (2011)/ a& [eynme'ge;/ &eue? pwu;cscipmay/

ciri? armi ("EjzL)/ (2017)? pum;ajyoabmw&m; pum;ajytwwynm/&eue/ ye;a½jyn pmtywul
ynma&Oeßu;Xme? jrermptzUO;p;Xme/ (2008)/ jrerm t b"me/ &eue? jrermptzUO;p;Xme
ñelum;a&r;city/

yn? O; (pav)/ (1957)? 0Z , jyZmw/ &eue? [om0wy#uwyEywu/

yn? O; (pav)/ (1962)?aumovjyZmw/ rEav;? wuaevi;yEywu/

yn? O; (pav)/ (1996)?a&onjyZmw/ &eue? zwvpo yEywu/

t reawmjyewr;rsm;r jrermmpmayxe;or;rqi&m rsm;
ci oe;aX,*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on acwtququ xwjyecaom treawmrsm;r jrermmpmay xeor;rqi&m
rsm;u aum uEwa&om;xm;ji;jzpon/ tx;ojzianmi&r;acwEi ue;abmiacw
treawmjyewr;rsm;r wijyxm;on/ avvmwijy&mwi a'guwmoex;e;\ jrermri;
treawmjyewr;rsm; (THER OYALS ORDER OF BURMAR1598-1885)u tavvmctjzp
xm;&ly; pum;ajyoabmw&m; en;emrsm;utajccí avvmwijyom;rnjzpon/ a&;
jrermri;won wi;jyntu&? jynou&? pmaytu&w u treawmjyewr;rsm;
xwjyeu mapmia&mucon/ jrermmpayu xe;or;apmia&muji;on jrermvrs;
wtwu *P,z,&mjzpon/ xt reawmjyewr;rsm; teurjrermmpayEi ouqi
aom treawmrsm;u a&om;zwum;wioi; om;rnjzpygon/ jrermmpayrcic
tm;aumi;ap&etwu tm;xwu;yr;rjzpozzi jrermvrs;w\ bompmpay
, Oaus;rsm;on uryay:wi , aexuwi wnwci lrae&ji;jzpon/
aomc:upum;v;rsm;-xe;or;apmia&mu? treawmjyewr;? jrermmpay? tm;xwu;yr;

e'ge;

jrermmpayavvm&mwi pum;ajyta&tom;on ta&ygayon/ pmaywpc
ajymi;vjzpay:r w;wurqw,wrwon acwtajctae tajymi;tvtay:rwn
aeygon/ xen;wt reawmjyewr;rsm;\ pum;ajyta&tom;rsm;on bompmpay rsm;?
acwa u;rsm;u ay:viaeozi tveta&ygygon/ vrs;wpr&ori;? vrs;
wpr&\ , Oaus;rt p&on jzpay:ajymi;vw;wuron xacw\ pmaytqitwe;
rsm;uaz:jyaeygon/ xalumipum;ajyon vrs;w\ tou [qEiayon/ pum;ajy
\ ta&ygr u q&mlu; ri;o0Pu-

pum;ajyonvrs;\ tou? vrs;\ tm;xm;&m? vrs;\ weaqmi
qr; jzponu rjywow&oiayon¹

[í reqxm;ygon/ ppmwr;on acwtququ treawmrsm;r jrermmpayxe;or;
apmia&murqi&m rsm;u avvmwijyxm;onjzp&m jrermvrs;w\ bompmpaytay:
wez; xm;rsm;u avvmaw&rn jzpygon/

* လက်ထောက်ကထိက! မြန်မာဘာသာဌာန၊ မန္တလေးနိုင်ငံခြားဘာသာတက္ကသိုလ်
° မင်းသုဝဏ် ၁၉၆၆-၂၆၄။

1/ t reawmjyewr; \ t "yq , Eioabm o b m0

urm0;tpwi vwlon rrwtci;ci; pn;v;nnwpmvyie;rm; atmijriap
&etwu \uquygon/ v0;a&w;ym;vmonEitr \ jy ó emrm;pm\law\ vmaom t c g
ormorw&aom t&ntci;&aom y* \vuri;tjzpa½;c; ,um prtyc\yap&e r [m
orwri;wiajrmuluyu

t o t vrmÓPynm&owppwlon jrEjrnaom ocreu r [m
orwwiajrmuon/ wiajrmuyrmigw\ tay:wi toi
tp;&jy\vytyc\yyg? u&\½wcs? Eixwoio? rpc;ajrmu
apmia&muoiowu w&m;vr;&or\ e* [jy\vyg¹

[í awl&&on/ xrpítyc\yori;wlon vtz\tpn;tay: pn;v;nñwr&ap&e?
t&nwnwap&e? \ir;c;r;ap&eEi wi;jynom , m0ajymr&ap&e w&m;r\wpmprrtyc\yc
luygon/

xuo\ prtyc\y&mwityc\yori; \ wm0e0w&m;rm;on rsm;jym;vygon/
wi;jynwm0eupt00wlon us , 0e;rm;jym;um ½yax;vonEitr \ &ib&iw\
q;jzwc;uon ta&ygygon/ xob&i\ tce;u@on tveta& ;u;vaom
alumi jrwpmb&m;&iu , awmwiyi-

&ib&iwlon wi;jynwi tjriq;y* \vzpjí 0en;awmu
rxcuon tm;v;aomEiia&uprm;wi & [e;awmrsm;yi
b&i\ treawmuem , &e]]&mZetE0ww}} [í ynawwmrc
ygon/²

[íazmjyxm;ygon/ wi;jynwpjynwi b&ion ta&tygq;y* \vzponji
Eiiawm\ ta&upt00wi wm0et&q;? \oZmtmPmt&q; y* \vzply; b&i\ tq;
tjzwon wi;jynom , m0ajymrtay: tu\;oua&muaeonu awl&&on/ wi;jyn
wpjynwi tjriq; tmPmt&q;jzpaom b&i\ xwjyec;u? q;jzwc;u wureue
cirromv\i wi;oynom;w\ u , pwEv; aueyEporEily; wi;jynpnyi
om , m0ajymrn jzpygon/

treawm [aom to;u y*acwwi

x\ , w0cy , ^ axawmcay; ^ bu - ax;awmcay;on/
b&itrelawmcay;on³ [í awl&&on/ jrerm t b"mewi
]]trell}} [aom a0g [m&u

trel-e- (1) vuemaqmi½u&eñellum;xwjyec;u

¹ wi ? 0; ? 1965 ? 21 /

² b0; ? 0; ? r - 1304 ? 11

³ jrwausm ? 0; ? 2001 ? 109 /

(2) orwv\uem&exwjea\ujmcsu

(3) wppwp&mjy\vy aqmi¹/₂uEi&e tci t m Pm&o \cijy\cu¹

[í v n ; a u m i ;] j a w m } } [a o m t o ; u j r e r m t b " m e w i

awm? e0-jrijrwaom²

[í z i q x m ; o n / x l a l u m i t r e l a w m [a o m t o ; u

trelawm ^ trela': ^ e- & i b & i u x w j e a o m t r e l³

[z i q x m ; & m t r e a w m [o n b & i r i ; j r w u x w j e a o m v u e m a q m i¹/₂ u & e ñ e l u m ;
c u y i j z p y g o n / x l a l u m i & i b & i r s m ; u x w j e a v & l y ; w i ; o j y n o m ; r s m ; E i r i ; r x r ;
r s m ; o & v u e m a p & e ñ e l u m ; c u [í q E i y g o n / j y e w r ; u

j y e w r ; ^ j y e ' g e ; ^ e - b & i v w a w m t r e l

t p ; & \ w & m ; 0 i x w j y e c u r s m ; u p a y g i ; x w a o m p m a p m i

t p ; & \ x w j y e c u t r e l⁴

[í a z m j y x m ; y g o n / t r e l E i j y e w r ; a y g i ; x m ; a o m t r e l j y e w r ; u

] t r e l j y e w r ; ^ t r e l j y e ' g e ; ^ e - b & i v w a w m u x w j e a o m

t r e l ? t p ; & x w j y e c u t r e l⁵

[a z m j y x m ; & m t r e l j y e w r ; u b & i E i v w a w m u x w j y e j c i ; j z p a l u m i ; a w l & & o n /
x l a l u m i t r e l j y e w r ; o n b & i t y c s y a & ; p e p E i t w x e ; u m ; v m l y ; t y c s y a & ; ? p p a & ; ?
E i i a & ; ? v r a & ; ? p ; y m ; a & ; ? o m o e m a & ; ? w & m ; p & i a & ; q i & m c i ; a p ñ e l u m ; c u r s m ; E i
b m o m p m a y , 0 a u ; r ? x ; w r ; " a v t p 0 t v m r s m ; t w u v u e m & e x w j y e c u r s m ;
j z p o n u a w l & & y g o n /

t r e a w m r s m ; u b & i r t a & ; ð u ; a o m u p & y r s m ; E i t j c m ; v t y c u r s m ; t w u
v t y o v x w j e a v & & m a ' g u w m o e ; x e ; u

] a¹/₂ ; a c w j r e r m v r s ; w l o n E i i a w m l i r 0 y y j y m ; r & a & ; ? v r t z l t p n ;

a l l u m i u r r & a p a & ; t w u p e p w u ; p r a q m i¹/₂ u c l u o n / x o l p r

a q m i¹/₂ u & m w i j y n b & i r i ; o n t r e l a w m u E w r a j y m l u m ; & m w i

e m c a w m r r w o m ; l y ; t r e l a w m u t r e l j y e & m w i t r m ; t , i ; t w r ;

t a p m i ; r & a p & e r w o m ; x m ; j c i ; j z p y g o n /⁶

¹ j r e r m p m t z l ? 1980 ? 103 /

² - , i ; - /

³ j r e r m p m t z l ? 1991 ? 147 /

⁴ j r e r m t b " m e ? 1991 ? 414 /

⁵ - , i ; - ? 236 /

⁶ o e ; x e ; (a ' g u w m) ? 2011 ? 1 /

[ía&om;xm;ygon/ b&itrelawm\oabmu o&"rmtaomuri;βu; vuxu
puxcaom ausmupmwirsm;wi awlEiygon/ o&"rmtaomuri;βu;on wi;o
jynom;rm; vuemaqmi½u&e ñelum;cursm;Ei "r0g'rm;u EiitEutjym;ü xwije
con/

jrermEiwi y*acwaEmi;yi; ou&mZ(611) (at'-1249)cewi xwijecaom
upmri; trelawmjewr;u awlEiygon/ xausmupmon tycsya&w&m;p&ia&Ei
lircr;r&apa&twu &n½, xwijecji;jzpygon/ xrlonru c;rusl;vejci;allumi
cpm;&rn 'ua0'emrm;u o½yazma&om;xm;ly; trajci;q, &aom½mwi;ü puxum
vjynaewi;zwapcygon/ upmri;trelawm jewr;ausmupmon tapmq;trel
awmjewr; pum;ajyzpygon/

ti;0acwwi ri;βu;pmapmuvuxu xwijecaom trelawmwpapmion
awl&&ly; tycsya&twu &n½, xwijecalumi;u

]]rllOepma&axmirL;pcwlrnv n; a½ee;awmywvn twi;tji c;ao;
r;rm; &mZ0wEipyqonrm;u ta½lig;wiawmi ig;wi? taemuig;wi?
ajrmuig;witwi;wi c;ao;r;rm;ray:&atmi luyuywn;wn;
[wreon twi;ppalump&i}}

]]qi;&om; uleawmrsl;wlu ryirye;? rEr;re, &atmi βu;on pum;u
i, ap? i, onpum;u yaysmuap}}¹

[íawl&&on/

xallumi ti;0acwwib&iwon wi;jynom, m0ajyma&at;cr; om, ma&
twu tx;tav;ay;um βu±tm;xwconu awl&&ygon/ trelawmjewr;wi
ri;aumi;ri;jrww\ vuPmrsm;? ti;0acwy&yrm; xi[yaeonuawl& &ygon/
ti;0acwtrelawmjewr;wi wi;jyntyclyob&i\ y&yuay:viaeozi tve
pw0ipm;z, aumi;vygon/

awmiiacwwippa&qi&m trelawmjewr;(4)apmiuom awl&&on/

anmi&r;acwwi trelawmjewr;xwijer rsm;jym;vm on/ anmi&r;acwwi
tycsya&? ppa&? p;y;a&? omoema&Ei, 0aus;rx;wr;p0vm qi&mrm;twu
xwijeaom trelawm(283)apmiawl&&ygon/ anmi&r;acwwi omveri;vuxu
witrsm;q; xwijeconuawl&&ly; jewr;rm;t& tycsya&yp pepuconu
o&Eiygon/

¹ oe;xe; (a'guwm) ? 1985(yxrw) ? 152 /

ue;abmiacwwivn; tycly&? Eia&? ppa&? p;ym;a&? vra&;uprsm;
twu treawmjyewr;trsm;tjym; xwiyecygon/ ue;abmiacwaw&&aom trel
awmjyewr; ppaygi;rm (2925)apmijzpon/ treawmjyewr; trsm;tjym;aw&&
aomvn; oaygri;vuxuwi t*vywvuatmuo usa&mucji;alumi ayy&yu
rsm;pm q;½;yup;c&ygon/¹

treawmjyewr;rsm;on &ib&iu wi;oijnom;w vuemaqmi½uap&e
vtyov xwyeav&í Eiaawm, m0ajma&? bupzllz;w;wua&;Ei w&m;Oya'
p;r; a&;wtwu 0;wnxwyeav&onu aw&&ygon/ treawmjyewr;rsm;on
xacw ½;o;pmayrsm; [qEiygon/²

2/ treawmjyewr;pum;ajya&;om;y

v tci;ci; quo , &mwi bompum;rsm;u xiomjriomatmi a&;om;pp0av
&uon/ xlaumi pum;ajy\ t"ym, u armiciri("EjzL)\ pum;ajyoabm w&m;
pum;ajytwwynmpm tywi-

pum;ajy[on rupzijriomatmi wijya&;twu zlpn;xm;on
bompum;yizpon/³

[íziqxm;ygon/ xlaumi treawmjyewr; pum;ajyrsm;on tyclyob&iu
wi;oijnom;rsm;twu xwyealluncsursm;u tv,wu em;vnapEi&etwu
rupzi jriomaponomru &ixwipjrvuemap&etwu pum;ajyuto;jy\um
xwyea&;om;xm;onu aw&&ygon/

pum;ajywp'ywi pma&;o\apwem on tveta&;u;ygon/ apwem on
pma&;o\ &n&, cuyijzpaom alumi pma&;o\ tce;u@on ta&;ygygon/
pma&;o\ qE? &nre;cu? apwemrsm; ay:viap&etwu a&;cs, cuonvn;
tx;ta&;ygygon/ pma&;o\apwemay:vi&e a&;cs, pp0rtrsl;rsl; ujym;av&on/
talumi;t&m\ oabmobm0uvuívvn; a&;cs, pp0r trsl;tpm;ujym;on/
talumi;t&mwij&mwi rr&&cwquwiyEirom &n&, cuay:viayrn/
&n&, cuu ay:viapaom pmwp'yzew;&mwi pum;ajytqiqi pn;½;ronvn;
ta&;ygon/ pum;ajytqiqi pn;½;a&;om;&mwi pum;t o;tEe? 0gu? pmy'? pmy'
[í tqiqipn;½; a&;om;&ygon/

pum;ajyaumi;wp'ywi tqiqipn;½;rrsm;jzpaom pum;o;? 0gu? a&;en;?
a&;[ewon ta&;ygygon/ , i;wuto;jyí acwtwu vtyaompum;ajyu
a&;z&on/ q&mwu ovarmiarmi;u;-

¹ aZmEi ?armi? ue;abmiacw treawmjyewr; ?10 /

² -, i;-? 8 /

³ ciri? armi("EjzL)? 156/

acwtwu t o;c pmayrmpum;ajyzpon / ½; o; twujzpap?
 ynmjze la0rtwujzpap? wp0;Eiwp0; t q u t o , jylr jzpap
 pum;ajyu o m o; &ayrn/ x l a l u m i acwtwu t o;c pmayrm
 pum;ajyzpon /¹

[í relqcon/

pum;ajwpy' z l p n ; a & ; o m ; r w i t a o ; i , q ; a o m t y i ; o n p u m ; o ; y i ; j z p
 o n / p u m ; o ; r s m ; w i a c w o ; p u m ; v ; r s m ; ? u s p v ; p x r a o m p u m ; o ; r s m ; ? y g V p u m ;
 o ; r s m ; ? v ; c i ; u , m r s m ; ? v ; w u , m ? a 0 q m a o m t o ; r s m ; t p & o j z i y g 0 i o n u a w l &
 Eiygon / p u m ; o ; E i y w o u í p u m ; a j y o a b m w & m ; p u m ; a j y t w w y n m p m t y w i

]] p u m ; o ; r s m ; u r n o n a e & m w i r n o r n y o ; p a l u m i ; a v v m r y i
 j z p o n } }²

O g u s r s m ; z l p n ; a & ; o m ; & m w i a & ; o \ p w c p m ; r E i a & ; o m ; o n t a l u m i ; t & m u
 v u í O g u s w ? O g u s & n r s m ; j z i u j y m ; p m a & ; o m ; a v & l u y g o n / x o l a & ; o m ; & m w i
 [e c u n 0 g u r s m ; j z i v n ; a & ; o m ; a v & l u o n / [e c u n 0 g u s u p u m ; a j y o a b m w & m ; ?
 p u m ; a j y t w w y n m p m t y w i -

O g u t w i ; & t p w t y i ; r s m ; ? t a v ; t a y g n a t m i r w i ; u m a & ; z l x m ;
 v i x 0 g u r s l ; u [e c u n 0 g u s [a c : E i y g o n /³

[í a z m j y x m ; o n / O g u t w i ; w i o a b m o b m 0 w a o m ? t a & ; y g a o m t w i ; t q w a o m
 t a l u m i ; t c u r s m ; j z i a & ; o m ; a o m 0 g u r s m ; o n [e c u n 0 g u r s m ; [q E i y g o n /

t c u t v u t p t p 0 r s m ; w i e ' g e ; ? p m u , ? e * ; [í y g & o n / p m w p y ' u z l p n ;
 a & ; o m ; & m w i e ' g e ; E i e * ; o n t a & ; y g a l u m i ; u]] p u m ; a j y o a b m w & m ; ? p u m ; a j y
 t w w y n m } } p m t y w i -

e ' g e ; y i ; o n p m w p y ' w i p m z w o t & i q ; x a w l & a o m t y i j z p o n⁴

[í z i q c o n / e * ; y i ; q o n r m

e * ; y i ; o n p m u t e m ; o w a y ; o n t y i ; j z p o n / p m w p y ' v ; \ q v
 c u u y w i x y a y ; o n t y i ; j z p o n /⁵

[í a z m j y x m ; o n /

o j z p & m t r e a w m j y e w r ; p u m ; a j y w p y ' z l p n ; & m w i p u m ; a j y w i y g 0 i & o n t * g
 & y r s m ; E i r e u e a u m i ; r e a o m p n ; ½ ; r t q i q i w j z i a & ; o m ; a v & a l u m i ; a w l & y g o n /

¹ armiarmitu;? wuov? 1968? 99-100/

² ciri? armi? 2004? 39 /

³ ciri? armi? 2004? 40/

⁴ ciri? armi? 1979? 281 /

⁵ - , i;-?283 /

2'1/ t reawmjyewr; t rsk; t pm; rsm;

jrerri;won Eiiawmuprtys&mwí t reawmjyewr; rsm; xwíyeu
tyscon/ t reawmjyewr; xwíye&mwí t rsk; t pm; (2) rsk; aw&on/ tysyo
b&iEiouqiaom t reawmjyewr; rsm; r

(1)jyewr;u;

(2) jyewr;½; [íjzpon/

jyewr;u;wí (1) topxwíyeaomtre (2) txuwe;&mX;XmeE&ce tyv m
(3) bX; ay; oem; awmrjci; (4) tx; ta&u; on up&y rsm; twu taxax nelum;
c:ur sm; wjzpon/

jyewr;½;wí (u) en;Oya' (c) 'w, tqitwe;&mX;XmeE&ce tyv m (*)
Eiiawmwp0r; v;Ei ouqion taxax t rersm; jzpon/

omretqiEiouqiaom t c g w í (1) p m c l e (2) r w p m [í j z p o n / p m c l e [o n
r&i; t r e p m j z p o n / j y e w r ; r s m ; \ r & i ; p m c l e w í b & i \ v u r w u j z p a p ? w q y a w m u
j z p a p \ A w u w i o r ; q n ; x m ; ½ & o n /

rwp m w í (u) b & i \ t r e a w m j y e w r ;

(c) Xmeqi&m nelum; c:ur sm;

(*) t o n 0 e p m w j z p o n / ¹ x a l u m í t r e j y e w r ; t r s k ; t p m ; (5) r s k ; a w & o n /

2'2/ t reawm xwíyey t q i q i

jrerri;won t reawmjyewr; rsm; u xwíye&mwí p n ; u r ; & p m p e p u ; p m
xwíyeav&on/ t reawm xwíye&mü t r e a w m j y e w r ; w p a p m í x w í y e & m w í t q i
i g ; q i & o n / ð i ; w l r m j y e & i ; X m e ? y j y e X m e ? v w a w m j y e & i ; X m e ? v w a w m v u u i
X m e E i o u q i o r s m ; x y a q m i j c i ; w j z p o n /

yxrtqion jye&i;Xme jzpon/ b&ia½Uawmarmuwi a&;rwon ae&m
jzpon/ \Awuawm twu vucxm;&&m t r e p m w p a p m í x m ; & l y ; t v n u s
o a w m q i r s m ; o n b & i \ E w r e U t w i ; a w m n v m c w i a & ; r w u & o n / e m ; c a w m r m
n a e o ; c s u w ; u m e ; w i a t m í \ A w u u a p m i a e & o n / t r e a w m w p p w p & m x u v m
v i o a w m q i u e m ; c a w m o t y o n /

'w, tqion jyeXmejzply; vwawm twu t reawm rsm; u paqmi; xm; on/
pXmewi t reawmjyewr; rwwr; wpapmi xm; & ygon/

¹ ဆွဲနီ၊ ခရစ္စတီ၊ ချော့

ww, tqion vwawmije&i;Xme jzply; tvnu: em;cawmu treawmu
 , aqmi vmy; vwawmwi treawmu xwijeygon/ J]em;c awmu vn; treawmu
 ½aopm uiaqmi í naeo;cuw;onEi wply/ieu lAwurxu vmy;v(i vwawm
 a&muu v o [m ó e&mZyviawm \ vu0buü tra&U ri;ae&mawmjzpaom uwyg
 uyoijzL;&&m o O;o;urcy;r yg vmaom treawmuzwij&on/}}

ppwtqion vwawmvuuiXmejzply; em;cawmr xwijely;aom treawm
 u vwawmpma&x tyao mae&mjzpon/ pma&awm u;on treawmu treawma&
 t rmawma&w/x pppay;tyly; vucwpapm i x m; &ygon/¹

aem uq;tqiwi treawmu ouqior sm;x ay;tyont qijzpon/ xalumi
 treawmjyewr;wpapmion tqiig;qiu jzwau smly;r ouqiox a&mu&vm
 on/ xu o t qiqixwijeyav&&m anni&r;acwwi vwawmü xwijecalumi;u

em;cpajrmirl;vwwijyeon trelawm}}²

[í awl&&on/ xwijey&mwi xwijeyouyg pepwus rwwr;wi xm;av &ygon/
 ou&mZ1000jyn uqevqe; 13&uae xw treawmjyewr;wi em;cajymrl;u;
 xw , í vwawmwi xwijecalumi;u

J]ou&mZ 1000jyn uqevqe; 13 &uae 14 April 1638

em;cajym u;rl; xw í vwawmwi jyeon trelawm}}³

[í azmjyxm;onu awl&&ygon/

xalumi treawmjyewr;rsm;u pn;ur;pepuspm xwijeyxm;allumi; avvm
 o&&ygon/ pepuspm xwijeyxm;&on jrermri;w \ tyc\ya&u azmjyaeygon/

3/ treawmjyewr;rsm;r jrermmpmayxe;or;rqi&m rsm;

ရှေးမြန်မာဘုရင်တို့သည် တိုင်းပြည်အုပ်ချုပ်ရေးတွင် ရှေးအစဉ်အဆက်တိုင်အောင် လက်ခံ
 ယုံကြည်သင့်သည်များကို လိုက်နာဆောင်ရွက်ခဲ့သည်။ တိုင်းပြည်တိုးတက်စေရန် စီမံဆောင်ရွက်ရာတွင်
 အုပ်ချုပ်ရေး၊ လူမှုရေး၊ စစ်ရေး၊ တရားစီရင်ရေး၊ ဘာသာစာပေ ပြန့်ပွားရေးကိုလည်း အထူးတလည်
 အားထုတ်ခဲ့သည်။ မိမိတိုင်းပြည်တိုးတက်စေရေးအတွက် အားထုတ်ကြိုးပမ်းရာတွင် အမိန့်တော်များ
 ထုတ်ပြန်ကာ တိုင်းသူပြည်သားများအား အသိပေးစေသည်။ ထိုကဲ့သို့ထုတ်ပြန်ရာ၌ အမိန့်တော်ပြန်တမ်း
 ထုတ်ပြန်ရာတွင်ထိရောက်စေရန်နှင့် ဆိုလိုသည့်အဓိပ္ပါယ် ပေါ်လွင်စေနိုင်ရန်လိုအပ်သည်။ အရေးအသား
 မှန်ကန်၊ ညီညွတ်စေပါမှ တိုင်းနိုင်ငံအတွက် အကျိုးကျေးဇူးများမည့်အကြောင်းကို သကရာဇ်(၉၄၇)၊
 နယုန်လဆန်း (၃) ရက်နေ့ (AD-1635,7May) နားခံစမြောင်မှူးထုတ်၍ လွှတ်တွင်ပြန်သည့် အမိန့်တော်
 တွင်

¹ wi ? O; ? 1983 ? 165 /

² oe;xe;? a'guwm? 1985? 222/

³ oe;xe;? a'guwm? 1985? 222(yw)/

r[m"raZ, ,o&? r[m b, o&wrm igt ½ib0½i ri;w&m;u; t u&awm
up&i&rn/ t u&½rvn; wi;a&jyna&ü&eq; &eanmiray:rxu
||ir0yí jynxa&om, mrnjzpon/ t u&awmp;ym;awm xm;um
aqmi½uí x;ya[mi;ouao rníwallumi;? ta&t om; , i;íwallumi;?
vp[i;orlonvn; &mZ0w0, roionyijzpon/

[íxwiyexm;cygon/ Eiiawm t u&p;ym;w;wuí wi;jynom, mat;cr;a&wi
treawm jyewr;xwiyexm;ru em;vnoabmaygu&evtyon/ qvcuuem;vn
oabm aygurom v&i;ua&uEialumi; azmjyxm;&mwi treawmjyewr; ta&t om;
ajjyp aumi;reronvn; tygt0ijzpon/ p t cuu owjyraomallumi treawm
ta&t om;rm; , i;v[i t jypjzppwallumi;u]ta&t om; , i;íwallumi;} [azmjyxm;
on/ xialumi treawmpm u Xneu½P;uspm a&om;&ermllum;yu

a&om;aom t&mrm;rmvn; t u&m0wreat mia&ap&rn/²

[í xwiyea&om;xm;on/ a&acwjrerm b&iw\ t ajrm t jri&r\wu awjri&on
t jyi jrerm pay\ tce;u@ ta&u;yu vn; aw&&ygon/ xuoreuepm a&om;
jci;\ t u&aus;Z;on wi;jyntycsya&wi t veta&u;alumi;u jriaw&ygon/
treawmjyewr; ta&t om;u nnwat mi a&om;Eirom wi;jynt u&? wi;o
jynom; t u&rsm; ½Eirn jzpaallumi;u treawmjyewr;wi

p&ia&om;orrm t u&m0w? 'EZ'r'Z? u? uwm;? Xneu&P;? qe;?

t vum ta&t om;nnwr t u&awm p;ym;awmjyeym;rn/³

[í a&om;xwiyexm;on/ xialumi wi;jyntycsya&wi pmayta&t om;\ tce;
u@on ta&ygalumi; aw½&on/ treawmjyewr; xwyeon talumi;t&mu
azmjy&mwi Eii t E&ausm upmrm; , r; , iae? yu p;ae ygu jyi q iwnrw&Ei jyi
xm;alumi; urn;rwwr;rsm;u wqyawmxyí v&ermllum;yu

ausm upmwi, e;orrm rwatmixyí puap? jyi vyon
ausmi;awmrm;rm wqyawmxyí v&rn/⁴

[xwiyexm;on/ xialumi rwwr;rw&mrm;u pepwus xe;or;aom
anmi&r;acw\y&y utreawmrwwr;rsm;r wqia vvmaw&&on/

pmayta&t om; reuea&t wu xwiyeaom treawmjyewr;wi

yqaom t&mum; a&a&aⅇa&t rrm;ü yaqip&iz;aom &eq;
&eanmiu &n íp&iaomyp? tui;orm;aq;orm; rEeorm;won
wapzwjyw&yz;oz; (&yzr;ozr;)rsm;Eip; (pe;) qiue;ewq; aZm*e

¹ oe;xe;? a'guwm? 1985? 222(yw)/

² -, i;- /

³ -, i;- /

⁴ -, i;- /

**wu&ní wa , muonaomyprsm;u roEijzpon? jrijri&m&m ra&;om;
apEi/**

**[azmijxm;on/ ta&;tom;nnw aumi;reatmi ra&;om;Eiojzi jriaw&aom
tajctaeu ewq;? aZm*ewjzi vtrsm;rEplrz , yci;xm;on/ tptp0nnwrw
jci;r&? pepujci;r&? awljri&m ra&;om;ap&ermum;&mwi jrijri&m&m) [aom0pmv;
xyto;jzia&;om; xm;onrm t"ym , yríay:viapygon/ ou&mZ(999)c? Ewawm
vqe;(2)&uae (AD-1637,7 Novenber) xwjyeaom treawmijewr;wi pmayuir;ui
or;sm;t;m;celxm;um zwlum;apallumi;xwije&mü**

**t u&myuorwu0 ausmupmwwwu celízwap/ ausmupmww wu
topp&ií t u&mxaply;vi puwi;puap&rn/**²

ဟူရေးသားထားသည်။ ထို့ကြောင့် ညောင်ရမ်းခေတ်တွင် မြန်မာစာပေထိန်းသိမ်းရာတွင် စနစ်တကျ လုပ်ကိုင်ဆောင်ရွက်စေကြောင်း တွေ့ရှိရသည်။

ထိုမျှသာမက စာပေတိုးတက် စေရန်အတွက် စာရေးကိရိယာများ ထောက်ပံ့ပေးခြင်း တို့ကို အထူးတလည် ဂရုစိုက်ခဲ့သည်။ ဘာသာစာပေပြန့်ပွားရေး၊ တိုးတက်ထွန်းကားစေရေးအတွက် အားထုတ် ကြိုးပမ်းခဲ့သည်။ ပိဋကတ်တိုက်များ၌ ပေချပ်များ စုဆောင်းထားရှိစေရေးအတွက် ထုတ်ပြန်သောအခါ သက္ကရာဇ်(၁၀၀၀)ပြည့်၊ ကဆုန်လပြည့်ကျော်(၆)ရက်နေ့ (AD-1638,22 April)နားခံစမြောင်မှူး ထုတ်၍ လွှတ်တွင်ပြန်သည့် အမိန့်တော်ပြန်တမ်းတွင်

**y#uwawma&;rm qip , aycy wpaomi;&pcy? a&om;ay
wpaomi;&pcy? aiom;aywpaomi;½pcy? twi;awmup&i
on? vwuy#uwwu o0 yay;ap**

ဟူ၍ ထုတ်ပြန်ထားသည်။ ဘာသာစာပေအပေါ် မြတ်နိုးတန်ဖိုးထားသည့် အမိန့်တော် ပြန်တမ်းအဖြစ် လေ့လာတွေ့ရှိနိုင်ပါသည်။

ထိုကဲ့သို့ပေချပ်များ ပို့ဆောင်စေရာတွင် အလေအလွင့်ဆုံးရှုံးမှု မရှိစေရန်အတွက် စီမံ ဆောင်ရွက်ရာ၌

**jyly;r r [mjrwrP y#uwwu o0 tluyt rEiy0ap/ r [m'ge0epma&;
w0u pm&i; , ap&rn/**

ဟူ၍ ရေးသားထုတ်ပြန်ခဲ့ပါသည်။

ထိုမျှသာမက အမိန့်တော်ပြန်တမ်းများထုတ်ပြန်ရာတွင် ရှင်းလင်းမှုမရှိသဖြင့် ဆိုလိုချက်လည်း မပေါ်လွင်သောကြောင့် တိုင်းသူပြည်သားများ မရှင်းမလင်း၊ ရောထွေးနေကြောင်းကို သက္ကရာဇ် (၁၀၄၃)ခု၊ တန်ဆောင်မုန်းလဆန်း (၅) ရက်နေ့(AD-1681,5 October) ထုတ်ပြန်သော အမိန့်တော် ပြန်တမ်း၌

¹ oe;xē; ? a'g uwm ? 1985 ? 222(yw)/

² oe;xē;? a'g uwm? 1985? 369(yw) /

³ - , i; - /

⁴ - , i; - /

tviuay;avon treawmjyewr;rsm;rmvn; roomav?
tax;ax; ta&ma&m&avon? 0epma&w0vuxn;wi r&ap
Ei? acsb/

[í]tax;ax; ta&ma&m}to;ji qvcuu av;euay:viatmi o;pxm;alumi;
aw&&on/

ue;abmiacw tavmi;ri;w&m;vuxu(117)c? weaqmire;vqe; (1) &u
ae(AD-1755,4 Novenber) xwjeaom treawmjyewr;wi pmaya&;om;rreue apa&;
twu rl;rwEp0; u , xvua&mu jzpy;m&ontx jy ó emjzpí ri;βu;tm;wilum;
luon/ ri;βu;ub , aem&xmu ta&;tom;reuerl&r&u apmilun&ewm0e ay;xm;
alumi;u

]ou&naem&xm pmcleawmwi treawmta&;tom; towtvw
tztxpui tlunt&ceawmrvi b&m;uleawm u , truol
pma&;wi a&;vuaom pmwi wqycw&rn wqyygb?}}²

[treawmjyewr;wi yg&aomalumi a&;b&iw\ jrermpayuxe;or; apmia&mu
ron *P , av;pm;z , &myijzpon/ xalumi b&itreawmjyewr;u towtvw
[aom pmv;aygi;reueatmi a&;om;xwjeav&alumi; pepwu; xwjeav&alumi;
aw&&on/ pma&;om;yaem&txm;to rreueaomalumi rr(b , aoe)u wqycw
ray;Eialumi;u

t&;pm taygpmua&;í wqycwrcvmEi ri;rmwqyr[w rl;βu;
rwβu; r[wrqygqonwi ou&naem&xmxí a^{1/2}lawmwi vuo;
Oaumi;uou&mwi Asm 'wawmwiei xu&;&i;ruapmum;or& ei
tjypu b , aoeolawmllay/³

[í ta&;tom; reueapa&;twu jy ó emjzpluontalumi;u A [owjzpz , aw&&
on/

jrermpayuxe;or;apmia&mu&etwu treawmjyewr;xwje&mwi b;awm
b&m;vuxu ou&mZ (1145) c 'w , 0gq vqe;(5)&uae (AD-1783,3 July) xwje
aom treawmjyewr;wi owyreueapa&;twu a&;om;lu&mwi jrermv;aygi;
owyreueapa&;u y*acwuwn;u tm;xwclualumi;u
y*auumi;pm;p0tu&maA'owy vuemlu&atmi⁴

[í y*acwwi tu&maA'owyac: owyur;Eitn vuema&;om;con/ aemuyi;
acw tququwivn; vuemluon/ y*acwrpwií tu&maA'owy? yi; ,

¹ oe;xe; ?a'guwm ?1985 ? 243 ('w)/

² - , i;=/ 138(ww) /

³ - , i;-? /

⁴ oe;xe; ?a'guwm ?1985 ? 260 (pw)/

acwwi quvuo;pjci;? ti;0acwwi tu&maA'owyEi oA0mPcowy owy
a[mi;? anni&r;acwwivn; jrermpayxe;or;rrsm;u vuemuisio;jci;u avv m
aw&&on/

owyur;wirygv\i ynm&irms;Ei nEi;av&on/ rrvuxuwivn;
owyrsm; reueapa&;twu 0PaA"owti;? iatmowy? wi;oi;wu0ew nelum;
ontwi; vuema&;om;luap&e xwjiye&mü

iga&vuxuawmwivn; 0PaA"owti;? iatmowy? wi;oi;
wu0eowne;rm;twi; vuema&;om;luap¹

[íxwjiyexm;aomallumi acwtququ treawmjiyewr;rm;wi jrermpay owy
reueapa&;twu xwjiyecon/

xr\omru wi;&i;om;bompum;rm;twu ouqi&m0eri;rm;celxm;í bmojiye
xm;½um q;jzwapallumi;u

½r;t u&m? , e;t u&mrm;rm oawmcaZ , saem&xmq;jzw&m vuem
lu&allumi;²

[ía&;om;xm;aomallumi jrermpayxe;or;&mü pepwusprxm;allumi;u avv maw½
&on/

pmayta&;tom; reuepma&;om;Eirom qvonoabmu yiyaiv
aprn jzpygon/ xuol a&;om;&mwi jynoynom;trsm; vucEirom qvcuu
ly;ajrmu atmijriEialumi;u azmjiy&mwi ou&mZ (1146)c awmovi;vqe; (14)&u
ae(AD-1784,28 August) em;cpajrmirl; o [aem&xmwijyeaom treawmjiyewr;ü

vwui&muisialumi;jzpaom wi;a&;jynr\rmvn; a&;ab;avmi;awmw
vuxu jypoi;xm;on a&wupm&i;pmwr; umva'otavsmu
yup; , , i;&mwi ynmquwi rwvom;v&m rwom;luon x;p
pmayrm;u tEitrejyí t&y&y0epma&;w tu;tujyor\ vwtpm;
r,wepm; , luí qi;&om;uleawmrsl;w rlr0yrer&yEiatmi&lu
aomallumi jynotwi;jyiwiyií pmoi;lu&rn³

[í a&;om;xwjiyexm;aom treawmjiyewr;wi ta&;tom;ajjiyprom emvow
twu tv,wuvucem ,rn jzpon/ xalumi ta&;tom;ajjiypreueici;twu
ta&;ygalumi;u a&; ,ciacwun;u vucuisio;conu avv mawll&&on/

xr\omru ue;abmiacw b;awmb&m;vuxuo a&mu&vmaomtcg Eii
&yjcm;Ei quqa&;yr w;wuus ,jyevmon/ b;awmb&m;on ou&mZ (1146)

¹ oe;xe; ? a'guwm ? 1985 ?260(pw) /

² - , i; - /

³ - , i; -? 374(pw) /

cEpwi Am&mPoau;? en'yir' ouwur;rm;u oabmjzi ,aqmilerL;rwrm;u
apvw&m rL;rwrm;u om;a&mu ,aqmily; b;awmb&m;x quoluon/ xur;
rm;u armi;axmiq&mawm u bmonjyeq&on/ xuo jyeq&mwivn; xtreaawm
wi azmjyxm;aom owyur;pmEit n a&om;&e treawmxwjyea&om;&mü

taemUEiirZra'or iga&vuxuawmwiaom A*gvem*& ta&pulpm
rm;ujrermyeqontcg jrerma&rm;rmvn; q;jzwcutwi;om
vuema&om;uap¹

[í xwjyexm;aomali a&b&irsm;on bmonjye&mwijrermpmto;Ei wwEi
or|e;pyatmijyeapvaom apwem½allumi;u aw&&on/

မြန်မာအက္ခရာများကို လေ့လာရာတွင် မြန်မာစာပေအရေးအသား စတင်ပေါ်ပေါက်ချိန်တွင်
ခရာထောင့်များကိုသုံးစွဲခဲ့သည်။ မင်ဖြင့် အသုံးတွင်ကျယ်လာသောအခါ ခရာဝန်းများဖြင့်သာ ရေးသားကြ
သည်။ ထိုကြောင့်ရေးသားသော အကရာပုံသဏ္ဌာန်နှင့်ပတ်သက်၍ (၁၁၆၈)ခု ကဆုန်လပြည့်ကျော်
(၉)ရက်နေ့(AD-1894,10SMay) ထုတ်ပြန်သော အမိန့်တော်ပြန်တမ်းတွင် ထုတ်ပြန်ရာ၌

ygVawrm;u ripma&rnrm c&maxmira&apEi yuwa&lr c&m0e;
a&ap'

ဟုရေးသားထုတ်ပြန်ထားသည်။

ကုန်းဘောင်ခေတ် နောက်ဆုံးမင်းဆက်ဖြစ်သော သီပေါမင်းလက်ထက်တွင် ရှေးမင်းများ၏
အစဉ်အဆက် လိုက်နာကျင့်သုံးခဲ့ကြသော ထုံးစံများအတိုင်း ရေးသားကြရန် ထုတ်ပြန်ခဲ့သည်။ သက္ကရာဇ်
(၁၂၄၀)ပြည့်၊ နတ်တော်လပြည့်ကျော် (၆) ရက်နေ့ (AD-1878,19December) တွင် တောင်ဥယျာဉ်တော်
၌ အစည်းအဝေးကျင်းပပြီး အစည်းအဝေးဝင်မှူးမတ်များက သတ်ပုံသတ်ညွှန်း (၃၆) ကျမ်းကိုစိစစ်ပြီး
တစ်ကျမ်းစီနှင့်ပတ်သက်၍ ဆုံးဖြတ်ချက်များချမှတ်သည်။ ချမှတ်သောအမိန့်တော်ပြန်တမ်း၏ ထုတ်ပြန်
ချက်တွင်

jrwpmb&wnxm;awmrcaom omoemawmjrw y#uwawrm;u
a&om;lr a&pmripm unpa&pmrm;u a&om;&etreaawm eó ,e
apmieaysmur;wi jrerm0g [m&reueap&e wn;jzwyiqiowoi
&mwivuem&Ei vw&rm;wivuem&e³

[xwjyexm;&m jrerpmyori;twu au;Z;u;rm;von/ pmayrwwr; taxmu
txm; cicirm&allumi;u aw&½omru jrermri;wtp0tqu jrerpmy xe;or;y
u avvmaw&&on/

¹ oe;xex; ? a'guwm ? 1985 / 374 (pw) /

² - , i;- ?874 (y0rw) /

³ oe;xex; ? a'guwm ? 1985 ?934(e0rw) /

lci o;oycu

acwtququ awl&aom jrerm pay xe;or;apmia&urqi& treawmrsm;
on pn;pepuseon/ rrwbompmay tay: jrwe;pmxe;or;apmia&ur u ay:vi
apygon/ ta&tom;reuer&rjci; \ tu& t;typrsm;u oomxi&m;pm xwyexm;
on/ a&;ciuwn;u ripma&; unppma&wuxm;&on jrerm b&iw\ tajrm
tjri&u;r u avvma&Eion/ ta&tom;u nnwatmia&om;Eirom qvon
t"yg, u xxrrazmjyEirnjpzy; vyie;rs;ly;ajrmu at mijriEirnjpzpon/

bmompjayjeym;r wi;jynw;wu xe;um;Eialumi;uo&aom jrermri;w\
pwaeoabmxm;u avvnci&on/ rrwbompmay t&nwnwci&ra&twu
treawmrsm; xwyjea&om;uon/ jrerm paytwu owrwc&uwpc xwyjeum
a&om;xwyjecon/ a&tp0tqu xwyjecon owyowne;rs;u av;pm;
vuemluon/ xromru r&i;rvi;&onrs;u ynm&rs;jzi aq;aE;q;jzwapon/
acwtququ ynm&irs;jzi pepwusvyaqmicluon a&;jrermrs;\ tajrm tjri
u;r u azmjyaeon/ jrermri;rs; acwtququ pmayw;wu jrirm;apvalumi;u
apwemrejzi tx;t m;xwu&yr;&mwivn; ynm&irs;jzi tqiqinEi;aqmi&u
con/

avvmxe;or;&mw i owyowne;pmtyrs;u vuemjci;? r&i;vi;onrs;
u ynm&irs;xm;&i aq;aE;ar;jre;apjci;? tpn;ta0;rs;jzi aq;aE;q;jzwapjci;?
bmomjye&mw i jrerm payEi e;pypmjyeqapjci;wu avvma&&on/

y*acwrpí , aexuwivuqiur;vmluaom jrermvr&w\ owyur;rs;
talumi;u avvmo&ci&ontwu pmayavvm vupm;or;twu tu&au;Z;
&&apon/ jrerm o'gta&tom; reuewu;pm a&om;apa&twu treawmxwyje
xm;onrm jrerm paytwu tx;ausey Epouz, yijzpon/

e*;

ppmwr;on jrerm paytwu jrerm b&irs; t m;xwu&yr;rs; talumi;u
avvmwijyxm;jci; jzpygon/ ppmwr;twu tx;au;Z; wixuony*vrm
q&m&u;a'guwmcia t; jzpygon/ q&m&u; \aqmi;yg;u avv mzw½r&mr ppmwr;
twu jyi qia&om;rjci;jzpygon/ ppmwr;u zwlu m;ciay;ygaom jyi qiwn;jzw
ay;ygaom rEav;Eiijcm;bmomwuov? jrerm b&omXme (Xmerl;) a'guwm&&rm
t m;vn; au;Z; tx;wi&ygon/

u;r;u;pm&i;

ciri? (armi) "EjzL (2019) {lyv} *touqu&ioer/twu bnompum;Ei/ jrermpayxe;or; apm ia&mua&? uau m0w&npmay? &eueir*

ciri? armi("EjzL) (1979) *pum;ajyoabmw&m; pum;ajytwwynm &eue? 0ZmEi oywuov/ aZmei? arnil (2005) ue;abmiacwtrelawmiyewr;pum;ajy ta&tom;avvmcul &eue wuov jrermmyg&*bU , ur;l*

wi? 0;l (1963) *jrermri;tyc:yypmwr;Ei/b;awmb&m;u; l &mZowac:aom trelawmiyewr; /u; (yxrw) l &eue ? a&a [mi;pmayEi , 0au;rXnep/*

wi? 0;l (1965) *jrermri;tyc:yypmwr;Ei/ b;awmb&m;u; l &mZowac:aom trelawmiyewr;u;('w, w) l &eue? A [yEywul*

wi? 0;l (1970) *jrermri;tyc:yypmwr;Ei/ b;awmb&m;u; l &mZowac:aom trelawmiyewr;u;(ww, w) l vore (wn;jzw)? &eue ? A [yEywul*

b0; (0;l) (1997) *jrermtyc:ya&ynm l rEav; ? A [&pnowi;pmwu l*

jrwaum (0;l) (2001) *aumupmb"me l &eue ? yEya&Eipm tyxwa0a&l*

jrermptz/ (1978-80) *jrerm b"met u;0;c:y tw(1) l &eue? pmayArneyEywul*

jrermptz/ (1991) *jrerm b"mel &eue? zwvpoyEywul*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (2011) *trelawmxuori;l &eue? pwu;csc;pmyl*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (1985) *jrermri;trelawmiyewr;rm; (yxrw) l uw? ta&lawmitm&a&;&m Xme? uwwwuov/*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/(1985) *jrermri;trelawmiyewr;rm; ('w, w) l uw? ta&lawmitm&a&;&m Xme? uwwwuov/*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (1985) *jrermri;trelawmiyewr;rm; (ww, w) l uw? ta&lawmitm&a&;&m Xme? uwwwuov/*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (1985) *jrermri;trelawmiyewr;rm; (pwww) l uw? ta&lawmitm&a&;&m Xme? uwwwuov/*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (1985) *jrermri;trelawmiyewr;rm; (y0rw) l uw? ta&lawmitm&a&;&m Xme? uwwwuov/*

oe;xe;? a'guwm/ (1985) *jrermri;trelawmiyewr;rm;(e0rw) l uw? ta&lawmitm&a&;&m Xme? uwwwuov/*

azjri \ 0w\wrsm;r oa&m [e ci te;jri*

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on azjri \ 0w\wrsm;r oa&m [euav\vmwijyxm;aom pmwr; jzpyg
on/ pmwr; \&n& , c:urm azjri on 0w\wrsm;ua&z\&mü oa&m [eu xnoi;
a&z\wwyu o&apvjci;jzpygon/ ppmwr;u av\vm&mwi azjri \ 0w\wr
sm;u tav\vmctjzp ovrwum oa&mpm? oa&m [een;ynmrsm;jzi c:0;uyav\vm
o;oywijyxm;ygon/ ppmwr;r 0w\woa&m [e av\vmorm;twu
taxmutuyEirn [ar\mviygon/

aom:cupum;v;rsm;/ /oa&mpm? oa&men;? oa&m [e? vy*vwpo; wpa, muu
oa&mpm? vwe;pm;wp&y&yu oa&mpm? vw\ "av\ x;p
tjy\truoa&mpm/ wu½u oa&men;? o , 0uoa&men;/
tveyu;c\í oa&m [e? tveao;oratmijyí oa&m [e/

e'ge;

u\eron 0w\wrsm;u Epou on tav\smu 0w\wrsm;wiyg0iaom oa&m [e
rsm;u\vn; trwxixijzpcygon/ q&maZm*s \ 0w\wrsm;r oa&m [e? armixi \
0w\wrsm;r oa&m [ewu tx;Epoucygon/ azjri \ 0w\wrsm;u zwíazjri \
0w\wrsm;wi oa&m [ersm; xnoi;a&z\ x m; onu\vn; Epoucygon/ ,ctcg
pmwr;wioi;&e tci u\ vmaomall u m i azjri \ 0w\wrsm;r oa&m [eu av\vmwij
jci;jzpygon/

azjri \ oa&m [eu av\vmwijy&mü oa&mpm? oa&men;? oa&m [eEi ywou
aom pm typmwr;rsm;u zw½av\vmcygon/ armioe;aqjy(paom)armixi \ oa&mpm}}
(rEav;wuov?yg&*bU twu wioi;aomoawoepmwr;) u\vn; zw½av\vm
cygon/ oa&m [e en;ynmrsm;u taccí azjri \ oa&m [eu av\vmazmxw x m;yg
on/

1/ pma&o \ t w\yw t u:0;

pma&q&mazjri \ uavmitrnr m rv trn&i;jzpygon/ rbEpyg;r m
0;atmilir;Ei a':cioe;jzpon/ 1949 wi&ciyne, owr\üz m;jrion/ owr\ r\U
tp;& txuwe;au sm i; trw(1)r wuov0iwe;atmijrion/ 1975 wi aq;wuov(1)?
&euerb\&on/ 1988 cEpt x jyi ytaxaxa&m*g u q&m0etjzpaqmi&uclon/
xaemu pmayvyie;wpcwn;uom p;puvyuicl on/

* a'g uwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pmXme? rEav;wuov

pmay*me, ? 'vi;r*Zi;wwi t, 'wm t jzpaqmi&uclon/ Bu;ym;a&
wuur;trsm;tjym;u a&om;clon/ r*Zi;rsm;wia&om;clom 0w/wrsm;uppn;í
0w/waygi;clypm ty (4) tyxwa0clon/ azjria&om;xwa0clom pm tyrs;rm
(40)ausm jzpygon/

q&mazrion vo;ypn;a&mi;orsm;Ei t jcm;0w/wrsm;pm tyzi 1995 wi
tr^{sl};om;pmayq&&cygon/ aziri\0w/waygi;clyrs;Ei Bu;ym;a& wu^{ur};rsm;u
pmzwy&owrsm; BuEpuouaomallumi t urturyEy xwa0&ygon/

, ctcgq&mazrion Ze;a':ciE, 0;? om;armiazaZm0;? or;cslppciwEi tw
ti;pe^{ll}ue, ? eUomue;&yu u? ta0&mvr;wiaexivu pmayrs;u a&om;aeqjzpyg
on/ ,ctp;&vuxuwi jyelum;a&0eBu;tjzp Eiiawm\ wm0ers;uxr;aqmi
vu&ygon/

2/ Zmwvr; t u0;Ei &n½, cu

]avmb0w\ 0w/wwi Zmwaqmi\Ze;on ap;0, ly;trojyevmon/ ciye;
jzpou ueap;Ee;Bu;jrion tallumi; ajymyon/ ciye;jzpou ap;uu oabmw&m;
u&i;jyon/ Ze;jzpou oabmw&m;xu vuawuta&Bu;allumi;? ueap;Ee;
jriwuaeí owomiwre;ro iwvmaumi;? tcllaomors;u aitxyvuuií
lluom;ap; b, avmuBu; ty;ryu0, pm;Ei allumi;ajymon/ ciye;u
xow\ touar;rrm ormtmZ0 rzpEialumi;ajymon/ avmbu;ve;vi]wicon
vir, m;} yjixuv jzpom;Eialumi;ajymon/ or;uzciuxyjitallumi; ajmijci;
on/ Zmwaqmiu wigonvir, m; qi;qi;&&aexi touar;&allumi;? wpaewi
x;qe;on ig;Bu;uzr;ralumi;? xig;Bu;u vpum;ajymwwí jyevway;vuallumi;?
xig;Bu;x wigon\ r, m;jzpou ciye;uowae&e trom;awmi;ci;&m tr&
allumi;? xaemu wuEilaecion[Ze;uig;Bu;x ciye;onu om;awmi;ci;&m
wuEilc0i;us, Ei a&ai&wemtjynEi cr;cr;om oae&allumi;? Ze;urauey
Eiao;b b&irtjzputv&on[om;awmi;ci;&m ig;Bu;u, ap? jzpap[ajmallumi;?
xtcg b&irtjzpu&&allumi;? Ze;uxrEi raueyEiao;b b&m;tjzpuawmi;&m
rvaec&ontwi; qi;qi;&&jzi &mvum&nt;xwi jyea&mu aeallumi;ajymyon/
xtcgZe;uavmbu;orm or[walumi;? ciye;jzpoavmbu;ly; b&m;jzpvaoallumi
om owrom;p qi;qi;&&ae&allumi; tcuyiyiajymvu yzi Zmwor;xm;on/

&n&, curm ormtmZ0jzi touar;ci;allumi qi;&wi;rrvwui; Eiy?
wpaewpicm; v;yg;yg;vmEiy? ormtmZ0jzi touar;rrj\vyors;rm wpaewpicm;
Bu;ym;vmyu Zmwaqmi\ Ze;jzpoajympum;jzi azmijxm;í avmuBu; \ tlr;tarmu
rwnrrsm;u oa&m [eygyg wijyvji;jzpon/

[u;e;rma&;vupm;jci;} 0w\wwi t"uZmwaqmirm ubarmijzpon/ ubarmi
on aygiceEp&me;yg; 0ojzpon/ aygicepuay:wu í u, tav;c;e celun&mwi
vn;aumi;? bwpum;p;&mwi vn;aumi;? txncly&e tupay;&mwi vn;aumi;
t0vejci;allumi cPcPpum;ajym&on/ aemuq;wi ye&etwu ue;rma&;vupm;
rn? vr;av\murn [q;jzwon/ ubarmivr;av\mu xuon/ yvuazmi;ay:wi
olxu0aom? Au&aom? om;om;em;em;0wxm;aom trs\om; wp0;ujrion/ xoon
vr;ab; yvuazmi;jriui;u atmique; tm;upm;ui;ulo oabmxm;ly; txitx?
tue;tur;pvyaeon/ ubarmixoutm;u;ly;ajy;vu? ceayguvuji triye
a&muvmon/

nwia*gua&m*giyeay:on/ 'a&mily;emoji tyraymEiaomallumi tyaq;Epjym;
aomuly;ty&on/ tyru xwi aori;Eiawon/ aori;u avluice;vyaomvn;
talumi;rx;? tcewev\i oqa&mu&rntalumi; ajymon/ vr;ab;yvuazmi;wi
rupaemuatmi vyaeaom xvuacl;ly;r olac:rntalumi; vr;xuly;rup
aemuatmi av\mu vyae v\i pm&i;awu a&laemuvyly; ausmac:vurn talumi;
ajym&m Zmwaqmiuaori;u awmi;yeyji Zmwor;xm;on/

&n&,curm yeye00 bu;bu;i,i, rnonavluice;yvyvy tcewev\i
ao&rnpjpalumi;u aori;uajmyjiazmjyí vjriui;wi t&utalumur&
txitx tue;tur;pji avluice;vyaeluorm;u oa&m vjci;jzpon/

[armi w;av;u aq;uay;rnlor&yg) 0w\wwi Zmwaqmiuatmir;on tqw
a&m*g(wb)Ei aoq;ve;yg;tajctaejzpon/ om;av;armi w;u aq;uray;Ei í tou
xu&erajmiEib jzpaen/

wba&m*gu pwi taray;corm uatmir;Ze;\rcijzpo a,muravmi; jzpon/
a,muravmi;aoq;ly; cu;&mrre;uav;uvuxyclon/ Ze;onrm o\rcixr
tqwa&m*gu;puaomallumi aq;uo&on/ rjynrpp;ym;av; ueontcg Ze;jzpo
aoq;om;on/ or;jzpo tqwa&m*gcpm;&aom tvnwi aq;ruoEi í u,z&iz
jy\pcon/ or;aoq;om;ly;aemu uatmir;u a&m*gu;puon/ uatmir;wi
om;uav; armi w;&ao;on/ orsm;wumv ypn;Opmtarray;Ei? tqwa&m*gu
om taray;c&aom om;av;twu tu;tu;,pwraumi;jci;jzp&on/ aoq;
cge;jzpaom otwu aq;uo&e rvtyawmaomvn; armi w;av;u aq;uoay;rn
ou ar\m viaeon/

uatmir;aoaZmii aep0twi; y*vwp0;u ½y&iri;or;cipEb\ yuij
on/ yrm[mvm[i;vi;yjzpon/ xy*v uatmir;wom;tzu aq;uoay;
rntalumi;? au;Z;wlyjeontaeji cipEbu vuxy&rntalumi;? cipEb
rm tyc\tiAy; &aalumi;ajymon/ uatmir;u ½;½;om;om; wba&m*gEi om aov
alumi;ajymon/ xy*v uom;av;u aq;ruoawmb;vm;[ar;&m cipEbu

vucrn'taumi; ua,miuwr;ajymí aoq;om;on/ arniw;av;u zciaoq;
om;í ajymqi, yjzi Zmwvr;u tq;owxm;on/

&n&,curn qi;&om;rm; \ touuac,aom wba&m*gurnor\ tav;
rxm;aomvn; aialu;0pmjynpo? *Pj'y&owom tjzprsm;aom atti'tupu
wpurm v;u ton;toe uo&etav;xm;allumi;? wba&m*galumi qi;&om; rom;p
wppv; rsl;jywrmu rnor\ tav;rxm;aomvn; wpurm v;u ye'gav;aw? a0vig;
aw? ac;w0uwaw rsl;jywrmu tywyi;jzpaalumi; azmjyíwba&m*gu tcr
aq;u oray;vor sm; ay:aygu vmap vaom&n&,cuizpon/

]vo;ypn;a&mi;or sm;} 0w\wwi Zmwaqmi\Ze;u uav;vcialumi;
Zmwaqmiuajymon/ Ze;uu,0eaqmi v\i vrrm u;v;v;jzpí Aucar;&aom
&mZ0i&on/ uav;&vaomvn; u,0eaqmi&rm alumuaeon/ Zmwaqmiu
r*Zi;pm tyxr tim;u,0eaqmiaom owi;uzwiyon/ jrermjynrm xuol
vyí&v\i aumi;rn [ajymon/ xlaemu tyaysom;on/

Zmwaqmityaysmaep0 tyruruon/ cr;em;xn0gaom \r\UB u;wp\RU \
tjyibuwi a&muaeon/ qi;&pwcsmaom um;*a'giyu uol jzpaeaom tron
Zmwaqmi\trjzpon/ Ze;rm e*½;rjzpon/ Zmwaqmion rr\ cEmu,rjzví
a&mi;c&or\ tpwtyi;rm;u tuejzwa&mi;on/ Ze;onu tim;u,0eaqmi
on/ traxmiou tEpEpq,twi;u,0eq,cep Buraqmií EpBrom
Zmwaqmi\ao;om;jzpon/ uav;Epa,muteu wpa,muom tzwwion/
om;uav;rm ausmi;p&wtwu ausmuuywpv;xwa&mi;ly;uwn;u aexi
raumi;jzpaeon/ xalumi vtyv\iom;uav;u ausmuuytpm;x; uoay;
&rnjzpon/ om;av;twu aq;uo&e aivtyaecsewi a,mu sm;vsmr wpa,mu
u a,mu sm;jzpatmi cpwly; t*gaajmi;ví ypm;uZmwaqmiu ypn;upvma&m
ajymqon/ Ze;ua&mi;apc:ion/ Zmwaqmiu pwq;ly;xt&ywi acgi;Eipm;y
aqmirly; ty&mr veE;yzi0w\u tq;owxm;on/

&n&,curn qi;&om;rm;on rrw\ tqw? ton;? ausmuuy? ruv;?
½;wi;jciq? tao;tom;omru vit*gwonyi vo;ypn;rm;uol cr;omowu
a&mi;c;pm;aomu&ytaumi;u oa&m [eygyg a&z\wiyyvji; jzpon/

]oaX;Ei oaX;apmiewwiyce;)0w\wwi oaX;urr&mxm;aomaiu roe&i;
rpilu,[xií vyjmr v? aiq,oe;avmuu touig;q,jyn\ ar;aewi
tv\jy\c:ion/ touig;q,jyn\ar;aewi oCmtyg;wpaxmijyn atmiyily;
wpaxmiweqr;yrm;uyrn [u,apmiewEiwiyion/ u,apmiewu qi;&om;
rm;u vl&ewuwe;on/ oaX;uqi;&om;rm;u rv\c:ion'talumi; oaX;Ei
u,apmiew tjetveaq;aE;wiyluon/ aemuq;wi oaX;u]u,yuq
u,vux or;xm;wm'taumi;q;y? b,rv\raeawmlb;) [ajymvuyjzi Zmwvr;u
tq;owxm;on/

&n&, c:urm oaX;urw&m;ojzi &mazxm;aom aialu;0pmrsm;u vyjym roeí
vLrn [pwu;aomvn; vuawürvLEiaom oaX;tcü \ p½uobm0u oa&m [e
ygygwijyvici;jzpon/

3/ oa&mpm \ oabmo b m0

oa&mpmonvavmu \ tqiweqmwpiczpayon/ pma&;oon arwmapwem
t&i;cí avmuu; \ tr;tarmurwnrwu jyiyiapvaom &n&, cujzi
axaigajymiavm ium oa&m [eygyga&zÜxm;aom pmjzpon/ oa&mpmEi ywouí
ynm&iwu teut"ym, tr;rs;ziqñuon/

oa&mpm \ oabmu armixiu

]oa&mpm [onrm a, b, s t m; jziavmuu; tr;tarmurwnaom
obm0? bu;Eii, ni;qaom¹ obm0? zp;cñycs, p;r;aom obm0?
[eaqmiyv m;aom obm0 ponwua0ze ½wcaom tzjzpon/ , i;o
a0ze½wc&mü uv½rñom uvaom en;e ó , ron i, xyu wi;yw
jziEu í oway;aomen;e ó , tx apwemonomv\i t&i;cjzpa v&m
jyiyivaom apwemaumi;jzi a&;om;zÜEü uoampmrsm;rm aEmi;vw
owoa0*&z&m use&pconur;m;ayon/}}¹

[íziqxm;on/xjyi

]oa&mpm [onrm v? vwe;pm;? "av? trt&m? trtci;pon
wEi ouqiaom jyu&, jyijci; tzlyijzpon}}²

[í oa&mpm \ t"yg, u tEpcñyziqxm;on/

oa&mpmwi vy* \ vwp0;wpa, muu oa&mjci;? vwe;pm;wp&y&yu
oa&mjci;? vw \ "avx;ptjy\tru oa&mjci;? pmaytEynma&;&mrsm;u oa&mjci;?
Eiia&;uoa&mjci;? vra&;uoa&mjci; [í oa&mjci; tr;rs; &on uawÜygon/

oa&mpmrsm;teu vy* \ vEi ouqiaom oa&mpmu-

]vy* \ vwp0;wpa, mu or [w vwppu&nñe;í oa&m on pm?
vw \ tjy\tr x;p"avrsm;u oa&m onpm ponji oa&mpmrsm;rm
[mo tjyn ygwwon}}³

[íazmjyxm;on/

¹ xi? 1986? 75-76/

² xi? 1973? e'ge;/

³ cirñ;cp? 1973? 39/

oa&mpm [on vvc*i*;u*sp*m;ci*í*vn;aumi;? rur*m*;aom*tj*tr*rsm*; ujy*jy*i
q;rap*ví*vn;aumi;? a&;om*jci*;jzpon*u*-

]]vavmu [í wnaqmuvmuwn;uyi oa&mpm& [ewon/ vvc*i*;
u*sp*m;on/ wpcgwp&jriy*i*; uyívn;rcomat*mi* uvon/ rur*m*;
aom*tj*tr*rsm*;u jy*jy*iap*ví* q;rvíajy*mi* avmiao&mon}}² [i
azm*jy*x*m*;on/

vxa':trmu

]]o½yreu [moaEmly;ajym&w oa&mpmqwm pma&;q&m(10) a , mu
ay:ayguv wpa , mua&;w vxuwwyg*b*;/ oa&mpmqwm apwem
vn;rer? yg&rvn;&r? t*lum*;tjri A[owu*vn*; tvepr v*b0u*
acs;cg;tr orwwr aumi;ygw , /}}³

[í oa&mpm \oabmuazm*jy*x*m*;on/

x*tc*ur*sm*;u*un*v*í* oa&mpm [on vEi*v*yw0e;u*siü* jy*jy*i&e vtyon
r*sm*;u aumi;apvaom apwem*ji* [moÓPygyga&;z*U*x*m*;aompm jzpon [qEi*y*gon/

3² 1/ oa&m [e [on

oa&m [e [on vavmuvtz*U*tpn; \ t*lr*;tarmurwnr*rwu* qijciz ,
jzpat*mi* Epou&i⁴ ly;z , jzpat*mi* obm0twi;a&;z*U*&m*r* x*jcm*;aoz*í*a&; [e jzpon
u

arniciri("Ejz*l*)u

]]pma&;owon [moajrmuat*mi* a&;vaom*tcgr*mjzpap? axvavmiv
oa&mvaom *tcgr*s*l*;rmjzpap a&;½;a&;p0Ei rwaom? rvuzu
rqav*sm*ao*m* a&;yr*sl*;u writo*y*a&; av&uygon/ o;½;o;p0Ei
rwaom x*jcm*;aozr \ tmeoiu xxa&mu&mu to*y*v*u*
& , &atmizew*jci*;? avmiao&mjci; jywwuygon}}¹

[í azm*jy*x*m*;ygon/

3² 2/ azjri \0w*wrsm*;r oa&m [e

azjri \0w*wrsm*;wi oa&m [e*rs*m;ygaeon*u* aw*U*&on/ vEi v*U*tz*U*tpn; \
t*lr*;armurwnr*rsm*;u aumi;apvaom apwem*ji* a0zeaxmu*yjci*; jzpon [i

² - , i;- ? 39/

³ a':tr*m*? 1976? 343/

¹ ciri? 1997? 82/

qEiygon/ azjri\ oa&m [er;uunv\i vy*vwpo;0;Ei vwepm;wp&y&y
&nñe;í ynm;yyg ororarar\ oa&m [eu awl&ygon/ azjri\ 0w\wrsm;wi
tveyu;c\í oa&m [eEi tveao;oratmijyí oa&m [eEpr;u to;jyíá&z
xm;ygon/

3'2'1/ vwp0;wpa , muu oa&m [e

[use;rma&vupm;ji;} 0wwwi Zmwaqmiubarmirm tve0ojzpon/
t0vejci;Eiywowí yw0e;u;irv trsm; \ ajymqa0zejci;urccsijzpum tav;ce
avsm&ep0;pm; on/ rrtveuuí u;uoa& [trnay;xm;aom 0uom;u rpm;bae
on/ vr;av\muon/ vr;av\muxu&i; Zmwaqmixu 0í Au&aom? ai;allu;0pm
jynpcr;omaomvwa , muu vr;ab;yvuazmi;uatmiqe; t;upm;ui;u/o
oabmxm;ly; txi? tx? tue? tur;pu t&utalumur& vyaeon/ xo
av\uice;r;p vyaeyu Zmwaqmi\ taw;jzi

[p;ym;a&vyie;reor\ avmbw\;vyaeou;? a [mtcuse;rma&u
vn;avmbw\; yvyavmi;yi vupm;ae;guv; / t&utalum
qwm b , qaere;ro/ ouvr;ab; yvuazmi;u atmiqe; t;upm;
ui;v oabmxm;ly; xiwi;βuaeon/ vr;utjreav\mu½ru wpcu
wpcu vuawajcawyg ajrmu&r;umce vu ayguvuao;on/
cyowowajy;ly; qwueaembujyevnlay;on/ ly;awm tue;t
aw? xixaw? tr , tpy? ubarmi yxrawm & , ciovv? aemuawm
oAu;Ei 'avmuvyEiwm oabmu;vmon}}⁵

[íá&zxm;ygon/]avmbw\;?]yvyavmi;vupm;ae?]xiwi;βu} [í use;r
a&? p;ym;a&wwi avmbw\; jyraqmí&uaeyuay:viatmi y;u;c\í oa&xm;
onuawl&ygon/

[tue;t uaw? xixaw? tr , tpy? ubarmi yxrawm& , ciovv vr;ab;
yvuazmi;u atmiqe; t;upm;ui;v oabmxm;ly; xiwi;βuaeon} [aom
pum;v;wji t&utalumur& av\uice;vyaeyu oa&xm;onrm pmzwo\
rupxwi jria , mia , mijzpvmly; jy;rapygon/

ubarmion vr;ab;yvuazmi;tay: t;upm;vyoulun&i; t;u;ly;
ajy;vm;ceayguji vr;av\mu&i; trjyeaμvmon/ a*gua&*gjyeay:vmon/
'βu;a&mily; tyr&ojzi tyaq;Epjym;aomuty&on/ tyay;maep0 aori;Eiaw/
on/ aori;u ubarmiu-

⁵ azjri? 1999? 159/

]]ri;bm omri; v\jynrmae&we;u at;at;aq;aq;ae;yg? igluqel;uiw
 tvy? iglutmcwtvy? igwec;pr;t;u t xitjriao;wtvyaw
 v;0rvyyge\ oway;rv\vmwm? ri;wtm;v; igvucyxrm&w,?
 igpr;zew;ovc&r, qwm rariatmi igvmajymwm? naeuri;e [t;ayg
 aom ow0g8u; trsm;oig om;vmaew\vr;ab;rm t&u talumur&
 vyaevu\uwmm? pn;½;c\we;u acsmi;luny;? [m;[m; igwpa,mu
 wn;&,vu&wm? 'grs;vyvr&ygb;u? tr,tqa&mir,w? usuo&
 rpm;b;wrvyyge\ talumi;rx;ygb;/ ri;wtm;v; igpm&i;xrm
 rwxm;ly;om;? tcwe&i igqa&murmy}}⁶

[í aori;u ubarmi t m; ajym\um;yjzi oa&m xm;ygon/

aori;u ajymae[eu cy&i&i[moaEm í a&om;xm;on/ pma&oon rr
 ajymvaom pum;uZmwaqmi \ tyru xwi aori;u vma&muajymq llcr;ajcmu [ejzi
 cy&i&i xnoi; a&z\xm;on/ pma&o \ pwu;qe;u,yuaw\&on/ r[w
 rw&m;tuevyí bu;ym;csr;omly; avu\ice;u vn; t m;&yg;&vyaeonu]naeu
 ri;e [t;aygaomow0g8u; trsm;oig om;vmaew\vr;ab;rm t&u talumur&
 vyaevu\uwmm?]'grs;vyv\ r&ygb;u?]tqa&mir,w? usuo&rpm;b; wrvy
 yge? talumi;rx;ygb;?]ri;wtm;v; igpm&i;xrm rwxm;ly;om;} [í aori;u
 ajym [ejzi y\;u;c\um [moaEm í a&om;aom oa&m [ejzpygon/ aori;u Zmwaqmi
 u tyru xwi vma&muajymq [ejzi a&z\xm;aomalumi ajymci&mu vwvypm
 ajymqEici&&onrm pma&o \ pwu;ÓP oa&m ÓPyijzpygon/

3'2'2/ vwe;pm;wp&yu oa&m [e

]armi w;av;u aq;uay;rnlor&yg) 0w\wwi t"uZmwaqmirm uatmir;
 jzpon/ uatmir;\ Ze;Eior;won wba&m*gjzi aoq;om;uon/ uatmir;
 on Ze;u&prpaiuav;Ei wwpr;oruoclon/ rjynlrpp;ym;av;ueonltcg
 Ze;u,veom;con/ or;av;tvnwi &ortvyr;pu atmuallu;Ei vu í
 or;av;u aq;uoaomvn; ueusaitjynu r&Eic/

or;av;uoem;pwjzi u,z&izjy/p,,&mr wby;rsm;u;pujci;c&on/
 uatmir;wi om;av;armi w;&ao;on/ uatmir;rwpqi om;av;u wba&m*g
 u;pujci;c&on/ wba&m*gyi;xepmcpm;ae&aom aoq;ve; uatmir;on om;av;
 armi w; uaem uqwi;aeí tou rxuEiao;b aoi,aZmjzi armaeon/ tjcm;
 orsm;on rrw\om;or;rm;u aialu;Opmtar ay;c\uaomvn; uatmir;rm
 om;av;ua&m*gom taray;cronu pwraumi;jzpaeron/ uatmir; aoi,aZmEi
 armaecewi ½y&iri;or;cipEb\ reae*sm [qaom vwpa,mu\ajympum;jzi

⁶ aziri? 1999? 166/

qi;&om;rom;paoa&xu &m;yg;w&pmer;sm; aoq;&rnta&aw;awm yyeaeluyu
oa&m [eygyg a&zlwijyxm;on/ 0w\wi-

]]tcvn;ciAsm;wrom;prm qi;&om;uiqmpuyv\ rom;pwppv;
wpa,muly;wpa,mu wbeaoaeluwm/ ciAsm;aoly; armiaw;av;yg
quao&i avmuβu;rm uatmir;wtrsk; use&prm r[wawmb;/
wpurm v;u v n; ye'gav;aw rsk;jy\wrm? jri;eEm;pylum; taumiaw
r&awm\rmuytywji; jzpaelluw,? ciAsm;wv irawrsk;jy\wuewm
b,or ta&rpulub;}}⁷

[í tlr;tarmurwnaom avmuobm0uazmijyxm;on/ 0wa&q&mon qi;&om;
vwe;pm;zuu &ywnly; rccipwji rrajymvonu Zmwaqmi wp0;u ajymae
[ejzioa&mxm;on/

qi;&om;rom;pta&xu &m;yg;w&pmeta&u yta&βu;aeaom vtc\U
oa&m v[ewon/w&pmeavmur tcita&r&aom qi;&om;w\ b0uojriaply;
vom;xu w&pmeta&u 0;pm;ay;aeaom vwe;pm;wp&yu oa&m vujci;jzpon/

xaemu wba&m*guoa&u rnour tav;rxm;aomvn; attitup
uozl wpurm v;u ton;toeβu\;pm;aeysm;u wijyxm;on/

]]ciAsm;w qi;&om;wbuom b,our*½rpuwm ½y&iri;om;aw
ri;or;aw? oaX;βu;aw? vu;om;or;awjzpaew attitup uawm
wpurm v; ton;toeuz\ βu\;pm;aeluwm? awm\umaq;aw\rm?
t'tcgus ciAsm;wqi;&om; irawomtEpm;? tzi;pm;? atmuwe;pm;
a&m*gawel aolu? tycstiA yorm;u attitup yg&*βu;aw&laq;ce;
wpEpEpacguom;½e\ ye;lumzuwi a&rwiqwmv\ tomav;
aysm uom;lu? aysmciwi;aysm\lu? aqmciciwi;aqm\lu}}⁸

[í aq;ynmavmuwi wba&m*gxu attitupa&m*gu tav;xm;yu oa&mxm;
on/]ciAsm;w qi;&om;wbuomb,our *½rpuwm?]½y&iri;om;aw ri;or;
aw? oaX;βu;aw? vu;om;or;awjzpaew attitup uawm wpurm v;u
ton;toeuz\βu\;pm;aeluwm?]ciAsm;wqi;&om; irawomtEpm;? tzi;pm;?
atmuwe;pm; &m*gawel aolu?]attitup orm;aw a&m*gaysmuly; aysmciwi;
aysm\lu? aqmciciwi;aqm\lu} [aom ajympum;wjziyβu;csUum tlr;tarmurwn
aom v\avmuu oa&mxm;on/

⁷ azjri? 1999-137/

⁸ azjri? 1999:142/

3'2'3/ acwumv u oa&m [e

[vo;ypn;a&mi;or&m;} 0w\wwi qi;&om;vwe;pm;rs; \ b0u yu;c\í
oa&mon/ Zmwaqmion qi;&om;&yuurm aexi&on/ &yuuxr vr&m;on
rrw0r;a&t wu cEmu, ypn;rs;u tyygvmaomypn;ulo v;jzwum a&mi;c
pm;aomulu&on/ xtallumi;u-

]]wu, awm uleawmw&yuurm t*gpwvqwm r&oavmuygyAsm/
uleawmw [m llrU uoaX;awtwu cEmu, tyypn;awtjzp ar;zm;
vmc\ uovy/ wc\Uvr&m;q&i a&mi;v&wmreor\ jz\wa&mi;vm
vu\uwu wpu, v; bmrwmi rueawm\ovy/}}⁹

[í yu;c\umoa&m xm;on/ Zmwaqmi \Ze;on u, 0eq, cepur aqmic&
aomvn; Zmwaqmi \ao;om;u, 0erm Epuromjzpon/ ueq, lig;burrm tim;
u, 0eaqmi&jci;jzpon/ Zmwaqmi \om;av;rmvn; ausmuywpv; xwa&mi;ly;
uwn;u aeraumi;jzpaen/ om;av;aq;u&i aivtyaeon/ om;av; \
ue;рма&tcutcalumi Ze;jzpouZmwaqmiu ypm;vm0, aom ypn;ua&mi;apci
on/ ciye;jzpou Ze;uajmyrm -

]]reu truaq;½u ypm;wpa, mu a&muvmw, ? a, mu sm;vsmr
wpa, muua, mu sm;jzpatmi cpwly;ajymi;civ\w? aq;½ueylwmu
xway;wpm&i;t& oetom;"mwcie;pyo pm&i;xrm &ixyuygae
w, ? ypn;rjri&ao;ayr, | ueylwmazmjyay;cuewiy 0, ou
oy\ u\uaelywap;uxywe;ap; &r, v\ajymw, ? om;u aoaocsmcsm
aumi;om;atmi aq;uEi½ru ciAsm;w trawmijyiaquv\ &r, Asmw?
ypm;uawm tmrcom;wmy? owu jrejetvyjzpcsiw, ? 'a, mu sm;vsm
qwmr&u oypw\irwmr [wb;w? t'awmpwajymi;om;&i tvy
rjzpbær, w? t'awmreuzeu aemuq;xm;ly; tallumi;jyeygw/
oabmw, q&i 'wywx aiacr, ? aiacr, aey ypn;zlwr, w}}¹⁰

[íacwumv u oa&m xm;on/ w;wu aeaom acw\u;wi aq;ynm&yqi&m rnoyi
w;wuajymi;vapumr aialu;rjynpowtwu tcn;E;omjzpon/ aialu;cr;omo
rs;twu qi;&om;rs; \ u, vut*grsm;u tyypn;oz, jzpv&on/ qi;&
cr;om umjcn;aom vwe;pm;w\ b0u tajccí w;wuxe;um;aeaom acwumv u
oa&m xm;on/

⁹ azri? 1999?9/

¹⁰ azri? 1999? 10/

3'2'4/ pw taw;Ei oa&m [e

]oaX;Ei oaX;apmlewwiyice;}} 0w\wwi oaX; \ twi;pwtm;ly\iru
oaX;Ei oaX; \ u ,apmlew tjetveaq;aE;yzi zew;a&z\xm;on/ oaX;Ei
oaX;u ,apmlew tjetvepum;ajmyzi oaX; \ aialu;Opm roe&i;y? p;ym;Opm
&maz&mwi &&wi;wi;p;vm;ei;vm;&mazy? cr;omvmy? qi;&om;rm;u rryuq
rv\Ei í jyeor;xm;vuyu oa&m [eygygwijyxm;on/ 0wwioaX;u u ,apmi
ew uajymonrm-

]uleawmwu tovus,EivnEiv\ wjzn;jzn;cr;omvwm? rvn
w rus,wvawu wjzn;jzn;qi;&vwm? owrsm;rm; qi;&r
uleawmw\rm;rm; cr;omvwm? qi;&om;wpaxmi? wpaomi;? wpoe;
tov&r oaX;wpa,mu&vEiwm? t'awm\ vawu uyu uyyuq
aw jyeay;vur,q&i u\yaomu^{1/2};aygAsm? 'grsk;b,en;er rvyEib;?
awmyAsm/ tvum;pm&i;^{1/2}yw,? u,yuqu,vux or;xm;wm
taumi;q;y b ,rv\raeawmb;}}¹¹

[íjzpon/

]uleawmwu tovvnEiu,Eiv\ wjzn;jzn;cr;omvwm? rus,w
rvnw\ vawu wjzn;jzn;qi;&vwm?]qi;&om;wpaxmi? wpaomi;? wpoe;
tov&r oaX;wpa,mu&vEiwm?]t'awm\ vawuuyu uyyuqaw jyeay;
vur,q&i u\yaomu^{1/2};aygAs?]u,yuqu,vux or;xm;wm taumi;q;y?
b ,r v\raeawmb; } [aomoaX; \ pwtaw;zi oaX; \ p&uobm0u oa&m [e
ygyga&z\xm;on/ oaX;w\ p^{1/2}uobm0Ei pw"mwu oa&mjci;jzpygon/

3'2'5/ ajympum;Ei oa&m [e

]avmb0w\ wwi ap;rap;0 ,ly;jyevmaom Zmwaqmi\Ze;u tra&muon
Ei ueap;Ee;wuontalumi; ajymjyon/ ciye;uap;uuobm w&m;u &i;jyon/
Ze;uowom 0, rpm;Eialumi;? tc\Uaomorm; yuqtxyvuuií luuom;
ap;rnrvuwu tly;ryu0 ,pm;Eialumi; ajymon/ ciye;uxowrm ormtmZ0Ei
t ouar;jci;rjzpEialumi;ajymon/ xtcgZe;u ciye;ontm;-

]t'aumi;pm touar;jci;qw\ pum;uvm;&i aoaocsmcmjyep0;pm;
0;? pmtyu;twi; w&m;aorwrxm;e? ow\ touar;wen;u aumi;
ovm;? u , touar;wen;u aumi;ovm;? tcEe;twi;om ap;aw

[∞] azjri? 1999? 127/

quwu aer, q&iawm &i vyaewypequly; touar;Eiz rv, b;? wpaewpjc; v;yg;yg;om;vrr, }}¹²

[íajymum;vuuygon/

ormtZ0Ei touar;ici;jzi wpaewpjc;v;yg;yg;om;Eialumi;u azmijí aialu;Opm <u, 0cr;omorm;u oa&mxm;on/t"ren;jzi ai&mly; <u, 0cr;omorm;u ao;oratmijí avmuu;tlr;tarmurwnywu oa&mxm;yg on/

cr;omorm;avmbwuí ab;tE&,rojzpvml; 'ua&mu&yuciye;u ajym&mwí-

]]wu, jrwa? cr;omaewoaw b,puwir rwu&b;? wuaw? um;aw? ajraway:ywuaewm jri&w, }}¹³

[í Ze; \ajympum;jzi cr;omorm; ab;tE&,r&? cr;omonxu cr;omvmy uoa&mxm;onrm xrvon/ cr;omow\ *Poumuao;oratmijí oa&mjci; jzpon/

x t c g ciye;ucr;omwvaw b, yb, en; cr;omvmluovqon u p0;pm;&ejym onrm-

]]t'cr;omw, qwvaw b, yb, en; cr;omvmluovqwm v p0;pm;? ri;vn;lum;z;ygw, ? tyezm;aygu xu Em;wpaumijzwom;v &ci&r, ? oaX;wpa, mu eAme a&muz rjzpEib;qwpum;}}¹⁴

[í a&zlxm;on/] tyezm;aygu xuEm;wpaumijzwom;v &ci&r, ?] oaX; wpa, mueAmea&muz rjzpEib;} [aomajympum;jzi oaX;rm;u oa&mxm;on/ lyt;&, z, aumi;í Epouz, vn; jzpapygon/

lcíio;oycu

azjri on 0wlrsm;ua&zú&mü avmuu;\ tlr;tarmurwnyu oa&m&mwí vwe;pm;wp&y&yu vn;aumi;? vy*vwp0;0;u vn;aumi;? vrtzltpn; wpc v;u vn;aumi; oa&mxm;on/ x o oa&m&mwí vwp0;wpa, muu oa&m [e? vwe;pm;wp&y&yu oa&m [e? acwumvu oa&m [e? vwcsl\ twi;pwu oa&m [e? ajympum;Eioa&m [e [í oa&m [etrsl;rs;u aw/&on/

azjri \ Zmwaqirms;rm qi;&om;? oaX;? ton;uiqma0'em&i q&m0e aygup? pmzwve;o? wba&m*galumi aoi, aZmEiarsmaeo [í vwe;pm; rsl;pv on/ azjri on tlu; tjiA [owEi jynp u, 0ojzpí v trsl;rs; \ aysml u u

¹² azjri? 1999? 171/

¹³ azjri? 1999? 173/

¹⁴ azjri? 1999? 172/

[muu vtycuwuo&Eion/ xalumivn; vrtztpn;\ vtycursm;u
jyjiapvaom &n&, cuji apwemt&i;cum tcuyiyi oa&m [eygyg 0w\wrsm;
u a&z\jci;jzpon [o;oy&ygon/

e*;

ppmwr;on azjri\0w\wrsm;r oa&m [ersm;u avvmwijyxm;aomppmwr;
jzpygon/ azjri onvabmiavmu\ tlr;tarmurwnrrsm;u jyjiapvaom
apwem&n&, cuji oa&m [eygygaxmujya0ze tuijay;onu av;pm;c;u;l;z,
avvmoo&ygon/ ppmwr;on 0w\wrsm;roa&m [e avvmowtwu taxmu
tuijEirn [, lunygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

ciri? armi("EjzL)/ (1997)/ pmayor'&müv uypu;ji;/ &eue? tm;rmeopyEywul/
cir;c;pl/ (1973)/ [mopmay/ &eue? pmayArneyEywul/
xi? armi/ (1973)/ e'ge;? [mopmay/ &eue? pmayArneyEywul/
xi? armi/ (1986)/ urmpmayt ñe;/ &eue? pmayArneyEywul/
azjri/ (1999)/ r&PmE ó wEi tjc;m;0w\wrsm;? 'w, tur/ &eue? pmayavmuyEywul/
azjri/(1999)/ vo;ypn;a&mi;orsm;Ei tjc;m;0w\wrsm;? 'w, tur/ &eue? pmayavmuyEywul/

avvmzw½aompm t ypm&i;

oe;aq?armi/ armixi\ oa&mpm/ rEav;wuov? jrermpmXmeolyg&*b\ twu wioi;aomur;/
atmioi;/ (2016)/ aZm*3\0w\wrsm;Ei atmioi;\ o;oycu/ &eue? c0gavrepmt ywu/

oci baomi; \]]wi;jyn&eo jyZmw}}rZmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ ur_{sm};

av vmcsu

at;jrici*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on jrermpaye,y,& pum;aiyu@(jyZmwpmay)vm oci baomi; \ wi;jyn&eo jyZmw r Zmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ ur_{sm}; av vmcsujzpygon/ oci baomi; \ wi;jyn&eo jyZmwpm tyu tav vmctjzp ovrwygon/ &n&, curm wi;jyn twu? tr_{sm}; t u:st; twu [Ewu tlrjym qaeao m vn; vuaww iu , u:st; u om tav;xm;aom or_{sm};av muwi r_{sm};pm&alumi; oapvci;jzpygon/ ppmwr;wi tce;(1) oci baomi; \ twiywt u:O;? tce;(2) wi;jyn&eo jyZmw \ Zmwvr; t u:O;? jyZmwaOg [m&? Zmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ u? tce;(3)wi oci baomi; \ wi;jyn &eo jyZmw r Zmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ uav vmcsuu av vmwijxm;ygon/ ppmwr;u av vmjci;jzi oci baomi; \ wi;jyn&eo jyZmw r Zmwaqmiw \ p $\frac{1}{2}$ ur_{sm};u o&ly; jrermjyZmwpmay av vmor_{sm};twu vn; A [owtaw;tjrir_{sm}; &&apEirn jzpygon/

e'ge;

jrermpaywi 0w? uAsm? jyZmwwu &opmayu;o;rsl; [yn m&iwu ovrw l uon/ &opmaywi wpc tyg t 0ijzpaom jyZmwpmayu yn m&ir_{sm};u acwo;acwizi yi;jcm;xm;ygon/ c&pEp(1700)au smr (1852) cEpt x acwa [mi;jyZmwpmay? c&pEp (1853)r (1920)jynEpt x acwv , jyZmwpmay? c&pEp (1921)r , ae t x acwop jyZmwpmay [í yi;jcm;xm;ygon/

1921 cEprpíay:xucaom jyZmw r_{sm};rm a&;jyZmw r_{sm};Ei v;0rwon uaw & on/ jyZmwyo@mer m taemuEi ijyZmwyo@mer jrermjyZmw yo@me t jzp ay:xe; vm on u aw &on/ xtcewi t*vypmwwy*vwon t*v y? jyiop paom Ei i jcm;jyZmw r_{sm};u av vmqn;y;l uon/ xoav vmqn;y;ly; t*v y-jyiop pon taemuEi irjyZmwwu jrermjyeq l uon/ jrermjyeq aom yn m&ir_{sm};teu oci baomi;on aema0;jyn om; pma&;q&m u;tpbqi (Ibsen) \]]wi;jyn&eo}} jyZmw uj rermjyZmw jzpat m i b m on jyeqcojzpon/ xjyZmwwia&cs;qy wpcüa&m*gy; r_{sm}; &aeon uaw &ozi treuwiyaom q&m0ewp0;aw &u &yu z l qxm;on/ rrwitcita&; xyg;rnp;ozi tr_{sm};pu q&m0etm; wi;jyn&eo t jzp ovrwum 0i;y , luy? &ejy l uyu av miajymia&;om;xm;ygon/ ppmwr;on oci baomi; \ wi;jyn&eo jyZmw r Zmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ ur_{sm};u av vmwijyrnjzpygon/

* a'guwm? uxu? jrermpmXme? rEav;wuov/

t ce; 1

ocibaomi; \ t wlyw t u:0;

ocibaomi; on rau; wi; a' ou; ? ewarmurle , ? zue; & mwi tz0; jrp? tr
a': av; ciwu (1901) cEp? azazm0g & v(7) & u? lumoyaw; aewi zm; jriojzpon/
ar; ci; av; a , mu teu ocibaomi; on 'w , ajrmuom; jzpon/

1906 cEpwi awmiwi; u; lrU? Armeausmi; ü jrermppwioiilum; on/
xlaemurUoplrU O; p; ri; \ wi; & i; jrerm rvwe; ausmi; ? awmiwi; u; lrU t*vy-
jrermtp; & tv , we; ausmi; ? rEav; lrU A' omoeE* [txuwe; ausmi; ? (B.T.N)
wwiynmoilum; con/ 1920 jynEp q , we; wiyndmoilum; aep0 uveyndma&
pepu oywarmucly; aemu ausmi; rxucum Eiaa; avmuo0icon/ 1922-23
cEp? tr; om; ausmi; ay: ayguvmaomtcg rEav; ? a& b? yorlrUrm; wi apwem0exr;
tr; om; ausmi; q & m tjzp 0ia & mu trxr; on/ 1924-25 cEpwi e , ; b; m; rm; ? t*vy
owi; pm vuaxmut , 'wm? xlaemutwi; 0e½; & ui; 0eri; u; y#uwwuwi
vuaxmuy#uwwurl; ? 1928 cEp lo*wvr 1931 cEp Zviv tx *Eavmur*Zi;
jrerm yi; wn; jzwo? jrermEiiynmye ym; a& ; toi; twi; a& ; rl; ? 1933 cEp Zee0g & v
(21) & u paeae wi wArmtpn; t½; t mabmjzpaom wArmowi; p0 tw(1) trw(1)
upp0xwa0con/ ocitrnu pwio; pojzponji wArmtpn; t½; pwi
wnaxmiorsm; teu wp0; tygt0ijzpccon/ 1942 cEp? *yeacw0; wi b momye
Xmeü acw0ia & mu vyuicon/ vwvya& ; & ly; aemu jrerm½y & i tqi t we; jriwi
a& ; t u jzwtz0i? j j rermEiurm} pmapmit , 'wm tz0i? tovi½ jyelum; a& ; Xme?
jyelum; a& ; ½; ? pppa& ; rl; ? ½y & i pppa& ; tz0wwivn; wm0e , aqmi½ucon/

1927 cEpxw *Eavmur*Zi; \ ww , turajrmu b momye yiyr pwi í
ig; urquwu yxrq & & con/ xi & m; on pmtyrsm; rm q & m0eygy (1928)? ye; om
rpm t (1936)? wuoabm0yav(1940)? a& e(yxrw) (1940)? wi; jyn& eo(1941)?
tarav; (1950)? ajcav; acsmi; awm vea& ; (1951)? Avwi; ywji0i(1958)? rurjri
wi; jyn(1960)? oc; tmru (1961)? a' ; Apaumyg; z; (1961)? A' \ plum0Vmw& m; (1975)
wijzpluon/ j j urm & mZ0icly} j zi a0vri; om; q(1929-30)? j j urmywvn & u & pq , }
j zi , eupub momyeq (1959-60) rsm; & con/ 1980 jynEp Zev(7) & uaewi
Eiiawmaumip \ Eii*P & nyxrqi bU cs; jri jci; c& on/

1981 cEp {lyv(21) & u? nae (5) em & (30) repwi & euelrUüu , veon/ Ze;
a': oe; lunEi om; wpa , mu? or; wpa , mu use & pcygon/¹

¹ baomi; Avrl; ? 2002? 382/

t ce; 2

wi;jyn&eo;Zmw\ Zmwv r; t u;0;

wi;jyn&eo;Zmwtpwi a'guwm*ri;\ tr{nce;? t cermnaeapmi;jzp
on/ a'guwm*ri;Ei a':ee;&iwtrwi jynowreowi;pm t , 'wm 0;b;x ,?
vuaxmut , 'wm 0;cpcw 0ixupm;aomuav&on/

a'guwm*ri;on a&c&;qyraoma&Ei c&;a&uerem , ly; wuov "mwpr;½
olyxm;&m tajzuovaeon/ xtcewi or;jzporciv ausmi;rjyevmly; zci
trnjzi pmwpapmivucxm;alumi;ajymly; pmuay;avon/ a'guwm*ri;on xpmu
tce;xwio;ízwly; pm\ x;jcm;rallumi tjyioxuvmum a':ee;&iEi tru
tvna&maeom 0;b;x ,? 0;cpc? 0;atmivi;wu pmygtalumi;ajymjyon/
a'guwm*ri;u wprv;tm;xm;&on a&c&;qyu;on uya&m*gzpapaom y;ar;½
u;Eirjcm;alumi;? a&c&;qywpcv;on weqmqixm;om tqyw;u;Eiwallumi;
ajymjavon/ , ctazon wuov"mwpr;½u pmjyevmaom tajzpon/
0;b;x ,? 0;cpc? 0;atmivi;wu a'guwm*ri;\ bu;yr;cuu 0r;ajrmu0r;omjzi
tm;ay;luon/ a'guwm*ri;trol a&c&;qytalumi;Eiywouí a':ee;&i\ ar;pm;
zci 0;atmiye;a&muvm on/ 0a;tmie;u rcivuausmi;om;&i; a&c&;qytalumi;
0iajymíaoesm o&e vma&muar;jre;ji;jzpon/ a'guwm*ri;u aocsmalumi; ajymaom
vn; 0;atmiye;u , unjci;r&b jyeom;avon/ 0;atmiye;jyeom;ly; 0;b;x ,?
0;b;re? rcivwa&muvmly; a&c&;qytalumi; jynowut oay;&e 0i;0e;wiyilu
on/ xtcewiyi llawm0e0;&ea0;a&muvmly; a'guwm*ri;\ tp&icpmrm tpe;
rvwon to;tEe;rm;yg0iaelumi; a&c&;qyu xm0&tqyqiu; [xny; a&;om;
xm;alumi;? xta&;tom;u jyi qí&ejym on/ a'guwm*ri;\ awl&c&utwi;
a&c&;qyu;jyi&e 0;&ea0;u jrlepyg , ti*ie , mx om;a&muappr;un&m aio;oe;
celuernjzply; jyi qicevn; EpEpcellumrnjzpalumi; o&on/ xola&c&;qyu
Oyg*jzponqaomup owi;rayguum;atmi jy\vy&rnjzpalumi; ajymavon/
a'guwm*ri;u jynotus;twu quvuítrsm;oatmi aqmi&uom;rn [
qaomtcg 0;&ea0;u a'guwm*ri;u tvyziwyprn [ajym on/ xola&c&;qyu
rnoyi llcr;ajcmuajymqaomvn; a'guwm*ri;u trsm;tus;twu a&c&;qy
talumi;u quvuxwazm;om;rnjzpalumi; ajymavon/

a'guwm*ri;u a&c&;qytalumi;&i;jyví tpn;ta0;vycion [qaomtcg
rwaq&i;rm;u runlub 0;atmivi;u otrrmtpn;ta0;vy&e unay;con/
xtpn;ta0;wi llawm0e 0;&ea0;? 0;b;x ,? 0;b;re? 0;cpc? a'guwm*ri;
rom;pEirUry&owrsm;wua&muuon/ xywi 0;b;reu obmywtjzp aqmi&u
ly; y&owrsm;u a'guwm*ri;buygrom;atmi pn;½ajymqon/ xtpn;ta0;wi
y&owtrsm;pu a'guwm*ri;u]wi;jyn&eo}} jzpon [ray;q;jzwclun/

a'guwm*ri;u opmllunpm;ywi otruayguaom ausmucrsm;utxr;trw
tjzp or;xm;rnjzpalumi;? xolaajymaep0 trwcg;acguíziay;&m tr&i xr pma&mu

vmlly; trrz, ay;&ejzpalumi;? xlaemu rcivvn; tvyjywwmalumi;? om;
Epa, muuvn; aumi; xwc&allumi;? a'guwm*ri; u tutnay; aom 0; atmivi;
vn; tvyjz\wc&allumi;? wpcly; wpcovm&on/ 0; atmivi; on a'guwm*ri; u
unay; aomalumi tvyjz\wc&aomvn; aexia& tqiajy&e xyrítutnay; c
on/

xo tcutcrsm; bu law\aeaomvn; a'guwm*ri; u pwyerr&ay/ a'guwm
*ri; pwyaeonrm]]igpwxrmyaewmu igaoom; &i? igtvyuquily; vyr, ? 0abm
jynjyn00e pwEv; jri jri rjrwjrw&w vwpa, mur lunvri riw twu yaeygw, }}
[ajym&rcivuzciu pwry&etce trsm; ßu; useao; allumi; tm; ay; &i; jizmwvr;
uor; xm; on/

2² 1/ jyZmwa0g [m&

jrermpmaywi jyZmwpmayu avvm&mü jyZmwa0g [m&u a&0; pmavvm&ayrn/
jyZmwa0g [m&Eiywouly; jrermt b"mewi

]]jyZmw? e-1/ Zmwvr; u ujo½yaqmiEi&e a&zlaompnay/ 2/
, i; Zmwu o½yaqmi u jyaomy/}}²

[ívn; aumi;

jrermp, pur; wi-

]]jyZmw [on tjzptyuwpwp&mu ylnowpwwi xi&m; ay: vi
vmap&e vu, wixuí o½yaqmiyo&on tEynmwp&yjzpon/}}³

[ívn; aumi;?

ai0a'gi; \ pm0uyg aygi; clypm tywi

]]jyZmwqonuvn; Zmwuuzmwvr; tavsmu cece xnxnu;
a&om; &aompmrsl; r [w? ri; or; ae&mr roivqir&rn/ vjyuae&mr
&ioivqí &i&rn/ r, barmib\ tz\ tc&mav; awvn; ae&mtvu
owoi; &on/}}⁴

[ívn; aumi; ziqxm; ygon/

xlaumi jyZmw [aom a0g [m&Eiywouly; ynm&iwziqcuu avvm
o; oylunygu jyZmwqonrm avmuwijzpyurtalumi; t&m rsl; pwu Zmwaqmi
wuy&owa&armuo Zmwvr;? Zmwu uay: atmí jy/rjyojci; jzpon [qEiygon/

² jrermpm tzi? 2008? 232/

³ jrermpmzi? 1963? 2/

⁴ ai0a'gi;? 2012? 512/

2² 2/ Zmwaqmip¹/₂u

0w²? jyZmwwi Zmwaqmip¹/₂uon ta&;ygaom tce;u@wiyg0ion/ jyZmw
tEynm \ oabmon Zmwvr;u Zmwaqmiw \ tij\ trtajym tqwjzi azmxw
wiyj&onoabmjzpon/ Zmwaqmi [aom a0g [m&u jrerm t b"mewi

]]Zmw? 0w²? ¹/₂y&iwwi yg0io¹/₂yaqmio}}⁵

[í t"ym , ziqxm;yg on/

Zmwaqmi \ oabmu o& , uEu 0wla&;vaom pmt ywi-

]]uZmw? jyZmw? ¹/₂yao;? ¹/₂y&irms;wi tu , tu , taumitxnay:
ap&etvlim vow0g? w&pmeow0grpí tv&tyaom ow0gtr<;r<;?
yg0iapvsu o@meo¹/₂yay:atmi jy\vyuavon/ xoyg0ito;c
onvrsm;u]]Zmwv\u}}rsm; [ac:a0:orwlu \ /}}⁶

[í azmjyxm;on/

Zmwaqmi \ oabmEiywouí wuovbe;Eiu 0w\&npmwr;rsm; (yxrw)
pmt ywi

]]Zmwalumí;jzpvmap&e? vyjy? aw;jy? cpm;jyaom 0w\&nwi;rvrsm;u
Zmwaqmi [ac:on/ Zmwaqmirms;on 'l"ravmur vrsm;Eiwav
Zmwaqmizew;raumi;av [q\uon/}}⁷

[í azmjyxm;yg on/

xalumí Zmwaqmi [on 'l"ravmu& vom;wlu u , pm;jyí aw;awm?
Bupn? jy/r? ajymqvy&m; o¹/₂yaqmí&orsm;jzpon [qEiygon/ p¹/₂u [aom
a0g [m&on ygVbmompum;]]p&w}}⁸ r qi;ouvmon/
jrerm t b"mewi p¹/₂uu-

(e) – tij\tr? tavtusí? tx? 0goem? x;p/⁹

[í ziqxm;yg on/

p¹/₂u \ t"ym , u q&matmioi;u pmaya&&m aqmi;yg;rsm;wi-

]]Zmwaqmiwp0; \ p¹/₂u [qví omretm;jzio \ u , ? Ew? Ev?
uo;yg; trt&mtavtxu qvon/}}¹⁰

[í ziqxm;yg on/

⁵ jrerm pmt zli? 1991? 131/

⁶ o& , uE? 1967? 90/

⁷ be;Ei? wuov? 1981? 32/

⁸ omjrw? 0;? o&y;c? 1961? 47/

⁹ jrerm pmt zli? 1978? 186/

¹⁰ atmioi;? 1978? 201/

xalumi p^{1/2}u [on Zmwaqmiwp0; \ tjttrtavtui? vy&m;rttrt&m?
pwttutpnwu azmxxwiiyjci;jzpon [qEiygon/

t ce; 3

ocibaomi; \ wi;jyn&eo jyZmwr Zmwaqmip^{1/2}ur sm; av vmcsu

ocibaomi; \ wi;jyn&eojyZmwon 1941 cEpwi yxrtturxwa0ly;
1963 cEpwi 'w, tur yEyxwa0caom jyZmw&njzpon/ wi;jyn&eo jyZmw
on aema0vrsk;tpbqi (Ibsen) a&aom taemuEiiyZmwu ArmjyZmwjzpatmi
a&xm;aom jyZmwjzpon/ wi;jyn&eojyZmwwi tr sm; tu sk; [wzzajymly; u, u sk;
vyaeluaom]]tajyao mwyem}}r sm; \ p^{1/2}uazmxxw m;on/

pjyZmwwiiyg0iaom Zmwaqmirms;rm q&m0e0;*ri;(jrlepyg, a&c sk;qy
use;rma&t&m&)? a':ee;&i (a'guwm*ri; \Ze)? rciv (a'guwm*ri;Ei a':ee;&i
w\ or)? armibarmi(a'guwm*ri;Eia':ee;&iw\ om; 13 Ept&,)? armibaemi
(a'guwm*ri;Ei a':ee;&iw\ om; 12 Ept&,)? 0;&ea0; (a'guwm*ri; \ tpu?
lrUawm0e? &mZ0wri;u; \ tmPmu v n;&xm;o jrlepyg, a&c sk;qyaurw0u)]?
0;b;x, (jynowreowi;pm t, 'wm)? 0;cpc (jynowreowi;pm vuaxmu
t, 'wm)? uyweatmivi; (yiv, u;oabmuywe)? 0;b;re(pmyEyt vyorm;)?
0;atmiye; (a':ee;&i \ ar;pm;zci) [í Zmwaqmirms;pm yg0ion/

xo Zmwaqmirms;pm yg0iaomvn; t"uZmwaqmirms q&m0e0;*ri;? 0;&ea0;?
0;b;x, ? 0;cpcwizply; useZmwaqmirms;rm jyZmwZmwvr;u un jznqn;ay;aom
Zmwjzn? Zmw&wjzpygon/

pojzi ocibaomi; \ wi;jyn&eojyZmwr Zmwaqmiw\ p^{1/2}ut zU r sm;u
avvmwiiy&mwi

1/ Zmwaqmiu, wiajypum;jzi p^{1/2}uazmjci;/

2/ tjc m;Zmwaqmi \ ajypum;jzi p^{1/2}uazmjci;/

3/ Zmwaqmitci;ci; tctc ajypum;jzi p^{1/2}uazmjci;

[í awl&&ygon/

3? 1/ Zmwaqmiu, wiajypum;jzi p^{1/2}uazmjci;

a'guwm*ri;Ei a':ee;&iwaetron jynowreowi;pm t, 'wm0;b;x, ?
vuaxmut, 'wm 0;cpc? uyweatmivi;w\ pm;traomu trizpon/ a'guwm
*ri;uvn; o \ rwaqr sm;u au;ar;{ncae&r aysm&iojzpon/ xtalumi;u
a'guwm*ri;u-

]]uleawm rwaqawuawm uleawmrau;rar;braeEib;/ owu
au;ar;&wm oyaymwu; ly;awm'vau;ar;ae&ry uleawm v n; aev &
w , /}}¹¹

[aom u , wiajympum; t& a'guwm*ri; on rwaqrsm; tay: au;ar;vaom o'g
w&m;Ei pwapwemaumi; ywu o&ygon/
a'guwm*ri; apwemaumi; ouo Ze;a':ee;&iu v n; apwemaumi; yu-
]]ui; u uwmuom o; aqmi uayawm/ a [m'guumz;? a [m'gu
vuzu&n? a [m'gu uu;? t m; rem uyge lreleu; baom uuyg/}}¹²

[í a':ee;&iu , wi ajympum; t& a':ee;&i on ciye; \rwaqrsm; tay: {n0w
au; yepm {ncwwaomp½u? Ze;aumi; yoo? apwemaumi; ojzpalumi; o&ygon/
a'guwm*ri; on a&c& qyr aomua&Eic&a&uerem , ly; wuov"mwpr;½r
tajay; v u a o m p m u && on / x p m u z w l u n & m w p r v ; t m ; x m ; & on a & c & ; q y u ;
o n a & m * g y ; r s m ; t v e r s m ; j y m ; p m & a e a l u m i ; o & on / x l a l u m i a & c & ; q y r a & on a & c & ; & e ?
a o m u o ; & e w t w u a b ; t E & m , & a l u m i ; Z e ; o n a ' : e e ; & i E i r r t r u t v n a & m u
a e a o m 0 ; b ; x , ? 0 ; c p c ? 0 ; a t m i v i ; w u a j y m j y o n / x a & c & ; q y u u e ; r m a & ; E i
n ñ w a t m i j y j y i a y ; & e t w u p w u ; x m ; a l u m i ; u v n ; a ' g u w m * r i ; u —

]]jy; jiray; v b , jzprv jy; jiyay; & rmayg? jy; jiray; b; q&i 'a&c& qy
[m t v u m ; j z p o m ; v r r , v w i l u y ; y y e a e z t a l u m i ; r & y g b ; / b , v
b , v j y j y i a y ; & r , q w m u l e a w m t u e p w u ; x m ; l y ; y g l y /}}¹³

[í v n; aumi;?

]]u , rru , & m & u t u s ; e u , rru , & m o m ; a w & u t u s ; u a q m i & u & w m
rsm; oyly; 0r; omp&maumi; wmy/}}¹⁴

[í v n; aumi;? u , wiajympum; t& a'guwm*ri; on trsm; t u s ; u a q m i & u & m w i
p w t m ; v t m ; j z i u n a q m i & u a y ; v o u , r r u , & m ? u , Z m w u c p j r w E ; o n
p½u & o j z p a l u m i ; o & on /
a'guwm*ri; wrom; pon a&c& qyEiywouly; aq; aE; ajymum; aep0 0; & ea0;
a&mu v m on / 0; & ea0; on a'guwm*ri; a&; yaom a&c& qy t a l u m i ; t p & i c p m E i
y w o u l y ; j y i a & c i ; & e a & m u v m j c i ; j z p o n / a ' g u w m * r i ; \ t p & i c p m w i]] a & c & ; q y
u x m 0 & t q y q i u ; v }}¹⁵ x n l y ; a & ; x m ; o n t a l u m i ; u j y i a & a y ; & e a w m i ; q j c i ; j z p
o n / a ' g u w m * r i ; u j y i a & r a y ; E i a l u m i ; u]] r r u v n ; v r w m b ? w i ; j y n u v n ;

¹¹ baomi;? oci? 1963? 30

¹² baomi;? oci? 1963? 36/

¹³ - , i; -? 50/

¹⁴ - , i; -? 55/

¹⁵ baomi;? oci? 1963? 84/

apm u m; w m b? w p E i i v; u v n; v n j z m; w m b}}¹⁶ [a j y m q u m j i i; y, c o n/ a' g u w m
* r i; u u, r m & o n t u o p Ó P o p r s m; u w i; j y n o a t m i j z e a 0 a y; & r n j z p a l u m i;
a j y m & m 0; & e a 0; u -

]] w i; o j y n o m; a w u t u o p Ó P o p a y; z r v y g b; / t c & a e w t u
a [m i; a u m i; a u m i;? Ó P a [m i; a u m i; a u m i; a w [m w i; o j y n o m; a w
t z a u m i; a u m i; ß u; v a v m u a e y g w, }}¹⁷

[j y e j y e a j y m o n/ 0; & e a 0; \ u, w i a j y m p u m; t & 0; & e a 0; o n t r s m; t u s; x u
r r t u s; u o m \ u n w w a o m t w u; a o m p ½ u?]] b, o a o a i a w r m l y; a & m}} q o u o
v t r s m; r n o y i j z p a e a e? r r a u m i; p m; z l o m t " u x m; o n w p u, a u m i; q e o n p ½ u
w u a w \ & y g o n/

x j y i a' g u w m * r i; u v n; r r a u s; Z; r a r & e u -

]] t c a & c s; q y r m r i; u s e; r m a & t & m j z p a e w m i g a u s; Z; a l u m i j z p & w,
q w m u v n; r i; v; v; o w & a w m [e r w b; }}¹⁸

[a o m 0; & e a 0; \ a j y m p u m; t & 0; & e a 0; o n r r \ * P a u s; Z; u t c i o m w i; x w a z m
a j y m q w w o n * P a z m w w o n r o a w m w \ p ½ u ½ o j z p a l u m i; a w \ & o n/

j r l e p y g, a & y e r s m; u j y i r n [a o m u p E i y w o u l y; 0; b; r e u r r t w u t c i
t a & & r n t x i E i a' g u w m * r i; x a & m u v m o n/ a' g u w m * r i; t m; t u t n r s m; p m
a y; E i o j z p a l u m i; u 0; b; r e u -

]] u l e a w m u v n; ' E p t w u t r y i & i r s m; & U t o i; r m 0 u j z p a e a w m }}¹⁹

[í v n; a u m i;?

]] y; a w m t u s i p m & w a u m i; r e a & t o i; r m v n; u l e a w m [m a' o q i & m
t w i; a & r l; y g b }}²⁰

[í v n; a u m i;

]] y; a w m u l e a w m [m a' g u w m v b r, w r v e v y w w w, / 0 y a' u v n;
a p m i o v u e m o j z p w, q w * P o w i; e j y n p w v w p a, m u j z p a w m
r r U x r m t a w m u a v; \ o Z m & y g w, / }}²¹

[í v n; a u m i; a j y m q o n/ p t c u r s m; u \ u n j c i; j z i 0; b; r e o n t r s m; t u s; x u
r r a e & m & a &? t c i t a & & a &? r r t u s; j z p x e; a & u o m \ u n w w o n t c i t a & o r m;
w p 0; j z p a l u m i; o & y g o n/

¹⁶ baom i;? oci? 1963? 88/

¹⁷ -, i; -? 92/

¹⁸ -, i; -? 88/

¹⁹ -, i; -? 92/

²⁰ -, i; -? 93/

²¹ -, i; -? 74/

x|yi0;b;reon t rm; treurcjm;b t mPmyirsm;bur &ywnv o
jzpaumi;u —

]] t mPmyirsm;u rav;rpm;vyv| b , jzprv? owjyr uleawmwE&rm
jzpaewm owu&evy&i uleawmw epem½b&rmayg}}²²

[aom u , wiajypum;t& 0;b;re \ p0;pm;aw;ac:wwon ÓPen;yg;aom om , m
en;wwaom tci ta&orm;wp0; \ rEpr\Uz , &m p½u uaw\&ygon/

p o|ji ocibaomi; \]]wi;jyn&eo}}jyZmwwi Zmwaqmiu , wiajy pum;
jzi p½uazmji;ulunjci;jzi a'guwm*ri;? a':ee;&i? 0;&ea0;? 0;b;rew \ p½u u
o&&ygon/

3? 2/ t jcm;Zmwaqmi \ ajypum;jzi p½uazmji;

a'guwm*ri;? a':ee;&iw aetrwi a'guwm*ri;r&cu 0;b;x , Ei 0;&ea0;
w Ewqupum;q&i; a'guwm*ri; talumi;u 0;&ea0;u —

]]jynowreowi;pmrm uleawmnu cPcPaqmi;yg;awa&aew , q
wm uleawm v n; l um;ygw , }}²³

[ajym&m 0;b;x , u

]]reygw , wwvi;vi;a&p&m talumi;uav;rm; &wtcg a'guwm
*ri; [m jynowreowi;pmxuaely; a&av&ygw , }}²⁴

[ajmavon/ p o0;&ea0;Ei 0;b;x , w ajypum;t& a'guwm*ri;on
ue;rma& t&m&wp0;jzpaomvn; jynotus;jylaprn owi;tcutvursm;u
avvmwiiyww o pmayaqmi;yg;rm; a&om;jci;u 0goemygo jzpaumi; o& on/

a':ee;&i on 0;&ea0;xr cwywí yvuaom pmu a'guwm*ri;t m; ay;ly;
pmyg talumi;t&mu ar;jre;&m a'guwm*ri;u 0;&ea0; talumi;u —

]]tpu!u;u vwpr;r [wvm;? wrr\U&Utu;u ouvy;b , or
aqmi&uwm ri u(ub;}}²⁵

[aompum;t& 0;&ea0;on rroirrom;w \ tu;u vvm;o aqmi&uay;otjzp
vtrsm; \ txi u;av;pm;jci;u owp0;wn;om c , vo wpu , aumi;p½u&o
jzpaumi;o&on/

0;b;re \ talumi;u 0;b;x , u-

²² baomi;? oci? 1963? 76/

²³ , i;- ? 17/

²⁴ - , i;-/

²⁵ - , i;-? 58/

]]'v[m'ji[mawrm awmygw, / 'gayr, p0;pm;ÓP brrr&&m b;/
vaw[m t rsm; t m;ji'vcn;yg b a'guwm/ avor;wi; , r;aw
0g;½yiaweoywwmb/ ow[m [, r; ' , r; w , r; x , r;aeuwm b?
ly;awmvn; owrmci;ae&wme owxm;ae&wme wuxA sm brru
u wu wvww rvy&awmb;}}²⁶

[aomajypum; t& 0;b;reon p0;pm;ÓPr&aom om&mem;wwaom p½u&o
jzpalumi; o&ygon/

xlyi 0;b;retalumi; u 0;cpcu vn;-

]]0;b;reuawm valumub/ oyly;owen;wv/ o un&wm a , mu sm;
yow tci; t&mwpcrr&b;}}²⁷

[aom ajypum; t& 0;b;reon tvyvy&mwi rjywom;aom p½u&ojzpalumi;
o&ygon/

tjcm;Zmwaqmi \ ajypum;ji p½uazmji; u avvmunji;ji a'guwm*ri;?
0;&ea0;? 0;b;rew \ p½uEi pwoabmxm;wu o&&ygon/

3/ 3/ Zmwaqmi tci;ci; tye t ve ajypum;ji p½uazmji;

jrlepyg , a&c&;qyEiywou ívn; 0;&ea0;u pa&c&;qyonrr \ us uoa&
aqmi? rr \ tci tcm r@ioz , jzpalumi; pa&c&;qyalumi rr orr om; rsm; \
0iaivn;w;vmalumi;? tvytuirsm;vn; zUz&;pnyivmly; rr vn; rsm;pm pnun;
vmalumi; ajym on/ 0;&ea0; \ ajypum;uem;axmily; 0;b;x , u —

]]'vq&iawm a'guwm*ri;&Uaqmi;yg;el oyuyPm&rm b}}²⁸

[ajym& 0;&ea0;u

]]armi*ri; rlumci u aqmi;yg;rsm;a&ao;ovm;}}²⁹

[ar;&m 0;b;x , u aqmi;wi;we;u a&ay;xm;aom aqmi;yg;jzpalumi;? p
aqmi;yg;u aE&orxn&e pp0xm;allumi;ajymjon/ xlaemu 0;b;x , u a'guwm
*ri;on a&c&;qyEiywou v i rarmEirye;Ei aqmi&uwwalumi;u —

]]a'guwm*ri; [m 'a&c&;qye ywouuwprsm;q&i arm&aumi;? yr;&
aumi;re;ub roygb;}}³⁰

²⁶ baomi;? oci? 1963? 79/

²⁷ - , i;-? 108/

²⁸ - , i;-? 20/

²⁹ - , i;-/

³⁰ - , i;-? 21/

[aom ajypum; t & a'guwm*ri; on ||r||o||r||o||m; rsm; t m; u; t m; x m; jyí & on a&c&; qy
vyie; tay: pw0iwpm; aqmi&uww0? trsm; tu&; u aqmi&uww0 jzpalumi;
o&ygon/

a'guwm*ri; on tra&muonEi o trnEipmwur pmra&mb; vm;? pmy
orm; rvm; vm; [ar; & m ar||m viaeaompmu or; jzporciv ausmi; u yevmr pmu
vuc&&on/ xpm on wuov"mwpr; ½ u y v u a o m p m j z p l y; p m y g t a l u m i; t & m r m—

]]a&c&; qy u; wpcv; [m weqm qixm; w t qyw; u; e twwbjzpa
||y? wi; o j y n o m; a w & u u e; r m a &; u 'a&c&; qy u; x u y l y; x c u w a e & m
r & b; }}³¹

[í a'guwm*ri; u ajymjyavon/ x t c g 0; b; x , ? 0; c p c ? 0; a t m i v i; ? a':ee;&i
wu a'guwm*ri; u a&c&; qy t a l u m i; b , v o y g o v [a r; & m a'guwm*ri; u —

]]ig t v y ½ y ½ y a e w m 'g a l u m i a y g u r e e; & i & / 'g a y r , i g w q r m p r; o y
z l u & , m u r p b u; 'a w m 'a&c&; q y r m & w a o m u a & e c &; a & u e r e m , l y;
w u o v " m w p r; ½ u y l v u & w m a y g }}³²

[ajymavon/ a'guwm*ri; u p m u x w j y í o w i; r e u e a l u m i; t a x m u t x m; j y í
& i; j y o n / p o l z m w a q m i t c i; c i; t j y e t v e a j y m p u m; t & a'guwm*ri; \ j y n o w
t a y: x m; a o m a p w e m E i u s a & m u v m r n a b; t E & m , r u m u , a p m i a & m u a y; v a o m
r e j r w o n p w x m; E i p ½ u u a w l & y g o n /

||r||awm0e 0; & ea0; on a'guwm*ri; \ a&c&; qy t p & i c p m E i y w o u l y;
p m t a &; t o m; u j y i q i a y; & e a j y m q o n / a'guwm*ri; u v n; o \ a w l & c u o n
t r e j z p í r j y i E i a l u m i; u -

]]b , u p e l o u q i o u q i u l e a w m * ½ r p u y g b; / w a v m u v; r m & o r
b , u p e l y w o u v l b j z p j z p u l e a w m x i j r i c s u a y; r m b l / }}³³

[ajym&m 0; & ea0; u —

]]'g u a w m r i; o a b m a y g / o l a o m a & c &; q y t a l u m i; e y w o u v l a w m
r i; b m r x i j r i c s u r a y; & b; / 'g a w m i g w u w m; w , }}³⁴

[í v n; a u m i;

]]ig r i; O u l u; u w m; w , / i g w m; & i r i; e m c & r , }}³⁵

³¹ baomi;? oci? 1963? 48/

³² - , i; - ? 49/

³³ - , i; - ? 97/

³⁴ - , i; /

³⁵ - , i; /

[í vn;aumi; Zmwaqmitci;ci; tjetveajmavon/ xotjetve ajypum;
t& a'guwm*ri; \ rroron;rm; tay: usa&uvmrn ab;tE&, u umu,
apmia&uay;vaomp½u? trsm;tu&aqmi&uontcg rwerqw a&lw;vyaqmi
wwonp½uwuaw&on/ xlyi0;&ea0; \ trsm;tu&;xu rrtu&;uomlunww
aom twu;aomp½uEi trew&;u axmujyon njzpotay: tmPmijum treay;
wwon p½uwuaw&ygon/ a'guwm*ri;Ei 0;&ea0;w \ rwnon ntpuEp0;
 \ p½uu o&&ygon/

a&c&;qyEiywouí a'guwm*ri; \ pr;oyaw&c&utwi; jyiyi&e 0;&ea0;
u jrlepyg, ti*ie, mEi om;a&uppr;un&m aio;oe;ce ueu:rnjzply; jyiqi
cevn; EpEpcellumrnjzpon/ xEpEptwi;wi p;ym;a&;vr;u ywxm;ouo
jzprnp;aomalumi a'guwm*ri;t m; a&c&;qy \ tE&, &aomowi;u rjezjzL;&e
vma&uajmqon/

x t c g a'guwm*ri;u -

]]'p;ym;a&;vr;u;u Oyg'rui;v\As tpuu;[m pwrElvrvyyge/
uleawmw tcvyaey[m tnptalu;e wp;vuaqmiu wpqic
a&mi;aewmeww, / tculeawmw wplrv;u;ym;aewm r[wwu
t ajc j y l y; u;ym;aewm}}³⁶

[ajym& 0;&ea0;u —

]]u, Zmwiruu u, 'v apmi;ajrmi;ly; oywavvi ajymEiwo [m
wi;oynom;&u &eoerx;ygb;}}³⁷

[í ajmavon/

xo Zmwaqmitci;ci; tjetveajypum;u lunji;ji 0;&ea0;on
jynoynom;w ab;tE&, usa&ujci;xu rrwp;ym;jzpxe;a&;uom tav;xm;
aom tworm;w \ p½uuaw&on/ xlyi jynoynom;w \ use;rma&;twu
tE&, ui;atni bu;pm;aqmi&uao trew&;buu rm;rm;rwrw&ywnay;o
a'guwm*ri;u vn;]]wi;jyn&eo}} [í pypajmqonu lunji;ji trew&;u
alum&u&aom? rvvm;aom 0;&ea0; \ tajym aomwmyep½uu aw&ygon/

jynowreowi;pm t, 'wmtce;wi 0;b;x, ? 0;b;rewon a'guwm
*ri; \ a&c&;qyupEiywouly; unaqmi&uay;&e jyiqiaecsewi llawm0e
0;&ea0;a&uvm on/ 0;b;re? 0;b;x, won 0;&ea0;Eiawlaom t c g 0;&ea0; \
pn;½;ajymqraemuoygom;on/ a'guwm*ri;a&uvm aom t c g a'guwm*ri; \
tp&icpmu owi;pmwixnray;Eialumi; 0;b;x, uajymqon/ 0;&ea0;u
0;b;x, Ei 0;b;reon rrburm&alumi;x i&;ap&e 0;&ea0;u -

³⁶ baomi? oci? 1963? 100/

³⁷ -, i;-? 101/

]]aepr;yg t;? 'vqz yzvywt xrm? 0;b;x , uaum ygrmwvm;/}}³⁸

[ajym&m 0;b;x , u —

]]pwcawmryg ||rUawm0eri;? uleawmrygyg b;/}}³⁹

[ajym&m 0;b;reuvn;-

pwcawmryg ||rUawm0eri; 0;b;x , [m 'vra&r&mupr;twu o
owi;pmua&m? ou , wiua&m epre;atmi vyr , vr [wygb;/⁴⁰

[ajym on/ xoltjyet veajympum;rm; t& 0;b;x , Ei 0;b;rewon pw tajymi;
tv jreaomp½u? om&mem;wwaomp½u? rwaqaumi;ryoam p½uw/uawU&
ygon/

a'guwm*ri;on a&c; qyupEiywouly; vtrsm; oapcií tpn;ta0;vy
vaumi;ajym&m o\ rwaqrsm;jzpaom 0;b;x , ? 0;b;re? 0;cpcwu tutnray;
uay/ uyweatmivi;u o\ trwitpn;ta0;jy\vy&e tutnay;con/ x
tpn;ta0;wi a&c; qyupEiywouly; jynor; \ue; rma&twu a'guwm*ri;
u —

]]uleawmw a&yersm; [m ue;rma&ernñwb;/ uleawmw a&c; qy [m
a&m*gy;aygw aray:rmwnxm;w , qw taumi;xu trsm;βu;yly; ta&
βu;wtalumi;yg}}⁴¹

[ajym&m y&owtclU —

]]a&c; qytaumi;u rajmyge? em;raxmicib;? em;raxmicib;/}}⁴²

[ajymly; ueuuluon/ 0;b;reuvn; a'guwm*ri;u pum;ajymqijci&
acgi;avmi;w; í oway;on/ xtcg a'guwm*ri;u —

]]uleawm [m? uleawmZmwirUu tirwecpygw , / u , i , i , u aexi
cwrUjzpaom 'Uuuleawmxu b , ouryly;cpEivrr , vrxiyg
b;}}⁴³

[ívn;aumi;

]]'vqi;q i;&& jzpaelluwvawqu vq&m0ervwbe w&pmeq&m0e
vwvu&i yly;aumi;t;r , v aw;rygw , / uleawmw trs;om;rm;&U
tajctae [m 'gavmuawmiq;ygw , /}}⁴⁴

³⁸ baomi;? oci? 1963? 149/

³⁹ - , i;-/

⁴⁰ - , i;-/

⁴¹ - , i;-/ 173/

⁴² - , i;-/

⁴³ - , i;-? 174/

⁴⁴ - , i;-? 175/

]]a&c& qyqi&m use;rma& t&m& a'guwm*ri;on wi;jyn&eo; jzpon
[tpn;ta0;u;u oabm&&alumi;}}⁵⁰

[í y&owrsm;lum;atmi ajmavon/

ponulunci; jzi avmuvom; trsm;pon rru, u& twu v, u
niomaom rom;pum; rsm; \aemuo ryirye; v uaeluly; opm&otrew&m; u
aqmi&uo a'guwm*ri; aemuo vu0or&uay/ trew&m; uaqmi&uo a'guwm
*ri; uyi]]wi;jyn&eo}} [í0i;0e; avmiajmiuon 0;b;re? 0;b;x, ? 0;&ea0;w
uolaom u, u& 1/2orm; rsm; avm uwi rsm; pm&aealumi; o&ygon/ wi;jynwpjyn
w; wuaumi; rea& twu a'guwm*ri; uolaom y*vr& rsm; pmay: xe; &e vty
valumi; u Zmwaqmirms; \ ajympum; rsm; utm; jy í a& zwijyxm; onu awl&ygon/

lc(i o; oycu

ocibaomi; \ wi;jyn&eo; jzpmwr Zmwaqmip1/2ursm; u wijy&mü Zmwaqmi
u, wiajympum; jzi p1/2uzew; jci;? tjcm; Zmwaqmi \ ajympum; jzi p1/2uazmici;?
Zmwaqmi tci; ci; t jyet veajympum; rsm; jzi p1/2uazmici; [í awl&ygon/

Zmwaqmiu, wi ajympum; jzi p1/2uazmici; u avvmlun&mwi a'guwm*ri;
on rwaqrsm; tay: o'gw&m; xuoepmjzi au; ar; {ncv on apwemaumi; aom
p1/2u? trsm; t u& aqmi&u vaom p1/2u? u, llru, &m? u, Zmwajru c; pjrwe; on
p1/2u&ojzpalumi; o&on/ a'guwm*ri; \ Ze; a':ee; &iu vn; ciye; \ rwaqrsm;
tay: {n0wauyepm{ncwwo? apwemaumi; o? Ze; aumi; yoojzpalumi; o&ygon
on/ a'guwm*ri; \ tpu llawm0e0; &ea0; on trsm; t u& xu rrtu& uo m
llunwwo? rr \ *Paus; Z; u vn; tciomwi; ajm jywwojzpalumi; o&on/
pmyEytvy orm; wp0; jzpon 0;b; reon p0; pm; aw; ac: ÓPen; yg; o? om&m
em; wwo? trsm; t u& xu rrtu& uo m llunwwojzpalumi; o&ygon/

tjcm; Zmwaqmi \ ajympum; jzi p1/2uazmici; u avvmlun&mwi a'guwm
*ri; \ talumi; u 0;&ea0; Ei 0;b; x, w \ ajympum; t& a'guwm*ri; on pma& jci;
u 0goemygy? a'guwm*ri; Ei a':ee; &iw \ ajympum; t& 0;&ea0; on v trsm; \
txi u; av; pm; jci;? tm; u; , lunci; u owp0; wn; c, vaom wpu, aumi; qe
aom p1/2u&ojzpalumi; o&on/ 0;b; re \ talumi; u 0;b; x, ? 0; cpcw \
ajympum; jzi p0; pm; ÓPr&aom? om, mem; wwaom p1/2u? tvyvy&mwi rjywrom;
vywwaomp1/2u&ojzpalumi; o&on/ 0; atmiye; talumi; u 0; cpc \ ajympum; t&
0; atmiye; on tci ta& aumi; reor vuvwrcwwaom vn0, yg; eyowp0;
jzpalumi; o&on/

Zmwaqmi tci; ci; t jyet veajympum; jzi p1/2uazmici; u avvmlun&mwi
0;b; x, Ei 0;&ea0; w t jyet veajympum; t& a'guwm*ri; on a&c& qyvyie;

⁵⁰ baomi;? oci? 1963?

tay:pw0iwpm;aqmi&uwo? trsm;tusk; aqmi&uvojzpallumi; o&ygon/
 a'guwm*ri;? 0;b;x,? 0;cpc? 0;atmivi;? a':ee;&iw Zmwaqmitcsi;csi;
 tjetveajypum;t&a'guwm*ri;on jynowtay:xm;aom apwemEi usa&mu
 vmrnab;tE&m,rumu,apmia&muay;vaom rejrwonp^{1/2}u&alumi; o&ygon/
 a'guwm*ri;Ei 0;&ea0;w tjetveajypum;t&a'guwm*ri;on trsm;tusk;
 aqmi&uontcg rwerqw a&lw;vyaqmiwwaom p^{1/2}uwuaw&ygon/
 0;b;x,Ei 0;b;rew\ tajymi;tvjreaomp^{1/2}u? rwaqaumi; ryoaomp^{1/2}uwu
 awl&ygon/

pojzi Zmwaqmito;o;w\ p^{1/2}ursm;u avvmunjci;ji 0;&ea0;?
 0;b;x,? 0;cpc? 0;b;rew\ p^{1/2}ursm;on rryw0e;uiwi rsm;pmawEiaom p^{1/2}u
 rsm;jzply; a'guwm*ri;\ jrijrwaomp^{1/2}ur;ur taw&en;ygon/ rrwwi;jyn
 w;wuaumi;revygu a'guwm*ri;uoaom y*vr;sl;rsm;pmay:xu&evalumi;
 avvmo&&ygon/

e*;

ppmwr;on ocibaomi;\ jwi;jyn&eo}} jyZmwrZmwaqmi p^{1/2}ursm;
 avvmcsujzpygon/ ocibaomi;\ jyZmwrsm;u quvuoawoejy/&e rsm;pm
 use&ygaon/ ppmwr;Eiywouí vtysu? tm;en;csur;sm;&ygu aq;aE;tuijy
 ay;luyg&e arwm&ycygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

aiOa'gi;l(2012)l pm0uygagyi;csyl/ &euelrU? pwu;csclpmay/
 baomi;? ocil (1963)l wi;jyn&eojyZmw ('w, t!ur)/ &eue? elomyEyvyie;/
 baomi;? Avrl;l (2002)l pmqawmrsm;twyw(yírt!ur)/ &euelrU? &mjynpmtywul
 be;Ei? wuovl (1981)l 0w&n[onrm? 0w&npmwr;rm; (yxrw)/ &eue? pmayArme
 yEywu/

jrermptzll (1963)l jrerm p,pu;r;(tw? 7)/ &eue? pmayArmeEywu/
 jrermptzll (1987)l jrerm t b"mel/ &eue? pmayArmeEywu/
 jrermptzll (2008)l jrerm t b"met u;0;csyl/ &eue? wuove, ajr? wuov rsm;yEywu/
 omjrw? 0; (o&y;cs)l (1961)l ayg&mPpum;t b"mel/ &eue? [om0wyEywu/
 o&, uEl (1967)l 0w/a&vaom ('w, t!ur)/ &eue? cs;jzLyEywu/
 atmioi;? (1987)l pmaya&&maqmi;yg;rm;/ &eue? 0i;r;lyEywu/

zw^{1/2}av vmaompm t ypm&i;

ciri? armi("EjzL)l (2010)l u/veacwjrermpmayori;l/ &euelrU? pwu;csclpmay/
 nlrEitrsm;l (1973)l [nopmay/ &euelrU? pmayArmeEywu/
 armiarmi;u;? 0;l (2010)l jrerm pjrermrl/ &euelrU? pwu;csclpmay/

vum&nausm \ b0o^{1/2}yazm 0w^{wrsm};av vmc:u

owmxe;*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on vum&nausm \ 0w^{wrsm};r q&m0eb0o^{1/2}yazm0ww (2)y'u
avvmwijyxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ pmwr;\ tce;(1)wi0ww oabmEi
t*g&yrs;[?] tce;(2)wi vum&nausm \ twiywtu:O;[?] tce;(3)wi jajr
rav^{{m}uwvyjymaw} 0w^wavvmc:u[?] tce; (4)wi]t&,ajymi;Ev;om;[}]
0wwavvmc:uw/u avvmwijyxm;ygon/

aomc:ua0g [m&/ /0ww[?] b0o^{1/2}yazm0w[?] Zmwvr;[?] Zmwuu[?] Zmwvr;
tz[?] &n^{1/2},c:u

e'ge;

b0o&yazm0w^w a&;om;orsm;on trsm;tm;izi rrwu:ivn&m b0yw0e;u:ī
ujyevna&;om;av&ygon/ q&m vum&nausmon q&m0elū;wp0;yy ou:ivn
&aomq&m0e[?] oemjy[?] aq;&ponyw0e;u:īu aemucjy[?]ī 0w^wtjzpa&;om;con/
vum&nausm onoyw0e;u:īu apwemoua&m uum vyazm uizursm;jzplūon
q&m0e[?] oemjypon vtzt[?]tpn;u cpm;aw;jrily;v[{]ī q&m0eb0o&yazm0w^{wrsm};
a&;om;cygon/ ,cavvm wijyxm;aom jajrrav^{{m}uwvyjymaw} 0w^wwi
q&m0ew^wb0 ū[?]ū;pm;tm;xw&mwi pw"mwup&m u jyijy;pw"mwzūjz[?]ū;w;wu vmy
tqi[?]qiu r;armi;x;jyon/]] t&,ajymi;Ev;om;}}wi tout&,ū;&ivmontcg
pw"mw&iu:ū vma[?]ūmi;[?] vwpa,muwn;u wplurwn;jzp&y[?]tay: tājcnī
tq;tjzway;oia[?]ūmi;u t&,ajymi;Ev;om; [trnay;jy; b0taw;tjriygon
0ww^wtjzp zew;xm;ygon/

1/ 0w^wwoabmEi t *g&yrs;

q&mwuw;u]urmausm0wwrsm;Ei wuw;\ &i;jy[?]c:u} pmt[?]ywi-

]]0w^wū Zmwvr;Zmwuuon y"mer[w Zmwaumi \ c:uyi
aomb0u wpc[?]urazmjyEiyg[?]v:ī 0ww^w\ upon jy;ajrm u[?]jy [
qEiyg \ /}} (pm-14)

[re[?]q[?]xm;ygon/

* uxu[?] jrerm[?]pmXme[?] &eu[?]ewuov

q&mausmatni u]]urm*E0i 10}} wi-

]]0w\wqonrm zwceq, repEi wpem&t lum;&on 0w\jzpon/
talumi; t&m\wpcwn; jzp&rn/ uelowcu r[waomvn; talumi;
wpccu tajcwnonpmrsl; jzpon/ xtalumi; wpccrm wpcgwn; Ei
ajyvnjy; jzpon wijyc:ursl; jzp&rn/ o\jzp&m0w\won jy; jynpon
pmwpy'jzpon/ aemuxyzwawmuci í r&? aemuxyznpuci í
vn; rjzp/ bpmsl; rm 0w\w\jzpon/}} (pm-31)

[reqxm; yg on/

0w\wEiywou í ygarm u0; rsl; ri; u alu; r&yoi 0w\e'ge; wi-

]]0w\wwitjzptyur; on t"ur[w/ pma&q&m \q\vcu?
wijyc:uonon t"ujzpon/ pma&q&m on pmzwo tm& uupm;
apvaom oabmwp&y? tcuwp&y? o; oyc:uwp&yu rwnjy; v\i
, i; v&m tc:uola&muatmi oabmay: viatmi tjzptyur; m; u
zew; &on}}

[t u*g t , viy; \ t q u u; um; í wijycygon/

xalumi]]0w\won pmzwo tm&uupm; apvaom talumi; jzp&ywu
tcuyiyiEi xrrwiyeiaom pmaytzuqvon}} [, qEiygon/

]]&n&, cuqonrm pma&o a&om; wijyaom talumi; t&m \ t"u tcuyi
jzpon/ &n&, cuEipyv0; í q&matmivi; u r[mpme'ge; wi -

]]&nre; cuon 0w\Zmwvvr; Eiuun&rn/ Zmwvvr; wav; twi; rm
&nre; cuawtr; m; lu; xnwmrsl; rjzpap&b; / &nre; cuEiywoujy;
avmb lu; ve; &i ueom; www , /}} (pm 66)

[reqcygon/

Zmwvvr; tzlyp \ oabmu

armiciri("EjzL)u]]pum; ajyoabmw&m; pum; ajytwwynm}} pmt ywi -

]]Zmwvvr; [on jzp&yrm; u talumi; t u sl; qupyum 0w\Zmwvvr;
ypjzia&z ux; aom tzur; sl; on Zmwvvr; tzlyp jzpon/}} (pm-324)

[reqxm; yg on

Zmwvvr; Eiywou í rr; ajru]]0w\&noabmw&m; 0w\&ntwwynm}} pmt y
wi-

]]pma&o on v\avmuwi jzpy:uaeaom vrm; pm \ jzp&yrm; ucpm;
em; vnatmi lu; pm; jy; v\i xjzp&yrm; xr pw0ipm; z , ? pwvy&m; z ,

aumi;aomjzp&yrm;u a&;cs, í pmzwo tyi;r jzpEion? jzpoion?
jzpEiac&on [vuc, lunvmatmi Zmwvr;qiwiyy&ygon/}}

(pm-75)

[vn;aumi;

]]0w\wonvn; 0w&nuoyi Zmwvr;yg&jrzpon/ o&mwi
Zmwvr;utav;ay;ji;? tav;ray;ji; [aom taetxm;Ep&y ujym;
wwygon/}}

(pm-75)

[vn;aumi; reqxm;ygon/

ZmwuuEi ywouí rr;ajru-

]]Zmwvr;a&vsm;&e Zmwuu(0g)jyuursm;u yazm, &on/ Zmwaqmi
w\ u, ? Ew? Ev;trt&mrm;jzi o&yazmij;pmzwow jria, mi
lum;a, mivmatmi wijy&on/}}

(pm-190)

[reqxm;ygon/

Zmwaqmizew;rEiywouí q&matmivi;u r [mpme'ge;wi -

]]v\avmu tvmt;o;u vaw&laexir? vy&m;r? ½e;uer? aw;ac:
r? aygi;oi;quqrponwu avvm&mrm;xm;ji; [m u\yw\ 0w\xu
Zmwaqmiaw ½yv;azmz\ twu ta&;u;w "mwloZm awygy/}}

(pm-79)

[í reqcygon/

aemuc0e;usiEi pyv;0;í q&mri; , a0u]]0w\wpmwr;rsm;(yxrw))}?]]0w\w
\ t*g&yrm;pmwr;}}wi -

]]0w\wwi;yi umva'oyw0e;usi yg\jzpygon/ o&mwi tcs\Urm
umva'oyw0e;usi u oi½omwiyygon/ tcs\Urmrtav;ay; wijy
ygon/}}

(pm-172)

[re\qxm;ygon/

rr;ajru]]0w\woabmw&m; 0w\wzew;a&;om;r twwynmpmty}} wi-

]]umva'oaemucqonrm 0w\Zmwvr;jzpw n&m ae&ma'oEi tce
umvuqvygon/ umv [&mü Zmwvr;jzpay:&macwEi xacw\
vryw0e;usi? Eiia&yw0e;usi? p;ym;a&yw0e;usiwvn; yg0ion/
a'o aemucq&mü 0w\wi;&jzp&yrm;? Zmwaqmirms;jzpyu&m ae&ma'o
jzpon/}}

(pm-289)

[reqxm;ygon/

t x u a z m j y y g 0 w w t q t r e E i t w w y n m r s m ; u t a j c c í t a v v m c 0 w w (2) y ' u c i e x ; o ; o y j y o m ; y g r n /

2/ v u m & n a u s m \ t w i y w t u s 0 ;

v u m & n a u s m \ t r n & i ; r m a ' g u w m & j r i a u s m j z p o n / 1962 c E p ? ' Z i b m v 20 & u a e w i { & m 0 w w i ; a ' o l u ; ? j r e a t m i j r u e , ? j r u r w u ; u e ; a u s ; & m w i z m ; j r i j y ; t b 0 ; w i n e l ? t r a ' : j r & w \ ' w , o m ; j z p o n / t . x . u (1) v r ; r a w m a q ; w u o v (1) & e u e w w i y n m q n ; y ; c o n /

1979 c E p w i t r w (2) a ' o a u m v y & e u e w i ; r j j y E y x w a 0 a & ; t w w y n m ' y v r m } } & & c o n / 1980 r 1985 t w i ; a q ; w u o v (1) & e u e E p v n r * Z i ; a u m r w \ w m 0 e c p m w n ; t j z p a q m i & u & i ; j j v u m & n a u s m } } t r n j z i 0 w w ? u A s m r s m ; p w i a & ; o m ; o n /

1985 w i M . B . B . S b l & & j y ; a e m u 1986 - 87 t w i ; a q ; o a w o e 0 ; p X m e w i u i ; q i ; o a w o e t & m & w m 0 e x r ; a q m i c o n / 1987 c E p r 1990 t w i ; j j A v } } t q i j z i w y r a w m w i a q ; r l ; w m 0 e x r ; a q m i & i ; & r ; j y n e , ? r e j y n e , E i u & i j y n e , a & l w e ; p p r u E m r s m ; w i t a e l u m c o n / 2005 c E p w i a q ; w u o v (1) & e u e Med SC. (Paediatrics), M.Med SC. (Paediatrics) y g & * b u v n ; a u m i ; ? 2006 c E p w i Royal College of Physicians of Edinburgh r F R C P (E d i n) b l u v n ; a u m i ; & & c o n / p m a y a v m u E i t E p (20) c e t q u i j y w a e c & m r 2007 c E p w i j j u ; l u m a w m i y c w o } } 0 w w & n u x w a 0 c y g o n / j j u ; l u m a w m i y c w o } } 0 w w & n o n y x r q ; a & ; o m ; c a o m 0 w w & n j z p j y ; t r s ; o m ; p m a y q (v i , p m a y) & & c o n / 2009 c E p w i x w a 0 c a o m ' w , a j r m u 0 w w & n j j a ' g u w m a & a o ; E i r y e ; r } } o n v n ; t r s ; o m ; p m a y q (0 w w & n) & & c o n /

, c t c g v ; c i ; 0 w w & n (14) y ' E i 0 w w a y g i ; c s l y r s m ; t j z p j j y x r t y r u 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j o r m ; v n j y e 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j o * g & t v n 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j t j r l a w & w e m 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j q & m E v ; o m ; 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j a e n u r ; e z ; 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j 0 ; w 0 g ; t a w ; p r s m ; E i 0 w w r s m ; } } ? j j E v ; o m ; n m b u t a y : c e ; 0 w w r s m ; } } j j w w , t v i ; a & m i 0 w w p } } w u x w a 0 c j y ; j z p y g o n /

x l j y i a ' g u w m & (u a v ; t x ; u q & m 0 e) u a v m i t r n j z i o w p m a y r s m ; v n ; a & ; o m ; v u & y g o n / v i , y n m a y ; a q m i ; y g ; r s m ; ? " r a q m i ; y g ; r s m ; v n ; a & ; o m ; v u & y g o n / , c 2018 c E p t w u j j o m ; o } } p m t y j z i v i , p m a y b o m & y t w u q c ; j r i j c i ; c c & y g o n /

v u m & n a u s m o n p m a & ; q & m ? q & m 0 e ? a u s m i ; q & m b 0 r s m ; u c , c o n / , c t c g a q ; w u o v (1) & e u e ? u a v ; u e ; r m a & ; y n m X m e u y g a r m u (X m e r L ;) w m 0 e x r ; a q m i & i ; o w w o p m a y r s m ; u p 0 q u r j y w a & ; o m ; v u & y g o n /

3/ vum&naum\]]ajrrav{m uw vyjymaw}} 0w\wv v mcsu

2009cEp? puwibmvxw]]orm;vnjye}}0w\wrsm;wiyg0iaom 0w\w
wpv'jzpygon/

Zmwvr; tcsy

a'guwm0i;rsl;on r[moybUve pmar;yu on twu pwnpnL;jy; raysmEi
jzpc on/ aem uwpaeü orm;awmll u;Eitw vemrsm;u vnv nppaq;un^{1/2}&m
tya&0[er&aomou orm;awmll u;uar;jre&mr talumi;po&jy; tm;ay;uncon/
a'guwm0i;rsl;u tm;ay;unaom tx;uq&m0ellu;\ b0? a'guwm0i;rsl;u oilum;
ay;aom q&morm;w\ ll u;l;pm;&e;uec&yb0u o&&aom t c g tm;wu*P, pw?
ll u;l;pm;v pwrsm;wzm;zmy;vmy talumi;wua&zUxm;on/

&n&, csu

q&m0ew\ &i;E;ay;qyc&aom? ll u;l;pm;c&aom b0upmemem;vnEiap&Ei
b0wilulawvmaom tcutcrsm;u &iqiausmvm;jy; atmijrir&,Eiap&e
pwce tm; ay;vjci;jzpon/

Zmwvr;? Zmwaqm iEi umva'oaemuc zew;wijyy

]]ajrrav{m uwvyjymaw}}0w\wi Zmwvr;ut"urxm;b Zmwaqmiw
talumi;u 0;pm;ay;a&zUon/ xiyi b0taw;tjri 'óeoabmu tav;ay;xm;
onuawU&on/ pma&oon tqptyi;(6)czi upuspvpvpa&zUxm;on/ t"u
wijyvaom Zmwaqmirm a'guwm0i;rsl;[em;vn&aomvn; a'guwm0i;rsl;
\x;jcm;ay:vir Zmwuur&b a'guwm0i;rsl;utajccjy; tjcm;Zmwaqmirms;Ei
, 0wijyxm;aom Zmwvr;jzpon/ Zmwalumi;ajymorm pma&q&mjzpon/ Zmwvr;yg
Zmwaqm iEp0; tcsi;csi;wp0;Eiwp0; vijreou vupmajmyzi zew;xm;on/
a'guwm0i;rsl;u orm;awmll u;rsm;? tx;uq&m0ellu;rsm;Ei aw/qapjy; xowu
q&m0eb0wi pmar;y tllurlurusjy;r x;cleonorm;awm b0ola&muc&allumi;
tm;ay; ajymll um;on Zmwvr;jzpon/

pma&oon Zmwuu(1)ü a'guwm0i;rsl;\ taw;u azmjyxm;on/

]]vyjymqwm 0aumiujzpwmqayr, &&&v, v, jzp&wmr[wb;?
caumi&UcEmu,uu vyjymut'xuae ll u;l;pm;w;a0U&e;uejy;
xu&wm? tov w;xuawmr vyjym&u,u tutclaw jpcv u
ovusecjy; pilu,om;awmr vyjymu awmiyuav;cwjy; avxu
0yEiwm}}

]]t u:tclaw rpiawmawm iyucwv r&awm ajray:rmcseUcseUvr;
av(m uae&a&m/ t'gajrav(m u vyjym v ac:w, / ri;wv n; ajrav(m u
vyjym rjzpcsieU/

'pum;av;u a'guwm0i;rsk; , cau sm i;jy;wm o;Epau sm ont x
b0vr;ne aq miy' uav;wpct jzp pjrpm rwraeqyg/}} (pm-147)

[í Zmwvr;tpwi a'guwm0i;rsk; \ taw;rsm;u azmjyxm;on/

Zmwu u(2)wi orm;awm l u;Ei a'guwm0i;rsk;w/ Zmwaqmi(2)0; tci;ci;
wp0;Eiwp0; t jye t veajym q u y j z i z e w ; o n / a'guwm0i;rsk; \ t j z p t y ; u E i
cpm;rrsm;u azmjy&etwu aq;&wi orm;awm l u;Ei tw vemrsm;u v n v n
lun½&e Zmwu u q i o n / a'guwm0i;rsk; \ ejre; í rlaeao m r s u c w u o r m ; a w m l u ;
u j r i a w U & m r a r ; j r e ; p u m ; q o n / a'guwm0i;rsk; o n b l v e 0 i c i p m a r ; y u s & ; í
t y r a y ; m j z p & a l u m i ; l u m ; o & j y ; t m ; a y ; p u m ; a j y m l u m ; o n / x t c e ; w i a'guwm0i;rsk; \
q & m 0 e y o a o m p w " m w E i c , c s u u a z m j y o n /

xlaem u o r m ; a w m l u ; u v y p m u w j y m ; a v ; w p c u a y ; v u o n / Z m w a q m i
a'guwm0i;rsk; a&UoUquí av(m u vr;&rn Zmwvr;tom;tv mu xuwjym;
uav;Ei cswquum xuwjym;xuq&m0erm aq;ynmay;aqmi;yg;rsma&om; jci;jzi
xi&m;ausm l u m ; a o m a q ; w u o v (1) r q & m w p 0 ; j z p a l u m i ; a z m j y v u o n / o r m ; a w m
l u ; u x q & m 0 e \ p & u E i b 0 Z m w v r ; u -

]]t'g q&m oi , ci;y? ri;u t'bmomajzrm qawm q&mu oiay;vr&?
'vuvn; arwmeU ri;v q&m0euav;awvm tutnawmi;wi;
oiay;av&w, v lajymw, ? 'wpcg0icie;&i ri;vyouci wpv
avmu, vu? aq;&tyu q&muajymay;r, ? oUquvn; q&mpma&;
ay;vur, ? ovr;ne ay;vrr, }} (pm-149)

[ajymqon/ xZmwu uwi t&Zmwaqmi topwp0;u orm;awm l u; \ ajympum;
jzi rwquay;vuon/ xlyipma&oon q&m0eb0wi q&m0el u;rsm;u
q&m0eav;w\ b0vr;ajzmiwe;ap&e un;az;ry? apwemxm;luyqon q&m0e
vltzltpn;u 0e;&í Zmwu u q i x m ; o n /

tx;uq&m0el u;vr;neon tx;uq&m0eav; talumi;u v n ; -

]]trsm;l u; i , wmaygum? 'vuuaumi;om;u vuaxmu q&m0ejzpz
pmar;ya&m? bUvepmar;ya&m Eii jcm;om;zI pmar;yawa&m awmawm
toui, i, eU atmicwmu;? Eii jcm;om;awmigxuawmi en;en;
apmao;w, ? jy;awmiguvn; igyav? igtwe;rmawmi toulu;aewm}}
(pm-149)

[ajymqyg on/ xajympum; jz i t p y s; v u i j; t & Z m w a q m i j z p a o m o r m; a w m l u; \ b 0 Z m w a l u m i; E i p & u w u p m a & o u a y g i; p y w i j y v u o n/ p m a & o o n Z m w a q m i w \ u, w i a j y m p u m; u t o; c j y; Z m w v r; E i Z m w a q m i u w i j y o n/ o r m; a w m l u; u-

]] q & m u & a b m b 0 u a e 10 w e; a j z w m o; b m o m * P x; x u i j; a q; a u s m i; 0 i r w r a e v \ v l u; a w u v r a & t & j y e a y; x u c l u w m? ' g a w m i w y u o m x u c w m? r b u v, o r m; a w q a w m ' a q; a u s m i; p & w u r w w E i l u j y e b;? a w m a w m & e; u e c & w m a e m }} (pm-150)

[ajym on/ b Z m w u u ü q & m 0 e l u; \ b 0 Z m w v r; E i p & u u o u, w i a j y m p u m; j z i a z m j y c o n/ a j y m p u m; r s m; o n t y t v r & u p v p o y o n; j y; Z m w v r; E i Z m w a q m i t a l u m i; u a y: v i a p o n/

o r m; a w m l u; \ Z m w a l u m i; u l l u m; & a o m a ' g u w m 0 i; r s; \ c p m; c s u u-

]] u u o; a r; n i; r s m; y i x r y g \ / ' g w u, t j z p t y s u y g v m;? p w u; , 0 Z m w v r; r s m; x u o & a u m i; r s m; \ t m; r m e x u y i y í t r c e; & v y g w u m; / }} (pm-150)

[cpm; q i j c i [e w i j y x m; o n/ a q; w u o v w u & e y i r e n; & e; u e c & a o m o r m; a w m l u; o n, c t c g t * v e j y e a w m 0 i o r m; a w m l u; w p 0; j z p a e a y j y [a w; a w m o n/ p j y \ x u a o m q & m 0 e l u; \ j z p & y u w i j y c i; j z i a ' g u w m 0 i; r s; \ t m; i, p w u a j y m i; v o m; a p o n/ x o a w; a w m & m r-

]] u l e a w m v n; w p a e j z p & y g a p r, q & m? & i x u u w í q & m u u w a y; r y g a w m \ }} (pm-150)

[a & z u o n/ Z m w a q m i w \ a j y m p u m; r s m; w i Z l u; a o m q & m 0 e r s m; \ j z p & y r s m; u x n o i; a y j c i; j z i p m z w o w \ p w t m & u z r; p m; E i c o n/

Z m w u u (3) w i a ' g u w m 0 i; r s; o n o r m; a w m l u; \ p m w p a p m i j z i t x; u q & m 0 e u a v; x a & m u & y u i j y o n/ t x; u q & m 0 e u a v; \ t a j y m j z i-

]] r i; t c a j z w p m a r; y w e; u v i g v n; w p c g u j y; a e m u E p r a t m i w m? r i; t c v m w j r u y v m a j z w m y? a e m u y i; v t r s; p u s j y; r p m a r; y a w a t m i a t m i v m w m r i; u q i; b w u b l a w y j r i a e? i g u a u s m v e j y c i w, ? i g v n; o r e a u s m r m ' P & m a w e l j z p a e y g j y u m }} (pm-151)

[í a z m j y o n/ x a l u m i t x; u q & m 0 e u a v; p u m; t q; ü a ' g u w m 0 i; r s; \ p w ü t o 0 i v m y u-

]] b & m; a & o n a v m u p m a r; y a y g i; r s m; p m a t m i c o u v n; t l u r l u r u s j y; & e; u e c & o q y g v m; / o n v o m q v i a w m r r \ u s 1/2; r w p l u r u p m z u

p&myir&awm/ a'guwm0i;rsl;wpa, mu yc;xwi aE;q i;om;&avmu
atmi pwxwi vjc(om;c&ygon/}} (pm-152)

[wiyxm;ygon/

Zmwaqmiwp0; \ b0tawtluEicpm;csuu ajymjy;ontcgwi; Zmwaqmi
a'guwm0i;rsl; \ pwxü cetm;w;wuvmapon ZmwuujziZmwaqmi wpa, mu \
p&uzjz;w;wuvmy? ajymi;vvmyujyon/ Zmwvr;Ei Zmwaqmi½u zllz;
w;wuvmap&e yw0e;uivrtzt pñ;u o;xm;on/

Zmwuu(4)wi a'guwm0i;rsl;on aq;(2)rbUveyxrEpoiwe;om; tjzpEi
aq;&wm0ecsxm;jci;c&on/ xtcewi tx;uq&m0erlu;wp0;Ei qawU&on/
xq&m0eronb0rm pmar;yuz;allumi;ajymqozi a'guwm0i;rsl; tlo&y Zmwuu
u xyqiwiyon/ xZmwuuwi tajypum;jziom Zmwvr;u Zmw&ew;jri
, xm;onu awU&on/

Zmwuu(5)wi tx;uq&m0euav;Ei a'guwm0i;rsl;w jyevnawUqce;
jzpon/ xtcewi a'guwm0i;rsl;rm 0icipmar;yatmijriom;jy jzpon/Eiijcm;r
acwiyea&mu vmaom tx;uq&m0ellu;wpa, mu \ a [majmyuvma&mu em;axmijci;
jzpon/ xttx;uq&m0ellu; u, wiyib0rm us½;cjci;Ei &iqic&alumi;u
tx;uq&m0euav; \ ajypum;jzi azm u sl;jyxm;on/

Zmwor;yi;wir-

]]&ixwiaygyg;wu<upmjzi a'guwm0i;rsl;trjyevmcon/ aq;&0i;
xrtxu jcpn;&yPm;&wyirsm; tlu;wi v;vmys0aeluaom vyjym
uav;rsm;pmu awU&on/}}

]]caumitcxu &e;ue;w;a0uxuvmuon vyjymawayg/ &e;&i;
ue&i;u tutclrsm; pilu, crawm b, ajrrmav(mu lluvrrw;}}

(pm-155)

[tem;owxm;on/

Zmwvr;u tzi tywnnwiyom;Eion/ Zmwuu(1)wi Zmwaqmi taw;
jzipjy;? Zmwor;yi;wivn;]]ajrrav(mu uaomvyjym}}wuluní taw;0ivmyzi
Zmwor;on/ pma&o \ &n&, csuu xi&m;ay:viapaom Zmwor;jzpygon/
vum&nau sm on q&m0eb0o&yazm0w/rsm; a&om;&mü q&m0eb0u tm;ay;von
&n&, cursm;ygon/ q&m0eb0u em;vncpm;ww&e&n&, ygon/ p0wwivn;
tqyg&n&, csuu 0;wnom;ontwu q&m0ewi&oiaom pwaeoabmxm;?
lucirwu toay;on ajypum;rsm;u Zmwuuwi;wi xnoi;o;pxm;on/
q&m0eto;o;w \ b0tawtluay:wi cpm;csuc, csuu azmjyaeom ajypum;
rsm;jzi Zmwvr;u wnaqmuxm;on/ ajypum;rsm;jzi Zmwvr;u a&Uvsm;apon/

q&m0ewi; aw\l u/z;aom b0tcutcjy ó em t x;o;zipmar;yatmijriji;? u½;jci;
 jy ó emEi x m;&tyaomoabmxm; c , csm;u q&m0e(5)a , mucí pum;ajymapji;
 jzi Zmw½eujrirm;vmapon/

aemuc0e;usi

q&m0ew\ vyie;ciu aemucjy\ a&z\ xm;aomalumi q&m0ew\ vr
 yw0e;usi u jriaw\ci&on/ rnont&ya'o [twtur&nne;aomvn; &eue
 aq;wuov(2)0e;usiEi e , jr\wpcu aemucjy\ xm;on [, q&ygon/ q&m0e
 vrtz\ tpn; \ ynm&y0e; tay: jrwe;wez; xm;pwrsm;u xi [ya&jyEion/

x0w\ü t x;uq&m0eb0oa&muatmi jzwoe;&aom c&\ur;uom;&mü
 q&morm;rm; \ wnrwaz;uay;y? tw , pjy\ xuorm;upjy\&i; atmijriru& ,
 Eicywu wijyxm;ym Epouz , jzpon/ rrb0wi pjyc&aom q&m0el u;rm;u
 0w\wav; tjzp *Pjy\ í Zmwvr; qiom;ym aumi;reon/ 0w\wyoap&e tajympum;
 ajyrm;u t m;jy\ í upupvpvp wijyom;ym Epouz , jzpygon/

4/ vum&nausm\] t & , ajymi;Ev;om;}}0w\wav vmcsu

2011cEp? puwibmvxw Z0ur*Zi;wi azmjycaom 0w\wwpy'jzpjy;
]]Ev;om;nmbutay:ce;0w\wrsm;}}wi yg&on/

Zmwvr; t u0;

a0rmEiatmi0;on rau;aq;wuovwi ynmoilum;aeaom aq;ausmi;om;
 cpopwjzpon/ atmi0;on &y&nvn;acsmarmjy; rbrsm;rm yorbur cr;om
 <u , 0orm;jzpon/ olaom a0rmoi , csi;rm;u atmi0;Eioabmrwac/ atmi0; \
 pw"mw ao;orralumijzpon/ olaoma0rmacgi;ilíomcccon/ atmi0;u tq
 to , rjzwcac/ aq;wuovaemuquwpmar;yu a0rmxyru½;aom tcgwi
 tlop&mjzp&ywpc \u\aw\vu&on/ atmi0;on xbmom&yu tm;en; aomvn;
]]te;uyoiwe;}} wwwqwwuijy; atmijriom;ji;jzpon/ a0rmurzi [vn;
 rajymb v\0u xm;cjci;jzpon/ a0rm tlopwEitw atmi0;utwu;o?
 wpu , aumi;orm; tjzp pypumvr;ccygon/

a'guwma0rmwpa , mu &r;jyne , pyjr\wpr\ü wmoexr;aqmip0 oemjy
 q&mree;qe&r;Ei &i;E;ur;0icon/ &i;E;&mr vlu;rbw pp0xm;aom urPyi&i
 ur\;nelEi vuxy&rn tallumi;? tvyrEwxuapvon ur\;neoabmxm;wu
 re;rci;zi [ron/ q&m0eb0u jrwe;aomvn; q&m0eb0Ei quvu &ywnae&
 rn taetxm;u awa0pwjzprallumi; ajymqcon/ wpaewi ta&ay;aq;utzuEi

u*l*i;wbuo vuyg&etajctaejzpay:cygon/ obm0ab;'Poi vrm;u aq;u
o&ejzpon/ a'guwma0rm vuyg&e pwnpaecaomallumi oemjy/q&m r ee;qe&r;u
acsmarm t m;ay;aec&on/

xa'ooa&maomtcg obm0ab;'Poi vrm;uu o&i; 0;aEmux
iuzm;y;0ijy; owvpaeaom wue, q&m0euav;wp0;u awlvu&on/ a0rm
tlo0r;en;&onrm xoon a'guwmatmi0; jzpaeaomalumiyi/ twu;í
vr;ccaom cpouijeawlcsewi trm;twu touay;unaeonowp0; jzpaey?
rrrmr cpoa[mi;Ei qeui buo om;raeo jzpaeyuo;oyrjy; qijcipw0i vmy?
atmi0;u jypuoay;aywji t q;owxm;on/

&n&, cu

vi, q&m0ew\ ay;qy&on b0u pmempwji a&zlwijxm;onu awl&
on/ jzwoe;au smjzwc&on b0yw0e;usi t ajct aet &y&alum i Ev;om;
cpm;rw/ ajymi;vvmluy? &iu s vmluyu azm u s; jyv on/

Zmwvr;Ei Zmwaqmizew;wijyy

x0wu tqptuel(12)ccí wijxm;on/Zmwuu (1)wi-

]]Ev;om;on t&, a&uwwygovm;/ a&uonqv\ia&m b, t&,
a&uwwygoen;/ t&, a&m vewwygovm;/ t'gua&m b, t&,
rmygv/ t&, ra&uao;aom Ev;om;u t&, ra&uao;[&yr
Eiavmuatmijriom? xiom&wwygovm;/ t&, veom;on
Ev;om;ua&m/}} (pm-160)

[aom tar;pum;wji azmjyxm;on/ xtar;\taizu tq;owtyi;(12)wi
rmomx&Zm\ tq trepum;jzi tajzxwyom;on/

Zmwuu(2)wi a'guwma0rmEi oemjy/q&mree;qe&r;w t jyet ve ajypum;
jzi &r;jyne, py r, qia'owi wm0eusaom t ajct aejzi tpy<;xm;on/

Zmwuu(3)wi Zmwaqmia'guwma0rmEi ee;qe&r;w t jyet veajym pum;jzi
a'guwma0rm\ awa0pwu vpjyxm;on/

]]owi;u\wavmu vuxyzu pp0xm;jy;om;yg/ tcu tvyxuzy
wpcsev;ajymaev}}

]]ou q&m0er [wb;vm;}}

]]r [wb;/ ouurPyi&iwpa, muyg/ a0rmxu v n; ajcmuEp
avmulu;w, ? ouq&m0eru, w, qw *Pom vciwm? q&m0e

wpá, mu aq; uae v | trax miw m0 evp [i; awm v n; o n; rcEiw
v p m; r s; a y g / o u , & i c r; c r; o m o m a e & r , q w m a v ; w p c e
awm v n; i g; E p v; v; y i y i y e; y e; a v v m x m; w a q; y n m u p e | v w & r m
E a j r m p & m r [w v m; / } }
(pm-162)

[a o m p u m; j z i v n; a u m i; ?

] t r e t w i; a j m & & i t p r & , ? a 0 r m u , w i u v n; ' q & m 0 e b 0 e u
q u & y w n & r m a w a 0 a e w m } }

] t v a w m v y w m r w p v & a o; } }

] [w y g w , t p r & , ? r a u; r m a q; a u s m i; w u w e; u v n; r a 0; z a 0; e
t p m; q i; & ? t a e q i; & i g; E p a e c w m y / t c q & m 0 e j z p a w m v n; r a 0; z a 0;
e u u , x r i; u , c u ? u , t 0 w u , a v (m o u w & , w q & m 0 e
r [w w o i , c i; a w j r u u; j y l u; a w r m u m; t a u m i; p m; u; a w p; ?
a & m y i; p i w m a w y w ? t r a z m a w c u j y i w a y; w m x i p m; t o v
v y a e u w m a w & i i g v n; t o v a e E i v; u o m; e u ' b 0 u b m v l a & ; r w m
y g v r a w; a e r w , a v } }
(pm-163)

[a o m t j y e t v e a j y m p u m; w j z i Z m w a q m i a 0 r m \ q & m 0 e b 0 t a y: a w a 0 p w u
j y v u o n / w p q u w n; r m y i e e; q e & e; u a ' g u w m r m a u s m i; w e; u c p o r & c b;
v m; [a o m t a r; t a y:-

] a 0 r m a c g i; c g [e j y i l y; r z u c e... a t m i 0; u o m; o w & r o n / o w &
o n E i t u r o r o m u w l y; o m; j z p o m; o n /

& i u e e e i o n / a t m i 0; & , e i a v } } (pm-163)

Z m w a q m i t a w; u a z m j y o n / e e; q e & e; \ t a r; p u m; a l l u m i a t m i 0; E i t w t w w u
o w & o m; [e Z m w u u q i v u o n /

Z m w u u (4) w i Z m w a q m i a t m i 0; E i a 0 r m w \ a q; a u s m i; o m; b 0 t c p
Z m w v r; u a z m u s; x m; o n / E p 0; p v; c r; o m u , 0 o r s m; j z p l u a o m v n; a 0 r m \
o i , c i; r s m; u a t m i 0; E i o a b m r w a y / t " u t a l u m i; r a t m i 0; \ t w p w a l u m i y i
j z p y u t j c m; Z m w a q m i \ t a j y m j z i-

] o u , o y t j r n m a e ? 0; p m; a y; a e w m ? r e; u a v; a w x u a w m i q; a o;
w , ? t o v a u m i r s; o m; , & i v i r , m; E p a , m u p m; z [i; w p w; y
& & i e i u x r i; c s n; p m; & r m a o c s m w , / } }
(pm-164)

[í z l q x m; o n /

Z m w u u (5) w i Z m w a q m i a 0 r m \ p w t a j y m i; t v u j y o m; o n / c p v (i
a j y m i; v v m v r r n [o n; c c a o m Z m w a q m i a 0 r m \ p w t a j y m i; t v u w i j y & e j y ó e m

wpcuzew;um &iqiapaom tyi;jzpon/ a0rm on ww, trbbt up twe;wi
pma;yu aem uquwpmar;yyg u^{3/2};c&jci;jzpon/ atmi0;uawm]te;uy oiwe;}
wpcalumi atmi jriom;con/ xoiwe;u a0rmurajymb atmi0;om wua&muc
ontay: a0rmpwq;on/ xjy ó emu Zmwaqmi(2)0; tjet veajympum;zi
Zmw&ejri x;on/

]]r[wb; a0rmr[wb;? vujynaewm [aumiawu vn; igu
b, orrajym&b;? eiuygrajym&b;v ajymv}}

]]bmajymw, }}

]][aumiawu vijn&it'twi; ajymrb? bmrrix;qe;b;/ 'gayr
eiae&mr igq&i igygrwubvnjyevmr, qwm eiob;vm;/}}

]]b,aw;rv? eiu igueiugcspovr rcpbb, ourv eitov
cprmr[wb;? u, u, u, ycpwaumi tworm;? vawueiel
Ei;Ei;aw;awm eitovb, aw;wwygrv}}

]]a0rm}}

]]eibmrrajymel? igajymr, ? eivvr<;u cpcrwm ig&U trm; eiruEmu
igwpou v;riu nyg&apelawm}} (pm-167)

[aom tajympum;wjzpon/ xtce;wi Zmwaqmiatmi0;\ twpwuazmu<;
xm;Eily; twpwu;rm;ru rEplrUaom Zmwaqmia0rm \ p^{1/2}u u vn;azmu<;
xm;Eion/

Zmwuu(6)wi atmi0;\ twpwalumi a0rmEi vr;cc&onu azmjyxm;on/
Zmwaqmiw\ tajympum;zi tav;ay;a&zUxm;onu awUEion/

Zmwuu (7)wi aq;wuov(2)o atmi0;ajymi;a&Uom;yji Zmwaqmi(2)0; u
tquto, jzwvuon/ twwZmwvr;u tq;owvuon tce;jzpon/

Zmwuu (8)wiyplyeZmwvr;u jyevncwquon/ 0wa&oon a'guwm
a0rmEi oemjy/q&mr ee;qe&r;w ta&ay;aq;utzUEi u<i;wbuo vu&rn
tajctaeji t vntajymi;wpcu zew;vuon/ ponu-

]]'&ux a0rm tr<;om;vuvmzU&w, tpree;&U? vrmly;awm ivsi
vyxm;w a'oqawm aea&xia&u vn; awmawmuorm b, E&u
llumrvn; wwusurajym}}

]]e;av;yg a'guwm&, ? vr;wc<Uuyuom;vUom ziom;wm? wue,
q&m0eq&i wue, aq;1/2awmi jyera&mub;w? vawur<sm; vr;u
raumi;qawm awmiay:&mrmb aomiwi aewmw}} (pm-168)

[aom Zmwaqmi a'guwma0rmEi oemiy/q&mr ee;qe&e;w\ ajympum;w\jzi
a&z\xm;on/ iviab;'Poia'owi aexi&rnup;&raom a'guwma0rm \
pwtaetxm;Ei wue, q&m0eqo\ tyiye;c? tepemcpwu wppe;wpp vp[
xm;jy; rorontm;jy\ijyvuo n/

Zmwuu(9)wi ue;rma&0exr;wEi 'w, jyne, 0;p;rl;w tar; tajzy [e
jyuujzi wue, q&m0e \ u, u\;pe\ tepemcpwu jyvuo n/

Zmwuu(10)wi wue, q&m0e \ p;&r&on tajctaeu azmjyvuo n/

]] [, tpree;iaewmv; / bmjzpv\

oem;ve;v\ a'guwm&, ? wue, q&m0eav;u owlac:c\vm\ly}}

]] [jyervmb;q\y; yawvyaewor [wvm; tcawmv\vm\lyvm; /}}

]]v\vmwvr [wb; a'guwm&, owlpy;ygvwm? xr;ac:&w, ?
0;aEmux iuzsm;y;0iaelyw}} (pm-170)

[aomt\jzi wue, q&m0euav; touab;Ei\awl\ae&aom taetxm;u azmjy
v\ly; a'guwma0rmEi ee;qe&e;w\aq;½o\ vuom;yjzizyon/

Zmwuu(11)wi wue, q&m0eon rnorn0gjzpalumi; jryuuu azmvu
on/

]]Ev;ao;w tm;v;at;c&yweom;on/

atmi0;

atmi0;r atmi0; tpp/

rwqwuip, A&y/ qyi&nEi jzpaeaomvn; jzljzLacsmacsm ruEm
uav;u ajymi;rom;yg/ a0rmuawm vnrlun/

b, olurv; r\unyg/}} (pm-171)

]]ruv;u tyiom;Ei ruEmuuu alumiawmiawmi lunaeon/
vuyuvu/ avjeywqaeov wpqqtou;Ei tou½aeon/
aocmygon ovr&}} (pm-171)

[ívn;aumi;

]]a0rm [eraqmiEiawmb cwiwpzujcr; cr&aom\ur;jyia;wi
';axmuxicvuo n/ ru&nwu awawu;vmon/ atmi0; \
vuwpzuu uiívygon/}} (pm-171)

[ívn;aumi;

u, u_{sl};pelaom wue, q&m0eon atmi0;jzpaumi;o&yEi a0rm \, lu_k;
r&aom pwcpm;ru jyvuaom jyuujzpon/

xjyi Zmwaqmia0rm \ &iwi;pum;jzi-

]]twoylu;wmu on;rcEiv uieraumci;cwcspoyg/ twoylu;
o b, vvyjy; trsm;twutouyay;unw vpm;r_{sl};jzpom;&wmv?
oto vvr_{sl};jzpaeyq&ia&m uerbmvlocir&cwmv/ jy;awmbmv
oe_lqeu;ibu t&yu uiero;m;aer&wmv}} (pm-172)

[í ar;ce;xwvuon/ a'guwma0rm \ pwtajymi;t vjyu utjzp a0rmu, pm;
vpm;vay;aomvn; a'guwma0rmjyervuawmb atmi0;uijp&e useacyzi
jyvuaon/ cpoEp0; jyevnqawl&yu &ieip&mjzi azmjyvuon/ cspci;arwm \
pr;yum;jzi pwcpm;cu? Ev;om; wu jy/jyip&i Eipr;&yu azmxwv [e&on/
0wia&oon o \c, cuu Zmwaqmiatmi0; \ pwEv;om; tajymi; t v? a0rm \
pw? Ev;om; tajymi; t vwjzi orarUE;npm jyom;on [, qygon/

t q;yi;(12)wi-

]]ulerw [m t velu;rm;wt vyawu vyEipr;r&uygb;/ ao;i, w
t vyuav;awuy lu;rm;wEv;om;e_l vyaelluwmyg/}} (rmomx&Zm)
(pm-173)

[t q;owxm;on/ 0wtziwipxm;aom tar;pum;u 0wtq;witajay;
vuon/ 0wwaomvn; &nvsm;aom taw;puay;aom 0w/wwpy' [o;oyr
ygon/

]]t&, ajymi;Ev;om;}}0wwwi aemuc0e;usitjzp &r;jyne, py r, qiEi
u_{sl};wa'ou aemucjya&zuxm;on/ twwZmwvr;tyi;wi rau;r_lUEi rau;
aq;wuov0e;uiu aemucjyxm;onu aw_l&on/ a'guwma0rm \ pw
tajymi;t vujy&mwi om;vm&ecucon &r;jyne, py r, qia'o aemuc
0e;uiua&c_s, ru yy;rtm;rsm;pm &&onuaw_l&ygon/ olaom tEpwlc, re;r
raw_l&ay/ Oyrmtm;jzi xa'o&wi;&i;om;w \ aeyxiyajymqyu tav;ay;xm;ci;
r_{sl};raw_l&yg/ oemjyq&mr ee;qe&r;Ei ajymqywwi &r;wi;&i;om;w \ cy00
ajymon avor_{sl};rlum;&jci;wjzpygon/

Zmwaqmia'guwmatmi0; \ pwtajymi;t vujy&mwi aemuc0e;usiajymi;v
ru axmuuay;onu aw_lEiygon/ aq;wuovau_{smi}; om;b0Eirw awmb
wm0eus&m &r;jyne, u_{sl};wa'oa&mu q&m0eb0wi pwcpm;cu tajymi;t vu
tjcm;0e;& ZmwaqmiwEi aemucjyíjyom;on/ rw;wu rz_lzl; ao;aom a'oa&mu
q&m0e \ pwtajymi;t vu jyom;Eion/ olaomaemuc0e;ui t z_luyí
tav;ay;azmu_{sl};Eiygu Zmwaqmiw \ p¹/₂urm yrí¹/₂yv;uvmEion [, qygon/

jclio;oycu

0w\wrs;on pma&ow\ b0tawtluur;sm;r&&vmaom jzp&ywpc? taw;
tjriwpcu pmzwowvucvmatmi pma&o\pwu;jzi zew;wiyxm;aom
tEynmypn;jzpygon/ tEynmypn;u zew;&mwivn; pma&oon tjc;o
wxu yítm&p;pur&ygon/ avmutrixujru&ygon/ avmutjri xujrur
&rom 0w\&n&,csuon us,jyeu½i;jy; pmzwotr;sm;pu tu;sl;jyEirn
jzpygon/

vum&nau;sm on o0w\wrs; \ uelur;ypn;u o\ b0yw0e;u;ir &maz
&&c[ewon/ o\ tawtluu cpm;½rijy; 0w\wtoizew;&mü zew;r tww
ynm onwpy'Ei wpy'rwnyg/ ,cavvmwiyxm;aom]ajrrav(muw vyjym)}
0w\wwi pma&oon tc;ptvr;Zmwuur;sm; rxnoi;b q&m0ewp0;u A[jyí
xorwpqi q&m0ers;tm; x;cleajymiajrmuaom aq;ynm&iwp0; jzpvmatmi
pw"mw\ucirvtyyu vr;jyxm;ji;jzpon/ y*vuzmwqmi a'guwm0i;rsl;
uazmjyxm;aomvn; oona,b,soabmolaqmion Zmwqmi;jzpon/ Zmwvr;
qiwijy&mwi Zmwqmito;o;u Zmwallumi;u ajymom;on en;uo;xm;ygon/
Zmwqmi a'guwm0i;rsl;lpwu jriwiay;ly; tq;wittm;&aom Zmwqmi;jz
om;ap&e ajympum;rm;jzi zew;xm;on/ xozew;&mwi vi,q&m0ers; \
pjy\tm;xm;&mjzpaom tx;uq&m0ers;u trnrazmb Zmwvr;wiZmwjzn
Zmwqmir;sm;tjzp xnoi;zew;xm;on/

]t&,ajymi;Ev;om;}} 0w\wwiavmuü vwpa,mu\pwaeoabmxm;u
tallumi;t&m wpcwn;tay:ü lluníq;jzwc;urc;oi? vontout&,
tawtluut& Ev;om;ajymi;vwwon/ tjrius0;ajrmi;aom twEv;om;on
&ius;uont&, a&muvmuomtcg jriirway;qyaom Ev;om;jzpvmyu cpo
Ep0;\tc;pzmwvr;jzi &ieiz,wiyxm;on/ xZmwvr;uwijy&mwi Zmwqmi
Ep0;\Ev;om;cpm;ru tajctaeEi tceumvuvuí ajymi;vwwonen;u
o;on/ twlu;o[y&owuem;vnxm;o a'guwmatmi0;\ Ev;om;on
touuyipe0on rejrwao Ev;om;tjzpaymi;vom;on/ twlu;ocpou
re;w;puqwum cpo;tjzpryi pevwc;ao a'guwma0rm\ Ev;om;on
e,pya'owi wm0eusaomtcg rru,u;sl;twuom llunwwaom Ev;om;
toiajymi;vom;on/ taw;tjrix;jcm;aom 0w\wwpy'jzpygon/

e*;

0w\won &opmaytzwpr\;jzpjy; v\pwv\Ev;om;u tarmirtvi;o
 jy\jyiajym;v&mwi xujruaompayvueuwpcjzpygon/ 0w\la&;or\sm;onvn;
 rrwb0taw\|t\|u? taw;tjr\ir\sm;u pmzwoEpouap&etwu zew;r\|twwynm
 tr\sl;r\sl;u to;jy\|u&ygon/ vum&nausmuo rsuarmuacw0w\w a&z\|or\sm;on
 talumi;t&mtr\sl;r\sl;uwijy&mü pmzwow\|t;m; wpcEiwpcrxyon en;pep
 tr\sl;r\sl;o;pí 0w\|tq;wiEpoujci;? b0to&jci;qon tu\sl;w&m;r\sm;u &&atmi
 wijyxm;onu aw\|ygon/ 0w\wr\sm;wi to;jy\|aom wp0;Eiwp0;rwon
 zew;ren;pepr\sm;u quvuavvmoiygon/

u;r;u;pm&i;

ausmatmi/ (2006)/ *E0iwpq ,? &eue? &mjynpm tywu/
 ciri? armi? ("EjzL)/ (2004)? *pum;ajyoabmw&m; pum;ajytwwynm* (pwwt\ur)? &eue?
 jreEmpm tywu/
 wuw;/ (1965)/ urmausm0w\wr\sm;Ei wuw; \&i;jycu? &eue? y*pm tywu/
 r;ajr? r/ (2007)/ *0w\woabmw&m;? 0w\wzew;a&;om;r twwynm* p;r;vipmay? &eue/
 ri; , a0Ei tr\sm;/ (1979)/
 0w\w \ t*g&yrm;? 0w\wpmwr;r\sm;(yxrw)/ &eue? pmayArmeyEywul
 r\sl;ri;? 0;/ (ygarmu)/ 1960/ *ciEi; , / lal u;r&y o/* &eue? pponawm pmay/
 vum&nausm? (2009)/ orm;vnjye 0w\wr\sm;? &eue? ee;a'0pmay/
 vum&nausm? (2011)/ *Ev;om;nmbu\|tay:ce; 0w\wr\sm;?* &eue? ee;a'0pmay/
 atmivi;? (1972)/ r [mpme'ge;? &eue? pmayaygi;u;pmp0/

tara&pum;aqmi;yg;rsm;r vxa': trm\avo
ciEi;atmi^Ä

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on jrermpaye, y, acwpum;ajyu@wiyg0iaom tara&pum;
aqmi;yg;rsm;r vxa': trm\avou avvmazmxwxaom pmwr;jzpygon/
&n&, curm pmayrsm;ravoon pmq\apwemu xi[yapalumi; azmxw
wijyvci;jzpygon/ tavvmctjzp vxa': trm\ tara&pum;aqmi;yg;rsm;
yxrwr aqmiyg;(6)y'uavvmwijyxm;yg on/ avvmwij&mw i pmay
a&[eqi&men;emrsm;u taiccícsO;uy avvmwijyxm;yg on/ ppmwr;wi
vxa': trm\ avorwpqi trs;cppw? ZmwrmepwEi apwemwu
awl&&yg on/ ppmwr;on vxa': trm\ pmaya&[ersm;u avvmorsm;
twu taxmutu jyEirn jzpygon/

aomcupum;v;rsm; - avo? oum? £aE? wez;? jrerm, Oau;r/

e'ge;

bmompum;rsm;wi avoonta&yg on/ tajymbompum;üvn;aumi;? ta&
bmompum;üvn;aumi; avoonta&yg on/ avouvuí teut"ym, ajymi;vap
on/ ajymqa&om;o\ apwemuxi[yapygon/ avorwpqi pma&o\pwu
ojriEiaomalumiavou oawoejy&e pw0ipm;&jci;jzpygon/ xlaumi vx
a': trm\ tara&pum;aqmi;yg;rsm;? yxrwrjrerm trs;or;i, rsm;\ taetxiEi
qiaom aqmi;yg;(6)y'u a&cs, íwijyxm;yg on/ baqmi;yg;rsm;on 1983 r 1997
twi;a&om;caom aqmi;yg;rsm;jzpygon/

1/ avo

avo [aoma0g [m&Eipyv:O;í jrerm t b"mewi -

avo^avoe^e-1? ajymqaom toaetoxm;/

[ziqxm;yg on/

pum;ajyoabmw&m;? pum;ajytwwynmwi

pum;ajym&mw i ajymoqvont"ym, on oajym onpum;v;? Ogursm;
ay:wionru ajym onto taetxm;ay:wivn;rsm;pm rwnae
wwyg on/ xtotaetxm;u [avo} [ac:yg on/ (ciri? 282)

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pmXme? &wemywuov/

[vn;aumi;? a&; [eynme'ge;wi

pum;ajym&mwiajym oqvaomt"ym, u ajym onpum;v;rm;? y'rm;?
 Ogu;rm;uomru totaetxm;uvm; azmjyaeon/ avoqonrm
 xtotaetxm;u qvjci;jzpon/ (ciri? 235)

[vn;aumi;qxm;ygon/ xlyitalumi;t&may: pma&;o? pum;ajym o\oabmxm;
 azmjycu [vn; qxm;ygon/

xlaumiavoqonrm ajymo? a&;ou tajymc? ta&;ctaumi;t&mEi em o?
 zwo tay:xm;&aom oabmxm;? apwem [qEiygon/

avoontajymbompum;ü rnoaomavooabmxm;jzpalumi; lum;oEion/
 oaoim ta&;bompum;wir pma&;uir;uiojzpygu pum;v;a&;c, y? tptp0u; y?
 pn;0g;jzwawmuyt& pma&;o\avooabmxm;u o&Eiygon/ ta&;bompum;ü
 pma&;o\avoon pmzwo tay:wivn;aumi;? talumi;t&may:wivu í
 vn;aumi; oomatmiazmyav&ygon/ tara&;pum; aqmi;yg;rm;wi avorrm;rwpqi
 vxa':trm\ talumi;t&mEi pmzwo tay:xm;aom oabmxm;rm;ay:viaealumi;
 awl&&ygon/

2/ jrermre;uav;rm;\ taetxiEiqiaomavo

vxa':trm\ tara&;pum;aqmi;yg;rm;on aemivmaemuom;wtz rwoim;
 vuenz,? A[owjzpz,rm;jzi jynvr;aeaygon/ xaqmi;yg;rm;pmxr yxrwwi
 yg0iaom]or;re;uav;?]obionEit&yoyim;&w,? wAalumjim)?]tom;rawm
 wpvr;? tpm;rawmwpvw?]re;uav;qwm)?]re;rw£a'E)?]acwyv\ 'twi;lunae
 lurvm; } [aomaqmi;yg;(6)y'r vxa':trm\ avooabmxm;rm;u avvmwiyxm;
 ygon/ ,aeacwon acwrw;wuly; urm;u;on &m;u;uo u;0;vmljzpygon/
 xtcg,0au;rrrm; wpEiirwpEii u;pua&m u&um twrittwoivmluygon/
 jrerm,0au;rEi rtypyaom ,0au;rrrm; vr;r;vm í jrermre;uav;i,rm;twu
 p;&rz,tajctaeu jriawlae&ygon/ xlaumiyi vxa':trm\ tara&;pum;
 aqmi;yg;rm;r jrermre;uav;rm;Ei qiaom aqmi;yg;rm;u a&;c, wiy&jci; jzpygon/

q&mru;vxa':trmon tajrmtjri;u;o? acwa&u u u íojrio? trs;rm;
 Zmwrm;u;o? wi;jynEivr; w;wuapvaomapwemiyi;jyo? rs;cppma&;q&mru;
 jzpalumi; tara&;pum; aqmi;yg;rm;ro&&ygon/ vxa':trm\ tara&;pum;
 yxrwwi jrermre;uav;i,rm;Eiqiaom aqmi;yg;wpy'jzpon]or;re;uav; }
 aqmi;yg;wi jrermre;uav;rm; a&;tp0tquuyi xe;or;cluaom ui0woumr;
 &alumi;u

]]qvwu rvwvywoeltraxmirzu&b;? 'g [mvwi; apmipn;&w
vU0w&m;/ ly;awm traxmion b0ra&murci; vci;&i;E;cirjy&b;/
'g [mtr&:aumi;om; or;wi;&Uui0wy/](pm-48)

[qxm;on/ pwi]traxmirzu&b;?]vci;&i;E;cirjy&b;} [aom wm;jrpon
to;rm;jziwijyxm;&m wi;rmjywom;aom avoyijzpygon/ pavot&jrermtr&:or;
i , rsm; tay:p;&raom? tp0tvmaumi;caom jrerm , 0aus;r yup;wraumom;rnu
p;&raom oabmxm;wu awjri&ygon/ quvuí a&tp0tquuyi jrerm
ui0wrsm;jzi aexivmcluyu

]'g [mtr&:aumi;om;or;wi; &Uui0wy/ 'gu wjrerm tr&:or;awu
oyu tav;teuxm;ygw, / b , txvq&i re;rw£aEa&ay;v/r&w/
]]wu t&uevvywma[? touevvywmr[wb;}} xatni alunm
wwluw , /}(pm 48)

[qxm;yg on/ jrermre;uav;rm; xe;or;usiBucluaom ui0woumtwu *P , ae
aom? aueyaeaomavo [q&ygrn/ pavorjrerm , 0aus;ru *P , aeaom oabmxm;
rmay:vivm&ygon/

wpze w;wuajymi;vaeaom acwu;wi , ciuxe;or;vmcaom , 0aus;r
"avrsm;aysmuu , vm;onu awjrilum;o&aomtcgwi

]um&m tau or;wtcer awmiay:wulu0awvn;ygw, v owi;ay;
woi , u ajymao;&U/ alom 'u? 'u/ tarwrEav;uvn; w , ajymi;v
aewmu; /} (pm-49)

[qxm;&m]allom 'u 'u/ tarwrEav;uvn; w , ajymi;vaewmu;}} [aomtajym
pum;rm;u , cirEav;Eirwalumi; oomapygon/ 0r;en; , bu;r& jzpaemaomavo
tjzpo&&ygon/

xaemu jrermvUtaqmutt"avx;prsm; yup; , , i;vmjci;u

]tarw EpawaxmiEicy; vtququu xe;or;cw tarw
, 0aus;raw? cv , , i;vm&i vuyulunraeluyge/ 0i;ly;xe;uyg0;v
taru ajymcsi vw , /}(pm-49)

[azmijy&mwuwe;onavo? awmi;yew;v%onavou llum;a , mi vmapygon/ p
aqmi;yg;r]tarw , 0aus;raw}} [aomavot& q&mriu;vxa':trm\ jrerm , 0aus;r
"avx;pu *P , ae[e?]vuyulunraeluyge/ 0i;ly;xe;uyg0;v taruajymcsi
vw , }} [aomtajymrm;t& jrermtr&:or; i , rsm;twu p;&raeaomavorrm;u
o&vm&ygon/ polaomavorrm;r vxa':trm\ tr&:rmeZmwrmEiapwemu av;pm;
z , ojri&ygon/ , aeacwwiyí 0i;0e;xe;or;&evtyvmijzpygon/

quvuí]obione t&youijm;w,? wAalumi] [aom aqmi;yg;wi
re;uav;i,rsm; \ ui0wqi&mrm;u tx;tav;ay;wiy xm;yg on/ re;uav;i,
rsm; on apmixe; oiaom ui0wu rjzpraeapmixe; oiaumi;u

]wre;rawrm re;rriqly;apmipn;&r, upaw&w, / 'txrm ta&
t'u;q;upuawm re;r [mre;r£aEu apmipn;&rayg/ (pm-56)

[rjzpraevuem&r njzpalumi; avouazmijaeygon/

xlyi alumi;ri;or;? re;uav;rsm;Ei pyv0;ívn; rr\£aEoumurib
airuEmunly; alumi;vmonuawl&yg on/ xalumi

]tarwor;av;aw wcsUalumi;may;wmu en;en;rsm; tvyuovm;v/
wrm jrermre;uav;qwm yuqay;ci;&i bñjzpjzpvjywyv orsm;
xirmp;v/ taru aym&wmyg/ (pm-56)

[qxm;&m]tarwor;av;aw? en;en;rsm; tvyuovm;v? jrermre;uav;qwm
yuqay;ci;&i bñjzpjzpvjywyv orsm;xirmp;v? tarajm&wmyg} [aom tajm
pum;rsm;u rrv&mu avat;jzipn;½;aeaom avojzply;? tarwpa, muu ab;rmxium
q;roeoiaeon tvm; xirw&yg on/ alumi;ri;or;rsm; alumi;maeaom yye;Ei?
jrermre;uav;rsm;u vyie;&irsm; aiay;ly; £aEoumyuatmi o½yaqmicici;ci;tay:
rauey rEpouaom avo? rcr&yEijzpaeaom avo oabmxm;u awljri&yg on/

pavor q&mri;u; \ r;c;ppwEiapwemu awljri&yg on/ q&mri;u; \ oway;
wm;jrpru wprst;om;v; yg0ixe;or;&e vityvygon/

xlaemuquvuí jrermre;uav;rsm; \ £aEu

]wjrermre;rawrm re;r£aEqwm&w, aem/ t'ga&ay;vn;r&b;?
bmay;vrr&b;qwmrst; taru jzpapcsiwm/ (pm-56)

[qxm;&m taetxiEipyv0;í wuwe;oway;ci;u wi;rmjywom;aom avojzi
wijyxm;yg on/ pwi]a&ay;vn;r&b;? bmay;vrr&b;} [aom tajmpum;rsm;u
jrermre;uav;rsm;u £aEoum&aom tz;were;uav;rsm; jzpapvaom apwemuojri
vmapygon/

]tom;rawmwpvr;? tpm;rawmwpvw} [aom aqmi;yg;wi vn; re;uav;rsm;
vwvyciu to;crrm;&e oway;xm;alumi;o&&yg on/ aqmi;yg;wi acwre;uav;
rsm; vwvyci&&xm;lyu

]cacwrmawm re;uav;awu pub;vn;p;w,? armawmqiu, vn;
p;w,? armawmum;vn; armi;uw, / taru tm;u;vuwm? Or;om
vuwm? c&wiw, r [wvm;/ (pm-83)

[í ypw0gu:rm;jziwiyxm;&m , cacwre;uav;rm;vwvyr&vmy? u ,&nu ,ao;
xujruvmyrm;twu 0r;ompw? lunE;pwrsm;jzi t m;&wuupm *P ,rq;jzpaecom
avoay:viaeygon/ p o l] taru t m;u:vuw m 0r;omvuw m} [aomavorm;t &
jrermre;uav;rm; pr;aqmiEi&n&ru *P , 0r;ajrmuaom oabmxm;u ojrivm&yg
on/

wpzevwvyciu t u s ;&atmi t o;cwwoialum i;u v n;

]t vwvyciqwmeywou vlawm t veaum i;w tci t vr;wpcu
u , uvrmpm t o;cwwzvw , / re;uav; [m rru , u rxe;or;
wwbvwvypm om;vmvnywaer&i wpaeaerm trm;t , i;awe
B u law&www , / 'vuyvm;q&i wpcsluom trm;t , i;u jyiyiv/u
r&Eiawmb u , b0twu ig;yg;armu&awm wtrm;t , i;/ (pm-83)

[í re;uav;rm; vwvyciu rm; , i;pm t o;cgyu B u;rm;aom trm;t , i;rm; alumi
'ua&muwyyu t u s ;oitalumi;oiwiyxm;&m p;&raomavoyi jzpygon/
ajr;t& , ? or;t& , re;uav;i , rm;tay:xm;&aom apwemyijzpon/

xlyi re;uav;rm; £a'EoumEiaexijci;on jrerm"avjzpalumi;u

tarwre;uav;aw&lx;pu typib0u toue vly; xe;or;&wb0/
'g [m jrermre;uav;aw&lx;py/ ta&Eiioaw&lx;py/ (pm-84)

[í wiyxm;&m jrerm"avu *P , aecom avo? jrermre;uav;i , rm;t m; rjzprae
apm i xe;&rmjzpalumi;? vuem&rmjzpalumi; wi;rmjywom;on avojzi wiyxm;
ygon/

quvu í re;uav;rm;vwvyci&ly; rru , u rxe;or;Eijzprnuvn;
aw;ump;&rrou

]cacwrm vwvypm om;vmaexiiluwmu aw&jri&wtcg taru 0r;om
ygw , / 'gayr , rciwpa , mutae pwyw , / igor;av;aw rru , u
v\catmir xe;or;Eiluygrvm;/ rru , u umu , apmia&muEiluyg
rvm;qwm yyerw , / } (pm-84)

[í wiyxm;&m 0r;ajrmuaomavou llum;a , mivmapouo p;&ryyeon avou
vn; llum;a , mivmapygon/ xlyire;uav;wi; rru , u v\catmi xe;or;Ei&e
wuwe;xm;on oabmxm;uygay:viapygon/ pwi] taru0r;om;w , ? igor;av;
aw} [aom t o;rm;u tem;xi í ajymaesa , mi llum;a , mivmly; avat;jzipn;^{1/2}xm;jci;
yijzpygon/

aqmi;yg; \ t q;wi jywom;aom&n& , cujzi q&mru;vxa': t murr \
oabmxm;c , cuu

] 'gallumi vi, aw&&vwvwyvyciu tvvtrm;rm; to;rylapci
b;/ w vltztptn;u cirjywmuvn; rvyrapci b;/} (pm-85)

[wijxm;&m vi, awvr;rea&muatmi jywom;aomavojzi vr;ñexm;on u
awl&ygon/ re;uav;rm; tay:rciwp0;uol p;&raeaomapwemyijzpygon/

]re;uav;qwm}] [aom aqmi;yg;wivn; re;uav;rm; , aeacwwi vwvyci&
vmaumi;? tat;qi? vuzu&nqirsm;wi a, musm;uav;rm;Eitw xivmlualumi;?
xolaom taictaetx vwvyciu vucalumi;Ei xxyvmaom vwvyciu
vurcvalumi;u

]ye;cxu c&nay:txtcu , luvwvwyvycir;uawm taru
oabmrwygb;/ rw½omru]or;re;uav; [m 'vvla&ura&mi ola&
ra&mi rae&ygb;u , / u , utr;auri;om;ory? wu , v t'vi ,
e ri;etalumi; rnnwu&i b , E , vyygr , / re;uav;u 'gr;u
jii;qe&w , / t vrvu&b;v q;rmy/} (pm-108)

[í qxm;ygon/ re;uav;rm;ryroionrm;u azmij&mwi] taru oabmrwygb;? }
] t vrvu&b; } [í] r---b; } [aom wmjrpnavojzi rr\oabmxm;u azmij
xm;ygon/ rrjzpapcion taetxm;buyatmi ajmq&mwi] or; re;uav; [m 'v
vla&ura&mi? ola&ura&mi rae&ygb;u , } [í avat;ji azmi;zpñ;½xm;aomavou
awl&ygon/ xiyi] u , u tr;auri;om;ory } [aom to;ji pwu;0ium *P ,
vpw ayguvmatmivn; pñ;½xm;aomavou awl&ygon/ p olaomavorrm;u
qavsmvuzuatmi o;xm;aomallumi rrpñ;½;onbuol re;uav;rm;ygvmapygon/

olaom q&mr;u; \ tajrmtriu;rizi buwioway;xm;ru owryj/r\uaomtcg
 , aeacwwi re;uav;rm;b , mqixivmici;? KTV vyie;ji touar;vmici;tx
p;&rz , jzpvmygon/

xjiyi re;uav;rm;taetxirwwygu epemwwallumi;uvn;

]vwum om;vmvr;av\muaw vjriojria&m;u;rm 'vrqirji
aexiwmuawllawm re;uav;u re;raumi; [wcir [wrmygv
vr;om;vr;vmawuxiom;&i ri;b , E , vyrv/ re;uav;u ur;ue
atmi epemom;wmr [wvm;/ ri;uorrm;u 'vtxic&&i ri;u , u;
en;wmy/ 'gwire;uav;awu apmipn;xe;or;&r , upav/}(pm- 108)

[í tu;oiitalumi;oi vucvmatmi wijxm;ygon/]ri;b , E , vyrv } [aom
tar;avo?]re;uav;u ur;ueatmiepemom;wmr [wvm;} [aom tar;avorrm;u
pm [euouvuaply; puolaom re;uav;on ar;ce;tar;c&aomtcg awa0w/qi;
um p0pm;vmapygvrrn/ xjiyi] 'g wre;uav;awu apmipn;xe;or;&r , upav }
[aompum;u re;uav;reor\ vuem&rntcsujzpí rjzpraevuemapvon avo
ay:viaeygon/ xalumi , aeacwwi re;uav;i , rm;\ taetxi &wi;vmrrm

r;vn;rjri avvn;rjriqouo| jzpvmaeygon/ 0i;0e;xe;or;oivygon/
q&mru;on tajrm tjriB u;r;pm Bu\wiaw;jrium oway;xm;caomvn; Er;wpv;
wn;jzi qrijzpEi jzpc&ygon/

jterm , 0au;rtp0tvmwi jtermre;uav;rsm; t&uEioumu wez;xm;
xe;or;av&allumi;uivn;

[re;rw£aE a&ay;vr&qwm wu , ajmwpum;u/ a&evn; rv&b;/
a':vmevn; rv&b;/ azmazmo pw'omau; &wmr;vn; r[wb;/
u , u cpwou 'gejy/p&mr;vn;r[wb;/} (pm- 108)

[í qx;m;on/ pwi]a&evn; rv&b;? a':vmevn; rv&b;}[í]r---b;} [aom
tjii;to;u o;xm;aomallumi jwyjwom;om;wm;jrpaom avotjzpaw&ygon/
x|tw]azmazmo pw'omau; &wmr;vn;r[wb;? u , cpwou 'gejy/p&mr;vn;
r[wb;}[í ajmqxm;&m or;re;uav;u rciua&urmxiií &i;&i;E;E;ajmq q;rae
aomavo? jwyjwom;om;wm;jrpaom avotjzpaw&ygon/

poaomavor;u q&mru;vxa':trm\ jtermre;uav;i , rsm; tay: xm;&
aomapwemEi jterm , 0au;r"avx;pu jrwe;wez;xm;onoabmxm;rsm; ay:vivm&
ygon/

[re;rw£aE] qaomaqmi;yg;wi jtermtr;or;rsm; \ £aEoum&yu ½y&i
ri;or;u;ar&i? tliirri;or;rjri&iwEi r;armi;x;um *P , xm;ygon/ x|jyiaemivm
aemuo;or;y|rsm;onvn; ri;or;u;ar&iu tw , Ei&e vr;ñexm;ygon/

tovi½ü ri;or;u;ar&i wmoexr;aqmicp0u our;caomrwaqu Eiijcm;
a&muap0wi ar&i\ £aEoumaumi;yu c;u;l;calumi;u-

[ar&it'we;u£aE&vuyawuvn; w , vze;uaely; oww&ajmij
ao;w , / tovi½rmawuuv Ewqu&i b , awmrq ar&iu ar;wpce;
ajmwpce;y wijew , ? b , awmr a0a0qm qmpum;rqb;w/} (pm-120)

[í wijyxm;ygon/ , ciacwu jtermtr;or;rsm; £aEoum&u;r;y? £aEoum&jci;
u wez;xm;*P , aeaom avoyijzpygon/]w , vze;uaely; oww&ajmijao; w , }
[aompum;?]b , awmra0a0qm qm pum;rqb;w} [aom pum;wu 0r;ajrmu*P , ae
aom &i;&i;E;E;ajmijyaeaom avojzpygon/

x|yi tliirri;or;rjri&i\ £aEoum&yuivn;

[rjri&iu a , mu;sm;awBu uov? re;rawuvn; Bu\uluygw , / re;r
ylunu rjri&iu mv Bu\uovvar;awm ri;or;ayr , £aE&vw/
rjri&iu ruvuuvw/} (pm- 120)

[ívn; *P, wiyxm; ygon/]ri; or; ayr, | £aE&vw?]rjr&iu ruvuuvw
[aompum; rsm; u jrerm trs; or; rsm; tz £aEoumwez; ðu; rm; yu o&umav; pm; tw,
apvaom avojzpalumi; aw&ygon/

wpze , ciacwtcg u jrerm , Oau; r"av x; pwi re; uav; rsm; £aEoum&r
wez; &yu vn;

]re; uav; [m uvu&icPye; y au^{smll}um; Eiw , / a&&n rau^{smll}um; Eib; /
'gu uav; raw luy luy ow&uapciw , / (pm- 120)

[í toay; xm; ygon/]a&&nrau^{smll}um; b; / 'gu uav; raw luy luy owxm; apci
w, } [í jywom; pmvr; ñexm; aom avotjzpalumi; ygon/

xlaemu jrermre; uav; wi; t&, a&muygu jrerm"av x; pEit n £aEoum
&u&rn jzpalumi; u vn;

]tarw/ jrerm trs; or; av; awtz £aEuapmixe; &w, qwm re; uav;
&, vjzpv m? t&, a&muv m&i rvyrjzputyg/ 'gu or; re; uav; aw
luy luy owxm; apciw , / £aEqwm obionrm ta& ðu; ov t&yo
rm vn; ta& ðu; wmy/ (pm- 122)

[qx m; ygon/]wijrermre; uav; wi; £aEoumapmixe; &rnjzpalumi; u]tar?
]or; } [aom &i; E; onavozi pn; ½; or; oi; xm; ygon/

pav orsm; u q&m rðu; vxa': trm \aEmi; acwor; i , ? ajr; i , rsm; tay: xm; &
aom apwemEi jrerm"av x; prsm; u EpoujrwE; wez; xm; allumi; av; pm; z , o&&ygon/

wpze]acwyv' twi; ðu naelurv m; } [aom aqmi; yg; ziv n; acwumv
re; uav; rsm; \ tjrirawmaom? jrerm , Oau; rEi rtypyaom taet xirm; u vu;
orrsm; u vpv ð½ rxm; oialumi; axmuyxm; ygon/ q&m rðu; vxa': trm on acwrsm;
ajym i; vv montav sm u aexijyr yrm; ajym i; vv mji; tay: p; &ryyer [ewygon/
xalumi yi ajym i; vv maom vaeryprsm; u tcerxe; or; Ei&e paqmi; yg; zi wijxm;
ygon/ aqmi; yg; wi

]cacw re; uav; ea, m u sm; av; aw vUa&Ua&Urm e; e; uyuyae vmlur
wpae xuwpael twi&v vmaeygw , / uierw jrerm , Oau; rrm
a, m u sm; re; ruav ompweq&i vUa&Ua&Urm e; pyrurjygb; / 'g [m
&up&m ðu; v/ owrwxm; wmyg/ (pm- 151)

[ívn; aumi;

]wuovy&0Pawu 0ir&iv n; 'vygy/ tiwcl; y; pm oivwvuw
rbrsm; ur owr&a&m ov m; rqEi? owu ynm&m vw&wmerw/ tw&m
vwvuovjrirawm? ½ rawm ausmi; y&0Pxrm wciwi; wv ae luyg
w, / (pm- 151)

[ívn;aumi; wiyx_m;ygon/]'g[m&up&m&u;vlowrx_m;wmyg} [aom tajymu
acwre;uav;i , rsm; jrerm , Oau;r"avx;prsm;Ei a0;umvmru , bu;r&jzpaom
avojzpygon/]tiwcy; pm oivwvuw rbrsm;ur owr&a&m ov;m;rqEi? owu
ynm&m vw&wmerw/ tw&m vwvuov jrirawm? ½rawm} [aom ajympum;rsm;u
rEplri? vurcEiaomavo? u½Pma'gaom jzpaom avo [q&ygrn/ pavorm;u
acwre;uav;i , rsm; jrerm , Oau;rEia0;umum tE&m , u&a&urnu p;&raeom
apwem avorm;yiizpygon/

lc(i o; oycu

baqmi;yg;rsm;r ay:vixi&m;aomavorm;t& vxa':trm \ jrerm , Oau;r
"avx;prsm;u jrwe;wez;xm;r? acwor;i , rsm;tay;p;&rr[aom oabmxm;rsm; u
av;pm;z , ojrivm&ygon/ pmta&t om; ur;uiyiEiow \ avou ai;w \
pmrsm;wi awEiygon/ avoon pmzwoEitalumi;t&mtay:wi xm;&aom oabm
xm;apwemu ay:viapygon/ xjiyi rr&n& , ajymqvaom orsm;tay:xm;&aom
oabmxm;u v n; ay:viapygon/ tara&pum;yxrwwi tajym[eEia&om; wiy
xm;ji;alumizw&otzoo mv , aply; pma&o \ &n& , csuu ayguajrmuapygon/
pm[er;vn; aygyg;ouvuvmapygon/ xjiyi q&mr u;u , wiab;r xiajymjy
aeouo lum;a , mivmapygon/

q&mr u;vxa':trm \ tara&pum;aqmi;yg;rsm;ü jrerm trs;or;i , rsm; \
taetxiEiqiaom aqmi;yg;rsm;r avou avvmaomtcg *P , oiaom tjiytrrsm;u
*P , av;pm;vuemvmatmi *P , z , ? tw , z , avojzi pn;½a&om;xm;ygon/
jrerm , Oau;rEiqeusiaom? jrermvr0e;usiuvvm;aom tjiytrtaetxirsm;
u v n; owjya&milu0Eiatmi &i;&i;E;E; ajymqaom avo? azsmi;zajymqaomavo?
tus;oitatumi;oi axmujaomavo? jwyiwom;om; ajymwmjrapaomavorm;jzi
vucvuemvmatmi pn;½a&om;xm;alumizw&otzoo mv , aply; pma&o \ &n& , csuu
ayguajrmuapygon/ xjiyi q&mr u;u , wiab;r xiajymjy aeouo lum;a , mivmapygon/
a':trm \ tajymo;pum;rsm;? tajym0gursm;? avorm;rwpmqi apwemEijrerm , Oau;r
"avrm;u jrwe;wez;xm;pwu av;pm;z , awljriEiygon/

xalumiaavoon pma&o \ apwemEi c , cursm;u xixi&m;&m;awljri
Eion [q&ygrn/

e*;

ppmwr;wi jrerm trs;or;rsm;tz £a'Eoumapmixe;Eijci;on *P , z , ?
av;pm;tw , z , jzply;? £a'Eoumr&aexijyrygu jrermvrt oi;t0i;u ½wcp&m
jzp&y? re;uav;rsm; jrerm , Oau;r"avx;prsm;Eiui;a0;vmaejci;on p;&rz ,
jzp&alumizw&otzoo mv , aply; pma&o \ &n& , csuu ayguajrmuapygon/
jrerm ½axmiEit jcm;½axmirsm;rvn;quvuoawoe jyEiygao;on/

u;r;u;pm&i;

ciri? armi("EjzL)/ (2004)/ *pu_m;ajyoabmw&m; pu_m;ajytwwynm/*&eue? pmayavmuyEywul

ciri? armi("EjzL)/ (2011)/ *a&[eynme'ge;/*&eue? pwu;cicpmayl

t rm? a':(v x-)/ (1997)/ *tara&pu_m;? yxrwm* rEav;? bu;ym;a&yEywul

av vmzw^{1/2}ao mpm t ypm&i;

p;Ei? a'guwm/ (2019)/ *q&maZm* \ pu_m;ajya& [e/* &eue? jrermwi;r yEywul

aZmxe;? a'guwm(bm omjye)/ (2015)/ *bmomaA'Eipmay(pmaya& [eynmrwqu)/* &eue?
Epu mvr_m;pmayl

armixi\ez;pm0x\wr paojci;rsm;qe;ppcsu
ri;ri;oe;^Ä

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on armixi\ez;pm0w\wwiaw\&aom paojci;rsm;u pmay½axmir
avvmwijyxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ paojci;rsm;on pmzwou&o Epour
ay;pr;Eialumi; azmxwwijyvaom &n&,cuizpygon/ tavvmtjzp
armixi\ ua'gi;0w\wr ez;pm (yxryi;)Eiez;pm('w,yi;)u ovrwy;
a&[eynmqi&m en;emrsm;Ei qe;ppwijyxm;ygon/ a&uEmpmo\wxjyji;
en;emwp&yjzpon paojci;q i&m en;emrsm;Ei ez;pm0w\vm paojci;rsm; [í cjc;
avvmxm;ygon/ pma&q&marmixi\ oa&m [euaw\&Eily; armixi\
0w\wa&[e avvmvorm; twuvn; taxmutu jyEiygon/

aomcsupum;v;rsm; - a&[eynm? a&uEmpmo\wxjci;? paojci;? oa&m [e?
&oEpour/

e'ge;

pma&q&marmixion jrermmayvmuwxixi&m;aom pmayynm&iwp0; jzpyg
on/ ib0w\&n? ua'gi;0w\wwon pmzwy&oww woopve;&aom pmay
vu&mrm;yijzpygon/ armixi\ ua'gi;0w\wr ez;pm0w\wonvn;&ojrmu 0w\w
wp'yijzpygon/ x0w\wr x;jcm;pmay:vi xi&m;aeontzrsm;u xw, paqmi;
um armixi\ a&[ex;jcm;ruavvm&e pwi t m;xwcygon/

a&[eynm&yon pma&q&mwp0;\ pmaya&[eu pmay½axmirvn;
pepwu:avvmEiaom ynm&yijzpygon/ xialumia&[eynmvm a&uEmpmo
\wxjyji;en;emr paojci;q i&men;emrsm;Ei ez;pm0w\wu c0;uyqe;ppcygon/
ez;pm0w\wr paojci;rsm;on pmzwowu x;jcm;pmpliapEion armixi\ a&[e
wp&yijzpalumi; azmxwEi&e bu;yr;xm;on pmwr;jzpygon/ jrermmaye,y,
wi avmuobm0 vobm0tr;tarmu rwnrrsm;u oa&mcsuyiyiEi xe;jy
Eiaompmaywon pmzwy&owu b0tooww ay;pr;Eialumi; ojriap&e
&n&, í vn; ppmwr;u jy\pcjci;jzpygon/

1/ armixi\ twiyw t u:0;

pma&q&marmixiu (1909)cEprwv(21)&uwi tz0;wa&mi? tra':peyiwr
{&m0wwi;? vywmlr\üz;m;jrion/ trn&i;rm 0;xizwzpon/ vywmlr\0;cEau smi;

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrermpmXme? &wemywuov/

Ei 0;b;xe;au_{sm}i;r_{sm};wi pwiynmoi, con/ t xuwe;ynmu ajrmi;jr wi;&i;om;
t xuwe;au_{sm}i;wi oi, con/ (1933)wi &euewuovr bat(0Zm)bU &&on/
(1935)wi ajrmi;jrwi;&i;om; t xuwe;au_{sm}i;wi t xuwe;jyq&mtjzp wm0e
xr;aqmicon/ (1949)cEpwi tp;&trxr;b0r Ewxucon/

&eueowi;pm tyclyrt, 'wm? pmayArnep, pur;twiyic? t vw owi;pm
q&m paomwm0ersm;u xr;aqmicon/ (1954)wi jrermEiipma&q&m toi;0u|?
(1959)wi jrermEi iowi;pmq&moti;0u|? (1989)wi ynma&0e|u;Xme jrerm
tz|tcejyntz0i ponwm0ersm;u xr;aqmicon/ (1947) wiib0wu w^{1/2}w? &&m;
tE, ? *yebm0ersm;o| jyeqxwa0ci;c&on/ (1933)rpí t*vy jrermEpbm0ijzi
pmtytr<|r<|a&om;jypcon/ ua'gi; 0ww? ||rt|yri;qb^{1/2}uA_{sm}? bmta&βu;q;vEi
tmZmenrcijZmw? ArmEiia& ocre? rygqe;0w|wrs;? urmpmayt ne? *g vAmc&p0
ponpmtyrsm; a&om;jypcon/

(1994)wi ycul0;te;az wpouwmpmayq? (1981)wi tr<|om;pmayq? (1996)
wi rbarwmpmay*P&nq? (2003) wi tr<|om;pmay wpouwmpmayq (0Zm
bmom&y) w cs;jrijci;cc&on/ (2006)cEp? Zee0g&(29)&u eeu(8)em&wi ti;pelr|le ,
aetrü u , vecygon/

2/ ez;pm0w|wZmwv r; t u0;

ez;pm0w|on ua'gi; \ i , cp0;Eiz;pmvc&ywu a&om;xm;aom 0w|wpy'
jzpon/ ua'gi;q , av;ig;ajcmuEpt& , i , p0uracsmEiqaw|cy? racsm \ 0;aqmirzi
rE;reyt^{1/2} , rmyi armia'gi; re;rc;ajy;cy? 0;av;jzpoEi ta':x Ze;avmi;u acwtyum
[maeaom 0r;ujzn&e armia'gi;xuvmp0 q&mrEiaw|í au_{sm}i;ola&muum pmtc&y?
au_{sm}i;q;acgi;avmi;x;í trol'e;pi;um jyeygaomvn; Ze;avmi;rm vu;rbrsm;
vma&muac:ojziyeygom;cy? armia'gi;rm aomu tvr;wjzi aqmuwn&mr& jzpc&y
wu (yxryi;)wi azmijxm;ygon/ ('w,yi;)wi armia'gi;urai;|r|u| racsmu
&m&ea&muicy? u|uvwo| ajymi;om;allumi; owi;&ojzi vucjey? u|uvwwi
racsmEiqaw|ci&cjey? to [eaqmií racsm trwi wn;ci&&e|uEicy? armia'gi;Ei
racsmw Ep0;om;aw|ci&aomtcg pum;vuqajymrueb ||unE;r;q;jzpcy? racsm \
armirsm;Ei tprjzpowu armia'gi;w \ t|uuo om;cy? racsm tpr tyarmucce
apmiu armia'gi;wEp0; xuajy;&e|upnijey? armia'gi;u racsm \ vu|uqum cg;ye;
utvm;wi ri;w;vu;om;ojzi racsm \ tprE;vmcy? racsmuyg;^{1/2}uum qqaecewi
armia'gi;vn; tm;ueEium armawmqyoajy;c&ywu azmijxm;ygon/

2/ 1/ a&rsuEmpmo xwji;Eipaoji;

a&[eynmwi rrajymvonu yray:viap&e t"u tptwtiwpcllu a&we;
wiazmjon a&rsuEmpmo xwji;rm ta&ygaomen;emwp&yjzpygon/ pma&o
ñe;qvaom t&mon yw0e;ui&t&rm;xu xi&m;aeaomen; jzpygon/

]]auwa0;vpu a&[eynm t b"mewi a&rsuEmpmo xwji;¹on
a&[eynm²wi ta&ygaom a0g [m&wp&y jzponuvn;aumi;? talumi;
t&mpccu ay:vixi&atmi jy/vyay;ji;jzply; or^{1/2};uaom bom
pum;wpc \ talumi;crsm;uqeu:í ^{1/2}yv;uvmap&ejyji; [
vn;aumi; ziqxm;ygon/

(P-156,157)

a&rsuEmpmwi xi&pm ay:viaeom bompum;t o;rm;jzp&e xwji;en;
Epr;&on/ , i;wrm paoji;³Ei xyau;smji;⁴wjzpygon/ paoji;oabmu?
armiciri("Ejzl) (2011)u

]]wpr;&rm bompum; \pn;ur;rm;? prsm;uaozncl;azm uí o;on
en;emjzpon/ xen;emupaoji; (Foregrounding) [ac:on/](pm-189)

[&i;jyxm;on/

a'g uwmaZmxe;(2015)u -

]]wppwp&maompum;v;u a&rsuEmpmo xwji; foregrounding oabm
jzio;ply; aoznonoabm oua&muom;aomtcg pum;v;wpv;pon
ay:vixi&vmayon/}} (pm-159)

[a&recyre;⁵ u qxm;onu bomjyeazmjyxm;ygon/ a&rsuEmpmo xwji&mwi
aoznji;rm; \ tmeoiu qe;ppjycuyijzpon/

paoji;on opvive;qe;aom bompum;t o;u jzpay:apEion/
a&rsuEmpmo xwji;aom en;vr;rm;wi paoji;on ta&ygaom en;vr;wpc jzply;
pmzwo \pwt m^{1/2}u qaqmizr;pm;Eiaom en;emwp&yvn; jzpygon/

3/ armi xi \ez;pm0w\wr paoji;rm;qe;ppcu

armi xi \ez;pm(yxryi;)Ei ez;pm('w,yi;)wi a&[eynmüyg0ion a&
rsuEmpmo xwji;oiabmw&rm;jzpon paoji;rm;u awl&ygon/ paoji; on
bompum;uvwvwvyvy to;jyici, um bompum; pn;ur;rm;uaozn to;jy

¹ fore grounding

² stylistics

³ deviation

⁴ repetition

⁵ Raymond Chapman

ji; jzpygon/ paoji; en; emrsm; Eiywouí t i'e; & m; Eii , * , muwm⁶ wuovr
pwuze , ⁷ tiwmeupmrsuEmwi

1/ a0g [m&paoji; ⁸

2/ o'gpaoji; ⁹

3/ pum; opaoji; ¹⁰

4/ ta&yopmepaoji; ¹¹

5/ teut"ym , paoji; ¹²

6/ a'o , to; paoji; ¹³

7/ to; upum; paoji; ¹⁴

8/ ori; acwpaoji; ¹⁵

[cijcm; azmijyxm; ygon/

3² 1/ a0g [m&paoji;

]]pum; v; opxi; ci; pum; v; trs; tpm; (0gp*)ajymi; í o; ji; wji o; aeus
abmiu c\ xio; ji; wu a0g [m&paoji; [ovrwon/ pum; v; zlx;
pn; ur; u aoznc; azmujci; r [wb o; aeus abmiu au sm veo; Ee; ji;
jzpon [armiciri ("EjzL)(2011)a& [eynmpm tywiazmijyxm; on/}}

(pm-193)

armixi\ ez; pm(yxryi;)wi tou(16)Epyirjynao; aom armia'gi; on racsm
[on up; 0g; w½wqi yi&i\ wrizpo re; uav; uc; vmcon/ racsm \ tpr; alumi
re; rc; c&aom armia'gi; rm ½; w; & eweraeww rxiiw wjzpacon/ xalumi Auqm
ozi re0, om; rn [talumi; yum trrxucon/ , i; uez; pm (yxryi;)wi
armixiu

]] [maeaoMr; u vujzi ax; í] qmw , ? reom; 0 , 0; r , } [r , m; avmi;
tm; yellum; y; aom trrxuvmcavon/}} (pm-22)

⁶ Yogyakarta

⁷ staffnew uny. ac. id

⁸ lexical Deviation

⁹ Gramatical Deviation

¹⁰ Phonological Deviation

¹¹ Typographical deviation

¹² Semantic Deviation

¹³ Dialectal Deviation

¹⁴ register Deviation

¹⁵ Deviation of historical period

[a&;om;xm;on/ Ze;tjzp&n& , xm;ou]Ze;avmi;}} [o;½;o;p0r aozní]r , m;
avmi;}} [o;xm;jci;jzpon/ armia'gi; \Ze;tjzpra&muvu&ao;r vc&aomtajctae
uon; jriomapon/ xrru]b&m;avmi;}} [aom to;Ei toqiwon]r , m;avmi;}}
[aom a0g [m&uo;xm;onrm t½ , rwcic re;rc;on rtrvnamia'gi; \tjzpu
xxrr oa&mxm; [evn;jzpygon/ Zmwaqmi \ trt&mEicpm;c;uuvn; jria , mi
vmapygon/

armia'gi;onracsmu o \ tprrm;u jyeac:om;ontwu pwa&mu , yg ñ;Er;
aeavon/ racsmuvr;pwaq;pww tcgrvyjzpaecom armia'gi;u O;av;Ei ta':
wu zcijzpozjyevwvuavon/ racmonuniue;&mo ormetquwi
tprjzporoatmi armia'gi; \zcix ta&muom;y; armia'gi;a&muvmv i o xo
ququvuc&ermum;con/ xtaumi;u armia'gi;o&ontcg racsmxta&muom;
&eom pwxuoeaeavon/]ri;i , ygao;w , } [aomzci \pum;uon; em;r0iEi
ay/ , i;u ez;pm(yxryi;)wi armixiu

]tc;Eiowow? tcg;Eiowow}ovepu &ayriuy/ oi;uav;u
rawv i avmu;u;rm raeawmly/}}(pm-28)

[a&;om;xm;on/]tcg;Eiowow} [onrm a0g [m&paoí o;xm;jci;yijzpon/
tcowonqonrm tvrm o;í azsmi;zajymqon t"ym , Ei o;aoma0g [m&jzpon/
xa0g [m&yg]tc;}} [aom to;Ei qeui bujzpon]tcg; }uo;um]tcg;Eiowow} [a0g
[m&paoí o;xm;onrm rnoazsmi;zs apumr em;r0iEiaom armia'gi; \ t½;tr;
pwu jriomapon/ Zww&wjy/vpw tm;u;aeon rE;reyt& , armia'gi; \cpm;c;u
xi&m;ay:viaeacom to;yijzpon/

armia'gi;Ei c;&mvuvorm w½wqiyi&iup;0g; \ re;rburwrjzpon/
up;0g;rm armia'gi; pmtaeonu awl&o;zi racsmwpa , murnoEi c;&mvure;rob
taw;&u;yaecon/ up;0g; \ trt&mEicpm;c;uu armixiuez;pm (yxryi;)wi

]armia'gi;on p opmtaep0 up;0g;au smi;a&ü acguwacguiye
ysmavmi½uaeonujri \ /}} (pm-22)

[azmjyxm;on/]ysmavmicw}qonrm o;½;o;p0pum;jzply; ysm , ysm , mjzpaecom
oabmjzpon/]tuy½u}onvn; o;½;o;p0pum;yijzply; tcutcawl í ruww
rpnww jzpyoabmjzpon/ xpum;Epv; \ t"ym , uaygi;pyum]ysmavmi½u} [o;
p½;r abmiau smí o;xm; [euawl&ygon/ Zmwaqmi up;0g; \ ysm , ysm , m jzpaecom
to;Ei p0;pm;&cuum tuy½uaecom cpm;c;uuplyieuwn; azmjyEion
a0g [m&paoirjzpygon/ Zmwaqmi \ trt&mEi cpm;c;uu xxrray:vion;apon
to;jzpygon/

ez;pm('w , yi;)wivn; q&marmixi a0g [m&wx i o;yuawlEiygon/
armia'gi;on racsmEie;&rv tjzpru&ontjzpalumi rtyEirpm;Eicpm;c&on/ rb

aqr;w u azm i;zem; c on l u m; r rac m & myawm zic jyeon/ Bu k; pm; & maz & i; u s l u v w
 wi rac m Ei jye q ci & avon/ rac m w t r t e; v u z u & n q i w i x i u m p w & n v u & n
 ap m i a e p 0 l c 0 e; t w i; y e; c; a e a o m r a c m u & y u e j r i v u a v o n/ a r m i a ' g i; \
 t v e t r i; a u e y 0 r; o m p w w o n r a c m x o v u o z, y l E o m; u m r a c m E i r u v; c i;
 q r a w m o n/ E p 0; o m; t v e t r i; 0 r; o m p w w j z i t a i; o m; l u n a e r y u a r m i x i u
 e z; p m (y x r y i;) w i

]] E p 0; o m; 0 r; o m v; " m w y i o m; y; v i l l u u a o a o a e l l u o n r m w p a t m i
 a v m u l l u m o n /)) (p m - 33)

[a z m j y v u o n /] 0 r; o m v; q ? t l u n " m w j p o n o; ½; o; p 0 t o; w r t " y m, u w u
 a y g i; p y u m t o p w x i o; v u j c i; j z p o n / 0 r; o m v; q j q o n r m t v e t r i; 0 r; o m y u
 a z m j y & m w i o; a v & o n a 0 g [m & j z p o n / t l u n " m w q o n r m e m r w & m; j z p a y: v m a o m
 r u p? e m;? E m a c g i;? v l m? u, w n; [a o m ½ y [t " y m, & a o m a 0 g [m & j z p o n /
 x a 0 g [m & E p c u a y g i; p y u m r u v; c i; q r o n t c u t v e t r i; 0 r; o m p w w y i t e
 v m y u] 0 r; o m; v; " m w } [w x i o; x m; o n r m a r m i x i \ x; j c m; a o m p u m; o; [e
 w p & y v n; j z p y g o n /

a r m i a ' g i; o n u r a i; w i w n; c p & m r & o [e a q m i í r a c m w t r ü w p n w m
 w n; c c i & a t m i Ó P q i c o n / a r m i a ' g i; u r a c m r o m; p u v n; t r e x i í w n; c c i
 j y l c o n / a r m i a ' g i; E i r a c m w o n v u; r b r m; & y r r n u p; o j z i t o r w a q [e a q m i
 & i; t v r; o, r y u a r m i x i u e z; p m (' w, y i;) w i

]] t c p j z i j y n v r; a o m r u E m y e; E p c r m x i v i; a o m a e a & m i j c n j z i y i y i
 v i; v i; r y i & a o m a l l u m i a t; j r l u n v i a o m l u, a & m i v a & m i w j z i o m
 w i; w r & y; v i t y; y i y i l u & [e w o n /)) (p m - 34 - 35)

[a & o m; x m; o n / y i y i v i; v i; c p c i r a & a o m a l l u m i u w í o m t c p p w w j y n v r;
 y i t e a e y u] t y; y i [x; x; j c m; j c m; o; x m; j c i; j z p y g o n / a r m i a ' g i; E i r a c m w E p 0; o m;
 o n r o m; p 0 i r m; & y r r n u p & r & i; w w w w u w u m c p l u n E; p w w j y n v r; a e y u
 a y: v i a p o n t o; y i j z p y g o n / a r m i x i \ p u m; o; [e x; j c m; r u v n; a y: v i a p y g o n /
 a r m i a ' g i; w E p 0; \ t a j c t a e E i c p m; c u u j r i a, m i v m a p y g o n /

a r m i a ' g i; u r a c m u ' w, t l u r c; & e l u p n o n t j z p u t c g a w m a y; a r m i z; 0 u
 t < u m; o e u m a z m u o n c o j z i r a c m \ a m i r; m; o o m; l u a v o n / x a l u m i n w p c u w;
 c e w i r a c m t r u c E i y p l u a w m o n / t a l u m i; p u & y r o & o m; a o m r a c m t p r u
 a r m i j z p o w \ a ' g o u o a o m a l l u m i n a e u y i { n o n u j y e v w v u l y; j z p a l u m i;
 a j y m c o n / , i; u a r m i x i u e z; p m 0 w (' w, y i;) w i

]] i g n a e u w n; u t a l u m i; o v { n o n u E i v u y g l y / o r m; w u m t y c e
 q q n n e? r i; w v y v o & i & u p & m u; y g u, / u... j y e l u ... j y e l u } [t y r e p r m; E i v u w p v; l u m; l l u u 0 w p v; u m v r v u a v & m } (p m - 36)

[a&om;xm;on/ , i;wi]vuwpv;jcm;} [onrm rrvrwpvwyon [aom
oabmuazmjyon o;½;o;p0jzpon/ racsm \ tpru bu;βu;rm;rm; yyomomajyum
armiawmowuÓPqií rrvrwpvwyocyu]vuwpv;um;} [owalumi;u
a0g [m&jzi wxio;vuji;jzpon/ xjiyí luu0wpv;um [aom tumta0;ymPu
azmjyEion pum;Eiaygi;pyí]vuwpv;um;? luu0wpv;um} [o;vujiyeygon/
armixi\ x;jcm;pm wxio;wwon pum;o; [eu ay:viapon/ vuwpv; [aom
ymPxu yrlu;rm;aom luu0wpv;tum ymPt x r [wrreonnuyyrrajymqum
rrvrwpvwyocy t"ym , u xxrrazmjyEiaom pum;o; [eyijzpygon/ rrvrwpv
bu;βu;rm;rm; vyon tajctaeu buawu&ontcgwi]vuwpv;jcm;? luu0wpv;um}
[aom a0g [m&uyi trwxixiow&rapont x tm;aumi;íx;jcm;aom to;yijz
on/

armia'gi;on rrtuu&rrom;aomallumi pwyupw½y&ontxwi racsm \
armi q;rm;u alumuvepwjzi aqmuwn&mr& jzpa&on/ tuatmicge;ryu&on
rr \ tjzpu tyruomjzpapvon/ racsmrmvn; tprjzpo bur;armi;Eypuor
tuwcum tprjzpo tyaysmom;onwi on;capmiqi;&i; armia'gi;aemuolvuEi&e
buiyeon/ tpru;tyarmu&ely [aocsmcsewi armia'gi;xom;íE;con/ armia'gi;
wEp0; alumuupwvepwEi tw jzn;ni;pmxucyu ez;pm ('w , yi;)wi armixiu

]]tr&ypn;t m;v;wrm tao½yyrm rwerovy&uon/ xrwervy
wwqwji;wonv\i rrwEp0;t m; lzíajcmuaeon [xirwr \ }
(pm-39)

[a&om;xm;on/]tao½y) [aom to;on ourypn;w \ liroupm&aeyu tm;aumi;
pm jriomapon a0g [m&wxiryijzpon/ ou&ow0gwtouroz , rvyr , u
liroaeyu]taoau mi} [o;Ee;av&on/ xo;aeuabmiuau sm í]]tao½y) [
o;vuji;on armixi\ pum;v;opwxiryijzpygon/ e*uyi tvyt&m;r&on
ourypn;wrm tx;wvnlirouaeonE , cpm;ryu ay:viapaom to;jzpygon/
alumuve pwvy&m;ve;aeaom armia'gi;wEp0; \ cpm;r yray:viap&e wwqw
liroaueaom aemuc0e;usi tajctaeEi , Owjria , miapaom pum;o; [eyijzpon/

armia'gi; \ i , b0tawltbuu lum;o&aompma&oon uarmuur Eive;v
aom armia'gi; \ ez;pma&u & , cipwzpron/ ua'gi;u , wivn; i , p0uotjzpu
& , siaevrrn [xiravon/ oEiua'gi;u lunvur&mwir ruv;r ru&np
rsm;u yq;pEi tomríywaeonu awl&aomtcg r& , &uatmicpm;ryu ez;pm ('w ,
yi;)wi

]]pwir uEyrm & , tm;xui;t m;oerly;v\i}}(pm-41)

[a&om;xm;on/]it m;xu& , tm;oe} [aom to;on jrermq½;pum;wpcjzply;
o;½;o;p0 to;jzpon/ , i;u q&marmixiu }& , tm;xuit m;oe} []i} Ei }& , } u

a&laem uajymi; í &, cipwae&mwí 0r;en;t;m;em oem;pwcpm;&yu ay:viap&e
 x;jcm;pm wxio;vuji;jzpygon/ o;½;o;p0q½;pum;u ae&majymi;um xrr
 o;xm;jci;jzpon/ pma&o\cpm;cuuvn; xi&m;apon/ yxr0;q; tawltiuiwiyi
 uarmut rjzpEive;aom armia'gi;\z;pma&u &, cionlum;uyi pwraumi;
 jzp&jyeyu ay:viapaom pum;o; [evn; jzpygon/

ez;pm0w\vm a0g [m&paorrrsm;on Zmwaqmiw\ trt&mcpm;cu tajctaeu
 x;jcm;pmay:viapaom t o;rs; jzpaeygon/ a0g [m&topx;jcm;pm wxio;av&aom
 armixi\ a&; [euvn; azmjyaeygon/

3'2/ teut"ym, paoci;

javmux;pEitn aumu, &aom teut"ym, pepEi rnñwb aozn
 o;yrsl;jzply; ½yu tvum? two, 0w tvumtp&aom tvumtzlrs;
 orm"*Pajrmutzlrs;? teuaoz, 0gu:rs;? qeui bupum;rs;u
 xywu o;rrsm;on teut"ym, paorjzpalumi; (ciri? 2011) t&o&
 ygon/ (pm-197-198)

armixi\ez;pm0w\wwi avmux;pEitn aumu, &aom teut"ym, pepEi
 aozn í o;xm;yrsm;u aw&Eiygon/

ez;pm0w('w,yi;)wi vn; racsm&myawmzi í urai;ola&mu&vmaom ua'gi;
 u ojlq&mu vr;ñevuojzi racsmwaexi&mt&yjzponewxyo a, mivnvn
 a&muvm&ywi armixiu

]] , ctcgarmia'gi;onowbm*ojlq&mu\ewvr;ñecujzi ewxywi
 a, miayayzpi aeonu aw&Eiygon}} (pm-30)

[ez;pm('w,yi;)wi a&;om;xm;on/ racsmEiaw\q&e vr;ñeay;aom ojlq&muEi
 zpm&ewowbm*uvn;aumi;? ewxyolom;&evr;ñejycuu ewvr;ñe cuizi
 vn;aumi; xywya&;om;xm;aom ½yu tvumtzlyijzpygon/ xtzlrs;on
 avmuwi vucxm;aom teut"ym, Eiaoznum x;jcm;qe;oppm zew;xm;jci;rs;
 yijzpon/ pmzwo\pwu x;jcm;pmEpourvn; jzpapygon/

z;pmvc&on armia'gi;w\cpm;cuEitoiu ez;pm('w,yi;)wi armixiu

]]aeri;vri;wu &i0,yuvojzi armvivr;w aebouo plumOVm
 wq;u armai;íaeaom armia'gi;u vn;aumi;?/ (pm-41)

[a&;om;xm;on/]aeri;vri;wu &i0,yuvojzi?]plumOVmwpcv;uarmai;
 ponzi racsmEiqrn ta&; armviaeaom armia'gi;\cpm;cuEioiyiu two, 0w
 tvumtzlji azmjyxm;ygon/ armia'gi;\ v&nrvncib0u buawlaom
 tjzptyutwu aluarvmvirq;jzpc&on tajctaeu xi&m;apaomt zljzpygon/

aygi;q&e rjzpeiawm on t a j t a e E i u a ' g i ; \ c p m ; c s u u y j i x i & m ; a p a o m t z l v n ;
jzpygon/

xlyi ez;pm0w/wi or m " * P a j r m u a o m t o ; r s m ; j z i v n ; t e u t " y m , p a o u m
o ; x m ; y u v n ; a w l & o n /

armia'gi;on racsmEijyevnq&yu

]] t c p & u u z i í y z i r r w a o m t c p a v u v i u m t c p y i v , a l u m 0 ,
aygavmarmaeluaom t c p a r m i E } (p m - 3 5)

[a z m j y x m ; o n /] t c p & u ?] t c p a v ?] t c p y i v , } p o n j z i a v m u w i t r e w u ,
r & a o m t & m w u t r e w u , & o u o w i p m ; [e y i j z p o n / x j y i] t c p y , v , a l u m 0 ,
aygavmar m [w i p m ; x m ; o n r m a v m u u ; u a r u m c p l u i r q ; j z p a e o n a u s e y
l u n E ; a e l l u a o m a r m i a ' g i ; w c p o E p 0 ; \ c p m ; c s u u a y : a p y g o n / a v m u w i t r e w u ,
r a w l e i r j z p E i a o m o a b m r s m ; E i w i p m ; a & ; o m ; x m ; j c i ; j z p l y ; q e ; o p a o m t e u t " y m ,
j z p a y : v m a p a l u m i ; a w l E i y g o n /

w z e t e u q e u s i a o m p u m ; w u x y w u o ; x m ; o n r m v n ; t e u t " y m , u
y r x ; j c m ; q e ; o p a p o n a & ; [e y i j z p y g o n / e z ; p m (y x r y i ;) w i t & , r a & m u c i r e ; r c ;
v m a o m a r m i a ' g i ; \ c p m ; c s u E i t r t & m u

]] ½ ; w ; & e w e y s a v m i c w í * P m r l i r j z p & & m \ } (p m - 2 2)

[a & ; o m ; x m ; y g o n /] ½ ; w ; & e w e } [o n r 0 r & & u & l o n o a b m u a z m j y o n p u m ; E i
] y s a v m i c w } [a o m y s m , ; y s m , m t v i p v o a b m u a z m j y o n q e u s i b u p u m ; E p & y u
x y w u o ; x m ; o n r m a l u m u v n ; a l u m u ? & u v n ; & u E i a , m u , u c w a e o n
a r m i a ' g i ; \ t r t & m E i c p m ; c s u w u o b m 0 u u s a z m j y x m ; E i y g o n /

armia'gi;on urai;rwpgi usuvwo racsmu&m&ea&mucon/ usuvw
wi armia'gi;wpa,mu a,micmcsmjzp&jyeon/ totuir;wpa,mu wpavEi
awlEivrrn [t m ; w i ; u m r a c s m & m y a w m z i a e y u

]] t o & m a v r a w l a v ? r a w l a v & m a v } (p m - 3 1)

[í e z ; p m (' w , y i ;) w i a r m i x i u o ; x m ; y g o n / t e u t " y m , c i ; q e u s i o n 0 g u s
E p a l u m i ; u x y w u o ; x m ; [e u a w l & o n / a r m i a ' g i ; \ o o r r z u ; ß u ; E i r a c s m u
a w l E i & e B u k ; y r ; a e & y c p m ; c s u E i t r t & m r m x o a & m [e a l u m i y r a y : v i a e a l u m i ; a w l E i
y g o n /

e z ; p m 0 w l v m ½ y u t v u m t o ; r s m ; ? t w o , 0 w t v u m t o ; r s m ; ? o r m " * P a j r m u
t z l r s m ; ? q e u s i b u p u m ; u x y w u o ; r r s m ; [o n t e u t " y m , p a o r r s m ; o n p m z w o
w w i & o E p o u r t m ; a u m i ; p m j z p a y : a p a l u m i ; a w l E i y g o n /

3/ 3/ t o;upum;paojci;

t o;upum;paora&[eu armixi\ez;pm0w\w(yxryi;)wi aw&&ygon/
t o;upum;paojci;Eiywou í a&[eynme'ge;wi armiciri("EjzL)u

]]ppo;? Oya'o;? v , , mo;? uey\wmo;ponjzi vyytvu uaom
t o;upum;rsm;? pm o;? tajmo; vycito;? Ae;pum;t o; ponjzi
quo ,rtvu uaom t o;u pum;rsm;u pmq\tcix;t&wrixno;
jci;jzi pm \ tmeoi xujruatmi zew;av&uon/}} (pm-212)

[azmjyxm;ygon/

armia'gi;rm i ,p0u re;rc;um traxmiurn tajctaeEi\uc&on/ olaom
xaewiyi c;&m\vucaomracm u o\aqrs;rm;u vma&muac:om;jyeojzi traxmi
urnta&Ei a0;c&awmon/ xorxirwb ajymi;vwwaom uw&m; \ qe;lu ,yu
ez;pm (yxryi;)wi armixiu

]]uqonrm qe;vn;qe;? lu ,vn;lu , vu-vu-vu [o;ce;
wwjrnvu\iyi w½wpum;jzppwon/ alomqe;lu ,vayp ty&mx
re;qmwe; reonvmonvn; u? repm;we; yg;pyt [u;x; c&on
vn; u/(pm-23)

ponjziazmjyxm;on/ rjriEi? rre;Eiavmuatmi tajymi;t vjrewwve;aom uw&m;
[on av;euon talumi;t&mu]vu vu vu [o;ce;wwjrn?]reqmwe;
reonvm?]repm;we; yg;pyt [u;x;c&pon tajmo;rsm;u pmq\tcix;t&wri
xno;umazmjyxm;ygon/ armia'gi;\rxirwb re;rc;c&aom rarqm vib pmtvu
&aom? rawmwq traxmiurntjzpei vc&aom tajctaeu jria ,miraply; rcere;Ei
aomuw&m; \ tvntajymi;oabmu vuaw\us:oomap&e x;jcm;qe;oppm a&xm;
onrm [mo&oajrmuaeon/ tajymi;t v jreaomuw&m; [aom av;euon talumi;
t&mu v ,aompum;owi wipm; í o;xm;jci;jzpon/ armixi\ x;jcm;aom aw; [e
a&[euvn; jriomapygon/]vu}[aompum;u (3)cg &wlunrontx x;jcm;
qe;opon a&[evn;jzpygon/ pmzwowwi]vu 0u}[tajmityu oabm
ajymqav&on pum;r]vu}u(3)cg&wr&i; Epou oabmu pwwtmaumi;pm
jzpay:vmapEion paorwp&yvn; jzpygon/

armia'gi;Ei c;&m\vu vmaom racmutprjzpowu vma&muac: ,yu ez;pm
0w(yxryi;)wi

]]tpri;u;& ,? tpru;wvn; y&mutcluygly? u ,ci;pmYG0? ouu
bu\uve;v\vu c&wmyg/ usrai;u uerjervuygape} [awmi;ye½u<;
aom½yg½? oem;pz ,aom o'g½wjzivu pr; í &c;umtoem;cav \/
xtcg tprawmuje ,uvm; [, igwu u ,ci;pmYGav bmave} [tuw
ly;v\i] [i- zeypmr} [q íajczie\?]aojci;q;r} [ajym í zaemiEi

aygu\?]ujri;r} [aygiwi;allumvr\?]rwua&m [] [Ewce;awmacly;
v\i yg;u zeypmau; \})(pm-24)

[to;upum;paoru awl&&ygon/ racsm \ awmi;yeaomtrt&mEi towi ½yg½?
o'g½ [aom ygVpum;v;rsm; xnoi;xm;ygon/ xpmayo;pum;rsm;Ei qeusiaom]zey
pmr? aicziue? aojci;q;r? zaemiEiaygu? ujri;r? aygiwi;allumvr? Zeypmau; }
ponji racsmtp\rqo? qoEitrt&muazmjon tajmo;pum;v;rsm;u wri
xnoi;í o;xm;on/ racsm \ tpr trt&mtowEi qeuibujzpon]tprawm?
]Ewce;awmac} [aom x;o;ee;o;pum;u wrixní a&;om;xm;onrm armixi
\ xraom oa&m [eu azmjyaeon to;upum; paorjzpaeygon/ [mo&ou cpm;&ap
aom paorvn;jzpon/

armia'gi;on u\uvwroa&muvmjyaeomtcg wp&mwn; aecz;o armiz;0
Eiqrcon/ racsmu&mrawEiojzi tm;avsmwy;upjy/aeom armia'gi;tz
rwaqa[mi; uz;0Eiq&onrm tx;yi0r;omtm;& jzpapcon/ [maeom0r;u
jznly;aemu rr\ talumi;pu wiyicon/ au;ar;{nccon/ , i;uez;pm ('w , yi)
wi armixiu

]rr\ vtyaom qEwpv;wp0wn; jynpraomim &nre;í armiz;0wn;
[aom b;b;u;tm; ye;q;r; [aom t&uaopmwjzi o'glunjl uyvl
yaZmavon/ (pm-32)

[azmjyxm;ygon/ wp&mwn;om;jzpoarmiz;0u t&uaopmwjzi vavao; r&atmi
au;ar;{nconu ye;q;r;wEi o'glunjluyvLyaZmavon [pmu;ay;u;o;jzi
a&;om;xm;ygon/ armia'gi; \pwwirrqE jyn0Eia&;twu tpr;uetm;xwyu
[mo&o ajrmupmojriapcygon/ racsmEiaw/qEia&;twu wwpr;or\tm;ue
xwaeom armia'gi; \ tajtaeuxi&;ap&e xrpmoa&mxm; [evn; jzpygon/

ez;pm0w ('w , yi;)wivn; u\uvwolarmia'gi;a&muvmjci;talumi; upre
or\ armiz;0u racsm \ armirm;tm; ajmq&ji;talumi;t&i;u

]rrw&om;wp0; wp&mwpau; o\ u\;u\;au\mau\sm re;rc;vmjci;tay:ü
tom; , vaomarmiz;0r aer0iciyi\i vpaomvuzu&nqiwpqi
wi vuzu&naomu&i; v\00utyaom pum;reor\ue;? a'0e;?
umre;? yuo[qtyaom a&;ynm&u;w\uisip0 orm½;ustwi; wpqi
ypm;rxm;? tau;rqi;b azmuoncvuron/})(pm-35)

[azmjyxm;on/ armia'gi;uEwywc t&uz;ay;um jyipcaomvn; armiz;0u vpn
vaom vuzu&nqiwi tm;&yg;&owi;jzeczywi ra[mo"mZmwawvm talumi;t&m
Eiwipm;um]v\00utyaompum;?]a&;ynm&u;w\ uisip0jzpon pmu;ay;u;o; pum;
rsm;u wrixnoi;azmjyxm;o;ji [mo&ou cpm;&apygon/ armixi\ oa&m [eu
yjyipmawEiygon/ vuzu&nqiwiowi;jzey [ontalumi;t&mEi qeui bu

pum;rm;u aocmpma&c, o;p;xm;ojivn; tlr;tarmu rwnve;vaom vloabm
avmuoabmu [mo&oEi tw qijcirapygon/

xji armia'gi;u racsmu 'w, turg;&mwivn; atnive;r vc&avon/
armia'gi;\ z;pmuvc&aomtjzpu armixiuez;pm ('w, yi;)wi

]armia'gi;rm avmitrxxr vwvya&pce;o wpvr;wn;Ei o'aygu
prim racsm\E;naom vuuvav;u uysmuoqí cg;ye;u vm;vu
onwi iviawm [n;onyrm ½uun;xpc&e;í ri;w;vuou
lum;vu&y;onaemu racsm\E;nrayami;azmitaom yg;Epjiu
lur;wr;aom vu0g;apmi;Eu oEi tw tmyy&nripao;aomyg;pyr
½e;&i;pm a&&wvuaom racsm\ tpru; towu ajcEpacsmi;u t;ue
Eium oabmqyo w&ur;pi;av own;}}(pm-40)

[a&om;xm;onrm to;upum;paorwp&yyijzpygon/

]vwvya&pce;?]o'ayguprim?]iviawm [n;onyrm ½u [n;xpc&e;} pon
pmu;ay;u;o;pum;rm;u xnoi;o;xm;on/ xji]E;naomyg;Epji?]lur;wr;aom
vu0g;apmi;Eu o [í qeui bupum;wuvn; wrixnoi;í o;xm;onrm
racsmEi racsm tprw\ tajaetau jria, miapygon/]oabmqyo w&ur;pi;av
own;} [twntcep [ewio;on 0gutq;ow]own;}u to;jy\vuieojzi
armia'gi;\ cavor\ oa&us jzpyu [mo&oEi wu jria, miapygon/ tjzptyuEi
rvuon 0gutq;owu o;xm;oji tvvtacsmajzpeive;aom armia'gi;\
tajaetau oa&m [ermyiapon/ uarmu urEive;aom armia'gi;\ ez;pmu
trwxixi owjyr apon to;upum;paoryijzpygon/

ez;pm0w/vm to;upum;paorrm;on [mo&ouvn;ay;pr;aeon/ qv&i;
u/vn; yrxixi&m;vmapon/ pmayo;pum;rm;? tajymo;pum;rm;zi pmq\ tcix;
ut o;ca&om;Eipr;aom armixi\ a& [eu awl&Eiygon/

lcio;oycu

armixi\ez;pm0wwi a0g [m&paojci;? teu t"ym, paojci;? to;upum;
paojci;wu awl&&ygon/ a0g [m&paojci;rm;u trsm;q;awl&ygon/ a0g [m&
paojci;rm;wi pum;v;op wxio;aom a0g [m&paoru trsm;tjym; awl&ygon/
armixiono;½;o;p0 pum;v;Epv;r t"ym, wuaygi;pyí yrxraom t"ym,
jzpay:vmap&e wxio;pwwonrmvn; x;jcm;aom a& [ewp&yjzpygon/ xolaom
a0g [m&paojci;rm;on o;½;o;p0ru xuum x;jcm;pmay:vixi&m;aealumi;vn;
awl&ygon/ Zmwvr;ZmwaqmEi aemuc0e;usi u pum;v;en;en;Ei xxrray:vi
xi&m;aeapalumi;vn; awl&ygon/

armixi\ez;pm 0w\waw\&&aom teu t"ym, paojci;rsm;on [mo&ou
ay;pr;Ei½r\ru tr;tarmurwnaom vloabm avmuoabmrsm;u vn; txit&m;
azmjyaeav&ygon/ armixi\ taw;ta&qe;opyu azmaqmiaeaom paojci;rsm;vn;
jzpygon/

xjyiez;pm0w\vm to;upum;paojci;rsm;tjzp pmu;ay\u;o;rsm;? taiymo;rsm;
xnoi;a&om;xm; [eu aw\&ygon/ armixi\ oa&m [eu txit&m;azmjyaeom
tz\rm;vn;jzpygon/ pma&q&marmixi\ x;jcm;aom oa&m [ersm;alum i]armixiav}
[yi qprwij\u&jci;jzpygon/]ez;pm)0w\vm paojci;rsm;on vn;]armixiav}[
x;x;jcm;jcm; orwraon oa&m [ersm;jzpalumi; aw\Eiygon/

xpaorrsm;on toÓP? taw\ur&iu:urumvwi rrEi tvr;umaeaom
talumi;t&muprsm;ü rnr\vv0ó [jyonjzpap tv\ tacsmacsmomjzp&y oabmu
[mo&oeitw ojriapEialumi;aw\&ygon/ bompum;to;pr;&n xujruaom?
pmqtcix;u yiEipmto;cum avmuoabm vloabmwu xxrroa&mEiaom
pma&q&marmixi\ tpr;rsm;u xe;jyaealum i;vn; aw\Eirn jzpygon/

e*;

armixi\ez;pm(yxryi;)Ei ez;pm('w,yi;)r paorrsm;on pmay tmeoiu
yrxu jruapalumi; aw\Eirn jzpygon/ armixi\oa&m [eu tjcm; ½axmirsm;r
quvvuavvmEiygao;on/ a&[eynmwiyg0ion tvumen;emrsm;? qutpy
ponwjzi armixi\ pmayvu&mrsm;u qe;ppEiygao;on/

usr;u;pm&i;

ciri? armi("EjzL)/ (2011)/ a&[eynme'ge;/&eue? pwu;cic\pmay/

aZmx;e? a'guwm(bmomjye)/ (2015)/ bmonaA'Eipmay (pmaya&[eynm rwqu)/ &eue?
Epu mvrsm;pmay/

xi? armi/ (1999)/ ua'gi;(q|r t\ur)/ &eue? yg&r pmay/

t*vybmom

Wales, Katie, (2007), A dictionary of stylistics, 2nd edn. Edinburgh Gale-Person Education Ltd.

t iwmeu

staffnew (2019) Types of Language Deviation Retrieved June, 9,2019 from [https:// staffmew, uny, ac.id](https://staffmew.uny.ac.id)

uav;0lrU jrerm $\frac{1}{2}$;&mavmi;avlyiywi oqav $\frac{1}{2}$ aom aw;uAsmrsm;

r;r;at;*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on uav;0lrUwui;yaom avmi;avlyiywi oqav $\frac{1}{2}$ on aw;uAsmrsm;u avvmwijyxm;ji;jzpygon/ avlyiyrm;wi oqav $\frac{1}{2}$ aom aw;uAsmrsm;u tavvmc tjpz ovrwavyggon/ ui;qí;oaowejyaomen;? vy*vrsm;u awlqar;jre;on en;rm;uto;jyí avvmwijyxm;yggon/ uav;0lrU \ ajr r;uEmoiiji? avmi;avlyiy ori;t u:O;? avmi;avlyiywi oqav $\frac{1}{2}$ aom aw;uAsmrsm;u avvmwijyxm;yggon/ ppmwr;ygazmxw wijyc:uon q ,Epv &m o jrerm $\frac{1}{2}$;&m yawmwpiczpon avmi;av lyiyEioqav $\frac{1}{2}$ on jrermpay $\frac{1}{2}$ aom jrermaw;uAsmrsm; \ tce;u@uvn; o $\frac{1}{2}$ Eirnizpygon/

e'ge;

wpacwwpcgu jrermwon Eii twi; $\frac{1}{2}$ jrppOacsmi; $\frac{1}{2}$;wpav(mur yiv , zsm; xatmi avuto;jyom;vmcl uon/ wi;jyntycyaom b&iri;jrwron jyno? jynom;rm; wiatmiavon r $\frac{1}{2}$ rjzpvtyaoma& , mO jzpayon/ xromru jrerm $\frac{1}{2}$;&m 12 v&moyawmrsm;wivn; wpctyg t0izpon/

csi;wi;jrpEijrpomjrpq&mae&ma'owi wn $\frac{1}{2}$ aom uav;0lrUwivn; avon to;0iaoma& , mOwprsl;jzpon/ pa'o0e;uiwi aexiaomorm;u avu ur;uipmavmcwí avtalumi;u pw0ipm;uon/ uav;0lrUwi vecaom Epaygi; (100)ausmuyi avmi;avxi;ji;? jrerm $\frac{1}{2}$;&mavmi;avlyiyrm; iyvyji; tav $\frac{1}{2}$ con/ xojrerm $\frac{1}{2}$;&mavmi;avlyiyrm; p0quriywui;yvm&mr ou&mZ (1983)cEplyiy ui;yty;wi talumi;trr;sl;alumi ui;yEijci;r $\frac{1}{2}$ awmay/

Epaygi;(30)umwriryaeaom jrerm $\frac{1}{2}$;&mavmi;avlyiyu;u ou&mZ (2012) cEpwi 'uPomcg A' $\frac{1}{2}$ yym;awmjrwu; \ Ep(100)jynyaZmyEi tw jyevnazmxw usi;ycon/ xolusi;y&mwi a $\frac{1}{2}$;tp0tqu Ewzivuqi ur;conavlyiywi oqav $\frac{1}{2}$ aomoci;rm;u pmwr;wi azmxwwijyxm;yggon/

1/ uav;0lrU ajrr;uEmoiijiEi wnae&m t u:O;

uav;0lrUon ppui;wi;uav;c $\frac{1}{2}$ iwi $\frac{1}{2}$ on/ ajrmuvww' 22'*& 58 rep Ei 23 '*& 37 rep? ta $\frac{1}{2}$ avmi*w' 94 '*& 11 repEi 94 '*& 58 replum;wi wn $\frac{1}{2}$ on/ uav;0lrUe , ajrmubuwi armvuUlrUe , ? awmibuwi ri;ui;lrUe , ? taemubuwi uav;lrUe ,w qupyvu $\frac{1}{2}$ on/ lrUe , t u: , t0e;rm 906.94

* uxu? jrermXne? &wemywuov/

pw&erijzpon/ ta^{1/2}urtaemu 38.6 ri ^{1/2}n vsm;ly;ajrmurawmi 23.5 ri^{1/2}n vsm;
on/

Arm vrs; trsm;tjym;aexiily; csi;? ^{1/2}r;? u&i? &ciEi tjcm;wi;&i;om;rs;
ten;i, paexiiluon/ ytupwpaom&mo0w^{1/2}on/ rre, \ 85 &mciEe;au sm
{&, mrm opawm{&, mijzpon/ uav;0lrUe, \ t"upuy; o;Erm pyg;? ytrsl;rs;?
Er;? aellum? ajymi;? [i;o; [i;^{1/2}ur sm; puys;luon/ tjcm;aoma'orm;Ei a&vr;?
ue;vr;(armawmum;vr;)? quo, xm;on/ uav;0lrUwi &yuuu;(3)cEi
uav;0lrUe, wi au; ^{1/2}maygi;(125)^{1/2}m^{1/2}on/ vr;ye;quo, a&t& uav;lrUe, \
wcg;0oz, ^{1/2}aeaomallumi]]uav;0}} [ac:wi orwcon/

2/ uav;0lrU 'uP omcg nawmaemiawmEpq b&m;ori; t u;0;

uav;0lrU? b;pr;au sm i;wu yxrq&mawm 0;o&Eiawm&au sm i;yxr q&mawm
0;ae, s naemiEpyg;won ou&mZ1270jynEp? uqevwivum'yac: o [Vule;o
b&m;z;ucs&i; 'uP omcg b&m;u r [maAm"yitppr anniui;om;jzi ^{1/2}yym;Epq
ylur;x í yiaqmiciuon/

uav;0lrUola&muv(i) te;yip^{1/2}m? ye;yq&m u;0;aygx tyEíxvyapcon/
1270 jynEp? 0gqvqe;(8)&uaewi avmav? avmavmi;wjzi wiw, pm qi, i
yiaqmily; b;pr;au sm i;wi aemiawm t q^{1/2}yym;awm u vn;au mi;? awm&au sm i;wi
nawm t q ^{1/2}yym;awm u vn;au mi; ue;0yawmrcon/ b&m;yawm&ur sm;rm
weaqmire;vjynaeEi ewawmvjynaer sm;jzpon/ , ctcewi &mo0wtajctae
t&jymo voajymi;a^{1/2}Uxm;on/

2? 1/ uav;0lrU jrerm^{1/2}&mavmi;avlyiy

, Oaus;ru, aysmu v(i) vrs;yg u, aysmuwwon/ rrw, Oaus;rtqitwe;
w;wujrirm;vmap&e wrjryaysmuu, aeaom ^{1/2}&m"avrs;u azmxwqe;oplu&
rnjzpon/ avobiyawm on a^{1/2};jrermri;rs;vuxuuyi wcr;wem;ui;yav
^{1/2}aomyawmwpjzpon/ &mo0wunvi íjrpa&jiwi vi;avlirouce awm ovi;
vwi ui;yav^{1/2}ygon/

txuci;wi;a'o uav;0lrUwi Epaygi;&mci í wrjryaysmuu, ve;yg;^{1/2}c
aom a^{1/2};a [mi;avmi;av u;rs;u csi;wi;jrptwi;a&c í ou&mZ (2012) cEp?
Zee0g&v (6? 7? 8)&ur sm;ü jrerm^{1/2}&mavmi;avlyiyu ui;ycygon/ uav;0lrU
jrerm^{1/2}&mavmi;avlyiyu csi;wi;jrptwi; ui;yav^{1/2}on/ wmtumta0;ur
wpEpEiwpEp owrwcurway/ jzpwnvmaom a&allumi;ay:wi rwn íomwm
tumta0;u owrwygon/ avlyiyu -

- (1) jrerm^{1/2}; &m avav^m t^m; up^m; en; u quvuaz^m xwxe; or; o^m; a&;
- (2) jynax^m i^m ppw"mwar; jrla&; Ei jrerm^{1/2}; &m , Oau; r t p0 t v^m r^m; xe; or; a&;
- (3) jrerm^m v^r; w\ pn; v; n nwr^u o^{1/2} yazma&;
- (4) Z? v\ v? 0& , Ei , Oaom^u , vu^u u^u cir? pw"mw^u u^u cir t p0^{1/2} aeapa&;
- (5) t^r; o^m; a&; pw"mw^u az^m ne; on paygi; aq^m i^{1/2} u^w wr? u , u^s;
pe^v wr? t oⁱ; t z^u pw"mw^{1/2} r^w u az^m aq^m i^a &; /
- (6) jrerm^m t^m; up^m; ur^m u^v r; ap& rⁿ qaom & nre; c^u Ei t n Eiiw^m
avav^m i^y i^r sm; r^m y^g 0i , Olyⁱ i^r n avav^m t^m; up^m; or^m; r^m; ay; x^e; v^m a&;
pon & n^{1/2} , c^u r^m; jⁱ uⁱ; y^c y^g on/

av^y i^y wi-

- (1) lyⁱ i^y 0i , Olyⁱ i^r n av^m i; av^r sm; on rEu í eygw^t v^u , Olyⁱ i& rⁿ/
- (2) yw^v n lyⁱ i& rⁿ/ Ep^v m; lyⁱ í t rway; pep^j zi , Olyⁱ i& rⁿ/ wpyEi vⁱ i
wprw/ oa& u^y gu(1)rw &^{1/2} rⁿ/
- (3) , Olyⁱ i on av(2)p; u b , ^n^m rEu í yx^r t v^m; , Olyⁱ i& rⁿ/
- (4) 'w , t v^m; u b , ^n^m maj^y mi; í , Olyⁱ i& rⁿ/
- (5) re; ausm? re; jz^w? re; u; rav^m &/ i^y v^y y^g u t^{1/2}; o^w rwrⁿ/
- (6) ye; qw& m^w i av^m wu^j zi v^r; x; Erí ye; r^q w&/ i^y v^y y^g u t^{1/2};
o^w rwrⁿ/
- (7) qw , &^{1/2} ly; aomye; a& o^u s o^m; y^g u t^{1/2}; o^w rwrⁿ/ v(or [w)ye;
a& x o^v wu^y gu t^{1/2}; o^w rwrⁿ/
- (8) lyⁱ i^y 0 , &^{1/2} aom av^u o^m tEiay; rⁿ/
- (9) lyⁱ i^y 0 ip^m & i; ay; x^m; on v^p mⁱ; r avav^m o^m; r^m; aj^y mi; vav^m cw^j ci;
ri^y &/ vaj^y mi; y^g u t^{1/2}; o^w rwrⁿ/
- (10) lyⁱ i^y 0i avav^m o^m; r^m; on wn0wp0wqi& rⁿ/
- (11) lyⁱ iav^m i; av wppi; Ei wppi; avav^m 0; a&(5)0; t u^m t x av0; t n
x^m; í , Olyⁱ i& rⁿ/
- (12) avav^m 0; a& (5)0; Ei t x u^y gu yon0; a& t v^u wp0; vⁱ (2)ay
t u^m Ee; jⁱ ta^u smay; & rⁿ/
- (13) lyⁱ i^y 0 i^r n t oⁱ; o^m; 0; a& p^m & i; t w^t u^s ay; & rⁿ/
- (14) lyⁱ i^y 0 iav^m i; av wppi; vⁱ t eavav^m o^m; (6)0; x^m; ^{1/2} Ei& rⁿ/

- (15) $\text{lyiy}^0\text{iavmi}; \text{avon wpyv}^1\text{iaavm}^0\text{om}; (3)^0\text{omvv}, \&\text{rn}/ (6)^0;$
 $\text{tx}^1\text{vv}, \text{lyygu xyrrvv}, \&/$
- (16) $\text{re}; \text{c}; \text{ci}; \text{rsm}; \text{u lyiyu}; \text{i}; \text{ya}; \& \text{tzr}^1\text{owrwrn}/$
- (17) $\text{tu}, \text{í}^1\text{trwtrsm}; \text{q}; \text{avrm}; \text{wnaeygu avmi}; \text{avrm}; \text{jyevn}, \text{Olyi}$
 $\&\text{rn}/$
- (18) $, \text{Olyiavmi}; \text{avtzrsm}; \text{on wmvw}^1\&\text{mwi wmvw}^1\text{it}^1\text{zravuu}^1\text{iw},$
 $\text{xe}; \text{or}; \&\text{rn}/$
- (19) $\text{wmvw}^1\text{tcuay}; \text{c}; \&\text{mrrwr wmr}^1\text{xu}^1\&/ (3)^1\text{urww apm}^1\text{iwm}^1\text{xuygu}$
 $\text{t}^{\frac{1}{2}}; \text{owrwrn}/$
- (20) $\text{lyiy}^0\text{iavrsm}; \text{wp}^1\text{ur}, \text{Olyi}; \text{í}^1\text{ye}; \text{Olyi}; \text{wi}; \text{'icyt}^1\text{z}^{\frac{1}{2}}\&\text{mr}^1\text{@yo}$
 $\text{avu quuyí owi}; \text{y}; \&\text{el}/$
- (21) $\text{tji}; \text{ym}; \text{z}, \&\text{m}^1\text{talumi}; \text{t}; \&\text{may}; \text{ayguvmv}^1\text{í}^1\text{lyiyu}; \text{i}; \text{ya}; \& \text{aumrw}^1\text{}$
 $\text{tq}; \text{tjzwo}^1\text{m twnjzpon}/$
- $\text{pon pn}; \text{ur}; \text{c}; \text{ursm}; \text{j}; \text{zi}^1\text{ tao}; \text{pwuyrwxm}; \text{onu awl}; \text{ygon}/$
 $\text{uav}; \text{Olr}^1\text{te}; \text{yw}^0\text{e}; \text{u}; \text{iwi}^1\text{a}^{\frac{1}{2}}; , \text{ciu}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{caom avmi}; \text{av}^1\text{u}; \text{rsm}; \text{rm}$

p0	av^1trn	$\text{avm}^0\text{om}; \text{O}; \&$	$\text{yei};$
1/	$\text{per}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{uav}; \text{O})$	$(22)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
2/	$\text{a}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{r}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{ui}; \text{O})$	$(27)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
3/	$\text{ewr}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{ue}; \text{awm})$	$(30)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
4/	$\text{ewoi}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{ue}; \text{awm})$	$(21)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
5/	$\text{ewri}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(, \text{om})$	$(21)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
6/	$\text{atmiye}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{aus}; \text{awmi}^0\text{O};)$	$(21)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
7/	$\text{jra}^1\text{'gi}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{ue}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{m})$	$(15)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
8/	$\text{aZm}^0\text{wavmi}; \text{av}(\text{com})$	$(25)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
9/	$\text{aZm}^0\text{wavmi}; \text{av}(\text{com})$	$(15)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
10/	$\text{pear}^1\text{mi}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{t}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{m})$	$(25)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
11/	$\text{p}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{m}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{ye}; \text{qu}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{m})$	$(15)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
12/	$\text{aZm}^0\text{oe}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{ajr}^1\text{um}; \text{m}; \text{m})$	$(17)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
13/	$\text{a}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{aus}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{bi}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{m})$	$(18)^0;$	$(1)^0;$
14/	$\text{jrr}; \text{avmi}; \text{av}(\text{bi}^{\frac{1}{2}}\text{m})$	$(21)^0;$	$(1)^0;$

15/	ewule;avmi;av(bi ^{1/2} m)	(16)0;	(1)0;
16/	ewjrm;avmi;av(0Eyw)	(21)0;	(1)0;
17/	jrpr;avmi;av(anmiyi om)	(21)0;	(1)0;

2² 2// 2012cEp uav;0lr¹⁰ avmi;avly¹iy

cs;wi;jrptxuyi; uav;0? ri;ui;? armvua'orsm;wi Epaygi;(100)
ausmu to;tycon avmi;av^u;rsm;u ,cwibe;u;ausmi;rsm;wi trww&
xe;or;x^m;uon/

avmi;av^{rsm};u vonxuyí vatmiiyiqiluon/ avmi;t^{vr}m ywi^{1/2}y
jzpon/ yyi;wiyPu^{1/2}y? aZm*^{3/2}y? ew^{1/2}y? olu^m;1/2y? Av^muew^{1/2}yponjzi
Epou&m t^{1/2}yrsm;xnav^{1/2}ly; tcs¹⁰uav trnuvuí t^{1/2}ywily; tvqia^v1/2u
on/ (Oyrm-pear^{mi};avwi arm;w;aeaom t^{1/2}yu xvyx^m;on/)

av\0;yi;ao^{mi}\xywi repa^{1/2}cav^{1/2}on/ ri;ui;r¹⁰le , com^{1/2}m^{1/2} aZm0w
avmi;avon ao^{mi}iwi a^{1/2}tp^{pc}x^m;on/ avorm;rsm;on wn0wpu0wí , 0lyi
luon/ avmcw&mwi ouvx^e; &ipn;t0wp^u;rsm;u^vn; pn;aEmix^m;&on/

avly¹iy0i&etwu avmcwrnoua^{1/2};cs , &mwi-

(1) ue;rma&aumi;jci;

(2) vuwaumi;jci;

(3) <uuom;aumi;jci;

(4) &ity u^s , jci;

(5) t&ytar^{mi};aumi;jci; pontcurs^m;Eijynp&on/

avuly¹iy0i&e a&caomtcg ly¹iy0ir(15)&uce^uí avua&c&on/ a&c
ontcg av\0;? cg;? ywwilr¹⁰awm , 0? e , awm , 0? ^{1/2}mawm , 0[í ueawmy (3)y
wi&on/ xueawmyu yqe;(ewuawm)u wia^y&on/ xaem^uavmi; avay:wi
avmcwrnavom;uwi í 0; tav; tayg? wuuib , oe nnoeponjzia&ce&on/

uav;0lr¹⁰? cs;wi;jrptwi; ou&mZ(2012)cEpZee0g&v(6)&uaer(8) &uae
tx(3)&uwiwi avmi;avly¹iyu jye^vnazm^xwu^si;yc&m a^{1/2};a[mi; avmi;av(5)
pi; 0ia&mu , 0lyicon/ , i;avmi;av^u;rsm;r^m

(1) uav;0? awm&ausmi; -per;avmi;av

(2) uav;0? ui;^{1/2}m -a^{1/2}r;avmi;av

(3) ri;ui;? com^{1/2}m -aZm0w^vavmi;av

(4) ri;ui;? ule;awm^{1/2}m

-ewr;avmi;av

(5) ri;ui;? , om^{1/2}m

-ewri;avmi;av

wjzpluon/

lyiywi ri;ui;lrle,? ule;awm^{1/2}m ewr;avmi;avu yxrq? (qaiusy 500000)? uav;0lrle, ui;^{1/2}m a^{1/2}r;avmi;avu 'w, q (qaiusy 300000)wu &^{1/2}con/ u eavmi;avrsm;u Eporq(aiusy 100000) c;jricon/

3/ uav;0lr^{1/2} jrerm^{1/2};&mavmi;avlyiywi oqav^{1/2}aom aw;uAsmrsm;

au;Z;awm^{1/2}i &euer^{1/2}? em*vP*t b; uav;0q&mawm^{1/2}u;^{1/2}p0u b&m;yawm wi tcitcgoiwi; ue;y? a&y^{1/2}sm;ui;yav^{1/2}on/ (1983)cEp uav;0 awm&au^{1/2}sm; b&m;yawm (70)urajrmu A'yZe, yawmwi jrerm^{1/2};&mavmi;av;u;rsm;u lyiyui;y ly; aemuyi;wi quvuui;yEijci; r^{1/2}awmay/

vecaomEp(30)ce'u jywawmuom;aom avmi;avlyiyu 2012 cEp Ep(100) jyn A'yZe, yawmEi tw jyevnawjric&on/ , ciuavmi;avlyiywi oqav^{1/2} aom aw;uAsmrsm;upmayEi twtu^{1/2}rwwr;wixm;jci; rawl&ay/ Ewjziom tp0 tqu rwom;oqcluon/ xaluniavlyiywi oqav^{1/2}aomoci;rsm;u tou (60)au^{1/2}sm t^{1/2}, ^{1/2}avawm^{1/2}om;? 0goem^{1/2}iwp0; xrar;jre;ly; avvmwijyxm;yg on/ uAsmy'a&aygi;(8)y' ^{1/2}mazaw^{1/2}cygon/

3? 1/ talumi; t&myi; avvmcsu

uav;0lr^{1/2}jrerm^{1/2};&m avmi;avlyiywi b&m;baw;uAsmrsm;? avawmo aw;uAsmrsm;? ocsyuAsmrsm;u oqav^{1/2}allumi; awl&on/

3? 1? 1/ b&m;baw;uAsmrsm;

jrermwwi 12v&moyawmrsm;? wi;&i;om;vrsl;rsm; \ ^{1/2}&m"avyawmrsm;? u;u, , lunrqi&m boma&yawmrsm; [í wpEpwmumvywv;yawmrsm; ^{1/2}ayon/ uav;0lr^{1/2}jrerm^{1/2};&m avmi;avlyiyon 'uPomcg nawm? aemiawm b&m;Epqyawm ui;y&mr talumi;yí ay:xu vmaom ^{1/2}&myawmwpcjzpon/

0;Z#v(ti'i;u;)on b&m;yawmEiywouí a^{1/2};pmrurw, or;qn; xm; aom b&m;yawmav;cs;u;wpy'u A'yZe, yawm&mjyn armue;pmapmiwi azmxw wijyxm;on/ jrerm t b"mewi av;cs; [onrm

av;cs;^av;*sl;^e = tcsl;av;cygaom uAsmwrsl; ¹

[t"ym, &on/ av;cs;u;uAsmrmr av;cs;uAsmay:wi xyrclxi ÓPuejrl; í
eabxytrsm; xnoi;um av;cs;utv^{1/2}oavmu ^{1/2}n^{1/2}vsm;u;u, cr;em;pm a&zlaom
uAsmtpywprsl;jzpon/

b&m;yawmrwwr;av;cs;u;wi tcsl;av;cyg^{1/2}ly; yxrtcs;wi

ppui;awmi? a^{1/2}0gacsmi;uo? aovmawmiywcg q;ygvl? &y^{1/2}u;ajr
b;a^{1/2}pr;wir? en;vr;ueppmazmí? "rmawmllr^{1/2}ua&at;wu? wuau;cg
tx;trn^{1/2}ayon 0;o&jrwax&q&m/

[z\pyxm;on/ b;pr;ausmi;wu^{1/2}u; \ yw0e;uio^{1/2}m, my? b;pr; ausmi;wuwi
owi;o;í trsm;a0ae, smu w&m;"ra&at;wuau;v^{1/2}u^{1/2}aom aus;Z;^{1/2}i q&mawm^{1/2}u;
0;o&\ *Puazmxwwijyxm;yg on/

uAsm \ 'w, tcsl;wi

o[av 'ayue;qo? &nne;cg a'opmcsí? r[mapw z;ajrmom;p0u?
jrtvm;yi toí^{1/2}ayon? yiaAm"anmi r[m \? awmitvmomcg tcu
u^{1/2}v? nmvuawm aqmícs, í? aeminwyrjcm;&atmi? u, pm;awm
&n, í wpq pu;u, v^{1/2}xm;ayon? b&m;'uPm

[z\pyxm;on/ A'b^{1/2}om0jrer^{1/2}mwon jrwpmb&m;yiawmr&m aAm"anmiyi \
awmibuui;u, í 'uPomcg b&m;xvyu;u, av^{1/2}uon/ talumi;rm þajr?
þae&on ZrL'yg^{1/2}v^{1/2}u^{1/2}mawmiue;wiwn^{1/2}ly; aAm"anmiyion jrwpmb&m;tr
íyyiawmrcaomallumijzpon/ x, lunr"avtwi; q&mawm0;o&Ei 0;ae, snaemi
Epyg;won o[Vue;o omoema&t, 0g'rsm; qn;y;&eom;a&mup0u r[m
aAm"yitppr anmiui;om;u ^{1/2}ymm;(2)qylur; xíyiaqmícl^{1/2}uon/ jrwpmb&m;^{1/2}i
u, pm; u;u, &mtjzp xvycallumi; rwwr;wixm;yg on/

ww, tcsl;wi

nweaqmi? aemieawm^{1/2}yg? vjynac:tcg nm;&ijzi? trsm;uovjzpapz?
cgEpp0 yawmvyayon? tm;xwu 'g, um xm0&tllr

[í\pyxm;yg on nawmaeiawmEpqu b&m;yawmuis;yiyyon &ur^{1/2}sm;u
rwwr;wixm;ji;jzpon/ 'uPomcg nawmtqu weaqmire;vjynaewi
vn;aumi? aemiawmtqu ewawmvjynaewi vn;aumi; yawm&utjzp owwr
umu^{1/2}i;yon tp0tvm^{1/2}allumi;azmjyxm;on/

¹ jrerm^{1/2}pm tzl? 1991? 311/

pwwtcsl;wi

**uav;0i ,el? at;jrpm*garb;yji? ½me;ueax& oCmwu? pvipm
yiaqmīrwygv? b&m;y&aru? trsm;a0aew rvy&atmī? u ,qr;uy
ony**

**[zqx;m;on/ b&m;yui;yontcgwi uav;0lrte;wp0u½ oCmrsm;u yiaqmi
í qr;uyontav½allumi; aEmi;vw rwom;o½ap&e rwwr;wicygon/**

**'uPomcgb&m;jynyaZmywi 0;ausmvi("rmp& ,) a&zlaom ½pq ,ay:
aw;xywpy'u vn; awl&on/ aw;xyEiywouí u0bm&w ur;wi yyg;
0;ausm&iu**

**aw;½i ,? aw;½;u;wu wpzexyv;u py[y&aomalumi aw;xy[
ac:on²**

[ziqx;m;ygon/

**&mjynyaZmy *Piy;ywem½pq ,ay:aw;xywi ty'av;y'yg½allumi; awl&
on/ yxrty'wi**

**be;awma&mi ½et0ixetyi omoemjrwaAm" awmicu&wemu
aqmiyicgEpyg; 'uPomcg toa&aqmion jrwnaemiz;wb&m;**

**[zqx;m;ygon/ A'jrwpm b&m;omoem yivi;pnym ,maeaom tce tcgjzpon/
'uPomcg nawmaem iawm b&m;Epqon q&mawm0;o&Eiq&mawm 0ae ,snaemi
Epyg;won r[maAm"yitppr awmibuanniu;u yur;xo ,aqmivmly;
u;u ,cici;jzpon x;jcm;aomb&m;Epqjzpalumi; zqx;m;ygon/**

'w , ty'wi

**b;pr;& , ausm;awmrm jrwaemib*0gpnm;? *Pv\ax
tjym;[mr\ ax&Epyg;aocsm awm&ajr0[mee;rmjzi npjre;
yive;jrwawZm**

**[í a&zlx;m;ygon/ q&mawm u;Epyg;on xnawmaem iawm b&m;Epqu b;pr;
ausm;wi aem iawm tq awm&ausm;wi nawm tq ue;0yapí b&m;yawm&ursm;
owrwui;yyaZmclun/**

ww , ty'wi

**&mjynEpwia&muvmly ciarmupmo'g tm;awe? naemiEpyg;jrwalumi;
atmiyawm xyavmi;q iEaysm**

² ausm&i? 0;? r 1320? 302/

[í z l q x m ; y g o n / x u o n a w m a e m i a w m b & m ; E p q u E p p 0 r y s u y a Z m y u i ; y
c o n r m , c t c g w i & m j y n E p ? E p (1 0 0) j y n c l y j z p a l u m i ; r w w r ; w i x m ; y g o n /

p w w t y ' w i

b ; o & b ; a e , s n a e m i E p a z m u j r w 0 ; a w m c s o v l a v ; --- / a w m & a u s m i ;

o r i ; p 0 r m v w i ; c i u ½ m ; & i a w m a v ; --- / r s l ; q u o p w ; y m ; ½ n a t m i

b ; b m ; t a r a p m i x e ; y g p l a v ; -- /

[í a & ; z l x m ; y g o n / j r w p m b & m ; \ u , p m ; u ; u , & m b & m ; E p q u x v y c a o m
q & m a w m 0 ; o & E i q & m a w m 0 ; a e , w u p w u & n r e ; v u l u n n l p m ½ c ; u e a w m
x m ; o n / a e m i o r i ; t p 0 t q u a j m p r w j z p a p & e b ; b m ; t a r w p c j z p a o m ½ ; & m y a w m
b & m ; y a w m r s m ; u r s l ; q u o p w u a p m i x e ; y g [v u q i u r ; t a r a y ; x m ; y g o n /

t x u y g u A s m E p y ' u a v v m l u n & m w i b & m ; o r i ; u r w w r ; w i x m ; a l u m i ;
a w l & o n / b & m ; E p q j z p a w m r v m y ? x b & m ; E p q u y i a q m i c a o m a u s ; Z ; ½ i
q & m a w m b u ; E p y g ; ? x b & m ; E p q a u s m i ; w u t o ; o ; w i u e ; 0 y p y , a w m r y ? E p p 0 r y s u
b & m ; y a w m r s m ; u i ; y l u y p o n w u r w w r ; w i x m ; j c i ; j z p & m r s l ; q u o p v i , r s m ;
r w o m ; x u a l u m i ; a w l & o n /

3? 1? 2/ a v a w m o a w ; u A s m r s m ;

j r e r m w o n u , r i ; u , c i ; b 0 w i j r e r m a & w y r a w m \ t i t m ; u a z m u s l ; a o m
t a e j z i a v i y i y u a w m 0 i y a w m w p & y t j z p c r ; c r ; e m ; e m ; x n x n 0 g 0 g u i ; y l u o n /
o l u e b 0 o l a & m u ½ a o m t c g w i r w j z n ; j z n ; a r ; r e a y s m u u , v e ; y g ; j z p v m c o n /

a v i y i y o n r q w r e p a o m Z ? v l v ? 0 & , w E i & n r e ; c u y e ; w i a & m u & e
w u n v u n b u l ; p m ; & o n y a w m w p c j z p o n / x l y i y r s m ; w i a v a w m o m ; r s m ; w p 0 ; E i
w p 0 ; t m ; a y ; o n t a e j z i a w ; o c s i ; r s m ; o q a v ½ l u o n / x a w ; o c s i ; r s m ; u a v a w m o
[a c : o n / a v a w m o E i y w o u í u A s m t w j r p ? p e p o p p m t y w i -

o a b m a v a z m i w j z i w i a q m i , o m ; & a o m o m r ? e m r ? t c r ; t e m ; t j c i ;

t & m w u a & ; o m ; p u ; z l q t y a o m o c i ; r s l ; u a v a w m o [a c : o n / ³

- [í a z m j y x m ; o n / u a v ; 0 l r l u a v m i ; a v i y i y w i v n ; a w ; u A s m r s m ; ? w p e n ;
a v a w m o o c i ; u A s m r s m ; u o q a v ½ a l u m i ; a w l & y g o n / w p c e u p e r ; a v a w m o m ; w
o q c a o m u r ; a v q m u w i c i ; w p y ' u a w l ½ & o n / x a w ; u A s m t p w i -

(a [v m l u a r m i w 0 g ; v m l u a r m i w) ²

- [t p c s x m ; o n / q u í -

³ u r m & ? t ½ i ? 1 9 7 7 ? 2 0 2 1

(per;&, avawm ... avawm a&ay:rm 0v|omaysm)² a&ay:rm
 0v|omaysm ... (ausmygayw, trsm; ... per;av^uom;)²(tr^{rr}ru^{ru}
 te,e, ½ar^{ml}u... qawm&w per;avyg)² ... (tr^{rr}ru^{ru} te,e,
 re;ar^{mw} ... ye;awm&w per;avyg)² ... (avawm ... vawm ...
 ppui;wi;rmausm)² av^om; ... v^om; ... aejynawm^uu^um;

[ípyq^{xm};ygon/ per;av^on a&ay:wiav^{mc}wom;aom^{tcg} 0ysaeou^o
 ou^vuaom avau^{mi};wpp;jzpon/ v^{tr}sm;u^m;wi a&ye;pm;ausmu^m;aom av^u
 wpp;vn;jzpon/ tr^{rr}ru^{ru}te,e,wi ly^{iy}0ion^{tcg} wi;wiq&caom avwpp;
 jzpy; tr^{rr}ru^{ru}te,e,u ly^{iy}0i&e ar^{qm}v^{iaw}miw&aom ye;awm&avwpp; jzpon/
 av^uvn; avau^{mi};wpp;jzpou^o ly^{iy}0iavawm^om;rsm;u^{vn}; t&n^{tc}i;
 ½aom^{umi} ppui;wi;omru aejynawm^{txy}g owi;ar;aom avwpp;jzpal^{umi};
 trr;wi z^uq^{xm};ygon/

x^{laem}u-

(ar;ygw,)² b, ye;om^v ar;w, ar;w, (py, ? acgi&r;)² Ei;ye;
 om^v ar;w, ? ar;w, ? (ar;ygw,)² (b, ye;om^v ar;w, ar;w,)² ...
 py, acgi&r; at^{mi}ye;om^v ar;w, ar;w, ..

[í pyz^uxm;ygon/ ye;wumye;xwi rnonye;u tar;q; [yi^{qy}gap? per;av^u
 &½aom at^{mi}ye;uom^vi tar;q;jzpal^{umi}; z^uq^{xm};ygon/

qu í-

ae0ily^{ky};jyu ... (o;&u^v ray: way:)² noe;acgiausm ... tyaysmaew
 avawm^om; E;v^{uy}gawm^vm; ... (rrav; yep&m a½ri;0 awmiay:½;u
 ye;c^{ky};cyg)² (tyi&, 0g)² tⁿmrmj^r&n^{vr}; ye;E, upr;o^{Asm} ...
 Ev^om, 0 awm0i^v varacsm ... oajyn^{ky} ye;wpcue^{ur};x^uu^uu^u ...
 jr^{lc}p^{ky} r^uEm^{xm}; ly^{ky};v&, [eyee ... jre^qeqet^{cuay};yg... raE;o
 y^uarmiax; ... ye;qwv^{ay}; ...

[íz^uxm;ygon/ avawm^om;w^b0wivⁿ; vi,wobm0u xnoi;xm;ygon/
 tyaysmaeaom avawm^om;uE; í 0&, urav^{qm}&e v^{aq}m^{xm};on/ ur;xur oajyye;
 Ei^ulaern vry^twu per;avawm^om;wu]at^{mi}ye;}}uqway;rnjzpal^{umi};
 z^uq^{xm};ygon/

2012 cEp av^{ly}iywi pyz^uxm;aom avawm^ou^{Asm}wir qe;opr^{rr}sm;u aw^u½
 v^m&on/ you^u;lpum;ajym qi;qiEi^{tpc}xm;ly; y'a&aygi; (10)y'jzi z^upn;
 xm;on/ qi;qi[on^{rm} qi;q&m^u qi;w;ay;&e qiqao^{mpum};jzpon/ yxr
 0;pm^yo^u;u-

a^{1/2}yvmrsl; o [m aq taygi; wciAsm uleawmw' uav; 0lr^{KU3}u; &U
 lluuoa&aqmi tacgiwee;? bpr;Ei awm&rm ta[m0w ll oc'v
 rly;Eiatmi trsm;t"u x^m;lluw Zeb&m;? 'uPomcg naemiEpqw\
 &mjyn yaZmy^u;? 0cs;vluⁱ;y&mr^m Zrlajytwi; toa&vi;watmi
 a^{1/2}azmiawm u&0we yilluawmr^mu;Asm? 'galumi azmiy;u&0w a^{1/2}, mOys
 e' a&jyi, ororus? awmvcgwtm;nly;? trsm;op&m? u0pmqw
 oabmt&e a^{1/2}yvm o [maqwoi; aysp&mci;v^{lr}? aorapmi; watmi
 a&allumi;t<urm ... [1/2mpm; aiarmi;ovi ..

- [íqi;qix^m;on/ qi;qiw^{wi} a^{1/2}ljzpv^{mrn} t&yerw^{yu}ursm;u azm^{iyav}
^{1/2}ontwi; 'uPomcg b&m;Epqu a^{1/2}azmiawm? u&0ww^{ji}zi yiaqmiyaZ^{mrn}
 tallumi; qi;q&m u oia^{vsm&m} om, maomw;v;w;ay;&e qiqx^m;jci;jzpon/
 xaemu , r;tzom;rm; oqon ty' (1)wi-

Ei;aila&je? a [re&mowi;rmv? Epp0 yaZmuⁱ;yg v' llunE;z, ompm
 jzm<u pwe;cg vnll u? wu, yg 1/2iaysm pm yaZmyuav Eqivlom ..

- [í aqmi;&m o ewawmv^{wi} Epp0b&m;yawm u aysm^{1/2}ipm qiEav^{1/2}allumi; azm^{iy}
 x^m;ygon/

ty' (2)wi-

0acumcs ... ovme'twi;qu? jrw^{1/2}inaemi Epyg;&,w? a'opm
 jre;v<u? rsm;'um taygi; noyg/ pq, jzm 0;wiow, av; z;jriluly ..

Epp0Epwi;cs;wi;jrptwi; 'uPomcg b&m;Epqon a'opm&<ucslly; tz;ajrm
 cav^{1/2}allumi; azm^{iy}x^m;ygon/

ty' (3)wi-

jrwzsm; 'uPmnaemiEpqb&m;&,v? nawm aemiawmEpyg;
 &,u? &np;um wncayor? llunE;pmz;lluapb? aemitcg
 omoema&;uav; aw;ar^{lm}v^{lom} ...

[í q&mawm 0;o&Ei 0;ae, s naemiEpyg;u aemitcg omoema&;twu &np;um
 wncaom b&m;Epqjzpalumi; azm^{iy}x^m;on/

ty' (4)wi-

Ee;awZm& aea&mijzmon tvm;omy? 'uPomcg b&m;&,u? trsm;oig
 wlyPmu^{slu} <ujre;cs'v vvor llunno'g ym;cgav; 0;wioc...

[í 'uPomcg b&m;Epq a'opm&<ujre;v<cewi trsm;jynowu llunno'g
 ym;um z;ajrm lluyulzllqx^m;ygon/

ty' (5)wi-

be;a0jzmc: aZ , sma t m i a j r e e ; q u ? a w Z m a r m i a c l v i ; y g v l ? y 0 i ; v l j r y o
p & i ; q r c s u e ' a o v m a u s m r a v y i a q m i c l y ...

- [í p p u i ; a t m i a j r q r j r p a l u m i ; t w i ; y i a q m i í u ; u , c a l u m i ; a z m j y x m ; y g o n /
t y ' (6) w i -

a v m i ; a v E i p e j r p a & , r e x r a w m w u p v u u e E y g v l w u w a v m l u
½ i j y ? t l o b , y p í a z m i a w m , m O u ; i , a v n v l v a 0 ...

[í a v m i ; a v r s m ; E i y i a q m i y a Z m l u o n ? j r p t w i ; a & , m O u ; i , p v i v o n r m
t l o b , a u m i ; v a l u m i ; a z m j y x m ; y g o n /

t y ' (7) w i -

a t m u a r z , & m ? a ½ ; c g a c w r s m ; q & , u ? b p r ; a w m & a u s m i ; & , w ? A e m i
n E p a z m a y s m v l p l u ? o m o e m a r a y ; c a y o y g a x & t ½ i E p y g ; u a v ;
v r ; a r l m v l a y ...

[b p r ; a u s m i ; E i a w m & a u s m i ; q & m a w m E p y g ; j z p o n q & m a w m O ; o & E i O ; a e , s
n a e m i E p y g ; w l t a r a y ; c a o m o m o e m t a r u c , & i ; q & m a w m w l * P a u ; Z ; u
a t m u a r w o r a l u m i ; p y z l x m ; y g o n /

t y ' (8) w i -

a ' g i ; w E , y ? l l r l l e , * P o e l u ; y g v l ? a e m i n a x & ½ i E p y g ; & , v l ? j r e w i ;
a u s m v ? a r m o y ? p E i ; a o m r & ? a w m o r a x a x & m ? l l r l l u * P u ; w , a v ; ...
r s l ; o m u a q ..

- [í q & m a w m n a e m i E p y g ; \ * P r m u ; r m ; v a l u m i ; j r e j y n w p 0 r ; a u s m l u m ; v a l u m i ;
a z m j y x m ; o n /

t y ' (9) w i -

j r a i v m p ; ... a & Z v m e ' w i ; r m j z i a Z , s m a t m i p c i ; y g v l o c i ; l y i v l q l u
c s l j r ? a z m o i ; w a w w l ? ½ i j y w u , y g a x a x & m o q u s l ; w , a v j r l ; ½ i v l a y ..

[í b & m ; y a w m w i t a z m w o i ; w a x a x & m & m o c i ; r s m ; j z i o l y i o q u m a y s m ½ i p m
y a w m u q i E l u a l u m i ; a z m j y x m ; y g o n /

t y ' (10) w i -

r s m ; a 0 a e , s m a p w e m y m ; y g v l & m j y n o b i E a y s m l u p w 0 r ; & , o m v l ½ i v l
& e a b ; a w a 0 ; v l u m v l t a x a x q y e o w , a v ; a t ; j r l u a p ..

, c t c g w i b & m ; y a w m u s i ; y j y l v y v m c o n r m E p a y g i ; (100) j y n c l y ; j z p o n / a b ; & e
t a y g i ; u i ; u m & e a t ; j r l u y g a p a l u m i ; q a w m i ; j z i t q ; o w x m ; y g o n /

a v a w m o u A s m E p y ' u a v v m l u n v l i y x r a v a w m o u A s m o n a v a w m o m ; w l

avay:wí qav^{1/2}aom uAsmjzpí ^{1/2}; ^{1/2}i;pma&zúxm;alumi;aw&on/ av \ *P?
avawmóm; \ *P? vi , wibmóm b0w yg0iaealumi;aw&on/

'w , avawmouAsmrm 2012cEp &mjnyawmwi oq&epyzúxm;aom avawm
ouAsmjzpon/ qi;qiyg0ijci;? b&m; \ *Pawm? q&mawmEpyg; \ *Pawmrsm;uom
pyzúxm;ly; avEiqiaom? avawmóm;Eiqiaom talumi;t&mrsm; yg0iren;yg;
alumi; aw&ygon/

3? 1? 3/ ocýusmrm;

uav;0lrú jrerm^{1/2}; &mavmi;avlyiywi avawmoaw;uAsmrm;tjyi avwpipi;
Eiwpipi; tapmi;tawjyúum oqav^{1/2}aom ocýuAsmrm;uon; aw&ygon/
ocýEiywou í

, r;ci;? ewcsi;tp^{1/2}aom oci;ow \ tlum;0 , xnoi; cýnyí
wium azmuuom oq&aom oci;owrsm;u]]ocý}} [ac:on/ aemitcg
ocn;ouou x;ú oqluaomvn;]]ocý}} [íyiac:&awmon/ ⁴

[í ziqxm;onu aw&on/

per;av u lyiywi oqaom ocýuAsmwi-

a [vm; ... a , musm; bom;av;av bom;av;av ...

r; ... r;vm;armi w

av ... avvm;armi w

a [vm; a , musm; bom; av;av

[í tpsxm;ygon/

qu í-

per;av u vmaygav ... avavmóm; ... avavmóm;a [...

wi;v;ausmw avavmóm;y

[í tjc;m;avrsm;u llcr;ajcm ux;m;on/ per;av vmlyjzpalumi;? wi;ojno avawm
óm;jzpalumi; azmjyxm;ygon/

qu í-

avay:0; ocwiAsm atmiy0irm per;avy

atmiy0irm per;avy

⁴ urm&? t^{1/2}i? 1977? 56-57/

[íav0;wi ocwixm;vqiaomr tEi&atniavEirn per;avawm0m;rm; jzpalumi; a;u;aumxm;ygon/ xlaemu-

avravmwm lumaelyAs? vu;or reawmo loZmcwm ... ušyw
ygy? ½vuuyg r, unm&U (t½, omw avavm0m;y)²² ½vuuy
yg r, r'&U (t½, nw avavm0m;y)²

[í zlpym;on/ vu;orpum;u emcwwaom per;avawm0m;w\ *P&nu
azmjym;ygon/ t½, n? vunaomavawm0m;rm;jzpalumi; re;ryuav;rm;u
ajymum; [ejzi a&zlxm;ygon/ quí-

wucw wuow nygayoAs? (bom;armi w nygayoAs)² ... vmlya [
(per;vmlya [)² per;avawm0m; a½m ium½m; ... ½m;ua[... a [
vmluarmi w 0g; ... vmluarmi w ... 0g;

[ízlpym;on/ per;av vmljzpi t m;v;a½m iu½m;uyg [ajymxm;on/ vi;ui;
oEpc;uEi avmwuowpc;u avmonen;u wucwvmen;[ac:on/ per;
avawm0m;won vi;ui;w;? ocywi? avmwuc? wucw? wuow p;0g;uu
avmwworm;vn;jzpon/ lyiywi tEi&atni avmEiorm;jzpouotvj
avmcw&mwivn; ur;uivalumi; awUygon/

xlyi avwppi;Ei wppi;? wp½mEiwp½m tlyipmcs;í ocyx;uyuvn;
pw0ipm;z , awU&on/ ue;awm½mr ewoi;av u ue½mr jra'gi;av u-

uni;0Euum? qeev

uvrw jra'gi;av

[í zlpym;on/ ue½m0m;wrm qi;&raworm;jzpalumi; uni;0 (lum0)u
½mazum qeEiv í ½mazpm;aom u&orm; [cš;Erxm;on/ quí-

A;pwe ig;axmi? waumie ig;r(m;?

[a½Uu cšum;rm? ueom;wvm;

- [í cšucšum;wi ½mazpm;aom u&aom o? A;(lr;)Ei ig;zr;jci;? waumiEi ig;r(m;
jci;wu jylyí touar;&aomorm; [cš;Erxm;on/ ue½mr jra'gi;av uvn;
ue;awmr ewoi;av u-

ewoi;av tajcaxmu

v;x i;a&oav(m u?

*a [aqm ravmEiw av t;u?

yavmEiv

[íewoí;avon xi;avmi;r [w? c;avmi;vn;r [w a&oav(mu u pyí x;m;aom
avmi;avwppi;omjzpalumi; Ercsx;m;on/ avavmlyiy0iEiaom av trs;tpm;
r [waomallumi yavmEiom vpm;vu yg [& , ½iz , pyzux;m;on/

quí-

0uowv tray:

u;s;ue;atmum? vi;w0

tveuw ue;awm½m

[í pms;x;m;on/ tuovtvyzi touar;&aomorm; [íyevn acyx;m;on
u aw&on/

wp0;Eiwp0; tEirct½ray; tlyitqi avmcwluon/ pms;í ocyx;lu
on"avu aw&on/ tlyitqiavmcw&i; ½;ontcgwivn; tly;ryu oci;
qEiluao;onu aw&on/

ye;qu½mrp½m;avmi;avrm ½;í tEir&aomvn; aysm½ipmjiwiaom ocy
wi-

aemiEpuvn; q;vu u , p½m;jyevmr , ? jyeygt;r , ? jyet;r , ?
Ewce;quygw , ? ½;wmEiwmy"me xm0&wr [wyg? tm;upm;pwe
avmaewm? azmaqo [m oluapom;? Zav;u;e avmygoAsm? avrom;
wmrwwEib;? txuau smup , ausm*u;u; re;a½u;u avmcioAsm

[í lyiywpcwi tEi? t½;on y"mer [way/ tEi? t½;on xm0&vn;r [way/
tm;i , jci; r½? vmrnEpwi jyevn í , 0lyi0;rnjzpalumi;? tm;upm;pweí , 0lyi
jci;omjzpalumi; azmjyx;m;on/ wunvun avmygaomvn; avu rom;jci;rm
rnor rwwEialumi; pyqx;m;ygon/

ocyuAsmrm;u avvmunv i avwppi;Ei wppi; avawm om; tci;ci;
tlyitqi apmi;cwi a&zloqx;m;onu aw½&ygon/

3? 1? 4/ ta& t zlyi; av vmcsu

uav;0lrU jrerm½;&avmi;avlyiywi oqav½aom aw;uAsmrm;u avvm
lun&mü pum;v;to;yi;taejzi ygVpum;v;rm;tjzp]]uuo a&? ta[m0w? Ze?
'uPomcg? ZrL? u0? a[rme? e'? a'opm? omoem? yPm? aZ , sm? awZm? *P?
a0ae , sm}}-ponjzi aw&on/ avEiqiaom pum;v;rm;tajzi]]ye;awm&? avom;
vom;? atmiye;? wucw? wuow? v;wi;? re;}} -ponjziaw&on/ a'oo;
pum;rm;tajzi]]nm; (awqon)? uni;0(lum0)? r;(lr;)}} pon pum;v;rm;u
aw&on/

ta&;tzlyi;wi em;vnnv, onpum;v;rsm;ji ½;½i;pma&;zlxm;ji;allumi
 yom' *Pajrmualumi; awU&on/ per;avawm;wu Jjavay:0;ocwiA; atmiy
 0irmp;avy}}- [aomtzw i av0;xywi ocwixm;aomr tEi,rn avawm
 om;rsm; [t vetu;zlqxm;aomallumi two, 0wtvumajrmualumi; awU&on/
 ta&;tzlyi;wi x;x;jcm;jcm; o;Ee;xm;aomta&;tzl? pum;v;wu tawU&en;yg
 on/

lc\io;oycu

jrerm½;m avmi;avlyiyon jrermw\ , 0au;ru azmxw&ma&mu ouo
 jrermw\ Zmwao;Zmwrm;eu azmu;sl;&mvn; a&muayon/ a½;acwjrm wyrawm
 wi Jjacq, yr jri;wi&mon? jri;q, yr qiwi&mon? qiq, yr avwi&m\ /}}
 [ontwi; avo&aumi;w\ pr;&njirm;ruawU&on/ avwyrawm;won
 wua&;(37)ci;u ur;ui&on/ pmay, 0au;rtyi;Ei ywouívn; aw;*w
 e,y,wi avawmo? avu;csi? avawmbU? avwmpO? azmiiiBu;? azmivm;Bu;?
 azmiqubu;? e'azmijyiBu;? avwsmcsi? wua&;(37)ci;? v;wm;uAsm? avarwmpm
 paom avEipyqi&muAsm? vumaw;*wrsm;Ei pum;yq½;t o;rsm;rmvn; x;jcm;aom
 trsl;om;a&;qi&m tartEprsm;jzpon/

uav;0lrU jrerm½;mavmi;avlyiyon 'uPomcg nawmaemiawmEpq b&;
 yawron ay:ayguvmaom lyiywpcjzpon/ avlyiywi b&;blaw;uAsm rsm;?
 om,mpmoqav½;aom ur;avm;uwici; avawmoaw;uAsmrsm;? wp0;Eiwp0;
 apmi;cwoqav½;aom ocyaw;uAsmrsm;u awU½&on/

b&;yutalumi;jyí ay:xuvmaomallumi b&;*Pawmbaw;uAsmrsm;u
 awU&on/ b&;*Pawmbaw;uAsmrsm;wi b&;ori;? q&mawmrsm; \ *Pau;Z;
 wu xwazma&;zlxm;yg on/ ur;avm;uwici; avawmoauAsmrsm;wivn; b&;bU?
 avbU? avawm;w\ *P&n? vi,wlobm0wu awU&on/ ocyuAsmrsm;wir
 wpzuEi wpzucsl;Era&;zlxm;aomallumi wpzuom; \ tm;en;cursm;u azmxw
 a&;zlxm;allumi; awU&on/

uav;0lrU on jrwpmb&; \ omoemawyiivi;pnyi&m t&ya'owpcjz
 on/ ci;wi;jrpEijrpomjrpwq&m om,mvyaom ae&mwijn½;aom t&ya'o
 wpcjzpon/ xalumiA'omoemawmu talumi;jyí jrpacmi;utaiccupn;v;
 nnwji;u azmaqmion jrerm, 0au;rwp&yjzpaom avmi;avlyiyu ½;&mryu
 xe;or;aom 0lrU uav;wplrUjzpon/

e*;

, 0au;r[on wiynEii to;o;\ touao;almyijzpon/ vrs;wi;
wi talumi;t m;av smpm wraumaysm u u, om;aom , 0au;rrsm;½ygon/ xlaumi
wi;jynwi;vrs;wi;u rrw\ , 0au;r"av x;prsm;u u, aysm urom;atmi
xe;or;apmia½m uav½on/ u, aysm uom;aom , 0au;rtar tEprsm;u vn;
wpen;r[wwpen;zi azmxw&rnrm Eiiom;wi;\wm0e wp&y[, qrygon/
ppmwr;wi uav;0lr½jrer m½;&m avmi;avlyiyEi oqav½aom aw;uAsmrsm;
talumi;u vu vr;ror avvmwijyxm;ygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

- 1/ urm&? (t½i)/ (1977)/ *uAsm twjrppepopl* yxr tbur? &eue? pmaygi; u;yEywul
- 2/ ausm&i? 0;/ (r-1320)/ *u0bm&wur;* yxrwl yxr tbur? rEav;? ya'om y#uwyEywul
- 3/ jrerm pm t z/ (1996)/ *jrerm q½;pum;* yxrEyjci;? &eue? wu ovrsm;yEywul
- 4/ jrerm pm t z/ (1991)/ *jrerm t b"mel* yxrEyjci;? &eue? zwvpo yEywul
- 5/ vorel (2000)/ *jrerm pu m;yrm;* yxr tbur? &eue? {0&ua&mipyEywul
- 6/ opvi? (vi; , e)/ (1981)/ *avl* yxr tbur? &eue? pmayArmeyEywul
- 7/ te;ci? 0;/ (1975)/ *a½ee;o;* r[*m*waygi;cyl* yxr tbur? &eue? qe;ne0;yEywul

zw^{1/2}aompm t yrsm;

1/ Eiiawmllir0ryjym;r wnaqma&;tzU Ou|zvm;q|rtiurajrmu jrerm^{1/2}&m , Oaus;r
avobiawmrwwr;

2/ 'uPomcg nawmaeniawmEpq A'yZe , yawm&mjynarmue;wipmapmi

3/ jyelum;a&;Eiijnouquqa&;0;p;Xmer iypaom]] u!ercpaomuav;0lr¹⁰}}
awllqar;jre;aom y*llv rsm;

1/ 0;wiqe; (avlyliy utr;usiem , u)

trw(2)&yu u

ap;awmi bu

r;Zv^{1/2}; te;

uav;0lr¹⁰

2/ 0;pvxe;(b&m;yawmur;ya&;twi;a&;rL;)

jye? qu(lir;)

trw(2)&yu u

uav;0lr¹⁰

aemuc0e;usiEi tEpwzew;r twwynm

0i;ri;oe;*

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on 0wpmayr aemuc0e;usiEi tEpwzew;r twwynmu qe;pp
wiyjci; jzpygon/ xolqe;ppwiy&mwi ciEi; , \ jrlumjzL? jroe;wi \
]m;awm iuausmí r;yiv , uizwrn? vi; , eopvi \ }owmaomiajc0;}
tavvmctjzp ovrwawvmygon/ aemuc0e;usiEi tEpwzew;r twwynm
qupyum yazmxm;on/ , i;0w0;y'r umvaemucEi tEpwzew;r? a'o
aemucEi tEpwzew;r? vraemucEi tEpwzew;r[í yi;jcm;avvm wiyj
xm;ygon/ ciEi; , ? jroe;wi? vi; , eopviw \ tEpwzew;rEiywouí
wppwwpyi; ojriEiygon/ 0wzew;r twwynm avvmvorm;twu
wppwwpyi; taxmutu jyEirnizpygon/

aomc:ua0g [m&rsm; - 0w? Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmi? aemuc0e;usi? tEpwzew;r

e'ge;

ppmwr;on 0wpmayyoPmer tEpwzew;r twwynm oabmuqe;pp
wiyxm;aom 0w twwynmyi;qí&m avvmrwpcjzpygon/ aemuc0e;usiEi
tEpwzew;r twwynm qupyum yazmxm;on jroe;wi? vi; , eopvi? ciEi; ,
w \ 0w twwynmu avvmxm;ygon/ umvaemucEi tEpwzew;r? a'oaemuc
Ei tEpwzew;r? vraemucEi tEpwzew;r[í yi;jcm;avvmwiyj xm;ygon/
0w twwynmyi;y:so q&m? q&mrrsm;Ei ausmi;om;ausmi;orm;twu wppw
wpyi; taxmutyjl&e &n& , ygon/

pmaya v vm qe;ppc:u

0w twwynmyi;Eiywouí q&mru; rr;ajr \ 0w&nzew;o? 0w&n
cpm;oEi? 0w&n oabmw&m;? 0w½n twwynmpm tyrs;u avvmzw½cygon/
q&mru;rr;ajron tEpwzew;r twwynmyi;wi 0w&nrs;r aemuc0e;usi
tc:Uu o;oyjcygon/ ppmwr;wi 0w0;y'r aemuc0e;usiEi tEpwzew;ru
avvmwiyxm;ygon/

* a'guwm? ygarmu (XmerL;)? jrermprXme? vm;½;wuov

oaw oear;ce;

- (1) 0w&nzew;&mwi Zmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ uyjir&&e aemuc0e;usi tEpwzew;r ta& ygallumi;/
- (2) 0w&nzew;&mwi Zmwvr;zllz;w;wurtwu aemuc0e;usi tEpwzew;r ta& ygallumi;/

aemuc0e;usiEi tEpwzew;r twwynm

0wwi Zmwvr;? ZmwaqmiEi aemuc0e;usi [aom t*g&yrsm;yg0ion/ Zmwvr;? ZmwaqmiEi aemuc0e;usitzlrm;on qupyvu&on/ Zmwvr;wi jzp&yrsm;u cswquwiy&müvn;aumi;? Zmwaqmiw\ p $\frac{1}{2}$ utajymi;t v zllz; w;wuru zew;wiy&müvn;aumi;? aemuc0e;usitzlon ta& ygon/ umv a'oaemuc0e;usiEiywou í jrerm t b"mewi

]]0w\wiyg0iaom tjzptyu? Zmwvr; Zmwaqmiw\ aexiu;ji; vy&m; $\frac{1}{2}$ e;uerrsm;on rnonacw? rnon tce? rnona'owi jzpy;u vy&m;con [aom 0wZmwvr;Ei Zmwaqmiw\ jzpy;u vy&m;&m ae&mEi tce t cg u azmjyji;jzpon}}¹

Zmwaqmiw\ jzpwn&ioe&m vy&m;&mae&ma'o? tceumvEi vr0e;usi tai t oursm;u pmzwoxu;puvmatmiEi xia, mijria, mijzpmatmi zew; a&zll&on/ oürom Zmwaqmip $\frac{1}{2}$ uyjir? Zmwvr;tou0i yjir&ly; ,w&v mEi ygon/ Zmwvr;Zmwaqmitay: pmzwo\pw0ipm;rEi cpm;Epouruvn; jzpaEiygon/ umva'oaemuc\ taetxm;u pmzwo\ t jrit m $\frac{1}{2}$? tllum;t m $\frac{1}{2}$ w\wi xi[yvmatmi tEpwo $\frac{1}{2}$ yazm a&zlav&ygon/ aemuc0e;usitzlrm;u tEpwzew;jci; Eiywou í q&mru;rr;ajru

]]pma&o\Zmwtrzxm;aom taw;pwu;t m;v; pmzwoxoU ta&mu ylaqmi&mwi Zmwvr;\ ae&m? a'o? tce

umvaemuc tci;tui;u pmzwoüxijrivmatmi a&zll&ygon/ Zmwaqmiw\ oijyitrt&mvy&m;ru xijrivmatmi o $\frac{1}{2}$ yazm&ygon/ Zmwaqmiw\ ajmoqoulum;vmatmi zew;&ygon/ Zmwaqmiw\ cpm;r taw;rsm;u pmzwocpm; aw;awmvmEiatmi pr;aqmi&ygon/ xtcursm; ly;jynp&e pma&oon tEpwjc, re; a&zll wijy&ev tyvygon}}²

¹ jrerm t b"me? 1991? 178/

² r;ajr? r? 2015? 82/

[í 0w&n oabmw&m; 0w&twwynmpmtywi o;oyazmjyxm;yg on/ xUallumi
 0w&wiZmwvr;? Zmwaqmiw&jzpwn&m uivnvy&m;r t&seumvae&ma'o 0e;u;i
 wUu zew;wijy&mw i umva'oaemuc0e;uirs;u tEpwjc , re;&evyg on/
 umv a'oaemuc0e;uirs;u tEpwazm u&l;jyci;jzi Zmwaqmip½uyjiir? Zmwvr;
 zUz;rwU taxmutyjiEiygon/

1/ umvaemucEi tEpwzew;r

0w&wi umvaemuctzUrs;on Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmip½uyji&e axmuyay;
 Eiygon/ ciEi; , \ jrUumjzL0wU} Zmwys;yi;wi qe;pnaumi;uijiyaemuctzU
 tEpwo½yazmum Zmwaqmi& , v \ taw;jzi qupywijyxm;yg on/

]]aumi;uiu &wemueon \ uwygcu v euarmiaeon/ n0ew
 or;on pwysuvuysuEi olauomrm peb;u viypvuy&on/
 aumi;uiaxmiwpae&mw i vau;av;u wapmi;tyaeon/ Uu , pi
 pevnquvn; qjzwy payu vuavovm;/ Bu;jiywom;aom
 vnqr vipiom;aom pev;av;aw aumi;uirm jyeUuaelluon/
 wpc&Uu e*giUwe;qrm p½;aelluon/ wpc&Uae&mr m BuUuEpou&m
 ypa v;awEi oi;zlaeayov wpu , awm Uu , yia v;awvn;
 t;m;aysmpm vi;vuaeluon/ vau;av; \ ar;rey? v;ci;Uu , av;
 rsm; \ t;m;aysmaom tvi;on aumi;uin \ b0u o½yazm aelluon/
 b0aumi;uixrm Uu , av;rsm;vn; Zmwpci;aelluon }}³

[í Zmwaqmi& , v \ tx;uen? aomua0'emEi taw;cpm;csuu qe;pn
 aumi;uiji \ aemuctzUjzi qupywijyxm;yg on/ &wemueon \ uwygcu v
 [aom0yrm t vumajrmupum;o;? n0ewor;? vau;av;u wapmi;ty? aumi;uin
 \ b0[aom orm"*Pajrmu pum;o;av;rsm;jzi weqm qixm;aomalumi Epouz ,
 vn;aumi;yg on/ aumi;uinu t vrujzpaen n0ewor;Ei & , v? peb;Ei
 vau;au;? Bu;jiywom;aomvnqr vipiom;on pev;av;rsm;v wpae&mp
 jyeUuaelluon Uu , av;rsm;Ei olom;Eior;? aumi;uin \ obm0Ei & , v \
 vuawU b0u qupyjyum pmzwo \ pw0ipm;ru jzpapygon/ Zmwaqmi& , v \
 b0ZmwaUumi;tay: pw0ipm;rjzpapon/ wpen;t;m;jzi Zmwys;yi;u taxmuty
 jzpapon aemuc0e;u&itzU [qEiygon/ qe;pnaumi;ui \ obm0u orm"
 *Pajrmuaom ta&? Epouz , taw;rsm;jzi tEpwzew;xm;aom aemuc0e;ui tzi
 allumi & , v \ b0Ei a&U qujzprn Zmwvr; tay: pw0ipm;rjzpapygon/

wigona&vyom;wU \ b0u pmempwji u½Pmouz , a&zUxm;aom vi; , e
 opvi \]]owmaomiajc0;}}0w&wivn;Zmwvr;? ZmwaqmiwUivuzur&aom

³ ciEi; , ? 1999? 4/

umvaemuctzUrm;u awU&ygon/ anniwe;rUe, paum&mav;&uwigwU yuarUm
yuc&on &moumvu-

]]aqmi;v, &mo\ vrun0on tcgwi;n0rm;xu yíat;von/
t½P0;UuUrm;yi weuU;vmontcsex ree;trwpar;wpa&r\ ty
raymay/ t½PbuoU u;ajymi; a&mucontcseüyi tat;"mwon
wprpr w;0ionxuW;0ivmon/ ½;wi;jciqcuaom wprpr
tat;jzpavon/ -----Ei;&nEi;aygurm;on tracgi;&i;Ei trab;
&o&uyi? yEyi tui;t&uwlwprqi tracgi"er;xuoU
wajzmuajzmu wayguaygu uqi;ae\ ----- xr\cr;at;vaom
aqmi;&mon0umv0, q;Ei;rewi;wi;ü wpa, mux;wn; yuc?
yuarUmom;&&maom via, musm;---}}⁴

[aom ree;tr\ taw;jzi wiya&om;xm;ygon/ aqmi;&mo q;Ei;awmXü wpn0
ywv;yuc&on uwigwU\ b0u u½Pmouapon umvaemuctzU jzpygon/
aqmi;v, &mo? vrun0? q;Ei;rewi;? ½;wi;jciqcuaomtat;wlon uwigwU
vyie;ci0iUontceumvaemucu yyiapon/ ½;wi;jciqcuaom wprpr
tat;[aom emr0aoeepum;o;? wprprw;0i? wajzmuajzmu wayguayguuqi;
[aom bu, m0aoeepum;o;av;rm;jzi aqmi;&mon0umv\ o½yyyi&e axmuy
ay;xm;ygon/ Zmwaqmitaw;u tEpwjc, re;umciye;ontwu yyeaom
a&vyom; Ze;on\cpm;cuEi a&vyom; \vyie;ciu cpm;ojrivmapon aemuc
0e;ui tzljzpon/ owmaomiajc0;0wwi umvaemuc 0e;uitzUrm;u tEpw
zew;a&zU Eialumi;awU&on/ umvaemuctzUrm;on Zmwaqmip½uyyi&e?
0w0;wn;cu ay:vi&e axmuyazmaqiEialumi; awU&ygon/

jroe;wi\]]"m;awmíuau sm í r;yi v, uizwrn}} 0w\ontvyorm;
vwe;pm;oacsmi;u tx;jc, re;xm;aom0w\wpy'jzpon/ vor&aom ue;ay:wi
tou&i&ywnEia&twu u, pr;tm;? pwpr;tm;wUjzi buUuc&iqi ausmv;
Eiyrsm;u tav;ay;azmuU;xm;on/ ZmwaqmiEiobm00e;ui u tm;lylium
½;&i;onZmwvr;u pw0ipm;z, aumi;atmi zew;wijyxm;on/ p0w\wi umv
a'o? obm0aemucrsm;u tEpwjc, re;um pmzwo\ t½u qaqmíxm;on/
ZmwaqmiueEmEi &jriwU xm;0, r&euetjye vuygcaom puavbu;rewi;rp0
umvtajctaeEi tjzptyurm;u pwrupwi jria, mi vmatmi o½yazmijyxm;
onu awU&ygon/ eeuu;em&tce rewi;0iyu —

]]rewi;u awmawmji;on/ aumi;uii ñrn;vs&ojzi yiv,
a&jyionvn; com;a&mixaen/ vi;v;βu;rm;u ue;yway:ou
jAe;uejAe;uewu í½uon/ a&ow0gβu;wpauíu vUm;ujziv;í

⁴ vi; , eopvi? 2015? 83-84/

v:uaeoavmxi&on/ yiv, xu vr;lunvuawm ur;urjri&/
r;ouaw uaeojzi ½ci;onre0g;vu&on/}}⁵

[í umva'oaemucu azmijyxm;yg on/ puavb;u;ay:wi vuygvmaom Zmwaqmi
w\ u\ urmtajymi;t vu jzpapon aemuc0e;u:í yy;r [qEiygon/]]ñrn;?
com;a&mi}} [aom ta&miypum;v;rsm;?]jAe;ue jAe;ue}} [aom jrnoppum;o;rsm;u
o;um rewi;wup0umv yiv, \ toiu jria, miapygon/ vi;v;u;rsm;u
a&ow0g;u;Ei wipm;um rewi;umvu o½yazmxm;on/ ur;rjri vr;rjriyiv,
xwi r;ourewi;u:ae aom tceumvaemuctzu tEpwjc, re;um Zmwvr;
tajymi;t vu zew;wijyon [qEiygon/

2/ a'oaemucEi tEpwzew;r

0w\wi Zmwvr;jzpwn&m Zmwaqmiw\ui:v nvy&m;&m a'o0e;u:í u zljy&m
ü obm0, w&&e? Zmwvr;? ZmwaqmiEi vuzur&&evygon/ Zmwvr;?
ZmwaqmiEi 0;wnc:uu azmaqmi&mwi a'oaemuc0e;u:í \ axmuyazmaqmi
Eironvn; t"u:son/

]]"m;awmíuau sm í r;yiv, ujzwrn}} 0w\ Zmwys;yi;wi umva'otzEi
Zmwaqmiu qupywijyxm;on/ ZmwaqmiueEm\ tjri? t lum;? t x taw
t m½rsm;u tEpwjc, re;um pmzwo \ t m½uzr;pm;xm;yg on/

]]o\acgi;ay:wi tr;r&/ o\ab;witumr&/ u, yiw\ ly;:jyuaeaom
aumi;ui [i;vi;jiu;u:ojri&on/ twm;t q;r&? w [; [; wucu
aeaomav\ taw\ uocpm;&on/ o\yc;on wppwpcEi xcuon
twu qwcwewom;on/ arrsm;uuvuoavm/ ueEm velom;on/
emu:ijci;awmr&/ , m;u:u:Eitc&cuon/ cP\umawmow0gwpau mi
olar;atmu vnyi;ay:ou w½½wuvm on/ ow0g \ajcaxmursm;u
p;p;ciec\eaysmaymzwzw/ vnyi;ay:um ow0gonlirom;on/ ueEm
uxow0gu ar;jzinyxm;on/ xow0g \ taw\ rmausmausm
v;0e;0e; ausmucv;vv/ aemuow0g wpaumi u&iyway: wuvm
jyeon/ wpc\Uaygiay:? ajcaxmuay:? 0r;Auay: wuvm\ uon/
ueEmontm; , í acgi;axmíum 0r;AuEi &ibw ay:u ow0grsm;u
lunvuon/ u, uv;velvuojzi 0r;AuEi&ibway:u ow0g
rsm;on ausmuaqmiay:ou vruom;on/ xtcgurueEmly;vu
on/ ar;atmuwinyxm;aom ow0guvn; vway;vuon/ x
ow0gon ausmucav;wpv;v atmuovruom;on/ ⁶

⁵ vi; , eopvi? 2015? 108/

⁶ jroe;wi? 1995? 28/

[í ZmwaqmíueEm \ w'*twi; cpm;&aomcpm;rtxtaw\ tjrít^{m½wu} tEpw
o^{½yazma&zlxm;ygón}/ Zmwaqmíam&u&aeaom ae&ma'oEiywouí rnona'o
jzpalumi;? rnoLa&mu&aealumi;w\ u ovpwjzpay:vmapygón/ yiv , ur;pywi
u:upm;wwón ow0gw\ \ toiu ce\re;o&apci;jzia'o aemucuwiyxm;
ygón/

aemuctzUrm;u tEpwo^{½yazmwíyEíralumi} Zmwvr;ygae&ma'o \ toí
on pmzwo\pwt^{m½wi} jria, mivm&ygón/ p0wwi ue;? yiv , ? yiv ,
ow0grm;Eí Zmwaqmíw\ vy&m;ru qupywíyum Zmwvr;qí a&zlxm;alumi;
aw\&ygón/ v\ b0\ \ tou&i&ywna&wi vuawu:u&iqizew;Eíronom
t"uu:alumi; wíyvaom pma&oon tvyorm; vwe;pm;oacmi;\pr;&nu
tre;wia&zlxm;on/ 0w\0;wn:uu azmaqmí&mü ^{½pi;on}Zmwvr;wi
y"meZmwaqmíoaacmi;u umva'o obm0w&m;w\jzi tm;ly\iapum tEpwjc, re;
xm;alumi;aw\&ygón/ p0wwi aemuc0e;uitzUrm;u tEpwjc, re; a&z\l
Eíjci;on jroe;wi\ taumi;q; 0wizew;r twwynmwp&y[yi qEíygón/

vi; , eopvi\ owmaomiajc0;0w\wi vn; a'oaemuctzUrm;Eí Zmwvr;?
Zmwaqmíw\ qupywíyEíalumi;aw\&ygón/ owmaomiajc0; 0wwi anniwe;
lr\le , paum^{½m?} a^{½'*g;ue;w\} a'oaemuctjzp wíyxm;ygón/ a^{½'*g;ue;}
a&v , aomíon uu:nEíree;trw\ traxmí0;b0u vyie;ci0i&mr acwem;c&m
ae&ma v;jzpouo\ peyiEíj&iw\aw\q&m? jr&iEiz;ciw\ aw\q&mae&mvn; jzpyg
ón/ ZmwaqmíEí Zmwvr;twu ta&ygón a^{½'*g;ue;} a&v , aomíu

]]a^{½'*g;ue;aomí0;on} jrpv , o\X;xuaeon/ pue;paomí ,
xuwí a^{½'*g;ue;½mí} , wn&aeayrí ^{½mí} , rm twi;bu tawm
tvr;a0;onae&mwi wnaeavon/ oaomíue;q , rm {&m0wírp
twi;o\ tipe;x;xuae\ / xae&mwp0uü u:lyi? ui;awm\ u;rm;
om ue;xuwí&í puci;? y\ci;? Buci;[í v;0r&/ vaewtr[í
ui;ron}}⁷

[í azmjyxm;ygón/ a^{½'*g;ue;aomíon} a^{½'*g;ue;½mEí} vr;ouo\ paum^{½mEí}
anniwe;lr\U t\um;&aom a&v , aomí0; jzpygón/ u:lyi? ui;awm\ u;rm;om&aom
puci;? y\ci;r&? vaewtrr&aom a'oaemucu a^{½;c} , um Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmí
w\Eí vuavsmnaxjzpatmí zew;wíyxm;ygón/

jr&ixrtcpu & , vaompeyi\ twi;t"rupnru , w&ap&e a^{½'*g;ue;}
aomíu aemuctjzp a^{½;c} , wíyxm;on/ jr&iuaomíyio\ Zwtwi;ac:vmum
cpciyeon peyi\ wZwx;Eíru umva'oaemuctz\jzi o^{½yazxm;ygón}/

⁷ vi; , eopvi? 2015? 76/

]]ae0e;wpjcr;on aysm u u , ve;avly/ a½'g;0;a& v , aomixur
 uyl? ui;awmrsm;on raumi;q;0g;rs; t oay;ov w½½atmjrn av
 on/ aomixuwi vo [í wpa , muwavr r&ay/ aomipyüom
 i [piursm;? cncipyEi 0biursm;on w*p*pjrna<u;ys0aeav
 on}}⁸

[í jr&iupeyiu Zwtwi;ac:aqmivm&m a&v , aomiu azmusL;xm;yg on/
 ae0icge;tceumv? voui;ron ae&ma'o? yw0e;ui \ obm0w&m;wu tEpw
 jc , re;um a'oaemucuyjiapygon/]w½½atmjrn}?]w*p*pjrna<u;} [aom
 u , m0ao oet o;rs;u vn; ajcmujcm;z , tajctaeu yy;ay;ouoU jzpygon/
 Zmwvr;tjzptyuEi vuzun aemuc0e;ui zew;r [qEi ygon/

xUji xaomiajc0;uyi Zmwaqmiz;ciEijr&iwU awUq&ma'otjzp zew;
 xm;yg on/ peyi&er vwajrmucaomjr&iEi avUyUlay;oz;ciwU yxrtur awUq
 &ma'oonvn; pa&v , ue;yijzpon/ rr"m;jzicwcaom peyiEi ywoun
 talumi;uovaomallumi a&v , ue;oU aemuwpacgu jr&ia&mu& cewivn;
 z;ciEi awUqcon/ aemiwicpsorm;jzpvmrn z;ciEijr&iwUawUq&m aomiajc0;
 u-

]]jrpjiaomiajc0;on avwzL;jzL;wucwae \ / i [piuwlon
 luizuu ac:[e&aeon/ cncipyEi0eywUum; a&azmip;vsu
 wirlirwnini arqm vuvmluon}}⁹

[í o½yazmxm;yg on/ ae&ma'owpcwn;uyi tajctae t jzptyuEi vuzupm
 wijyEialumi;awU&yg on/]avwzL;jzL;wucw?]wirlirwniniarqm [aom
 u , m0ao oet o;rs;u ZmwaqmiEp0; \ ywouru cpm;ojriap&e axmuyay;xm;
 yg on/ a'owpcwn;uyi ajcmujcm;z , tajctaeEi lunE;z , tajctae wU
 ujym;atmi zUjiEion/ a'oaemucEi yw0e;ui obm0uazmusL;um Zmwvr;?
 ZmwaqmiwUe qupywijyEiaom aemuc0e;ui zew;ryijzpygon/

ciEi; , \ jrlumjzL0wwi ti;vsm;ue 0e;uiU Zmwaqmi& , v \ twwu
 atmiajrt&ytjzp wijyxm;yg on/ & , von wuovau sm;i;ob0u ti;vsm;
 0e;ui \ tvu rcpm;wwo? cspourvr;wwo? rarqmwwo? cpouom arqmvi&
 rnre;rpm;rs; jzpcn/

traxmionb0wi rrupelypcaom ciye;onuarqm? vr;&otjzpol
 a&muc&on/ , ciu ti;vsm;0e;ui \ tvu rcpm;raom & , von vi; \ ty , c
 b0a&maomtcg vr;armpmcpm;vm&yu —

⁸ vi; , eopvi? 2015? 105/

⁹ - , i;-? 127/

]]atniajrt&y[oxicaom ti;vsm;yw0e;uion ,cawmvn;
w;ww lrouve;aeovxi&on/ o&u? uaumEi r&r;yiB;u;rsm;
tUqi;ñUri;aeon/ ta0±aomuqirsm;r pm;vuSt;w;uswEi/
at;jraomop&yu cvaeaom0oi, \ w;ni;aom aw;ouum;&p
jy/vmon/ uea&jyijrom;ay:rm aeicnupeyirsm;jyeUusom;on/ a&jyi
u jzwoe;vmaom vwqwaom eeuci;av;u ouuzu , r; Ewqu
on/ , pr;re;armz , aumi;aom yw0e;ui/ oaravsmcaom wuov
\wr;r;z , yw0e;uirm o , cawmvr;wwvmly/ oar|m& aomt vn
ou a&mucly}}¹⁰

[í a'oaemuc0e;uitzUjzi qupyjxm;ygon/ ti;vsm;0e;ui \ unE;z ,
tvujriww? cpm;wwvmaom & , v \ p½u tajymi; tv twu tm;jznay;xm; aom
aemuctzU [qciygon/ wuovauismi;ob0u & , von tv{u&tjzp xiay:c
o? csporsm;pmxm;um a , musm;av;rsm; \ tc;pu upm;co? yw0e;ui tvw&m;uyi
rcpm;wwb tvrme , powp0;jzpcon/ traxmionb0wi ciye;on \ opm
azmuruc&aomvn; Ze;aumi;? rciaumi;jzpatmi BuK;pm;aexicojzpon/ wnlir
&iu;uvmaom? yw0e;uiobm0tvw&m;u cpm;wwvmaom & , v \ b0
tajymi;tv? p½u tajymi;tvu ti;vsm;0e;ui aemuctzUEi Zmwaqmitaw;u
qupyazm uSt;Eiygon/

3/ vraemucEi tEpwzew;r

umva'oaemuctzUrm;wi vrtzt tpn;vn;yg0iygon/ vtzt tpn;twi;
xawU½e;uevy&m;&i; jzpay:vmon Zmwaqmip½uEi p½u tajymi;tvwu
azmaqmi&mwi vraemuctzUrm;u axmuyay;Eiygon/ ZmwaqmiEi ouqiaom
vr0e;uitzUrm;u aemuctjzp qupyzew;ay;jci;jzi Zmwaqmip½u jzpay:r?
p½uajymi;vrwlon tust;oitalumi;oi jzpvmygon/

vi; , eopvi \ lowmaomiaic0;0wlon wigona&vyom;wU \ b0ay;
tajctae? vyuipm;aomuU&y? aexir"avp½uwU xi [yjiEionb0 o½yazm
0wWpy'jzpygon/ {&m0wjrpur;ab;& pau&mav;& qi;&om;uwig wU \ b0u

]]taemubu r;uypu0i;ou ae0e;on usqi;iyvK; pijvmlly/ xtcg
wig&muav;wp&m v;on typu&mrvE;or;tm; x<u vy&m;
pijv mawm \ / owUum;aelwien; í n0zur;rm; 0r;pm&m r;or;sm;
aywn;/ ig; oavmuyu u , pu yc;xuEi v uay:wiwi í
vn;aumi;? avmwuEi vuzu&ntzet;u vuwpuwi ui&i;
rvn;aumi;? uwiguorm;wUon jrpqyavi , av;rsm;&&mou

¹⁰ ciEi; , ? 1999? 198/

qi;ou vmluavon/ naeqn;qmc;ejzpaomalumi taemubu
a&pywi iyv\;pjy\aeq aea&mion ywjr;ao;? ywjr;&n 0i;ppzi
jrpa&jyiwpai v;u , zwjze\ u;u x m; bon}}¹¹

[í azmjyxm;ygon/ naeci;qn;qm tvu rcpm;Eib vyie;ci0ilu&y? uwig w
vyie;ci0iceEi ow\ vy&m; luytoi wu tEpwwiyum pwrupwi ria, mi
vmapygon/ yuwpz? avwpp;? avmwuEi vuzu&ntzet;wlon uwig \
vyie;ci0i&m to;taqmirms;yijzpon/ trsm;wumtypu tem; , aecsewi vyie;
ci0i&&maom a&vyom;w\ b0? qi;&c\wlu&maom vrb0tajctaeu ojriap
on aemuctz\ [qEiygon/

aqmi;umv tat;'Pu *½rxm;Ei? 0r;pm twu n0wuuu&e ciye;on
Eitw yucsvuae&on wigon \Ze; ree;tr \ tjzpu

]ree;tr \ vuacsmi;uav;rs;on jrpa&Eir\umcPxaw\&um;
Ei;\ ½ucwr tat;'Pu jznpu&aomalumi y;u;a&prwe\ov
we\vuvm on/ vuzsm;Epzupv;on u0wuvmon/ u0&mr
lumjyeaom xwuv\ \ pxu0r a0'emuree;trcrsm *½rjy\Ei?
ta&rput m;? ig;rs;rs; &&a& twuom aZmuyae&mavon}}¹²

[ívn;aumi;? ig;&myucsvuae&om ciye;ontwu aom uAsmayjzpa&&mon
ree;tr \ taw;cpm;cuu

]t0wwpxnu , wpc? avi , wppi;? yuwpzEi pr\&u lumanmi;
um t&mtazxuae&&moü tb , ypm;aomu í tb , en; typu
&mavo en;/ pwarp&mawu ree;traw;vur\ \ n0tcgrsm;üvn;
aqmi;&mo \ tat;"mwonveuvb\ \ trüuse&paom owl
wpawyi cucuwer\cr;v\ \ a[rE\at;jraom aiEi;reon
qn;qmc;erpvsu wzm;z;uqi;conrm aemuwpaell eeu aexu
c;exjzp\ \ pr\cr;at;vaom &mormo0 , , reemjrpv , alumi
wpnwmv; yucyuar\mae&&maom ciye;oncrsm tb , r\ cr;&mav
rnen; }}¹³

[ívn;aumi; azmjyxm;ygon/ armiwpxr;r , wp&u 0r;pm&mr;l u&on a&
vyom;Ze;armiE\ qi;&yiye;pm vyuiipm;aomulu&yu ojricpm;&ygon/ tae
qi;&? tpm;qi;&? t0wqi;&jzi b0u½e;uelu&&mon uwiga&vyom; w\ b0u
ay:viapygon/ Zmwaqmiw\ \ tjy\tr? vy&m;rrsm;? taw;y&yrs;u tEpw
zew;jyum vraemucu xijriapygon/ owumw\ *½rjy\raomt&mu vi; , e
opviu trwxixi*½jyiron/ trsm;*½jy\rvmatmivn; pr;aqmiEialumi;

¹¹ vi; , eopvi? 2015? 61/

¹² vi; , eopvi? 2015? 72-73/

¹³ - , i;-? 57/

awU&ygon/ vi; , eopvi\ tEpwwijyEiaom vraemuc0e;u:itZUrm;on
Zmwaqmip½uEi 0w0;wncuu axmuyazmaqmEiygon/ vraemuc0e;u:
rsm;u tEpwzew;wijyxm;aom 0w/zew;rtwwynmon]]owmaomiajc0;}} 0w\
tou[yi qEiygon/

]]"m;awmīuau sm í r;yiv , uizwrn}} 0wwi q& , vpacwtvyorm;
vwe;pm;? armicpuavyi&i t&i;&ivwe;pm;? avviau sm i;om;vi , ? bU& tvy
vurwU\ vraemucrm;u jc , re;xm;ygon/ vyoavmu tu&cpm;cir&aom
tvyorm;wU\ b0u oacsmi; \ b0? vy&m;½e;ue&ywUjzi vraemucu azmjyxm;
on/ t&i;&ivwe;pm; \ o½yu 0;b&e\y&yzi xi[yjyxm;on/ t&i;&iEi
t&i;rwU\ o½yu —

]]0;b&eu oacsmi; \ ½;om;rEi bu±ru tciaumi; , on/ oacsmi;
tay:wi t&u;&aeonu vn; tciaumi; , on/ wc&U armicvyie;
rsm;wi oacsmi;u vim;tjzp to;cs on/ ||rwtaemubuu ute;prsm;
wi wjcm;Eiirwwwqw 0ia&mu vmaom armicpuavrsm; quww
on/ xule;rm;oU oacsmi;uapvwi ypn;twici;wwon/ pipp
0;b&eon oacsmi;u "m;pm;cci;ci;r\omjzpon/ &uzr;v\i oacsmi;
tzt;c&rn/ 0;b&eu ypn;q;½;½uví bmr\xcurnr[w/ ern
vn;ryu? vvn;'ura&mu? onbuwi yuq&owu onv
vim;rm;Ei armicvyluon/ vim;rm;u "m;pmccci;luon }}¹⁴

[íwiyxm;ygon/ tvyorm;oacsmi;tay: acgi;yjzw tjrwxwcaom 0;b&e\
o½yon t&i;&ivwe;pm; \ twu jrionapygon/ ai&i t&i;&iwU\ avmbwur?
acgi;yjzwr? twu;rwU tEpwazmyum tvyorm;Ei t&i;&i vwe;pm;wU\
vraemucu jc , re;Eiygon/ bUwpc&ly;aom vn; bUEi ouqion tvy&&
rv , uaombU&wpa , mu \ tjzpu ueEm \ vy&m;½e;ue&yjzi wijyxm;on/
jroe;wion vwe;pm;av;&yu jrionvmatmi vraemuctzUrm;jzi qupyjyEi
alumi; awU&ygon/

ciEi; , \ jrUrmjzL}0wwi vwvya&&ly;acw wuovau sm i;om;au sm i;o
rsm;? q&m0ersm;? tyc&ya&y;it&m&bu;rm; \ vraemucu Zmwvr;Zmwaqmi wUEi
t0iatmi zew;wijyxm;on/ z.q.y.v acw p;ym;a&ueonrsm; omrevuvy
vupm;vwe;pm;rm; \ vraemuctzUrm;jzivn; Zmwvr;EiZmwaqmip½uu yyi
atmi axmuyay;Eialumi; awU&ygon/

jyiopueonwp0;jzpo rep , mr& , Ei & , vwU awUqce;wi jrerm vaer
"avaemucu & , v \ tajympum;jzi tx;jc , re;xm;on [qciygon/ jrerm
tr∨wU\ 0wpm;qí , iyEiywou í

¹⁴ jroe;wi? 1995? 217 -218/

]]t't0wtpm;r<;u vc:nu Avmxbac:ygw,/ tuu xiror;
 tu:ac:ygw,/ uerw\ jrerm b&irms;&p0u ee;awmrm rz&m;aw
 b&ior;awm tyawmaw &a&awmaw t'v0w\uygw,/ cacwrm
 vn; r*vmaqmiow\or;el em;oyawrm tr<;or;awAvmxrel
 xiror;tus 0wqiygw,/ rsm;aomt;jzi tcwqiu Avmxr
 c<lyuygw,/ tijit&yoawuawm uerw\vy0wygw, }¹⁵

[ívn;aumi;?

jrermvr<;w\ 0;cwwontavu

]]&,vw\ jrermrm viuwir[wygb;/ u,rom;p xri;0i;rm rb
 yg&i rbu&t&i0;c<ly;r u,xri; u,pm;ygw,/ rbryg&i viom;?
 'grr[w u,xu&u;w vwpa,muyg&i lu;wvu t&i0;c<ly;r
 pm;ww\uygw,/ ly;awmbmt o;tEy trua&muvmvm b&m;u
 0;cqr;awmwily;r trom;awpm;&w,/ }¹⁶

[ívn;aumi;?

jrermvr<;w\ vuzuwnontav? a&;acww&m; vwawmtq;tjzw tly;
 vuzupm;auat;ontavwu

]]vuzuawm jrerm½;&m"av tpm;tpm tppy a&;acwua&m cacw
 a&m vwe;pm;ra&;luuw,? jrerm b&iawvn; o;aqmiw,/ ee;awm
 xrmvn; a&c<xm;wvuzu ty[m awm0iypn;yy/ ly;awm jrerm
 b&ivuxuu vwawmrm trtci;tq;tjzway;ly;&i w&m;va&m
 w&m;cyg try;jywayir;woabme\ vuzu v uqpm;&ygw,/
 vuzu t'vta&;ygtce;u yg0icwmyg/ }¹⁷

[ívn;aumi; Zmwaqmi&,v\ tajympum;rsm;jzi tav;ay;wijxm;alumi; awl&
 ygon/ jrermvr<;w\ a&;,cir ,aelacwwi vucuoio;vu&aom vr"av
 x;pu vraemuctjzp azm u<L;xm;ygon/ jrerm,0au;r"avu o&vuemaom
 jrermtr<;or;wp0;tjzp Zmwaqmi&,vu yazmij&mwi taxmutuy\aeon
 vraemucyy;r[qEiygon/ Zmwaqmi\ tajympum;rsm;jzi tEpwum vraemucu
 xi[yjxm;on vraemuc0e;usi zew;ryijzpygon/

¹⁵ ciEi; , ? 1999? 206/

¹⁶ - , i;-? 209/

¹⁷ ciEi; , ? 1999? 209/

lci o;oycu

0w\ t* g& ywpcjzpaom aemuc0e;uion Zmwvr;ZmwaqmiEi wpom;wn;
uatmi qupywiyEi&evygon/ Zmwvr;ZmwaqmiEi aemuc0e;uion
wpcEiwpc tcwtqurr wiyEirom Zmwvr;,w&um Zmwaqmionvn;
obm0uvmrnjzpon/ oUrompma&;o\apwemu xe;jyEion &n&,cuon
vn; yjyivmrnjzpygon/

ppmwr;wi aemuc0e;uiEi tEpwzew;r twwynmoabmu 0w\ (3)y'
jzi avvmwijycygon/ jrlumjzL}0w\ r umvaemuctEpwzew;ron Zmwvr;
a&Uvsm;rEi Zmwaqmi b0w\ tay: pw0ipm;rjzpalumi;? pmzwou qaqmi Eiaom
Zmwy;yi;twu ta&;ygao tEpwzew;rjzpalumi; o;oyjycygon/ }owm
aomiajc0;}} 0w\ r umvaemuctzUrm;on a&vyom;uwigw\ b0u xi[yj&mü
ta&;yg alumi;aw\&ygon/ }"}m;awmiu ausmí r;yiv,ujzwrn}}0w\ wi umv
aemuctzUrm;u tEpwyazmum Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmiw\ Ei qupywiyEiyg on/
0w\ o;y' teu }owmaomiajc0;}}0w\ r umvaemuctzUrm;on tEpwzew;Eir
tm;aumi;on [o;oyrygon/

a'oaemuctzUrm;u tEpwzew;&mwi jroe;wi\ }"}m;awmiu ausmí
r;yiv,ujzwrn}}0w\ on tyjiq;jzpon[qEiygon/ voui;ron ue;
wpule;ay:oUa&m u&aen vav;0; \rrw\ b0 tou&i&ywnrtwu &iqilu&
yu azmijon0w\ wpy'jzpon/ ,i;0w\ wi umva'oaemuctzUrm;on 0w\
wpy'v;wi ta&;yq;jzpalumi; aw\&ygon/ yiv,ur;py? ue;? oaomi?
yiv,ow0grsm;Ei obm0w&m;u tEpwjc,re;um Zmwaqmioacsmi;\ b0
&ywnru tav;ay;wijxm;on/ jroe;wi\ tEpwzew;r twwynmtpr;alumi
½;pi;onZmwvr;on pw0ipm;z,aumi;vmalumi;? 0;wnctu azmaqmiEion
oacsmi;\ p½ur; yryjyivmatmi axmuyEialumi;o;oyEiygon/ }owm
aomiajc0;}} 0w\ r a' *g;uie;aomi0; \wnae&mEi taetxm;u tEpwum zew;
wijyji;jzi Zmwvr;a&Uvsm;ru axmuyay;Eialumi; o;oyjyygon/ a'owpcwn;
uyi taictaetctcguvuí yazmwwaom vi;,eopvi\ aemuc0e;ui
zew;ralumi Zmwvr;rm,w&vmygon/ }jrlumjzL}}0w\ r ti;vsm;0e;uia'o aemuc
u xwEwo;oyjyygon/ &,v\ wuovausmi;ob0Ei traxmionb0
c,cu? cpm;cu p½utajymi;t vu ojriap&e axmuyay;xm;on aemuctz\ tjzp
aw\&ygon/

'| "ravmu& vom;w\ \p½uu watmiwya&;om;on 0w\ wi vraemuc
0e;uizlonvn; ta&;ygon/ }owmaomiajc0;}}0w\ wi wigona&vyom;w\ \
b0o½yu aemuc0e;uizUrm;jzi qupyazm;u;Eialumi; aw\&ygon/ {&m0w
jrp\ u;u taicjy\um 0r;pm&mazpm;aomu\ u&&maom uwigw\ vaerb0u aemuc
tzUrm;jzi tEpwzew;Eialumi;aw\&ygon/ vi;,eopvi\ vraemuc0e;ui

zew;r twwynmon 0w0;wncu ay:viapon taxmuty aumi;wpc jzpyg
on/]]rurmjzL}}0wwi vraemucu Zmwaqmitajypum;r;m;ji t"uzew;
xm;alumi;awU&ygon/ Zmwvr;ZmwaqmiwUjzpwn&m tceumv vraemuctzUrm;
on Zmwaqmi $\frac{1}{2}$ utajymi;tvtwu yy;ay;Eion[qEiygon/]]"m;awmiu
aumi r;yiv ,ujzwrn}}0wwi vwe;pm;av;&y\ vraemucuwiyxm;on/
t&i;&iEi t&i;r tvyorm;vwe;pm;Ep&y\ umjcm;ruvn; aemuctzUzi xi[y
jyEialumi;awU&on/

aemuc0e;u;itzUrm;u tEpwzew;wiy&mwi pma&o\ twitjy? Zmwaqmi
wU\ tajypum;? jyrvy&m;y? tx tawU? tjritlum;t $\frac{1}{2}$? taw;cpm;r wlrwpqi
wiyxm;alumi; o;oyawU&ygon/ 0w/aumi;wpy'on umv a'o aemuc\
taetxm; tqitjiwU tjritlum;t $\frac{1}{2}$ wi xi[yvmatmi tEpwo $\frac{1}{2}$ yazmEi&
rnjzpon/ Zmwvr;ZmwaqmiwUei vuzuatmi qupyyazmEi&rn/ xUalumi
Zmwvr;wi yg0iaomt&tm;v; pmzwo\pwü xijricpm;Eiatmi tm;xw&mwi
tEpwzew;r twwynmon t"uuson[qciygon/

e*;

]aemuc0e;u;Ei tEpwzew;r twwynm}} pmwr;u 0w(3)y'r aemuc
0e;u;itzUrm;ji o;oywiyxm;ygon/ umvaemuc? a'oaemuc? vraemucEi
tEpwzew;r[í cjc;m;avvmxm;ygon/ 0wtwwynm avvmmvorm;twu
wppwpyi; tust;&Eirn[arqmviygon/

usr;u;pm&i;

ciEi; , I (1999)I jrumjzL 0i;vuyEywU? &euelrU/

r;ajr? rI (2015)I 0w&n/oabmw&m;Ei/ 0w&n/twwynm ('w , t!ur) I uaum0w&npmay?
&euelrU/

jroe;wil (1995)I "m;awmiuau^{smí} r;yiv ,/ujzwrnl oi;v0i;yEywU? &euelrU/

jrermtb"me I (1991)I jrermptzU? &euel

vi; , eopvil (2015) pwwturl owmaoniajc0; &mjynpmtywu? &euelrU/

O;ri;a , m i b l a v ; c s l ; u o s m a 0 z e a v v m c s u

Ziri;O;*

p m w r ; t u : O ;

p p m w r ; w i q & m u ; o c i u , a w m r i ; \]] O ; r i ; a , m i b U } } a v ; c s l ; u A s m u p m a y a 0 z e a & ; 1 / 2 a x m i r a v v m w i j y x m ; y g o n / p a v ; c s l ; u A s m w i x i [y a e o n p m q \ p w a e o a b m x m ; ? a c w u m v p y m ; a & ; ? E i i a & ; ? v r a & ; t a j c t a e ? o r i ; t c s u t v u r s m ; x i [y a e y ? x t c u t v u r s m ; a y : v i a t m i a & ; z U x m ; y w u p m a y a 0 z e a & ; 1 / 2 a x m i r a v v m w i j y x m ; y g o n / x l a e m u]] O ; r i ; a , m i b U } } a v ; c s l ; u A s m u y n m 1 / 2 i w \ a 0 z e a & ; e n ; e m r s m ; E i c e x ; í a v v m w i j y o m ; y g r n / a 0 z e a & ; e n ; e m r s m ; t e u r t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; (I n t r i n s i c) E i t j y i a 0 z e a & ; (C o n t e x t u a l) [o n a 0 z e a & ; 1 / 2 a x m i r s m ; r a v v m w i j y o m ; r n j z p y g o n / x o l a v v m w i j y c i ; j z i u A s m a 0 z e a & ; q i & m o a b m w & m ; r s m ; u o 1 / 2 l y ; p m a y a 0 z e a & ; j y l v y v o r s m ; t w u t a x m u t y j z p a p r n [, q r y g o n /

a o m c s u a 0 g [m & - p m a y a 0 z e a & ; ? t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; ? t j y i a 0 z e a & ; /

e ' g e ;

p p m w r ; o n q & m u ; o c i u , a w m r i ; \]] O ; r i ; a , m i b U } } a v ; c s l ; u A s m u a 0 z e a & ; 1 / 2 a x m i r t u j z w a v v m w i j y x m ; j c i ; j z p o n / x o l a v v m w i j y & m w i u A s m z l p y y ? * P ? t v u m ? & o a j r m u z l r s m ; j z i a & ; z U x m ; y p o n p m u , x n y i ; a v v m r j z p o n t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; E i p m a y a y : a y g u & m a c w p e p ? v r a & ; ? E i i a & ; t a j c t a e w E i q u p y a v v m r j z p o n t j y i a 0 z e a & ; [o n 1 / 2 a x m i E p c r a v v m w i j y x m ; y g o n /

1/ p m a y a 0 z e a & ;

j r e r m p m a y a y : x u v m l y ; a e m u t i ; 0 a c w w i p m a y a 0 z e a & ; [í w o ; w j c m ; r a y : x u c a o m v n ; a 0 z e a & ; o a b m o u 0 i a o m p m r s m ; ? t q t r e l r s m ; u a w & & o n / x l a e m u p m a y o n a c w t q u q u w ; w u x e ; u m ; v m & m 1930 c E p 0 e ; u s i a c w p r ; p m a y a c w o l a & m u a o m t c g w i p m a y a 0 z e a & ; p m r s m ; o ; o e l a y : x u v m o n u a w & o n / p m a y a 0 z e a & ; t , t q w o n a c w u m v t a v s m u a y : x u v m c l u o n / t , q o p w a y : a y g u v m a o m t c g t , t q a [m i ; w w r a u m c & o n / a 0 z e a & ; q & m w o n r r w v u c , l l u n a o m t , t q o p w u v u u i x m ; í p m a y t E y n m y p n ; \ & i ; j r p ? t u s l ; ? u , x n y i ; w u a 0 z e o ; o y o n /

* e n ; j y ? j r e r m p m x m e ? r E a v ; w u o v

pmaya0zea&;Eiywouon yn^{m½}iwl\ tqtre\ ziqc:ursm;pm^½ygon/ x
ziq^c:ursm;teu a0zea&;Eiywouí yn^{m½}iwl\ ziqc:ursm;u avv^mwiyygrn/
jrerm t b"mewi-

]]a0zea&;- 1? taumi;tq;u o;oypppon/ taumi;tq;u cjc^m;
ñejajymqon/ 2?pwjzmc^a0on/ a0ze^c:u/ a0ze o;oywijyc:u/}}¹

[í ziqjyx^m;on/

x|yi pmaya0zea&;Eiywouí 0;oe;u wuovynmya'om pmapiwi-

]]pmaya0zea&;q&mü &opmaya0zea&;uom qvjci;r[w? b^mompum;
b^mompmai ywouor\ a0zea&;u qv^{on}/}}²

[í vn;aumi;?

]]a0zea&;q&mü oi\roi\ [azmjyc^{ur}sm;? tb, alumi oi\ tb,
alumiroi\ [azmjyc^{ur}sm; tb, ooi\ tb, oroi\ [azmjyc^{ur}sm;
rsm;? tb, uoi\ tb, uroi\ [azmjyc^{ur}sm;uqv^{on}/}}³

[í vn;aumi; azmjyx^m;onu aw&on/ x|yi q&mjZiuvn;

]]jrerm^mpmaya0zea&;on ou#tvum^{ur}sm;u tajcccon/ xursm;
u ovrwaom tvumpeprsm;? prsm;? pn;ursm;ji pmayuo;oy
on/ wi;wmon/ px^{on}/}}⁴

[í pmaya0zea&; \ oabmu wijyx^m;on/ q&mc;p0;n^uvn;-

]]a0zejci;qon^{rm} t&m0w\ t u^s;tjypu azmjyci;jzpalumi;? ½y½ium;
wpcua0zev\i aumi;v\ibmalumiaumi;on? b, vaumi;on/
raumi;v\ivn; xen;w alumi;jyí azmjy&alumi;? ½y½ium;wpcu
a0zev\i ½y½iyn^mEiywouaom pn;ur;? Oya'^{rsm}; t&oma0ze&
alumi;}}⁵

[í a0zea&; \ oabmu ½i;vi;ziq jyx^m;ygon/

x|yi q&mwuw;u vn; -

]]pmay t ujzwon [&mü yxrt ucw&ayrn/ aemua0ze&rn/ aemuq;
ü t ujzw&ayrn/}}⁶

¹ jrerm^m t zll? 2008? 359/

² oe;? 0;? 2018? 585/

³ - , i; -/

⁴ jrZi? 1986? 17/

⁵ c;p0;n? 1986? 211/

⁶ - , i; -/

[í azmjyxm;onu aw&on/

**t xuygynm½irsm; \ t qtrersm;u l c í o;oylunv i pmaya0zea&q on
rm pmaywp&yu a0ze&mü taumi;tq; t u s; t jypu u s; alumi;Eiwu axmuji
a0zejci;? pmayqi&men;vr;? pEe;rs;ji cex;t ujzwci;yijzpon/ xjiyiq&m
aZmaZmat iuvn;-**

**]]aumi;on^non aijm½rjzia0zea&t&mrairmu [t c s y r w , o i
on/]]taumi;t n(0g) pmaywp&y \ taumi;t n u a l u m i ; u s ; , w
om"uwjzi ci v p m c j c m ; j y o j c i ; o n a 0 z e a & ; j z p \ / }¹**

**[í azmjyxm;on/ x a l u m i a 0 z e a & ; q o n r m a u m i ; o n ? n o n a i j m q ½ j z i a 0 z e a & ;
rrn? t u s ; t a l u m i ; E i o ; o y w i j y c i ; o n o m a 0 z e a & ; j z p o n /**

**pmaya0zerjy\vy&mwi x i & ; m ; a o m p m a y a 0 z e a & ; t , t q (5) r s ; u q & m
aZmaZmat i u p m a y o a b m w & m ; E i p m a y a 0 z e a & ; t a j c c u r ; p m t y w i -**

(1) yaopn;rs;cia0zea&;

(2) t i y & u & i ; e p a 0 z e a & ; (Impressionist)

(3) & n & , c u t " u a 0 z e a & ; (Intentionalist)

(4) t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; I n t r i n s i c ^ a 0 z e a & ; o p N e w C r i t i c i s m

(5) C o n t e x t u a t j y i a 0 z e a & ; w j z p o n /

**[í a 0 z e a & ; e n ; v r ; (5) r s ; u w i j y x m ; o n / p a 0 z e a & ; (5) & y t e u p p m w r ; w i
t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; E i t j y i a 0 z e a & ; (2) & y u t a j c c x m ; u m a v v m w i j y o m ; y g r n /**

2/ 0 ; r i ; a , m i b \ a v ; c s ; u A s m t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; I n t r i n s i c

**t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; u a 0 z e a & ; o p (N e w C r i t i c i s m) [í v n ; a c : o n / u A s m w p y ' u
a v v m & m w i t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; o n v n ; t a & ; y g a o m p m a y a 0 z e a & ; w p c y i j z p o n /
t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; o n t E y n m y p n ; w p c (o r [w) u A s m w p y ' u t & u t & w i ; l u n ½
a 0 z e o n / o m " u t m ; j z i u A s m w p y ' u a 0 z e & m w i u A s m \ t a l u m i ; t & m ? z p n ; y u o m
l u n o n / u A s m E i q u p y a e o n a c w ? y w 0 e ; u i ? v r a & ; ? p ; y m ; a & ; w u y p y , x m ;
j c i ; j z p o n /**

**q & m b u ; o c i u , a w m r i ; \]] 0 ; r i ; a , m i b } } a v ; c s ; u A s m u t w i ; a 0 z e a & ; j z i
a v v m w i j y y g r n / q & m b u ; o c i u , a w m r i ; \]] 0 ; r i ; a , m i b } } a v ; c s ; u A s m o n
a v ; c s ; u A s m w o a b m o b m O E i t n t c s ; a v ; c s ; j z i z x m ; o n / q & m b u ; o n**

¹ aZmaZmat i? 2015? 101/

uA_{sm} \yxrtc_{sl};wi-

]]r_Uvviomw ue;qo? wocipmz\ ne;vu_U? (auom&,) 'ge
ve;uayawmum/}}¹

[í jr_Uvviom;jzpon O;ri;a, mita_Uumi;u pmne;zqjyx_m;on/ jrermori;
&mZ0iwi wi;jynt_Uu_{sl};twu toupe_Uyr;con O;ri;a, mi\ talumi;u pmay
xwiom ½un_Uuygawm [í ajymqvuon/ O;ri;a, mi usq;&jci;twu rcir&
jzpaen pmq\ pwc_Upm;ru ay:viapon/

'w, tc_{sl};wi-

]](a_Uom) r_Uo_U;&, v_U? w_Ux;awr{ayy? a&va&mi b_UowiEi?
O;ri;a, mi} Av0icv_Ur? [t&i, re p_Uti_Ui;w, ? ci;w A_Ul [m/}}²

[íjrermEiiu t*vywor;yuc_Uewi r_Uvviolu; O;ri;a, mion a&va&mi
trnc, í t*vywt_m; we;vewucucyu azmjyx_m;on/ q&m_Uu;on
O;ri;a, mi\ wi;lyn_Uc_Uppw_Uzi t*vywt_m; &iw_Uup_m we;vewucucyu
azmlyí ocivi, r_m;t_m; wi;lynvw_Uya&;twu lu;yr;aq_Umi ½ulu&e v_Ulaq_Ux_m;
jci;jzpon/

ww, tc_{sl};wi-

]]rwav_Umu obm0wilzi/ "mwav_Umucgr&wmr? jrerm_Ur_m; be;orm? t
-½;rmayg_Uwpr_Usl;}}³

[íwpc_Uewpc_Ug_U u_Utalumi;rví be;wec;ar;reum ½erc&on/ ,ctc_Ugwi
lrermwon be;wec;awmuyí atmiyqi&e tceuslylzpallumi; v_Ulaq_Ux_m;on/

pwwtc_{sl};wi q&m_Uu;u jrermjyn oueb0 usa&muc_Uewi jrermwon
&eou &eorxirwb tci;ci;&eap_Umaelluon/ tc_Uutci;ci; opmazmulu
on/ xolzpaec_Uewi O;ri;a, mi\ pw"mwEi vy&yuq&m_Uu;u-

]]av;wipi}} ½mtwi;wilzi/ t*vyawu twi;uwrav_Uv pr;cw/ -
--(a_Uom) wazmiazmiowi;awe/ wajymiajymivi;cw/ --- awmiwi;
uociu? atmiwi; r&cizr;wlyi/ tlur;ywr; rvyau_Umi;aomv/
Oaumi;jzwcg taoowluow/ rauey&m_Uo -acsmiwywbe;w&/
ajy&Xrmwabmie vr;&ygawm/ (tr,ri;) awmiwre;jr_U? ae? v?
epaxmitñ;wijzi ajyrermabmi rp;&½mw/ --- (a_Uom) tacg_Uirre;/
tarmioe; or/ atmiye;n_Ucc&w/ atmiqe;w [a½va&mi} tz;/⁴

¹ ociu, awmri;? 2012? 319/

² - , i; -? 319/

³ - , i; -? 319/

⁴ - , i; -/

[í 0;ri;a , mion jrermEiivwvya& q;^{1/2};caomvn; tav(mray;b av;wipi
^{1/2}m twi;r ccwucucon/ oao^mcc&i; titm;rrözi tzt;cc&on/ wi;jyn
 vwvya&;twu lu;yr;&i; &eovuculzi touq;^{1/2};c&on [a&;zx^m;on/

q&mlu;on 0;ri;a , miu Eajrmwr;won/ 0;ri;a , mi \ pw"mwrsl;u oci
 pw"mw[rw , von/ xpw"mwrsl;u , cocirsm; ar;jrLEiygu vwvya&;&Ei
 on [í q&mlu;uazmjyxm;on/ 0;ri;a , mi \ pw"mwucs;u^l; í ocirsm;t^m;
 wi;jynvwvya&;&atmi aqmⁱ^{1/2}ulu&e vlaqmay;con/ tx;ojziar;jzpo oci
 atmiqe;t^m; t b;jzpo \ o&aumi;pw"mwrsl;ar;jrLEi&e vlaqmay;vu^jci;jzpo
 on/

q&mlu;on rrajymvon tallumi;t&mu rra&zlvon uAsmyoPmeEi
 t0iciu; a&;zx^m;Eion/ uAsmzppyu avvm&mwi av;csl;uAsm yoPmeEitn
 tcsl;av;csl;jzia&;zx^m;onuaw&on/ yxrtcsl;Ei 'w , tcsl;wi]um}] [m} [on
 wuorsm;jzi tcsl;owum&e , xm;on/ ww , tcsl;Ei pwwtcsl;wwi]rsl; } z;}
 [on 0oZeowjzi tcsl;owum&e , a&;zx^m;on/ av;csl;uAsmzpyen;twi;
 tcsl;owum&ersm; , í zlvqx^m;onuaw&on/

av;csl;wiww , tcsl;ü cmaxmuu&eyg^{1/2}on/]0;ri;a , mi}blav;csl; ww ,
 yi;wi]bm}]cg}]bm}]rm} wony'wi; um&ersm; jzpluon/ yxrtcsl;Ei 'w ,
 tcsl;w \ u&ersm;Eitn a&;zx^m;on cmaxmuu&ersm;vn; jzpon/

av;csl;lu;rsm;a&;zlv&mwi eabxyum&ersm;ygoiav^{1/2}&m]0;ri;a , mi}bl
 av;csl;lu;wivn;

]]rwavmu obm0wijzi}}?]] "mwaumv cgr&wmr}}¹

]]wazmiazmiowi;}}?]]wajymiajymi vi;}}²

]]atmiye;n^{ku}}}?]]atmiqe;w}}³

[í q&m^bu;on eabxyum&ersm; , í a&;zx^m;onuaw&on/

xlyi q&m^bu;onuAsmrsm;wi-

]]zi;vw ujri;raumi Avwcsl;& , u}}⁴

]] t*vyawu twi;uwra [v pr;cw}}⁵

¹ ociu , awmri;? 2012? 319/

² - , i; -/

³ - , i; -/

⁴ - , i; -/

⁵ - , i; -? 319/

[í tajpumu; rsm; ñyí a&; zxm; [eu vn; aw&on/]]uri; raumi}}]]twi; uw
ra[]] [aompum; v; rsm; aumi q&m&u; \ cji; pw? emun; pwway: vi xi^{1/2}m;
vmon/

xjiyi q&m&u; \]]0; ri; a, mibU}} wi]]auom&, }} [ontmvyjy\ ac:a0:y?
]]allom? t? tr, ri;}} [on tmar!wrs; uaw&on/]]tnmr*vmaqmi}} av; csl;
wivn;]]uri; &m&, }} [on tmvyjy\ ac:a0:y?]]tu, ? allom? t uri; &m&U}} pon
tmar!wpum; rsm; u aw&on/

xto; rsm; on q&m&u; \ 0r; ompw? 0r; en; pw? rcir&pwwr yixuv m
on tor; yijzpon/ xjiyi q&m&u; \ u, yi [ewpcvn; jzpayon/ q&m&u;
on av; csl; u; rsm; u a&; zU&mwí tajpumu; rsm; ñyí a&; zUav^{1/2}&m tajpumu; rsm; Ei
qavson xto; rsm; u xnoi; a&; zUji; jzpayrn/

xjiyi xola&; zlyEi ywouí q&maZm*s u-

q&m&u; on Zmwpm ty a&; cz; ojzpon/ aemitcga&; vwaom #um
aqmiyg; rsm; Ei Ei; pmaom xZmwpm ty rsm; u taygpm; [qci v\ i qoi
yg \ / o&mwí q&m&u; on xZmwpm ty rsm; r en; aumi; wpcu &con
[qEiavon/ xen; um; tjc; r [w? acwuem; vnly; jzpí acwu u
jzpaeaompum; zewpv n? aw; uAsmwpv n a&; aoma&; en; jzpavon/
xa&; en; on pmupmzwy&ow \ Ewzsm; üu&m; a&; vw wwwwww
jrnapeion/ xa&; en; on pmupmzwy&ow \ em; o aygaygyg; yg; ?
ajzmiajzmiwe; we; ? acsmacsmarm a&muapeion/ q&m&u; on
xa&; en; jzi rr \ ZmwrmEiicppwuarU, r; í jrermEiit v; vr; z;
ysUElapavon/¹

[í q&maZm*s u o; oyjyxm; on/ q&m&u; on Zmwpm ty rsm; a&; cojzp&m o \ uAsm
rsm; wi Zmwpm ty rsm; a&; on en; emu, í acwu u v uí a&; zUcji; vn; jzpei
on/ wpen; q&aom q&m&u; on rray; von Zmwrmepw"mwu vxtwi;
tvitjreyUElapví acwu u uí vucly; jzpon a&; [ejzia&; zUcji; vn;
jzpeiayon/ rnoyi qap xa&; [eonyi wpr&; wpzx; jcm; í q&m&u; \ *P&nu
ay: viapon/

xjiyi]]atmiye;}} [on to; onvn; to; aumi; wpcyijzpon/ q&m&u;
on]]atmiye;}} [onto; u EpicUoabmus [ewon/ ociatmiqe; \ tz;
]]0; ri; a, mi} usq; c&onu vn;]]tacgirre;? tarmioe; or/ atmiye; nUc&w?
]]atmiqe; w [a^{1/2} va&mi} tz;}} [í a&; zxm; on/ xjiyi]]taqmiaqmiluie; e? tacgi
rre; &ciu? atmiye; ñUc&^{1/2}mw? atmiqe; w aoyEajrm/}} [ontzUwivn;
]]atmiye; nU}} [í o; Ee; xm; on/]]atmiye;}} [on]oajynU uwipm; í o; aom to;

¹ aZm*s? 2010? 34/

yijzpon/ jrermwon]]oajye;}}u atmitww? Atmierwaqmion ye;tjz
 rw,lun/ q&mri;o0Puvn;]]oajyn? a½bye;[mizi? ve;vuyg}} [ío;c
 on/ xalumi jrermEii\ atmiajrtjzprw,lun a½be,rxuon oajynlu
 atmiye;[í wipm;o;Ee;ji; jzpayvrrn/

xjiyi t½iEpyg; ygawmrc&onu]]aevEpaqmitñ;}} [í o , 0u í
 0u0wtvumajrmu a&zlon/

]]wazmiazmiowi;? wajymiajymivi;cw? awmiwi;uociu}}¹

[aontzon]0;ri;a , mi} \ *Powi;xí½m; ay:viapontjiyi toom , m
 ajyypontwu]]r"&wm}} *Pajrmuontzyijzpon/

0;ri;a , mi \ pw"mwu azmij&mwivn;-

]]a½va&mi blowi;& , e?]0;ri;a , mi} Av0icv/r? [t&i , re ppt i
 usi;w , u , / ci;wAsL [m]}²

[í]0;ri;a , mi} on a½va&mitrncum t*vyuwe;vewucucyu azmijxm;&m
]]0&&o}}u cpm;&apontzjzpon/

q&m&u;ociu , awmri; \ 0;ri;a , miblav;c&;uAsmu twi;a0zea&jzi
 avv&mwi rrajmqvon talumi;t&mu rra&zlvon uAsmyoPmeEi t0i
 ciu;jzpatmi a&zlxm;Eion/ rrajmqvon talumi;t&mu yr½yv;<uyjiivm
 ap&e o'gvum&? twmvum&wjzi weqmquia&zlxm;Eionuvn; awlon/

3/ 0;ri;a , mib lav;c&;uAsm tjyia0zea& (Contextual)

tjyia0zea& Contextual on tEynmyn; \ ori;a&qí&m? pwae oabm
 obm0qí&m qupyaeom tjct&toi;t0i; tajctaeu avvmaom a0zea&jzp
 on/ q&maZmaZmatmiu-

tEynmyn;wpcu tjyia0zea&jzi a0zeawmrnqygu vu&i;
 jzpaom tEynmyn; \ aumi;aomvuPm tjci;t&mwu rajymawmb
 pma&o \ pwaeoabm? acwumv \ p;ym;a&? vra&? Eiia&tajctae
 paom ori;tcutvursm;u tav;teuus , us , jyejyeajym íom;
 wwon/³

[í tjyia0zea& \ oabmuwijxm;on/

¹ ociu , awmri;? 2012? 319/

² - , i; -/

³ aZmaZmatmi? 2000? 191/

a0zea&; (5) r<;teu tjyia0zea&; (Contextual) jzi q&m&u;oci u ,awmri;
 \j0;ri;a , mib}}av;c<;uAsm u a0zeo;oyvygon/ j0;ri;a , mib}} av;c<;uAsm u
 ociu ,awmri;on 1937 cEpxw oci#umpm tywi zqxnoi;con/ q&m&u;
 on 1934 cEpwi w\Armtpn; t½; o0icon/ ociw\ wArmtpn; t½; on 1930
 cEp0e;u:wi ay:aygucon/ 1931 cEpr 1934 cEpt xumvon ociw\ajcvr;
 u q&m&u;apm ilunaeaom umv [qoion/ xumvwi q&m&u;on ta&;tci;
 o;cuucon/ yxrta&;tci;on uvm;Arm½uyjzpí? 'w , ta&;tci;rm q&mp
 awmio v , orm; ta&;awmyjzpon/ ww , ta&;tci;rm tE , Eijrermwa&;ca&;
 jy ó emjzpon/

tE , jynEijrermjyn wa&;ca&;jy ó emEi uvm;-Arm t"u½P;avji; rewi;
 &yaomtcg wArm0g'? oci0g'won t½ivvwvawjrjryae½maom jrermvwvya&;
 u w;azmpjy\vm on/ aw;opqíqi;opuw;um? piopuawmi;avon/ pwysuae
 aom q&m&u;on pwop&vmí xpiopwi ri;om;u;ce;u0ií uiyavawmon/
 1934 cEp(1296)wi a&eacsmi;ü yxrtburusi;yaom wArmtpn; t½; nvmtly;wi
 ociu ,awmri;buyi c , avon/ a½;tcgur q&m&u;on uavmiwpacsmi;jzi
 Eiaa&;ygtjyityuomaeí aqmi½ucon/ wArmtpn; t½; ay:ayguvmaom
 tcgüum vi , opw\pw"mwu buuvojzi xvi , opw\ygo v;v;
 vsm;vsm; 0ivvavon/ xalumivn; rpwmarmiri;trnupeí ociu ,awmri;
 trnu , con/

jrermw\vwvya&; bu;yr;rc&;vr;wi q&m&u;on tprtq;wi uavmi
 vueujzi wuy0icojzpon/ 1916 cEpcewi b&iciu;uiaom w-om-oi;tzu
 wec;u;p0 0itrbat vi , pay:vmcon/ xvi , pon w-om-oi;tzu
 awmveavon/ lAotiyg , mtwi; u , yityc&ya&; ([r½;)&r 0g'on jrerm
 wi;oynom; vvwwe;pm;w\em;o aygua&muí Eiaa&;E;um;r pwijzpxe;
 vmcavon/ xumvwi q&m&u;u , wiyi [r½;0g'u uavmijzi axmuyay;c
 on/ 1923 cEp 'itmctvmwi 0itrbat vi , pon tci;ci;rnrñwjpum
 Epjcr;uc&on/

e , c<tp;&on Eiaa&;p;ym;a&;tajctaeuwuc&u; jrermjynu tE , Ei
 wxm;&mr cxwciavon/ wa&;ca&;Eiywouí jrermjynow qEujrermjyn½
 tmPmyiwxr ppr;unaomtcg tcburEirn [owi;&½avon/ xtcg
 e , c<tp;&on 'rua&poabmu jy&mvn;a&muí rrw tcjy ó emvn; atmjirirn
 jzpojzi twtcjy ó emu rziq;jzwapon/ tctwtwu a½;aumuyuvn; 1933
 cEp E0ibmvwi u;yrnjzavon/ xtc&ewi jrermjynon twtcalumi
 wpzuEiwpzu pw0r;u&jyeon/¹

¹ [e0r? Armi (uxu)?2016? 174/

o&mwí 1930 jynEpavmu a&muao mtcg wArm tpn;t½;0i ocivi,
 opway:v m í vwvya&r&i;Zmwa[mí;u jye vnujy&e pí;ji;avon/ xtcg
 xvi, oprsm; on vu;yi;o a&muu yjzpaom 0i trbatvpu awmvelu&jye
 avon/ xvi, oprsm; \ wArm0g'? oci0g'on awmi, mv, awmo vn;aumi;
 t vy½we;vsm;wo vn;aumi;? oabmuí;wo vn;aumi;a&muí Eia&wu ur
 jzpxe;v mavon/ jrermjynwi Eia&vy½m;r jy on t cgrpí xvy½m;ron
 qweponr½/ yxrpce;wiE;lum;r atmiye;uqwvr;cluon/ 'w, pce;wi
 wu uratmiye;u qwvr;Eicon/ 'w, pce;oa&muao mtcg q&mú;vn;
 wi;wpyg;tp;&w tycyr&aom jrerm titm; tajctaeu txi;om; jri [ewon/

xlaumi q&mú;on 'w, pce;xluaom ocivi, op*P;o v;v;vsm;vsm;
 0i vuci;jzpon [qEion/ q&mú; \ uavmion vi, w \ pw"mwüom
 arlavsmjci;½on/ 0i trbatvi, ptxwi Epcluítm;ay;con/ o&mwí xtcg
 Ewtrt&m? Ev;trt&mwjzom tm;ay;con/ ocivi, ptxwium; u, trt&m
 uyg xnay;cavon/ xalumivn; wArm tpn;t½; jynv;u w tpn;ta0;ü
 0u|tjzpaqmi½ucjci; jzpavon/ xtaumi;u q&mú;on 0r;ye;womjzi
 uAsmzlqcon/ q&mú;0r;ye;womjzp&ici;on 0u|t&mo wiajrmuci;alumi
 r[way/ aemitvm;tvm½rn [rr, l unaom wArm tpn;t½;0iw nñwyu
 ojriaomalumi jzpayvrrn/

1937 cEpüyi wArm tpn;t½;wi tm;opw;v mavon/ q&mú;rm
 vn; tvetlu; tx;0r;ajrmujzpc&on/ wArm tpn;½;u 1930
 jynEpavmuwi ocibaomi;u pvuci;jzpon/ xaemu ociApe?
 ociav;armi? ocioe;w0;p; aqm i½uluon/ xaemu q&mú;
 0ivmon/ 1937 cEpwi oywärmuwuov ausmi;om;oyw
 acgi;aqmiw \ pw"mwon wArm tpn;t½;o ñwpjy/vmon/¹

xtjci;t&mu jriaom t c g q&mú;on ocivi, wu tm;ay;axmucon/
 q&mú;rupuscaom ausmi;om;rm;xwi aemitcgwi Avcsyatmiqe; jzpvrrn
 ociatmiqe;vn; yg0icon/ q&mú;on ociw \ vyaqmicursm;u oabmus
 on/ xolaqmi½uom;yg u jrermEiivwvya&Ei ra0;awmly [q&mú;; lun
 ron/ xalumiq&mú;on ociw \ Zmwao; Zmwrm eu v laqmon taeji
]]0;ri;a, mib U}}av;c&u a&om;con/

ociu, awmri;on xuAsmji jrermEiion;w \ Zmwao;Zmwrm pw"mw
 u E;qcon/ tx;ojziociatmiqe; \ Zmwrmepw"mwuE;qcon [qoion/
]]atmiqe;w a½va&mitz;}} [aomty'on ajr;jzpo ociatmiqe;tm; o&aumi;

¹ aZm*? 2010? 98/

tz; \pw"mwuazmjyí ociatmiqeu o&aumi;pwar;apvaom pmq \&n½, cu apwem uaw&on/

pmqon av;csl; tpwi-

]]jr\ vvi omwue;qo? woci pmz/vne;vu? (auom&,) 'ge/ve;luayawmum/

lr\ou;&, v? wx;aewr\ayy? ja&va&mi} blowi;&, e/ O;ri;a, mi Av0icvr? [t&i, repptiu;w, ci;wA\ m/ ¹

[ía&om;xm;ygon/ ociu, awmri;on O;ri;a, miaeom vvi jr\ uazmjyxm; on/ O;ri;a, mion oaygri;x;ee;p;pp0u jr\ou;tjzpaqmi&ucon/ 1885? E0ibmv 28 &uaewi \Awowjrer mEiiuor;yuc ewi O;ri;a, mion a&va&mi b\trncí vovueup½;um t*vyuccwucu cyuazmjyxm;on/ oaygri;x;ee;u;qí;cy? t*vywjrer mEiiuor;yucy? jrer mwi;&i;om;vrsl;w&&m vueupuií wucucalumi; 1885cEp jrer mEii \tajctaewuazmjyí oci vi, w\ Zmwao; Zmwrmu v\laqmcon/

re;tyurm? pe;v* romr, mr? ArmArncsi;awmir? twi;&erv? &eou &eo [í rrwwji? u, wy u, jyei;luw? zi;vw ujri;raumi Avtc&, u? u, ztvw½e;a&mr, v? awmiue; omom, m, m jri;rPpce;qu? wa&mia&miye;um twi;ow? ri;trzr;ciuwji? y&r;yw mawm&mau sm&m ajy;luawm ta&;&i ruomoe ²

[í rEav;acwyuceu azmjyxm;on/ Armtci;csi; pn;v;nñwci;r½b tci; ci;&eapmum t*vyut m;u;í u, u sl;unww\uaom opmazmuw\ oabmu azmjyxm;on/ u, wyu, jyei;luon zi;vaom wyAvwcon a&va&miu opmazmuuon/ u, vw&muaj;luon/ tcsl;wyAvwu a&va&mi uvu&zr;í &eovuoyityci luon [í ociu, awmri;on ygawmry;aemu ori;alumi; utajccí jrer mEii \tajctae? jrer mwi;om;w/ Og;tpn;ajyouo wuwjym; jzpaey? trsl;om;opmazmuwalumi rsl;cpacgi;aqmirms; uq;c&yponji xacw tajctae? vra&;? Eii a&;&mZ0iu xi [yazmjyxm;on/

ociu, awmri;on ygawmry;aemu jrer mEii tajctaeu o;oyly; O;ri;a, mion a&va&mitrncí vovueup½;ly; e, csl; t*vyu ccwucu cyuazmjyxm;on/ O;ri;a, mion lr\vvita½bu(8)rice\ tum wi½aom 'awmi(jri;rPawmi)xywi cicaom opcwyl;u; aqmu vyí wypum t*vywu 2 Epwi ccwucucon/ O;ri;a, mi \wuy0icywuazmjyí jrer mw\ Zmwao; Zmwrmu v\laqmvon q&m \pwaeoabmxm;u vn; aw&on/

¹ ociu, awmri; 2012? 319/

² - , i; -? 319/

ulurm&i0#a;ayxi? av;wipi &mtwi;wijzi t*vyawu twi;
 uwr [vpr;cw? awmwi;uociu? atmilwi;r&ci zr;wtji?
 tlur;ywr; rvyau mi;aomvn;? Oaumi;jzwum taoowluow¹

[í uveacwpepq;u xi[yjyoxm;on/ uveacwwi wi;jyntwu wuy
 0icaom Avva&mion utalumi;raumi;í av;wipi&mwuyüaygiwi u:0qe
 oií zr;cc&on/ vwvya&r&vub t*vyw\ &upulur;luwpm acgi;jzw
 owjci;u cc&on/ uveacw jrermwb0eruc&yu vn; awEion/

puAsmwi ociu, awmri;on ygawmry;aem jrermEii\ acwtajctae
 uo;oyjyí 0;ri;a, mi\ vwvya&βu;yr;reI owao;uc;u;Xm;on/ Eajrmwo
 zljyxm;on/ opmazmujrermwc\ u vn; ½wc;Xm;on/ uveacwpepq;u vn;
 zijyxm;on/ xp0tcgu &upuvaom Awoje, c\wyu vn; u&uXm;on/
 xlyi0;ri;a, mion ociatmiqe; \ tb;jzpalumi;u vn; ziazmjyxm;onrm
 vepmxryiEivayon/ puAsmwipma&o\ pwaeoabmXm;? Acwumv tajctae?
 vra&ori;rm;xi [yv;u&ayon/

jci o;oycu

q&mbu;ociu, awmri; \]]0;ri;a, mi}} av;cs;uAsm u twi;a0zea&? tji
 a0zea&en;emrsm;jzi avvm&mwí q&mbu;on rrajymvon &n½, cuo
 a&matmi a&zlxm;Eionuaw&on/ ajymcison talumi;t&u rra&zlvon
 uAsmyoPmeEi t0iciu sjzpatmi a&zlxm;Eion/ av;cs;uAsm zlpypyeitn
 zlpwyijyxm;on/ toum&e eabwjzi vn; weqm qia&zlxm;on/ xlyi uAsm
 jzpay:& acwtajctaeu vn; xi[yjyxm;on/ 0;ri;a, mion t*vye, c\u
 we;vewucucon acwtcetcg? Eii&? vra&tajctaeu vn; ay:viatmi
 a&zljyxm;Eionu vn; aw&ygon/

e*;

]]0;ri;a, mi}}bU av;cs;uAsm u twi;a0zea&? tji a0zea&½axmiwr avvm
 wijyxm;yg on/ uAsma&zlvijyyEi uAsmwixi [yaeon acwumv tajctaeu
 a0zea&oabmw&wEitn avvmíwijyxm;yg on/ xlaumi a0zea&oabm
 w&m;u avvmv orsm;twu wppwwpa'o taxmutyjrñ , qrygon/

¹ ociu, awmri;? 2012? 319/

u:r;u;pm&i;

c:p0;n? x v m p p o / (1986)/ a0zea&pmaypmwr;rsm;(' -w)/ &eue? pmayArme yEywu/
 aZm*/ (2010)/ ociu , awmri; #um ('-ur)/ &eue? &mjynpmay/
 aZmaZma t m i / (2015)/ pmayoabmw&m; pmaya0zea& t ajccu;r;(w-ur)/ &eue? pwu;c&c&pmay/
 jrZi? wuw;/ (1986)/ a0zea&pmaypmwr;rsm;(y-w)/ &eue? pmayArme yEywu/
 jrerm p m t z i / (2008)/ jrerm t b "me(' -ur)/ &eue? aev i;yEywu/
 oe;? 0;/(2018)/ ynmya' ompmapmi/ &eue? wu o v b m o m j y e E i p m t y x w a 0 a & X m e /
 [e 0 r ? a r m i (u x u) / (2016)/ ociu , awmri;Ei u A s m / &eue? yawm u & e l p m t y w u /

zw½av v m o n p m t y p m & i ;

ppE , ? a ' g u w m / (2013)/ jrerm pmaya0zea& t Ep Epq , c&/ &eue? &mjynpmay/
 aEx u? arm i / (2017)/ a ' g i ; u í w e a p o w n ; / &eue? pwu;c&c&pmay/
 E , e a t m i ? r / (2011)/ pmaya0zea&a v v m c : u / r E a v ; ? &wemywu o v / jrerm pm X m e /
 azarmiwi? 0; / (2013)/ jrerm pmayori;({um' oriur)/ &eue? &mjynpmay/
 jrZmjc n ? r / (2011)/ pmaya0zea&a0g [m & E i o a b m o b m 0 / r E a v ; ? &wemywu o v / jrerm pm X m e /
 v a b ? a ' g u w m / (2009)/ jrerm pmay { n c p m w r ; (p - u r) / &eue? a ' g i ; p m a y /

u^oma&;o \ tawltluEi zew;r^{1/2}axmi

ooci0i;*

စာတမ်းအကျဉ်း

ppmwr;on uAsma&;ow \ tawltluw u zew;zUq&mü wp0;Eiwp0; zew;r^{1/2}axmi r wuon tav sm u rwnaom talumi; tcsu? taw;tjri? wijyy? ^{1/2}axmi
ponjzi uijm;om;aom toiujrerm uAsmrsm;uavvm í uAsma&;ow \
tawltluK tay: ^{1/2}jrirEi uAsmzew;r^{1/2}axmi u wijyvji;jzpygon/ uAsma&;ow \
tawltluEi zew;ruijm;onEitr toiu uAsmrsm;jzpvmy? talumi;t&m
e,y,us,jye vmy? uAsma&;ow \ ^{1/2}jrizew;r apwenoua&m urwu wijyxm;
ygon/ uAsma&;ow \ zew;ruavvm&mü taxmu tuijEirn jzpygon/
aomc:ua0g [m&rsm; - uAsmzew;r?cpm;r?apwem? pwu;ÓP? ^{1/2}jrir? yoPme?
talumi;t&m? tawltlu? taw;tjri

e'je;

uAsma&;owon rrwuⁱvn&m? llawU&myw0e;uⁱjzpaom a&ajrob m0
0e;uⁱEiv tzt pn;? vr0e;uⁱwr tawltluK rsm;u &&cpm;cl uon/ ,i;tawltlu
w tay:ü zew;a&zU&mwi uAsma&;ow \ cpm;r? ^{1/2}jrir? taw;tjri t,tq?
pwu;ÓP? apwem? acwum v tajctaew/ rwnonEitr zew;a&zUaom uAsm
won uijm;pmjzpay:vm&on/ ,i;o toiujm;pmjzpay:vmaom uAsmrsm;u
xwEwavvm í uAsma&;ow \ zew;r^{1/2}axmi w u avvmwijyxm;ygon/

1/ u^oma&;o \ tawltluEi zew;r

pma&;oon 'javmuw ilu lawU&aom tjzptyu? cpm;&aom pwvy&m;rwu
tajccv upwu;ÓPji &opmayu zew;ygon/ xalumi &opmaywp&y jzpaom
uAsmonvn; uAsma&;o \ tawltluK wi tajccí jzpay:vm ygon/ ði;ü tawltlu
[aom oabm on rsm;pmu s,0e;ygon/ tawltluK wi u,awU? pmawU? jrilum;
oawU [í yg0ion/x tawltluK r s;wwi pwtm;xuoeromru pmemrvn;&&
vitygon/

*ewm&mu

]tawltluK [&mü u,wia wUu& cuonvn;&on/ avvmojri
&cuonvn;&on/ pma&q&m rsm;ü xujrup;&aom t lum;tjri
&wwon/ orsm;vom;aom jriu i;u jriwwowxm;rwwon/ orsm;

* a'g uwm? wzuygarmu? jrerm pmXme? &eue taem uyi;wu ov

rlum;raom t ou llum;wwowxm;wwon/ , i;oabmu]xujru
p;&aom ½jrirwom;cu} [ac:av&uon/}}

(wm&m(*e-)? 1970 ?pm 65)

[í wijyxm;yg on/

xlaumi yw0e;u iavmuu jriji;? llum;jci;? oji;pon t m½cpm;ron
tawtlu i yjzpygon/ u ,awupmaw llum;oawlaom tawtluwu uAsma&o
on p;&aom ½jrir? qijcir? pmemrwjzi uAsmzew;yg on/

wpzeuAsma&oü tawtlu trsk;rs&Eiygon/ acwumv tawtlu
vwe;pm; tawtlu? ae&ma'o tawtlu ponji&Eiygon/ x tawtlu lay:wi
uAsma&oon apwemwpccoua&mucrn/ , i;apwemu pwu;ÓPji zew;
vuaom t cg uAsmwn; [aom &opmayyo P me yay:v m&yg on/

uAsmpmqwon acwumv tavsmu&ae aom vwe;pm; to;o;wEivn;
llaw&wwon/ anmi&r;acwü 0eü;ya'o&mZmon ton0etjzp vnv n
om;vm&i; rrawllua&aom vwe;pm; to;o;wu pmemrt o jziluncí xow\
b0u cpcijrwE;z , av;pm;z , a&zlc alumi; awl&on/

yx00i taet xm; t&jzpap? zllz;w;wurt&jzpap ae&ma'owpcEi wpc
wonu jym;pm wn&aewwygon/ xlaumi ae&ma'oEipyv0;aom tawtlu wu
a&zlaom uAsm trsk;rs;ü awl&yg on/ tx;oji ppc;c& tawtluwu e0a';?
ew&iaemi? 0;w;paom pmqwl&wrsm;wi vn;aumi;? wi;oi;ri;u; 0;xe;n\
tmoEiarmue;wivn;aumi; txit&m;awl&yg on/ ppc;c&r[waomjim; ae&m
a'o tawtluu ri;jypri;'Poií rZmt&yo a&m u&ae aom pmqv u0oE&\
jrZawmiajc&wü a&zxm;onu awl&yg on/ uAsma&owon yw0e;u iavmur
tawtluwu&ccl uon/ , i; tawtlu way:ü cpm;rjzpvmon/ qijcio?
apwemo? pmemowjzpvmon/ , i; towron pmzwou wijyvaom &n½, cu
or[w t abmjzpvmon/ &n½, cuu azmaqi&e talumi;t&mu azmjy&e
yoPmeuzpn;&yg on/ pwu;ÓP\ 0;aqmirji oiav smaompum;v;? nnw
aom um&e? vuzuaom towjzi zlpn;ívn;aumi;? tvum? *P? erwywji
rr;rív n;aumi; zllqzew;jci;jzi &opmay 0g uAsm [í jzpay:vmygon/

2/ to i ujrermu sm t zllrsm;

uAsma&owon tawtlu way:wicpm;í uAsmrsm;u zew;a&zllc uon/
 , i;ozew;a&zllmü acwumv? ae&ma'o? pwu;ÓP? cpm;r½jrir? taw;tjri?
t , tqponwujym;rwiwnrí rwnaom tjri? talumi;t&mEi uAsm t zll

yoPmetr; r;w jzpay:vm&on/ xallumi jrerm paywi toiujrerm uAsm tzl
rsm; u awjri vm&on/

awmiiacwpmqe0a'; on pponpmqwp0; jzpon tavsmu ppc&; tawtlu
rsm; pm&con/ ppc&wrm; pm a&; cygon/ &wwwi ppc&mae&ma'o\ tawtlu
ay:ü aw; jri r?cpm; rw rwontavsmu wiyontalumi; t&mEiwijyyw
ujym; on uaw&on/]tyrur v i)c&wü cuclur; wr; aom ppc&; vr; tawtlu
u

]]r; r?xe;? awmiu; awmi vw? ajrmi; u wEiacsmu? ajrna&mu vn;?
aolajcmurc? ap; ½üeuq;? ov; yqp? ulepqe; x;? quveu; r?
acsmi; u; l u í}} (e0a';? 1966? pm248)

[ío ½ yazm a&; zlxm; ygon/ yiye; cucaom pponw\ b0upmem ojzi ½ jri
a&; zlxm; on u awl&ygon/

e0a'; \]jrp&wv i} c&wwir ppc&c&; r ½ ci; yom' rsm; u lunE; Epouz ,
jria , milum; a , mivmatmi

]]cporv i? voE, yi? iuobi [? aioijzlo? aysmyEpv? iuw
bmomr*vm [? n nmpa0; xr; jrm; ay; u? yau; 0v? x; tqv u}}
(e0a';? 1966? pm278-279)

[ío ½ yazma&; zlxm; ygon/ uAsma&; oon rru, wiu cpo&iaEmi; Ei r*vm
aqmiEi; ly; {&m0wjrpuqewuum ppc&c&; xuc&jci; jzpon/ xallumi ppc&;
yw0e; u iü awl u l&aom au; i u uav; rsm; u lunE; aomcpm; rEi ½ jria&; zlc ygon/

e0a'; \]Ep [v/z , }c&wwir

]]aqmi; v , umv? csc&aom? *rv; v;? 0gy; v v? qrnopop? oon
jzpu? onppE, yi? rawlci [? r ½ in; c&;? &ruv; vn;? w; w; qlu?
truwv; u}} (- , i; -? pm240)

[ízlxm; ygon/ ai; ü e0a'; on ppc&; tawtlu x u ppEiywouaom tjriji
½ jrio; oyr [e wygon/ xallumi pponwu ajym on ajym [ejzi a&; zlxm; ygon/
ppurEpou on tjiEi tw e0a'; \ ppu rjzpym; apvaom? ppurvvm; aom
apwem u vn; awl&on/ pponwi; ppyuqiEaewi; ppyu v vm; íwujci;
r [wallumi; t x it&m; azmjyaeygon/ jrermri; tqquw on ti; 0? tr&y&lr
wwi x; ee; puxcluaom vn; ri; we; ri; v uxuwi lr lawmrEav; u wnaxmic
on/ rEav; lr Eipyv 0; ly; uAsm trsm; tjym; u a&; zlc luygon/ , i; uAsmwwi
wijyxm; aom talumi; t&m? talumi; tcu? wijyywrwnon uawl&on/ jyipn
ri; om; on

]]eEmun&i? awmiri;atmiyiv ,rm? llumrsl;ig;o ,? vi'u ,ar;y
avmi;yg vav;/ /a&wacsmi;Ei? aemuapmi;0uum? , 0lyiwuao?
ra0;jrp{&m}} (bcs?0?('; 'w-)?(wn;)?1994?pm 42)

[í]rEav;lrU b}oci;u zUqx;yg on/ , i;ü rEav;lrUyw0e;usi \ obm0&ci;
rsm;u awU&yg on/ eEmue? atmiyiv , ue? a&wacsmi;ajrmi;?? {&m0wjrpEi llumrsl;
ig;yg;wjzi zUqx;onjzp&m rEav;lrUyw0e;usi \ at;cr;om , mru lunE;
Epouz , cpm;rapyg on/ jyipnri;om;on at;cr;om , mru cpm;apvaom apwem
toji a&cygon/

revnq&mawmon rEav;lrU Eipyv;0; í jyny;uce; }wi

]]urmi , rajymi;jye? armuapmi;veo? a0 , ei , rx;ee? jynwi;ce;o?
y&r;yw? xujcr;tmv;u}} (revnq&mawm? 1979? pm 36)

[a&zUxm;yg on/ si;ü q&mawmon q;0g;vaom tajtaewu puqypwy;u
[e&yg on/ xalumi qijciozi½jrií apwemtozia&zUcly; Zmwrmeuvlaqm
ay;aom uAsmwp'yjzpygon/

xalumi rEav;lrUyw0e;usi u zUoncsi;waomvn; acwumvtawUuK?
cpm;rtjriEi apwemwrwontavsmu uAsm \ talumi;t&Ei yoPmewujym;
om;onu awU&yg on/

yiv , ur;ajca'owwi vi;Eiausmuaqmiwu awU&lrjzpygon/ vi;Ei
ausmuaqmiwtay:wi aw;jricpm;aomtaw;tjriEi cpm;rwrwontavsmu vi;
Eiausmuaqmiu zUqaom uAsmwlon ujym;pmjzpvmonu awU&on/ rsl;jriaq
on vi;Eiausmuaqmi \ tzpu ewu;uuu a0;wpououoabmji jrir
on/ xalumi]vi;Eiausmuaqmi}uAsmu

]]awUuaomcg? ri;eigv(i

alujim &epp ci;lulr/

ru&nuow? ri;jyeqww(i

iwwwigrm ri&lr/}} (acway:jrermuAsm? 1978? pm238)

[a&zUxm;yg on/

armivr;oon rru , u ausmuaqmi? cpou vi;Eiwipm;ly;

]]unjlxyg;? wupm;½

ajcrwvn;? 0r;ren;yg

rlumcP? vi;jzlvEi

q&av&m? ausmuaqmi vmo

u , onjzpu au:ey/ (acway:jrerm uAsm?1978?pm272)

[í]vi;Eiausmuaqmi}uAsm u a&;zlxm;yg on/ uAsma&;oon cspotay: xm;& aom cpm;csuoabmxm;tjrijzi zlxm;yg on/

yiv , xwi ausmuaqmiwpc&on/ur;pyo w;a0aeaom vi;wum;wi ausmuaqmion iyc:nay:c&n&on/ xtjzpu ri;o0Pon ausmuaqmiu a&u;aeo wpa , mutjzpjri on/ vi;rs;ur;yg; o ajy;vm;aeon [xion/ xalum i

]]iyc:n ay:c&nEi

ur;pyu twiu;w ,

x;w ausm uB u;/} (ri;o0P?2009? pm72)

[í]xi&on}uAsm u a&;zlygon/ ri;o0Pon yw0e;u:itay:wi pwu;ji ½jricpm;a&;zlxm;yg on/ wpcgwp&ü txiEitjriw vrm;wwon jzpalumi;u owrrapaom uAsmwpv' tjp aw&on/

xalum i uAsma&;owon rrw\ tawtluur;sm;u uAsmzew;&mü cpm;csu? taw;tjri? pwu;ÓP? apwemwrwnontavsmu &nne;aom talumi;t&m waomvn; talumi;t&m? talumi;tcu? wijyy? &oEib0to tjriwrwaom toiuuAsmrsm;jzpaon u aw&ygon/ , i;toiuuAsmrsm;on pmzwowu cpm;rtr;rk;? taw;tjritr;rk;? b0totr;rk;u ay;Eionjzpalumi;? uAsm \ talumi;t&m e , y , us , jyeaponjzpalumi; aw&ygon/

3/ uAsma&;o \ tawtluEi zew;r½axmi

uAsma&;ow\ tawtluw:itay: zew;r½axmiwon rwnontavsmu &nne;azmjyvaom talumi;t&m? talumi;tcuwwaomvn; talumi;t&m? wijyy Ei b0totjriponwuiym;um toiuuAsmrsm; jzpvmon/ toiuuAsmrsm; jzpvmapaom uAsma&;ow\ tawtluEi zew;r½axmiu toiujrerm uAsmrsm;jzi xwEwv v mwijyxm;yg on/

3? 1/ yawm uye; t ay:zew;r½axmi

jrerma&ajr0e;u:iwi]yawm uye;}u txit&m;aw/Eion/ xolawtluu&aom yawm uye;u acwt o;o;r pmq to;o;won uAsm tjpzew;a&;zlcuon/ ue;abmiacwpmq0;alum u yawm uye;u jra&mitz;uav;rs;Ei a&tqi;Ei 0i;0g aeaomye;? tcg u;&uB u;rs;wion cucuccyiaomye;? rnonye;wEi pci;Ei; r&onye;? ye;wumw\ ri;jzpaomye; [zlxm;yg on/ ai;u

]]vwec;ayr? t v x;ygb? jrjrz;& , w cia&0g/

wpu , wr;onjzi b , ye;aom prwb;(allum?0;? 2011? pm 111)

[í v n;aumi;?

]]wpEpwi onwpvayy? wpvwi wp&uwn;

cucw&uA'm? yi&mlu plriwi;}}(allum?0;? 2011? pm 111)

[í v n;aumi; a&zlxm;ygon/0;alum on yawm uye;u ye;rm; \ t xwt xyye;
tjzp *Px;0aoo rsm;jzi zlxm;on/ yawm uye;on yi&erv , uaomallumi
wez;xm;jrwe;ontjriEi 0;aluma&con [, qygon/ , i;orr \ tjriu tcu
tvu jynjynppjzi trsm;vucciz , jzpatmi trsm;emaymz , jzpatmi zew;cyg
on/ xialumi jrermayavmuwi 0;alum \ yawm uye;} uAsmon txit&m;
wn&cygon/

yxrq;acwpr;uAsm [owrwici;c&aom uAsmwp'y'rm aZm*s \ yawm uye;}
uAsmjzpygon/ puAsmwi yawm uye;u ou&oz , wipm;zlxm;ygon/ uAsm \
tprmyi aZm*s u

]]yiliu viueluawmv

acgi;uum qma0a0e

ovn;av avmuon;ayr

<um;civayvrr , }} (aZm*s? 1998? pm 31)

[í zlxm;ygon/ aZm*s on yawm uye; \ vyontqi;ta&miu zlxm;ly;
 , i;t v u ry;up;apvaom rzuq;apciao mapwem & [ewygon/ xapwemu

]]rc;cipr;yge}}(- , i;-? pm 31)?]]c;ygeu , }}(- , i;-? pm 32)

[aomtzwjzi xi&apygon/ xialumi aZm*s on yawm uye;u pmemojzijri í
u½Pmpw? tumtu , ay;vaomqEwjzi a&zcon [, qygon/ yawm uye;r
wpqi avmutvwu rzuq;ap&e oway;aeono &ygon/

yawm uye;u jrwe;owwi '*ewm&mvn; yg0iygon/ xialumi yawmu0;}
uAsmwi yawm uye; \ t v u

]]a&o;0gao;? ywoyav;atmi

nwau;½½? v ...v ...v ...on}} (wm&m('*e-)? 2012? pm 318)

[í zlxm;onu awl&ygon/xlaemuwir yawm uye; \ t ajc taeu

]]vzure;allumi

allujye;vu? 'P&m&Ei

$\frac{1}{2}$ ujrjymnl? opiwwom

z $\frac{1}{2}$ z&? use&p \ /}} (- , i;-? pm 319)

[zllqxm;on/ pwiyawmuye; \ v , uzuuq;acsre;ji; c&yu]vzure;} [í
uspu;pvspvpvxrr qx;m;on/ 'P&mEijzpa&on taetxm;u]allujye;
vu;} [aom B u , mwv;rsm;ji xi&m;apon/use&pcon taetxm;u]z $\frac{1}{2}$ z& to;u
jrionapon/ xalumi puAsma&zll&mü '*ewm&m on yawmuye; \ tvw&m;Ei
, i;tvalumi yup;&on tq;owu jrir[ewygon/ yawmuye; \ jzp&y
uazmjyí tvw&m; \ rrraomoabmu;vnaumi;? tvuzuq;ow&r oabmu
vnaumi; qijciojzi a&zllxm;aom '*ewm&m \ apwemtjriu awl&on/

yawmuye;u iye;EiEi; , 0í $\frac{1}{2}$ jria&zllcaom uAsmwp'y'rm wuov awm om;
 \]]yawm uEiia $\frac{1}{2}$ 0g}} uAsmjzpygon/ , i;uAsmü r;a&puw&r yive;&aom yawmu
ye; \ obm0jzi zllqxm;ygon/ xolaomyawmuye; \ obm0u

]]ua $\frac{1}{2}$ yawmu? aeualumu í?

aEa&muygu vllcsiv

a&ayguvmr u , xijy/}} (awm om;(wuov-)?2016?pm 73)

[ía&zllxm;ygon/ wpze uAsma&ou yawmuye; \ tvon wpcPom jzpon
oabmu

]]r;tusü tvwpuu

cPquly;

jyy;uaysmujy , aiy;jyely/}} (- , i;-? pm73)

[ízllqxm;ygon/ puAsmwi wuovawm om;on yawmuye;u iye;EiEi; , 0í
jriron/ aEae \ ty'Pu we;veíyiEipr;&aom iye; \ pr;t m;u Epv [e&on/
wuovawm om;on yawm uEii \ yiyuazmjyí vw on avmb? a'go? Aomuty
wllum;r avmu"u &&&iqiausmjzw om;Eionpr;t m;&apvon apwemjzi
a&zllcygon/

vwon aojci;w&m;Eiilulq&csewi pwt m;i , wwluonoabm &wwluyg
on/oacom rru , uqijici;Ei oww&m;&owrrr qijciojzi avmuu
llunjriwwuygon/ ponu a'gi;E , aq \]cwavyia v yawmuwap} uAsmü
awl&ygon/ , i;uAsmon uAsma&oaq; $\frac{1}{2}$ ay:wi aemuq;a&caomuAsmprjzpyg
on/ yawmuye;won wpyiv;xexe0g0gEi yiontceola&uwi; vw \
cw x p z u q ; j c i ; u c & o n / x y a w m u w o n r n r y i c w x p c & a p u m r ' P & m r s m ;
jynEuaeapumr wpEply;wpEp yilryijzpalumi; urmajrq;wiyirnom jzpalumi;
u

]]baysmucre;? ye;yaw^muyi

"^m;wicw^{xp}? wpE^{ply};av

wpE^{pa0&}? olb⁰on

t v^{qiu}m? 'P^{&mjynae}

yiv; a^{0v}s^u

onaj^{rrq}; yir^{nwn};/}} (a'^{gi};E , aq? 2015? pm 249)

[í z^lq^{xm};ygon/ , i;u^{Asmü} rn^{ryicw}xpc&ap^{umr} quvu&ioel^r yaw^mu^{rsm}; xea^{0lrjzpon} ll^uucE^{ion} yaw^muyi \ t^m;ti^u u^{Asma&};oon jr^{ir}[ew
on/ x^{al}umir^{no}laom 'u^{tcucw} av^{mu}" \ ½uc^{wrw} ll^uaw^{laomjim};
quvu&ioe^{Eipr}; &&^{rn}[aom toay;vaom^{apwemu} aw^l&on/ a'^{gi};E , aq
on yaw^muye;u q^{ijcio}zi ½j^{riv};u zew;a&;z^lx^m;on/

x^{alumi} 0;al^{umon} yaw^muye;u wez;x^m;½j^{rily}; *P^x;0a^{oor}sm;zi
zew;z^lq^{xm};on/a^{Zm*}on yaw^muye;u p^{mem}ozi½j^{rily}; ou&oz , wip^ma&;z^l
x^m;on/ '*ew^m&m^{on} yaw^muye;u q^{ijcio}zi½j^{rily}; yaw^muye; \ t v^{Ei}y^{up};
c&aom tj^{zp}wj^{zi} zew;a&;z^lx^m;on/ wu^{ov} aw^mon;on yaw^muye; \ yiyu
q^{ijcio}zi½j^{rily}; i^{0gye};Ei^{Ei}; , 0í z^lq^{xm};on/ a'^{gi};E , aqon yaw^muyi \
t^m;ti^u½j^{rily}; rn^{ryicw}xpc&ap^{umr} yir^{jzpaom} yaw^mu \ t^m;r^{meu} az^{mu}l;
z^lq^{xm};on/ x^{tcgyawm}uye; \ Ep^{ouz} , ? p^{mem}z , ? q^{ijciz} , ? tw , z , tj^{zp}
w^u c^{pm};oj^{rivm}&ap^{ygon}/

3'2/ t i;0^{lr}llaw^m t ay:zew;r½a^{xmi}

a&;jr^{ermri};w^x;ee;p^{ux}&m p^mq^{ynm}&i^{rsm};p^{may}:x^u&m ri;aej^{nawm}ll^ru;
rm t i;0^{lr}lljz^{pygon}/ t i;0^{lr}llom , my? t i;0ee;aw^m \ cr;em;yw^{ur}sm;p^{maom}
p^mq^{wu} z^lq^cuygon/ t i;0^{lr}llta^{umi};u wu½uz^lqu^{ouo}u , p^m;jy^{lly};vⁿ;
z^lqu^{uygon}/

qon&mp^m;0;at^{mi}u; \]t i;0^{lr}llb^uq , Ep&m^{ob}u v;w^m;rsm;}wi t i;0^{lr}ll
\om , myu wu½uz^lq^{xm};onu aw^l&on/ v;w^m;y'a& (15)y'&ly; yxry'
Ei'w , y'wwi t i;0^{lr}llb^u z^lq^{xm};ygon/ u^{ety}'rsm;ü t i;0^{lr}ll \ &moy
qi , i uⁱ;yl^{uysm};u a&;z^lx^m;ygon/ qon&mp^m;0;at^{mi}u; &ywn&m acw^{umv}
jz^{paom} an^{mi}&r;acw^{Ei} t i;0^{lr}ll \ ta^{ctaeu} aw^l&on/t i;0^{lr}llon ll^rwu^w \
t xwt^{xy}? ll^rrsm; \ ri;jz^{palumi};? , i;ll^ru wec;t^mP^m? v^u&;&n? Ev;&n
wj^zij^{npon} ri;wu^w \ 0;x^yyeqⁱ&aom ri;on^p;ponjz^{palumi};Ei yivⁱ;
om , mp^{nyion} a&j^{yna}&ll^ru;jz^{palumi};u 0;at^{mi}u;u

]]&wemy&? a&0reu i;? ||rrrsm;ri;u? xwci;ajrr;?||ce&u|u;r? wec;
t m P m ynm v u&;? Ev;wrw? velu njrwv u}}

(at m i u;? 0;(q on $\frac{1}{2}$ mpm;-)? 1965? pm4)

[| a&;zU x m;yg on/ v;wm; \ y'a& 12 ü awm o vi;vwi avlyiyu;i;y|uyu|

]]awm o vi;0 , ? jrpwi;&w? ye;vobi? opqi; , i v;u? v u o i
av m u m;? a&om;puui;? avci;av mlyi? cia&;uií}}(- , i;-?pm17)

[zU q x m;yg on/ pwi u A s m a&;o on r r l u l a w l a e x i a o m t i;0 l r U E i r i;u E p o u
j r w E; * P , a o m t j r i z i | $\frac{1}{2}$ j r i c p m;a&;zU x m;yg on/ x l a l u m i p u A s m o n r r Z m w & y & m
u j r w E; * P , a p o n Z m w r m e u A s m w p y' [q E i y g o n/

t i;0 l r U o n | u;u s , c r ; e m ; c a o m v n ; a n m i & r ; a c w [o m 0 w a & m u r i ;
v u x u w i [o m 0 w r r e w / v m a & m u w u c u j c i ; a l u m i y s u o 0 ; c & o n / [o m 0 w
a & m u r i ; u , w i [o m 0 w o l y g a w m r c o n / , i ; o j z p c & a o m t i ; 0 u [o m 0 w
a & m u r i ; u] v Z w y v Z w w a v m a u m } u A s m j z i |

]]a&b t i;0? y&Eum;? e&oei;? r i;v n;&i;u m? j y n & m y s u p;? a w m u;
[a v m u? r u a r m u u u m? o m o e m v n;? a&m i 0 g r v i;}}

([o m 0 w a & m u r i ;? 1992? pm64)

[zU q x m;yg on/ pwi u A s m a&;o on t i;0 l r U \ y w 0 e;u i r j z p & y w u a w l j r i c p m;
l y; j z p w w y;u w w a o m w & m ; o a b m E i & j r i q i j c i l y ; a &; c y g o n / r n r y i w & m ; o a b m
q i j c i r a p r r r w \ Z m w & y & m u c i w , o w i ; \ p w o n r r w \ & y & m u c i w , l r
w r ; w r j z p o n / x l a l u m i v n ; u A s m \ ' w , y ' w i |

]]r u r e ; x i x i ? o l a l u m i ; t i u ? 0 r ; w i a p a p ? l u a t m u a r a o m ? 0 u a 0
o n E , ? v r ; r j y , c / } } (- , i ; - ? p m 6 5)

[zU q x m;yg on/ u A s m a&;o on t i;0 l r U a w m u q i j c i o j z i a &; z l c a o m v n ; y x Z 0
j z p o n t a v s m u w r ; w r o n c p m ; r w o n v n ; u A s m w i y g 0 i a e o n u a w l & y g o n /
x l a l u m i , i ; u A s m o n a v m u " E i t w v o b m 0 u q i j c i r a p o n /

& i a x ; e m o e o n a w m i i b & i r i ; u ; n \ x ü t r a w m x r ; c o n / o a o m r r \
Z m w & y $\frac{1}{2}$ m t i ; 0 u o m w r ; w r o n / , i ; c p m ; r j z i | j e w a w m q e ; í) c s & w u a &; z l c o n /
a &; z U & mü r r a w l u l c a o m t i ; 0 l r U a w m u

]]a e 0 i j r i o n ? 0 a $\frac{1}{2}$ j y n u m ; ? q ; & n y w c s l y ? r i ; t y y s y ? y n a w m i q ?

& v s u r v i ; ? r 0 i ; t l r i ; } } (p m q a w m r s m ; & w a y g i ; c s l y ? 1966? pm48-49)

[| t i ; 0 l r U a e 0 i c e ? r i ; a 0 t l r i ; a e a o m t a j c t a e w j z i z U q x m ; o n / t i ; 0 l r U E i | a 0 ; u m
a e & a o m ? t i ; 0 l r U o j y e a & m u & e r a & & m a o m u A s m a &; o \ p w t a w ; j z i a &; z l a o m
t i ; 0 l r U \ y & y o n r y r j y i 0 ; w 0 g ; r o m x i c y g o n /

anmi&r;acwpmq 0eßu;ya'o&mZm \jaus;n|jav}c&won au;ap &wwpy'
jzpygon/ au;ap&wjzpon tavsmu au;apvwor ,av;on au;uav;
om;a&mu&rnae&mu vr;nexm;ygon/ au;uav;om;a&mu&rn ae&mti;0u

]]wi;v , wr? ||rUa½0u? omvx;qe? ee;vn;aqmiaqmi? ajymiajymi
0i;0g? pt *gEi? ewrmru? om , mv [? q|u&n vsm;}}

(pmqawmrsm;&waygi;csly? 1966? pm267)

[í z|qxm;ygon/ ãi;ü ti;0||rUawm \ cr;em;wiw ,yu aw&on/ uAma&o
on rrwr||rUawm \ cr;em;ru *P , aomtjriji ½jricpm;a&z| x m;ygon/ Zmwrm
u jzpay:apygon/

ti;0acwpmq &ir [m&|om&on rr \Zmw&y½m ti;0||rUawm u pw"rom&
u;ce;y|U? o0&y|Uwwi a&z|x m;ygon/ a&z|U&mü wu½ua&z|jci;r [wb y|U \
a'o aemucAm&mPoirbwi xnoi;a&z|x m;ji; jzpygon/ x|aumi u;ce;y|U
wi

]]&y&pyg;r? c;om;r'r;? ppru||ir;vu? cyor;alujim? yivi;om í?
Am&mPojn|u;y [}} (&|om&? &i? 1996? pm4)

[í ||rU \at;c;r;om , myu v n;aumi;

]]Am&mPo? pnajym0? xjynrü? 'gerar? apmiavowi;? jyn|u;wce}}

(- , i;-)

[í ||rU \ pnyi0ajymyEiri; \ owi;o vjynpywjzi z|qx m;on/o0&y|Uwi

]]jynreijnri;? om , mji;vn;? cyi;aysm&m? jynppmon/ / ew½m

r;E , wapwn;f}}(&|om&?&i?1967?pm75)

[v n;aumi;?

]]ypn;y , i? p o|viwn? jynwiAm&m? xuew½mo? om , maomt m;}}

(- , i;-? pm77-78)

[v n;aumi; ||rUawm \om , myu a&z|x m;ygon/ pwi&ir [m&|om&on
Am&mPoirU zew;z|q&mü z|qwiyyci;rwonu aw&on/ u;ce;y|U u ti;0
||rU? ti;0b&i'w , b&iri;acgivuxuwi vn;aumi;? o0&y|Uujynr||rU? jyn
b&iax; vuxuwivn;aumi; a&z|x m;on/ a&z|aomumvEia'o taw|
t|u|w|rwontavsmu uAma&o \cpm;r? ½jrir? taw;tjriw ujym;om;ly;
zew;r onvn; ujym;om;&ygon/ wpzevn; o0&y|Uwia&z|aom Am&mPo
jynon ti;0||rU u r&nne;b jynr||rU u&nne;aeonavm [p0;pm;z , jzpapygon/

xalumi ti;0lr\ tawtluwi tajccvuzew;a&zlaom uAsmtr;rk; wu
aw\on/ pwiuAsma&owaw\uk&on acwumvtajctae? uAsma&o aw\uk&
onjzp&yEi b0tajctae? xtajctaeway:wi jzpay:aomcpm;r? ½jrirwzia&z
aom uAsmwon talumi;t&m?talumi;tcu? wijywuujym;pm jzpay:vmon/
toiuuAsmrsm;jzpvmapygon/

မြိုင်သုံးဆန်ချက်

tawtluuKtr;rk;u tajcwnvu uAsma&owon xtawtluay:ü
apwemoua&mur&con/ pmemo?qijcio? apwemowji cpm;½jrivsu uAsmrsm;u
zew;a&zluon/

]]yawmuye;}}u 0;alumon wez;xm;½jrily; jrwe;wez;xm;apvaom apwem
jzivn;aumi;? aZm*son pmemozi½jrily; yawmuye;\tv? avmutvwu
rzuq;apvaom apwemjzivn;aumi;? *ewm&mon yawmuye;\ rjraom
tvw&Ei xtvw&wu zuq;wwow &wwonoabmu½jrily; rlrjci;\
oabm?tzutq;taEmit, uw&lroabmwu toay;vaomapwemjzivn;aumi;?
wuovawmom;on i0gye;EiEi;, 0½jrily; aEaeyuwe;veí yiapvaom?
avmu"u &&iqiapvaom apwemjzivn;aumi;? a'gi;E,aqon yawmuyi\
tm;rmeu½jrily; lucipm&ywnapvaom apwemjzivn;aumi; zew;a&zlxm;yg
on/

]]ti;0lr\awm}}u qon½mpm;0;atmiu;on *P,ontjrijzi ½jrily;
Zmwrmeu jzpay:apvaomapwemji a&zlxm;on/ [om0wa&muri;on qijci
ozi½jrily; avmu"Eivoabmu qijcirapvaomapwemji a&zlxm;on/ &iax;
emoeon wr;waluuaomcpm;rjzi a&zlxm;on/ 0e!u;ya'o&mZmon lr\awm\
cr;em;wiw,ru *P,aomtrijzia&zlxm;on/ &ir[m&[m&|om&on ti;0
lr\awm\at;cr;om,myEi pnyi0ajmywu ½jricpm;a&zlxm;yg on/

xalumi uAsma&owon rrwaw\uc&onwtay:wi jzpvmaomcpm;r?
½jrir?apwemoua&murw rwnontavsmu wijyontalumi;t&m talumi;
tcu? wijywuujym;om;on/ talumi;t&mop?wijytop? taw;tjriopwji
awljri&apon toiuuAsmrsm; jzpay:vmapygon/ uijm;aomtalumi;t&mrm;?
rnaomcpm;rrsm;? taw;tjrirms;? Epourrms;? b0totjrirms;u &&apygon/
xalumi uAsma&o\zew;rwon zew;rtoprsm;? &opmayauim;rm; jzpvmapa&
wi ta&yg onjzpalumi;aw\&yg on/

နိဇ္ဇာ:

t o i u j r e r m u A s m t r s ; r s ; u a v v m í u A s m r s m ; \ j z p a y : w ; w u r ? u A s m a & ; o \ z e w ; r ? u A s m E i u A s m a & ; o w q u E , r ? p m z w o u b 0 t o a y ; E i r w u p p p a v v m a z m x w E i r n [a r m v i y g o n /

u ; r ; u ; p m & i ;

c i r i ? a r m i (" E j z l) / (2 0 1 0) / c p o r m ; u / t q ; p & i j c i ; l & e u e ? j r 0 w & n p m a y

c i r i ? a r m i (" E j z l) / (2 0 1 8) / b m o m p m a y o a w o e p m w r ; r s m ; l & e u e ? & m j y n p m t y w u

a c w a y ; j r e r m u A s m l (1 9 7 8) / l & e u e ? j r 0 w y E y w u

a Z m * ; / (1 9 7 6) / l & o p m a y t z i E i e ' g e ; l & e u e ? a 1 / 2 t ; p m a y w u

a Z m * ; / (1 9 8 4) / o e ; E i u s m ; # u m l & e u e ? r m r m p m a y

a Z m * ; / (1 9 9 8) / a Z m * ; u A s m a y g i ; c ; y l & e u e ? p m a y a v m u p m t y w u

a Z m * ; / (2 0 1 0) / l & o p m a y l o a b m l & e u e ? " 0 p m t y w u

a Z m a Z m a t m i l (2 0 0 9) / r ; w r t r w (9 3) / l & e u e ? p w u ; c ; c s l t E y n m

w m & m ? (' * e -) / (1 9 7 0) / l p m a y o a b m w & m ; ? p m a y a 0 z e a & ; p m a y v y & m ; r (' i u r) / l & e u e ? e l o m p m a y w u

w m & m (' * e) / (2 0 1 2) / l ' * e w m & m l ' * e w m & m E i o l u A s m l (w u r) / l & e u e ? Z e y i p m t y w u

a w m o m ; (w u o v) / (2 0 1 6) / l o E o i j y i u A s m r s m ; l & e u e l p ; r ; v i r o m ; p p m a y

w u w ; / (1 9 6 3) / E i p m a y l r E a v ; ? r ; 0 ; y e ; p m a y l

w u w ; / (2 0 0 1) / b 0 E i p m a y l & e u e ? & w e m y p m t y w u

a ' g i ; E , a q l (2 0 1 5) / a ' g i ; E , a q u A s m a y g i ; c ; y l & e u e ? p w u ; c ; c s l t E y n m

e 0 a ' ; / (1 9 6 6) / l e 0 a ' ; & w a y g i ; c ; y l (p w w i u r) / l & e u e ? [o m 0 w y E y w u

z ; v w ? 0 ; / (2 0 1 1) / l o c i ; y a ' o m a y g i ; c ; y l & e u e ? y e ; a 1 / 2 j y n p m a y

b c s l 0 ; (' ; ' w) (w n ;) / (1 9 9 4) / l * w 0 a o m " e u ; r ; l (q | r i u r) / l & e u e ? ' ; ' w p m a y w u

r ; a j r ? r l (2 0 0 8) / u A s m z e w ; o E i u A s m c p m ; o l & e u e ? a 1 / 2 u a u m p m a y

r i ; o 0 P l (2 0 0 9) / l a & c ; r ; p i l & e u e ? Z e y i p m t y w u

r e v n q & m a w m l (1 9 6 2) / l t b ; w e r e v n u A s m r s m ; l & e u e ? j y n i u ; r @ i i y E y w u l

r e v n q & m a w m l (1 9 7 9) / l u A s m a y g i ; c ; y u r ; ? u ; l r E a v ; ? o c 0 w y E y w u

j r Z i E i t r s m ; / (1 9 7 3) / p m a y a q m i ; y g ; l p m t y p m a y (' w , w) / l & e u e ? p m a y A r m e

j r Z i l (1 9 8 2) / j r e r m u A s m z l y E i w i j y l j r e r m u A s m p m w r ; r s m ; (' w , w) / l & e u e ? p m a y A r m e

j r e r m u A s m r s m ; a 1 / 2 c ; , c u E i l & w a 1 / 2 c ; , c u l (1 9 7 0) / l & e u e ? [o m 0 w y E y w u

j r e r m p m n e a y g i ; u ; r ; (' w , w) (1 9 9 2) / l & e u e ? j y e l u m ; a & ; 0 e l u ; X m e

pmqawmrm; &waygi; c'yl (1966) / &eue? [om0wyEyw
 &| om&?&i/(196&)/ *o0&y* / &eue? [om0wyEyw
 &| om&?&i/(1996) / *pw"rom&u; ce; y* / &eu ewu ov? jrerm pmXme
 omE;? arm i / (2006) / **E0 jrerm uA* / &eue? urm ½ wpm tywu
 aom Zi? Q, / (2010) / *uA m vr; ne* / &eue? aom umpm tywu at m i u;? O; (q on ½ mpm;) / (1965) /
t i; 0 r b/q , Ep& m ov; w m; l / &eue? [om0w
t/i c; i; pl (1984) / &eue? wu ov r sm; y Eywu

မြသန်းတင့်၏ “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ”မှ စာရေးသူ၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း လေ့လာချက်

သင်းသင်းဆွေ*

စာတမ်းအကျဉ်း

ဤစာတမ်းသည် “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ”မှ ဝတ္ထုသုံးပုဒ်နှင့်ပတ်သက်၍ မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းများဖြင့် မည်သို့ဆက်လက် ဖန်တီးထားကြောင်း ဖော်ထုတ်တင်ပြသော စာတမ်းဖြစ်ပါသည်။ မူရင်းဝတ္ထုများအပေါ် မြသန်းတင့်ထားရှိသော စေတနာနှင့်ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်များအား မည်သို့ပုံဖော်ရေးသား တင်ပြထားကြောင်း လေ့လာဆန်းစစ်ထားပါသည်။ ဤသို့လေ့လာခြင်းဖြင့်မြသန်းတင့်၏ ဝတ္ထုများအား နောက်ဆက်တွဲ ဖြည့်စွက်ဖန်တီးမှုစွမ်းရည်ကို ဖော်ထုတ်နိုင်သောကြောင့် ရသစာပေအတွက် အကျိုးပြုနိုင်မည်ဟု ယူဆမိပါသည်။

သော့ချက်ဝေါဟာရများ။ ဝတ္ထု၊ ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်၊ ဖန်တီးမှု၊ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း။

နိဒါန်း

ဤစာတမ်းသည် “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ”မှ စာရေးသူ၏စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းလေ့လာချက်ကိုတင်ပြထားသော စာတမ်းဖြစ်ပါသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် (၁၉၂၀) မှ (၁၉၄၅) ခုနှစ်အတွင်းထုတ်ဝေခဲ့သော မြန်မာဝတ္ထုရှည်များမှ မိမိနှစ်သက်စွဲလမ်းခဲ့သော ဝတ္ထုရှည်(၁၀)ပုဒ်ကို “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ” စာအုပ်အဖြစ်ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။ ထိုဝတ္ထုရှည်(၁၀)ပုဒ်အနက် စာတမ်းအနေအထားအရ အမှီးဝတ္ထုဖြစ်သောဇေယျ၏ “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်”၊ ဒဂုန်တာရာ၏ “မေ”ဝတ္ထုပင်ကိုရေးဝတ္ထုဖြစ်သော မင်းဆွေ၏“ဓား”ဟူသော ဝတ္ထုရှည်(၃)ပုဒ်ကိုသာ လေ့လာတင်ပြပါမည်။ ထိုဝတ္ထုရှည်(၃)ပုဒ်နှင့်ပတ်သက်၍ စာရေးဆရာလည်းဖြစ်၊ စာဖတ်သူလည်းဖြစ်သော မြသန်းတင့်၏ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ကွက်ဖန်တီးမှု၊ စရိုက်ပြောင်းလဲဖန်တီးမှုနှင့် ရည်ရွယ်ချက်ကောင်းများကို ပေါ်လွင်စေရန် ထူးခြားဆန်းသစ်သော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းများဖြင့်မည်သို့ ရေးဖွဲ့ထားကြောင်းလေ့လာပါမည်။ ထိုသို့လေ့လာခြင်းဖြင့် ရသစာပေနှင့်စာဖတ်သူတို့၏ ဆက်သွယ်မှု၊ အားပြိုင်မှု၊ တုံ့ပြန်မှုသဘောတို့ကိုလည်းကောင်း၊ ရသစာပေ၏ စာဖတ်သူအပေါ်လွှမ်းမိုးနိုင်မှု အားကြီးပုံကိုလည်းကောင်းခံစား သိရှိနိုင်မည်ဟု ထင်မြင်မိပါသည်။

၁။ မြသန်းတင့်၏ဘဝနှင့်စာပေ

မြသန်းတင့်ကို အဖဦးပေါတင့်၊ အမိဒေါ်လှိုင်တို့မှ ပခုက္ကူခရိုင်၊ မြိုင်မြို့၌ (၁၉၂၉) ခုနှစ်၊ မေလ (၂၃)ရက်၊ ကြာသပတေးနေ့တွင် မွေးဖွားခဲ့သည်။ မွေးချင်း(၇)ယောက်တွင် အကြီးဆုံးဖြစ်သည်။ ငယ်စဉ်က မြိုင်မြို့နှင့်ပခုက္ကူမြို့တို့တွင် ပညာသင်ကြားခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၄၇)တွင် တက္ကသိုလ်ဝင်စာမေးပွဲ ဖြေဆိုခဲ့သည်။(၁၉၄၈)တွင်ရန်ကုန်တက္ကသိုလ်၌ (၄)နှစ်နေသော်လည်း မည်သည့်စာမေးပွဲမှမဖြေဆိုခဲ့ပေ။ (၁၉၅၄)မှသာ ရန်ကုန်တက္ကသိုလ် စာမေးပွဲများကို ဆက်တိုက်ဖြေဆိုအောင်မြင်ခဲ့သည်။ အင်္ဂလိပ်စာပေ၊ ဒဿနိက၊

* ဒေါက်တာ၊ တွဲဖက်ပါမောက္ခ၊ မြန်မာစာဌာန၊ ရန်ကုန်အနောက်ပိုင်းတက္ကသိုလ်

နိုင်ငံရေးသိပ္ပံပညာတို့ဖြင့် ဝိဇ္ဇာဘွဲ့ရခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၆)တွင် ဥပဒေဘွဲ့ကို “နိုင်ငံတကာဥပဒေဘာသာ ဂုဏ်ထူး၊ ပြစ်မှုဆိုင်ရာဥပဒေဂုဏ်ထူး” ဖြင့်ရရှိခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၀)တွင် ကိုသန်းတင်၊ ဒဂုန်တာရာ၊ မောင်ကြည်လွင်၊ အောင်လင်းတို့နှင့်အတူ စာပေသစ်မဂ္ဂဇင်းက ဦးဆောင်ထုတ်ဝေခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၂)တွင် ကမ္ဘာ့ငြိမ်းချမ်းရေး ကွန်ဂရက်(မြန်မာနိုင်ငံ)နှင့် မြန်မာနိုင်ငံစာရေးဆရာအသင်း အလုပ်အမှုဆောင်အဖြစ် ဆောင်ရွက်ခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၆၀)တွင်စာရေးဆရာကလပ်၊ (၁၉၆၂)တွင် စာရေးဆရာသမဂ္ဂတို့တွင် အမှုဆောင် အဖြစ်ဆောင်ရွက်ခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၅)တွင် ပြည်တွင်းငြိမ်းချမ်းရေး ဗဟိုကော်မတီတွင် အတွင်းရေးမှူးအဖြစ် တာဝန်ယူခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၇)တွင် ပြည်သူ့တိုးတက်ရေးပါတီနှင့် ကမ္ဘာ့ငြိမ်းချမ်းရေး ကောင်စီများ၌ပါဝင် လှုပ်ရှားခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၆၁)တွင် ဆွီဒင်နိုင်ငံမှာကျင်းပသော ငြိမ်းချမ်းရေးကောင်စီ အစည်းအဝေးသို့ တက်ရောက်ခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၆၃)တွင် ပြည်တွင်းငြိမ်းချမ်းရေး အဖွဲ့ဝင်နှင့်ပြည်သူ့ကော်မတီတစ်ဦးအဖြစ် လည်း တာဝန်ယူခဲ့သည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် စာပေရေးရာနှင့်ပတ်သက်၍ (၁၉၄၉)တွင် “ဒုက္ခသည်” ဝတ္ထုတိုကိုပထမဆုံးရေးခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၁)တွင် ပထမဆုံးဘာသာပြန်အဖြစ် ဂေါ်ကီ၏မောလ်မာနှင့် အခြား ဝတ္ထုတိုများကို ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၂) တွင်ဂေါ်ကီ၏အတ္ထုပ္ပတ္တိ “မက္ကဇင်ဂေါ်ကီ”ကို ရေးသား ခဲ့သည်။ (၁၉၅၃) တွင်ပထမဆုံးပင်ကိုရေး လုံးချင်းဝတ္ထု “မေတ္တာအသင်္ချေ”ကိုရေးခဲ့သည်။ သိန်းဖေမြင့် နှင့်ပူးတွဲ၍ “လိုက်ခဲ့တော့မြန်နွာ” ဝတ္ထု၊ “အမှောင်ရိပ်ဝယ်” ဝတ္ထု၊ “နွဲ့ထဲကြာ” ဝတ္ထုဘာသာပြန် (၁၂) တွဲဖြင့် အမျိုးသားစာပေဘာသာပြန်ဆု၊ မာဂရက်မစ်ချယ်၏ “လေရူးသုန်သုန်” ဝတ္ထုဘာသာပြန်ဖြင့် “အမျိုးသား စာပေဘာသာပြန်ဆု”၊ ဆောင်ဇူချင်းနှင့် ကောက်ငိုတို့၏ “ခန်းဆောင်နီအိပ်မက်” ဝတ္ထု ဘာသာပြန်(၉) တွဲဖြင့် “အမျိုးသားစာပေ ဘာသာပြန်ဆု”၊ ဒိုမီနီလာယဲ၏ “အချစ်မိုးကောင်းကင်” (၂)တွဲ ဘာသာပြန် ဝတ္ထုဖြင့် “အမျိုးသားစာပေဘာသာပြန်ဆု” တကိုရရှိခဲ့သည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည်ပညာအရာ၌ ထူးချွန် ထက်မြက်သည်သာမက မြန်မာစာပေတိုးတက်ရေးကိုလည်း စွမ်းစွမ်းတမံဆောင်ရွက်သည်။ နိုင်ငံ တိုးတက်ရေးကိုလည်း စိတ်ဝင်စားပြီးငြိမ်းချမ်းရေးကို မြတ်နိုးသော စာရေးဆရာတစ်ဦးဖြစ်ပါသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် နိုင်ငံနှင့်စာပေ အကျိုးဆောင်ရွက်ရင်း ၁၉၉၈၊ ဖေဖော်ဝါရီလ(၁၈)ရက်နေ့ ည ၉း၁၅ နာရီတွင် ရန်ကုန်မြို့၌ကွယ်လွန်ခဲ့ပြီး ဇနီးဒေါ်ခင်မေနှင့် သားသမီး (၄)ဦး ကျန်ရစ်ခဲ့သည်။

၂။ စာဖတ်သူရှုထောင့်

စာဖတ်သူများတွင် အချို့သောစာဖတ်သူများက စာတစ်ပုဒ်ကိုဖတ်ပြီးသော် ဘာသိဘာသာ နေတတ်ကြသည်။ အချို့သောစာဖတ်သူများက စာတစ်ပုဒ်ဖတ်ပြီးသော် စွဲလမ်းနှစ်သက်သောကြောင့် စာရေးသူထံစာများပေးပို့၍ ဝေဖန်တတ်ကြသည်။ အချို့သောစာဖတ်သူများကမူ မိမိကိုယ်တိုင် စာရေးဆရာဖြစ်သောအခါ ထပ်မံဖြည့်စွက်၍ နောက်ဆက်တွဲများအဖြစ် တုံ့ပြန်ရေးသားတတ်ကြသည်။ ဤသို့ဖြင့်စာဖတ်သူအမျိုးမျိုး ရှိကြပါသည်။ စာရေးသူများသည် မိမိဖန်တီးလိုသော စာပေကိုမိမိတို့ စိတ်ကြိုက် ရွေးချယ်ရေးသားကြသည်။ ထို့အတူ စာဖတ်သူများဘက်ကလည်း စာရေးသူ၏ ဖန်တီးမှုကို ထပ်တူ သဘောကျသူလည်းရှိသည်။ သဘောထားကွဲလွဲသည်များလည်း ရှိနိုင်သည်။ စာရေးသူ ဖြစ်ချင်သည့်အတိုင်း စာဖတ်သူက လက်ခံချင်မှလက်ခံပေလိမ့်မည်။ ထိုအခါစာရေးသူနှင့် စာဖတ်သူ တို့တွင် ဆက်နွှယ်မှု၊ လွှမ်းမိုးနိုင်မှုများနှင့် ဝေဖန်မှုများရှိခဲ့ကြပါသည်။

မဂ္ဂဇင်းအခန်းဆက် ဝတ္ထုရှည်များရေး၍မပြီးမီ စာဖတ်သူအချို့က စာရေးသူထံ မိမိတစ်စေ ချင်သော ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်များအကြောင်းကို အကြံဉာဏ်ပေးကြသည်။ ဝေဖန်တတ်ကြသည်။ မိမိနှစ်သက်ရာဝတ္ထုကို မိမိတို့စိတ်ထဲတွင် အားမလိုအားမရ ဖြစ်လာသောအခါ စာရေးသူရေးသော

အကြောင်းအရာကို လက်မခံဘဲပြောင်းလဲလိုလာကြသည်။ စာရေးသူနှင့် စာဖတ်သူတို့ သဘောထားအမြင် မတူမှုများ၊ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းမတူမှုများ ဖြစ်လာတတ်ကြသည်။ မိမိသာရေးရန် အခွင့်အရေးရလျှင် စာရေးဆရာကဲ့သို့ ရေးတတ်ပါလျှင် ရေးလိုသော ဆန္ဒသဘောထားများဖြစ်လာကြသည်။ စာရေးသူနှင့် အတူ ရသစာပေအပေါ်စီးမြှောက်ပြီး ခံစားလာကြသည်။ စာဖတ်သူများသည် စာရေးသူကဲ့သို့ စိတ်ကူး ခံယူချက်များရှိကာ လောကကောင်းကျိုးပြုရေး၊ ပြုပြင်ရေးအမြင်ဖြင့် ဖြည့်စွက်ကာ မြင်လာတတ်ကြ သည်။ ဤသည်မှာစာဖတ်သူတို့ ဖြစ်လေ့ဖြစ်ထရှိသော သဘောပင်ဖြစ်သည်။ ထို့ပြင်စွဲလမ်း နှစ်သက် သောစာပေများကို စာရေးသူအား ဆက်လက်ရေးသားရန် ပြောဆိုသောကြောင့် နောက်ဆက်တွဲ များရေးခဲ့ကြရသည်။ ဇော်ဂျီ၏ “သူ့မယား” ဝတ္ထုတိုကို အင်္ဂလိပ်ဘာသာဖြင့်ထုတ်ဝေသော စာအုပ်တွင် His spouse ဟူသောအမည်ဖြင့် ဖော်ပြခြင်းခံရသည်။ ထိုအခါအမေရိကန်ပြည်နယ်တစ်ခုမှ စာဖတ်သူ တစ်ဦး က ဇော်ဂျီ၏စာကိုကြိုက်နှစ်သက်သဖြင့် အခြားဝတ္ထုများရှိလျှင်လည်း ညွှန်းစေလိုကြောင်း ဆက်လက် ဖော်ပြပေးရန် ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။ စာရေးဆရာ ကိုနှင့်ဒိုင်းလ်ရေးသော “ရှားလော့ဟုမ်း” ဝတ္ထုတိုများကို စာဖတ်ပရိသတ်တို့ စွဲလမ်းနှစ်သက်ကြသည်။ သို့သော်စာရေးသူသည် “ရှားလော့ဟုမ်း” ဝတ္ထုကို ဆက်၍ မရေးလိုသောအခါ ဇာတ်ဆောင်ရှားလော့ဟုမ်းအား ရန်သူလူဆိုးဂိုဏ်းနှင့် သတ်ပုတ်ရင်း ရေတံခွန်ကြီးထဲ လိမ့်ကျသေဆုံးသွားကြောင်းဖြင့် ဇာတ်ဆောင်ကိုသတ်လိုက်သည်။ သို့သော် စာဖတ်သူကလက်မခံ။ ကန့်ကွက်ကြသည်။ ပြစ်တင်ဝေဖန်ကြသည်။ မသေစေချင်။ ထိုသို့စာဖတ်သူ အတင်းအကျပ် တောင်းဆို သောအခါစာရေးသူသည် ရှားလော့ဟုမ်းက မသေဘဲပြန်ရှင်ပေးပြီး ဝတ္ထုကိုဆက်ရေးခဲ့ရသည်။ စာဖတ်သူ သည် ဇာတ်ဆောင်ကို စွဲလမ်းစိတ်ဖြင့် ဇာတ်ဆောင် ရှားလော့ဟုမ်းနေထိုင်ရာ ၂၂၁ ဘီ၊ ဘေကာလမ်းကို လာ၍ကြည့်ကြသည်အထိ စာဖတ်သူများသည် မိမိတို့သဘောကျသည့် ဇာတ်ဆောင်၊ ဇာတ်လမ်းများကို စိတ်ဝင်စားကြောင်း ထင်ရှားလာသည်။ ထို့အတူ မြသန်းတင့်သည်လည်း စာဖတ်သူ တစ်ဦးအနေဖြင့် မိမိစွဲလမ်းနှစ်သက်ခဲ့သောဝတ္ထု(၁၀)ပုဒ်ကို “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ” အမည်ဖြင့်ဆက်၍ ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။ ဤသို့ဖြင့်စာဖတ်သူနှင့်စာရေးသူတို့သည် ဆက်နွှယ်လျက်ရှိကြပါသည်။

၃။ မြသန်းတင့်၏ “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ” မှ စာရေးသူ၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

မြသန်းတင့်သည် ဝတ္ထုရေးဆရာဖြစ်၍ မြန်မာဝတ္ထုရှည်လောကတွင် ထင်ရှားကျော်ကြားခဲ့သော ဝတ္ထုရှည်(၁၀)ပုဒ်ကို မိမိသာဆက်၍ ရေးခွင့်ရှိခဲ့ပါလျှင် ဝတ္ထုအသွင်ဖန်တီးပြီးရေးသားလိုသော ဆန္ဒ ဖြစ်ပေါ်ခဲ့ပါသည်။ ထို့ကြောင့် မူရင်းဝတ္ထုရေးဆရာရေးသား ပြီးစီးခဲ့သော ဝတ္ထုဇာတ်လမ်းကိုဆက်၍ မြသန်းတင့်က မိမိအတွေး၊ မိမိစိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းဖြင့် ဖြည့်စွက်ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။ ထိုသို့ရေးသားရာတွင် မြသန်းတင့်သည် မူရင်းဝတ္ထုထဲတွင် ပိတ်မိနေသော ဇာတ်ဆောင်ကို ထွက်ပေါက်ရှာကာ ပြဿနာများကို ဖြေရှင်းရေးသားခြင်းမှာထူးခြားသည်။ ဇာတ်လမ်းကိုလည်းကောင်း သည်ထက်ကောင်းအောင် ရည်ရွယ် ချက်ရှိရှိ ဆက်လက်ရေးသားခြင်းမှာလည်း စိတ်ကူးဆန်းသစ်သည်။ ထိုသို့ထူးခြားသော အတွေးနှင့် ရေးသားသောကြောင့် ဝတ္ထုဖန်တီးသူအချင်းချင်း ဆွေးနွေးအကြံပေးသည့် သဘောလည်းဖြစ်ခဲ့ပါသည်။ ဝေဖန်ရေးသဘောလည်း ဖြစ်ခဲ့ပါသည်။ စာရေးသူမြသန်းတင့်သည် ဝတ္ထုတစ်ပုဒ်ခြင်းကို မူရင်းစာရေးသူ မကြည့်သည့်ဘက်မှ ဖြည့်ကြည့်၍ ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ဇာတ်ဆောင်တို့ကို စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း ဆန်းသစ်စွာ ရေးသားထားပါသည်။

၃။ “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုနှင့်ပတ်သက်သော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

စာရေးဆရာမြသန်းတင့်သည် ဇေယျ၏ “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုမှဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်ကို ငယ်စဉ်ကစွဲလမ်းခဲ့သည်။ အရွယ်ရောက်လာသော အခါတွင်လည်း မြတ်လေး ရွှေဓားဗိုလ်ကို သူ့ရဲကောင်းတစ်ဦးအဖြစ် မှတ်ယူခဲ့သည်။ ထို့ကြောင့် မြသန်းတင့်သည် မူရင်းဝတ္ထု၏အဆုံးသတ်ကို နောက်ဆက်တွဲဝတ္ထုအဖြစ်ရေးလိုသည်။ မိမိနှစ်သက်လေးစားရသော မျိုးချစ်သူရဲကောင်း ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်ကို ပြည်သူ့သူရဲကောင်းကြီးအဖြစ် ဆက်လက်ပုံဖော်လိုသော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း ဖြစ်ခဲ့ပါသည်။

၃။၁။ ဇာတ်လမ်းအကျဉ်း

ဇေယျ၏ “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုသည် ဘေးရှန်းနက်အော်ဇီရေးသော “စကားလက်ပင်ပါနယ်” ဝတ္ထုကြီးကိုမှီးထားသော အမှီးဝတ္ထုဖြစ်သည်။ ထိုဝတ္ထုရှည်သည် ဝတ္ထုတိုများကို ပေါင်းစည်းဖော်ပြခြင်းဖြစ်သည်။ သမိန်စောထွတ်က တပင်ရွှေထီးကို လုပ်ကြံနန်းတက်သည့် အကြောင်းနောက်ခံပြုထားသည်။ သမိန်စောထွတ်သည် မျိုးမျိုးမတ်နွယ်များကို ရှာဖွေဖမ်းဆီး သတ်ဖြတ်ခဲ့သည်။ ထိုအခါဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်က လိုက်လံကယ်တင်ခဲ့ရသည်။ မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်သည် သမိန်စောထွတ်၏ လူများထံ မြတ်လေးပွင့်ကလေးနှင့် စာတစ်စောင်ကို ကတ္တီပါအိတ်ကလေးဖြင့် ပို့တတ်သည်။ ၎င်းတို့ဖမ်းဆီးထားသော မျိုးမတ်များကို မည်သည့်ရက်၊ မည်သည့်အချိန်တွင် လာရောက်ကယ်တင်မည်ကိုလည်း ရက်ချိန်းပေးတတ်သည်။ ၎င်းရက်ချိန်းပေးသောနေ့တွင် အစောင့်များစွာချထားသော်လည်း အမယ်အို၊ မိန်းမပျို၊ လှေသမား၊ အရက်သမား အမျိုးမျိုးဟန်ဆောင်၍ ရုပ်ပြောင်းရုပ်လွှဲများဖြင့် အောင်မြင်စွာ ကယ်ထုတ်နိုင်ခဲ့ကြောင်း ရေးသားထားသော ဝတ္ထုဇာတ်လမ်းပင်ဖြစ်ပါသည်။

၃။၁။၂။ မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

ဇေယျ၏ “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုကို မြသန်းတင့်ကဆက်၍ ဇာတ်လမ်းဆင်ရာတွင် သူ၏အတွေး၊ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းတို့ဖြင့် ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်နှင့် မြသန်းတင့်တို့တွေ့ဆုံဟန်ဖြင့် ရေးသားထားသည်။ ဇေယျ၏ “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုမှဇာတ်ဆောင် မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်သည်လည်း မြသန်းတင့်ငယ်စဉ်က စွဲလမ်းနှစ်သက်ခဲ့ရသော မိမိ၏ဟီးရီးဖြစ်သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်နှင့် ပတ်သက်၍မြသန်းတင့်က

“အရွယ်ကြီးလာလို့ မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်ကို ပြန်စဉ်းစားတဲ့အခါကျတော့ ရွှေဓားဗိုလ်က သမိန်စောထွတ်ရန်ကြောင့် ဒုက္ခရောက်နေတဲ့မင်းမျိုး မင်းနွယ်တွေကိုမကယ်ဘဲ ပြည်သူ့ပြည်သားတွေကို ကယ်ရင်ကောင်းလေစွဟု တောင့်တမိတယ်။ ပြည်သူတွေရဲ့ သူရဲကောင်းကြီးဖြစ်စေချင်တယ်။” (မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ စာ-၂၈၂)

ဟူ၍တွေးမြင်မိသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်က သူရဲကောင်းတို့မည်သည် ပြည်သူ့အတွက်သာ ဖြစ်ရသင့်သည်ဟူသော မိမိစိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းကို ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ ထို့ကြောင့် မိမိကြိုက်နှစ်သက်သော မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်ကိုလည်း ပြည်သူ့အတွက်သာဖြစ်ပါက ပို၍ကောင်းလေစွဟု စိတ်ကူးတွေးမိခဲ့သည်။ မြသန်းတင့်ကဆက်၍

“ဖောက်ပြန်တဲ့ သူရဲကောင်းဆိုတာအုပ်စိုးသူ လူတန်းစား၊ ဖိနှိပ်သူလူတန်းစားရဲ့အကျိုး စီးပွားကိုကာကွယ်သူ၊ တော်လှန်တဲ့ သူရဲကောင်းဆိုတာက အဖိနှိပ်ခံလူတန်းစားအကျိုး အတွက် သက်စွန့်ကြိုးပမ်းလုပ်သွားသ”

(ယင်း-၂၈၃)

ဟူ၍ သူရဲကောင်း၏သဘောကို လူတန်းစားအမြင်ဖြင့် ဖော်ပြထားသည်။

“ဂျိန်းဘွန်းဟာသူရဲကောင်းတော့ သူရဲကောင်းပါပဲ။ ဒါပေမဲ့သူကဖောက်ပြန်တဲ့ သူရဲကောင်းခင်ဗျ။ နယ်ချဲ့စနစ်ကြီးအခွန်ရှည်ရေး၊ ကိုလိုနီဝါဒကြီး အခွန်ရှည်ရေး အတွက် စွန့်စားတဲ့သူရဲကောင်း၊ ဒါကြောင့် ဂျိန်းဘွန်းဟာဖောက်ပြန်တဲ့ သူရဲကောင်းပဲ ခင်ဗျာ”

(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ ၈-၂၈၃)

ဟူ၍ ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ လူငယ်တို့သည် လူတန်းစားအမြင်ဖြင့် မကြည့်ဘဲ ဂျိန်းဘွန်းကိုအား ကျခဲ့ကြသည်။ စွဲလမ်းခဲ့ကြသည်။ သဘောကျကြသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်၏အမြင်မှာမူ ဇာတ်ဆောင် ဂျိန်းဘွန်းသည် နယ်ချဲ့သမားများအတွက် ရဲရင့်သောဖောက်ပြန်သည့် သူရဲကောင်းဖြစ်သည်ဟု သူ၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းက ရေးသားထားသည်။ နိုင်ငံတကာတွင်ကျော်ကြားခဲ့သော ဇာတ်ဆောင်ဂျိန်းဘွန်းနှင့် မြန်မာ့ဇာတ်ဆောင် မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်ကို နှိုင်းယှဉ်ကာဆက်လက်ဖော်ပြလေသည်။ ဇေယျ၏ “မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်”ဝတ္ထုတွင် ပါဝင်သောဇာတ်ဆောင် မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်မှာမူ ဖိနှိပ်ခံလူတန်းစား အကျိုးအတွက်မပြုလုပ်၍ ပြည်သူတို့ကိုကယ်တင်ခြင်းမရှိသောကြောင့် တော်လှန်ရေး သူရဲကောင်း မဖြစ်နိုင်ပါ။ မျိုးချစ်သူရဲကောင်း အနေဖြင့်သာသတ်မှတ်နိုင်သည်။ ထို့ကြောင့် “မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုကို ဆက်ရေးဖြစ်ခဲ့လျှင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်ကို တော်လှန်ရေးသူရဲကောင်းအဖြစ် အသွင်ပြောင်း ရေးချင်ကြောင်းဖော်ပြထားသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်၏ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်အပေါ်ထားရှိ သောစိတ်ကူး စိတ်သန်းပင်ဖြစ်ပါသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်က “မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်”ဝတ္ထုကို ဆက်ရေးရလျှင်

“ဖိနှိပ်ညှဉ်းဆဲမှုကိုခံရတဲ့ ဟံသာဝတီက မွန်ပြည်သူတွေ၊ အင်းဝကရှမ်းမြန်မာ ပြည်သူ တွေ၊ တောင်ငူမွန်-မြန်မာ (အုပ်စိုးတဲ့မြန်မာမင်းမျိုး မင်းနွယ်တွေမပါဘူးနော်)တွေ အတွက် စွန့်စားတဲ့ပြည်သူ သူရဲကောင်းကြီးအဖြစ် ဆက်ရေးမှာပေါ့”

(ယင်း-၂၈၃)

ဟူ၍ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်က ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်ကို တစ်ဦးကောင်း၊ တစ်ယောက် ကောင်း လူတစ်စုအကျိုးအတွက် မဟုတ်ဘဲ ပြည်သူ့အကျိုးဆောင်ရွက်သော ပြည်သူ့သူရဲကောင်းအဖြစ် လေးစားဂုဏ်ယူဖွယ်၊ စံပြဇာတ်ဆောင်အဖြစ် ပုံဖော်ရေးသားလိုသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် မိမိနှစ်သက် စွဲလမ်းခဲ့သော ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်ကို စာဖတ်သူတစ်ဦးအနေဖြင့် အများကအပြစ် ပြောစရာ မရှိသည့် ဇာတ်ဆောင်ဖြစ်စေလိုသော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း ဆန်းသစ်မှုကို သိရှိလာရသည်။ မြန်မာလူမျိုးတို့ အတွက် လေးစားအားကျရသော ပြည်သူ့သူရဲကောင်းပီသသော ဇာတ်ဆောင်အဖြစ် ဆက်လက်ရှင်သန် စေလိုသော စေတနာကိုလည်း လေ့လာသိရှိရသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် ဝတ္ထုထဲမဇာတ်ဆောင်အပေါ် လွှမ်းမိုးမှုရှိကာမူရင်း ဝတ္ထုရေးသူစာရေး ဆရာဇေယျမမြင်သည့်ဘက်ကို မိမိစိတ်ကူးရှုထောင့်အမြင်ဖြင့် ဇာတ်ဆောင် မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်ကို အကောင်းဆုံး ဇာတ်ဆောင်အဖြစ် စိတ်ကူးခဲ့ကြောင်းလေ့လာရ မိပါသည်။

၃၂။ “ဓား” ဝတ္ထုနှင့်ပတ်သက်သော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

မင်းဆွေ၏ “ဓား” ဝတ္ထုသည် ဂျပန်ခေတ်မြန်မာနိုင်ငံ စာရေးဆရာအသင်း၏ ပထမဆုံးအကြိမ် ချီးမြှင့်သောစာပေဆုရရှိခဲ့သည်။ ဆုငွေတစ်ထောင်ချီးမြှင့်ခြင်းခံရသော ထင်ရှားကျော်ကြား လူကြိုက်များ သောဝတ္ထုဖြစ်သည်။ ထိုသို့စာဖတ်ပရိသတ်လက်ခံသော “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုကို မြသန်းတင့်လည်း သဘောကျ ခဲ့သည်။ ထိုအခါ မြသန်းတင့်သည် “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုမှ ဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်က မိမိအားဝတ္ထုကို ဆက်၍ ရေးပေးပါရန် တောင်းဆိုပုံနှင့် ဇာတ်လမ်းဆင်ကာ ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်ကို မိမိခံယူထားသော အမျိုးသားရေးခံယူချက်၊ မျိုးချစ်စိတ်တို့ကို အခြေခံ၍ “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုကို နောက်ဆက်တွဲဝတ္ထုအဖြစ် ဆက်လက်ရေးသားလိုသော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းဖြစ်သည်။

၃၂။ ၁။ ဇာတ်လမ်းအကျဉ်း

မင်းဆွေ၏ “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုသည် ပင်ကိုရေးဝတ္ထုဖြစ်သည်။ “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုတွင် အဓိကဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်သည် တိုင်းပြည်အကျိုး၊ လူမျိုးအကျိုးထမ်းဆောင်နေသော သတ္တိရှိသည့် ရရင့်သော မျိုးချစ်ပုဂ္ဂိုလ်တစ်ဦးဖြစ်သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြဒင်နှင့် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်တို့သည် မြင်မြင်ကိုအပြိုင် ချစ်ကြိုက်ကြသည်။ မြဒင်သည်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်ကို အင်္ဂလိပ်ဆန့်ကျင်ရေးသမား မှန်းသိသွားသော် တစ်ဖက်လှည့်နှင့် အချုပ်ထဲထည့်လိုက်သည်။ အင်္ဂလိပ်တပ် ရန်ကုန်ကဆုတ်သောအခါ မြဒင်ပါသွား ပြီးလမ်းမှာထွက်ပြေးလာသည်။ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်လည်း ထောင်ဖောက်ကာ ထွက်ပြေးလာသည်။ မြဒင်နှင့် မျိုးမြင့် ရန်နောင်တို့နှစ်ဦးချင်းယှဉ်ပြိုင်ရာ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်သည် အသာစီးအနိုင်ရသော်လည်း မသတ်ဘဲ အင်္ဂလိပ်ကိုသာသတ်ခဲ့သည်။ မြင်မြင်သည် ဖခင်၏ဆန္ဒအတိုင်း မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်နှင့် လက်ထပ်ခဲ့သည်။ ထို့နောက် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်သည် မြင်မြင်ကိုထား၍ နိုင်ငံအကျိုး ဆက်လက်ဆောင်ရွက်သည်။ အင်္ဂလိပ်တို့ ထွက်ပြေးသောအခါ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်သည် မြင်မြင်ထံပြန်လာသည်။ ထိုအချိန်တွင် မြင်မြင်သည် မြဒင်နှင့် အိမ်ထောင်ကျနေပြီဖြစ်သည်။ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်မှာ ခြေတစ်ဖက်ပြတ်၊ မျက်စိတစ်ဖက်ပျက်ပြီး ဒုက္ခိတဘဝ ဖြစ်သွား၍ချစ်သူမြင်မြင်နှင့် သားကိုထားကာ နိုင်ငံအကျိုးကိုဆက်လက် လုပ်ဆောင်သည်ဟု ဇာတ်လမ်း ကို အဆုံးသတ်ထားသည်။

၃၂။ ၂။ မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

မြသန်းတင့်သည် “ဓား” ဝတ္ထုကို ဆက်၍ ဇာတ်လမ်းဆင်ရာတွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်နှင့် မိမိတွေ့ဆုံစကားပြောဟန်ဖြင့် မိမိ၏စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းကို ရေးသားထားပါသည်။ မူရင်းဝတ္ထုဇာတ်လမ်း တွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်၏ ယိမ်းနွဲ့ဓားသည် ဓားမှဓားအိမ်ချွတ်မိပါက သွေးသောက်မှရသည်။ သို့သော်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်သည် မိမိ၏ယိမ်းနွဲ့ဓားမှ ဓားအိမ်ချွတ်မိသော်လည်း မြဒင်အားမသတ်ခဲ့။ ရန်သူ အင်္ဂလိပ်ကိုသာ သတ်ခဲ့သည်။ဤဇာတ်ကွက်ကို မြသန်းတင့်က ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်နှင့်တွေ့၍

“သစ္စာဖောက်ဟာ သစ္စာဖောက်ပဲ၊ သစ္စာဖောက်ချင်းအတူတူ ဗမာသစ္စာဖောက်ကို မသတ် လိုက်တာဟာမတရားဘူးလို့ ကျွန်တော်ထင်တယ်၊ လွဲမှားတဲ့အမျိုးသားစိတ်လို့ ကျွန်တော် ဆိုချင်တယ်။”

(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ ၈-၃၂)

ဟူသောအပြောဖြင့် သစ္စာဖောက်ကိုအလိုမရှိ။ မိမိတိုင်းပြည်နှင့်လူမျိုးအကျိုးကို မလုပ်ဘဲ ကိုယ်ကျိုး ရှာသောအတ္တသမား သစ္စာဖောက်ကိုအပြီးတိုင် ရှင်းပစ်ချင်သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်ကိုလည်း အားမလိုအားမရဖြစ်ကာ ပြတ်ပြတ်သားသားဆုံးဖြတ်လိုသော စာဖတ်သူတစ်ဦးအနေဖြင့် မြသန်းတင့် မြင်သော အတွေးနှင့်အရေး၊ ခံစားချက်ကို တွေ့မြင်ရသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်၏ အမျိုးသားရေးခံယူချက်မှာ မိမိတိုင်းပြည်အပေါ် သစ္စာဖောက်သော မည်သူပင်ဖြစ်စေ အရေးယူဆောင်ရွက်ရမည်။ မငဲ့ကွက်ရဟူသော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း ဆုံးဖြတ်ချက်ကို သိမြင်ရသည်။

“အမျိုးသားသစ္စာဖောက် တစ်ယောက်၏ ကုပ်ပိုးကိုဓားမိုးမိပြီးခါမှ ခွင့်လွှတ်သော သဘောပြခဲ့သည်။ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်၏ စိတ်ထားသည် မြင့်မြတ်သည်ဟု ဆိုနိုင်ရန် ခဲယဉ်းမည်ထင်ပါသည်။ ရန်သူကိုရန်သူကဲ့သို့ သဘောထားခဲ့သော မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင် သည် မြဒင်ကိုသုတ်သင်ရမည့်အရေးတွင် စိတ်သဘောထားကြီးပြခြင်းမှာ ယနေ့အခြေ အနေမျိုး၌ အားမရစရာကြီး ဖြစ်နေမည်ဟုသဘောရပါသည်။ ” (မလိခ၊ ၂၀၁၇၊ စာ-၂၃၅)

ဟူ၍ ဝေဖန်ရေးသားထားသည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်၏ လုပ်ရပ်ကို မြသန်းတင့် နည်းတူအခြား စာရေးသူများလည်း အတွေးစိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းတို့ တူညီနေကြပါသည်။

ဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်နှင့် ပတ်သက်၍လည်း

“မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်ရဲ့နယ်ချဲ့ဆန့်ကျင်ရေးလုပ်ငန်းကိုတော့ကျွန်တော်သဘောကျပါတယ်။ ဒါပေမဲ့ ခင်ဗျားနယ်ချဲ့ ဆန့်ကျင်ရေးလုပ်ငန်းမှာ အားနည်းချက်တစ်ရပ်ရှိတယ်လို့ ကျွန်တော်ထင်တယ်ခင်ဗျာ။”

(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ စာ-၃၂)

ဟုလည်းမြသန်းတင့်က ဇာတ်ဆောင်လှုပ်ရှားဆောင်ရွက်မှုကို ထင်မြင်ချက်ပေးသည်။ ဝတ္ထု၏ ကာလ ဒေသနောက်ခံလုပ်ရပ်၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်၏ နယ်ချဲ့ဆန့်ကျင်ရေး တစ်ကိုယ်တော် စွန့်စားမှုဆန်ကြောင်း မူရင်း ဝတ္ထု၏အားနည်းချက်ကို ဝေဖန်ထားသည်။ ဝတ္ထုရေးသူမင်းဆွေ သတိမထားဖြစ်သည့်ဘက်ကို ဖြည့်စွက် ၍ ရေးသားသော မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းပင်ဖြစ်သည်။

မင်းဆွေ၏ “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုဇာတ်လမ်းတွင် မြင်မြင်နှင့်လက်ထပ်ပြီး ဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင် သည်ဘီအိုင်အေထဲပါဝင်၍ အင်္ဂလိပ်အားတိုက်ခိုက်ရန် ဇနီးအားထားခဲ့သည်။ မိမိအရေးထက် တိုင်းပြည် အရေးကို စွမ်းစွမ်းတမံ ဆောင်ရွက်သည်။ သို့သော်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင် ပြန်လာသောအခါ

“ကျုပ်သားနဲ့မြင်မြင်ဟာမြဒင်ရဲ့ အရိပ်အောက်မှာရောက်နေပြီ။ ဒီတွင်ကျုပ်လည်း ချစ်သူ နှင့်သားကို စွန့်စားပြီးတိုင်းပြည်အတွက် အလုပ်လုပ်ဖို့၊ အင်္ဂလိပ်ကိုချေမှုန်းဖို့ ခရီး ဆက်ထွက်လာခဲ့တယ်။”

(ယင်း-၃၃)

ဟူ၍ ဇာတ်လမ်းကို အဆုံးသတ်ထားသည်။ ဤဇာတ်လမ်းအဆုံးသတ်ကို မြသန်းတင့်က ဘဝင်မကျ။

“မြင်မြင်ဟာအညာလွယ်လွန်းတယ်လို့ ကျွန်တော်ထင်တယ်။ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်အင်္ဂလိပ်ကို တိုက်ထုတ်လိုက်ရတဲ့အချိန် ကာလဟာသယ်လောက်မှ မကြာလိုက်ပါဘူး။ တစ်နှစ်ကျော် နှစ်နှစ်လောက်ပဲရှိပါတယ်။ ဒီအတွင်းမှာ မြင်မြင်ဟာစစ်ထွက်သွားတဲ့ ကိုယ့်ယောက်ျားရဲ့ မျက်နှာကို မထောက်ဘဲမြဒင်ကို ယူလိုက်တာဟာ မြန်လွန်းတယ်လို့ ကျွန်တော်ထင် တယ်။”

(ယင်း-၃၄)

ဟူ၍မြသန်းတင့်က မိမိ၏စိတ်ခံစားမှုကို ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်အား ဝတ္ထု၏အပြင်ဘက်တွင် တွေ့ဆုံစကားပြောဟန်ဖြင့် ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ ဝတ္ထုထဲမှ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြင့်မြင်၏ အချိန်တိုလေးအတွင်း ပြောင်းလဲသွားသောလုပ်ရပ်ကို မြသန်းတင့်ကစိတ်တိုင်းမကျ။ မြန်မာအမျိုးသမီးတို့သည် မိမိ၏ခင်ပွန်း အပေါ်သစ္စာရှိရှိနှင့် စောင့်စေချင်သည်။ သစ္စာ၏တနဖိုးကို အလေးထားသော မြသန်းတင့်၏ဝတ္ထု ဇာတ်လမ်းနှင့်ဇာတ်ဆောင်အပေါ် လွှမ်းမိုးသောစေတနာ၊ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းကို သိရှိရသည်။ “ဓား” ဝတ္ထုတွင် အမျိုးသားရေးခံယူချက်နှင့် ဇာတ်မာန် စိတ်ဓာတ်မရှိသော ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြင့်ကို လည်းကောင်း၊ မိမိ၏ အိမ်ထောင်ဖက် အပေါ်သစ္စာရှိမှုနည်းကာ အခြားသူအား လက်ထပ်လိုက်သည့် ဇာတ်ဆောင် မြင့်မြင်ကိုလည်းကောင်း မြသန်းတင့်က ဝေဖန်ပြထားသည်။

“စာရေးဆရာတစ်ယောက်က ဖန်တီးလိုက်တဲ့ဇာတ်ဆောင် တစ်ကောင်ဟာ တစ်ခါတလေ မှာ စာရေးဆရာရဲ့အလိုကို မလိုက်ဘဲသူက စာရေးဆရာကိုဆွဲခေါ်သွား တယ်ဆိုတာကို ခင်ဗျားလက်ခံသလား။”
(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ စာ-၃၅)

ဟူ၍ ဝတ္ထုထဲမှ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်က မြသန်းတင့်အား ပြောပြဟန်ဖြင့်ရေးသားထားသည်။ စာရေးဆရာအပေါ် ဇာတ်ဆောင်တို့၏ လွှမ်းမိုးမှုသဘောကိုဖော်ပြထားသည်။ ထို့နောက် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင် ကိုယ်တိုင်က ဝတ္ထုကို အဆုံးမသတ်စေချင်ဘဲ ဆက်ရေးလိုသည်။

“ဖက်ဆစ်ဂျပန်ဟာ အိမ်သည်ကိုစော်ကားတဲ့ ဧည့်သည်ဖြစ်တယ်။ သူ့ကိုကျုပ်..... လက်စားချေရဦးမယ်၊ ငယ်ငယ်တုန်းက ကျုပ်ဘုရားရှိခိုးထဲမှာ ပါတဲ့အတိုင်း လှုပ်ရှားရဦး မယ်။”
(ယင်း-၃၆)

ဟူ၍ရေးသားထားသည်။ တရားသောစစ်ကိုဆင်နွှဲလိုသည်။ နိုင်ငံနှင့်လူမျိုးအကျိုးကို ဆက်လက် လုပ်ဆောင်ဦးမည့် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်၏ ခင်မာသောသံမဏိစိတ်ဓာတ်နှင့်အတူ မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းပါပုံ ပေါ်လာရသည်။ ထို့ပြင်သစ္စာဖောက်မြင့်ကိုလည်း ဆက်၍အပြတ်ရှင်းရမည် ဖြစ်ကြောင်းကို

“ဒီကောင်ဟာ မြန်မာလူမျိုးလည်းမဟုတ်ဘူး။ လူလည်းမဟုတ်ဘူး။ ခွေးဆိုးပဲ၊ လူသတ် တာဟာ မကောင်းပေမဲ့ ခွေးဆိုးတစ်ကောင်ကို သတ်တာဟာကောင်းတဲ့ အလုပ်တစ်ခုပဲ။”
(ယင်း-၃၇)

“ကျုပ်လည်း အမြင်တွေပြောင်းသွားပြီ၊ အရင်တုန်းကတော့ ကျုပ်ဟာမျက်ကန်း မျိုးချစ် သာသာပါပဲ၊ ခုတော့ကျုပ်မှာ လူမျိုးရေးသက်သက် အမြင်ဆိုတာထက် လူတန်းစား အမြင်ရှိလာပြီ။ အမျိုးသားရေးကိုလည်း လူတန်းစားအမြင်နဲ့ ကြည့်တတ်လာပြီ။”
(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ စာ-၃၇)

စသည်ဖြင့် ရေးသားထားသည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မြင့်ကို မသတ်မိခြင်းသည် မဟာအမှားပဲဟု အမြင်များ ပြောင်းလဲလာသည်။ မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်က မြင့်ကိုသတ်ပြီး

“ကျုပ်သားကိုလည်းကျုပ်လိုဖြစ်စေချင်တယ်၊ တိုင်းပြည်အတွက်အလုပ်လုပ်စေချင်တယ်။”
(ယင်း-၃၇)

ဟူ၍ရေးသားထားသည်။ ဝတ္ထုထဲကဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်ဆက်၍ လုပ်ဆောင်လိုသော လှုပ်ရှားမှုများကဖော်ပြထားသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်ဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုအဆက်တွင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်သည် ခန္ဓာကိုယ်ချို့ယွင်း၍ အားလျော့စွာ၊ မြဒင်ကိုအလျှော့ပေးစိတ်များပျောက်ခဲ့ပြီ။ ထို့ပြင်မိမိ၏ မျိုးဆက်သစ်ဖြစ်သော သားလေးကိုပင် ဆက်လက်အသက်သွင်းကာ အမျိုးသားရေးကို ဆောင်ရွက်လို ကြောင်းရေးသားထားသည်။

“အိမ်သည်ကို ဧည့်သည်မစော်ကားရ၊ ရန်သူကိုလက်စားချေလော့၊ အာမဘန္တေ”

(ယင်း-၃၉)

ဟူသော မူရင်းဝတ္ထုပါ ဇာတ်ဆောင်၏ ဘုရားရှိခိုးစာသားအတိုင်း ဆက်လက်လုပ်ဆောင်မည်ဟု ရေးသားထားသည်။

မမိုးမြေကလည်း “ဓား”ဝတ္ထုနှင့်ပတ်သက်၍

“စာရေးသူသည် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်ဆိုသည့်ဇာတ်ဆောင်ကို ခေတ်၏ ခံစားချက်၊ ခေတ်၏ လိုအပ်ချက်နှင့်အညီ မိမိစိတ်တိုင်းကျပုံသွင်းထားသည်ဟု ဆိုရမည်။”

(မမိုးမြေ၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ စာ-၁၂၁)

ဟူ၍ စာရေးသူမင်းဆွေ၏ ဖန်တီးမှုကိုဖော်ပြထားသည်။ မူရင်းဝတ္ထုရေးသူ မင်းဆွေ၏စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းဖြင့်ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်များကို စိတ်တိုင်းကျ ပုံဖော်ရေးသားခြင်းသည် လည်းကောင်းသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်က စာဖတ်သူရှုထောင့်ဖြင့် ဇာတ်ဆောင်များကို ထပ်မံဖြည့်စွက်၍ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းဆန်းသစ်စွာရေးသားခြင်းသည်လည်း ကောင်းသည်ဟု ထင်မြင်မိပါသည်။

၃၊ ၃။ “မေ” ဝတ္ထုနှင့်ပတ်သက်သော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

ဒဂုန်တာရာရေးသားသော “မေ” ဝတ္ထုသည် စာဖတ်ပရိသတ်များစွာ စွဲလမ်းနှစ်သက်ခဲ့သော ဝတ္ထုဖြစ်သည်။ စာရေးဆရာဖြစ်သော မြသန်းတင့်သည်လည်း “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကို စာဖတ်သူအမြင်ဖြင့်ဖတ်ပြီး ကြိုက်နှစ်သက်ခဲ့သည်။ ထိုအခါမြသန်းတင့်သည် “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကိုဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သောအခါ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကိုယ်တိုင် ဇာတ်ကြောင်းပြောသူအဖြစ် ဖန်တီး“မေ”သားပြောင်းလဲ၍ အကောင်းမြင်ဘက်မှ စိတ်ကူးခဲ့သည်ဟု ယူဆမိပါသည်။

၃၊ ၃၊ ၁။ ဇာတ်လမ်းအကျဉ်း

ဒဂုန်တာရာ၏“မေ”ဝတ္ထုသည် အင်္ဂလိပ်စာရေးဆရာကြီး တီဗာလေနစ်ကောလ်၏ အတ္ထုဆိုသော ဝတ္ထုကိုမှီး၍ ရေးသားထားခြင်းဖြစ်သည်။ “မေ” ဝတ္ထု၏ ဇာတ်လမ်းတွင် အဓိကဇာတ်ဆောင် မေသည် ခေတ်ဆန်သော၊ ချောမောလှပသော၊ လွတ်လပ်မှုကိုနှစ်သက်သော ခေတ်ပညာတတ် အနောက်တိုင်းသမီးပျိုဟန်ဖြစ်သည်။ မေသည်ဦးဘညွန့်၊ ဦးဖေမောင်၊ ဘသိန်းတို့နှင့် ပျော်ရွှင်မှုကိုရှာသည်။ ငွေကြေးကို မက်မောခဲ့သည်။ သို့သော်ကျော်မြင့်နှင့်လက်ထပ်ပြီး သားလေးရလာသောအခါ ယခင်ဆိုးခဲ့သော အရိပ်မည်းကြီးကို မနှစ်သက်တော့။ မေသည်မိမိ၏ အတိတ်ဘဝဖြစ်ရပ်များကို ချေဖျက်မေ့ပျောက်ပြီး

ဘဝသစ်ကိုထထောင်လိုသည်။ သို့သော်မေ၏ ဘဝကားအပယ်ခံဘဝနှင့်ပင် နေခဲ့ရကြောင်းဖြင့် ဇာတ်လမ်းကို အဆုံးသတ်ထားသည်။

၃၊ ၃။ မြသန်းတင့်၏စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း

ဒဂုန်တာရာ၏ “မေ”ဝတ္ထုကို ဖတ်ရှုခဲ့သော မြသန်းတင့်သည် “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကိုအဆုံးမသတ်စေချင်သေးဘဲ ဆက်၍ရေးချင်မိသည်။ ထိုအခါဝတ္ထုထဲမှ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေနှင့် မိမိတွေ့ဆုံဟန်ဖြင့် ဖော်ပြလိုက်သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေက

“စာရေးဆရာကြီး ဒဂုန်တာရာဟာ ကျွန်မမေရီမက်ဒလိန် ဖြစ်တဲ့အကြောင်းကိုရေးပြီး ရှင်ပြန်ထမြောက်ခြင်းကို မြင်တဲ့အကြောင်းကိုတော့မရေးဘူး။”

(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ ၈-၆၄)

ဟူ၍စာရေးဆရာအား တုံ့ပြန်လိုက်သည်။ မူရင်းဝတ္ထုတွင် မေ၏ဘဝကို အဆုံးမြင်ဘက်မှ ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။

“ဆရာကြီးဒဂုန်တာရာဟာ အဆိုးဘက်ကို မြင်တဲ့မေဆိုတဲ့ မိန်းကလေးတစ်ယောက် အကြောင်းကိုသာ ရေးခဲ့ပြီးအကောင်းဘက်က မြင်တတ်တဲ့ မေဆိုတဲ့ မိန်းမတစ်ယောက် အကြောင်း ကိုတော့ဆက်ရေးဖော်မရတော့ဘူး။”

(မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ ၈-၆၄)

ဟူ၍လည်းဝေဖန်ပြန်သည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သော “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကို ဇာတ်ဆောင် မေကိုယ်တိုင်ဇာတ်ကြောင်း ပြောသူအဖြစ်ရေးသားထားသည်။ မေဝတ္ထုအဆက်တွင် ကိုကျော်မြင့်တို့ သားအဖသည် စစ်တွင်းတွင်ပုံးထိပြီးဆုံးခဲ့သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေသည် အင်္ဂလိပ်မေဂျာမက္ကွင်စီနှင့် အိမ်ထောင်ကျသည်။ မြစ်ကြီးနားမှ အိန္ဒိယသို့ပါသွားသည်။ မေသည်မြန်မာအစိုးရ၏ ပြန်ကြားရေးဌာနမှာ အလုပ်လုပ်သည်။ ထို့နောက်သူ့ခင်ပွန်းမှာ တိုက်ပွဲတွင်ကျဆုံးခဲ့ပြီး သမီးတစ်ဦးမှာ ကာလကတ္တား တက္ကသိုလ်က ဆရာဝန်ဘွဲ့ရပြီး တောင်ကြီးစစ်ထွန်းဆေးရုံမှာ တာဝန်ထမ်းဆောင်ပြီး အိမ်ထောင်ကျခဲ့သည်။ မေသည် အိမ်၌ ဘော်ဒါဆောင်ဖွင့်ကာ တက္ကသိုလ်ကျောင်းသူများကိုငှား၍ စည်းကမ်းတကျနေထိုင်စေသည်။ မခင်စီကိုလည်း မိမိနှင့်အတူနေစေသည်။ နောင်အနာဂတ် မျိုးဆက်သစ်ပညာတတ် မြန်မာအမျိုးသမီးများကိုပင် မိမိဘဝနှင့်သင်ခန်းစာယူကာ လုပ်ဆောင်ပေးခဲ့ကြောင်း ရေးသားထားသည်။ မေသည်ယခင်က အနောက်တိုင်းဆန်သော ယဉ်ကျေးမှုလေ့ရှိခဲ့သော်လည်း မိမိသမီးကိုမူ မိမိကဲ့သို့ဖြစ်မည်ကို စိုးရိမ်သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေသည်

“ကျွန်မသမီးကို ကျွန်မအနောက်တိုင်း သမီးပျိုမဖြစ်စေချင်တော့ ကျွန်မဘာလုပ်ရသလဲ သိလား၊ ကျွန်မကိုယ်တိုင် အနောက်တိုင်းမဆန်အောင် အရှေ့တိုင်းဆန်အောင် ကျွန်မ ပြင်ရတယ်။ ရှေ့ကစံနမူနာပြရတယ်။” (ယင်း-၆၅)

ဟူသောအပြောဖြင့် ရေးသားထားသည်။ ယခင်ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေသည် အနောက်တိုင်းဆန်စွာ နေထိုင်ပြုမူသည်။ တိုင်းတစ်ပါးကိုအထင်ကြီးသည်။ ခေတ်ဆန်ခြင်းနှင့်ခေတ်မီခြင်းကို ယခုအခါ မေ့ခဲ့ခြင်းရှိသိပုံကို ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေက

“ခေတ်ဆန်တယ်ဆိုတာ အပေါ်ယံကိစ္စလေ။ ခေတ်မီတယ်ဆိုတာက အတွေးအခေါ်ကိစ္စ
မဟုတ်လားကိုမြင့်မောင် ကျွန်မမြန်မာဆန်အောင်နေမယ်။ ဒါပေမယ့်လဲနေတဲ့
ကမ္ဘာကြီးနဲ့အညီ ခေတ်မီအောင်တွေးတယ်။”

(ယင်း-၆၇)

ဟူ၍ သူ၏အတွေးအခေါ်ကိုပြောခဲ့သည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကိုဆက်၍ရေးရာတွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်
မေ၏ အတွေးအခေါ်ရင့်ကျက်လာပုံ၊ မှန်ကန်စွာ မြင်တတ်လာပုံတို့မှာလည်း ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေ
အပေါ်ထားရှိသော စေတနာ၊ မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းပင်ဖြစ်သည်။

ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေသည် မိခင်တစ်ဦးဖြစ်လာသောအခါ ယဉ်ကျေးလာသည်။ လောကကြီးကို
အကောင်းဘက်မှ မြင်တတ်လာသည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်တို့၏ ပြောင်းလဲတတ်သော စိတ်သဘောကို
စာဖတ်သူ မြသန်းတင့်က ပုံဖော်ထားသည်။ လောကတွင် အဆိုးချည်းလည်းအမြဲမဖြစ်နိုင်ဘဲ အကောင်း
လည်းရှိနိုင်ကြောင်း မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းကိုသိရှိရသည်။ မူရင်းဝတ္ထုတွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေ
သည် နောင်တရသော်လည်း ပတ်ဝန်းကျင်၏ အရိပ်မည်းကြောင့် အဆိုးဘဝသာ ဖြစ်နေခဲ့ရကြောင်းဖြင့်
ဝတ္ထုကို အဆုံးသတ်ထားသည်။ ပတ်ဝန်းကျင်က မည်သို့ပင်ဖိအားပေးစေကာမူ ကာယကံရှင်၏
စိတ်ဓာတ်မှာအဓိကကျသည်။ ဤသဘောကို ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကိုယ်တိုင်ပြောင်းလဲလာသော စိတ်ဓာတ်ဖြင့်
ဇာတ်လမ်းကိုဆက်၍ အကောင်းဘက်မှ ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကို
ကိုယ်ချင်းစာသည်။ ပြုပြင်ပေးချင်သည်။ လမ်းမှန်ရောက်စေချင်သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေဘက်မှ
ဖြည့်ဆည်းပေးချင်သော စာရေးသူ၏စေတနာ၊ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းကို လေ့လာသိရှိရသည်။ မြသန်းတင့်
သည် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကို စာဖတ်ပရိသတ်တို့ အားကျအတုယူချီးကျူးဖွယ် ကောင်းအောင်ပင် ဇာတ်လမ်း
ကို ဖန်တီးထားသည်။ ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သော ဇာတ်လမ်း၏ အဆုံးတွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေက

“လသာတာချင်းအတူတူနိုင်ငံခြားက လမ်းကြီးကပိုသာပြီး ဝိုင်းတယ်လို့ထင်တဲ့ “မေ”
မဟုတ်တော့ဘူး။”

(ယင်း-၆၈)

ဟူ၍ဝတ္ထုရေးသူဒဂုန်တာရာကို ပြောလိုက်ချင်ကြောင်း ရေးသားထားသည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေသည်
အနောက်တိုင်းကိုအထင်မကြီးဘဲ မြန်မာနိုင်ငံကိုချစ်တတ်လာသည်။ တန်ဖိုးထားတတ်လာသည်ဟု
ဖော်ညွှန်းခြင်းဖြစ်သည်။ မြသန်းတင့်သည် ဝတ္ထုထဲမှဇာတ်ဆောင်အပြောဖြင့် မိမိတင်းပြည်ကို ချစ်မြတ်နိုး
တတ်ရမည်ဟူသော ရည်ရွယ်ချက်စေတနာဖြင့် စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း ကောင်းစွာရေးသားခြင်း ဖြစ်ပေမည်။

“မေ” ဝတ္ထုကိုစွဲလမ်းခဲ့သော စာဖတ်သူမြသန်းတင့်သည် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကို အဆိုးဘက်၏အပြင်
ဘက်သို့ ဆွဲခေါ်ခဲ့သည်။ ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကို ယဉ်ကျေးသိမ်မွေ့သော မြန်မာအမျိုးသမီး ဖြစ်စေချင်သည်။
မေ၏ဘဝလေးကို အေးချမ်းစေချင်သည်။ သာယာလှပစေချင်သည်။ ဘဝအမောများကို ပြေပျောက်စေ
လိုသည်။ အတိတ်ကမည်သို့ပင်လွှဲမှားစေကာမူ လူအများ၏ ထာဝရအပယ်ခံမျိုး မဖြစ်စေလို။
လမ်းမှန်ရောက်ပြီး လုပ်ရပ်များမှန်ကန်လာစေလိုသည်။ အဆိုးဟူသော မှန်တိုင်းပြီးလျှင်လေပြည်နှင့်
တူသော အကောင်းကို ရှာတွေ့စေလိုသော သဘာဝသည် မြသန်းတင့်၏ စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းပင်ဖြစ်ပေ
သည်။

မူရင်း ဝတ္ထု၏ အဆုံးသတ်တွင်

“အကောင်းကိုရှာ၏။ အကောင်းကားမရှိတော့” (မြသန်းတင့်၊ ၂၀၁၈၊ စာ-၆၃)

ဟူ၍ ရေးသားထားသည်။ ဤသဘောကို မြသန်းတင့်ကလက်မခံချင်၊ လောက၌ အကောင်းအဆိုး ဖွန်တွဲနေသည်။ အဆိုးပြီးလျှင် အကောင်းလည်းဖြစ်နိုင်သည်။ အကောင်းပြီးလျှင် အဆိုးလည်းဖြစ်နိုင် သည်။ ထို့ကြောင့် “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကိုဆက်ရေးရာတွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေအပေါ် မူရင်းစာရေးဆရာ ဒဂုန်တာရာ မမြင်သည့်ဘက်ကို မြသန်းတင့်ကဖြည့်၍ ပုံဖော်ထားသော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းပင်ဖြစ်သည်ဟု ထင်မြင်မိပါ သည်။

ခြုံငုံသုံးသပ်ချက်

မြသန်းတင့်၏ “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ” မှဝတ္ထုရှည်သုံးပုဒ်ကို လေ့လာရာတွင် မြသန်းတင့်သည် မိမိစွဲလမ်းနှစ်သက်ခဲ့သောဝတ္ထုများကို စာဖတ်သူရှုထောင့်ဖြင့် ဖြည့်စွက်ရေးသားထား သည်။ ထိုသို့ရေးသားရာတွင် ဝတ္ထုထဲမှဇာတ်ဆောင်ကိုယ်တိုင် ပြောဆိုသည့်ပုံစံဖြင့် ဖန်တီးယူထားသည်။ ထိုဇာတ်ဆောင်၏စရိုက်၊ စိတ်သဘောထားများ ပြောင်းလဲခြင်းနှင့်ဇာတ်လမ်းကို မူရင်းဝတ္ထုဖြင့် ချိတ်ဆက် ကာ အကောင်းမြင်ဘက်မှ ဖော်ပြထားသည်။ ဇေယျ၏“မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထုကို မြသန်းတင့် ဆက်၍ ဖန်တီးရာတွင် မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်အား ပြည်သူ့သူရဲကောင်းအဖြစ် စိတ်ကူးပုံဖော် ထားသည်။ မင်းဆွေ၏ “ဓား” ဝတ္ထုကိုမြသန်းတင့်ဆက်၍ ဖန်တီးရာတွင်ဇာတ်ဆောင် မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင် အားတွေဝေ၍ ပြတ်သားမှုမရှိသော စိတ်များဖယ်ရှားခဲ့သည်။ အမျိုးသားရေးအမြင်ဖြင့် သတ္တိရှိရှိနိုင်ငံ သူရဲကောင်းအဖြစ် ထပ်မံဖြည့်စွက်ရေးသားထားသည်။ ထို့ပြင်ဇာတ်ဆောင်မျိုးမြင့်ရန်နောင်၏ သားမျိုးဆက်သစ်ကိုပါ နိုင်ငံ အကျိုးစဉ်ဆက်မပြတ် လုပ်ဆောင်ကြောင်းဖြင့် အမျိုးသားရေးဆောင်ရွက်မှုကို ဖော်ဆောင် ရေးသားထား သည်။ ဒဂုန်တာရာ၏ “မေ” ဝတ္ထုကို မြသန်းတင့်ဆက်၍ ရေးသားရာတွင် ဇာတ်ဆောင်မေကို အဆိုး ဘက်မှဖယ်ထုတ်၍ မေ၏ဘဝလေးကို စိတ်ချမ်းမြေ့စေခဲ့သည်။ အကောင်းဘက်ကို ခေါ်ဆောင် ဖော်ပြ ထားသည်။ လူတို့သည်တစ်ကြိမ်တစ်ခါ မှားပါသော်လည်း အမှန်ကမြင်သောသူများကို ပတ်ဝန်းကျင် လူအသိုင်းအဝိုင်းက လက်ခံသင့်သည် ဟူသောအမြင်ကို စိတ်ကူးရေးသားခြင်းဖြစ်သည်။ မြသန်းတင့် သည် အမူးသားစာရေးဆရာ၊ စာဖတ်သူဖြစ်သော်လည်း မြန်မာအမျိုးသမီးများဘက်မှ ဖြည့်စွက် စဉ်းစားပေးခြင်းကလည်း ကျေနပ်နှစ်သက်စရာကောင်းသော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်းပင်ဖြစ်သည်။ မြသန်းတင့် သည် “မြတ်လေးရွှေဓားဗိုလ်” ဝတ္ထု၊ “ဓား” ဝတ္ထု၊ “မေ” ဝတ္ထုတို့ကို ဆက်လက် ဖန်တီး ရေးသားရာတွင် အရင်းခံစိတ်ထားဖြင့် လောကကောင်းကျိုးပြုရေးကို ရှေ့ရှုဖော်ဆောင် စိတ်ကူးခဲ့သည်ဟု ထင်မြင်မိပါ သည်။

နိဂုံး

မြသန်းတင့်သည် မူရင်းဝတ္ထုတစ်ပုဒ်တည်းကိုပင် မိမိငယ်ရွယ်စဉ်အချိန်နှင့် အရယ်ရောက်ချိန် အတွေးခံယူချက်များမတူဘဲ ပြောင်းလဲခဲ့သည်။ ထိုအခါ မြသန်းတင့်သည် မူရင်းဝတ္ထုများမှ မိမိစွဲလမ်း ခဲ့သော ဇာတ်လမ်း၊ ဇာတ်ဆောင်များကို ရည်ရွယ်ချက် ကောင်းများဖြင့် “ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သော ဝတ္ထုများ” ဟူ၍ရေးသားခဲ့သည်။ မူရင်းဝတ္ထုကိုဆက်၍ ကောင်းသည်ထက်ကောင်းအောင် အပြုသဘော ဖြင့် ဝေဖန်ဆွေးနွေး ရေးသားခဲ့သော စိတ်ကူးစိတ်သန်း ဆန်းသစ်မှုကို လေ့လာသိရှိရပါသည်။

ကျမ်းကိုးစာရင်း

- စိုးနိုင်၊ ဒေါက်တာ။ (၂၀၁၉)။ *ဆရာဇော်ဂျီ၏စကားပြောရေးဟန်*။ ရန်ကုန်၊ မြန်မာတိုင်း(မ်) ပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- ဇေယျ။ (၂၀၁၁)။ *မြတ်လေးရွှေစားဗိုလ်*။ ရန်ကုန်၊ ရာပြည့်စာအုပ်တိုက်။
- ဒဂုန်တာရာ။(၂၀၁၆)။ *မေ*။ (အဋ္ဌမအကြိမ်)။ ရန်ကုန်၊ နှစ်ကာလများစာပေ။
- မလိခ။ (၂၀၀၇)။ *မြန်မာဝတ္ထုအညွှန်း*။ ရန်ကုန်၊ သီရိမေရောင်စုံပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- မိုးမြေ၊ မ။ (၂၀၀၉)။ *ဝတ္ထုရှည်ဖန်တီးသူနှင့် ဝတ္ထုရှည်ခံစားသူ*။ ရန်ကုန်၊ ရွှေကံကော်ပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- မင်းဆွေ။ (၂၀၁၃)။ *စား*။ (ဒသမအကြိမ်)။ ရန်ကုန်၊ စိတ်ကူးချိုချို ပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- မြသန်းတင့်။ (၂၀၁၀)။ *ရှားလော့ဟုမ်းပြန်လာပြီ*။ ရန်ကုန်၊ သင်းလွဲဝင်းပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- မြသန်းတင့်။ (၂၀၁၈) ။ *ကျွန်တော်ဆက်၍ ရေးချင်သောဝတ္ထုများ*။ (အဋ္ဌမအကြိမ်)။ ရန်ကုန်၊ နန်းသဇင် ပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- အောင်သင်း။ (၂၀၁၇)။ *စာပေရေးရာဆောင်းပါးများ*။ ရန်ကုန်၊ စိတ်ကူးချိုချို ပုံနှိပ်တိုက်။
- အောင်သင်း။ (၂၀၁၇)။ *ဝတ္ထုရေးရာဆောင်းပါးများ*။ (တတိယအကြိမ်)။ ရန်ကုန်၊ ဇွန်ပွင့်စာအုပ်တိုက်။

&ci½;&mau;v uyjyirsm;r taw; tjr i

lunlun0i;*

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on &ci&&mau;v uyjyirsm;r taw;tjrism;u avvmwijxm;aom
pmwr;jzpygon/ &ciaus;v uyjyirsm;wi &civrsl;w\ ,lunr? "avp&u?
t vyt ui? 0goemEi vrquqa& taictaerism;u avvmwijx m;yg on/
aomcsu [m&rsm; - , lunr?"avp&u? t vyt ui?0goem? vrquqa&;

e'ge;

yji [aoma0g [m&Ei ywou íjrermt b"mewi]]tp0t quajymvmaom
tjzptys? Zmwallumi;}} [í t"ym,ziqxm;yg on/ t*vybmompum;wi yjiu
]]story }} [ívn;aumi;?]] Tale}} [ívn;aumi; ac:a0:o;pygon/ ta&Uwi;wi yji
Ei'@m&u a&max;o;pluygon/ '@m&wi e*g;? *Vle? iuu;? luy? wap? ewor;
ponji wec;&iZmwaqmirms;tx Zmwvr;zum ajymjyonaabm yg&yg on/
yjionrnon tceu pwiay:ayguvmrn [rnorwuspm rajmEiaomvn;
vom;[í pwizpay:vmuwn;u yjion&aely [qEiygon/ yajym on
tavgtxon wi;jynwi;wi&on/ vrs;wi;wi&on/ vrs;pwi;wi&on/
p tavgtxon rnon tceavmuwi pwiay:aygucon [ajzq&ygrn/ pum;ajymwwotcsi;csi;
awqluaomtcg tawU tllurism;u ajymjylurn? tjzptyurism;u ajymjylurn/
lum;oc&aomtalumi;t&m? jriawc&aomtjzptyuwon Zmwvr;wuav;ism;?
yjiwuav;ism;yi jzpygon/ ajymjyaomtalumi;t&mism;on & , p&m? Or;en;p&m?
yaq;p&m? tllp&m? en; , p&m? rworm;p&m? pwwwllup&m? aysm&ip&mponji
trsl;tpm;pvivyg on/ vw\ to0mPon wppwpp zjz;w;wuvmonEitr
vwajymqaom bompum;onvn; zjz;w;wuvmygon/ &&myji\ txi&m;q;
vuPmwpcrm]]Ewajympmay}}yijzpygon/ pmrwwaom au;s;&m vxw\ avmuwi
tb;? tbm;u om;or;ajr;jrpwUtm; Ewrajymjyon yjyirsm;yijzpon/ urmae&m
tEtjym;wi pma&ontww ay:vmyjzpaomvn; pmzwwwo? pmra&wwwow\
Ewajympum;ji ajymjyon "avx;prsm;talumi;? vw\ Zmwvr;y0w\lism; pon
wrm tu&mwijy; pmayrsm;Ei , 0vsu&c&on/ b;b;m;rbwu ajymonyjyirsm;u
om;or;? ajr;jrpwuxe;or;um vuqiur; ajymllum;c&uon/ , aelrsuarmuacw
rmyi Ewajym&&myjiwu quvuajymllum;aelluqjzpygon/

* a'guwm? wzuygarnu? jrermptXme? rau;wuov

t ce; - 1

&ci v r s; w \ ori; aem u c

&ciyne, on jrermEii \ taemubu&ci&rawmiwe;u;Ei b*v m;yiv, at m t lum;wiwn&y; ajrmubuüci;jyne, ? awmibuü{&m0wwi;? ta&u buü &ci½;rawmi;we;u;? taemubuüb*v m;a'& jyn oUorwEiiEie, erwci; qupyv;u&on/ &ci v r s; w \ on Ep&maygi; ajrmur sm;pmuyi&ciyn e, o 0ia&m u v m;jy; tajcc;aexi luor sm;jzpluon/]]&ci}}[aom trnrmygV]]&u}}r qi;ou v m;jy;]apmia&m u ci;}[t "ym, &on/ &ciyn u ygVv]]&uy&}} [ac: on/ ouwpmayvr;r;r&aom acwwi&ciyn u]] t m&u ma' o}} [ac: alumi;au sm upm taxm u t x m; t&o&&ygon/ tE, om;wu&ciyn u]] t m&ue}} [ac: on/ ði;pum; on ouw]] t m&u m}}rqi;ou v mygon/¹

&ciyne, on awm i x x y a y g r s m; a o m a' o j z p j y; ajrruEmjyion ajrmubuü jrií awmibuowjzn;jzn; qiajav(merqi;v;u&on/ ajrmubuüu; , jyeaom vijyilu;r sm;&aom vn; awmibuwi u;o;ajrmi;jy;v(i awmiue;r sm;aygr sm;on/]]&ciyne, &xi&m;aom awmiwe;u;r sm;rm &ci½;r (or[w) taem u ½;r awmiwe; u;? r, (ar,) awmiwe;u;? ri;lu;awmiwe;? lo&rawmi? big;&mawmi? O&mZawmi? jri;rwr awm i r sm; jzpluon/}}² awmiwe;r sm;onajrmubuü jrpz sm;cí awmibu o erqi;v;u&aom alumi jrpw on vn; ajrmuburjrpz sm;cí awmibu op;qi;lu avon/ xi&m;aom jrp u;r sm;rm ewjrp? r, jrp? u v m;wejrp? av;jr l jrp? owjrpw jzpluon/ &ciyne, wi aexi lu a o m v r s; r sm;rm &ci r&m u;? l r k? 'i;eu? ou? ure? vi;u? tE;? &r;';? acgip? ci;EiArm ponwUjzpon/

&ciwonrrwU \ Xmeu]]b&ciyn}} [t j r w w E;ac:luon/ Xne&ci u rciEi rEi;bzciEi onci;Ei;luon/ pci;Ei;y r sm;rm urmay:wixi&m;aom jyiop? *smre? t&e? tmzueepwe? u&; , m;? A, uervr s; w E i q i w o n / &ciwon t r sm; t m;jzi t o m;n on? Emway: on/ t&y t a r m i; r m r e r r j r i z p o n / o a w o t c s u &ci won t i' r e* v u t E, 0 i j z p o n [q u o n / &ci&mZ0iur;r sm;wivn; &ci jyne, Ei &ci v r s; w \ t p u a j c&m a u m u w i j y x m; y g o n /

&ci v r s; w \ ori; aem u c u l u n v i (1)"n0wacw (2)a0om vacw (3)av;jr l acw(4)ajrm u 0;acw(5)av;jr l 0eacw [í acw lu;(5)yi;jcm;xm;ygon/

¹ &ciyne, jyn o l a u m i p jyne, jzpp0ori; (yxrw)? pm-50

² wi;&i;om; , Oau;r&;&m"av x;pr sm;? &ci? jynaxmipq& , vporwjrer mEiiawm? pm-15

a0omvacw (a t ' 327 r 818)³

"n0wuqucaom a0omvacwon &ciori;wivn; v|r;v|r;awmu
xe;um;con/ &cia0omvon tE,jynwixe;um;caom vp0w\ a0omvEi
trnci;waeon/ a&a[mi;&cipmayrsm;wi ja0omv} [íomaw&on/ a0omv
\ t"ym, rm a0 = tx;x;tjym;jym;aom? omv = aumuyovaygrsm;aom wi;jyn [q
qvjci;jzpon/

&ciori;wu a0omvwi ri;u;quay:con[qon/ xri;wonbe;
wec;lu;rm;lu;jy; av;? ovsu? vtwwwuusr;u\$illuon/ vueuEiirsm;tjzp
&con[azmjyluon/ a0omvon vueuEiirsm;tjzp&con[qvici;jzpon/
at'-327wi wi;pjEmri;ee;wwon/ jrllawmu ueo;qit&yr a0omvo ajymi;a½u
con/ aumupmtaxmutxm;t& wi;pjEmri;aemu 21-ri; ee;pcon/ '*g;
taxmutxm;t& aumupmwirygaom aemuxyq,ri; ee;pcalumi;o&on/
a0omvacw\Eiia&peprmb&i pepjzpon/ tycly&mwi w&m;"rEityclyon/
tycly&mwi trwwonta&ygon/ pVpjEm;ri;u; (at'733-at' 769)
vuxuwi wi;jynu u,wivnjy; lu;luityclyav&on/ tajrm tjrilu;aom
ri;wu wi;jynvja&twu ppwytitm; awmiwi;atmi aqmi&uon/ x
acwu&cia&wytitm;rm tawmtm;aumi;c[ewon/

at'-776 wi ylwon tv;t&i;Ei a0omvuwucuvmon/ ,i;&eppu
ajrmu0;r yzlri;om;u we;vevuon/ ylppuEivuozi xEpwiyi yzlri;om;
on a0omvee;u&&on/ at'-793c wi re*w tv;t&i;Eiqi;vmjy; &cijynu
wucuv, uluon/ rarqm vib a0omvjrllon yup;q;&c&on/

av;jrlacw(a t ' -851-1430)⁴

tyutp;tq;t½;rm;jzi e*;clyom;aoma0omvacwjy; aemu&cijynowon
jrllwn tyao t*gi;yg;Ei jynpaomav;jrljrp0r;o ajymi;a&lluon/ av;jrl
acwwi &cix;ee;uquccuaom ri;aygi;ajcmuq, &con/ ,i;ri;w&m;w teu
w&m; vuvwaomri;-12-ri;ay:con/ olaomxri;won ppaygi;-45 Ep lumom
typ;Eicluon/ jynowu wpri;raumi;wpri;ajymi;&rn[aom t,uvuc
ojziri;(8)yg;uowjzwjy; oiawmaomee;&u wiajrmuEicluon/ w&m;vuvw
aom ri;wtm;yeueru r;rwwu0;aqmiluavon/

c&pEp-1190-rpítEp-30-lum w&m;vuvwaom ri;rm;alumi&ciEiion
qw,wom;avon/ qw,wom;on&ciEiiu jyevnpnum;atmi ou0i
lu;ri;on lu;pm;cavon/ xri;on &mZewusr;wi ur;u;iojzp\ / ee;ou (2)

³ &cijyne, jynoaumip? jyne, jzpp0ori? yxrw? pm- 62

⁴ &cijyne, jynoaumip? jyne, jzpp0ori? yxrw? pm- 71/

Epwiu , veon/ o\om;awm ou0ii, (at' - 1222- at' 1232) u x;ee;
 qucon/ at' -1283 wi ee;wucaomri;x;onvn; qw, waeaom&ciynu
 xe;or;xaxmicavon/ at' 1404 wi &cix;ee;u ri;apmretm; jynowu
 vtyon/ oiaomri;apmreee;wuí 2-Eptlumwi &ciw\innwa&;on oyv
 c&avon/ &ciwtm;re&mZm"&mZu r[mrwzxm;&on/ &mZm"&mZuwuaeaom
 ti;0b&iri;acgion &ciu0iwuon/ ri;apmreon b*v;m;ola&miwr;om;&
 on/ at' -1429 wi ri;apmreon nawm\zwum;cut&avmi;lúuol jyevm
 on/ aemuwpepwi ri;apmreon avmi;lúuorlawmupecmí ajrmu0;rlawmu
 wnaxmiavon/⁵

ajrmu0;acw (at' 1430 – 1785)⁶

ri;apmreon b*v;m;r jyevn0ia&muí &cix;ee;u jyevnqucly; aemu
 ajrmu0;rlawmu wnaxmicon/ ajrmu0;acwwi &ci,0au;ron tzuiz;q;
 jzpavon/ ajrmu0;rlawm on taetxm;aumi;reaomt&y jzpon/ uvm;we
 vijiEi av;rlúviiyipyum;wiwn&on/ jrlawmuwnaxmie p0ri;apmre
 u, veon/ ri;apmruer, veciuyi x;ee;unawmri;c& (at' 1433-1459)
 tm;vtycon/ ri;c&on wi;jynxaxmia&;rsm;u rsm;pmvyavon/ 1437-wi
 owe, on&ci A[tyc\ya&Ei y;aygi;vmon/ owe, onjyn yuppyrsm;allumi
 tEp-30-lumwpo;wpjcm; tyc\yaec&on/ &ciwonjyn wi;titm;jyevn
 aumi;vmcojzi pu&m;Eippwaumi;wu jyevnor;yuEicon/ ta&bu&
 ppui;a&;twu ti;0e&ywEiat' -1454 - wi r[mrwzcon/ at' -1458 wi
 ajrmu0;jrlawmu &r;wuvmwuaomvn; &ciwu atmiEivun/

bapmjzlr; (at' 1459-1482) vuxuwi &cipttitm;on yíawmiwi;
 vmon/ A[tyc\ya& xa&murtwuri;lú;u, wi lú;uayaqmi&uon/ ai;u
 qucaomri;u;ygon t&ntci;nzi;lúon/ ee;wi;tmPmvrom rsm;avon/
 ri;Amu; (at' -1531-1553) x;ee;&ciewi &ciEiiü tyc\ya&;opwpc upwiaecie
 jzpon/ tyc\ya&;ua&lr0; "rowur;vmtwi; aqmi&uavon/ pur;u 1515
 wi Eiiwp0r;v;u twnjycjy;jzpon/ a&;rE"row wuníawminwu t&i
 t*reEi&ii, q&m0;jr0g? 0rv trwEir[mynmausmwu a&;zxm;jci;jzpon/

ri;Amu;ee;&aomtcg ajrmu0;jrlawmu b*v;m;yiv, atmwi taumi;q;
 cwyzpatmi wnaqmu& ay:w*w\itm;im;&r;con/ ay:w*w\ tutnjzi luci
 aom a&wyrwawmjzpezpn;con/ pen;jziri;Amu;on acwrvueuyi&i jzpv

⁵ &ciyne, jynolaumip? jyne, jzpp0ori? yxrw? pm- 79/

⁶ &ciyne, jynolaumip? jyne, jzpp0ori? yxrw? pm- 80/

on/ aemuo;Eplumaomtcg rwaqjzpcamay:w* won&ciuor;yu&e a&wy
titm;jzicvmon/ ue;wi;a&wryi;wi &ciwtEi&vuon/ awmiib&i
wyi&x;vn; at'-1544-cEprpí o;Epwiwi Epp0ajrmu0;olcsvmon/ cic
vjclaom ajrmu0;jrlawmu wm&nr0i;Eib qwcmon;avon/

1638 - crpí &cititm;on wjzn;jzn;uqi;vmcon/ ee;vri;e&ywlu;
(at'-1638-1645) vuxuwi &ciynm&lu;rm;? pr;&n&y*vrsm; wraumyaysmu
om;&avon/ r*b&iwEi quqa&rmvn; pEo"rri; (at'-1652-1645)
vuxuwiq;&m;vmcon/ 1666-cwi r*tiyg, m\ b*vm;b&icon ppwaumi;
Eiye;0gwu vlywpjyu0ia&mu or;yuvuavon/ ppwaumi; usq;om;jci;on
&ciwtwu rsm;pm txemavon/

tb, r[m&mZm (at'-1764-1773) vuxuwi &ciynontawmtwe
jyevnwnjirvmon/ jrermjynr]]wrlum;Av}} &cioxyg;onu we;vevuEi
on/ , i;aemuyi;jynjyeí rjirroujzpvmon/ at'-1782cEpwi Epvww a&m*g
ab;quojzi vrsm;pmaoavon/ aemuEpEptlumwi&ci ajrmuyi;vijyon
a&vr;rjci;'Pu rlupz;cvu&on/ , i;Epwiyi&ci w\ tm;en;cuu tci
aumi; , vsu jrermtr&y&b&i A'ri; (at'-1782-1819) u&ciEiiu ppo;alumi;
cíor; , apon/ &ciwonEpvwiwi tao tvclluon/ rEiojzi at'-1785
cEp? Zee0g&vwi ajrmu0;jrlawmysuavon/ &ciwwiajrmuxm;aom b&i
r[morwvn; tzt;cvu&on/ ori;p0quyL;axmivmcaom &cix;ee;on
ysuo0;om;avawmon/

av;jrlOeacw(at' 1785-1825)⁷

jrermwon ajrmu0;jrlawmu or; , jy;aemu ri;lu;ri;acgiu aoewp
vwpaomi;ausmEi tapmixm;cjy; tr&y&o;lyeulon/ tijewiee;us&cib&i
r[morwEirz&m;rm; ri;nri;om;? ri;aqri;rsl;? r;rwAvygwEiwu tajrmu
peajymi;vueuwpami;ausm? aoewvueuwpami;ausm? alu;½yo;q , ausm?
twwynm[oíutp qijri;oye;o;aomi;ausmEi r[mre½yym;awm uor; , om;
avon/ ptcerpí &ciynua'oav;ccjy; wpcv(ijrlU0e wp0;prcexm; tycly
avon/ si;wuttr&y&uwu&ulu;uyuyuon/

&cix;ee;ujy;aemuwpEp at' 1786 cEpwi &ciynü twwynm&irms;
&m;yg;om;jyzpojzi &cip;ym;a& w[ex;usqi;om;on/ wi;jynvn; rjir;cr;
ojzi p;yg;a&uyquvmon/ at' 1790 jynEpwi [&aqacgi;aqmiaom awmve
yeuerEi at' 1811 wi csi;yacgi;aqmiaom awmveyeuerrsm; ay:aygucon/
olaomatmijrirr&b b*vm;jyne , xolom cvom;clluon/

⁷ &ciyjne , jynolaumip? jyne , jzpp0ori;? yxrw? pm- 91/

jrU0eacw tyc\ya&;umvwi &ciynon xm;xm;nuyup;avon/ tEp
 350 ausm jypyl;axmivmcaom ajrmu0;jr\awmonvn; wpjijzpon;avon/
 pacwwi&ciynü tr&y&uomoemj\on/ &cioCmrsm; jrerm&[e;w\ uip0
 uivm\u&on/ &ciynwi a&;tququo;caom y#uwur;pmrsm;Eipmay tE
 vu&mwon &ciynwi&m;yg;om;jy; jrermjynola&m u&om;avon/ av;jrU0eacw
 on ajrmu0;jrUujAwow 0ior;on at ' 1825 cEpwi ueq;om;avon/

အခန်း - ၂

ရခိုင်ရိုးရာကျေးလက်ပုံပြင်များမှအတွေးအမြင်များ

&ciivr\;won ori;tp0tvmlu;rm;aom vr\;wpr\; jzpconEitn &ci
 vr\;w\&;&m "avp&ur;onvn; tqitwe;jirm;vygon/ &ciivr\;won
 x;ee;? luie;Eiwiwiw, w, aexicluaom vr\;jzpon/ &cix;ee;u tyc\yc
 luaomri;rm;on x;ee;"avp&ur;Eitn ri;vytyc\yuouo &ciyno
 jynom;rm;onvn; vwe;pm;tvu b0r\;puivnael uonu aw\&on/ tx;
 oji &ciynow\ b0u &ci&;&maus;vuyjyirsm;wi trsm;q;aw\&yg on/
 aus;vu jynow\ aexipm;aomu touar;0r;ausmi;jyly? vrquqa&;? or;
 &n;pm;ta&;? traxmia&;? , unu;u, rpaom aus;vuvlabmi\ tq;taumi;
 tu\;taumi;rm;u &ciaus;vuyjyirsm;r ayguzm;vmaomyjyirsm;r taw;tjrirsm;u
 avv m wiyom;yrn/

2? 1/ r , u\ecwr;aus;vuyji

&ciyntv ,yi; ausmujLjrUe ,wi ajym\um;vu&aom aus;vuyjiwpy'
 jzpygon/ yji\ t"u talumi;rm awmxwiwpa, muwn; aeav&aomt b\;lu;
 wp0;t m;toynm A[owr&[xirwjy; vajymiav;a, muwu OmPpr; tjzpjzi
 pum;ppx\;uyu azmus\;xm;ci;jzpon/ Zmwvr;rm &mEire;ra0;jr ur;yg;awmiajc
 &i;wi ui; , mvuyipm;aomu aeaom tb\;u;xolvajymi v aemuav;a, muw
 a&muom;on/ xaemu tb\;u;t m; }jr , v\iu\ecpwr;}} pum;ajymjy&epum;pyon/
 tb\;u;u oabmwojzi vi , av;a , muteuracgi; aqimivyoupa jymonyrm

}}uleawmtr0r;xrm&aewe; uleawmrci [mc:0o; pm;csive;v v\m&n
 wzliijzip;uaewmujriwme uleawm0r;Auxuxujy; rellu;o;
 xuc;jy; taruay;w , ? jy;rjye0ijy;aw , t'gut b; , &\vm;}}⁸

[ar;vuon/] tb\;u;u , w , jzpEiwmayg}} [ajzvuon/ ponji yxrv i , r
 tb\;u;t m; pum;pr;ar;jyzi Zmwvr;upw0ipm;z , azmjyxm;yg on/ xaemu 'w ,

⁸ v? 0? v x? 1965? pm- 124/

vi,rvn; tr0r;xraeí rcipm;ciaom te;o;uc;ay;y? ww,vi,rvn; ig;lu;
 wpaumiú a&xrmyir;zwpm;vuy? pwwvi,rvn; o\ trrm tvelu;y?
 trlur;jyiaegur xuú;om;aom uav;i,on ajrlu;ay:a&muaom tçg qyi
 rwqwawjzlaeom tb;lu;jzpm;yu ajymjyon/ xvi,tm;v;ajymaompum;u
 tb;lu;u ,lunvucon/ tb;tlu; tvnola&muaom tçg vi,av;a,mu
 wltm; atmuygtwi; ajymvuyrm]vecwq,ajcmuEpavmuu ig,mxrm 0gyi
 wpyiupuy&w,? t'0gyi[m 0go;av;v;o;w,? t'0go;av;v;rnvmwtçg
 0go;xu uav;av;a,mu&w,/ wpa,muu]aomP} vtrnay;w,/ wpa,muu
]'w}} vtrnay;w,/ wpa,muu]rw}} vtrnay;w,/ wpa,muu]pw}} vtrn
 ay;w,/ 'gayrow[maysmuom;w,/ t'uav;aw[mçq ri;wt&,ayg/
 q,ajcmuEpavmu&jy/ t'uav;aw[m iguleuav;awy wpjcm;vi,aw r[wyg
 b;? u-ri;w, &Uvm; [tb;lu;u ajymvuygon/

tqygpum;ulm;&aom vi,av;a,murm tb;lu;uiyetajzray;Ei awmb
 t&ay;vu&on/ tb;lu;pum;xwiygao emrnrm;rm xvi,av;a,mu\ emrn
 rsm;jzpaey; ,on[ajmyguvn; ulec&rn? r,[ajmyguvn; ulec&rnjzpaom
 allumijzpon/ pyjirwpqi tout&,lu;aom vlu;orrsm;on vi,rsm;xu
 tawtluA[owomveallumi;? vlu;orrsm;u vnpm;ygu aemuq;rrrmom 0#
 jyevnwwallumi; b0oice;pm taw;tjriu&&aomau; vuyjiwpy'yijzpyg
 on/

2? 2/ eiyr ig'w ,yji

aus;vu\p&uobm0Ei jriui;rsm;uazmjyom;Eiaom yjiwpy'jzpygon/
 Zmwvr;rm vru trncxm;owp0;\ oabmobm0rsm;u azmjyxm;ci;yijzpon/
 jzlatmiqoon &mwitruq;[u,u,uc,xm;ojzpon/ nbua&muwi;
 t&uaomu;y; &m&;wpav[mu&r;um;aewwon/ &mo&mom;rsm;u v n; rnor
 jyerajymbon;caelluon/ jzlatmionnbuwi t&uaomu;y; &r;um;ww
 aomvn; ae buwitrwumvni xri;[i;rsm;u awmi;&r;pm;aomu;y;v(i
 wpaev;tyaeon/ &mom;rsm;u rnor[rajymb on;caelluonu ouallumu
 on[xiaeon/ &mrlluu brsm;u v n; zr; ,pm;aomuwwon/ wpaewit&ur;
 jy; &mxwi oomvitruq;? oxuruor&[allu;allumon/ xtcgrrrerue
 vyonurlluaom vatmiqou tray:rqi;vmjy; vrujzlatmiu peac:vu
 on/ xtcgruvygon? ruonae&mwii otjyiEpa,mur&[xiaecon
 jzlatmion oxuyruonv ay:vmjy[o&um]'vq&iruwa&mrri;uyxr?
 igu'w,ayg}} [qumwpcm;ol xuajy;om;on/ vruw\ oabmobm0u azmu&sl;
 xm;aom yjiwpy'jzpon/ vruwon rru,u]vru} [c,xm;aomvn; rr\
 twi;pwrml allumu&aewwallumi;? rrxuyruaomouawlygu allumu&ljy;

**xuajy;om;luaumi; avmuu;uay;aom b0o ice;pm taw;tjriu &&apaom
au;vu yjiwpy'yizpygon/**

2? 3/ vlu;uvomv p0t;lu;uvajymiv

**pyjyion &ciaus;vuobm0 cspira&&muprsm;u tom;ay;azmjyxm;aom
yjiwpy'jzpygon/ jrllua[mi;jrllwiaexiaom r0i;on tveacsmarmvaomallumi
umvom;vi,rm;\ cpciEpouruca&on/ r0i;uon; olucpluau aeorm;
xr&om;wnlunaom armijzLursuEmomay;on/ armijzLuqi;&aomallumi o\
arwmuzirajym&jzpaen/ r0i;uon; a&vmajrmi;ay;vyay;on/ vomom wpm
wi armijzLonuyypay;üvjy; r0i;talumi;p0;pm;ce;0iaen/ r0i;vn;tem;o
a&muvmjy; armijzLEir0i;wZmwaygi;ce;u [moqe qe jziazmjyxm;onu aw&
on/**

**]]armijzLu aumi;uiu wpcsuarmllunvuawm vri;ujri&jyew,
ab;uwp;uunvuawm vn; p0t;lu;uaw&w,/ 'gearmijzLu
]]vuon;omv&,}} vajymvuw,/ r0i;u]]vomawmbmjzpv
armilu;&,}} vajymvuw,/ armijzLu]]p0t;lu;uon;ajymiv&,}}
vajymvuw,/ r0i;]]vomjy;p0t;lu;u ajymiaawmbmjzpv
armilu;&,}} var;vuajyew,/ 'awmv&armijzLu]]r0i;uarmilu;
cspawmllumjyayg}} vajymvuw,/ r0i;uon; jy;&,jy;oabmuom;
w,/ 'geowEpa, mu[m vulunvup0t;lu;ulunvue csp&n
wvllunjl&muwpaerm traxmiuawmw,}}⁹**

**[í v&armijzLEir0i;w\ or;&n;pm;upu azmuSL;xm;aom au;vu yjiwpy'
jzpygon/ au;vuvi, v&,won tcsa&uprsm;wi wp0;Eiwp0; opmw&m;
lu;rm;y? arwmciiry? &ajrusaygi;oi;uy cspira&&taw;tjriu jzpay:apaom
au;vu yjiwpy'jzpygon/**

2? 4/ vqer;sm;Eiaq;lu rv;

**pyjiwix;jcm;aom &yqi;t*g&jy; tveÓPen;aom vrsm;talumi;u
azmjyxm;ygon/ Zmwvr;rm wi;jynwpjynr v,yi&iwp0;on v,uvyui&
vim;q,a,mu im;&r;vuon/ xvim;q,a,muwi ig;a,murm ½;aygayg
orm;jzpí ueig;a,murmvn; oywv;avmu&aom ruv;us,? paumavmu
&aomen;&ulu;? avmwwavmu&aom vu0g;lu;? wpayce&naom em;acgi;lu;?
wpawmir&n xuaeaom zice;paom trnrsm;&aom vig;a,mujzpon/ wpaewi**

⁹ v? 0? vx? 1965? pm-177/

v ,yi&iu yxrvig;a , muu awmiowwí wwicwci;vuon/ 'w , vig;O;u
wr;&etvlim "ersm;&mci;vuon/

]]em;&ulu;wv pvn;rupus ,ou av0;rxijy; "ersm;u&mí
em;&ulu;ouem;&uuziv;u vu0g;u;ou vu0g;ziavmcwí
zic;e;ouvn; clexuaomziziyuijy; Emacgi;u;ouvn; av
tv ,0r;xrmxiíom;u&m yiv , xo a&muom;on/ yiv , x wi
zic;e;alumí av0r;ayguom;on/ Emacgi;u; \Emacgi;ac;ji av0r;
uzmon/ aemuq;Emacgi;ac;ueom;ojzi avjryom;awmon}}¹⁰

[a&om;wijyxm;yg on/ avjryom;aomalumi ruv;u; ,rm jiy} ig;b0a&mu
om;ly;vu0g;u;rm]*Pe;v;} b0a&muom;on/ em;&u;u;rmqijzpo;ly; zic;e;rm
yiv , xwi]vyau;smuig;} jzpo;on/ Emacgi;u;rmvn;]vi;yi}b0ola&muom;
on[aus;vuaejynow\ A[owtaw;triu azmu;sl;xm;aom yjiwpy'
jzpygon/ opcworm; &aygayig;a , muteu acgi;aqmivyou opyiucwon/
useav;a , muu opyivrnbuu yc;jzicxm;ojzi av;a , mupv; aoom;luon/
acgi;aqmiuvn; aore;rotyaeon[xirwy;xc;on/ aemuq; oyg&a&mí
0ityly; oluoao;ly[, qvuon/ xtcg;urwwuivmaom vwpa , muu
vmwojziE;vmly; burv;allumitou&i&on[, lunon/ aemuq;xurwwu
awmi; , ly; aoaeaom b&ior;awmwp0;tm; jye&ivmatmi burwwjzi waomvn;
jye&irvmojzi b&i\uyrujci;ucvu&on/ toOmPen;yg;r? A[ow en;yg;
r? p0;pm;qijciEipr;en;yg;ru oa&xm;aom aus;vuyjiwpy' jzpygon/

2? 5/ tm;aumi;lu;aomlum0;

&ci&;&maus;vuyjyirsm;wi aus;vuwiaexiluor;xr cetm;AvEi
jynpor;sm;tallumi;u azmijyxm;aom yjyirsm;u;vn; awljri&yg on/ tm;aumi;lu;
aom lum0;yjiwi aomlum0; \cetm;Avlu;rm;yu awl&on/ iv;Ei aomlum0;w
cetm;jyiluuyuvn; wpaewiiv;on aomlum0;aexiaom meatmiue;o titm;
jyi&eom;on/ aomlum0;trol a&muao;mtcg aomlum0;Eiraw? aomlum0;ErEi
omawjy; aq;wpt;aomuc;ialumi; ajymí aomlum0;Eruaq;wpt;ay;on/

]]xaq;t;uiv; zmlun&mzmvr&jzpaeon/ xtcgaomlum0;Eru , zm
vuawmr r;c;tvyvyxuvmon/ iv;vn; aomlum0;Er\
tm;aumi;yu aw&aomtcg aomlum0;u&irqi0awmb xuajy;on/
xaemu aomlum0;a&muvmijy; iv;xuajy;onaemuol vuom;on/
iv;p;aom avay:otwi;wuon/ avuiv;u 0;buraomlum0;u
ybur tjyiavmuon/ avrmig;yi;jzwom;jy; iv;rm&r;Aule;ay:

¹⁰ v? 0? vx? 1965? 115/

twi;wua;on/ aomum0; aemurvuvmo;zi au;uawmiwpc
aemuo0iye;r vwajrmuom;on/xau;u;on, cwi&r;Aule;wi
iv;ye;au;uwi [trnwiv;u&on}}¹¹

[í cet m;u;rm;otaumi;u pw0ipm;z, [mopu í azmjyxm;aom au;vuyji
wpy'jzpygon/

t ce; - 3

&ci&;mau;vuyjirsm;r &aomow? &ob0o ice;pmrsm;

3) 1/ &ci&;mau;vuyjirsm;r &aomow

&ci&;mau;vuyjirsm;wi &ciori;alumi;, Oau;rEi quE, a&aom
orwz, &mrsm;? "avx;p, unrEix;jcm;tz, &mjzp&yrsm;? qijciz, &mrsm;aom ow
tzzu ay;pr;Eionu aw&ygon/

]]r, ulecpwr; au;vuyji}}wi awmxwi wpa, muwn;aeaom tb;u;
wp0;t; toynmA[owr&[xirwxm;o vajmiav;0;wu pum;ppx;u&m
vajmiw&erly; tb;u;\uersm;jzpm;yu azmjyxm;ji;jzpon/ pyjirwpqi
tout&, u;&iaomvrsm;t; i, &, orsm;u rxrirav;rpm;rvyoialumi;? rr
xutout&, u;&iorm;t; txitjirao;oialumi;? rrxutout&, u;&i
orm;on ynmrjzpapumr tawitbuA[owwrm vi, wxursm;pm omvealumi;
rwom;z, azmjyxm;aom yjiwpy'jzpygon/

]]ri;yxr ig'w, au;vuyji}}wi au;vuaevruw\ p&uobm0Ei
jriu;ism;uawjri&ygon/ pyjirwpqiavmuwi vru[rru, u c, xm;
orm;on rrxuyruaomouawygu alumu&wwalumi;? vru[c, xm;aom
jzLatmion rreruevyonuruuaom vatmiEiawaomtcg 'w, ae&mo
a&muly; xuaj;om;&yu b0o ice;pm tjzp o&&ygon/

]]vuvn;omv\ p0t;u;uvn;ajymiv}} yjiwi &ciau;vuvi, obm0
c;pa&qyrsm;uaw&on/ v&;armijzlon acsmarmvaomr0i;u cpbu\uaely; r0i;
uvn; &om;aomarmijzlu tjetvearwm&aelluon/ olaomvn; armijzlu
qi;&aomallumi o\arwmu zirajm&b;azpaey? r0i;u a&vmajrmi;ay;vyay;&y?
au;vu tyvvyw\ tcsa&;&muprsm;wi wp0;ay;wp0; opmw&m;u;rm;y?
apmipn;uyy uunE;z, azmjyxm;aom yjiwpy'jzpygon/

]]vqe;rm;Eiaq;urv;}} yjiwi x;jcm;aom&yqi;t*g&ly; tve0mPen;
aom vrsm;talumi;u owoabmqeqe azmjyxm;ygon/ avjriyom;aomallumi
ruv;us, rm]iyy} ig;b0a&muom;y? vu0g;u;rm]*Pe;v;} b0a&muom;y?

¹¹ v? 0? vx? 1968? pm-269/

em;&u;u;rm]qi}jzpo;m;y? zic;e;rm]vyau;smuig;} jzpo;m;y? Emacgi;βu;rm]vi;yi}
 b0oia&m;uom;ywu au;vuaejynow\ A[owwjzpay:apaom yjyiwp'y'
 jzpay:om/ avmuwit oynm0mPen;ygu 'ua&m;uEialumi; opcworm;
 ig;a,muon toynmp0;pm;qijci Eiracgi;yg;aomallumi aemuq;wi rrw\
 touuyi paw;vu&y b0oice;pmu ay;xm;aom yjyiwp'y'jzpygon/

]tm;aumi;βu;aomllum0;}} yjyirwpqi titm;βu;aomorm;u tm;en;aom
 orm;tay:wi tEir,oiy? rru,u tm;βu;on[txiru;oiy? rrxucetm;
 i,orm;tay: tEir,oiy? pwu;r0ioiywu b0oice;pmay;xm;aom yjyi
 wpy'jzpygon/

aomllum0;on rru,u cetm;βu;on[qum tm;βu;aomiv;Ei cetm;
 lyi&eom;y? iv;Eiraw&ci iv;Ertm;βu;yu jriawly;xuaj;yvmy? iv;jyea&m;u
 vml;y; aemurvuvum aomllum0;xuaj;y&y? avig;yi;jywí aomllum0;avay:r
 ajy;qí;um &r;IAule; ausmuawmiwpcwi ye;ae&y}} [í cetm;βu;rm;otalumi;u
 pw0ipm;z, azmjyxm;ygon/

&ci½;&m au;vuyjyirsm;wi yg0iaeaom ori;qí&mrwom;z,&mrsm;?
 ,Oau;r qi&mrwom;z,&mrsm;? Oya'qi&m rwom;z,&mrsm;? avmutwwynm
 qi&m rwom;z,&mrsm;on yjyiem;axmiowtm; A[owtzzu rwom;vuemz,
 a&;om;wijyxm;ygon/

3? 2/ &ci&;&m au;vuyjyirsm;ray;aom &o

yji[on b;bm;tp0tquw\ rwwr;rm;jzp&m talumi;t&mtrsk;tpm;
 pvivon/ tawtβu;trsk;tpm;pvionyjixwi x;qe;tloz,? tw,z,?
 oice;pm,z,? vr;qwz,? lunE;z,? xwveallumu&Uz,ponjzi trsk;tpm;
 pvion/ i,&,owtm;E;lum;aply; βu;owtm;qijciww&m; ym;rm;apaom yji
 rsm;vn; trsm;tjym;&on/ yjyirsm;on b0to? b0tjri? b0tawtβu;Ei ,Owum
 jzpay:vmaom cpm;r&oto;o;u ay;pr;Eionuaw&on/ yjiyg talumi;t&mrsm;
 on pwu;qe;βu,ví qe;βu,oavmu qaqmirtm;aumi;ví aumi;oavmu
 yjyiem;axmiowtm; &oto;o;ay;pr;Eionuaw&on/

&ci&;&mau;vuyjyirsm;r]]vuvn;omv p0t;βu;uvn;ajymiiv}} yjiwi
 &cijynllrUa[mi;llrU tvevyacmarlaom r0i;qore;uav;Ei tve&;om;wnlun
 aom armijzLqo vi,av;w\ cpra&;&mrsm;u lunE;z,aumi;atmi azmjyxm;&m
 lunE;Epour o*g&&ou ay;pr;Eionuaw&ygon/

]r,uiecpwr;}} yjiwi awmxwiwpa,muwn;aeav&aom tb;βu;tm;
 ynmron[xium vajymia;v;0;wu pum;ppx;luyu pw0ipm;z,jzpatmi azmjy
 xm;&m lunE;aysm&irrpqi [mo&oucpr;&ygon/

]]ri;yxr ig'w , au;vuyji}} wi rru , u vru [c , xm;aom jzlatmiu
rrxuruaomou awaom tcalumu&ly; xuajy;ye;a&mi&yu azmjyxm;&m
alumu&r b , meu&ou cpm;&ygon/

]]vqe;rs;Eiaq;urv;}} yjiwi x;qe;aom&y tqi;t*g&ly; tveÓPen;
aomors;talumi; azmjyxm;&m tloz , jzp&yrs;u tAlw&oajrmuatmi azmusl;xm;
ygon/

]]tm;aumi;βu;aomβumO;}} yjiwi tm;aumi;βu;aommlumO; \cetm; βu;rm;yu
azmjyxm;&m tpr;βu;ors;talumi;u zw&ly; 0&&ou cpm;&ygon/

]]xyp}} yjiwi wigonwp0;on rwaq \wuwe;rji tepym;rs; aeyjzp
on/ oamcwywuroji teptpm; [xyp] [a&&waeon/ r , m;jzpou
em;lum;ji;uyly; xwpuiyetyci;on/ xlaemu b&m;qa&muom;ly; 'ge? ov?
bmOemw&m;rs;u oom;on/ aemuq;wi w&m;oaom tusl;alumi cr;omom;yu
azmjyxm;&m w&m; tay: , lunr oE&ou ay;pr;Eiygon/

po]ji &ci&&maus;vuyjiyrs;wi yg0iaeaom talumi;t&mrs;on v
obmOjzp&yrs;u pw0ipm;atmi azmjyxm;EionEitr\ yjicpm;r&o to;o;u
vn; yjiem;axmiow\ &ixoa&muatmi yaqmiay;Eionu avvmaw&&
ygon/

3? 3/ &ci&&myjiyrs;r y;aom b0oice;pm

yjiyrs;on pwu;jizew;xm;aom talumi;t&mtjzptyrs; jzpaomvn;
vavmuu wpzuwpvr;r taxmutuyjaeon [qEiygon/ pwu;ji
zew;xm;aom yjiyrs;on em;axmiowtm; pwEv;Epou &ive;apaom azmajr
ououuom t"utm;jzi ay;pr;Eiygon/ oam tcsll;aomyjiyrs;on vw\
'|"ravmuEiqupyly; Zmwvr;qixm;o]ji vuemp&m? uisio;p&m? qijcip&m b0
oice;pmrs;u ay;pr;Eiygon/ &ci&&myjiyrs;on talumi;t&m trsl;tpm; pvi
onEitr\ b0oice;pm trsl;rs;u vn; ay;pr;Eionu aw&ygon/

]]vuwpqp}} yjiwi aeri;vri; b&iβu; \usepmallumi vuwpqpav; \
cEmu , rmao;i , ve;ly; vuwpqpavmuom&on/ vuwpqpav;on vao;
aomvn; pw"mwcetm;βu;rm; í ÓP&njirm;o]zpon/ usepmwuxm;aom aeri;
vri;b&iβu;u ppwu&ercixciawmi;ly; xuvm on/ vr;wiaw/&aom ajrac;?
usm;? avEiZ&ywu owiyg vmaomrers;u au;ly; olv , twxxnac: vm on/
aeri;vri;wi;jyno a&mu aom t c g rwaqrsm;upepwus ae&mapci;ly; aeri;vri;
b&iβu;u tEi , con/ vuwpqpvn; yuwv& , twi; jzpom;on/ '@m&yji
wpy'jzpaomvn; βu;l;pm;v qirjzpEiwmr&allumi;? ÓPtajrm tjrEi βupnygu
t&m&mu atmi jriEialumi; b0oice;pmrs;u ay;Eiygon/

]]owpyg;tu<aqmi u,|tu<atni}} yjiwi oaX;b0rqi;&om;o wp0;
on &aoxA'i om;ar;on/ vr;wiaw&aom awmio!u;wp0;? aZm*wp0;Ei
b&i!u;wpyg;wuvn; ow\ 'ur sm;uajmijly; &aoxA'i ar;ci;vuon/
&aoB;u;xa&muaom tcg rmvuaom or sm; \ talumi;ut&iar;on/ aemuro
talumi;ar;on/ &aoB;u;on o\ jyó emr sm;u rajzawmay/ olaom xoon o
tu<xu tr sm;tu<u 0;pm;ay;aqmi&ucaomalumi aZm*xryn mvn;&?
awmioB;or;vn;&ly; tra&U ri;om;jzpom;on/ or sm;tu<aqmi&uojzi u,
tu<atmijri&yu b0o ice;pm tjzp rwom;&on/

]],eivr}} yjiwi ,eivron ynwwwcia,miaqmily; rausmi;rom;
Epaumi ynmoia y;rn[ac:om;ly; pm;ypvuon/ rausmi;rvuvmaom tcg
tr<r<vnywly; a&mixuom;on/ wpaewi,euraom tcg a&c<ly;oeoe
&i;&i;jzpr pm;&eajmon/ rausmi;on ,ojzi vwvu&m ,ermvwajrmuom;on/
aemuyi;wi rausmi;xu yg;eyaom,euzr;&e opacgi;x0iapmiaep0 ,eu
vnywxuom;ly; opacgi;u aumu&ywr;½Uvuojzi rausmi;aoq;om;on/
pyjirwpqi vrvnwwow\ trtuir sm;uomru toÓPrygu 'ua&mu
wwyu oice;pm ,z , azmijxm;yg on/

vyg;yvi;xyjiwi o<u ,wpa ,muon avmbu;ly; qi;&aomawmior sm;
ay: tjrwxwwwon/ vwpa ,muu oXrEm;x;wpaumiim;ly; jyetyaom tcg
Em;i ,wpaumi tyay;vuon/ o<u ,uvm; Em;x;rar;aom Em;i , [ajmon/
o<u ,rm rjzpEire;oaomvn; avmbu;ly; vucxm;vuon/ aemuwpur
xou o<u ,xrEm;x;r sm;uim;om;ly; Em;x;r sm;rmu ,0e&ojzi v ,xe&i; arm [u
aoq;uealumi;ajmvuon/ o<u ,vn; u ,&L;u ,ywum Em;r sm;q;½om;on/
pyjirwpqi owpyg;u raumi;Buv(i rrvn;jyec&rnqaom b0o ice;pmu
&&yg on/

]]o!uremv u ,rm tu<r}} yjiwi acwpaumiEiu;ue;w rwaqjzpa
onu remvjzpaom ajrac;uacurq;&&mo jzm;a ,mi;ac:aqmiom;on/ rq;
axmiacsmuwi acraom tcg ajrac;uclywxr pm;&eapmiaeon/ rq;a&muvm
tcg rwaqu;ue;\ tutnjziacrm vwajrmuom;on/ xuajy;om;aomacu
rq;u"m;Eivr;yp on/ xtcgclywxwi ye;atmi;aeaom ajrac;uxly; ajrac;
aoq;om;yuazmijxm;&m or sm;uremvraumi;Buygu rromvi'ua&urnjzp
alumi; b0o ice;pmu &&apyg on/

]]aori;u&mo}} yjiwi qi;&ojziaociaeaom vwpa ,muu aori;u
c;r;omatmivyay;vuon/ c;r;omom;aom tcg xoon raociaawmay/ olaom
aoaelapaom tcg aori;uvmac:om;jzpon/ pyjirwpqi aoaelapao;v(i
raoEiao;aomvn; aoaelapygu rnolyz;u ,aeaomvn; aori;vu
rvwajrmuEialumi;u b0to t jriwp&y tjzp oice;pmay;xm;yg on/

p o j z i & c i & & m y j y i r s m ; r a y ; p r ; a e a o m b o i c e ; p m r s m ; o n t r s l ; t p m ; p v y g
 o n / v p & u o b m 0 t o ; o ; \ a u m i ; u u q ; u u r s m ; u a x m u j y x m ; a o m b o i c e ; p m
 r s m ; ? v o m ; w \ a z m u j y e w w a o m o b m 0 u v p j y x m ; a o m b o i c e ; p m r s m ; ? v l b 0
 w ; w u r t w u v l v 0 & , y n m w E i y w o u a e a o m v u e m z , & m t w , z , o i c e ; p m
 r s m ; ? w & m ; o a b m E i q u o , a e a o m o i c e ; p m r s m ; ? v r a & e , y , w i v u e m u i o ; z ,
 o i c e ; p m r s m ; p o n j z i y j y i e m ; a x m i o w \ t u s l ; u & n & , l y ; b o i c e ; p m r s l ; p u
 a y ; p r ; x m ; E i o n u a w & y g o n /

& c i & & m a u s ; v u y j y i r s m ; r t a w ; t j r i

j c l i o ; o y c s u

y j y i o n v o m ; w a y : a y g u v m u w n ; u v l , o a u s ; r E i t l y i a y : x e ; c a o m
 E w a j y m p m a y t E y n m w p & y j y i z p y g o n / y j y i o n u r m 0 ; v w r r w a w u l c & a o m
 t j z p t y ; u r s m ; u n p 0 n w i ; r o m ; p 0 i ; w i a j y m l u m ; & m r p w i c o n t w i ; j z p & y w p c
 t a w t u w p c ? p w c p m ; r w p c u p w 0 i p m ; z , Z m w v r ; q i j y x m ; o n u a w & y g o n /
 x l j y i v u ; o r w a c w t q u q u a j y m l u m ; c a o m y j y i r s m ; o n E w a j y m p m a y r w p q i
 t u & m j z i r w w r ; w i x m ; a o m p m a y t q i o a j y m i ; v o m ; l y ; v l i t a l u m i ; t & m y i ;
 o n v n ; z l j z l ; w ; w u v m u m * E 0 i p m a y t q i o w u v r ; E i c y g o n / x l a l u m i
 b ; b m ; t p 0 t q u v u e m u i o ; c a o m t a v t x r s m ; u Z m w v r ; q i a z m j y x m ; a o m
 j z p & y r s m ; o n & & m y j y i r s m ; t j z p , a e w i & y w n a e j c i ; y i j z p y g o n / & c i & & m y j y i r s m ;
 w i a w & a o m Z m w v r ; t a l u m i ; t & m r s m ; o n t r s l ; t p m ; p v i v a y o n / & c i a u ; v u
 y j y i r s m ; w i & c i a u ; v u u t a j c j y x m ; a o m Z m w v r ; r s m ; ? a u s ; v u a e v r o b m 0 u
 a z m u s l ; x m ; a o m Z m w v r ; r s m ; ? v , , m v y i e ; c i r a y : v m a o m Z m w v r ; r s m ; ? a u ; v u
 o b m 0 E i j z p & y q e ; r s m ; u a z m j y x m ; a o m Z m w v r ; r s m ; p o n j z i t a l u m i ; t & m p ? Z m w v r ;
 p u a w & y g o n /

& c i & & m y j y i r s m ; r & a o m o w e i & o b o i c e ; p m r s m ; r m v n ; p v i v a y o n /
 & c i y j y i r s m ; w i a w & a o m o a b m o ; E i y ' u m o ; w n y ? y i p r ; p u x m ; y g u r a u m i ; q ; 0 g ;
 & e r u m u , E i y ? a o q ; o r s m ; r u h w y g u t a w m i E p q , w c e v i & y ? e u w y n m ?
 * g x m r E m e w j z i w j z i a v m u a u m i ; u s l ; j y v y E i y p o n j z i & c i & & m y j y i r s m ; r t & y a ' o
 t a c : t a 0 : r s m ; u A [o w t j z p o & & y g o n / t c p a & ; y j y i r s m ; r o * g & & o ? w & m ; " r j z i
 q i j c i z , t a l u m i ; r s m ; u t a j c c x m ; a o m y j y i r s m ; r o E & o ? o e m ; p z , y j y i r s m ; r u & P m
 & o ? a l u m u & U z , y j y i r s m ; r b , m e u & o ? p u q y z , y j y i r s m ; r 0 b p & o ? & & i z ,
 y j y i r s m ; r 0 & & o ? & , & i z , y j y i r s m ; r [m o & o p o n j z i & o p u a y ; p r ; E i y g o n /

& c i & & m y j y i r s m ; w i a w & a o m Z m w a q m i t z U r s m ; r m v n ; o & y a y : í x r v y g o n /
 v t r s l ; r s l ; p w t a x a x q o n t w i ; a v m b u ; a o m ? v r v n v n j z m ; w w a o m ?
 r m , m r s m ; a o m ? y s i ; a o m ? & p r ; o w & a o m ? c e t m ; j u ; a o m ? j z w x ; Ó P a u m i ; a o m ?

&omaomponjzi p&uobm0to;o;u Zmwaqmip&utrt&mrsm;Ei , Owazmjyxm;
ygon/ w&pmeyjyirsm;wiaw&aom Zmwaumib0 to;o;rmvn; vuemqijciz ,
b0oice;pmrsm;u azm u sl;xm;Eiygon/

&ci&&myjyirsm;on &ciwi;&i;om;rm;w\ , Oau;rtartEpwp&yyijzpyg
on/ yjyirsm;rwpci &ciwi;&i;om;w\ "avp&u? , Oau;rx;p? vrquqa&?
u;u , , lunr? taw;tac? toynmtqitwe;u r;armi;x;jyxm;ygon/ pmay
taeEiunyguvn; &ci&&myjyirsm; \ Zmwvr;wijyit&ntao;on tqitwe;
jrirm;aomallumi azmajza&ououomru totjriA[owEi cpm;r&ouygay;pr;
aeon yjyipmaywp&yyijzpygon/

e*;

&ci&&myjyirsm; \ x;jcm;csur;rm Zmwvr;tq;wi]]tule0w/q;ygy? rq;
ao;ygu ewom;? ewor;w quajmygav}} [aomrmwr;xm;av&onu awU&ygon/
&civrs;w\ yajymr"avwpc[rw , Eiygon/ &ci&&myjyirsm;on acw
tququuyi ay:aygucaomalumi ori;tp0tvm onvn; lu;rm;vygon/
i , & , owltm; wu<uE;um;apíu;owum; qijciww&m;ym;rm;&apon &ci&&m
yjyirsm;on acw\alu;r[vn; qEiygon/ wi;&i;om;vrs;w\ yjyirsm;on
jrermmaytwu wpwywptm;taeji taxmutuiyEiz , &ayon/ &ci&&myji
rsm;on &civrs;w\ vra&"avx;pEi , Oau;rwu azmxwxm;aom &&m
tarEprsm;yijzpygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

puE? t&i/ (1965)l &ciwceyjiyirsm;l &ciom;u;pmay? &euelrU/

puE? t&i/ (1965)l &ciyao0wrm;l yxrw? o"lriyEywu? &euel

(1976)l wi;&i;om; , Oau;r"avx;prsm;l &cijrermq& , vp vrp0ygw A[aumrw
Xmecilyl

(1984)l &ciyine , / jynolaumip? jyne , jzpp0ori;? ori;u@l yxrw/

(1989)l &&myjyipmaypmwr;rm;l yxrw/ pmayArme? &euelrU/

(1989)l &&myjyipmaypmwr;rm;l 'w , w/ pmayArme? &euelrU/

v? 0;? vx/ (1965)l &ciau;vuyjiyirsm;l bu;ym;a&yEywu? rEav;l

v? 0;? vx/ (1964)l &ciyjiyirsm;l 'w , w? bu;ym;a&yEywul

v? 0;? vx/ (1966)l &ciyjiyirsm;l ww , w? bu;ym;a&yEywul

v? 0;? vx/ (1968)l &ciyjiyirsm;l pwww? bu;ym;a&yEywul

cicix;\ jrtru}} 0w&nr Zmwvr;zew;r twwynmuavvmjci;

qvmbox*;

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on jrernpmaye,y,vm 0w&nu@wiyg0iaom cicix;\rtru
0w&nr Zmwvr;zew;rtwwynmu avvmwijyvaom &n&,cuizpygon/
cicix;\ rtru0w&nu tavvmctjzpowrwí Zmwvr;\ t*g&yrs;?
Zmwvr;zew;r en;emrsm;zi qe;ppavvmxm;yg on/ pma&oto;jy\xm;aom
Zmwvr;zew;r en;emrsm;Ei rtru0w&n\ Zmwvr;jzpxe; w;wuvmyu
awl&&yg on/ 0wipmayavvmorsm;twu taxmu tujyleirn[xijrirygon/

e'ge;

pmayteynm yoPmersm;pm&onteu 0w&n on pmzwy&owtwu avmu
obm0rsm;u owjy\rvmaply; Epoujci;cpm;rEitw b0totjri rsm;w;ym;apEiyy
on/ cicix;\ rtru0w&nr Zmwvr;zew;rtwwynmu avvmwijy&mwi
Zmwvr;\ tpwtyi;rsm;t v u to;jy\xm;aom zew;rtwwynmrsm;alumi
pw0ipm;z, ? Epoupliz, jzpvmyu qe;ppwijyxm;yg on/

0w&n\ t*g&ywpcjzpaomZmwvr; zew;rtwwynmu azmxwwijy&mwi
Zmwy\;yi; zew;rtwwynm? ZmwE;yi; zew;rtwwynm? Zmwwuyi; zew;r
twwynm? Zmwxwyi;zew;rtwwynm? Zmwqi;yi; zew;rtwwynm? Zmwor;
yi; zew;rtwwynmpon Zmwvr;tpwtyi;rsm;ü pma&oto;jy\xm;aom zew;r
twwynm en;emrsm;Ei Zmwvr;jzpxe; w;wurrsm;u avvmwijyrnjzpygon/

t ce; 1

cicix;\ twlywt u:0;

pma&q&mr cicix;\ trn½;rm a':x;x;jzpygon/ jri;clrwí (1962) cEp?
'Zibmv(17)&uaeü tz0;n\tra':jrwíwr ar;zmcyg on/ wuov0iwe;u
(1979)cEpwi atmijricyg on/ rEav;wuovr (1985) cEpwi "mwaA' t x;jy\zi
oybU&&y;? (1987) cEpwi txuwe;a&ae vurwu&&cyg on/ 1989cEpwi
rw&m\rlve, ? ayguawmaus;&m? rvwe;ausmi;wi q&mr t jzpw m0exr;aqmicygon/
(1993) cEp? {lyvxw a&0wrrer*Zi;wi jlye;yeyg&ap}} 0w\wzi pmaye, opwi

* a'guwm? vuaxmuuxu? jrernpmXme? rau;wuov

0ia&mucygon/ (2001)cEpwi pma&q&mae0i;jriEi vuxycly; t vyrtem; , c
ygon/

0wvawm a&yq;we;x;vbur, ? ye;um0wre? rtru? crn;bu? q;ye;ac
o, b, uEi ay&u vyem;awmi;qí? awmri;or; [aom 0w&n (6)tytygt0i
0w/w? 0w/vw? 0w&n? aqmi;yq;? &opmwr;rm; a&om;clly; ppaygi; ty'(300)
au_{sm} a&om;xwa0ly;jzpygon/

pma&q&mcicix; \]]bwm&? wpce;ap;? yq;r}} paom0w/wrsm;on *ye
bmom? *smrebom? t*vbybmomrm;ol jyeqly;jzpygon/ (2003) cEpwi zupr;
ur;awmi a&0w/wrsm;jzi trsk;om;pmayqu &&clly; (2007) cEpwi tnm o? tnmom;
ueraqrsk;rm; &oaqmi;yq;rm;jzi xe;azmia';&i;pmayq? (2009) cEpwi *sk;ye
r*Zi;0w&njzi a&tjr'awpmayqu &&cygon/ cicix; \ vu&m tcllu ½y&iEi
A', Zmwum; &uu;ly;jzpon/ wpcslu vu&mrm;rm &y&ixwvya&rm;u 0, , ly;
jzpygon/

q&mcicix;on ciye;pma&q&m ae0i;jriEi tw rav;&m;Eii? pumyEii?
xi;Eii? uarm'; , m;Eiirm;wiyvyaom pmaya [majmyrm;ol om;a&muí pmayrm;
a [majmcygon/ , ct cgcicye;jzpo pma&q&mae0i;jri? or;az;az;ae0i;jri
wEi tw rEav;rlwí aexivsu&ly; pmayrm;uquvu a&om;jy/pvu&ygon/

Ä 2-12-1017 aewi q&mcicix;Ei awuqar;jre;cygon/

t ce; 2

cicix; \]]rtru}} 0w&n Zmwvr; tu0;ei &n& , cu

cicix; \]]rtru}}0w/wi tce;aygi; (36)ce; &ygon/ uveacw (1920) r
vwvya&acw0;tx umvaemucu, í jri;ice, ? aZmicr;ue;&mo;u;or;
rtru \ talumi;u Zmwvr;qí zew;xm;jci;jzpygon/ rtruon aZmicr;ue;
o;u;0;omxeEi a':ye;½wr ar;zm;cojzpygon/ rtruu ar;zm;onaewi
tracgi;&i;& qyom;z;yi;u; pwiz;yi;ci;? &m0;ua&ce;aeaom aomua&ue;u;rm
r;a&rm;jzi jynv\om;jci;? tr0i;twi;& yarmwuay:wi iuq;wpaumivmem;
cici;pon x;jcm;rerwrsm;jzpcygon/ 0;omxe\ yxrtraxmiEi&aom om;
armijrwomrm jri;lcwiau;mi;aeon/ tpuzpouoiay;í rtrurm pma&pmzw
wwygon/ rtruon zci\wz;ai? rci\wrrvt? ñi;w\om;rm;jzpaom
z;ww? z;u;? oi, ci;tazmau;0wEi ouou0e;0e; aexi&o; jzpon/

rtru q, EpEpt&, wi &mutv\wpcü iuaym&u zupr;ur;awmiu
uici&aom re;racsmujriaw&on/ xtcerpí zupr;ur;awmiui jzpvaomqE
jyi;jycon/ ur;awmiuir*r;jzL wm;jrpaeonlum;r ur;awmiu Zwtwi;0ivyp

on[trruontx tp̃u;ron/ &y&mta& vuraE;aom rtruurbEpyg;u
i ,vii ,r ,m;r[waomalumi ur;awmiuirjzpEionu rnour zirajym&ulu
ay/ &mtvlwpcwi "m;jy0iwu í &om;wp0;aoq;caom ema&alumi oma&u
aemuqway;&on x;pt≺jrrm ur;awmiuirjzpc&onu rtruawjricyg
on/

ausmi;wu&i; e ,cslawmvea&wiyg0iaeaom armijrwomu vuujzpo
wp&mw n;om;omatmiEi rtruxwArmtpn;t&twu tvlcon/ rtruu
a&vuau muEp&u rremrna&x;xm;aom vuuiy0gjzi xyíay;vuon/
omatmiu ypn;uomay;ly; y0guor;xm;con/ om;rm;u ur;awmiuirsm;Eiom
ay;pm;vo omatmi\rcia':pa&u y0gujriaw\&m rnontcgr ur;awmiui
rjzpEiaomrtruu omatmiEioabmrwEialumi; &io;pmvma&muajymqcon/
rtrurm&u&ly; ararsm;om;ontx pwxucygon/ trm;twuomatmiu
rtruxpma&í awmi;yeon/ rtruupmuyí w&m;prcvv\i awmi;ye&e bu;awm
pa&t;ajymon/ bu;awmpa&rmueawmyEi vma&muawmi;ye&p0wi yvyu
tv&aeao marmijrwom a&muaeonuo om;on/ rumrjri;lcryvyrm;a&muvm
on/ rtruubu;awmpa&alumi[xicygon/ trtzwtri;vmcsewi traxmip
\wm0eon rtrutay: usa&muvmcygon/ xjyipm;0waea& luywn;aelluao m
au;&m vxuyg ay;ur;unon/ 0iair&aomre;uav;rm; 0iai&&etwuvn;
&uue;piu cslxivyuicon/

&uue;xnrsm;u jri;jcolom;oi;½; armijrwom\ oi ,ci;Eia&orm;
ausmi;q&muajyor;Eiawq&mr z;pmzucluygon/ rtruvl'ge;aom &mpmoi
ausmi;wi ciye;onuajyor;upmoion/ rtruon q&muawmtjzp &m\
av;pm;ryg xyqi&con/ rtrurm or;0;u ,0ev ,p0 e ,cslawmvea&qie&
uajyor;Ei armijrwomawmccluon/ vwvya&&aomtcg armijrwomu tp;&
tycslaya&wi 0ia&mucaomvn; uajyor;rm &ya&&ma&rm;uom 0;p;aqmi&uc
ygon/

or;Epa ,muym;p;c&m or;bu;rtrrriu ur;awmiuijzp&e rtruu ar(mre;
con/ rtrrriu jri;lcoyíausmi;xm;um ynmwwjzpapcygon/ rbEpyg;Ei
rvtwq;yg;ly;csewi rtruvLxm;aom pmoi ausmi;rm r;avmion/ ui;orm;wu
rtruuppr;&m roumz ,vpr;on bu;awmpa&\wjzpaen/ omatmiEi a&r
wu pmoi ausmi;topu aqmuvlciawmi;&m rtruucg;cg;o;o; jii;qevwyg
on/

vwvya&&ly;aemu uajyor;on uejrleprsm;eitw awmcom;jyeygon/
armijrwomu &euetp;&tzwi Avrl;wm0exr;aqmiaeozi rtru\or;i,
rtrciu &euewiac:xm;on/ rtrrriu vn; &euewi wuovwu&e pp0
on/ rtrrriirm acsmarmvyontji wuovwu&rnjzpí bu;awmpa&\ajr;?

omatni\or;re\omxu tppomveaeon/ rtrurm or;rtrrriu ur;awmiui
jzp&eaocmaejzi \u;awmpa&u tEi&,Eiawmrn ta&;twuaw;í auieyae
on/

x&ur;wi yarmwuxuu iuq;\x;ouum;&on/ touav;q,
aust&, rtru\ue;rma&rmvn; wpwptm;en;vmon/ armjrwomx ze;qu
&etwu jri;collapvwvuaom rtrrirmvn; cpoEic;&mvuom;on/ rtrrri
r&ojzi \u;awmpa&\ajr;re\omu ur;awmiuijzpvmon/ zupr;ur;awmiui
jzp&e wpouwmywv; apmic&aomrtru tz &eo \ajr;uur;awmiuirn tjzpu
vurcEiatnijzp&on/ reom\ 0wpm;jyiqiyowi;rm;Ei tvlqi;oaowu
rtrurmum;ae&on/ xtc&ewiawmcaeon uajyor;q;yg;om;on owi;u
lum;oc&ygon/ yarmwuay:wi Em;cnav\m&u;jzi rtrub0 tq;owvuon/
ema&;&v\iom&;u aem uqway;&on &mx;p&onjzpí reomvn; vmb0;vum
ur;awmiui jzpcir&awmay/

rtruaoq;ly;aemu tracgi;½;& qyom;z;yi\B;u;rm yy&ly;aom;on/
iurn;\u;wpaumivn; qyom;z;yi&x acgi;puvsuaoaeon/ rtru\
tr0i;uz;wwEiaus;0wu apmia&muaexiluon/ rtruq;yg;ly; (12)Epausm
umaomtcg rtrrionor;rtrpEi &mojyevmon/ rtru0ipm;on[xirw
c&aomrtrpu &mtvlrzupr; ur;awmiu;u, vmum yarmwuatmuwi 0uxm;
on/ yarmwua[mí;\u; ly\um;on/ rtrpt&,a&muaom rtruuo &yacsm
pwoabmjzlon/ rtru\&uue;vyie; v,,mvyie;rm;uyg 0;p;vyaqmicyg
on/

rtru0w\&n&,curm tnmau;vu\ "avwpcjzpaom &y&mu\$uoa&
aqmi zupr;ur;awmi ui&onqvmbu wez;xm;ruarmaom rtru\pwEv;u
azmu\$;wiyy; wpzupe;a&muaom pve;criron aluuz,jzp&yq;ei Bulaw
Eialumi; o&apvjci;jzpygon/

t ce; 3

cicix;\]]rtru}} 0w\&nr Zmwvr;zew;r twwynm

0wzew;oon vlabmi? v\avmur apwemoua&muraom talumi;wu
vtrsm;pw0ipm;pmzw½&e Zmwvr;qi zew;wiyav&ygon/ Zmwvr;¹u

&y&i? jyZmw? 0w\ponwwi yg0iaomtjzptyu talumi;t&m
tptq;/ Zmwalumí;/²

¹ plot

² jrerm t b"ne? 1991? 131/

[jrermt b"mewi ziqxm; ygon/ pma&; o \&n&, c u u azmaqmi&e Zmwvr;?
Zmwuursm; pepwucswqu? pp0xm; jci; u q&mwuw; u

Zmwvr; [aoma0g [m& \ t u s 0; t"yg , rrr Zmwtrzljci;? Zmwuursm;
pp0jci;? Zmwvr; i , rsm; xnoi; jci;? t cwt qurat mi jylyip&ixm;
jci; pon trwu 0wa&; q&mu tuucly; aem u xyptwi; a&; om;
azmjy&mwio; aom t"yg , u qciygon/ ³

[azmjycygon/ xlaumi Zmwvr; [on pmzwy&oww t m; qaqmizr; pm; Eiap&e
v t aumi; r taumi; t q;? talumi; t u s; wu obm0uat mi pp0xm; jci; jzpygon/
]zew;} [aoma0g [m& u jrermt b"mewi]]prjy\vyon}}⁴ [ziqxm; ojzi
zew; ron prjy\vyryijzpygon/ 0wZmwvr; zew; r twwynmeiywou í
q& mri; ausm u

wijyvaom taumi; t&m a&; ½ vaom0; wncs u u zwoemo Epou
vucvmz , jzpat mi pma&; q&mu zew; t m; xwji; yijzpygon/ ⁵

[&i; jyxm; on/ Zmwvr; zew; r twwynm [on zew; o \ apwemu azmaqmi
ay; rn Zmwvr;? Zmwuursm; u pmzwy&oww epou vmat mi qaqmi pn; &; on
Zmwvr; qijci; twwynmyijzpygon/ 0wzew; oon avmu uyazmzew; & mwi
Zmwy; ⁶? ZmwE; ⁷? Zmwwu ⁸? Zmw xw ⁹? Zmwqi; ¹⁰? Zmwor; ¹¹ [aom Zmwvr; \
tpwtyi; rsm; jzi a&; om; wijy luygon/ xoabmu q&maZm* s u

Zmwvr; qionEipyv; 0; í pmzwo \ ovaZmu 0w t q; x &ioe
aeat mi tjzptyuwu v n; aumi;? Zmwaqmi \ trt&mwu
v n; aumi; Zmwvr; en; pep ig; czipn; v; wnaqmi&ygon/ pmzwo
ü tpue0; uyi0w \ a& \ t v m; t v m u ar m re; vaom qEjzpat mi jy&
wwygon/ p tyi; u ZmwyEuyi; [ac: on/ ovaom t&eu t jriq;
o \ a&muat mijyaom tyi; u t xwyi; (Climax) [ac: on/ xlaem u
ovaZmu t&et m; aysmat mijy \ u&ygon/ p tyi; u Zmwqi; yi; [
ac: on/ aem u q; ovaZm uece; at mijy \ vy&on/ p tyi; u t uyi;
[ac: on/ t uyi; o \ a&mu aom t c g Zmwvr; on o t v v y; q; om;
ly [oEion/ ¹²

³ wuw;? 1982? 50/

⁴ jrermpm t z? 1991? 244/

⁵ ri; ausm? 1979? 130/

⁶ exposition

⁷ starting

⁸ complication, Rising action

⁹ climax

¹⁰ denouement , Falling action

¹¹ ending , Resolution

¹² aZm*? 1977? e'ge;/

wijyxm;yg on/ zew;ow on y&owu qaqmiEi&Ei b0t o tjrirm; ay;pr;
Ei&E Zmwvr;zew;r en;emrsm;u t o;jyav&allumi;u pmayynm&i tAeu A Short
History of English Literature pm tywi

0w&nwi pma&q&u trs;om;? trs;or;Zmwaqmirms;\p&u ta&
tci; jzpyuaom tceum vEi pwvly&m;z ,cpm;rrsm; yw0e;u;io
wijyerrsm; tay:tajccí pum;ajyzi Zmwvr;q i azmijEi yg on/¹³

[qyg on/ rm u&abm vweu The Anatomy of The Novel pm tywi

0w&n \ yira&p;on o&yrep may[ajymaumi;ajymEiaom vn;v b0
tawt iur sm;u t u s ,w0iazmjyaejci; xuyí ta&mitao;pviaom
urm u;o aysm&iz , yaqmiay;aejci;jzpon/¹⁴

[qyg on/ xalumivlavmur talumi;rs;u 0wzew;o \pwu;jzi azmu&sl;&m
wi pmzwy&oww \ Ev;om;u qaqmi? pn;&Ei&E v b0yuwjzpp0twi; ra&
om;b tEynmrsm;jzi zew;av&allumi;o&ygon/ Zmwvr;zew;r en;emrsm;Ei
pyv;0;í q&mO;jrilunu

Zmwvr;uzlwae&mr m allumi;u&sl;tavsm u Zmwvr;jzpay:jci;? aem u
wpcu pma&wo \ vtycut& Zmwvr;u c&sl;au ,jci; qwmr&sl;&
w,/ t'awm t'vZmwvr;u c&sl;au ,wae&mr m obm0tavsm u
c&sl;vauv r&wtcg uawm rawmwqjzpr wuqirqwaem? obm0
r [ww en;vr;awu o;ly;awm Zmwvr;uc&sl;au ,wwluw ,/
obm0u;rm wuqirqwm &ei yg w ,/¹⁵

[wijyxm;on/ cicix;u]rtru}}0wZmwvr;u zew;&mwi i ,p0u u m;z;
caom ru(a':u) \ talumi;u]ausm&jy í pwu;rs;Eiaygi;pyum]rtru}} 0wtjzp
zew;cici;jzpygon/)¹⁶ [0w \ trmpmwi a&om;xm;yg on/

3? 1/ Zmwys;yi;zew;r t wwyn m

Zmwys;yi;wi 0wzew;o on pmzwy&ow \ pwEv;u pn;&qaqmiEi&E
t m;xwav&ygon/ q&mwi oe;0;u

Zmw tziyi;onZmwvr;\ yxr0;q;aom tjzptyu jzply; Zmwvr;a&u
o quvu p;q i;om;ap&etwu vUaqmc;uwpcv n;jzpon/

¹³ Evans, 1974, 206.

¹⁴ Boulton, 1975, 13.

¹⁵ jrilun? 0;? 1992? 72/

¹⁶ cicix;? 2013? C/

Zmwaumirm;tm; pwiazmxwjo&etwu zew;jci;rwquay;jci;
vn;jzpon/¹⁷

[ziqxm;yg on/ xalumiZmwy;yi;on Zmwvr;utpy; aomtyi;? pwirwqu
ay;aom tyi;yi;pygon/ rtru0w\ Zmwy;yi;wi

]]aZ ,w 5021 ou&Z 'C 1282 cEp <ui 194 o& , ua0g [m& rmo
wywv\w 12&u 1ae npu elEm? jrrm 4cw; tcslEm ywly9 AZem
7ly9c&m uvurepr; 1aE a [m&w 1 lwi 1 e0ivu euw 12v 3yw
5vwm wuvu v\uxlEm\ wor& euum; ruo'w,yw
wrwaomtcg &wemo;yg; 0;xwií or;&wem zm;on emr rtru
t ou 120½napaom \yapaom}}¹⁸

Zmwjzi t"uZmwaqmi rtruei pmzwy&owu rwquay;xm;yg on/ rtru\
rom;ptalumi;u y&owwtm; toay;jci;jzi Zmwuy;xm;on/

3? 2/ Zmwel;yi; zew;r twwynm

Zmwvr;t*g&yrm;wi wpcjzpaom ZmwE;yi;zew;rwi Zmwvr;p;qi;Ei&e
y&owwu vaqmrjzpapon pw0ipm;rruv;jzi qaqmiEi&e zew;av&yg on/
q&mwiw , u 0wla&en; t ajcypm tywi

0w\upíá&;om;&mü 0wzwo \pwu E;qay;&e(or [w) 0wzwo \
½xü (bmawrm;quly;awm jzp0;rmygv r) [aomocipw (or [w)
0w\uquí zwvaomqE? pwuay:vmatni E;qay;&jci;on
0w\á&aom uavmi&i\ wm0e [vn;qEi\ /¹⁹

[&i;jyxm;yg on/ 0;omxeu or;i ,av;u rtru [trnay;vuon tcsewi
v\yp;alum;? aumi;uily\oEi r;a&'va[moeuso Zmwuon ZmwE;ce;jzpyg
on/ tEpwc , re;jci;Eipyv0;í a'guwmarmiarnin\ u

tao;pwjc , re;curm; ryg0iaom0w\wp'y'on 0w\au mi;wp'y'
r [wac/ tao;pwjc , re;curm; ryg&aom 0w\ont q&aom
ig; oavmuuiucm , vuly;aemu use&paomwpEiwavon/²⁰

[í &i;jyxm;yg on/ rtru ar;zm;onnwi

t racgi;½;rm Epaygi;rsm;pmryib tyiríaeon qyom;z;yiü;
xnupí ar;u\iaom&e\rm;jzi tyiawjvmjci;jzpon/ wpaqmi;wi;

¹⁷ wioe;0;? 2003? 24/

¹⁸ cici x;? 2013? 1/

¹⁹ wiw , ? 1974? 58/

²⁰ arniarnin\ (a'guwm)? 1994? 21-22/

v; a&ce;ae caom &mO;be;u;au smi;&yu aomua&ue;u; nwi;ci;
 r;a&aw tijnv\om;con/ t cgr[w r;&moe;ly;aemu aumi;ui
 wpciv;u , a&mijzi vi;ui;om;con/ vqwwpjcr;yuav;on
 yi r;ruci u , xijycon/ olaom yarmwuay:rm iuq;wpaumi
 owcevmem;aecon t jzpuawm rnowpO;wpa , mur\ rocygav/²¹

[tEpwjc , re;a&zljci;on erwaumi;rm;jzi ar;zm;otjzp ay:vixi&m;apyg
 on/ olaom [on qeui buteuy t"yg , quorEu o;í yarmwuay:wi
 iuq;wpaumi vmem;on raumi;aomerwq;u wpa , mur\roaumi;jzi pma&o
 uomoci , um zew;xm;ygon/ x;jcm;xi&m;aom twwerwaumi;rm;pmjzi zm;jri
 vmon rtruwi vroorouyyg vmaom llurm q;rm;vn;&aealumi;u buwi
 erwjyzew;rjzpygon/ a&uqurnZmwvr;twu ovpwuvlaqm E;qay;Eiaom
 zew;rjzpygon/ t"uZmwaqm irtruon uaumi;jci;? uq;jci; erwwuaqmi í
 ar;zm;vmotjzp pmzwy&oww ½jrio;oyapvon pma&o \&n& , cuEi
 apwemujriomapon ZmwE;jzpygon/ Zmwvr;zew;rwi ½axmion ta&ygon/
 q&mO; te;aom u

pma&q&mu taumi;t&mwpc t jzpty;uwpccu a&om;wiy&mü
 pma&q&mu , wi ajymjyaeontaet x;m;jzi a&ontcgvn;a&on/
 Zmwaqmiwu ajymontaet x;m;jzi a&ontcgvn;a&on/
 Zmwaumir [wou ajymontaet x;m;jzi a&ontcgvn;a&on/²²

[í½axmi²³ \ t"yg , u &i;jyxm;ygon/ xlaumi½axmion pma&o&ywnaom
 taet x;m;jzpon/ ½axmitrsk; tpm;rm;u q&matmioi;u

Owwi ½axmiav;rs; ujym;on [pmaynm&irms; tuunluuygon/
 , i;wrm(1) tm;v;o(2) ueowo(3) u , wiajym (4) "r"lme wijzpyg
 on/²⁴

[ícjcm;jyxm;ygon/ xlaumi½axmiwi tm;v;o? ueowo? u , wiajym? "r"lme
 &alumi;awl&&ygon/ ZmwE;ce;üZmwvr; \ tv m;tv mupma&o oci , xm;aom
 tm;v;o½axmijzi zew;xm;ygon/

3? 3/ Zmwwuyi; zew;r twwynm

Zmwvr; \ ta&ygaomtpwtyi; wpcjzpon Zmwwuyi;wi Zmwvr;u
 zllz;w;ap&e zew;av&ygon/ q&maZm*;u Zmwwuyi; \ oabmobmOu

²¹ cici x;? 2013? 10/

²² te;aom? 1981? 65-66/

²³ point of view

²⁴ atmioi;? 1994? 176/

twuyi;on 0wwi yEuconr t xwyi;tx &&rn tyi;jzpon/
 x tyi;wi tjzptyur_{sm};u_{vn}; qeui bu tit_m;pEpc\ toi u
 aqmiapv;u t xwyi;tx t_m;lyi_{om};u [eu o&yazm&rn r [wyg
 avm/ x t_{cg} t xwoabm tao;pm;r_{sm};u Bu_k;lum;Bu_k;lum;x n í
 vn;aumi;? tjzptyu topt op jzpay:vmyw/u azmjy&mwi
 wpcgwp& t&yerwjyu ux n í vn;aumi;? wpcgwp& jryu ux n í
 vn;aumi; 0wizwoü ovaZm&ioeaeatmi t_m;jznay;av&onu
 awl&ygon/²⁵

[&i;jyx_m;ygon/ Zmwwuyi;wi pmzwy&ow\ t_m&p;pur_{sm};u&&ap&e tEpw
 jc , re;r_{sm};? jryuur_{sm};? erwjuur_{sm};? wuqir_{sm};? alumi;u_{sk};cwqur_{sm};? llurm
 q;0ijci;r_{sm};? t_m;lyi_{ir}_{sm};? vnuur_{sm};jzi zew;av&onuaw&ygon/ jryuu²⁶
 Eipyv;0;í qijzLule;atmioe;u

allumi;u_{sk};qupyr jzpp0wi t qu tpyr&atmi tu_{sk};ujzpap talumi;
 ujzpap u , 0ux_m;ly; aemur&ww&u jyeazma&jci;jzi pmzwou
 t t_m;oiapaomen;jzpon/ allumi;u_{sk};qux_m;ontjiyi jzpp0xr
 ui;quwpcu jzwx_m;aom en;jzpon/ xojryu ux nx_m;jci;jzi
 Zmw&ejrivmapEion/²⁷

[azmjyx_m;ygon/ jryuuji zew;jci;on pmzwy&owu Zmwvr;tay: pw0ipm;
 r t_m&p;purw jriwuapeiygon/ Zmwvr;zew;rwi wuqir²⁸u_{vn}; o;av
 &ygon/ q&mr rr;ajru

'lavmuu wyx_m;ly;v'i 'lavmuxu tloqe;lu , vr;armz ,
 jzpatmizew;x_m;aom 0w/Zmwvr;wi wuqir_{sm};on yí_{sm};jym;
 on/ yíqe;lu , on/ wuqirtay:wirwní Zmwaqmi\ llurm q;
 0ijci;u zew; , Eiouo Zmwaqmi\ llurm q;rvwajrmujci;?
 uaumi;jci;wu zew; , Eion/ wuqiruo;í t_{cwt}qu rap&e
 Ei yí½yax;vmap&Ei zew; , Eion/²⁹

[wijyx_m;ygon/ xalumiwuqiron Zmwvr;tajymi;t v? t_c_{sk};tautwu
 ta&ygaomen;jzpygon/ 0w/Zmwvr;uzew;&mwi jzp&y_{sm};u tu_{sk};oi? talumi;
 oi cwqu&av&ygon/ , i;oabmu q&matmioi;u

²⁵ aZm*? 2009? 199/

²⁶ hidden Fact

²⁷ atmioe;? qijzLule;? 1998? t_{rm}/

²⁸ coincidence

²⁹ r;ajr? r? 2009? 85/

Zmwv;r;qonrm Zmwaqmiw\ b0vr;alumi;? o t j r i u (rar\m vib)
ajymi;v om;apon t j z p t y u r ;m ;u alumi;u s ;q u p y a z m j y x m ;a o m
j z p p 0 w p c [q c s i y g o n /³⁰

[w i j y x m ;y g o n / x l a u m i t a l u m i ;q u e n ;o n t a l u m i ;c j z p & y w i t u s ;q u
j z p & y u q u v u z e w ;j c i ;? t u s ;q u j z p & y u t a l u m i ;c j z p & y j y e v n z e w ;j c i ;w
j z p y g o n / l u r m q ;0 i j c i ;e n ;j z i v n ; Z m w & e w u a t m i z e w ;a v & y g o n / q & m
a t m i o i ;u

r j r i o m a o m u w & m ;t a l u m i ;a l u m i ? a b ;q ;u ;r s m ;u s a & m u j c i ;a l u m i
Z m w a q m i w \ b 0 v r ;a l u m i ; a j y m i ;o m ;& o n o a b m j z p y g o n /³¹

[í q x m ;o j z i Z m w v r ;u c s ;a u a j y m i ;v v v \ i a o m v n ;a u m i ;? Z m w a q m i w \
b 0 v r ;a l u m i ;u a j y m i ;v v v \ i a o m v n ;a u m i ; l u r m q ;0 i j c i ;e n ;u o ;a v & a l u m i ;
a w l & y g o n / Z m w w u y i ;z e w ;r w i t m ;l y \ i r r s m ;o n y g 0 i & l r j z p y g o n / q & m r i ; , a 0
u t m ;l y \ i r o n t a & ;y g o n o a b m u

Z m w v r ;[o n Z m w a q m i t c i ;c i ;a o m v n ;a u m i ;? Z m w a q m i E i
t a & ;u p w p c c a o m v n ;a u m i ; q e u s i b u t i t m ;p E p c l y i & m r a y : x e ;
v m w w a o m o a b m j z p y g o n /³²

[í & i ;v i ;x m ;o j z i t m ;l y \ i r r s m ;z e w ;í Z m w v r ;t a y : p m z w y & o w w \ p w 0 i p m ;
a p & e q a q m i a v & a l u m i ; o & & y g o n / v n u u³³ o ;j c i ;o n v n ; Z m w w u y i ;
Z m w & e w u a p & e z e w ;r y g o n / v n u u u q & m r r ;a j r u

v n u u \ o a b m r m p m a & ;o o n Z m w a q m i e i j z p & y r s m ;u q u p y z e w ;
, j c i ;j z i Z m w w u y i ;w i p m z w o \ p w u p n ;& ;q a q m i v m c o n /
p m z w o o n Z m w a q m i r s m ;? j z p & y r s m ;E i t w e p a j r m v u y g a e ¹/₂ ; 0 w \ \
Z m w x w y i ;w i o & r n t a j z u a r \ m v i l u o n / t a j z & m l u o n / v
o b m 0 t a w t l u \ & o p m z w o t a e E i v o b m 0 e i , 0 í j z p E i a c s & a o m
t a j z u r e ;q l u n l u o n / o & m w i 0 w t q ;w i p m z w o a r \ m v i o u o l
r [w b w p r s ;w p z j z p a e o n u x ;x ;j c m ;j c m ;a w l & w w o n / x o
a r \ m v i o v j z p r v m a t m i p m a & ;o u x ;x ;j c m ;j c m ; z e w ;a y ;v u j c i ;u
v n u u [a c : o n /³⁴

[& i ;v i ;x m ;y g o n / x l a u m i v n u u o n p m z w y & o w a r \ m v i r x m ;a o m Z m w u u
t j z p z e w ;x m ;j c i ;j z p y g o n /

³⁰ a t m i o i ;? 1994? 143/

³¹ a t m i o i ;? 1994? 14/

³² r i ; , a 0 ? 1979? 168/

³³ t w i s t

³⁴ r ;a j r ? r ? 2009? 83/

rtruq , epausmwi & m t vlu zupr;ur;awmiui re;racsmu t m;u s pve;
ygon/ trjyea&mua&mucsi; zupr;ur;awmiui \ t&nt^{ci};u rci t m;ar;jre;
on/ a':ye;&u &y&nacsmmajci;? tuipm&waumi;jci;Ei rbrsm;uypn;Opm
jynpjci;w &&rnjzpalumi; jyevnaizlum;con/ olaom

wpcuEpcuawm useao;o , or;&u..tarvn;ooavmu ajymjy&om..
ur;awmiuijzpzu &mua&;omayg..or;u;awm em;vnv^{mr}mygav³⁵

[t c u t c s u useao;alumi;u Zmwaqmi \ tajypum;jzi jryu u t jzpzew;vu
ovaZ^{mr}sm; jzpay:vmapcon/ a&uqurnZmwvr;wi rxirwon t v n t ajymi;
twu toi , wjzpap&e zew;xm;caom jryuu jzpygon/ a':ye;&rm or;av;
rtru u u n i

rtru& , ..onb0mawm or;uav; ur;awmiuijzpci r&Eiawmb;
qwm wpaeaeo v^{mr}mygu , ³⁶

[pwwi;r a&&wvuru&nucon/ rtru t z zupr;ur;awmiuici r&Eijci;
urcijzpo \ pwwi;a&½wyzi Zmwerwjy vu pmzwy&oww t m; ovpw
yr v mapao mya [V jryu u jzi zew;xm;ygon/ xjryu u wi a½u qurn Zwvr;u
zupr;ur;awmiuijzpvao m qEon t "u u aom jy ó emwp&yjzpv^{mr}nu o v e p
v n ;cay;xm; on twu y&wowu y í z r ;pm;Eion/

rtruon t vlyujrily;aem u ur;awmiuir*r;jzLu Zw0iw;um ur;awmi
u v , on [tyrurucygon/ tyruwirtrurm ur;awmiu u i l u n c i r &
alumi;

[rtru&zupr;ur;awmi qom c s x m ; o [m u , r v u & e l a w m v u 0 ,
a&muomy &rmaygat ta&;u;omu zupr;ur;awmi uici&rjzpo m ³⁷

[í Zmwerwu aw&&ygon/ Zmwerwsm;u xnoi;jci;jzi ovpwsm;Ei a&u q u
jzpay:v^{mr}rn Zmwvr; \ t v m ; t v m u x u o e p m a r m r e ; a p y g o n /

armijrwomu Erav;rtru u zupr;ur;awmiy t ½yuav;vyay;con/
rtru u ur;awm i t &yav;u aylyu í av m u v r ; a e p 0

onrwi tarat m o u t v e w l u m ; l u m ; v u & o n / rtru . n n ;
vuxu ur;awmi ½yu t c c v u p r ; ³⁸

[aoma':ye;&u l u r ; w r ; a o m a v o j z i w m ; j r p v u o n w u q i r u z e w ; í r t r u
r m zupr;ur;awm i t ½y y i u i c i r & a l u m i ; Z m w e r w j y x m ; y g o n /

³⁵ cici x;? 2013? 19/

³⁶ cici x;? 2013? 19/

³⁷ - , i; -? 24/

³⁸ - , i; -? 28/

rtruu ur;awmic; o rlunoe; u zupr; ur;awmitm; uiilunciay;&m
uilunrnjy/p0wi vn; wuqirwpcu o; xm; ygon/

rtru[eyiraqmieiyg/ ur;awmiwionpitem; w;uyvuon/
vuEpzuu qexwly; aylawmrn[etjivurm yi.rtru..
vm..vm.. nn;taz ar;aeo ,³⁹

[í rcijzpoa&muvmly; vmac:con wuqiron pmzwy&oww pwurc:ir&
jzpapaom zew;rjzpygon/

Ogci;wi0gaumu^{1/2}; ur;awmiui aemuwpa, mu a&&rn talumi; ajymq
lup0rmvn; rtruurronom ur;awmiui ta&c&rn? rremrnu ajymvrrn[
xirwem;piae&m

&ww&u aumuuium xqvuaom ocsi;oaumi rtrucrsm
lum;csionpum; rlum;vu&awmyg/⁴⁰

[wuqiro;um &y^{1/2}mu a^{1/2};cs, rn ur;awmiui \ trnu rtru buwi rlum;c&
alumi; rc:ir&jzpatmizew;cygon/

xlaemu ur;awmiui rjzpEionu rtruoom;aprn talumi; wp&yu
pma&ou zew;vuon/ armjrwomu omatmirwqi rtrux wArmtpn;t&
&eyaitwutvlcon/ rtruu a^{1/2}vuau muEp&u rremrna&x;xm;aom
vuuiy0gjzi xyly;ay;vuon/ omatmiuy0gu xm;&m rtrurm txivc&on/
t&uuc&on/

igom;u ur;awmiuie , &mat..nn; ^{1/2}yu yy0wavmu acsmo , y
ajymajym e*g; b*Vleru;Eiovy.. nn;onwpou ur;awmiui
rjzpb;.. nn;rbu i, vii, r, m; r[wv nn;jzpp&mvn;
talumi;r&b;.. igom;er sm; a0;ygao;&lat..⁴¹

[Zwraqmiu;awmpa^{1/2} \ cs;Eraajymqaompum;ji jryuuuazmvuygon/ om;rm;
u ur;awmiuiEiom ay;pm;vo;u;awmpa&u rtruuc; zErc:ajymcygon/ rtru
tz bu;awmpa&tay:rajyaom ℓ xm;contcuuzew;vu talumi;c cwquiy
xm;Eionu awl&ygon/

tm;ly/irrrsm;zew;jci;jzi Zmwvr; \ t&eujriwi í pmzwy&oww \ pw0ipm;
ru jriwuap&e zew;rrsm;u awl&ygon/ bu;awmpa&u

³⁹ cicix;? 2013? 102/

⁴⁰ - , i;-? 176/

⁴¹ - , i;-? 220/

a&m..nn;ypn; nn;, ..omatmīaowmxu awom..nn;rjii;yge
awmat..⁴²

[rtru\vuuiy0gzi vuqyvuuijyvu tEiyi;ajymqom;ji;wi rtru
rm pum;wpce;r rajymEib bmrīyirwīyeEiawmb ajray:yu? owvpc&on/
treurob rtru\ u, u;iw&m;u pypajymqcon B u;awmpa&Ei r[wre
pypjci;c&í&ualumujci;? a'gojzpjci;walumi ararismom;&aom rtruw\
tm;jyiruzpapí Zmw&eu jriwuapcygon/

rtrux omatmī\awmi;yepm a&mu&vmí , i;uouaojy\um B u;awm
pa&uawmi;yeapcici; talumi;quen;rm;zi Zmwvr;u quvu tm;lyixm;yg
on/ rtru tro\awmi;yevmon B u;awmpa&on

rru..uB u;jrwom reujzinaer jyevmro..ru\evrmvuo ,
at;at;..

B u;awmpa&u z;u;pum;allumi rtruuar;vuon/
armijrwom a&mu aev\vm;

[wu B u;awm⁴³

[í armijrwoma&mu aéalumi; oom;on wuqiro;xm;ygon/ jri;lcuyvyrm;
a&mu vmojzi owi;ay;orm B u;awmpa&yijzprn [rtruu wpxpcrw , ywji
tm;lyiruzpapypgon/ B u;awmpa&u omatmīu ur;awmīuia&reEi ay;pm;vu
onaemu rtruEi B u;awmpa&? omatmī? a&rew\ tm;lyir tmCmwyrū;rm;
vmcygon/ rtru aqmu vyvL'ge;aom pmoiausmī; r;&lc&aom tgcg roumz ,
vpr;on B u;awmpa&\wjzpaen/ B u;awmpa&u rtrurew;apon tjzptyu
rsm;u wuqirrm;? tm;lyirrm;? jryuursm; zew;ji;zi Zmw&ejriwuapypgon/
rtruu rtrirū B u;awmpa&tay: tcrausEiatmī emun;ralumi;? jyevn
tEi&valumi;rm; ajymjyyu

onryrm tarepcg½;&o , ..tar [m Ai;aumi;aumuz aecolum;u
*Poum uc&o , ..aemuwpc:uu tararvmico ur;awmīui
jzpcir&awmb;qwm ovu&omygy..jrm;wpacsmi;xell iuEpaumi
ypvuomaygat..tonuwn;u B u;awmpa&u tartemū;emun;
co ,⁴⁴

[vn;aumi;?

⁴² cici x;? 2013? 221/

⁴³ - , i;-? 253/

⁴⁴ - , i;-? 542/

or;uvv| b , ourtjzprcEiygb; ueueajymr , or;& , tjc;
b , objzpjzp tarau:eyr , q^{1/2} au:eyEiao;w , a&r or; re|om
rjzpap&b; tarEpcgt^{1/2};rcb;⁴⁵

[vn;aumi;az:jyxm;on/ rtru\ tEi , vpwu talumi;oi? tu;oi cswqu
í zew;xm;yg on/ vnuujzivn; Zmw&ewuatmi zew;av&yg on/ rtru
t ouav;q , ausmwi aeraumi;jzpvmyg on/ rtrr|rirm ur;awmiuitjzp a&c; ,
c&y; cpoaemu vuom;yg on/ , i;u

rtrr|i ou0;a0aemu c;&m vuom;ly rru.. &mvur&awmb;⁴⁶

[uajyor; \n armiouri;u ajmqcon Zmwuujzi wuqiro;um Zmwuu
u vnvujci;on pmzwy&owwtm; rcir&jzpapyg on/ wpquwn;ryi
uajyor;u;q;om;on owi;q;u rtruxyrum;o&on lurm q;0ijci;u zew;í
Zmwvr;u c;|au\vu yg on/ pwa&m? u , yglyvaeaomrtrurm tvlyu qi;o
rsm;Ei bu;awmpa&\ajr;re|omu ur;awmiui&e jyi qiaeon owi;wuvn;
lum;ae&ontalumi;jzi yw0e;uiEiZmwaqmi? ulurmEi Zmwaqmirtru
tm;lyiapyg on/ rtru\pw tajymi;tvjzp&e &eueuom;&e aus;0uajmqc
on/ xtcg rtru

igxurajy;b;aus;0^{1/2};lu utjzprcb; igEi&r mayg ur;awmiuijzp&z
igu , witEpEpq , apmic&o , rjzpcb; rtrr|iur;awmiuiz tEp
Epq , avmu apmic&o , rjzpjyeb; wpu , awm bmr [wygb;at
vawuer igaemiw&cygly⁴⁷

[í ajmqconZmwuujzi rtru\pwu cere;&cuaply; bu;awmpa&tay:
rnuotEi , rnu ocipwwjzi Zmw&ewuapyg on/ xlaemu

nn;rwrao;vm; aus;0 rrpr;jr&utjzpuav our;awmiui&r , nrm
&m "m;jy0iwu&mu vwpa , muaoewrevlao&o , &mrma&ay:
awm oma&u aemuqway;c&o , o[moema&ay:o uprnrqrqi
rrpr;jru ur;awmiuivmb0; vc&&mo , ur;awmiui&ume;r
vuxjywu;c&omrsm; ig 'wpourarb;⁴⁸

[rrpr;jr tjpuijyeyajym on/ a&llqurn Zmwvr;twu erwjyvujci;jzi pmzwo
w/u ovpwrsm;? vly&m;xuoe jriwuapyg on/

⁴⁵ cici x;? 2013? 542/

⁴⁶ - , i;-? 551/

⁴⁷ - , i;-? 557/

⁴⁸ - , i;-/

3³ 4/ Zmwxyi; zew;r twwynm

0w/Zmwvr; \ Zmwxyi;wi pmzwy&owtwu ovpwt xuoeq;
jzpap&e Zmw&etjriq;o yaqmizew;av&ygon/ q&mr rr;ajru

Zmwxyi;on Zmwvr;tc;tauU tvntajymi;jy/&rn tyi;jzp
on/ xtyi;wipmzwo\pwpn;&; qaqmiEiaom Zmw0ice;u
zew;ay;&ygrn/ Zmw0ice;on tm;lyir yg0ioiygon/ tm;lyir
wpr;rs;u zew;ay;jci;jzi pmzwo\ovpwutpr;ue jriwiay;
Eiygon/ tm;lyirjirm;ap&e Zmwaqmito;o; \ u, EwEv;
trt&mrsm;upmzwo\ pwtm&ü xi[yvmatmi pwu;ynma&zlr
tEynmrsm;jzi tEpwjc, re;wiiy&ygrn/⁴⁹

[í &i;vi;xm;ygon/ xalumi Zmwxyi;uzew;&mwi tm;jy/irrm;? tEpw
jc, re;en;rm;uo;í pmzwy&ow\ pwtm&uqaqmi? jriwiav&on[qEiyg
on/ rtruEi au;0wpum;ajymqly;aem rtruuyarmwuem;wi acwtyvu
0;rnqí au;0rmtrtvyrsm;vy&e tem;rcmcon/ Em;pmp0;ly; rtruurjiozi
tr0i;twi;vu&m&m rtru\zeyav; yarmwu avum;&i;wiaw&on/ ajymi;&;
ajcmu? y&alurm;om&í vavsmi;&eae&mr&aom yarmwuay: au;0wuunvu
onEi rtru ruawmircwpwr; lunaeom Zmwuon Zmwxwjzpygon/
Em;cnlu;jzi rru, utq;p½caom rtru\toiu

avum;cay:a&mulyqonei rtruau;0u ruawmircwpwr;
vr;lunaeon/ jyl;tpaeom ruv;rm;jzi lunaeji;jzp \/⁵⁰

[tEpwo&yazm zew;cygon/ yarmwuay:wuvmaom au;0urtru
ruawmircwpwr; jyl;lunaeí jyl;lunaeom talumi;t&i;u y&owwtm;
ovpwjzi pwvly&m;rw\ txwtxyo a&muapcon/ rtru\ a&c; r (0g)
Zmwaqmi\ raemu pma&ouocir, b uelowo½axmio;um vnuujzi
Zmwxyu zew;alumi; aw&ygon/

3³ 5/ Zmwqi;yi; zew;r twwynm

Zmwqi;yi;on Zmwxy;q;onei a&Uqujzpay:on tyi;jzpygon/
pmzwy&ow\ pw0ipm;pwrsm;? ovpwrm;u ly;q;atmi ajzavsmom tyi;jzpyg
on/ Zmwqi;yi;Eipyv0;í uuo&i;remEi &u&ypwu NTC's Dictionary of
Literary Terms pmtywi

⁴⁹ r;ajr? r? 2009? 99/

⁵⁰ cici x;? 2013? 558/

Zmwqi;yi;wi ½yax;rrsm;u ajyvnpmajz&i;ly; jzp&rn/ ar;ce;rsm;u
vn; &i;vi;ay;&on/ wi;usyaeaom tprsm;uajzavsmly; t"u
Zmwaqmirms; quvujzpay:vmrn tjzptyuu ajz&i;ay;&aom
tyi;jzpon/⁵¹

[wijyxm;ojzi Zmwqi;yi;wi a&uzew;xm;aom ½yax;rrsm;u ajyvnatmi
ajz&i;ay;&rn [q&ayrn/ rtruq;yg;ly;aemu ye;yi? qyom;z;yiEi iurn;u;
wpaumiaoouvn;

rtru viarsm;ojci;Eitw opyiye;yiwonvn; wrveo
viarsm;uawmrnyrm t&m&on qw,wavsm;yg;aeluavly/ llaxmiu
qyom;z;&u;qvi tvvyy&um rsk;w;om;con/ qyom;z;&u;xrm
acgi;puumaoaeaom iurn;u;wpaumi uawvu&onaeu aus;O
yi atmi*vqec&on/⁵²

[rtruzm;jrivmici;Eitw ay:aygucaom erwaumi;? erwq;won rtruEi
tw Zmwor;cyllir;calumi; qupy? cswquzew;xm;yg on/

ovmici;⁵³ onvn; Zmwvr;zew;rwi yg0iwwaom vuPmwp&yjzpyg
on/ ovmici;EipyvO; í q&matmioi;u

ovmici;qonrm tjrire&vmici;? tjriop&vmici;⁵⁴

[ziq&i;jyxm;yg on/ rtruq;yg;ly; q ,EpEpau sm tluwii rtrlrion
or;rtrpu vuqí &mo/ jyea&muvmcygon/

tazuq;omre&i lriur;awmiui jzpp&mr&awmb;av.. taztalumi;
vroygb;avqly; ewu;vour;awmiu lrinmly;ruiciygb;
aus;au;& ,..lriwpou v; vyjymroeom rvyciygb;..onup
ay:om;&i &mvn;usuo&,wr,.. lriivn;wpou v; t&u&r,
up.rtru or; tazr&awmre;ovsue ur;awmiuia;o,o,q&i
lriwrbrsk;&,*Pyg npEr;atmivy&ma&muawmr,.. [wly.. / on
owi;taru jyevmajymzμjeawm lrib,vajymxurmov/ tar
crsm tazq;oma&m..lriivuuur;awmi jywuom;oma&m cEi&n
&r,r [wb;v lriwuo ,..⁵⁵

[cipoaemu vuom;on [oxm;aomau;Otm; tjzpreuo&apcygon/ jryuu
u jyejznay;jci;jzi ajzavsmay;cygon/

⁵¹ Morner & Rausch, 1998, 80.

⁵² cici x;? 2013? 566/

⁵³ recognition

⁵⁴ atmioi;? 1994? 14/

⁵⁵ cici x;? 2013? 571/

3[?] 6/ Zmwor;yi; zew;r t wwynm

Zmwor;yi;on pmzwy&ow\ ovpwrsm;u tq;oway;ly;? pwEv;u
aueyEpor om;apaom tyi;jzpygon/ Zmwor;Eiywou í o& , uEu

0wt tq;on BuK;u:pwieiw\ / BuK;ao;BuK;rm; uav;rm;wpyipp
we;v;u&aomvn; BuK;u:spwite;o| a&muontcg wpwa0;wn;
aygi;qrlu í BuK;u;wpyi jzpvmbouoU Zmwvuri;om;BuK;?
ri;or;BuK;? ri;om;vwuK;? vluur;BuK;pon Zmwvr;BuK;won
b0wt tq;ü wpcwn;aom BuK;u;jzpoiayon/ ⁵⁶

[&i;vi;wijyxm;ygon/ Zmwor;wi rtrpon rtruuo| aZnicr;ue;&mwi
vy xujrupm ou0ivly&m;aeyu

ou;ri;b;omxew| rsl;&p0quyiqicaom y0axmitru;rm a&e
a&miwppji t oujye0ivmcjyeavly/ rtrpuyarmwuae&mr m uau m
yiwpypucon/ taru; rtrujzpav&mb0 uau mi; talumi;vyg
apom;vvn; qawmi;vuygao; \ / qyom;z;&a[mi; r&awmon
ajryuvurm qyom;z;yioppucon/ o&uawmtyu &i;vuly;
Ei;qawm? py,awmjzpacon/ cwm? ZvyjzL? av;ue;pum
ye;awa0uly/ &uue;oaw ncly/ jclu;oaw vicly/⁵⁷

[aomZmwuujzi Zmwor;cygon/ rtru\ jzp&yq;alumi armom;aom y&ow
pwwi b0iuom;ap&e? EporlunE;pwrsm; jzpxe;vmap&e zew;rjzponuawl&
ygon/

lclio;oycu

rtru0w\wi t nma'o;ri;|ce , & au;vur sm;wi re;rywtwu *P
usuo&[oww\uaom zupr;ur;awmiu rbEpyg; i , vii , r , m; r[won
tm;en;csualumi uicir&caom trsl;or;wp0; ru(a':u)\ talumi;u Zwuuc
zew;xm;on 0wZmwvr;jzpygon/

Zmwysl;yi;wi rtru\zm;Zmwjzi t"uZmwaqmitalumi;u pw0ipm;z ,
azmjyum pmzwy&owu rwquay;jci;jzi Zmwysl;xm;ygon/

ZmwE;yi;wi aumi;aomtwx;? erwx;rm;jzi rtruzm;jrivmalumi;
uau mi;rrsm; aqmi vmcalumi; re;qojrivmapon/ wpcexrmyi yarmwuxu
iurn;wpaumi owuevm íem;cici;u rnorirjicon talumi;jzi lurm q;

⁵⁶ o& , uE? 1967? 182/

⁵⁷ cici x;? 2013? 583/

0irn t v m; t v m u v n; ZmwerwiyEiaom ZmwE;jzpygon/ erwiyuursm; zew;r
on pmzwy&owwu qaqmion;Eicygon/ ZmwE;yi; tci; tui; on Zmwor;
u buwire; qapygon/

zupr;ur;awmiui rjzpEion tajtaeu rtrurojci; [on jryuu \
t m; u , í tEpwjc , re;jci; rsm;? t m; lyi rrm;? wuqirrm;? lurm q; 0ijci; rsm; zi
Zmw&eu wp&ex; wuapygon/ Zmwvr; u jzpxe;? w; wuapcygon/ rcir &
jzpatmi zew; Eiygon/ wuqirrm; zew; jci; jzi Zmwvr; u ½ yax; vmapygon/

rtruu &y&mu cpcioem; uojzi rajm&ucaom ur;awmiuirjzpEion
tallumi; ½; u qeuiZmwaqmiu; awmpa&u c; zErcajmqjci;? rtruu
u; awmpa&u awmi; yeapjci; wjzi t"uZmwaqmiEi t&Zmwaqmiw \ t m; lyi ru
zew; í Zmw&ewuapygon/ jri; jcuyvyrsm; armjrwomu vmzr; jci; jzi rtruu
u; awmpa& tay: yrre; w; apon tallumi; &yu xyrzew; x m; ygon/ u; awmpa&u
omatmiEi a&reuay; pm; cici; on t mCwt m; lyi ru t m; aumi; apum Zmw&eu
jriwiEiygon/ rtru vlx m; aom pmoi ausmi; r; avmicaomtcewi u; awmpa&
\ w a&muaejci; on vn; t li; u; v m&etallumi; wuqirzew; jci; jzpygon/
u; awmpa& rom; ptay: rtruu emun; &on tallumi; & i; crsm; u wuqirrm;
quwuo; zew; x m; jci; on Zmw&eujriwu? ouvu vmaply; pmzwy&oww \
ovpwu p0qurjyw xuo evmapygon/ &y&mprsm; Eijynply; ynmwwwp0;
vn; jzpaom rtririzupr; ur;awmiui jzpawmrn tajtaersm; u buwici; ui;
ly; r rar m vib cpoaem u vuom; aom vnuuuzew; con/ ur;awmiuibou
wpouv; ar m viruarmc&aom rtru \ emuialuurrsm; eitw eparsm vuyg
aply; rcir&jzpatmi qaqmiaomzew; ryijzpygon/ uajyor; awmxwi aoq;
om; onowi; rtrux a&muvmjci; [on lurm q; 0ijci; uo; í rtruwi
rriomaomu tallumi; w&m; allumi; b0vr; allumi; rar m vibajymi; vrn Zmwuuu
u s; allumi; jyum ZmwE; Eiqupyzew; x m; ygon/ tvltrui; orsm;? relom
ur;awmiui&e jyi qiaeyrsm; u lum; ae&yjzi rtruEiyw0e; u iu t m; lyi x m;
on/ au; 0 t m; rtruu aemiw&allumi; ajymjyonZmwuon Zmwaqmi \
pwoabmxm; ajymi; onoabm ov m jci; en; jzi y&oww t m; ar m viapygon/
Zmwuwuyi; wi t m; lyi ren;? wuqiren;? ov m jci; en; rsm; zew; í Zmwvr;
tertjri twut ursm; zew; cygon/ Zmwvuwursm; u rawl&yg/

Zmwxyi; wi rtruuraw í aus; 0utr0i; twi; ae&mtElvu&myu
tao; pwo&yazmxm; ly; y&oww \ pwvy&m; rjzpapygon/ yarmwuavum; ay:
aus; 0wuunvuonEi rtruu ruawmircwb jyl; us , aomru0e; rsm; zi
lunaallumi; tEpwjc , re;jci; on a&uqurnZmwvr; \ x; jcm; ru ovpw
txuo eq; Zmwxwo a&muapygon/

Zmwqi;yi;wi ßu;awmpa&rom;pu tEi&&ertruu touut&i;jycon
 Zmwuujzi Zmwvr;wpav(muv;r tm;jyirrm; clyir;apcon/ rtruzm;jrion
 nu yarmwuxu iuq;wpaumi rnor(rriatmi vma&m uem;con erwq;on
 rtru \ b0Zmwor;Ei qupyaeygon/ qyom;z;yi;Ei iuq;won rtru
 Eitw aoq;om;c&y? ur;awmiruib cpoaemu vuom;onqaom rtrrirm
 zciowi;u;om;ojzi awmxvuppr;ji;jzpy? rciurajym&uallumi; au;0u&i;jy
 wjzi Zmwuuvnatmi ajz&i;xm;on/ rtrrri \ or;rtrp &mtvLr, vmaom
 zupr;ur;awmißu;on yarmwutßu; lyu&mwiygom;ywjzi Zmwvr;t& ta&yg
 con t"uZmwaqmi \ b0Ei quE, aeont&mrsm;u zuor;tpowvuygon/
 ya[Vuajz&i;jci;? Zmwerwuajz&i;jci;walumi Zmwqi;yi;on tuuap oy&y
 um pmzwou pwau:eyrjzpygon/ tuuczew;xm;aom Zmwvr;jzpí talumi;
 cswquen;rm;u [muur&zew;xm;Eiygon/

Zmwor;yi;wi trsm;urtru 0ipm;on[, llunluaom rtrpon rtru
 uo| aZmicr;ue;&mav;wi wzeyevnou0i vly&m;aeallumi;zi tq;owxm;
 on/ telm&jzi b0e*;clycaom rtru rtrptjzp jyevn&ioeapci;jzi
 pmzwy&owwu b0iusaueyapaom Zmwor;jzpygon/ au;vuvr"avrsm;u
 tptve;ßu;ve;vaom rtru \ &ieiz, tjzptyujzi tq;rowy rtrptoiizi
 ½jriZmwor;xm;ojzi y&owu EporapEiygon/

Zmwvr;jzpyuon tceumvon rtrur ajr;rav;rtrpwijzpí rsk;qu
 o;quwilumjrion umvaemuczi Zmwvr;uzew;xm;jci;allumi Zmwtr
 ßu;rm;onuawß&ygon/ t"uZmwaqmiEi tjcm;Zmwaqmirms;yg0iaeaom Zmwu
 rms;on tcwtqurojzi Zmwtrcicon[q&ayrn/ rtruar;ontceü
 ay:aygucaom aumi;aomtwwerwrsm;? raumi;aom twwerwrsm;u rtrub0?
 Zmwvr;wpav(mu Zmwuurr? tusk;oitalumi;oi cswqurwu ae&mwus
 xnoi;xm;onuaw&ygon/ qyom;z;yi;Ei iurn;won rtruEitw
 ay:aygucly; rtruEitw vuygly;q;om;í Zmwvr; tzi? tyw vy? nnwon
 uawß&ygon/ Zmwerwrsm;? jryuursm;? wuqirrm;xnoi; zew;jci;on
 Zmwvr;u , wtm;en;apaomvn; au;vurtp0tvmrms;? &y&m"avrsm;? &y&mx;p
 rms;tay: , llun? plrvucluyrms;u tajccí Zmwtrwnxm;ojzi Epouz,
 jzpygon/ jzpciaomqE? ßu;ve;aomavmb? tli;ßu;aoma'gopwrsm; ßu;xm;vm
 ontcg arm[rm;z;vr;wwaom voabm0u xe;vi;jyEiaom Zmwvr;zew;rjzpy
 ygon/

e*;

pma&q&mr cicix;\ rtru0w&nr Zmwvr;zew;ru 0w/Zmwvr;\
t*g&yrrsm;? Zmwvr;zew;r en;emrsm;jzi avvmqe;pp? wijyxm;ji;jzpygon/ xo
avvm&mwi rtru0w/ Zmwvr;\ t*g&yrrsm;wi aw&&aom Zmwvr;zew;rrsm;u
ynm&irsm; reqxm;aom en;emrsm;jzicex;vu avvmwijyxm;yg on/ Zmwvr;\
t*g&yrrsm;t vu pma&oto;jyxm;aom zew;ren;emrsm;u azmxwí Zmwvr;
jzpxe; w;wuvmyu o;oywijyxm;yg on/ bpmwr;u ur;u;luyo q&mrðu; \
vr;nerji u , pr;? ÓPpr;&orijypxm;yg on/ 0w&nr Zmwvr;zew;ru avvm
vowtwu t u;sjyEirn [arvmvirygon/

ur;u;pm&i;

cicix;/ (2013)/ *rtru (ww, t/ur)*/ rEav;l 0' , au;&mpm tywu/
aZm*/ (1977)/ *armi&iarmirr, r 0we'ge;trmpm/* &eue? acgi;aqmiu; pmay/
aZm*/ (2009)/ *&opmayl oabm/* &eue"0pm tywu/
wuw;/ (1982? rw) *lZmwvr;r0w/½r0r*iZi;? tw15? trw (418)/* 49-50
wioe;0;/ (2003)/ *Zmwvr;ynm(yxrw)/* &eue? pmvyie;yeywu/
wiw , / (1974)/ *0wla&en;taicjy/* &eue? aomlumpmyeywu/
r;ajr? rl (2009)/ *0w&n oabmw&m; 0w&ntwwynm/* &eue? a&uaum pmay/
ri;au smEi trsm;/ (1979)/ *0wlltwwynm? 0wllpmpwr;rsm;(yxrw)/* &eue? pmayArmeyEywul
ri; , a0Ei trsm;/ (1979)/ *0wllpmpwr;rsm; (yxrw)/* &eue? pmayArmeyEywul
armiarmink (a'guwm-)/ (1994)/ *0wllwa&en; twwynm/* &eue? *Px;pmayyeywu/
jrilun? 0;/ (1998)/ *0wll&n oabmw&m;avvmen;? jrermppoawoe*me, / (tw-3)/* &eue?
jrermppmXme? &euewuov/
jrermppmtzll/ (1991)/ *jrerm tb"me/* &eue? zwvpoyeywu/
o& , uEl (1967)/ *0wll&v aom/* &eue? aep;&epmay/
atmioi;/ (1994)/ *0wll&maqm i;yg;rsm;/* &eue? a&wrmyeywu/
atmioe; (qijzLue;-)/ (1998)/ *uaq;&0wllwrsm; (trmpm)/* &eue? y* pm tywu/
References

- Boulton, Majorie. (1975). *The Anatomy of the Novel*. London and Boston, Routledge & Kegan Paul Ltd.
Evan, I For. (1974). *A Short History of English Literature*. 3rd Edition, Harmonds worth, Penguin.
Rausch R, and Morner, K (1998). *NTC's Dictionary of Literary Terms*. U.S.A; NTC Publishing Group

အဓိကအားဖြင့် ဝတ္ထုတိုများ၏ ဝတ္ထုတိုများ

၁

အဓိကအားဖြင့်

ဝတ္ထုတိုများ
ပုံစံများ

- ၁/ The novel can be described as a narrative in prose, based on a story, in which the author may portray character, and the life of an age and analyse sentiments and passions, and the reactions of men and women to their environment. (Evans, 1974, 206.)
- ၂/ Perhaps we may say that the main stream novel is a realistic, enlarging our experience of life, rather than fantasy transporting us to a more colourful world. (Boulton, 1975, 13.)
- ၃/ In the falling action, the COMPLICATION is finally resolved, all questions are answered, loose ends are tied up, and an accounting is given of what happens to the main CHARACTERS. (Morner & Raush, 1998, 80.)

၆

၆

၁၇

c:p0;n\ \]rL;rwrsm;Eiawqjci;}} r pma&o \ taw;tjri

au^mouci*

pmwr;t u:0;

ppmwr;on pma&q&mc:p0;n\ \]rL;rwrsm;Eiawqjci;}} r pma&o \ taw;tjri
u avvmxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ rL;rwEiawqí tjetve tar;tajz
jy\vy&mr pma&o \cpm;r? taw;tjriw u o½apvjci;jzpygon/ ppmwr;r
wpqiae&mwi;ü taw;tuirsm;qreueaom taw;tuirsm; aw;jriwwvmap&
taxmut uijEiygon/

aomcsua0g [m&rsm; - taw;tjri? t , tq? cpm;r

e'je;

&mZ0i [on ri;p0ri;qu talumi;t&mrwwr;jzpon/ &mZ0iwiri;
tququ \ talumi;rm;u ajmrnqví xri;wtm;u;t m;xm;jy/&aom rL;rw
onvn;cexm;íray/ rL;rwon wi;jyntwuta&u;aom tce;u@uyg0i
vy&m;&aom Zmwauirsm;jzpon/ xZmwauirsm;on &mZ0ipmrsm;wi olae&m
Eio ae&m , xm;vu&on/ xrl;rwrsm; \ uo;yg;trt&mwonvn; xpmrsm;E
rsm;wi ou0ivy½m;vu&aeon/ xvycyruo;yg;trt&mrsm;u q&mc:p0;n\ \
]rL;rwrsm;Eiawqjci;}} aqmi;yg;rm;wi jriawEiygon/]rL;rwrsm;Eiawqjci;}}
wi q&mc:p0;n\ on rL;rw(11)0;Eiawqar;jre;aq;aE; [eji a&om;xm;ci;jz
pon/ ppmwr;wi x(11)0;xr (5) 0;Eiawqyrsm;uom wijrjnzpygon/ xtrw
(5)0; \ tjzptyursm;utajccí xtjzptyursm; \ jrpzsm;rm;u w;azm xm;aom?
jzeu suaw;xm;aom? tpm;0i ítim;cpm;xm;aom q&mc:p0;n\ \ taw;tjrirsm;u
avvmwijom;rnjzpygon/

1/ q&mc:p0;n\ \ twiyw

q&mc:p0;n\ u 1947? 'Zibm (30)wi rEav;lrü tzo;a&a'gi;n? tra':pe&i
wrzm;jrion/ ar;csi; (7)a , muwi t u;q;jzpon/ trn&i;rm 0;ausmpmjzpon/
rEav;lrü? ee;awma&U? rw&mwu? rvwe;ausmi;wi tajccynmqn;y;cly; 1956 wi
rEav;lrü? 0upvausmi;Ei bb tatausmi;rm;ü tv , we;wua&mucon/ rEav;
t.x.u (1) r q , we;atmicly; 1962 cEpwi rEav;wuovü 0ypm0Zm(u)we;
wua&mucon/ ee;awma&Ue , v;qí&m pmlunt oi; traqmitjzpaqmi&ucon/

* en;jy? jrermxm? rau;wuov

1963-68 wi &eue0ZmEioywuovü ' ó euaA't"ujzi wuaμj; 1968 cEpwi *P x;(3)b m omjzi 0ZmbU&con/ r[m0Zmwe;ü quvuwua&mucon/ 1969-70 cEprpí vyom;rsm;aumvy? ppawauumvy? A[or0g ,r oiwe;ausmi; wwi en;jyq&mtjzp trxr;cygon/ 1970? atmuwbmvxw r;a0pmayr*Zi;wi yxrq; yEypmrtjzp j&eue|r tv , } 0w/wzipmaye , o0ia&mucon/ r;a0pmay r*Zi;Ei ½r0&ypr*Zi;rsm;wi 0ww? aqmi;yg;? b m omjyerm; a&;om;con/ 1972 wippawauumvy? ' ó euaA'Xmeoajymi;a&U trxr;cl; pmayEi , 0aus;r qy aumrw tjzp aqmi&ucon/ jwre} e&uypmapmiuvn; xwa0con/ 1973 wi ynma&; 0e!u;Xmer or0g , r0e!u;Xme? A[or0g , roiwe;ausmi;o pra&;&m b m om&y en;jyq&mtjzp ajymi;a&U trxr;con/ A[or0g , roiwe; Epvn*Pjywi &mr orivuuZmwu pp0wiquc&m &mrri;om;tjzp u , wiyg0iuycon/ pEm0; , 0au;rZmwztzwi Zmwne;'g&uwm tjzp vyiicon/ q&myg&*b m omjyeaom trygv? pw&avcg0wirsm;u Zmwne;'g&uwm tjzp piwiyZmwpp0wiqucyg on/

q&m \ yxrq;v;c;i;0w/wrm jvum'ycpo} (1977)jzply; o \ t xi&m;q; 0w/vn;jzpon/ q&mcp0;n \ t jcm;xi&m;aom 0w/rsm;rm jpy,jz? a&piEixm;} (1978)? jcpaomyg'{u&? } Ei;auo&mcpwo&aumi; (1979)? jo0Pbri&? o0P breAme? j t *pet*veEiijcm;u armiom;xm;avrvrm;} (1980)? juaomvuEi &upuaomrsuEm? } cept rwe;u r*r;b? jwrawz;yg v te;icr|crn? } c q , &m axmiaomi;oe;oe;ua#} (oarmiEitw) (1981)? j aumi;vcnvm; a'gi;jrlunEi t jcm;0w/wrsm;? } b&iuacs onEi &mZ0i0w&nrm;? } rav;rPpEm(armi0PEi)} (1982)? 1983 r 1988 x obir*Zi; t , 'wmcly? jwapEi t jcm;0w/wrsm;? } pu&Ei b'g? } ye;rea0} (1984)? j tqyEiurmwpoes? } cpsori;eEm} (1985)? ja&wup;? ja'0p&mEiaw/qjci;? } r[maoemyw? } tEynma0zea&;pmaypmwr;rsm;} (1986)? j0ayuma'0? } ye;acv u} (1987)? j apmi;oEiA' , 0aus;r0w/rsm;} (1988)? j lir;c;r;a&; r[mwre? } A' , 0aus;r 0w/aygi;cly? } &wem*&tusO;om;} (1989)? j umVA'&uw? } cpsooE&? } rrEi t 0ÓPur sm;} (1990)? j rPpEm0'ge;} (1991)? j pmr&o|x;x;jcm;} } xm;r \ 0umyEv;om;} (1992)? j b'g? } &mZurm&? } £EywEv;om;} (1993)? je0&w u;o , } } t p&0wEi u@vauom? } w&m;&i&m [vm? } t *e? } r[ma'opm&e'ge;Ei A' , 0aus;r} (1994)? } [r0Em c&;on? } &up;r , m;Ei t jcm;jywmrsm;} (1995)? j 0Zwm0? } &iapmy? } javmuZmw c? Zmw c avmu} (1996)? j w;wujci; qw , wjci;Ei , 0aus;r ruEmpm} (1997)? j t c pzi avmiur;awmuyor sm;} (1998)? javmu"Ei vr;av(mu twxu jci;} (1999)? j rsurjirmverL;Ei t jcm;0w/rsm;? } jrl;rwrsm;Eiaw/qjci;} (2003)? j ori;rwiayr , ori;0iaewpum;rsm;? } j bmalumibmu av;pm;yg oen;Ei rsuEmz;aqmi;yg;rsm;? } , cbmzwaeo vEi t jcm;zwp&mrsm;} (2004)? j om*va'0? j rvEmyOme'ge;? } jav;onawm&i&ao- t jcm;0w/wrsm;} (2005)? j nr&mpum;0i;? } uav;& [Emrsm;? } rCa'0vumopr vlobm0rsm;? } jrrlir;Ei*v b , v u aZ;&i; oci;

cpm;rrsm;}(2006)?yxro**g*, enjriui;u*s*, }?]tarEiaw/qjci;}?]pma&;q&m omoenij/
 owv*m*; } (2007)?]lröplirÜü b;b;atmiEiaw/qjci;}/]w&m;obi } (2008)?]tm*E\
 ye;plumrea*j*mi;}?]oEocEiiawm*o*l yxraicvr;rsm;}(2009)?]pmaya [majmy
 bu*a&mi;}?]O;atmioi;y&zi;Ei t*j*cm;aqmi;yg;rsm;}?]q&mwu omvr; } (2010)?
]e**g*;ac*g*i;A*y*apmi; } (2011)?]aumor }]y*uA*sm*y*pm } (2013)?]mr, P? yAum&?
 q&maZ*m**Ei t*j*cm;pmprsm; } (2014) ponwizpygon/ q&mon pmaya&;&m? , Oau*s*;r
 tEynma&;&mrsm;Ei*y*wouí tar&ue jynaxmip? ajrmu t*v*Ei*u*wuov? rav;&m;?
 pumy? 'bi;?]opa*w*;v*s* tp&onEiirsm;o*l* om;a&mu aq;aE;rrsm; j*y*cygon/

2/ taw; t*j*ri [on

taw;Ei t*j*riqi&m zi*q*c*u*rsm;u ynm&i*r*sm;u trr*r*;sl;ll*u*qcluygon/ taw;
 [aom a0*g* [m&u jrerm t b"met u*o*;c*u*y? tw - 5 wi

taw; - e[^]taw;^p0;pm;qijcir? aw;awm*l*upnr/

(jrerm*pm* t*z*? 1980? 62))

[ívn;aumi;? jrerm- t*vy t b"mewi

taw;^atwei: ^n - thought, idea, meditation.

(jrerm*pm* t*z*? 2010? 561)

[ívn;aumi;? t*vy-jrerm t b"mewi

thought - pwu;? xijricu*u* idea - pwu;? taw;tac: t*l*u t*p*n/

meditation - taw;? xijricu*l*

(jrerm*pm* t*z*? 2006? 452? 688))

[ívn;aumi; t*o*;o;ziq*l*uon/ x*l*alumi taw;[on jzp&ywpc t*y*:ü
 rrvu*v*r;ror*l*aom qijci0mPEi pwu;tjriw ay*g*i;pyxm;ji; [qEi*y*gon/

]tjri} Eiywouí jrerm t b"mewi tjri – e[^] ½jrio;oyqijci*u*/

(jrerm*pm* t*z* 1980? 62))

[ívn;aumi; t*vy-jrerm t b"mewi

ambivalent – (adj) tjri/ vision - tjri/ sight - tjrit*m*&/

image - tjri*l*

estimation - tjri? xijri, qcu*l*

concept - tjrioabmx*m*;? t, tq*l*

(jirmpm t z? 2006? 688)

xalumi taw;tjri [on tjzptyuwp? tajtaewpcw/tay:ü rrtjri?
rrcpm;rjzi aygi;pyum aumucucjci;yi jzpon/

3/ rL;rwrsm;Eiawqjci; r pma&o \ taw;tjri

3? 1/ &mZoluEipma&o \ taw;tjri

trwü; &mZouon y*ri;qu \ aemuq;be;ü;aom e&o [yawri;
vuxurpí &mZ0ipmrsm;wi t xit&m;ay:vmaom ynm&trwü;wpyg;
jzpygon/ e&o [yawri;on ou&mZ (617-648) wi p;pcaomri;wpyg; jzpon/
e&o [ayawri;on

]trüapmirmeü; \ t&omwyru \ tpm;taomuü; \ wpcg
yawmwnaom [i;cu 300 &mjynr wnaom [\ po [i;cursm;pm
yawmwnonrm tv;ptue pm;ypononum;r [w/ t&om tx;x;
tjym;jym;upm;vjci;? be;wec;ü;rm; aygrsm;alumi;ujyvaom ri;wpyg;
jzpon/}}

(z;u sm;? 0;? 2011? 74)

xuolaomri;vuxuwi ynm&trwü;wpyg;tjzp &mZouon trawmu
xr;&uc&on/ wi;jyna&&m? y*üva&&mEiywouí rnopum;rm;avqm uwiu m
rnoijyrrm;rnen; [pw0ipm;z, jzpygon/ xpw0ipm;or sm;xwi q&mcp0;n
on xyq;ryg0iaernrm taocmyijzpon/ tb, alumiqaom]rL;rwrsm;Ei
awqjci;}} aqmi;ygrsm;u ouaojyüvü &aom alumi jzpon/

e&o [yawri;on OZemri;Eijrpom&m ye;ywon \ or;r zm;jriaom
ri;om;jzpon/ zci \ t&ut&mu quc&mwi aemiawmo [ouaumi ri;tjzpu
&&cavjci;jzpon/ xojzpatmi xyq;ryg0iprcorm &mZoueyijzpon/
e&o [yawonvn; au;Z;qyrn [qcz;avon/ olaom ri;jzpaom tcg aravsmí
au;Z;rqraray/ xjzp&yu pwemaeom trwü;on ye;uyyuaqmií ee;awmo
wuaom tcg]tz;&mZou tb, alumi ye;uyyupm;oem;} [ar;&m trwü;u
]t&iom;? ye;ywon om;ajr;w oaumi;jzpí ywrnor&aom alumi ye;uyyup
pm;&ygon} [ajzavon/ xalumi e&o [yawri;u b&m;apwrsm;u x;wiaom tcg
rnowi&alumi;? x;t xuola&muaom tcg lir;urnoijy&alumi; ar;jre;í
trwü;u x;wiaom tcg jir;jziwi&alumi;? x;t xuola&muaom tcg jir;uzur
wiw, alumi; jyevnajzqaom tcg ri;ü;u

]]igonx;Eiw\ / trw;u;um; jir;Eiw\ / igonri;jzpí t xuo
a&muly/ jir;Eiwaom trw;u;u zuryi wiw ,awmrn}}

(z;u sm;? 0;? 2011? 75)

[í &mZoúu pn;pr&m x;rEwum 'volyavon/ xitcg trw;u;u
]]uleom;u , ye;jym;yicer\rvrmac? opyiú;uolú:íí p oljzp&acs
on}}

(reee;&mZ0iawmú;? 2008? 207)

[oa0*pum;qcygon/ xpum;on q&mc;p0;n\ \ taw;t m&o vma&m ulicayrn
[, qrygon/ xpum;alumi yi q&mc;p0;n on o \ taw;e , ü trw;u; &mZoú
Ei om;a&m uaw/qc [ewygon/

aqm i;yg;wi q&m on &mZoúEi wu½utiyet ve ajymqyaq;aE;yji
a&;om; x m;ygon/ jrermori;r veclyjzpaom &mZ0ixvm trwwpyg;Ei aw/qyu

]]uleawmpma&; q&m wpa , m u yg/ 1362 cEpu vmwmyg trw;u;}}

]]tEpcep&mau sm &p&me;yg;&ygyaum/ ri;bmalumirms; 'avmua0;w
umvc&;u jzwvmcwmv}}

]]uleawm trw;u;e pum;ajymc;i vlyg/ uleawm v o;rw m t o;roi&i
ci vwyg trw;u;}}

]]ri; bmalumi ri;umvrmaeb igumvqu vm&ov}}

]]uleom;u ye;jym;yicer\rvrmac/ opyiú;uolú:íí p oljzp&acs on
qw trw;u; &úpum;oa0 [m uleawm&ixrm qnjrn [n;aevlyg
trw;u;}}

(c;p0;n/? 2017? 10-11)

[í umv tyi;tjcm;rsm;u o \ taw;pum;v;rsm;jzi qupya&;om;xm;alumi; aw&yg
on/ pae&mwi q&mc;p0;n\ \ c0;uyyuaw&ygon/ avv mxm;rrsm;u qxw
azmjyvaom t cg pmzwoEi te;q;ola&m uat mi c0;uywijyxm;Eijci;yijzpon/

q&m on &mZoúEiawqly; rrajymvon taw;tjrirms;u rruar; &mZoú
uajzys;jzi wijyxm;onrm pw0ipm;z , aumi;vygon/ &mZouetrw;u;
'v tyc&yu q&mutrw;u;ae&mr tjrío;r s;jzi o;oyxm;onrm q&m \
taw;tjrixujruru awEiygon/ x tjrío;r s;u o;oyjy&mwi

]]o [ouz , &m;ly; ri;ac;acs;uee;wiz 'vocí;ay:rm uEy0;aqmi
pn;a0;cw tce [m yxrt rm;&ú umv tpjzpw , }}

[í vn;aumi;

]]w_{rsm};t_m;v; qE? a'g_o? b , m? arm [t*wav;yg;p_v;e pe;x_i;i
 ayluw , / i , & , wri;ac;ac;u ee;wiay;r , qwm u qEm*w?
 o [o_{tay}: o&U_r;waw;al_um_i tr_uyrwma'g_o*w? tr_urme_u;w
 o [ori;jzp_vm&i qwtaw;ub , m*w? yuwtajctaer_m;ay: &;&i;pm
 rjriwm u arm [m*w? t_i;... puwn;u t*wav;yg;e p_{cl}uw , }}

[ívn;aumi;

]]'w , tr_m;uawm e&o [yawri;u uEyu ri;ac;ac;tjzp quq_vu
 rjci;y/ v_uav;ajmwp_um;x_rm &mZo_uynm_v? y*jyn_v;u...?
 [wv_m? t_i;... yn_m&yqygawmav/ o_laom owjzpcw yn_m&}}

[ívn;aumi;

]]ww , tr_m;uawm p_um;v;t_o;tEe;yg_y v_uav;}}?]]opyi_u;v_us_i
 ye;j_ym;yiv_ru_si_v ig' vjzp&avw , qwm ri;wrwom;x_m;o_v
 pippuawm oa0*p_um;r [wb;u/ t'g aemiwp_um;}}

(csp0;n_l? 2017? 13)

[íwiijx_m;yg_on/ e&o [yawri;Ei trw_u;w\ jzpy_ucrr_m;u t_ajccí
 t*wav;yg;v_up_m;r_{tr}m;? owjzpc_aom yn_m&\ ajmqq_uqr_{tr}m;? rrcp_m;c_uu
 b_om_jyey_{tr}m; ponwujriat_{ti} aw;jy_xm;y_rm;on q&m\ taw;tjri_u ay:viap
 yg_on/

3? 2/ pEau_{sm}o0;loEipma&o\ taw;tjri

pEau_{sm}o0;loon ou&mZ 1098 cEpwi t_vlr_ut_xuarmi;ax_mi&mü zm;jri
 cojzpon/ tzrm0;aZ , s? trrm b;awmri;w&m;vuxuwi pmqawmtjzp tx;
 au_{sm}apmaom wi;oi;wu0er [mpno\ tpr a':yjpavon/ tou 15 Ept& ,
 wi ja&awmi&mZau_{sm} } b_lc0;loon rr\ t&iociawmii&mZm awmi;ye&i;&aom
]u0vuP_mowy} oayguy'a& 1787 y'u a&;om;p&i_ly; at_mijricon/ xaemu
 tav_{mi};ri;w&m;vuxuwi]]pEau_{sm}o}} bu_uc;ajrmujci;c&ly; om;awm A'lr_lpm;
 ow;ri;v a&awmixü pmqawmtjzpv_n;aumi;? tu;awmtjzpv_n;aumi;?
 cpm;xr;&ucon/ (ow? arm_i? 2002? 155-157)

rl;rwr_m;Eiawqjci; aq_{mi};yg;r_m;wi q&mcsp0;n_{on} pEau_{sm}o0;loEi
 awqí rrtjrirrtaw;wu azmxwwijy_xm;yg_on/ xoawqyuq&m csp0;n_{on}

]]O;lo_tm; pmqawmwp0;tjzp? rl;rwwpyg;tjzpxu vy*v_wpa , mu
 tjzpjzi xyrlun^{1/2}unciv_m\ }}

(c:p0;n 2017? 132)

[qxm;yg on/ xtqonyi rrajymq aq;aE;v one, y, u a&;vu on [, qrygon/ xaemu

]]pEausmo pmq trwri;yg;vm; ciAsm;}}?]]O;lo v ac:yg&apciAsm}}

]]O;lo? ti;...uyt ouu 35 Epy&ao;w, / ri;w&m;bu;uawm arnilo?
ilo ac:wmy/ ee;awmuvn; u&ilov tac:avluwmy/ u&iu
O;low/ [wp? u ... ac:Asm? 'ge' u&iu b, ob, 0gqwm....}}

]]uleawmu trwri; t...O;loeEpaygi; 229 Epwwu:su:mjcm;w
umvqu vmygw, ciAsm;/ uleawmu vn; tcO;loac:ovy u&i
v lom ac:ygciAsm}}

(c:p0;n 2017? 132-133)

[&i;&i;E;E; rwquay;xm;yg on/ q&mcp0;n on pmzwor sm;u rraq;aE;
jyvony*vEi t cetwi;twm tumta0;u cslay;vuji;jzpon/ wpen;t m;
jzi rrwijyv on tcu tvuwqo c0;uyjyv uci;yijzpon/ talumi;
wppwp&mEiywou í c0;uyyc0;uyen; \ taw;tjriyi jzpEiygon/

q&mcp0;n on pEausmoO;loEiawq&mwi]]u0vuPmowyur;}}
talumi;u O;wnaq;aE;cji;jzply; xaq;aE;cur sm;r rrtaw;tjriu azmxwiyxm;
jci;jzpon/ aqmi;yg;wi O;loon]]u0vuPmowyur;}} ua&;p0u tou 15
Epom&ao;alumi;? p tcuu wcsuuoo, 0ilualumi;? xtcuEiywou í q&m
cp0;n u

]]t'pypcsu tay:rm O;lo b, vrm; wejyecsiygovciAsm}}

]]pypajymqwm [wcir[w&rmayg u&i? ow, qo;oycsuu ow
xwazmwmjzprmayg/ 'gayr t'g raumi;b;}}

(c:p0;n 2017? 135)

[í azmjyxm;yg on/ xtcuEiywou í q&m on O;lo \ae&mrae í

]]tav tv mtrwtom;t m;en;&i aumucurmvn; vom;www, /
t'g oice;pm, &r, / vrm;waumucur&i t, tpvn; wr;yg;om;
Eiw, ? raumi;b;qwm t'gygy}}

(c:p0;n 2017? 135)

[í o \ tjriu azmjyxm;yg on/ avmuxwi uivnu supm;&i; b0tawU tB u r
taw;tB ur sm; aumucurvr m;apvaom q&m \ t, tq(o) taw;tjri
wpcyijzpon/ xaemuaqmi;yg;wi]]u0vuPmowyoyaygu}} on O;loa&;jci;?

ra&jci;Eiywouí tout&,u xnoi;ajymvmluonu q&mc;po;n\ u 0;l o
ae&mraeum

]]u&i&,...ti;0acwrm &ir[m&]om&u,awm b&'wvum&u;u
a&p0uouawm 16 Epy&ygaow,/ ri;&'A{ci;u &ioca&p0
uon; tou 17 Eprma? t&,tou[m ur;ymPunEi;sex;
p&mupr[wb? jzpoiwm u0vuPmowy&U ynmqi&m
trm;twr;awu cuu\$vuue azmxwjywmr\$;? t,i;tacmawu
xe;or;wnrway;wmr\$;om jzpoiw,/ 'gr aEmi;vawtwu ynm
rupyyive;r,}}

(c;po;n? 2017? 136)

[í o \ taw;tjriu azniyom;alumi;aw&ygon/ u0vuPmowyoyayguEi
ywouí rnoa&zjci;xu ñi;\ tEpom&rsm;u tceay;azmxwapvaom q&m \
tjriu aw&ygon/ xae&mwi q&mc;po;n\ Epouz,aumi;aom tcuwpctu
awrygon/ 0;l o \ owoyaygu 1787 y'u ri;we;ri; vuxu trmawma&
ri;vaZ,ou 78 y'u teuzicalumi; ajymqaomtcg 0;lou]]gq&iawm usew
ty' 1700 ausm u&i teuziygv m;}}]]u&iu u\$yeaw&oy? u&i'tvy
vyoiwmaygAsm}}

[í ajymqaomtcg q&mc;po;n\ u

]]0;l o&U...uleawmrm t'vvyEiatni ÓPrjynygb;/ uleawmu tc
vb ar;ce;awar;ar;aewww upyvywwygw,/ uleawmtwu
or'&mrm ,eoi , ajcaxmu v rryciAsm;}}

(c;po;n? 2017? 137)

[í&ww&u;yeajzqvuyu aw&ygon/ xtajzwi q&mc;po;n\ on tajctae
Eiway;n tqmowaw;jya&jyvuyu auseyEpouz ,aw&ygon/

3? 3/ re0e!u;œnm;'vEipma&o \ taw;tjri

re0e!u;Anm;'von qijzLrsm;&ib0&iri;w&m;βu;\ vu&oz,tm;u;
tm;xm;jy/&aom trw&u;wpyg;yijzpon/ &mZm"&mZta&awmyur;u rebmomr
jrermom jyeqcovn;jzpygon/ b0&iri;w&m;βu;\ trn? t&n?taqmi
ta,mitr\$;r\$;jzi cs;jrioaumi;jy/jci;c&aom aoemywvn;jzpon/ po ri;w&m;
\ cs;ajrmujci;u &&ygaomvn; xri;w&m;βu;u o;urww vyue upnco
vn;jzpon/ yxrturon qijzLrsm;ocib0&i ri;w&m;βu;on [om0wu
tvawmjyní rrUvnawmraomtcg a0gawmxr;rewEi roirwiwiyií "m;u
ajrwijryxm;apjci;? 'w,turon a&arma"mb&m;o wuawmr&mwily;p;aom

rewpu:yuw ri;w&m;u;b&m;o twuuvyupjci;? ww,turon '*e
b&m;&io a&azmiawmEi'uawmr&mwi a&üt&ntlum iyíaeEiaom reEpa,mu
wu a&azmiawm o twuwi vyupjci;wjzpygon/ xaemuvi;Zi; }Anm;
ion}} ta&Eipyv;0;í]Zeu}[aomt&yo yaqmijci;c&on/ xaemuureyu
e,pm;ri;\ awmi;yerjzi ureyuwiac:,apc;y; prmyi uawm uecavo jzp
on/ au;Z;&iri;w&m;tay:wi rnoaomtli;Ei rnoaomtu;u ví po
bupn&uavaom trwu;\pw? apwoutalumi;jci;&mwon pw0ipm;z,
aumi;vygon/ xolaomtrwu;Ei &mZ0ipmr&uEmr taw;pmr&uEmo zwac:
aw/qcaom q&mcsp0;n\ taw;tjri onvn; yípw0ipm;z, aumi;vygon/

q&mcsp0;n on re0e!u;Anm;'vEiawqytpu re0e!u;x o u,wi
wu&u0ia&muaw/qonr [wb ureyue,pm;\ buqvr;nerjzi 0ia&mu
aw/qcalumi; azmjyxm;yg on/ xtalumi;u

}}vm...vm... oi,? 'bupt rtaqmixu vmc}}

}}u:yu ureyue,pm;ri;u,wiyl trwu;Anm;'vu av;pm;
c:pcio wpa,muayg/ u... tx0iawm? usty tce;x rvuawmb;}}

(c:sp0;n? 2017? 150)

[ía&om;xm;yg on/ rrajymjyvaom ori;ry*vwp0;tm; ruarmuacwo
ac:aqmi vmjci;jzpygon/ q&mcsp0;n on re0e!u;Anm;'vEiawq&mwi
&mZm"&mZ ta&awmyur;u wny'jyí ur;Eiur;jyow\ tumta0;u aw;jyxm;
jci;yijzpon/xaqmi;yg;wi trwu;Eiawqum xta&awmyur;on &mZ0iu
o&jci;Ei pum;ajyom;u Epou&jci;[ontjyi &mZ0iuay;on oice;pmrsm;u
yg&&Eialumi; 0;pmaq;aE;xm;yg on/ pae&mwi q&mcsp0;n u

}}ta&awmyur;u uEyjyeqjyp&u;eyygw,/ &mZ0iori;? ur;
wpqu zw&ulyq&i A[owqwmr&e weraetyb;/ A[owqwm
&maz&? paqmi;&? or;qn;&ououq&i tmoa0gw&m; ym;rm;&m
ym;rm;aumi;u tm;ay;www,}} [ívn;aumi;

(c:sp0;n? 2017? 154)

}}&mZm"&mZ ta&awmyur;qly;awm jrermbm omjyeqcygv;u uEy [m
ta&awmy u &mZ0iowr\ tjzpo m ,cw,/ oice;pm tjzpr ,cygb;/
'galumi uEyrm;cw,/ t'trm;u b,avmutx jyevnay;qy
c&ov qawm touq;wtxy}} [ívn;aumi;

(c:sp0;n? 2017? 155)

}}oi, oib,vajymrv? &mZm"&mZ ta&awmy ur;ujypcw uEy
Anm;'v [m &mZm"&mZ ta&awmyur;e ta0;umq;rm&aecw,/

uEY[mur;jyoomjzpcly; rrywur;&U tEpur,cb;/ tEprrtum
jylyuom ,crw ,av}} [ívn;aumi; (csp0;n? 2017?7)

]]t'y*vawtaumi;u uEyu ta&awmyur;xrm azmjycw ,/ ow&U
uo;yg; tlytrawu uEya&jyc&w ,/ olaoma&om;jypo uEY
u ,wiu vrmorjzpcb rvrmojzpcw ,/ oi ,cjc;wtwi;q&i
uEYAnm;'v[m ri;u; jAwZwv? ri;uep? trw'e? yi; , ouwv
jzprvb ti;...a'goe pwjreu ,jrevyo? a&laemut&nraraw;o/
roiavsmwtu uo? tli;tCmwu;o jzpcw , }}

(csp0;n? 2017? 159)

[ívn;aumi; &mZ0izw&mwi xm;&oionoaabmxm;tjrism;Ei x&mZ0ixr
b0oice;pm tjzp , oialumi;? rrzwaom? a&aom? oiaompmayrsm;Ei te;pyq;
vuem oialumi; aw;jyxm;yg on/

trwu;on vi;Zi;ta&awmEiywouí b0&iri;w&m;u; \ tjypay;ji;u
cc&on/ ppa&aoe*rm;wi tptrauumi;on[aom trwu;on tb , alumi
pta&wir vrm;rjzp&alumi;u q&mcp0;nu o \ tjrizi wiym;yg on/ x
t alumi;u

]]oi , ...ta&awmyur;u jyeqcwuEY? ppa&aoe*awrm tptr
aumi;cv| cs;jrmucc&wuEY[m vi;Zi;ta&uscgr twutcu?
tptraw vrm;c&wm bmalumijzpr , xio v}} [ívn;aumi;

(csp0;n? 2017? 161)

]]to owawazmujyecv? OmPynmtajrm tjri cw , i;cvlygy/
bmalumi t'vazmujyecw , i;&ov qjyeawm tajzu pwEv;rajzmi
rrwcvy? ta&awmyur;xu vrmorm;utwr , rb rvrorm;u
tw , crw , av/ ow&Uraumi;ruaw uEyxp;0icw ,/ rrylp
a&om;wpmxu Zmwaqm iy*vrm;&U raumi;uaw rrq tu;pu
ccw , / 'galumi...}}

(csp0;n? 2017? 162)

[ívn;aumi;? pmayur;*ersm;u oilum;o? jypo? zw&owtwu
rnonc , cuxm;&rnrsm;u vn;

]]oi , w ur;pmayrsm;zwluwtcgyjzpap? u , witvn&v jypci
u w t cgyjzpap? rrzw&a&&wpmxu uovtrrm;om rrxp;0iygap?
tuovtrrm;u va&miEiuygap? pmaya&om;o[m opmeo
ra0;ygapev uEY oway;vuyg&U/ t'g[m &mZm"&mZta&awmyur;u
jremjyeo&U ur;e*;pum;v lom rw , &pluygbu , }}

(c p 0; n 2017 162)

[í w i j x m; y g o n / y n m j y n 0 í E v; v a p a o m p m a y v u p m; o r m; ? p m a y y n m & i r m;
j z p a p v a o m q & m \ a p w e m u t r w u; \ u r; e *; p u m; t j z p c p m; a w; j r i u m a & ; o m;
x m; a l u m i; a w & y g o n /

3 4 / t r w ' e E i p m a & ; o \ t a w; t j r i

t r w ' e o n [o m 0 w j y n & i A n m; 0; \ o p m a w m c t r w w p 0; j z p o n / t & i
o c i & i; A n m; 0; e w & m p a o m t c g w i r o m; j z p o o o i & m Z m " & m Z \ t r w ' e r P & w
[a o m b \ t r n j z i c; a j r m u j c i; c & o j z p o n / t r w ' e o n o p m w & m; a p m i x e; & m w i
t v e a j z m i r e a o m t r w w p 0; j z p a l u m i; u & m Z 0 i o r i; p m r s u E m r m; w i x i & m; a y: v i
v s u & a y o n / x o a o m t r w E i t a w; e, y, ü o m; a & m u a w q v o n t a l u m i;
w p p w p & m o n q & m c p 0; n \ E v; o m; w i u y l i a e a y v r r n / x t a l u m i; w p p w p & m
o n [o m 0 w w c g; w i q i w p p; ? r i; a v m i; w p y g; ? t r w w p 0; E i w p z u y w
w p z u y i j r i u i; y i j z p o n /

& m Z 0 i p m r s u E m r m; a y: o l j y e v n l u n v u a o m t c g w p a e & m t a & m u w i
[o m 0 w w c g; o n w p z u y w w p z u y i v s u t a e t x m; j z p a l u m i; a w \ E i y g o n /
z c r n; a w m e w & m p l y; a e m u A n m; E u o n [o m 0 w a & e e; a w m o e e; o r; y u i; y & e
j y e v m a o m t c e j z p o n / x t c e w i j r w i; ü A n m; 0; \ & y u v y o n w n & a e q j z p
o n / x l a l u m i e e; r \ & ; r c w c g; w i w m 0 e u s v u & a o m t r w ' e o n o o i & m Z m " & m Z
t w u w c g; w p c y o m z i a y; c j i; j z p o n / x t c i; t & m E i y w o u í t r w ' e E i o o i
w \ & i w i; c p m; r t j r i r m; ? x a e m u t i; 0 - [o m 0 w E p a v; q , p p y r m; t a l u m i; ? q & m
c p 0; n \ t a w; t j r i ? t r w ' e \ a j y m p u m; p y o P m e j z i a z m j y x m; a l u m i; a w E i y g
o n /

[o m 0 w w c g; w p z u y w w p z u y i t a e t x m; E i y w o u í n v m c y o b i w i
& m Z m " & m Z o n t r w ' e t m; t j y p & a l u m i; a j y m q a o m t c g t r w ' e u t & i o w v i v n;
a o & r n j z p a l u m i; ? x t c e w i o o n q i j z l & i \ o p m c j z p a l u m i; ? q i j z l & i \ & e o
j z p y g u t o u a y; í w u r n j z p a l u m i; ? q i j z l & i o m v i & m Z y v i x u w i y u w & c y g u
t & i o m; u 0 i c i j y r n r [w a l u m i; ? o a o m q i j z l & i \ e m r o n & y u c m c j y z p í
½ y t a v m i; u o m a p m i a & m u a o m t m; j z i w c g; w p & u o m z i a y; j c i; j z p a l u m i; & & 0 0
a v \ m u w i x m; a l u m i; a w & y g o n / x l j y i

]], c t & i o m; a w m r i; j z p i y e v i v n; u l E y o n q i j z l & i c r n; a w m t m;
o p m a p m i o c o v t & i o m; a w m u v n; r j y w a p m i a & m u a y r n / t u , í
& e o w p y g; u t & i o m; a w m t m; y e p m; c a o m u l E y o n t o u a y; í E i a t m i
w u y g r n / u l E y o n o y e b u o l 0 i p m; & e u m; e w r & / u l E y o n
x; j z l a q m i; r i; u o m o p m c í c p m; r n / x; j z l a q m i; a o m o y e r i; u

b ,awmrrcpm;yg/ uElyuruí uyr;uawmraom uEyuao&ygrn/
o/aom jynxa&;um; yuawmrn/ tem*wwi &mZ0i ri;tququ
trwwumwu qprwiy(uern/}}

(Eiye;v? 2005? 162-163)

[í oo|i\ a&|armuawmwi trew&;owi av(muxm;alumi;aw&ygon/ x
talumi; xjriui;Eiywouí q&mc;po;n|u po'av(mup0ü trwu; \
toitjyi rno&aernjzpalumi;u

]]ti;... b ,v&crv rob;/ uEyxiumuawm vutycsxm;w vu
tpuawm qwqwwaeavr ,xiw ,/ touawm rweb;}}

(c;po;n? 2017? 33)

[í vnaumi;

]]oo|iuaalumuv vuwer ,/ trew&;uausmaxmuaemucjy(xm;v
torweb;/ t'vyxiwmy}}

(c;po;n? 2017? 33)

[í aw;jyxm;ygon/ xaemu &mZ0iwi trw'e toucr;om&m&yEi ywouí
trew&;wpcwn;alumi r [walumi;u

]]trw'eqw uleyu revr [wb;/ treu uEy&&? trexrm cvly;
t'treuy xwazmEicv}}

(c;po;n? 2017? 37)

[trw'e\ tajzypjzicpm;azmjyxm;alumi; aw&ygon/ avmuwi trew&;
[on qi&mjy ó emrsm;ü tp0&aewwaomvn; x|trew&;u &&atmipr;aqmiEi&
rnjzpalumi;? xaemu trew&;buü&ywní azmxwEi&rnjzpalumi; q&m
c;po;n|u vuemz , &maw;jriyxm;jci; jzpygon/

q&mc;po;n|on aemuq;ar;ce;tjzp trw'eu ,wiyg0icaom ti;0-
[om0wppu rno|jrialumi; ar;jre;xm;&i;jzi rru ,wi jyevncpm;wijyxm;
alumi;aw&ygon/ ppEiywouí rr\ tjriu trw'e\ jyevnajzlum;yji

]]pma&;q&m...armi&iar;ce; [m alumup&maumi;w ,/ pippawm 'ar;ce;
twu wuw tajzwppwp&may;Eiz| uEytqioi rjzpao;b;/
bmalumivqawm uEyu ,wivn; 'ar;ce;erru ,rr ar;jre;aeq
jzpvly/ 'awm y#ypmAsnu&P oabmrsl;yajymv&r ,/ ppyaw bmalumi
jzp&ov? ppbmalumiwu&ov/ pp[mo&aumi;rsu; ar;xway;ov
rq;rrsm;? trtztz&iao;rsu;? ravmijyirsm;? v ,aum ,maum v ,yu
, myursm;uvn; ar;xway;wmr [wvm;/ twi;uavomppu tjrwu

ae&wv om;aw [m o'buu , bu cjc m;ly; v ueuaw? aoe*awp&i ly;
 t'jiA ['ppyawjy'u? q iEue t'ppyawrm at m i j r i c i ; q w m b m v ?
 &erjci; q w m b m v ? 'ar;ce;aw [m trw'eu trw'eu jyear; aew
 ar;ce;aw x u t c s l u t 0 u r s m ; j z p w , p m a & ; q & m a v ; } }

(c;p0; n l ? 2017? 56)

[í aw&ygon/ pp [on r n o n j z p a l u m i ; w w u s u s t " y m , z i q & e r r u , w i
 t a j z & m a e & q j z p a l u m i ; ? x A [' p p y r s m ; t a l u m i ; u a w ; r v u w i ; v o m ; w i ; \
 t w i ; p p j z p a o m ? t c e w i ; w u c u a e & a o m u a v o m p p r s m ; t a l u m i ; u a w ; r a e a l u m i ; ?
 v o m ; w o n r r w \ t w i ; p p y r s m ; x u j y i y p p y r s m ; u o m A s L [m r s l ; p j z i w u c u a e l u
 j c i ; o n r n o e n ; [í p o n j z i p m z w o w t m ; y g 0 i p 0 ; p m ; a w ; a w m r a p & e a c : a q m i
 v m a l u m i ; a w & y g o n / p p E i l i r ; c r ; j c i ; [o n r n o n a e & m ü o a E w n a l u m i ; p m z w o
 w u , w i j y e v n q e ; p p r a p y g o n / p o l q e ; p p r a p & e q & m u o \ t a w ; t j r i j z i
 w i j y x m ; j c i ; j z p y g o n /

3? 5/ r i ; u e p E i p m a & ; o \ t a w ; t j r i

r i ; u e p o n [o m 0 w j y n & i & m Z m " & m Z \ t w i y i c y n m & ? a r m q & m ? y a & m [w ?
 p p o & p o n * P y ' r s m ; j z i j y n E u a e a o m & m Z r E b c t r w w p 0 ; j z p o n / r i ; u e p o n
 t n w & b 0 r t x i u & b 0 o w u v r ; v m & o j z p o n / r i ; u e p o n o m r a P b 0 ?
 v 0 w b 0 r s m ; j z i 0 i x u u v j y / a e & o j z p o n / r i ; u e p o m r a P b 0 w i r c i r q ; r u ; u
 o l u ; u z r ; q ; o m ; a o m t c g v x u í o l u ; t r w i u e t r u j y v y c & y g o n / x l a e m u
 r c i j z p o u r l u n & u o j z i a r m i j z p o e A m e l c a u s m i ; q & m a w m x r a l u ; y ó m c e p q ,
 v n í o l u ; u j y e q y & m u e t j z p r v w c & o j z p o n / p o & i A ' O m P b 0 ? E m ; a u s m i ; o m ;
 b 0 r s m ; u j z w o e ; l y ; r i ; t r w j z p c a v a o m r i ; u e p \ b 0 o n p w 0 i p m ; z , a u m i ;
 o u o l x t r w u ; E i q & m c s p 0 ; n l w \ a w / q & m t a w ; p m r s u E m r s m ; o n v n ; p w 0 i p m ;
 z , j z p y g o n /

r i ; u e p o n p u m ; q e ; ? p u m ; u w r s m ; a j y m w w o j z p o n / x p u m ; a j y m q r E i
 y w o u í q & m c s p 0 ; n l u p w i a r ; j r e ; & i ; j z i r r \ t j r i r s m ; u a z m j y x m ; y g o n / r i ; u e p
 a j y m a e u j z p a o m p u m ; u w p u m ; q e ; r s m ; o n t w n r a j y m c i a o m t a l u m i ; w p c a l u m i
 r [w a l u m i ; o j r w w / r j y w a j y m q a v & a o m p u m ; q , r s l ; u o m a j y m q a l u m i ; u

]] t v e n ; r e p y a o m ? a & m i & r E i p y a o m ? u i ; q w r e p y a o m ? r a & m r a E m r E i
 p y a o m ? 0 & , t m ; x w r e p y a o m ? o v e p y a o m ? o r m " e p y a o m ? y n m e l
 p y a o m ? v w a j r m u r e p y a o m ? v w a j r m u r u q i j c i w 0 m P t j r i e p y a o m
 p u m ; ? ' q , r s l ; u a j y m w m / ' q , r s l ; u o m o j r w w / r j y w a j y m q & m a o m
 p u m ; q , r s l ; j z p w , }

(c;p0; n l ? 2017? 65)

[í ae&mwi;wi ajymq ty? ajymqoionpum;rsm;u wiyxm;jci;jzpon/ xlyi
 ojrwwon xpum;q ,rsk;u ajymqluaomvn; rron ojrwr[wc alumi;?
 ojrw[on]]ojrwqwm pum;exqpoe;vywmr r[wbt o? tui? 0Zmp&P
 eom xqpoe;vywm/ uyuojrwwajymq&maom pum;rsm;u ajymq Eiv|i
 ojrwjzpr ,xicou;}} [íe ,y ,to;o;wi awjrilum;oae&aom ajymqrto
 rsm;u av|mcay;vaom? onmoEiajymqww&rjzi rru ,rr b0irjri vaom
 q&m \ taw;tjriyijzpygon/

ri;ueptrwu;on u ,awmbu;tem;aeí pen;emici;? twwerw au mujci;
 pontvyrsm;tji ee;wi;a&;&m? ppa&;&m ponwi;a&; jyna&;uprsm;Eiqion
 pmvrmrsm;u vn;pu;ay;&ojzpon/ xtvyuprsm;Eiywouí q&mcp0;n u po
 pmvrmrsm;pu;ay;&aomlumi ri;ueptaejzi vxucjci;u rm;ly[, qum aemiw& r&
 ar;ce;xwvuygon/ xtar;u ri;uep \ taw;ypjzi

]],ctx oiar;cor|xrm taumi;q;ar;ce;y/ u y&U tZiwu w;azmz
 oi buK;pm;vuwm/ ti;... raxmiru , ajz&iawm oiajymov
 igvxucwm rm;jyv m;? &[e;b0e quaec& taumi;om;uvm; qw
 pwrsk; u yrm rlumcPay:w ,/ 'gayray:avwi; t'pwu u y
 csk;Erowoi ypvuw ,/ rryjwtr rrwm0e , &mayg/ luu [i;cg;o;
 yiupuly;r tAE&o&uv rcs&aumi;vm;v raw;tyb;/ 'galumi
 ri;uepb0rm u y tao tcm &ioeypvuw , }}

(csp0;n 2017? 79-80)

[í aw;jria&;om;xm;ygon/ avmuoabmt& ovrwxm;aom e ,y ,a'o
 tqitwe;to;o;wi rra&mu&mae&mwi aseyvucEi&rnjzply; rEpvon
 cpm;rrsk;rygaom &ioerrsk;jzi b0wi;u&ioeapvaom q&m \ tjriu aw&ygon/

jci o;oycu

q&mcp0;n on ori;aemuc&mZ0i0wlrsm;pmu a&;om;aom pma&;q&mwp0;
 jzpygon/ &mZ0ivmtjzptyrsm;u 0wzew;rtwwynmjzi aygi;pyum ori;
 toori;tjrixuyaom taw;tjrirm;jzi a&;om;av&ojzpon/ xlxu eu½i;
 ontaw;tjrirm;u ori;qim aqmi;ygrsm;wi yíawEiygon/ ppmwr;u
 jy/p&mü tavvmcpmtyjzpaom q&mcp0;n \]]rl;rwrsm;Ei awqjci;}} aqmi;ygrsm;
 wi tallumi;t&mxu taw;tjriu yíaw&ygon/

O;pm&mZobuEiawq&mwi &mZobu \ uo;yg; trt&mrm;u ay:viatmi
 wiyxm;ygon/ &mZobu trwu;on aemiawmo [ouz , &m; í nawm e&o [yaw
 u ee;wi&mwi e&o [yawu x;ee;&apvaom qEm*w? o [ou raueyaom
 a'go*w? alumu aomb , m*w? trerjriaomarm [*wpon t*wav;yg;u

vupm;callumi; aw;jyxm;ygon/ xaemu rrt&iocitm; twwtajtaerm;jzi
 ½jrio;oyum ajymrrm;ji;walumi &mx;rEwy,jci;c&allumi;wu azmjyxm;ygon/
 q&mc;0;n\ ptaw;tjrirwpqi avmuvom;won t*wav;yg;u rvupm;
 oialumi;? twwtallumi;t&mrm;on jyu'epmrsm;wi &conreaomvn;
 ypyewi tu&r;ygu jyevnto;rjyloiaawalumi; pontaw;tjriu &&apyg
 on/

pEausmo0;loEi aw/q&mwi]u0vuPmowyur;} u0;wní aq;aE;
 xm;jci;jzpygon/ xur;on 0;loa&om;jypon [wr[wtwnjy&mwi tav
 tvmtrwtom;tmen;ygu aumucuvom;Eialumi;? pjyóemu tceuec
 jii;ceraeb u0vuPmowyur;vm c&mcqpt"ym,rsm;u teuzioialumi;
 vr;neaq;aE;um 0;aqmiaw;jyxm;ygon/ wppwpcu aumucucrnqygu
 ouqi&mrm;pmwu avvmrwom;r tm;aumi;&rnjzpalumi;? aw;qívuvr;
 rraom tcsutvursm;u jyóemyoPmewnaqmu aeji;xu? vuawtu&;
 &Eiaom yoPmeolajym;vjrioialumi; azmjyxm;ygon/

re0e;u;Anm;'vEiaw/q&mwi &mZ0iori;pmtyrsm;u zwrnqv[i A[ow
 &&r[r[wb? b0oice;pm;tjzp &,Ei&rnjzpalumi;? ur;jyowon rrwjypaom
 ur;pmrsm;Ei ta0;umq;rm &raeoialumi;? re0e;u;u,wiyi rrjypaomur;r
 tEpw&m;rm;ur,Eicaomalumi toowrsm;azmujyeum touq;ontxay;qyc
 &alumi;ponwu azmjyxm;ygon/ xjiur;pmayrsm; zwuonjzpap? jyponjzpap
 xowon xpmayrsm;Ei ra0;apvallumi;u ur;e*;pum;tjzp tav;teuaw;jri
 jyxm;onuvn; aw&ygon/ xalumi ynma&e,y,r uleawmwtm;v;on rrw
 jyipaompm? rrwzwaompm? rrwoaomtoponrsm;u pmoice;xomru? avmux
 ol aep0,aqm ito;c&rn[aom torrm;&&apygon/

trw'eEiaw/q&mwi [om0wwcg; wpcsywwpcsyi taictaerpí
 trw'e\ o&aumi;yor? trew&m;u,lunr? xtrew&m;u azmxwEirpon
 av;pm;tw,z,&m tcursm;uaw&ygon/ trw'eon ooí\truxm;jci;c&o
 jzpcuomvn; ooí\vu&;oz,jzpvconrm rrreji;xu xtrew&m;u
 tm;v;a&wixwyEiaomalumijzpalumi;? pp[onEiywouí vom;won jyi
 A['ppyrsm;xu twi;ppjzpaomuavomppuom aoe*AsL[mtr&;r&;zi wuxwEi
 &e;u;pm;oialumi;pon ppEilir;cr;a&; oabmw&m;tairsm;u trw'etjrijzi
 cpm;um aw;jrijyxm;alumi; aw&ygon/ xalumi trew&m;ucsjrWE;rEi avmb?
 a'go? arm[rsm;Eiwyjy/vmaom uavompprsm;u Eiatmiwu&rnjzpalumi;
 pontaw;tjrirsm;&&apygon/

ri;uepEiaw/q&mwi ynm&yqi&m a0g[m&rsm;uXmyemí xnoi; a&;om;xm;
 allumi;? at;cr;vyuom &iomraPtjzpr qyutun;weaom ee;wi;a&;&m
 twiyictwzjzpv&jci;u aemiw&raealumi;? tb,alumiqaom oon ri;uep

b0u taotcsm &ioeypvuaumi; azmjyxm;yg on/ q&mcsp0;n non o \
 taw;tjrism;u ri;uepae&mr 0ia&muajmqxm;jci;jzpon/ xalumi uleawmw
 t;m;v;on rr&ywn&m e,y,t o;o;wi rnontcutc tluytwn;rm;yi
 &apumr wnllir&iusupm &ioeEi&&rn [aom taw;tjrism;u&&apygon/
 q&mcsp0;n \ rl;rwrsm;Eiaw/qjci; wi &mZ0iur;vmpmtyrsm;r talumi;t&mrsm;u
 wu&u , o;xm;aomvn; taw;tjri , qcursm;on x&mZ0iq&mwXu wpqiy
 í aw;jriyxm;alumi; Ei; , 0jriawEiygon/

e*;

q&mcsp0;n non A'0i? &mZ0itp&on ori;aemuctalumi;t&mrsm;u 0wkw?
 0w&n? aqm;yg;? uAsponjzi a&om;av&owp0;jzpygon/ ori;aemucpmayrsm;
 a&om;&mwí talumi;t&mtjzptyuxu xori;qí&m tcutvursm;Eiqupyí
 a0zeaqaE;jci;oabmygon taw;tjrism;pmu xnoi;a&om;alumi;aw&yg on/
 rl;rwrsm;Eiaw/qjci; aqm;yg;rm;wi rrwijyvaom taw;tjrism;u &mZ0ivm
 rl;rwrsm; \ajzqr yoPmejzi a&om;xm;yg on/ yxZ0ynm&rl;rww \ uo;yg;
 trt&mrsm;u &mZ0ipmruEmrsm;ay:r avmuruEmpmay:o ajymi;a&wí ay;vuon
 oabmjzpon/ xowijy&mwí tceumvtyi;tjcm;rm;u jzwoe;í xttwwumvr
 tjzpoepwEipyv&om orwz , &mwu o , aqimvjci;rs;jzpon/ wpen;t m;ji
 twwu ypyejzic&om uyí rpmouyr ormouyqo? t*wav;yg;r jA [p&w&m;
 av;yg;qo? A ['ppatmiEijci;r tZwppatmiEijci;qo a&½aw;jrium a&om;
 xm;jci;yijzpygon/

usr;u;pm&i;

csp0;n/(2017)/pwwturl rl;rwrsm;Eiaw/qjci; vum'ypmtywul&euel
 Eiye;v/(2005)/t|rturl &mZm"&mZta&awmyur; t m;rmecoppmayl&euel
 z;usm;? 0;/ (2011)/ 'w , turl acwrjerm&mZ0i/tu&om;pwu;csc&tEynm/ &euel
 (2008)/ ree;&mZiawm'u; o [&wempmayl &euel
 jrermptz/(1980)/ jrerm b"metu&om;cy? tw - 5l &euelpmayArmel
 jrermptz/(2006)/t|rturl t*vy-jrerm b"mel &euel wuovrm;yEywul
 jrermptz/(2008)/ 'w , turl jrerm b"mel &euel aevi;yEywul

ri;&'o{ci;ree;"av , 0au;r t zUrm;

oi;oi;arm*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on jrermpaye , y , vm a½;uAsmu@wiyg0iaom awmiiacw pmq½i
oc\ ri;&'A{ci;r ee;"av x;p , 0au;rtzUrm;u avvmwijyxm;ji; jzpygon/
ya'o&mZacwvm tqitwe;jirm;vaom jrerm , 0au;r ee;wi;tp0tvmrsm;?
 , 0au;r"av x;prsm;u o½Ei&e&n& , í wijyxm;aomppmwr;jzpygon/ ee;"av
x;p , 0au;rtzUrm;u avvm&mwi pmq½ioc\ ri;&'A{ci;pmtyu tavvmc
tjzp ovrwvmygon/ pmwr;wíee;wuytcr;tem; ui;yy? IrUwn ee;wn
y? vuaqmi quoy? &qay;y? omoema&aqmi&uy? ycuwir*v tcr;tem;
ui;yyrsm;u avvmwijyxm;yg on/ pmwr;ygwijycursm;on a½;ri;tququ
w\ tcr;tem;? ee;wi;t rt&m? ee;"av , 0au;rrsm;u A [owjzpz , o½Eirn
jzply; {ci;avvmorm;twu taxmutujyEirn jzpygon/
aomcsua0g [m&rsm;/ / ee;wuy? IrUwn ee;wn? vuaqmi? &qay;? omoema&?
ycuwir*v m/

e'qe;

{ci;uAsmon jrermpaywixi&m;aom av;v;py uAsm&n;u;wprsk;jzply; cnm;
xn0gpm ae&m , v;u&aom uAsmpmaywprsk;jzpygon/ xiyi jrerm b&i ri;jrwrsm; \
om;awm? or;awm? ajr;awm? jrpawmrsm; \ ycuwir*v tcr;tem;wi oqu&l;&i
aom ee;wi;om;acsmaw; ocsi;vn;jzpon/ , i;uol ycu vocí;? om;acsmocsi;
yijzpaomvn; om;acsmocsi;ouou r[wub tzlcri;om;? rior;av;wtm;
Zmwao;? Zmwrmewu xuoeapon &mZ0iaumí;rsm;? be;awmbUrm; ee;"av
 , 0au;r"av x;ptzUrm;jzi xnoi;a&zUav&uygon/ xuo {ci;uAsm rsm;wi
xi&m;aoma&jrerm ri;aumi;ri;jrwrsm; \ vu&&n? Ev;&nu yjiajymiajrmupm
zlqx m;aomallumi Zmwao;Zmwrmewu xuoeuwu<uapaom trsk;om;a&qí&m
ocsi;uAsm trsk;tpm;jzpygon/

awmiiacwpmq &ioc\ ri;&'A{ci;r ee;"av x;p , 0au;rtzUrm;u avvm
wijy&mü tce;(1)wi pmq twywt u:O;? tce;(2)wi {ci; a0g [m&Ei oabmobmO?
tce;(3)wi ri;&'A{ci;r ee;"av x;p , 0au;rtzUrm; [í tyi;(3)yi;cum
avvmwijyxm;yg on/ ppmwr;wi ee;wuy tcr;tem;ui;yyrsm;? IrUwn ee;wn
yrsm;? vuaqmi quoyrsm;? &qay;yrsm;? omoema&aqmi½ucursm;? ycuwir*v
tcr;tem;ui;yyrsm; [í ee;"av x;p , 0au;rqi&mrsm;u avvmwijyxm;yg on/

* a'g uwm? uxu? jrerm pmXme? &wemywu ov/

**p{ci;on jrermre, y, wi tp0tvm;rm;caom jrerm, 0au;ru azm;ay;c
aom uAsmwprsk; tjzpo&&ygon/**

1/ pmq t wlyw t u;0;

**pmq&ioc on ou&mZ960jynEpwi awmiirUüz; jrií avm;3000rL; \
ajr; ri;aZ, &Erw\Er &iax;r, \om;jzpygon/ pmq&ioc on pmayrsk;&r
qi;ouvmojzpygon/ pmqoni, p0uyi tb;Ei0;&jzpowxr pmayen;rm;
&&cl;y; tou(10)Ept&, i, p0uyi uAsmvumrsm; zllqEicon/**

**pmq&ioc on awmiib&i ewoiaemixwi trwtjzp cpm;xr;&ucly;
xri;vuxu jaewuon} rsk;awmp0&wupyqcon/ ou&mZ 972cEpwi awmi
irUu taemubuveri; tvawmjynv i ewoiaemiu &iocu ay;awmr&m pmq
on awmiirti;0oU vuygc&on/ ti;0o&a&muaomtcg taemubuveri;u
vuaqmi, rL;&mX;u ay;tycon/ &ioc on vuaqmi, rL;tjzp xr;&u&
aomalumi vuaqmi, rL;&ioc [ausmlum;con/**

**pmq&ioc\ trnu]&iou, } [vn;aumi;]&iou} [vn;aumi;? &ioc [vn;aumi;
trsk;rsk;a&rwazmjyluon/ pmq&ioc on i, p0u xm;usi; oermaom
ojzpaomalumi ouou, cEm&o]&iou, } [ac:a0:clu [ewygon/ &iou, r
&iou-&ioc [í ajymi;vac:qlu [ewygon/**

**pmqon taemubuveri;w&m; be;awmbU&wrsm;? ri;&'A{ci; &wem
ajymire qiawmarmue;rm;u a&;om;jy\pcon/ &w(11)y'om a&;om; zllqcaomvn;
a&;pycor\ pmaytm;v;on taumi;pm;rm;omjzpccon/ pmq\ri;&'A{ci; tzlltEU
on aumi;rejnply; zllEyrvepmav;euon/ ri;&'A{ci;wi ab;avmi;awm
b;avmi;awmw\ pprua&;u tp0wpurzlb r[muovawm;rm; talumi;uyg
xnoi;a&;zlxm; í yryjnpr½on/ rrt&ioci\ be;awmu zllq&mü tx; av;eu
cr;em;atmizllEuxm;&m {ci;a [mi;(12)apmiwi taumi;q;{ci; [pmqynm&iwu
owrwcluon/ pmq\ b0e*;u ro&ay/**

2/ {ci;a0g [m&Ei oabmo bmo

**{ci; [aom a0g [m&Eiywouí yn&i to;o;wu t"yg, trsk;rsk; zllqclu
ygon/ {ci; [aom a0g [m&u jrerm t b"mewi**

**]]{ci;? at;*i;^e-i, &, aomb&iom;awm or;awmrsm; Zmwrmewu<u
ap&e rsk;&p0qu be;wec;awmuycyuzllqaom a&;uAsmwprsk;}}¹**

¹ jrerm pm t zll? 2008? 434/

[íziqxm;yg on/

jrermpayori;wi q&m u;0;azarniwiu

]]{csi;[onrm ri;om;ri;or;i , rsm; t m; { , iawmr*vm qi , iui; y
ontcgrsm;wi ycuwi;üoyí ycuuví oqu&l;&i acsmarm&aom
uAsmjzpí *woabmrsl;wi ou0iaom ocsi;yijzpon/}}²

[íziqxm;yg on/

yyg;0;au&m&i \ u0bm&wur;ü

]]{csr;om , mpm zUq&wzw&aom talumi;csi;&mu a&om;pu;aom
ocsi;jzpí]{csi;} [ac:alumi;}}³

[íziqxm;yg on/

y*0eaxmuri;0;wiu vn; uAsmAEom&ur;wi

]]{csi;qonrm jrermbmomjzpon/ {csr;om , mpm talumi; csi;wu
zUqaom uAsmuqvon/}}⁴

[íziqjyxm;yg on/

q&m u;0;ve;u uAsm om&wo* [wi

]]{csi;qonum; &mZ0i talumi;csi;w oepoemu om , macipm {um&E
jzi tq;cvu pmqynm&w zUElpu;í u&l;&i qaom uAsm tpyrsl;
jzpavon/}}⁵

[íziqxm;yg on/

pmqynm&i to;o;w\zicqut& {csi;[on b&i \ i , & , aom om;awm?
or;awmrsm; ycuwir*vm qi , iui;y&mü {csi;zlcw t m; Zmwao; Zmwrm
wu<u vmap&Ei rsl;&p0qu be;wec;awmuycywu *P , z , jzpatmi om , m
||irajimi;aom tojzpon {um&Ejzipí {um&Ejzitq;owum a&zUxm;aom ee;wi;
uav;acsmocsi;uAsmyi jzpygon/

{csi;oabmobm0u avvm\unontcg t"utalumi;t&m ra&zU r {csi;zlc
ri;om;ri;or;t m; rnontalumi;u rnoav\mwirntalumi; y#nmOpum;q
onuaw\&on/ xlatumi{csi;ü t"utalumi;ura&zU r 0;pm y#nmOpum;qjci;rm
{csi;w\ tp0tvm? {csi;w\ oabmobm0jzpallumi; aw\&ygon/ {csi;pmqw on
{csi;wi urmyujci;? urmwnjci;? b'urmay:aygujci;? b&m;&iAsm'way;awmrjci;

² azarniwi? 0;? 2013? 44/

³ au&m&i? 0;? (yym;)? 1966? 439/

⁴ wi? 0;(y*0eaxmuri;)? 2013? 37/

⁵ ve;? q&m? 1981? 240/

paom talumi;t&mwu tv;0;oi ov xnoi;azmjyzUqwwluygon/ {ci;on
ri;om;i, ? ri;or;i, w {, iawmr*vm qi, iui;yon t cg ou s; &aom oci;
uAzmjzpontwu ri;om;i, ? ri;or;i, rsm;typurn ycu \ tji t qiu zUq
aom ycubUuvn; xnoi;zUqav&ygon/

ri;qur sm;u xnoi;zUqci;onvn; {ci;w\oabm v u Pm wp&yyi
jzpon/ tcU{ci;rsm;wi r[morwri;rpí waumi;? oa&acw&m ri;qur sm;? y*?
yi; , acwri;qur sm;? {ci;zUcom;awm? or;awm? tE, awmw pyr&omu u í
zUqav&ygon/ {ci;wwi b&i be;awm u c; u s; zUqav&onu vn; awU&ygon/
ojzp&m {ci;wwi be;awm bU rsm;on rygrjzpyg0i&aom u@wp&yyijzpygon/
be;awm uzUq&mw i Zmw? rs;&? vu&&n? Ev;&n? pr;aqmiEir? Atmijrion
wuyrsm;? ||rUwn ee;wnjci;? ponwu xnoi;zUqav&ygon/ xlyi {ci;wi
omoema& up&y rsm; aqmi&ujci;? aumi;ruo vjyijci; wu vn; azmjya&zUav &yg
on/ taemubuveri;\ aumi;rjyiu ri;&'A{ci;wi x;x;jcm;jcm;zUqx m;
onu awU Eiygon/

xalumi ||rUwn ee;wnjci; talumi;u zUqci;rmvn; {ci;w\oabm obm0
wp&yyijzpalumi; awU&ygon/ xlyi{ci;wwi {ci;zUcri;om;? ri;or;wu ac;q
aom tmvyuzUqci;rmvn; {ci;w\oabm v u Pmyi jzpygon/

3/ ri;&'A{ci;r ee;"av x;p , 0aus;r t zlrsm;

ee;"av , 0aus;rEi ywou í jrerm t b"me t u s0;clywi

]]ee;-e^ ee;^ ri;rzm;Ei ewrsm;ae&m taqmi}}⁶

[vn;aumi;

]]x;p-e^xe;Ze^ t ½;tp0? tp0t vm? "avbmom/}}⁷

[vn;aumi;

]]"av-e^ 'av^vy½;vyp0? x;p? tav t x? tav t ui? p½u?obm0}}⁸

[vn;aumi;-

]], 0aus;r-e^, iaus;r^ (1)orarlajjypaom tjytr(2)vrtqitwe;
ajymi;vw;wu vmapaom "av x;xr;? "av? uio w (4)om , m llunE;

⁶ jrerm pm t zU? 1979? 229/

⁷ , i;? 164/

⁸ , i;? 186/

z , t m^{1/2}cpm;&&apEiatmi t u s; jylEiaom Ewrvurtwwynm/ , i;
twwynm pr;&njzi praqmi^{1/2}ujor}}⁹

[vn;aumi;ziqxm;yg on/

xziqcut& ee;"av , 0au;r[on ri;rz&m;w\ tp0tv mxe;or;
vmcaom vy&;vyp0? "avx;xr;[, q&rnjzpygon/

{ci;uAsm on ee;wi;uav;acsm oci;jzply; b&iom;awm or;awmrsm; jrycu
wi r*vmtcr;tem;wi uav;i , tyaysmap&e acsmoyonoabmu tajccia&z
xm;jci;jzpygon/ b&iri;jrw\ om;awm or;awmav;rm;tm; av\mu oi;aomuAsm
jzpí x;ee;0e;uiEiqiaom ee;"avx;p , 0au;rqi&m tcr;tem; taqmita , mi
rsm;tjzp ee;wuytcr;tem;ui;yysm;? ||rwnee;wnyysm;? vuaqmiquoy?
&qay;yysm;? omoema&; aqmi^{1/2}ucsursm;? ycuwir*vmtcr;tem;ui;yysm;? vuz
ay;tyysm;u ri;&'A{ci;wivn; xnoi;a&zUxm;allumi; awU&on/

3¹/ ee;wuytcr;tem;ui;yy

ee;"avx;pEiywouí ri;&'A{ci;wi {ci;bUcri;om;av; \ b;awm&i;
jzpo r[mo[o&r[m"r&mZbUc anni&r;ri;w&m;u;on olum;ri;Eiyi Ei; , 0
pxm;v\iomveojzpygon/ we;c;t mPmji;xeojzply; &wemy&ti;0x;ee;u
or;jre;í ee;wuyui;yyu -

]o[o&? r[m"r&mZm? rnawmomei? tmPmxeji; b;awm&i;v?i?
xe;vi;omoem? yialumi;&mí? &wemy&? ee;Xneu? a^{1/2}0lrUu;?
oruly;r? n;n;a&mijcn? a^{1/2}bwnv;u? ajrmupna^{1/2}pi? ovir&?
w;r&;ig;rn? pn&nee;zU? wpq , ig;yg;? ri;cr;em;wn? yPm;&pazm?
&ia&m om , m? aeZmjruE? aZ , w[? c&oi;pppp? vu sm&pEi? ewjrprEm?
r*v m^{1/2}wze;? a&oze;xu? ajrmuee;uu? boucu}}¹⁰

[a&zUxm;yg on/ anni&r;pm;ri;&&Erwon ou&mZ (961)c waygi; ve; 12&u?
aomllu maewi ri;nri;om; r;rwawm taygi;lc&vu a^{1/2}ee;wuawmron/ jrerm
ri;w\ "avx;pt& ee;wu&mwi o[o&r[m"r&mZm bUtrnuc , ly;]&wemy&
ac:]ti;0? ||rwop[emrnemrowrvu ee;or;y? Ouiziy qi , iui;yawm
rygon/

x tcr;tem;wi a&pi twjzi jy\vyxm;aom ajrmupn? toay:viao m r&;pn?
(0g)ovipn? pnbu;ig;r&;? w& , mig;yg;w\ u om , mpmw;rw&on/ a&;tp0tqu
uyi ee;awm xü zUpn;xm;aom vu0ri;cr;ri;em; wpq , ig;yg;rm (1) vuwilum

⁹ jrerm pm t z! 1979? 224/

¹⁰ ^{1/2}i oc? 1967? 22/

ur;cuawm? (2)jcaocur;cuawm? (3)ur;avmi;awmi , ? (4)pvi;ajrmiaawm? (5) u; y
v;sm;awm? (6)ajcei;awm? (7)zeyawm? (8)om;lr; , yawm? (9)oev;u? (10)awmia0;?
(11)jcaocu&m;? (12)jrlwm? (13)ar;axmuawm? (14)us;ajcawm? (15) t;ypawm¹¹ w/
yg0ion/

v u , mri;cr;em; wpq , ig;yg;rm (1)ur;cyawm? (2)ur;avmi; awm;u;?
(3)pvilumi , ? (4)pvilum;u;? (5)e*g;cur;cu? (6)&paxmi ur;cu? (7)ye;awmi;
u;? (8)jrlwmawm? (9)waumi;awm? (10)aomua& wiaawm? (11)t;ypawm? (12)ru&;
u&m;awm? (13)ee;b;tyawm (&wemtw lly;aom ri;cr;awmtp)? (14) , yrm;awm?
(15)e*g;aym? b;v;0g? qie? *Vlejz? jcaopr;? arsmua^{1/2}? a'gi;eu [aom &wemtwly;
aom ri;cr; t vawmtp;rm; ¹² wyg0ion/

tcr;ten;wiyg0iaomewjrprEm? rEmuejrp[on oe&i;pilu , aom a&u
qvygon/ xa&u jA [m;u;&pa , muuo yPm;&p0;u usuoar*v&aom
vu&pc^{1/2}oi;ppppji oe;avmi;ze;um aeZmjruEuuií jaZ , sw} atmiygap
own;[qreawmi;um ^{1/2}wzwu&on/ xtcewi ri;u;on oze;y0ay:ü
cawmriy; a&oe;bouc , awmron ee;"avx;p? , 0au;ru o&ygon/

ri;&'Ari;om;av; \ b;awm anmi&r;ri;w&m;u; ew&mpaomtcg ri;om;av;
 \ zci taemubuveri;on ou&mZ(967)c? waygi;vjynausm (13)&u? we*aEae
wi r[m"r&mZmbc , um ti;0aⅇawmü u;u; , cr;em;pm boucyu;i;y yu
{ci;wi-

]]&ibbe;jri? ziaom0ui? tp&iu;? 'i&aEmi? ajymiajymipv , ?
rsujcna&miarmi;? 0;aygi;oi;usp? arminpvi;aymu? ri;ajrmuweqm?
weqmig;ax? cuaAn;n;? a^{1/2}x;je;vm;? aeicnwm;r? yPm;&pp? yii
aeZm? vu&mc^{1/2}? atmiqjyXme;? ajree;wucg? r*vmuip0? oze;
y0xu? pv;0oipm? rnawm0mr? r[m"r&mZm? tu&m^{1/2}e;p? boucu?
uu;w;jrn? un;jyn0om? jrermri;r? aZ , sw[? c^{1/2}wy;? r^{1/2};
vuajrmu? waumuc&m? wlrwm&n? ywu;n'ri;? c^{1/2}oi;Ei? cucü;
&a&m? pnajmwpqe;? pn0e;ovi? y0iwavmi? awmawmiui;ule;?
^{1/2}ure;xe&i? ywixyarm? aomaom0evu? uuuuu[;[;? ue;v;
E;on? xyw;wnax;ax;-Avaz;az;}}¹³

[a&z0xm;yg on/ ri;om;av; \ zcrn;awm taemubuveri; 0uizi ee;wuyu
ajree;wi p&iu;ii;yygon/ 0uiziywi taemuzuveri;on w&;&w&& awmuy
aom "i t u? awmuajymiaeaom a^{1/2}pv , wu0wqixm;on/ tru&wem pic , xm;

¹¹ armiarimiwi? 0;? 1975? 6/

¹² , i;? 6/

¹³ ^{1/2}ioc? 1967? 32/

aom 0;aygi;oi;up? om;lr; ,y? oevux;jzL? a½ajcei;[aom ri;ajrmu &wem
ig;yg;wu jyi qixm;ly; aea&miwm;q;&e a½x;rsm;u jzer;xm;on/

yPm;&pa, muwon vusmc&oi;wi aeZmyiaezmirsm;Ei a&uxn í
uiaqmium atmiaZ, wtpc: on *gxmrEmersm;u ½wzwuon/ taemubu
veri;on ajree;wi&aom a&oze;om;Eijyvyaom yviaamay:xium &mZbaou
boucawmron/ r[m"r&mZm [aombU c, awm ron boucywi c&oi;? pn?
ajAm? wavmipon w&, mig;yg;wu w;rwluygon/ ri;om;av; \ ycuwir*v
ui;yciewi w&, mw;rwor sm;jzi awmawmirsm;x ywixyom;ly; ZrL'ygpue;v;
o yUEom;allumi;u ay:viatni]u u u u s k u [; [;]?]ue;v;E;on} [aompum;v;
jzi t"ym, w pum;Epv;xium w&, mw;rwor sm; \ totit m;ay:viatni
]u s k u u u }?] [; [;] [o;p x m;on r m t"ym, av;euay:viapaom tztjzp awUEi
ygon/ puow&, m r s k ;p w / om, m l i r a n m i ; a o m t o r s m ; j z i b o u c y u i ; y a v &
aom ee;"av x;p , Oaus;rwu o½yazma&zlxm;ygon/

3? 2/ lrwneewny

{ci;wi ee;"av x;p x;p, Oaus;rwp&yjzpaom b&iri;jrwwlrwn
ee;wnyrsm;u v n; xnoi;a&zlav&ygon/ ri;&'A{ci;wi &r;naemi o;0;w
jripi;? yi; , ? ppui;lrwsm; wnaxm ium x;ee;p;pcallumi;? ri;tp0tqu typ;
vm&mr ow;ri;zsm;on ti;0lrwnum ee;wu callumi;wu -

]]ow;ri;zsm;? w&m;yii? oevuxxu? a½bajymiajym i wnjeaxmi
&i}}¹⁴

[a&zlxm;onu awUygon/ ri;&'Ari;om;av; \ ab;awmqijzLrsm;&i b&iaemi
ausm xiaem&xmon ou&mZ(910)cwi auwrwijnwnaxmicallumi;? Ouawm
(36)Ep ou&mZ(913)cEpwi [om0wwi x;ee;wnly; ri;jyawmrallumi;wu-

]]e&uie;? a½jynjre;í? a½ee;ajcmuaqmi? a½awmio*g? [om0w? ac:n
wirn? a½lrwn \ }}¹⁵

[a&zlxm;ygon/ puob&iw \ be;we;c;ßu;rm;rallumi lrwneewni x;ee;
p;pav&uaom ee;"av x;p , Oaus;rwp&yu v n; awU&&ygon/

3? 3/ vuaqmi quoy

{ci;wi ee;"av x;p , Oaus;rwp&yjzpaom vuaququoy tzUrm;vn;
xnoi;a&zlav&ygon/ ri;&'Ari;om;av; \ ab;avmi;awm b&iaemiri;w&m;ßu;
ee;wuly;aemu jyn? yc;? rwr? ti;0? &r;jyn? , ;' , m;? vi;Zi;? pona'orm;o

¹⁴ ½i oc? 1967? 16/

¹⁵ , i;? 20/

om;a&m uí ppyrsm; qíEcon/ b&iaemiri;w&m;u; \ be;awmallumi , e;jyn?
oe;CVjyn? , ;' , m;jyn pona'or;u v uatmuctjzp c0i vml uon/

b&iaemiri;w&m;u;on ovirpujzwum , e;jyn;u;u xm;xm; aluatmi
wucucon/ uon;jyn [eapbm;u vn; ri;w&m;u; \ be;awm atmuo
a&m u v mly; v uaqmiawmrsm; quoallumi;u

]]ovijcm;oe;? , e;vn;xm;xm;? [apbm;vn;? on;lum;puatmu?
quvma&m ur? a½armu be;0e? yc;ye \ }}¹⁶

[í a&zlxm;mwi [eapbm;u b&iaemiri;w&m;u;u om;or;rm; quoallumi;
o&&ygon/ xijyb&iaemiri;w&m;u; \ be;awmallumi o [Vule;u ri;w&m;u;u
&aojci;jyi;jyon twu pwr [m&mZewri;u; av;yg;vlaom tem;av;p&aom
a u sm uoywawm? p , awmEi or;awmquoallumi;u -

]]ule;pe&yajr? &aoveji;? ow;ri;u? rmeui;p , au sm uoywawmEi?
raemewao;? or;ax;u? jrwav;ñwc? quvm&on/}}¹⁷

[vn;aumi;? , ;' , m;ri;u vn; b&iaemiri;w&m;u;tm; qijzlav;p;Ei or;awm
quoallumi;u {ci;wi-

]]ab;awmb&m;? , ;' , m;u? w&m;0;pe;? a½puxe;aom? r , e;aiw?
qijzlav;p;? om;or;u? quvurvi}}¹⁸

[vn;aumi; a&zlxm;ygon/ b&iri;jrww \ be;awmallumi tjcm;wi;jynrsm;r
vuaqmiyPmrsm; quoa v&on ee;"avx;p , Oaus;rsm;u o&&ygon/

{ci;wi ri;&'Ari;om;av; \ crn;awm taemubuveri; x;ee; wuaom
tcg ri;u; \ be;awmallumi wi;jynto;o;r v uaqmiyPmrsm; quocaumi;u -

]]turwpaxmi? v|ajymixe;0g? w&m;em;a&;? &pau;axmi , e;? viye;
a&mia u sm? raembur? wqig;ax/ u i;aeaqmi&u? ee;wuvuaqmi?
jynjynaxmiu? rsm;ajrmioe;oe;? &ye;c&? quocr}}¹⁹

[a&zlxm;ygon/ ri;u;twu turwpaxmi&atmi jy/vyjc , oly; ta&mitv
rsm;x;e;0gaeaom tem;a&wp&m tau;p&paxmi&on lyibur raemviye;Ei ri;cr;
ri;em;wpq , ig;rsk;u ci;u i;aqmi&uum ee;wuvuaqmitjzp tjcm;jynrsm;r
vma&m u quoallumi; o&&ygon/

pmq&iocon ri;&'A{ci;wi ri;om;av; \ crn;awm taemubuveri; \
x;jcm;qe;lu , aom be;wec;rsm;uzlq&mwi owmjrp&on ur;u veatmi

¹⁶ ½ i oc? 1967? 19/

¹⁷ , i;? 19/

¹⁸ , i;? 19/

¹⁹ ½ i oc? 1967? 33/

p;q i; aev(i ri; u; u weav [> ru [vuv(i a& u o m; wwon/ r; onji; xep m
& maeyg v i ri; u; u vuo; awm "m; jyvuv(i wrom; rsm; wuaeaom vn; r& mbae
on/ 'a& wuaeciewi ri; u; u ygu 'a& onqurwub& ywaewwon/ xo
aom taemubuveri; \ tlorueEion be; we; c; rsm; alumi rZrwuwi; jyn
to; o; wi au sm u m; um owi; ar; cavoizi vuaqm i rsm; u oab m rsm; Ei vma& m u
yaqmi quoyu-

]]rZrwu? jynjynüvn;? u sk u u sk u au sm [;? u le; v; E; r? xp u k; & u
a< u;? owi; ar; í? ri; a& & w? ri; rxuatmi? vuaqm iaomaom?
oab m Eic n;? tyn; yn; wn}} ²⁰

[a& ; zU x m; ygon/ taemubuveri; \ be; wec; on Zrl' ygwpu le; v; y u E u
au sm u m; o m; y] u u u sk u au sm [;? [vn; aumi;?] u le; v; E;] [vn; aumi; a& ; zU x m; & m
] u u u sk u } [aom t "ym, wpum; Epv; wpyum av; euay: viapygon/] xp u k;
½ u a< u; } [aom teuc i; qupyr ½ aom pum; v; rsm; u ppn; zU py í ri; u; \ be; wec;
au sm u m; yu B u; u s, cr; em; pm o; pxm; ygon/ oav; ovwwjzi totit m; ygat mi
a& ; zU x m; on u aw u & ygon/

jyne , to; o; r q i rsm; quoluyuvn; {ci; wi

]]re , EiEi? Zmenq i v n;? jzi \ rr; rr;? qizr; obi? weni> yr;
at m u? om; a& m u qq? xyrpwn}} ²¹

[a& ; zU x m; ygon/ re , aeaom t mZmenq i rsm; u weni q i rsm; Ei qizr; ob i rsm;
jy v yu m taemubuveri; u; t m; vuaqm itjzpquolualumi; ee;"av x; p
, Oau s; rrsm; u o& & ygon/ EiEi? rr; rr;? qqpon An; w? o& wpum; v; rsm; u
Epiurxyo; jci; jzi teutit m;? totit m; u av; eu x i ½ m; vmapygon/

3? 4/ & qay; y

{ci; wi ri; o m; av; \ b; awm anni& r; ri; w& m; u; on ti; 0x; ee; u or; yu
ly; ee; wuaom t cg o m; awm taemubuveri; on tra& u ri; o m; tjzp qucon/
anni& r; ri; w& m; u; on wuyrsm; u aemuruyuyg0iouo taemubuveri;
om; u apci; wucuon rsm; vn; & on/ anni& r; ri; w& m; \ be; awmallumi taem u
buveri; on & rn; oi; u t Ei& caom t cg crn; awm ucs; u s L; ly; & qcs; jrialumi; u-

]]yysL; u k i re;? reawmye; jzi? x; qe; jrm; ajrmi? wxwacgion?
Ajcmuawmi wnqay; reap; ap;}} ²²

²⁰ ½ i oc? 1967? 44/

²¹ ½ i oc? 1967? 44/

²² , i; 25/

[zlxm;yg on/ taemubuveri; \ be;wec;alumi at mijriau smllum; xi&m;um
 ae&m tElyElom;ly; *Powi;ar;ysulivlaeyu]yyl;B uire;} [aom teuci;
 qiwon pum;v;rm;ji qupyo;Ee;xm;ontwu be;wec;*Powi; ar;ysyl
 xi½m;vmygon/ anni&r;ri;w&m;B u;u rnonb&i \om;awm wpa, mur tou
 Epq, o; Ept&, wi rrt*gcEpyg;Eijynply; tve&&ecuaomlrUu&atmi
 wucu Eicor&cz;yg/ om;awm \ be;wec;alumiom &ci;jzpon [c;rr;
 ajymqum ajcmuawmijrily; re&nwap;ap; awmuyaeaomqiu c;jricygon/

xlaemu crn;awm taemubuveri; \ pponrsm;on ppc&vr; lur;wr;pm
 jzwoe;vmc&aomvn; r;aumi;wyrsm;u tEiwu, Eioji b;awmanmi&r;
 ri;w&m;B u;u &qcs;jriyu-

]]armiaus;Z;u? c;ul;oanmi;? rwiawmi;wn? O;aygi;pv, ? qe;us,
 un;vy? a&tyrup? tmeur;cu? csucua&mialumi? a&0gwvw?
 ri;0wa&b? 0wvyq;? jrwe;&q? ay;Ei;pon}}²³

[a&zlxm;yg on/ wuywi tEi&&aom ri;om;tm; O;aygi;pv, 0wv? un;jynr
 jy\vyao qe;lu, on trujc, a&ty? tmejziy\vyao ur;ty? twr&aom
 a&a0gEi ri;0wyq;ponvuaqmiawmrsm; &qay;onuvn; o&&ygon/

{ci;wi taemubuveri;om; reowucu&mwi at mijrivmcon twu
 crn;awmanmi&r;ri;u &qcs;jrialumi;u -

]]&iyib;vn;? wir&;veu? &ibyu? ttttm;&r;? ajrmuc;rr;v;u?
 ri;cr;acgizsm;? ywjrsm;usy? pwyrup? 0wvv\lz;? yq;ri;0w? zup
 vvvvn; cñwjynaxmi? ri;wabmi0, ? tacgi&eei;? &qEi;on/}}²⁴

[a&zlxm;yg on/ ywjrsm;usyawmEi truwemrsm; pjc, xm;aom ri;0w yq;wu
 &qcs;jriav&on ee;"av, Oaus;ruvn; o&Eiygon/

xlyi {ci;wi ri;om;av; \crn;awm taemubuveri;om;on r;aumi;o
 'w, turcwuwucu at mijrií &onoye;rm;u crn;awm a&laru
 ,aqmiEicon twu crn;awm uom;awm tm; &qay;onu-

]]aZmw&ó? jruvur;cu? ee;wuraem? pwiarm on/ a&a0g&y0? yv
 rsup? tme0wv? a&btyp;? ri;0w&wn? yq;pule;? tqe;qe;on?
 &ye;wnu&iar;? &qay;}}²⁵

[a&zlxm;yg on/ &q tjzp aZmw&ó jrausmu jziy\vyon ur;cu? ee;wu
 taqmita, mijzpaom raemviye;? t&yuaqmiaom a0gawm? tmea&jziy\vy

²³ ½i oc? 1967? 27/

²⁴ , i;? 29/

²⁵ , i;? 30/

xm;aom0wv? tru&wempjc , xm;aom ri;0wyq; trs;rs;wu c;jricalumi; o&&
ygon/

anmi&r;ri;w&m;u;on oEolcwup0 oEolra&mub vr;c&wi emruse;
jzpcn/ xlaumi taemubuveri;om;u ou&mZ 967 cEpiwi oEol cawmrly;
titm;u;rm;aom &eowyuyi cucucctEiwuEion twualumi anmi&r;
ri;w&m;u;u tm;&awmrí]armilrU armiee;} [aomqx;u r;rwAvaicw pvipm&
ona&wi xuwepmc;jricyu-

]]{u&mZwum? ay;cpm om;? p&majrmuwi? jrwaomciu? xwjri0;pe;?
reawmre;on/}}²⁶

[a&zUxm;onu awU&ygon/ crn;awm u om;awm tm; {u&mZtm;v;wi ay;cpmaom
q (b&i)tjzpuay;cygon/ xuolaomqjrwu txwtjrw 0;pe;oz , jzpaom
anmi&r;ri;w&m;u; \ ar;u&ioi;ysU jrijrwaoma½Ew awmr >rulum;ay;oem;awm
ryu]xwjri0;pe;? reawmre;} [aompum;o;zi cr;em;atmia&zUxm;ygon/
taemubuveri;w&m;u;on vu&&nEv;&nEi jynpojzpí wuywi;wi
atmiy tvv&&cici;alumi crn;awm anmi&r;ri;w&m;u;u &qtturur c;jric
yrsm;u ee;"av , 0aus;rx;prsm;tjzp avvmo&&ygon/ be;awmbUrs;wi ee;"av
, 0aus;rtzUrs;u xnoi;jc , re;xm;ygon/

3? 5/ omoema&aqmi½uy

{csi; \oabmobm0twi; a&b;awm? ab;awm? crn;awmw \ be;wec;
tmPm xe;awmuyyazmjy&i; xri;w \omoemwi ou0i, lunion tavsmu
uovau mi;rrsm;uyg aqmi&uav&alumi;wu a&zUxm;ygon/ ri;&'A{csi;wi
vn; jrerm , 0aus;rjzpaom bmoma&taqmuttrsm;jzpon b&m;? apw? ausmi;?
Z&y paom r[muovawmrsm; jyvycaumi; jrerm , 0aus;r "avwp&yttjzp a&zU
wijxm;ygon/

omoema&aqmi&ucsu ttjzp b&iaemiri;w&m;u;on r[mapwwnon/
a&arma"mb&m;Ei ee;a&Uqawm&ib&m;u vn; Xmyemcon/ a&w*apwu x;awm
wivlly; ausmi;Z&yrs;maqmu vyvl'ge;on/ t&yav; ruEmwir@yav;aqmi
aqmu vyly; tvLU;ay;con/

ri;om;av; \b;awm anmi&r;ri;w&m;u; \ omoema&aqmi&ucsu ttjzp
eAmet us;u &narqmly; r[mjrwreb&m;u wnxm;u;u , alumi;? cr;em;pnum;aom
yobiu;u vn; qi , ius i;yalumi;? cr;em;wiw , aom av;xyausm i;u;u vn;

²⁶ ½i oc? 1967? 31/

aqm u vyv l'ge;um &wem o;yg; twu &n&, ly; t v l j y j c i ; j z p a l u m i ; w u { c i ; y ' a &
(19) w i a & ; z l w i j y x m ; y g o n /

{ c i ; w i r i ; o m ; a v ; \ c r n ; a w m t a e m u b u v e r i ; \ o m o e m a & ; a q m i & u
c : u r s m ; r m l y / y s u a e a o m a p w a [m i ; r s m ; u j y j y i r r ; r o n / a & a r m a " m b & m ; ? a & w * b & m ;
w u a & c s í a & x ; w i o n / w & m ; a ' o e m r s m ; u v n ; a y x u t u & m w i c o n /
a c g i ; a v m i ; ß u ; o e ; v y l y ; r r t v l ' g e w u o w 0 g t a y g i ; w t m ; j z e a 0 c y u

]] a A m " a p w ? o & & " m w ? a r j r w * a u s m i ; ? a x m i ; a x m i ; l y t u ? & i ; & i ;
y u v n ; ? w c u w n ; j c i ; ? l y ; a p v i ; í } } ²⁷

[v n ; a u m i ; /

]] a y p m " r ? [o r \ v n ; ? a & ; u a [m i ; j r i ; ? w r j r l y , i ; v n ; ? r u i ; & a t m i ?
j r a & m i & n n u ? a & a y x u ü ? a & p u y l a r ; ? a [m w i ; a & ; í } } ²⁸

[v n ; a u m i ; a & ; z l x m ; y g o n / t a e m u b u v e r i ; o n a & ; u m v u a & ; z l c j c i ; j z p a o m ?
a [m i ; j r i ; w r j r l y y u , i ; a e a o m A ' w & m ; a w m p m a y w u j r a & m i a & a y x u ü b & m ; & i
a [m l u m ; a w m r c o r r u i ; r u s e a p & a t m i a & ; o m ; a p c y g o n /

p o j z i { c i ; w i y ' o & m z p e p u a & ; b & i r i ; j r w w o n w i ; j y j y n j y o m o e m j y
v y i e ; a q m i & u c : u r s m ; j y v y a v & a o m e e ; " a v x p , 0 a u ; r w p & y u v n ; o & & y g
o n /

3? 6/ y c u w i r * v m u s i ; y y

{ c i ; o n b & i o m ; a w m o r ; a w m w \ y c u w i r * v m y w i o q & a o m o c i ;
u A s m j z p o j z i p m q w u { c i ; r s m ; w i y c u w i r * v m t c r ; t e m ; u i ; y y t a l u m i ; u
a z m j y a v & y g o n / p m q & i o c \ r i ; & ' A { c i ; w i v n ; r i ; & ' A r i ; o m ; a v ; \ y c u w i
r * v m t c r ; t e m ; u i ; y y u a w l & y g o n / o m r e v r s m ; t a e j z i r r w u a v ; u
t y a y m a t m i y c u w i ; o x n í a c s m o y & o n r m o m r e u p r o m j z p y g o n / e e ; w i ; ü r
r * v m w p y g ; t j z p c , u m e e ; " a v x ; w r ; w p c t a e j z i y c u w i r * v m t c r ; t e m ; u
u i ; y y g o n /

{ c i ; u A s m o n u a v ; o y o ; c i ; j z p y g o n / x l a l u m i u a v ; t y a y m a p & e a t ; c r ;
o m , m E l a E m i ; a o m t o u a v ; r s m ; j z i z l q u & y g o n / x o z l q & m w i a & ; 0 ; p m a w l & &
a o m { c i ; ü }] { } t u & m j z i p í] { } t u & m j z i q ; u m a & ; z l l u y g o n / a n n i & r ; a c w
r i ; & ' A { c i ; w i v n ; }] { } u m & E j z i c : u m a & ; z l x m ; y g o n /

{ c i ; r s m ; w i u a v ; a c s m o E i y w o u í u a v ; i , u y c u w i ; o y u m r ; r w w \
o r ; ß u ; ? o r ; i , ? t x e ; a w m ? t c a w m ? t a c s m a w m w u { w i ? { o ? { j r l ; ? { u s l ; ? { q i ?

²⁷ ½ í o c ? 1967 ? 41/

²⁸ , i ; ? 42/

w&, mrm; nio mpm w;rwa [eu]]wysly?]wni;ni;} [aom 0pmv;xypum;o;zi
a&zlxm;& Epouz, jzpygon/

ycuwir*vm tcr;tem;wi yg0iqiE&aom rL;βu;rw&mw\ uawmp;ri;rsm;
on ri;om;i, av;t m; jzn;ni;om, mpm r, ayUcluy? txe;awm? t, awmrsm;
vn; rsm;jym;jynv|r;vy vy&m;rrsm;u -

]]rL;βu;rwau sm? uawmp;ri;? jzn;ni;rp? xe; , >yr;>yr;}}³²

[ívn;aumi;?

]]p0v mee;x? uL;&iEí? vu0vusm? &umcñw? rL;rwrn&n? x;pn
&lz;? om;or;w? jzin;rp? xe; , cy;? E;vn;axax? jzm;a, mi;apv s u}}³³

[ívnaumi; zlxm;yg on/ ycuwiyü bUrn&n x;pn paom taqmi t&u&
aom rL;βu;rw&mrm;Ei uawmp;ri;rsm;u vu0vusmwi 0e;& ñwwm; cpm;aellu
alumi;? rL;βu;rwβu;w\ om;or;rsm;u riom;i, av;t m; 0e;&rpaelualumi;
ri;om;av;E;vm ont cg txe;t, rsm;u cs;y;acsmarmllualumi;? ee;"av x;prsm;u
o&&yg on/

ri;&'Ari;om;i, av;u oy rn ycu tji t q i u {ci;wi

]]najyacsmrw? u&wcg om? ye;arU&m x u? *0ga&m i c u? ruEmlluur?
u;ru&;& a&Zmq r? &&um, y? o;xya&anni? ajymiajymia&jcL?
vv nwnw? a&cwa&βu;}}³⁴

[í a&zlxm;yg on/ ri;om;av;tyrn ycu u ausm u r s u&wemrsl;pwjzi pj c, x m;
ly; ycu tci;u ar;βuliE;nacsmrwaom tz;weywaumi;rsm; ci;xm;on tji ye;arU
&m vn; ci;xm;ao;on/ a&ycu\ ruEmu uwi tru&wemu;yg; tji a&Zmye;rsm;
cwqxm;ojzi w&&u a eon/ llum, y rsm;vn; wyqixm;ojzi om;awmav;t m;
w&y&yw00vcyay;& a&mu on/ ruEmlluuwi a&jcla&anni&uav;rsm;u o;x y
cwqxm;ojzi wv vwnwnw vy&m;aeon/ ycu v&etwu a&cwa&βu;rsm;yg
wyqixm;yg on/

xlyi ycuwir*vm tcr;tem;ü ab;&etrsl;rsl; ui;aysmua0;u map&e 'r&mZ
ewri;βu; (28)yg;won apmiaelluueon [a&zlxm;on/ ycu\ axmiav;
axmiwi [e;a[muae[e&aom jcao&yav;&yu xvyxm;alumi;? xlaemu e*g;?
*Vie? a&[om? aus;wrm? aus;uvm;? aus;azmi;um;? aus;luuawm pon iu&y rsm;?
qi&y? jri;&y rsm; a&*i *ni;pon upm;z, &mrm;u tqe;wlu, xnoi;xvy
wyqixm;alumi;u {ci;wi

³² ½i oc? 1967? 46/

³³ , i;? 46/

³⁴ , i;? 46/

]]ab;rs;aym uum? av;ruEmü? tXm0o? a'0ewpp? 'r&mZw? &evp
y, ajzm i? xuluyapmi í? av;axmijcao? ra&la[mu[e? rusep&i?
onjiwjc;? e*g;? *Vle? awmi [ejzL;jzL;? om&ijrL;vsu? upm;buum;?
a&iu[om? wrmuv;? azm ium;luuawm? raemw;r/ usiza&pi?
jri;qiyui;? ceni;luuawm? vyaqmiqe;lu, ? uvb, Ei}}³⁵

[í a&zUxm;onuaw&ygon/ ycu \axmiav;axmiwi jcao [e;a[mu ae[eu
]av;axmijcao? ra½la[mu[e] [aompum;o;zi vn;aumi;? awmi [ewjzL;jzL;jzi
½ijrL;vsu&uaom e*g;? *Vleuvn; awmi yjzely;cwae [eu ay:viatmi jawmi [e
jzL;jzL;} [aom pum;o;zi vn;aumi;? Epouz, a&zUxm;o;zi b&iom;awm?
or;awmav;rs; typurnycuu t qe;wlu, yi qia v&aom ee;"avx;puaw&
&ygon/

ri;&'Ari;om;av;twu b&ivuatmuctrxr;rs; llrU&mrs;rvuzUawmrs;
ay;yualumi;u

]]z;u, v;&i;? qijri;yn;zi? ajmivire, ? rpyoeue;? &&n
&e;v[i? us, 0e;aus;rw? cewuui;r? vuawmzUu}}³⁶

[a&zUxm;&m qijri;t v;t&i;Eiwu ylrpoepr;í &&n&ao;rs; &e;&e;
xe;awmuaeaom re, qiajmiEi? us, 0e;vaomaus;&mrs;? cere;a&wu í r&Ei
avmuatmi rs;ajmivon vuzUawmrs;vn;ay;av&on ee;"avx;prsm;u
aw&&ygon/

p uo| ycuwir*vm tcr;tem; tzUwi ycubU? ycuwir*vm tceui;yy?
{ci;oqy? uav;upm;p&mrs;? vuaqmi vuzUquoyrsm;? ponji jynjynpp
rwwr;wixm;onu aw&ygon/

t cŷt m;ji ri;&'A{ci;on tjc;{ci;rs;uo| b&i be;awmallumi
vuaqmi quoyrsm;? ee;wu tcr;tem;ui;yyrsm;? &qay;tyrsm;? tra&U t&m
tyEi;yrsm;? llrwnee;wnyrsm;? ycuwir*vm tcr;tem; ui;yyrsm;tp&on
ee;"avx;prsm;u xnoi;a&zUxm;ygon/ xallumi a&acwjrrerm ee;"av, 0aus;r
tp0t vmx;prsm;u ojri vmapEiaom {ci;aumi; wpapmi tjzp o&&ygon/

³⁵ ½i oc? 1967? 46/

³⁶ , i;? 46/

lci o;oycu

ri;&'A{ci;vm ee;"avx;p ,0au;rtzlrsm;uwijy&mwi awmiiacw
anmi&r;acwwü awl&aom ee;"av&&m tp0tvmx;prsm;u avvmazmxw xm;yg
on/ {ci;pmqwlon ee;awmwi;ü ar;zm;ü;jyi;vmaom ri;om; ri;or;rs;twu
a&zUquoiaom {ci;uAsmrsm;wi ee;"av ,0au;r tp0tvmrsm;u yg0iatmi
a&zUuon/ orom ee;wi;üz;iriaom ri;om; ri;or;wlon ee;"av tp0tvmrsm;
u raysmuy;uap&e xe;or;apmia&m u vuemaqmi&u vpwrs; jzpay:vmaprnjzp
on/

ri;&'A{ci;wi a&;jterm b&iri;jrwwon jrermee;"avx;p ,0au;rjzp
aom ee;wuytcr;tem; u;i;y&mwi w&,mig;yg;w;rwapum vu0ri;cr;ri;em;?
vuismri;cr;ri;em; wpq ,ig;yg;ci;ui;ly; c&oi;Ei a&oe;um oze;y0xui
&mZbouc,yu a&zUxm;yg on/ a&be'ge; pmtYEi ue;abmiacwb&irsm;
r'gbouc,ypmtyrsm;wi vu0ri;cr; ri;em;(13)yg;? vu ,mri;cr;ri;em;(13)
yg;uomazmijxm;on/ ppmwr;wi aⅇo; a0g [m&t b"mepmtyr vu0 ri;cr;
ri;em;(15)yg;? vu ,mri;cr; ri;em;(15)yg;u azmijxm;ici;jzpygon/ ri;tjzpc , on
bouu ue;abmiacw b;awmb&m;rwiru &mZbou [íom ac:a0:con/
A'ri;vuxu upíA'gboutcr;tem; [pwiac:a0:o;pcjci;jzpon/

a&b&iri;jrwwon be;wec;awZm xe;awmuralumi llrUopee;op
wnaxmicluonuvn; awl&yg on/ wi;jyntci;ci; arwmjzivn;aumi;?
lir;cr;a&twuvn;aumi;? jynwi;jynyr vuaqmiquoav&alumi; ab;awm?
b;awmwu atmiy&orsm;tm; &qc;jriav&alumi; ee;"avx;prsm;u v n; o&&yg
on/

jrerm ,0au;rjzpaom bma&taqmuttrsm;jzpon b&m;apwauismi;Z&y
paom r[muovawmrsm; jy/vycalumi; wrjryaysmuu ,vjzpaom bma& pmay
rsm;u topwpze ayxutu&mwion talumi;wuvn; ,0au;rx;p wp&y t jzp
o&&yg on/

jrerm&;mee;"av ,0au;rwi avmur*vm(12)yg;teu a'gvmu&P r*vmac:
ycuwir*vm tcr;tem;tallumi;u v n; a&zUav&yg on/ tcsU{ci;rs;wi {ci;zlc
ri;om;ri;or;w\ Zmwawmwucuy? zm;ou&mZEi b m;awmr ,awmwu ,wi
{ci;oqacsmoyyw yg0iaom v n; ri;&'A {ci;wi xtZlrsm;u rawl&ay/ ycuwi
r*vmqi , iui;yontcgwi {ci;[aom oci;rs;u oqw;rwualumi;? cuwi
r*vmui;ycion tceaurmi;tcgaumi;jzpalumi;? ycu vacsmoyorsm;tallumi;?
w&,mrsm;? txe;t ,cy;lluaomorsm;tallumi;? ycutjiytqi? upm;&et ½yrsm;
tallumi;? vuzUvuaqmirms;? ypn;rs; tallumi;wu jynppma&zUxm;yg on/

**xlaem u {ci;uAsmwi jynbU? nrU bU? be;awm bUrm; atmiybUrm;u xnoi;
a&zUxm;yg on/ xtzUrm;on wi;jyntycyaomri;wtm; jynotrsm;u ,un
u;pm;vmatmivn; jy/vyay;Eiygon/ Zmwao;Zmwme xuoenvmatmivn; zew;
ay;Eiygon/**

**puo ee;"av ,Oau;rtzUrm;u xnoi;a&zUxm;o;zi jrermwlon
u ,x;u ,ee;u ,uime;Ei u ,yi ,Oau;r&orrm;jzpaumi;? ee;"av tcr;tem;
u;yyw\ bu;u ,jrijrwaom taqmita ,mirsm;t&jrerm b&iw\ be;u;uoa&
u yrw;wuvmapygon/ ee;"av qi&m ,Oau;rrwwr;uvn; cirvmapygon/**

**pmq&ioc\ ri;&'A{ci;onvn; puo ,Oau;rtzUrm;axnipatmi a&zU
xm;ontwu tz;rjzWEiaom anni&r;acwee;"av x;p ,Oau;rrsm;u o&&y
gon/ ee;"av ,Oau;rrsm;u {ci;Eitw rwwr;wia&zUjci;zi pm [etzU tEon
yíu;u ,cr;em;vmygon/ ee;"av ,Oau;r trt&mrsm;u tEpwc; ,re;í o½yazm
a&zUon/ pum;t o;tEe;rm;rm talumi;t&muvuí cr;em;xn0gon/ be;wec;
u zUí Zmwmetitm;yaom pum;o;? tzU tErm;u o;on/ ee;"av trt&mu
zUv i niomaysmajymi;on pum;o;t zU tErm; ppn;a½;c; , pmE pm ,OtoizUq
on/ pmqonpum;t o;tEe;? tzU tqur;uiontwu be;u;uoa&½;y;
Zmwrmew;ym;apaom t zUrm;jzpygon/**

e*;

**ppmwr;on pmq&ioc\ ri;&'A{ci;r ee;"av x;p ,Oau;rtzUrm;u
avvmwixm;aom ppmwr;jzpygon/ {ci;uAsmrm;wi xnoi;a&zUav&aom
ri;qu&mZoi? be;awm bU? wuyo&yazm tzUrm;Ei ee;"av ,Oau;r tzUrm;u
ri;&'A{ci;wivn; awU&&ygon/ ee;"av ,Oau;rtzUrm;jzpaom ee;wu
tcr;tem;u;yy? nrUopee;opwnaxmitycyy? vuaqmi quoy? &qc;jriy?
ycuwi tcr;tem;u;yyrm; omoema&aqmi&u currm;jy/vyywU A [owjzpz ,
awU&ygon/ ri;&'A{ci;r ee;"av x;p ,Oau;rtzUrm;u avvm&jci;t m;ji
a&jrerm b&iw\ be;wec;lo bu;rm;cy? ee;"av tp0tvmrm; cr;cr;em;em;
pepwu;vyaqmicyrm;u avvmawU&&ygon/**

u:r;u;pm&i;

au_{sm}&i? 0;/ (yyg;)? (1966) *u0om&wu:r;(yxrw)?* rEav;? ynmAvyEywul
 wi? 0;/ y*0eaxmu? (2013) *uAmAEom&ur;? &eue? pwu;cs\cpmay/*
 azarmiwi? 0;/ (2013) *jrermmayori;? {um'órtur? &eue? &mjynyEywul*
 armiarmiwi? 0;/ (1975) *aⅇo;a0g[m&t b"me? (yxrw)? &eue? om oema&0;p;Xme?*
A'omoemt z\ yEywul
 jrermpt z\? (1979) *jrerm t b"met u;0;cy? tw(2)/ &eue? zwvpoyEywul*
 jrermpt z\? (2008) *jrerm t b"me? &eue? aevi;yEywul*
 &ioc? (1967) *ri;&'A{ci;? &eue? [om0wyEywul*
 ve;? q&m/ ociu ,awmri;? (1981) *uAmom&wo/*/[? &eue? o& , owi;pmwul*

zw^{1/2}av vmaom pmt ypm&i;

uv_m;? 0;/ *r[m&mZ0ilu;('w, w)?* 2006/ &eue? &mjynpmt ywul
 aZ , oc , m/ 1961/ *a^{1/2}be'ge;? &eue? [om0wyEywul*
 xe;&? 0;/ (a^{1/2};a [mi;oawo)? 2009? *ue;abmiacwb&irm; r'gbouc, y? &eue? &mjynpmay?*
&mjynatmzqu/
 xe;&? 0;/ (a^{1/2};a [mi;oawo)? 2012? *{ci;a[mi;aygi;cyEi/ {ci;uAm *E0i#um? &eue?*
&mjynpmt ywul
 baomi;? Avrl;l *pmqawmr; twyw? 2002? y0rtur? &eue? &mjynpmt ywul*
 ynm^{1/2}irm; tz\ *reee;&mZ0iawm'u;? (yxrw)? (2003) / &eue? (y0rtur)? 0;p;0i;yEyci*
trw(419)Eixwa0Ei trw(286)uyEy xwa0on/
 &mau_{sm}? 0;/ pma&awm'u; / (2009)? *jrermr*vrr;cr;awm? &eue? &mjynpmay? &mjynatmzqu/*

nyav; \]xujruw"m;om;ay:u cšjrjrysm;&npu} 0w\&nr vaer t z\

pEm0i;*

pmwr; t u:0;

ppmwr;on nyav; \]xujruw"m;om;ay:ucšjrjrysm;&npu} trš;om;0w\&nr
vaertzu avvmwijyxm;ygon/ em*awmiwe;& em*wi;&i;om;w\ b0
aexiru azmwwijyvaom &n&,c:ujzpygon/ nyav; \]xujruw
"m;om;ay:ucšjrjrysm;&npu} 0w\&nu tavvmctjzpowrwjy; pmay½axmir
avvmwijyxm;ygon/ x0w\&nr em*a'o&em*wi;&i;om;w\ aexi pm;aomu
r? ,lunu;u , r? 0wpm;qi , ir? pwaepwxm;Ei touar;r "avrsm;u avvm
wijyxm;ygon/ ppmwr;on em*awmiwe;a'or em*wi;&i;om;w\ vaer
"avu o&&aomallumi jrermEiitwi;& wi;&i;om;w\ b0aexiru pmem
em;vnEiapygon/

aomc:ua0g [m&rsm; - "av? aexipm;aomur? ,lunu;u , r? 0wpm;qi , ir?
pwaepwxm;? touar;r/

e'je;

ppmwr;on 2017 cEp lo*wwwi 'w, t\urxwa0aom 2016 cEp
trš;om;pmaq 0w\½nq&nyav; \ xujruw"m;om;ay:u cšjrjrysm;&npu0w\ u
pmay½axmir avvmxm;ygon/ awmvea&aumi ptp;&vuxu ci;jyne, o
q&m0ea'guwm oe;via&mu½cp0tceumv talumi;t&mrs;u taccum a&;om;xm;
aom twiyw [e0w\½njzpygon/ a0;vacgioaom zllz;rr½aom use;rma&? ynma&?
p;ym;a&? vra&ponji tuzureruaom tajeaeu xi [ya&;om;xm;on
jzp&yre0w\½njzpon/ q&m0ea'guwm oe;vion ywywarmiaeaom xa'ou
tvi;a&miwpp xe;vi;ay;caom y*v\vu;jzpon/ jrermq½, vpvr;p0ygyw
awmvea&aumi ptp;&vuxur em*wi;&i;om;w\ b0vaerrsm;u o&&ygon/
q&mnyav; \ 0wizew;r alumi yray:vivmonu awl&ygon/

1/ pma&;o \ twiyw t u:0;

nyav;u vxowi;pmwuwnaxmio pma&;q&m armiEvx0;vEi
a':trmwr (1952)cEp? azaz:0g& (5)&uwi vuqnuey? rEav;jr\wizm;jric
on/ ar;ci;rsm;wi yÍrajrmujzpí ti , q;om;jzpon/ trn&i;rm armijir;cr;(c)
bnljzpon/ om;or;xwiti , q;jzpí nyav; [trn , con/

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrermpmXme? &wemywuov/

rEav;jr t.x.u(9) (peywm t x uwe;au smi;)wi rvwe;r wu o v 0iwe;
t x ynm o i l u m;cyg on/ rEav;wu o v r braA' b m o m & y E i o y b l & & con/

(1985)cEpwi py , jzlr*Zi;ü]v:upm;wpw} 0w\wu pwiYeyazmjy jci;c&
on/ x laemu 0w\wa&acwum vwpav\mu wi ra[o? u v sm? a&tjr lawpon
r*Zi;rsm; 0w\wrsm;a&om;con/ yxrq;0w\wpm tytjzp]o\xu u? a&jynp;
nyav;} xwa0con/ x\jyi uav;v u;u\ujy;c\pluygw nyav;0w\wrsm;
wpalumi;q uav;ye;cEi tjcm;0w\wrsm;? v t tyru 0w\wrsm;? ar;y\w Ei;q
a&m ip 0w\wrsm;? zipcae\p0Ei tjcm;0w\wrsm;? q;&py'r m u sm; o\m xaem i;0w\w
rsm;u a&om;xwa0con/ jirou wprepEi tjcm;0w\wrsm;p m tyon r;u wjr\U
taemuyi;u yji jr\Uro [m , p m l u n w u \ (2006) cEp u yji jr\Uro [m , p mayq
&&con/

pr;ve;w awmiue;? jrirm;wawmiwe;jzi xe;azmia';&i; pmya'omq?
ww , jr\Uawm o m; &U t v r;aer sm;jzi awm b&mav;p mayq? x\jyi c&om;p mayr sm;v n;
a&om;xwa0cjy;]v' [;aumi; rijcprwpr sm;} p m tyrm x i&m;on/]at m i b m a v }?
]jir;c r;pr;ve;} uav i c t r n r sm;Ei v n; p mayr sm;a&om;con/ v;c i;0w\&n r sm;r m
]ajr;o\ u;?]xujruw "m;om;ay:u c\j rjry sm;&npu}w jzply; twiyw [e0w\ r sm;
jzpygon/]xujruw "m;om;ay:u c\j rjry sm;&npu} on (2016)cEptwu trs;om;
p mayq? 0w\&n q&&con/ (2017) witqyg0wu a'guwmaZm xe;u t*vy
b m o m jyeqcon/ q&m on t aysmwr;"mwyq&m? iulunt oi; Ou\wm0ersm;v n;
xr;aqmi aeqjzpon/

Ze;rm a':wiwi0i;jzpy; om;or;o;a , mu&on/ ,ctcex rEav;jr\U v x
B u;ym;a&yEywuEi p m tywu u0;p;vyuiaey; pmaya&om;jci;? pmaya [majym
jci;rsm; aqmi½u v s u&ygon/

2/ Zmwv r; t u s0;

]xujruw "m;om;ay:u c\j rjry sm;&npu}} 0w\½ nonnyav;\ 2016 cEp
tr s;om;p mayq? 0w\½ n q& twiyw [e0w\jzpygon/ t"uZmwaqmirm cpw
q&m0e a'guwmo e;viizpon/ a'guwmo e;viu (1933)c? E0ibm v (7) &u
aewi ar;z m;con/ w½wv r s; jrermEi iom; oxlr\U Zmwjzpon/ n t u (9) a , m u
½ly; ww , ajrmuom;jzpon/ rbr sm;u aialu;awmiwi;c r;omaom ueon r s;½;
jzpon/ 1937-38 cEp t ou(4)Ept ½ , wi armv\ r K i l r\U ueziau smi;wi au smi;ty
au smi;p m;aec&on/]t u'0yoerqi [w0r } } rm au smi;emr njzpon/ zci jzpo u
n t p u o;a , m u v;u emewpa , m up i m;xm;ay;on/ au smi;wup0 p m b u l;p m;ly;
pn;ur;vuem on/ 1941 cEp urm taemujcr; ppjzpaecsewi trjyeac:v mly;
oxlr\U a':zm;oia u smi;wi au smi;quwu&on/ pn;ur;B u;r m;aom? ÓPtajrm

tjri;u;aom zci\ tyxr;ratmuwi bu;ji;c&on/ 1946 cEpwi armvllrllrU
peywx&p omoeniy/ausmi;wi 5 we;jyae&on/ 1952 wi q , we;pmar;y ajz&mü
atmijrioven;pwi ovn;ygcon/

i , p0uueonvycion pwu;&aomallumi wuovwi0Zmwp;ym;a&;
bmom&yu , con/ aemiwitrewu , pw0ipm;on oybmomwajymi; , con/
aq;oyu 'w , tqiEi atmijricon/ aq;ausmi;om; } u zci u um; topwpp;
0 , ay;con/ 1954 cwi u , yium;Ei ausmi;wuaom aq;ausmi;om;rm]]tu'0y
[w0r}} wp0;om&on/ 1955 - 56 -57 cEprsm; aq;ausmi;wucsewi aq;aumvy
ausmi;om;0u| tjzpaqmi½ucon/ ygarmu0;boe; (t&ntci;jynrly; oilum;
a&; twuv tyao) q&mü;uoujynyipiray;&e awmi;qrijvycon/
aq;ausmi; (3)cgusvi ausmi;xupepu y , zu&eawmi;qcon/

tvyoiq&m0ejzpcsewi tvyoiq&m0e (185) 0;&onte u (85) 0;omv(i
vpm 205 uyu&½cly; useq&m0e (100)rm r&½cay/ ouqi&mu ta&q&etwu
Armijnv;q i&m q&m0ersm;tzuZly; twi;a&rl;tjzp wm0e , aqmi½ucon/
x ta&qratmijricaomvn; a'guwmo;vi\&v'rm tvyoiq&m0e aemuq; 3
vrm qi;&eueaeon cpw½xqi;cir&cyg/ olaom oi , ci;wp0; \ unrallumi
oabmq&m0ejzpci&on/ oabm pumyqyur;uycewi pumyremrnü;q&m0e
a'guwmavsmi;xwi vuaxmutjzpunay;ly; aq;ynmoici&con/

1962 cEpwi llrwllrUü tp;&0exr;tjzp pwiwm0exr;aqmici&on/ llrwllrU
wi Ze;te;te;Ei traxmiuon/ llrwtajcc *yeyi jawmiyiv , yv urP}Ei
tuir;w0ijzpccon/ llrwllrwi umv0r;a&m*gjzpon t c g *yeyvurP \ apmir
ralumi 0r;a&m*guumu , aq;rs; *yera&mu½vmlly; vemrsm;uu , q , ci&con/

1964 cEpwi rEav;aq;½u;o ajymi;a½üci&on/ aemucaumi;í ajymi;&on
txiEiv trsm; \ at;puwi;rpm buKqci;c&on/ rEav;aq;½u;wi vuaxmu
cpwq&m0eb0Ei uir;uipmaqmi½uaecsewi &eueaq;½u;rmülc&on vem
wp0;aoq;c&yEiywouly; tjypay;cc&on/ rrm;caomvn; ouqi&m q&m0eü;
u]b , ouurta&; , vlr&v riuta&; , wmu} [ajymqum tjypay;con/ vyou
2 Epjzwly; Epw;vpm 1 Ep&yum ppui;wi; cE;llrUoajymi;a½üc&on/ a'guwm
oe;vion tjypay;ruc , um pw"mwrub 1965 cEpwi em*awmiwe; cE;llrU
aq;½o| wm0exr;aqmi&e a&mu½con/ cE;aq;½wiaq;0g;rjynp? vemur½?
0exr;rs;u wm0eurav;pm;? tcucrs;pu buKawüiqi&on/ vnyi;ü;vem
wp0; (3)usyay;í c&ov 0;acgi;utaygixm;um c&onvn;½on/ aq;0g;&½&e
txutqiqiu tallumi;um;&ov omoeniy/rsm;? y&[worm;rs;xrvn; tvlc&
on/ o \ bu;yr;ralumi em*wi;&i;om;rs;llum;wi ewq&mwp yg;uol , lun
tm;u; vmluon/ ou , wivn; em*wi;&i;om;rs;uol 0wpm;aexium

awmiay:tE vnvnom;vmí cpwuoay;con/ em*vrsl;w\ b0ujriwi
vontwu wpom;wn;jzpatmi bu;yr;aexicon/

a'guwmo;vion cpwuo&;omru trsm;twutu^{sl;½}Eiaom up&yrsm;
u\vn; aqmi^½ucygon/ tE, -jrerm, erwrwwiup? oemjyrvavmuonup?
jynolaq;qi ziEi&eupponjzi em*a'ozUz;w;wuatmi aqmi^½ucygon/
ye;ywarmiaeaom em*awmiwe;a'ou tvi;wpxe;nEicygon/ em*ewq&m0e
wp0;tjzp em*a'owiausmaZmcaomvn; tmPyitztptn;rm;Ei twutc
jzpc&on jy ó emrm;vn;½cygon/ cE;aq;½wi ajcmuEpwm0exr;aqmijy; yc;wi;
jzL;jrUo ajymi;a&Uz trepma&umvmyEi tq;owxm;ygon/

3/ nyav;\]xujrww"m;om;ay:u csl;jrjrym;&npu} 0w\&nr vaertzUrm;

nyav;\]xujruw"m;om;ay:u csl;jrjrym;&npu} 0w\½non q&m0e
a'guwmo;vi\ twywu0w[ejzi a&;om;xm;aom trsl;om;pmayq&0w/jzp
on/ a'guwmo;vi ar;zm;contc:erpí em*awmiwe;wi wm0exr;aqmip0
umvtx buawjzwoe;c&aom tjzptyuwu Zmwvr;qizew;xm;ygon/
a'guwmo;vi em*awmiwe;ola&mu½csewi em*vrsl;w\ use;rma&apmia½muru
tx;aqmi½ucon/ toÓPen;aom em*wi;&i;om;wEi wpom;wn; jzpatmi
aexií a&m*grsm;uaysmuui;atmi aqmi½ucygon/ em*w\]ewq&m} [, lunr
&½ontx u, u^{sl};pelaqmi½ucon/ bpmwr;wi ywuiaawmiwe;a'o? em*
awmiwe;a'owwiaexiaom em*wi;&i;om;w\ aexipm;aomur? , lun
u;u, r? 0wpm;qi, ir? touar;rpontzUrm;u avvmwiyxm;ygon/

aexipm;aomur

aexipm;aomurr aexiru jrerm t b"mewi

aexi- bu rwi;&ywnon/ ¹

[íziqxm;ygon/ xallumi aexiron vwtajctae tjzptyuay:rwní
jzpwvnmjci;jzpon/

nyav;\]csl;jrjrm;0w\½nwi q&m0ea'guwmo;vir em*awmiwe;½ cE;
aq;½o ajymi;a½&on/ xtceu xa'oolom;&e av, m0c&;om½on/ rEav;r
jrpu;em;o om;&ly; jrpu;em;rwpqi av, m0qurn&uu apmiíom;&on/ om;vm
a&;cucaom tceumvjzpon/ a'guwmo;vi a&mu&csewi use;rma&;to
tm;en;aom? a0;vaoma'o½ wi;&i;om;w\ tm;u;&mraom tajctaeuaw&on/
cE;lrjynolaq;½u;rm q&m0ewpa, mu? oemjywp, muom&on/ aq;½wi

¹ jrermpt zU? 1979? 207/

uorn|venr^{1/2}? uo&eaq;r&aom taetxm;jzpon/ yxrq; a'guwmoe;vi
a&mucsewi r;z;m;rnvenEi awí cpwar;&etwu ppO|uyu q&mnyav;u

cpwce;& , v| o;oe^{1/2}wmr [wb;/ tay:xyu tce;wpce;u
wjrupn;vn;lur;wuly; uyc;y;riawcs vn;u;xi;xm;wtce;²

[ívn;aumi;? vnyi;βu;a&m*gon em*trsl;or;u c&mwivn;

cwpm;yvn; r^{1/2}waq;^{1/2}.... vemwpae&muae wpae&ma^{1/2}&i wiwe;
&w xa&m vay:wic&m.....³

[ívn;aumi; a&om;azmjyxm;on/ vr;ye;quo , a&cucaom em*wi;&i;om;
w\ rjnprvavmu qi;&cwaomaexiru o&ygon/ rjnpaom aq;^{1/2}u;wi
venrsm; \a&m*g ouom&eaq;uoay;aom q&m0ewp0; \ vrb0uivn; awll&&yg
on/

em*wi;&i;om;won u , veorsm;u ocsl;wio|*vavr^{1/2}alumi;u 0w|wi
u , veom;oawu owa&xvn;arismryp; / r;vn;ro|*vb;/ tcsll
^{1/2}mawu 0g;uylur;ci;ay:wiw, / piav;wppi wiav;wixw, /
v&&ipavmujrirmayg/ t'piav;ay:rm tavni;wixm;w 0g;uy
lur;ci;uwixm;ly; ouu , e tr;r;ly;xm;w , /⁴

[í azmjyxm;ygon/ em*vrsl;won cpciEpouowEi tou^{1/2}ip0u twae
ouo| aoq;cewivn; ryp&uawmay/ rrwitr te;tem;ryi pix;xm;av^{1/2}
on/ toÓPen;aomallumi ue;rma&Eirnonuivn; roluay/ xtalumi;u
vx0;v \ em*awmiwe; wapwapmi;pm tywi

tp;&u^{1/2}mwi;rm vao&ijriyapciw , / em*v u;awuawm rjryci;ib;/
tou^{1/2}aeve;uawm tvyawtrsm;βu; vyaply;awmaowt cg ajrx
jriyp&r , ? r;^{1/2}yp&r , q&i b , w&m;ygrvv| ajym|uow⁵

[íu , wiβu|awlc&yu azmjyxm;ygon/ vraemuctzrsm; o^{1/2}yreralumi
0w|on obm0usontjiyi tou0iaeon/ pmzwotm; tlopw? alumu^{1/2}lpw?
pmempwrsm;u jzpay:cpm;lu&on/

em*vrsl;waexiao awmiwe;&mwp&mwi 0r;av(ma&m*gjzpy;aece a'guwm
oe;vi a&mu&om;con/ &mou;on ue;rma&A [owr&aomvn; a&m*g
ru;puap&e aqmi&uEion/ &mx&vrsm; &mjiyirxu&e? tjyivrm; &mxr0i&e
wm;jrpcon/ a'guwmoe;viwuvn; &mx&yewity&e ae&mcsxm;ay;on
talumi;u q&mnyav;u

² nyav;? 2016? 245/

³ - , i;-? 261/

⁴ nyav;? 2016? 428/

⁵ v? 0;? vx? 1967? 170/

u^{leawmw}u^{awm} vy^{lawpa0};typuluw yermae^{&mc}xm;ay;w , /
vy^{l&yom}qygawm/ ⁶

[a^{&om};xm;yg on/]ye}rm ty^{sl}? vy^{sl}rm; paygi;typuluon ae^{&mjzpon}/ em*
wi^{&i};om;won 7 Ep? 8Ept&,rpí rbrsm;Eitw raexiawmay/ &mxwi
o;oeaqmu^{vyxm};aom]ye} [ac:aom vy^{sl}aqmi? ty^{sl}aqmiwi typuav&luon/
&eow\ tE^{&m},rm;rumu , &eEi &y&m^{vj}cl^{a&};twu ui;apmií twpaygi;
tyav&alumi; o&ygon/ em*w\ vaer"av]ye} u^{vn}; o&&ygon/

em*w\ uav;r;zm;jci;u^{vn}; 0w^{wiazmjy}xm;yg on/ em*&mw^{p&m}o
a'gu^{wmoe};via&m^{u&c}ewi tr^{sl};or;wp0;r;zm;ae^{yu}

tr^{sl};or;wpa , mu touEpq , eU tpwav^mursm; jzpavrv^m; / tru
rn;armiaewm/ u , av;vu0e aeapvap^u; rwwy&yaewm/ aygiEp
v; um;vu^u; / xyrm^uru^u; wpac^{smi};ywjy; atmu^{uwv} c^{xm};
w , / u , 0eaqmi^{tr}sl;or;u t'wv^usaew ru^u;uqjy;nn;
ae&mw^m/ r;zm;z^u;pm;ae^{wm}/ ⁷

[ía^{&om};xm;yg on/ em*wi^{&i};om;wonq&m0er&? om;zm;q&mrryg^b wpa , mu
wn;r;zm;av&on/ rwwy&yv^u xy^u;uuium^{uav};ar;&m uav;xu^u
vm^{vi} ur;jyiwi apmialumixiaeon zci^{uq};zr;on/ uav;r;zm;jy;v^{ij};ci;
uav;u au^{smwi}*yapmielyw^{jy}; awmi , mxom;um t^{vyvyav&on}/ &i^{oy}
tloz , aumi;aom em*wi^{&i};om;w\ vaer"avwp&yyijzpon/ a'gu^{wmoe};[e
\ tajm [ejzi wijy^{xm};&m o^{1/2}yay:vion/ pmzwow^{jria} , mi^vmly; awmiay:om;
w\ b0tay: pmempwrsm; jzpay:vmapon/

em*awmiwe;on opyiopaw^mrm; xxyí usm;? 0u0? qipon om;&w&pme
aygrsm;aom a'ojzpon/ vota&mutayguen;ly; toÓPA [ow en;yg;aom t&y
jzpygon/

awmiay:a'o^{1/2} em*wi^{&i};om;rm;u aq;^{1/2}orv^m? aq;uorrc , ontwu
q&m0eu , wi vem^{rm};1/2&m om;a&m^uuoay;c&on/ twu , u^{sl};r^lunaom
Zmwaqmi'a'gu^{wmoe};vion tazmw^{wp0};Eitw awmiwe;rm;ay: ausmy;twv ,
um wp^{1/2}m0iwp^{1/2}m^{xu} aq;uoay;c&yu

wpae^{uwp}1/2m/ wp^{1/2}mrmwppce;c/ 'en;ewa^{1/2}a^{1/2}om;lluwmy/ v [,
txom;lluw^m vnyi;u;aww^{1/2}mrm cawwmy/ opyi&yatmu? tr
wpurwatmu awwae&mrmccw , ⁸

⁶ nyav;? 2016? 455/

⁷ nyav;? 2016? 450/

⁸ - , i;-? 290/

[ía&om;xm;ygon/ a'guwmo;vi\ em*wa'owi q&m0eyopm wm0e
xr;aqmiEiatmi t m;xwu;yr;yu tajypum;jzi wijxm;&m aemucvaertzU?
Zwuuo^{1/2}yazmtzU? Zmwaumi\ p^{1/2}uazmtzUw/ paygi;yg0iily; y&wowtm; 0w/Ei
tw eparsm vuyg om;apEipr;^{1/2}on/

vnyi;u;a&m*gonrsm;u aysmuui;apci:iaom q&m0ewp0; \apwem? "m;ui
ur;uiaom q&m0e\wwur;r? a0;vacgizsm;aom wi;&i;om;w\ aexirpon
wu aw&ygon/

em*awmiwe;^{1/2} cE;lr\on ^{1/2}pu&mlr\jzpaomalumi at;cr;om, mly; 0exr;
aygi;paexialumi;? t&ya'or;pr vma&muwm0exr;lualumi;u

cE;lr\ [m rzllz;ao;wlr\ uav;/ wwqwat;cr;w, / 0exr;? t&mxr;?
trxr;qwmaw [m a'owcs\el jrermjyn tEuvmlu&wmrsm;w, / 'gayr
0exr;ci;cpciav;pm;r ^{1/2}uw, / jy óem;u;i, ^{1/2}cw, / u, tvy
u, vyluly; 0exr;ci;unp&m^{1/2}&i unvuluwmy/⁹

[íazmjyxm;on/ rzllz;ao;aom ae&ma'ouyi pma&outvw&m;u ^{1/2}maz
wijcon/ (1965) cEpyw0e;ui cE;lr\on 0exr;avmutwu rZm t&yjzpon/
tjyp^{1/2}or;sm;jyp'PtaeEi a0;vaomem*a'ool yav^{1/2}on/ olaomvn; wpcslrm
a'ocwi;&i;om;rsm;Ei wpom;wn;jzpum owuo aexiluon/ 0exr;wb0
aexiru o&ygon/

pm;aomuru jrerm t b"newi

pm;aomu- bu pm;aomu?pm;p&maomup&mrsm;u o;aqmion/ ¹⁰

[ziqxm;ygon/ xalum i pm;aomuron vwaep0pm;aomuaom t pma&pmwu
pm;o;jci;u ac;qEiygon/

nyav;\]xujruw"m;om;ay:u csljrjrysm;&npu} 0w&nrem* wi;&i;
om;w\ pm;aomuaexiruvn; awU&ygon/ a'guwmo;vi cE;aq;^{1/2}wi wm0e
xr;aqmip0u Ze;onrygvmon twu pm;aomua&wi tqirajyzpovpm;&yu

'awm jynoqi u? or0g, rqi u Elqb;0, lly; a&aE;elazsmaomu?
iuaysmo;w? oabmo;w 0, pm;/ jzpo vpm;vu w, /¹¹

[íazmjyxmygon/ jrermq^{1/2}, vpvr;p0 pepatmuwi Elq? olum;? qyympon
wu jynoqi? or0g, rqiwr tcs;usa&mi;cygon/ , aeacwuo tv, wu
r0, , Eiay/ xalum iq&m0eon rrcwr;&^{1/2}aomElqEi xri;eyaygi;rsm;pmu

⁹ nyav;? 2016? 326/

¹⁰ jrerm t zU? 1979? 197/

¹¹ nyav;? 2016? 252/

tpm;x;pm;aomuc&on/ q&m on vcr;omq&m0e wp0;jzpaomvn; a&mu&&m
ae&ma'o \ tajctaetvu p m;aomuaexijyryu aw&ygon/

em*wi;&i;om;w \ t"utpm;tpmrm acgi&njzpon/ em*vr;w\ won vu;
vi, ? a, m u sm;re;r rue acgi&naomuav $\frac{1}{2}$ on/ em*acgi&n on taumi;q;
tm [m&jyn0on tm;jzntc&njzpalumi;u

'acgi&nu oyly;tm [m&"mwe jynpwacgi/ rr;b;/ ve;qe;
wuuly; cetm;w;wacgi/ owu,w;v; c n;aeEiwm 'acgi&n
wec;? acgi&n owaumiay/ ¹²

[ívn;aumi;? q&m0eu,wi cpwcsewi acgi&naomucy? vemuvn; acgi&n
aomuxm;yu

vu;awvmawm uleawmvuxrm acgi&ncu;u;Ei yuyi;w;aea&m/
.....ciye;onu tccr,Ze;onuvn; acgi&nawwuawm vem
Ewcr;vn; acgi&nawe ¹³

[ívn;aumi;azmjyxm;on/ twyww $\frac{1}{2}$ ivn;jzp? Zmwaqmivn;jzpaom a'guwm
oe;vi \ jzp&y on o $\frac{1}{2}$ yay:ve;von/ em*vr;w \ "avp $\frac{1}{2}$ uEitn jyraexi&i;
txuvu;rsm;om;on Zmwuon pmzwowtm; pwvy $\frac{1}{2}$ m;apygon/

em*wi;&i;om;won wEiwyi ar;jrla&u;vn; vyuiluon/ tx;o;zi
]0u}ar;jrlav&on/ tpm;taomu&m;yg;aom em*wi;&i;om;w]0u} azmpm;aomulu
yu q&mnyav;u

t'e, burawm Ouay:ly;lyq&i twi;u vpmawxwly; xujcr;jcr;
ypvuw, / ly;&itjcr;vuuiw, / uivlu;ulyqawmr pm;lu&wm
.....r;owxm;wzbu;ay: 0g;ñyawlum;u0uom;u vueruib yg;pye
uuly;qvpm;luwm/ ijym&n? ci;? luuoejzLerygb tom;pr; uipm;
luwm/ 0uuxuwtqe uulu&wm ¹⁴

[íazmjyxm;yg on/ 0uuowly; tpr;vur;ui? vuezpm;luaom pm;aomuru
aw&ygon/

em*awmiwe;wi aexiaom em*wi;&i;om;w \ tpm;taomuqi;&on/
tom;pm;vv i ar;xm;on luu? 0uwu owly;pm;luon/ cujywpm;aomu
avr $\frac{1}{2}$ yg/ r;ui ívn;aumi;? jyw ívn;aumi; pm;aomuav $\frac{1}{2}$ onu aw&ygon/

¹² nyav;? 2016? 298/

¹³ -, i;-? 278/

¹⁴ -, i;-? 298/

0wpm;q i , i r

0wpm;q i , i r \ t "y m , u j r e r m t b "mewi

0wpm;- ß u 0wq i o n /¹⁵

q i , i - ß u w i w , v y a t m i j y v y o n / u i ; y o n /¹⁶

[a z m j y x m ; y g o n /

] x u j r u w " m ; o m ; a y : u c s j r j r y m ; & n p u } 0 w 1/2 n w i a w u & a o m e m * w i ; & i ; o m ;
w o n o b m 0 t w i ; y i a e x i a v & u o n / a ' g u w m o e ; v i y x r q ; c p w a r ; a y ; c
a o m t r s ; o r ; y g ; & x ; x m ; y u

u a v ; & u r c i u o u a v ; a v ; w 0 g ; 0 g ; w t m ; t m ; i o u u m ; & w t c g
y g ; r n ; a w j y m a r m i a e a t m i x ; x m ; w u m ; u o p ; & r p w a w u
a u s m v m ; l y ; l y ; w t l y ;¹⁷

[í a z m j y x m ; o n / e m * t r s ; o r ; w o n l r l j y w i a e x i a o m t r s ; o r ; r s m ; u o o e y c g ; ?
r w u y r s m ; v r ; j c , a v r 1/2 a y / r u E m w i y & x ; u m t v q i o n " a v u o & y g o n /
1/2 ; & m t v E i r c i a r w m t v u w p l y i w n ; j r i a , m i v m a t m i a & ; z l j y a o m Z m w u u u
t v v & o a j r m u a e y g o n /

e m * t r s ; o r ; r s m ; y & x ; & m w i j r l o r s m ; r w u y v r ; j c , u m t v j i o u o y i y g ; y g ;
E i , 0 , 0 a v ; x ; a v & y g o n /

c y y g ; y g ; y , 0 , 0 b x ; a v 1/2 o n / r s m ; r s m ; ß u ; y w o y x ; w , v l r 1/2 b ; /
r s 0 ; a l u m i ; t u u o a b m a v ; a x m i u u o a b m , 0 p p u a v ; o m x ; u w ,¹⁸

[í v x 0 ; v u , w i a w u l j r i a w c y e m * a w m i w e ; w a p w a p m i ; p m t y w i a & ; o m ;
x m ; y g o n /

a ' g u w m o e ; v i w m 0 e x r ; a q m i o n c E ; a q ; 1/2 ß u ; w i o e m j y q & m r w p 0 ; w n ;
o m 1/2 o n / e m * a w m i w e ; w i t a e l u m l y ; t a j c u a e o j z p o n / x o e m j y a e m e l u n \
a q ; 1/2 w i w m 0 e x r ; a q m i p 0 0 w p m ; q i , i y u

u l e a w m & w p 0 ; w n ; a o m q & m r / a t m i v u r w w p a p m i & x m ; w , / ' g a y r
o l b m o m x b t j y m & i a & m i 0 w w , / a j c a x m u r m c z e y p ; v /¹⁹

[í a & ; o m ; x m ; o n / u s e ; r m a & 0 e x r ; r s m ; u E i i a w m u & m x ; t q i t v u w n 0 w p
o w r w x m ; y g o n / o l a o m v e m r 1/2 a o m c E ; a q ; 1/2 r 0 e x r ; o n o e m j y l 0 w & r n
t e a & m i x b r 0 w b x b t j y m & i a & m i 0 w x m ; y g o n / x a l u m i a 0 ; v a o m e m * a w m i w e ;

¹⁵ j r e r m p m t z l ? 1991? 360

¹⁶ - , i ; - ? 121/

¹⁷ n y a v ; ? 2016? 248/

¹⁸ - , i ; - ? 247/

¹⁹ - , i ; - ? 259/

a'owi0exr;w0n tajaet&0wpm;qi, i&yu o&&ygon/ &m x;t qitvu
0w&rnurob 0wci0v0wy? oemjy0wptvu czeyziw0wxm;y? Zmwuuu
em*awmiwe;a'o^{1/2} aq;^{1/2} \ o^{1/2}yuay:apygon/ &, arm^{1/2} illy;z, jzply; obm0u0n
Zmwuuizpon/

em*awmiwe;on om;vma&cucaomallumi p;ym;a&? use;rma&? ynma&
ponwrm tzuzurerucygon/ em*wi;&i;om;w0n qi;&y;0iair^{1/2}on
twualumi t0wtxnrm;u 0,, ír0wEiluyg/ u,wi, uvyaomtxnm;
utrl;or;wu u,cEmatmuyi; vatmíom0wuon/ trsl;om;wrm u,v;w;
aeav&uon/ em*vrsl;w0wpm;qi, iyu 0wwi

a0;uz;wma? vuww;av;y qixm;wm/ wcsl;brawmi z;rxm;b;/
aiguavm uewavn;/

trsl;or;awuvn; &ibwua[mi;avmi t^{1/2}uawmvlluyg&/ ow/
&iom;aw 'wi;jriae&wm²⁰

[íazmjyxm;ygon/ em*wi;&i;om;w0n r^{1/2};zvm"avtwi; 0wpm;lluygon/
t0wtpm;r0wb tm;v;twwaexiluon/ t0wtpm;0wqi&etwu 0,, &
aialu;vn;r^{1/2}/ t0wclyvy&e twwynm;vn;r^{1/2}aomallumi u,v;w; aeclu[e
won/ pma&q&mnyav;on em*a'o \ b0taetxm; (0g) vaertzUrm;u Zmwvr;
Eivuzuati xnoi;ay;ji;zi Zmwuuonyí o^{1/2}yyjivmon/ obm0
jzp&yre aemuctzUrm; \ yy;ralumi 0wlonyíobm0 u;vmon/ tloz, vr"av
rm;tay: pmzwowt m^{1/2}p;purvmapon/

em*vrsl;w0n awmi, mcwontji ajymi? v;Ei ye;Orsm;u puysl;av^{1/2}
on/ trvuav&on/ xallumi em*trsl;om;w0n "m;utraqmíav^{1/2}yu

ow"m;awu ow&laemuyi; ausmewiyg;llum;rm opom;"m;tre/
tusteawll&w, /²¹

[ía&om;xm;ygon/ "m;u u,Eirumxm;^{1/2}on/ &eoEi&iqiawvn; "m;Ei
wucu&e toitaetxm;jzpon/ em*trsl;om;w\ taqmita, miyizpygon/
em*vrsl;w\ vaertzUrm;u aemucjyí a&zUxm;ontwu toi,wtm;aumi;
vmygon/ aemuctzUrm;t m;aumi;aomallumi xaemuctzUurí ^{1/2}e;uevy^{1/2}m;
aqmí^{1/2}uay;aeon Zmwaqmi a'guwmo;vi \ arwm? apwemxuoeaomp^{1/2}u?
trsm;t usl;aqmi p^{1/2}ur;on xi^{1/2}m;vm&ygon/ Epouz, jzp vm&ygon/

²⁰ nyav;? 2016? 297/

²¹ -, i;-? 298/

t o uar;r

a'g u w m o e ; v i o n o a X ; o m ; u e o n r s l ; 1/2 ; j z p o n / r b r s m ; u a i a l u ; a w m i w i ;
a o m p ; y m ; a & ; v y i e ; 1/2 i r s m ; j z p o n / 4 i ; w \ o m ; u v n ; r b \ p ; y m ; a & ; v y i e ; u
O ; a q m i a p c i o n / w u o v w u p 0 w i 0 Z m w , l y ; p ; y m ; a & ; b \ a p c i o n / o a o m
Z m w a q m i a r m i o e ; v i o n 0 g o e m y g a o m c p w q & m 0 e j z p v í o y w a j y m i ; , u m
a q ; a u s m i ; w u c o n / a q ; y n m b & í v y i e ; c i a q ; u & m w i v n ; u i r ; u i c o n / e m *
a w m i w e ; c E ; a q ; 1/2 a & m u í a q ; u o & e v e m r 1/2 y u

q & m 0 e w p a , m u ? o w w w y n m u a q ; y n m ' a w m a q ; u c i y g w , / ' g a y r
t e u , w i r \ u a & m u a w m v e m u r 1/2 b ; / b m t v y r [w w y w w r v y &
b ; / E i i a w m u a y ; w v p m u t v u m ; a w m x i r p m ; c i b ; t e u , ²²

[í a z m j y x m ; y g o n / a p s ; o n u a p s ; a & m i ; c i o u o q & m 0 e u v n ; a q ; u o c i a o m
t o u a r ; r u a w & y g o n / o i l u m ; a v v m x m ; a o m y n m & y E i t o u a r ; r j y \ v a o m
q & m 0 e w p 0 ; \ b 0 u v n ; o & y g o n /

a'g u w m o e ; v i v e m w p 0 ; u c p w & m w i t o u t 1/2 , E i t v y t u i u
a r ; a o m t c g

o t o u a r ; a w m r a j z w w b ; / t v y t u i u a w m r q ; w / b m e v u w m v
' ; a v ; v m ; ? j r m ; v m ; q a w m r [w b ; / v e " m ; e o ; o w / b m a u m i a w
& z ; v q a w m 0 u 0 & z ; w , / p i & z ; w , / a w m 0 u & z ; o w / a v ; a w j r m ; a w
r o ; b v e " m ; y o ; w r q ; q w m a w m 1/2 o w a u m i ; o r [w b ; / ²³

[í a & ; o m ; x m ; y g o n / e m * v r s l ; r s m ; o n a w m i , m c w v , v y a o m t o u a r ; r 1/2 o u o
r q ; v y i e ; E i t o u a r ; r v n ; 1/2 y g o n / e m * w i ; & i ; o m ; r s m ; \ o w 1/2 j c i ; o n a , m u s m ;
w p a , m u \ * P y ' j z p o n / a w m 1/2 i ; w & p m e r s m ; u x y w u & i q i w u c u t E i , o n
v r s l ; j z p o n /

, l u n u ; u , r

u r m a y : 1/2 v o m ; w i ; o n r r , l u n & m b m o w & m ; u o u 0 i , l u n l u y g o n /
u r m a y : w i t " u b m o m u ; a v ; r s l ; u t r s m ; q ; , l u n u ; u , l u y g o n / e m * a w m i w e ;
1/2 e m * w i ; & i ; o m ; w o n r s l ; 1/2 ; p 0 q u e w u ; u , r 1/2 c y g o n / 1964 c 0 e ; u i w i
c & p , m e o m o e m j y i r s m ; o n y w u l i a w m i a l u m w a v \ m u o m o e m j y i v m o n t w u
c & p , m e b m o m u o u 0 i o r s m ; v n ; 1/2 y g o n /

n y a v ; \] c l j r j r " m ; o m ; } 0 w 1/2 n w i e m * v r s l ; w \ u ; u , , l u n r u

²² n y a v ; ? 2016? 256/

²³ - , i ; - ? 359/

ywu*l*iwa*l*um*r*m $\frac{1}{2}$ m*q* , $\frac{1}{2}$ m $\frac{1}{2}$ &i cep $\frac{1}{2}$ m*u* c&p , meaw*/* ee*;* , e*?* yeaq*m*i
bu*u* c&p , mer*sm*;wi em**aw*miwe*;* t*v* , yi*;*rm*y* b*m*omraw*?* Ew
u*;*u , w*maw* $\frac{1}{2}$ aew*m*/ ²⁴

[íazm*jy*x*m*;on*/* x*l*a*l*u*m*i c&p , mebm*om*u*;*u , o*?* ewu*;*u , o*?* b*m*omr*or*sm;
 $\frac{1}{2}$ a*l*u*m*i; o&ygon*/*

em**aw*miwe*;* $\frac{1}{2}$ em**vr*sl;w*on* t*it*'i;"mwcsl;wra*l*u*m*i vny*i*;u;a&m**gr*sm;
cpm;ae&ygon*/* vny*i*;u;a0'em*on*vemr*sm*;u a'guw*m*oe;viu cpway;v*on*/
o*l*aom vemr*sm*;u aq; $\frac{1}{2}$ orv*m*/ rcc*il*uay/ xtcgq&m0eu vemr*sm*; $\frac{1}{2}$ &m*o* o*m*;a&m*u*
í o \ 0;acg*i*;u taygix*m*;u m cay;&on*/* a&m**gay*smu v*i* q&m0eu ow \ j*ew*q&m}
tjzp*ow*r*won*/ a&m**gray*smu v*i* acg*i*;jzwrn [aom uwpum;Eicay;con*/*
vemr*sm*; \ t*v*;t*u*wr*sm*;c*í* atmijricaom t*cg* ewq&mwp*yg*;tjzp em**vr*sl;w \
 , l*un*ru&con*/*

've*u*leaw*m* w $\frac{1}{2}$ wu*jy*m;A'b*m*om*u*;*u* , w 'u'0y [w0rac:
a'guw*m*oe;viac: t&r;oe;vi [m v*om*;pipp{uejzpygv*u*uae
ewwpyg; t*jz*po*l* a&m*u* $\frac{1}{2}$ om;ygaww , ²⁵

[íazm*jy*x*m*;ygon*/* q&m0erm A'b*m*om*u*;*u* , a*l*u*m*i;o&ont*ji* em**w*r*m* a&m**g*
aysu*ui*;atm*i*uoy;aom q&m0eu ew [, l*un*u*;*u , a*l*u*m*i; o $\frac{1}{2}$ &ygon*/* vaer
aemuctz*l*trsl;rsl;u Zmwu*uw*ixno*i*;í Zmwaqmiuyg0i*vy* $\frac{1}{2}$ m;ap*ci*;zi
Zmwv*r*;tay: pw0ipm;vmapon*/*

em**aw*miwe;ay; $\frac{1}{2}$ u*sl*&Ei &eu*sl* $\frac{1}{2}$ m*r*sm;on*l* jrirm;aomawmiwe;r*sm*; 0i;&
xm;aom awmiay; $\frac{1}{2}$ m*u*av;r*sm*;jzpon*/* om;vm&ecucaoma'o*?* vota&m*u*tayg*u*
en;aoma'o*?* rzllz;ao;aoma'o*jz*pon*/* pm;0waea& cucouo*l* , Oau*;*r
rx*e*;um;ao;aom t&ya'o*jz*pon*/* xa'ow*i* , ZyaZmav $\frac{1}{2}$ y*u*

t'e , awbu*u* uleawm $\frac{1}{2}$ p0u acg*i*;jzw , ZyaZmwm wiwivyl*u*
we;..... owacg*i*;aq*m*i? owewq&m& owob*u*;&pum;wpce;y
em;axm*il*u oawaewt&y ²⁶

[í azm*jy*x*m*;ygon*/* 1960 ausm*u*mvr*sm*;u zllz;raemu*u*aoma'or*sm*;wi aexiaom
em**vr*sl;w \ $\frac{1}{2}$;&m , l*un*u*;*u , ru o $\frac{1}{2}$ &ygon*/* x*v*ra&aemuctz*l*a*l*u*m*i
t*ou*peí rzllz;ao;aom em**vr*sl;w \ t*ou*u*u* , q , ay;aom Zmwaqmi
a'guw*m*oe;vi \ p $\frac{1}{2}$ uon Epouz , jzpv*m*&ygon*/*

em**wi*;&i;om;w \ $\frac{1}{2}$;&mewwion"av*u*

²⁴ nyav*;*? 2016? 289/

²⁵ - , i*;* -? 211/

²⁶ - , i*;*? 355/

cpwc&wvemaw&ku, 0re cpwwae&mu vuly; ouewtwici;
w, / tr∨a0'em½iu luuwpau mi ewyaZmc&w, q&i
½mcewq&mu lu uaygiwpzu, w, / um, u½iewwiz &itywpjcr;
u ewacgi;e&itye aygiwpjcr;u uleawmu vmay;&wm²⁷

[íazmijxm;yg on/ ewq&m \ loZm t mPm u;rm;ru aw&yg on/ em*vr&w \
ewq&m tay: ou0i, unruvn; o&yg on/ a'guwmo e;vi \ tloz, taw
t buu 0wygZmwuursm;Ei cwquvuaom t cg Zmwuursm;on tqe;wu, |
jzpvmon/ pmzwo \ t m½u vra&aemuctzrsm;u qaqmivmEiygon/

em*awmiwe;ay:½ [w½mon jynawm omprue;½mjzpon/ jynawm om
acwjzpaom 1964 cEpu em*awmiwe;toiajym i;va& b0opwnaqm ua&u
ar(mre;ly; pjy½mjzp&e u;pm;con/ x&mwi A'bom be;awm u;au sm i;wpau sm i;
½on/ [w½mEite;tem;½½m rsm;u omoemj/aeao m be;awm u;wp yg;½ly; u, u
petepemcum qi;&'ur&pcum omoemj/aeu

wpyg;wn;owi;o;ly; em*wi;&i;om;awu A'&U t q;t raw oeo i
w, / A [owaw aqm i&ea½mi&eaw ojeEioavm u jze0ae½m oyg²⁸

[a&om;xm;yg on/ xal u iem*wi;&i;om;rm;wi A'bom uou0i, unor sm;
vn;½allu mi; aw&yg on/ ewu;u, o, ZyaZm or sm;½ouo i g;yg;ovapm ixe;
Oyoapm i b&m;½c;luaom A'bom o i em*wi;&i;om;rm;vn;½uon/

jci o;oycu

ppmwr;on em*awmiwe;ay:wiaexiaom em*wi;&i;om;w \ vaertzl
rsm;u avv m xm;yg on/ nyav; \]xujruw "m;om;ay:u c&jrjrysm;&npu }
0w&non twyw [e 0w&njzpaom allu mi twy wzlc q&m0ea'guwmo e;vi \
Bulawljzpyucon talu mi;rm;u a&om;xm;yg on/ xtxr Zmwaqm iE;aq;½o
a&mu &cier ajym i;a&lc&cse (6)Epau sm u mvwi lu lawlc&aom em*vr&w \ vaeru
o&yg on/

awmvea&au mipacwjy; jrerm q&, vpvr;p0acwum vwi wi;&i;om;w \
vaerb0on tzuzureruaeonu aw&yg on/ aexir? pm;aomurwwi
t½;&i;q; obm0qege pm;aom u uon/ to;t&ur sm;pm;av&jy; tom;ay:rom
pm;uon/ ap;wi0, pm;avr&ay/ acgi&nu tjaomuav&uon/ a'guw
mo e;vivyuiaom cE;aq;½Eiywouon taetxm;rm;u o&yg on/ em*
wi;&i;om;w \ r;zm;y? o!* [ypon rwujym;on"avuvn;o&yg on/ 0wpm;

²⁷ nyav;? 2016? 296/

²⁸ -, i;-? 419/

qi, irwi arjyewi&i;om;rm; uo tuvcnrsm; 0wavr&b t&uvatniom
0wav&jy; obm0twi; aexiav&ygon/ touar; rwi bu;ym;cr;omvpwr&ay/
tvavmben;luon/ u, Or;0atniom &mazpm;aomu vyuiluon/

u;u, , lunrwi ewu;u, orsm;jy; ewq&m \ loZm t m Pmu em*vrsl;w/
, lunpmvucav&luon/ c&p, me? A'bmom u;u, orsm;vn; &lu ygon/

em*vrsl;won ow \ "av, 0au;rtwi; o;oeaexior sm;jzpon/
awmiay:wi use;rma&rm tzuzureru a eonu o&ygon/ vecaomEpaygi; (40)
ausmcelu wi&i;om;w \ vaertzu awl&&ci;jzpon/ ½&i;aom obm0Ei
e;pyaom rzllz;ao;aom em*wi&i;om;w \ ½&i;aom vaertzu twlyw[e
0w \ aemuctzrsm;tjzpxm;í Zmwvr;? Zmwaqmiw \ vy½m;rrsm;u zew;xm;yg
on/ aemuctzEiZmwaqmiu A[jyí aygi;pn;Zmwvr; tjzpwijyxm;ygon/
vaeraemuctzrsm;alumi 0wlygZmwuursm;on o½yyjiy; pw0ipm;z, jzpvmyg
on/ xa'o½jynorm;tay: arwmapwemrsm;zi u, wiay;caom Zmwaqmi
a'guwmo;vi \ pw"mwrejryu vn; y&woww Epoucpr;lu&ygon/
jzp&yreizpon vaeraemuctzrsm;u obm0uus wijyEi ci;jzpygon/ jzp&yre
uyi nyav; \ pwu;pwoe;Ei a&zUwiypr;&nalumi trsl;om;pmayq&ont x
tEynm*Pajrmuc&ci;jzpon [xijriygon/

e*;

ppmwr;wi nyav; \]xujruw"m;om;ay:u csl;jrysm;&npu} rem*
wi&i;om;w \ vaertzuavvm o&&ygon/ jrermEii&wi&i;om;w \ vaerb0
taxaxu jrerm pay½axmir avvmEiygon/ , aeacw zljz;w;wu aeaom em*
wi&i;om;w \ vaertzu quvuavvm&e tx;u;pm;tm;xw&ygrn/

usr;u;pm&i;

nyav;l (2016)l *xujruw"m;om;ay:ucsl;jrysm;&npu/* rEav;? vxu;ym;a&pmay/
jrermptzl/ (2008)l *jrerm t b"me? '-lur/* &eue? ae vi;yEywul
vx? 0;vl (1967)l *em*awmiwe;wapwapmi;/* rEav;? u;ym;a&yEywul

ajrrevi \]pulav , mOys} 0w\wr Zmwu ucwq uy

Zirmoe;*

pmwr; t u:O;

0w\won pma&q&m \ zew;ralumi jzpay:vm&on &opmayjzpon/ x\lumi
pma&q&m \ zew;ronta&ygon/ Zmwuon pma&q&mzew;aom Zmwaqmi
 \ tjzptyuyijzpon/ ppmwr;wi ajrrevi \]pulav , mOys} 0w\wr
Zmwaqip&u ay:viapon Zmwuucwquyu tao;pwavvmwijyxm;
ygon/ acwiyi0ww oilum;a&twu taxmutu jyEiygon/

aomc:ua0g [m&rsm; - Zmwaqmi? Zmwvr;? Zmwu u? ajympum;? acwiyiicpm;r

e'ge;

pma&q&m\won ow&ywnaexiaom acwtalumi;? vrs;talumi;? vtcslU
talumi; o&yazma&om;luon/ pma&q&m;u;tyc:*0v u jaemiwpacw\ 0w\ww
on vruptaxaxu azmijaq;aE;luvrn} [qon/ atmioi;uvm; rnon
pma&q&mrrq rrb0? rryw0e;uiurxi [yb a&v\reialumi;qon/ jroe;wi
uvm; vltztpn;? 'grr [wacwEipmay [m cr&b; [qz;on/ '*ewm&muvm;
pma&q&mrm;onacwu urn;x;orsm; jzpon [qz;on/ ppmwr;wi pma&q&m
vi ,wpa , mu \ acwuurn;x;yu 0w\wtwwynmoabm t& c:O;uyavvmxm;
ygon/

pma&o \ u , a& t u:O;

trn&i;rm pe;reatmijzpon/ pma&oon p;rvm; (uA&aw)? Epyi;wpyi;?
c;? t&yw\un\un? au&supmuczueizui&? bm;rm;c½eu , (bmijye) wu
a&om;con/

1/ pulav , mOys

pulav , mOys0w\won 2012? azazm0g&? a&tjrlawr*Zi;wi azmijcaom
0w\wjzply; ajrrevi \]&eue w&pme0 , smOr zwpauimvwae} trn&0w\w
aygi;c&ywi v n; yg0iaom0w\w jzpon/ igw\pmayr xwa0on/

* a'guwm? ygarnu (XnerL;)? jrermxm? rau;wuov

1¹ 1/ 0w\w t pzew;r

]]tay:uae pulav , mOysaw ypcwmu &ywe;u&yygawm? at m}}

(ajrrevi? 2013? 39)

[aom ajympum;ji 0wwu p xm;on/ ajymorm rnore;ro&/

]]pulav , mOyswppi; [m yw0e;usi u b , avmu 'uay;v\ v? Avx
rnpnr;yg b;/ avmipm vn;rueyg b;/ to vn;r qyg b;/ xcur&i
awmi' P&m r&Ei yg b;/ roumpulpav;wpp jy e;w;om;&om/ truav;
wpp yom;&om}}/

(ajrrevi? 2013? 39)

pulav , mOysEiywouaom taw;rsm;r m Zmwaqmi \ pwcpm;ru ajymjyaeon/

]]'Eiiwi xuaygu [í pulav , Oysav;rsm; vwwijci;wpc om o\ x
wi &onr [wygav m}}

(ajrrevi? 2013? 39)

wi]o} [aom ww , emrpm;u o;xm;on/ Zmwaqmion jatmi} trnygojzply;
Eii&yjcm;wi t vyvyae&ojzpalumi; 0wwtpu azmjyae ygon/ 0wwtpwi
pulav , mOysypcwm u wm;q;oEi pulav , mOysvwow t m;lyiaeonu aw&
on/]tm;lyir}}zi zew;xm;aom alumi 0w\ \ talumi;t&mu yrpw0ipm;r jzpap
on/

1² 2/ Zmwu uEiZmwaqmi zew;r

Zmwaqmiw\ tjzptyuon Zmwuujzpon/ p0w\wwi Zmwu u (10)
cyg0ion/

1² 2¹ 1/ Zmwu u (2)

]]pEiiwi tjriq;taqmu t t u;jzpvmrn aqmu vup vyie;ciwi
atmiri;on terq;tqivyom;wp0;jzpon/ oEi tazm t vyorm;
tm;v;on jrerm rsm;jzply; owu tycsyon acgi;aqmion jrerpum;
rawmuwpacguwwon Eii jcm;om;jzpon/ u0;uyon/ b m o ma&;
tajccci;rsm;pm umjcm;on pEiiwi ow tzt p p t&m&m u0;usy
on/ pwtye;ajzp&m0eaqm i r rsm;? upm;ui;rsm; aygrsm;vaom pEii
wi taqmiEi vyie;cirv í b , urra&m uz;c? o t vyvyaeaom
o;q , ajcmuxytjriwi avaw' va [m wuaeygaom vn; atmiri;
twuawm t ou ½ Lu syae qyi}} (ajrrevi? 2013? 40)

[í pma;q&u Zmwaqmiatmiri;talumi; ajymiyon/ tajmzew;rjzpon/
Zmwaqmi\cpm;ru azmjyaeomvn; Zmwaqmiu,wiajyaeom opuryg0iyg/
aemuzmwuon tizew;rjzpon/ Zmwaqmi\um,u? opu? raemuwu
vy&m;ray:atmi zew;xm;on/

1? 2? 2/ Zmwu u (3)

r;c;wv vxuaeon ta0;wpae&mo aelv , em;cewi xri;pm;&i;wu tpe
r xií lunaeron/

] [m}

]pm;vupxri;b;u ab;ocv uon/ rupurwly; aoc:matmi
xy\unon/ rvyg/ r;c;awr&awm/ aocsm on/ wujriu;rsm;r&awm/
xae&mwil v , ui;pr;jyirsm;? a&ue? u&w;uw ajcw&nt rav;rsm;?
jzlqwaeon &m0;x;apw}}

] "g — "g}

ow&nav;yg/ avaww [; [;Ei orsuEmo w;a0wuaeon/

] [;}

avuw0u;&Lí rwxwvuon/ "gr wu , tarmajyapon vwqw
aomav/ "v½ci;r&rom tjriaw\unviaply; tp0ojzi av;vcaom
opwrsm;jyevnaygyg;om;awmon/ olaom oyrlumvu?

] [aumi ... [rm we;pzac:aelyxawm}

]xaeu xri;0atmi rpm;vu&aomvn;weyg on/ xuol avr&Ei
½ci;r&u a0;umconrm tb , r\umclyv}}

(ajrrevi? 2013? 40-41)

[aom]tjyonZmwaqmi\ pw"mwcpm;rtajctaeu ay:vixi&m;apon/
Eii&yjcm;& cr;em;aomwuwm taqmutOrsm;urjriawm? vu&tajctaeu xuajy;
um vr;qwaeaeom&muav;q pwu;jzeu:u a&mu&om;yjzpon/ olaom ypyero
tlum&u; xuajy;cir&vuaeom tajctaeu vn; Zmwu u\aeuq;wi azmjyxm;
on/

1? 2? 3/ Zmwu u (4)

Zmwaqmi\ b0tajctaeu vn; Zmwaqmiu p0;pm;ce;jzi ajymiyov zew;xm;on/

]pEiio a&mu puwn;u vyvu&on tvyawqwm vwpa , mu
Eiyirw/ armwmpv;v r&yren;vy&on/ rp0;pm;t m;/ rawa0tm;/

wpccrm; , i;om;v(i ay;qy&rnavu;rm weiwy;/ nbuwi vn;
em;&rnrx iEi/ pu^{1/2}rm;o^{1/2} avmi^{1/2}rm;o^{1/2}om;um r&&on tAmwirm;
&m íqi;&on/ 'avmu vyaewmawmir at*ipay:wicon tau;rm;
rausao;/ &muEm;Epaumi a&mi;&airm;u wppwwpyi; t&i;tE;
vyíxuvmcvrm; Em;Epaumipm weiwy;t vyawvyae&wm rsm;vm;
ro[wpcgwav pwayguayguEi aw;rao;on/ tcawm oltwu
xuaygu wpayguawavly}}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 42)

[íZmwaqmi \ pwwi;cpm;ru ajmijaeon/ ajmijou]o} [aom ww , emrpm;
ut o;jy\ x m;aomumi Zmwaqmi \ pwwi; pu m;ajmu wpqiajmijaeon oabm
jzpon/ pZmwu uwiajmijou \ u , a&miu , Og u raw&ay/ Zmwaqmion
xri;pm;em;cwi; o;q , ajcmu xy& tpe;av;o^{1/2}om;xion/ xae&mav;rm
xivuwi; &mjriu i;rm;ujria , mily; &muvr;qwon/ &molpwu;Eia&muom;
on/ &mu jriu i;r<;jrivmon/ i , p0u&mxy& tjriq;opyirm;qo a&muatmi
wuí wp&mv;u tay:rr;uncz;on/ xopyixyzsm;r pulav , mOysav;rm;
vwwicon/ , cawm o;q , ajcmu xyay:r pulav , Oysu vwwiv uon/

]]ysvupr;um/ [;... ta0;q;q}}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 42)

1? 2? 5/ Zmwu u (5)

i , i , u vwwicaom pulav , Oysav;u tazEi tw awmxoiv uom;p0
rvae&mEi tawm tvr;a0;um on awmwi;wpae&mü jyeawcz;alumi;? opyi
xyzsm;xu t qaygi;rm;pmjri on o;q , ajcmu xyay:r vwwion pul
av , mOysuav;u avalumi;oiv(i o&muav;o a&muom;Eialumi; p0;pm;yrsm;u
taw;jiazmjyon/

]]xalumi aemuav , mOysrm;vwgyu &&;rvwawm/ av , mOysay:wi
pwxay:vm on pmwav;rm;a&;ly;r vwawm on/]]&muow&w , }}?
]]trjyeciw , }}?]]xri;pm;vraumi;b;}}?]]*smu;uqvuw , }} wt xyg
a&;jzpon/ xu o pulav , Oysav;rm; vwwijy;ontcgwi; xu&c
on a'gorrm;? yiye;ra0'emrm;? trvr;'P&rm;tm;v; , ypov
aysmu u m jyv nve;qe; wu u vmygawm on}}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 39)

Ei ijc;wi om;a&mu t vyvyae&aom Zmwaumi \ pwcpm;ru xyqijyaom
Zmwu u jzpon/

1² 2² 6/ Zmwu u (6)

xZmwu uwi 0w\w t pZmwu uü azmjyxm;aom ajympum;u xyrazmjyon/

]tay:uae pulav , mOysaw ypcwm u &ywe;u&y ygawma t mi}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 43)

**xpum;ajmorm *sm u;jzpaumi;? olem;xwi t xyxyywi&uum llum;a , miaer
allumi;? a'govn;xualumi; azmjyon/**

]bmupersm; 'avm ux vuywyiae&wmygvr}}

**]p0;pm;avav a'goyxuavav/ 'Eiiwi xuaygu[í av , mOys
vwijci;wpcom o xwi&onr[wygv m;/ [ww,/ xuayguu
pulav , mOysy/ bmupe 'aum iawpum;u 'avm ux em;axmi
ae&rm v/ vww , um/ bmjzpv/}}**

(ajrrev i? 2013? 43)

**Zmwaqmiwpa , muwn; ajymaeici;jzpon/ pwwi;pum;ajymjzpon (interior
monologue)/ *sm u;uwu&uajymici;r[w/ *sm u;tajym u jyeajymiyelum;a , mi
jci;jzpon/ xZmwu uwi ZmwaqmiEi*sm u;w\ t m;lyiru (conflict) aw&on/**

**]allumuw , vawm b , [wrvum? owvu atmurm ae&w , qawm
owpnur;ayg}}**

**]tvyawu&m;aelyu? wwEioavmu owriiia tmiowxm;? igw
ae&mu\vciv we;paew tue;aw zm;awuwp yu;? igwv uye;
tqiawavmuawm owu *&puaermr [wb;}}**

(ajrrev i? 2013? 44)

**ow\txwi t outu;q;jzpon ur\sk;u; \oway;pum;rsm;jzpygon/ olaom
ou ae\ v , em;c ewi; pulav , mOysrsm; yrevwqyg/ rllumyg/ otvyxwc&on/
olaom o0r;ren;? a'gorxu? pwtm;i , wi; wuwpccay:olom;í av , mOysav;
awvwv uwi; u , a&mpwyg ve;qe;om;on/ tvyop&mr&ao;aomvn; vpm
vuuseu ac\wmpm o;píaeon/ vyazm uizua[mi;rsm;u v n; tjrirawmygu
au;ar;om;on/ tcs\ uopulav , mOys uav;rsm;urrrsm;vaom tz;t cay;í 0 , ,
umcpm;c u pmwrsm;a&í vwwici;on/ xZmwu uwi pma&q&mu Zmwalumi;
ajymoae&mraeí ZmwaqmiEiy;um Zmwalumi;u ajymjyon/ tjcm; Zmwaqmi jzpaom
ur\sk;u;ajympum;u wpqicijyeajym on/ur\sk;u;u vv;jyxm;jci;r&ay/ t"u
Zmwaqmi\ cpm;c u u om a&\we;wiajymjyom;allumi; avv maw&&ygon/**

1? 2? 7/ Zmwu u (7)

]]uleawm}} [aomZmwaqmi wpa, muay:xuvm on/ op&uutjcm;
Zmwaqmi uleawm u ajymjyaeaomypji zew;xm;on/

]]ot alumi;awu uleawm lum;aerwmawm tawm lumly/ 'rmu jrerm
tvyorm;aw rsm;wmreayr, | wpa, mutalumi; wpa, muuawm
vci;rawz;&iawm lum;z;em;0awm&uw, / olvrs;x;x;qe;qe;
tjzptyur;x;q&iawm em;elawmirq lum;&0;r, /}}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 45)

uleawmqou oxrpulav, m0ywp pi;u taupwape tm;ay;ly; a&ciwpmu
a&ci;vualumi;? ouaussy;twxxnvuly; tacsmowaelyjzpw tjriq;
taqmut0u;u vun;x;um vawtm;v; \ av, m0yawu tay;q;xyr
vwaiay;rn talumi; ajym on/

]]&, p&maumi;wm uleawmrom;pquyg a&muatmiyay;r, qy}}

[í qao;on/

(ajrrev i? 2013? 46)

1? 2? 8/ Zmwu u (8)

Zmwaqmiuleawm \ oi, ci;wpa, mu \ pum;ajymu

]]'aumi 'vjzpom;&wmuvn; &rmor baw a&Uqiaemuqi q;om;
luw, um? tvyxwc&wmuvn; &&r [wb;? olqureae*smu
ywpylu tly;or;vuawm t'ga&mtvyvura&mplyiwn;jzpom;
w, av? t'gawtueply;awm tcvjzpom;awmwm y? igw/vn;
atmiri;u xri;riwatmiawm lunxm;ay;ygw, }}

[í wu&uxna&jyon/

]uleawm} Zmwaqmiu awmawmpwraumi;jzpom;ayr, | vlobm0t &vyie;ci
x a&muao mtcg jyearom;&alumi; azmjyxm;onulunv i Eii jcm;om; tvyvyu
on jrermw \ tajctaeu awEiigon/ uleawm Zmwaqmiu u, wiajymjy&omru
oi, ci;jzpo \pum;Ei xyr&i;jyxm;aomalumi t"uZmwaqmi \p&urm yr
&yv;uvm&aom Zmwu u jzpygon/

1? 2? 9/ Zmwu u (9)

'Eii&U tjriq;wu u; tacsmowly;p;om;alumi;? wu, u trce;cr;em;ly;
ziyu/vn; cr;em;pmu;i;ylualumi;? jrerm tvyorm;awuawm i aewp0u tm;vyci
ay;xm;alumi;?

]]*P, ci&iawm uleawmwjrermau&U vytm;awvn; t'vori;0i
taqmutt u;xrm yg0icz;w, v| rwwr;wirc&ayr, | u, bmon
u, | uze*P, Eiygw, }} (ajrrev i? 2013? 47)

[í azmjyon/

]]aemurlumygb; uleawmwaw toi;t0i;rm 0r;en;p&mowi;q;u;
wpcay:vmw, / t'tjriq;wu u;ay:u jrermwpa, mu jywu vwl/
ycsi;ly;w/ x;qe;wmu t'vem;rm pulav, mOysaw trsm;u;jyeu aae
w, w? uleawm ovuygly/ ob, ovqwm}}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 47)

]]b&m;? b&m;}}

]]ouwtwi; uleawmwav, mOawu uleawmwrom;px wu, y
yaqmiz o, |, om;lyvm;}}

(ajrrev i? 2013? 47)

[aom Zmwaqmi]uleawm} u Zmwalumi;ajym&i; cpm;c uuyg wpygwn;ajymjyji
Zmwu uazm xm;on/ Zmwaqmi uleawmonvn; atmiri;uo b0wtvyorm;
jzpEion/ Eii&yjcm;wi u, tyEiu, tvyvyae&aom jrermwu u, pm;jyon
Zmwaqmiwp0;jzpon/

1? 2? 10/ Zmwu u (10)

0w\w\ e*;jzpon/

]]wu, vrm; oite;tem;o| b, qb, ure;roaom pulav, mOys
wppi;u;vmw, qygp/ aus;Z;jy í vspvLr&vuygEi/ a0;ajrr oi
aqrsl;wp0;0;&U cpm;c upm om;rm;ygvmEion/ zizwyg}}

[í jzpon/

(ajrrev i? 2013? 47)

xajymjyc u u pma&q&ajymjyji;vm;? Zmwaumi]uleawm} uajymjyji;vm;?
00g' uEip&m talumi;jzpygon/ 0w\wwipma&q&mu Zmwaqmirms;zew; í
rrajymv aom talumi;t&mu o, 0uajymqjci;jzpon/

2/ Zmwu ucwq uy

ajrrev i \ pulav, mOys 0w\wuazmjycon twi; Zmwu u(10)czi
cwqux m;on/ tpwit "uZmwaqmiatmiri; \ taw;cpm;c ujzpon/ x

Zmwu uwi atmiri;Eit m;lyiaeo&alumi; o&on/ Zmwu u (2)wi atmiri;
a&m u&aeaomae&m? atmiri;\ tvytuiazmjyly; boma&;tajccci; umjcm;yallumi
atmiri;wraymEi/ pwus0;uyae&yu azmjyon/ Zmwu u (3)? (4)? (5) wwi
rrZmwawm&m t vobm0Ei acwrzllz;w;wuaeaomEii tajaewuEi; ,Ojyly;
&m uvr;allumi;? 'Eiiwi armwmpv;v r&yrem;vy&alumi;? tAmwirsm;&m í
qi;aomvn; ta u;rauEiao;alumi;? Em;Epaumia&m;í t&i;tE;vyvmc&alumi;?
cawm pulav ,mOysav;awrm cpm;c&upm om;av;aw xnvw&on xuaygu&
vmljzpalumi; azmjyon/ Zmwu u (6) wi wm;q; oay:vm on/ olaom atmiri;u
wm;ír&awmojzi tvyjywalumi; azmjyon/ Zmwu u (7) wi]uleawm} [aom
Zmwaumiay:vm on/ Zmwu u(8)wi uleawmuoEiE, í atmiri;talumi;
Zmw&nvnatmiajymjyon/ Zmwu u (9) wi atmiri; wutjri 36 xyr jywu
aoq;on/ Zmwu u (10) pulav ,mOys te;em;uvmvvi v;pvslr&z aumu ízi
zwzE;aqm xm;on/ pr om/ olaom aw;p&mawtrsm;βu; cexm;con/ Zmwu u
cwqu ía&;xm;aom 0w\wjzpon/ jzppOjyZmwu ur;r[w/ taw;cpm;c&uu
aumuí a&;aom Zmwu ucwquy jzpon/ vtyaomZmwaqmiu zew;íajymci;
on/ xZmwaqmitalumi;u tus,rcsll t"uZmwaqmi atmiri;p&u &yv;u
apa&;twu 0;wnxm;on/

2^o 1/ Zmwu uEiZmwaqmi

Zmwu uEiZmwaqmirm cr&yg/ luurEiluu0 rnout&ijzpov qon
ar;ce;uo jzpon [tiwmeupmr;uEmwpcwi zw&on/ xpmr;uEmwi

]]Zmwaumi&v/ Zmwu u jzpoz Zmwu ualumi Zmwaumiaw vy&m;
aewmyg/ 'Epcu b ,vrcxwvr&wmyg/ Epcv;twwta&;βu;yg
w ,}}

(Screen Art (19 June)

[qyg on/ ajrrevi\ 0w\wwivn; xoabmr&;awll&on/ Zmwaumi\ p&u
zew;&mwi Zmwaqmi\ um ,u? 0pu? raemu wygaomvn; wu&u vy&m;aom
toiuraw&yg/ vtyygu tjc m;Zmwaqmi\ u ,awtajymu xnoi;yy;ay;xm;
onu awll&on/

2^o 2/ pma&;q&m \ ajympu m;

pulav , mOy;0w\wEiywouí zew;o pma&;q&m t m; ar;jre;lu n&m

]]rav;&m;Eii umvmvrylrll u a&mucwe;u tjzptyuwp c βuicyg
w ,/ jrermawtrsm;p&w vr;wpcrmyg/ uleawmuuir&mu v ,xm;

ygw , / jrerm;pm;aom uqi yi&i tpru; u uleawm ujriom;awm u;ay:
 uae ajy;qi;vmygw , / uleawm u uir&m0uxm;ze yuqaw?
 ze;awu owx m;zajmygw , /]bmjzpv/v tpr} qawm jrermaw trsm;p
 &w&yuurm jrermawu tci;ci;vwms;aw vyav&w , w/
 wjcm;vrs;awurv b jrermujrermuy vwmwv/ t'tjzpty;uav;
 u 'aexpaeygw , / aemuly; rav;&m;rr[wyg b;/ tre;em;ci;Eii
 awmawm rsm;rsm;rm atmuajct vyorm;awu jrermawjzpaeygw , / 've
 a&ajym i; t vyorm;aweywouly; wpcca&;ciwmeu a&;vuwmygy}}

[qygon/

lci o;oycu

pma&;q&mawu&aom tawt u? t jzpty;uon pma&;q&m \ t m&cpm;Eipr;
 ay:rwnum tEynmzew;rrsm; jzpay:vmapon/ pma&;q&mEiacwEi pum;ajymo
 vn;jzpon/ xtcg pma&;q&mzew;vuaom tEynmyn;wi acwlyicpm;ru
 awEion/ ajrrev i\ pulav , mOys 0wwwwivn; Eii&yjcm;wi atmuajct vy
 om;vyaelu&aom jrermvrs;w\ b0Eit ouum;Eion/ pma&;q&m \ acwlyicpm;
 r xi[yae aom Zmwuucwqurr; jzpon/

နိဇ္ဇာ

, aeacw pma&;q&mwon owu&aw&aom acw\&ucwralumi jzpay:
 vmaom acwlyicpm;rrsm;u owzew;aom tEynmwwi xna&;uq jzpon/

ကျမ်းဂန်စာရင်း

ausmat mi/ (1991)/ **E0i* – 10i 'w , t'ur? &eue? a , mri;u;pmay/

'*ewm&m/ (2004)/ *t vaA* ' 2i &eue? qpmaywul

ajrrev i/ (2013)/ *&euew&pme0 , smOr zwpau mi vwa e 0w/wrsm; &eue? igwpmay/*

0i;ir; / (2004)/ *"m;awm iuaum i r;yi v , u jzwco/ (or[w) jroe;wiEiawqjci; /*
 yxrt'ur? &eue? pwu;ccil

t iwmeu t u; t um;

Screen Art (14 June 2019)

ajrrev iEi awqar;jre;jci; (25 June 2019)

wuovausmi;u aivri;oci;u pmay^{1/2}axmir avvmjci;

at;plir;*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on wuov\ taitouvr;claeom wuovausmi;u aivri;
oci;u pmay^{1/2}axmir avvmwijxm;ji;jzpygon/ xolavvmjci;jzi oci;
wpy'zew;&wmi t"uuaom pwu;? pum;to;tEe;? to? um&e? taw;
ta&w/ aygi;pn;nnwr&ygu teut"ym, yíav;euvmly; atmijriaom aw;
wpy'jzpv^mEialumi;? oci;wpy' zew;roabmu avvmwijxm;ygon/
aomcsua0g [m& / / oci;? &axmi? zpn;y? taw;? ta& /

e'ge;

uAsm [aome, y, bu;xwi vu^mEioci; [aom e, y, (2)cyg0ialumi; ynm^{1/2}
rsm;u relqcluygon/ &opmayrsm;jzpaom 0w? uAsm? jyZmwponwlon pmzwo
w\pwu pum;v;rsm;? ta&tzrsm;jzi pn;1/2;qaqmíouo *woci;on pmom;
t&omru *wop0rsm;? oqo\ tqtíi av,avor;rsm;jziygn;1/2;qaqmi
av^{1/2}ygon/ xialumi oci;pmom;rsm;on uAsmtzrsm;yijzp&m &opmayjzponEit n
pmay*P&nrm; ue;atmi;aepírijzpygon/

, cavvmwijyrn]]wuovausmi;uaivri;}} oci;on wpacwwpcgu
emrnu;vu^mursm;caom oci;wpy'jzpygon/ wuovuaemucjy\um vr;armz,
tcspZmwvr;wpy'u yazm xm;aom oci;wpy'jzpygon/ i, p0uwn;u rci
jzporlumcPqjyav^{1/2}ozi xoci;u&i;E;c&ygon/ xoci;on op0tm;jzi
íiranmi;r^{1/2}ontjyi pmom;tm;jzivn; xrvonu awjri&ygon/

oci;wpy'v;on pmqwijyvaom &n^{1/2}, cuua&uatmi pv, q; nnw
r^{1/2}aealumi; awjri&ontwu avvmvpwjzpc&ygon/ xíyi wuov taitou
u jyevn^cpm;apvaompw? aw;a&q&m \ aw;wpy'zew;r jzpp0Eitaw;ta&w/ u
azm xwavvmvpw jzpr&jyeon/ xialumiyi avvm&ee, y, a^{1/2};aom tcg oci;
wpy'v;u lcliraprn pmay&axmir t"uavvmwijyom;rnjzpygon/

1/ oci; [on

*woci;won vw\Ewzsm;r pwicluon [, qluygon/ , 0aus;r
rx;e;um;ru rciwu om;or;rsm;tyap&e]]at; at; t t}} [í acsmírlorsm;on

* a'guwm? vuaxmuuxu? jrermpmXme? rtyiwuov/

*woab_mou₀ion[q_luygon/ v\yiu, or_{sm}; on talumi; t&mu_vu í
 tero? tjrío? qii_{or}_{sm}; y_g0ivmozi omreajmo qor[waw_m b *woab_m
 ou₀iaom to t_qia&mu_vmcl_uon/ x_rw_pqi v_won p_wv_y&_m; c_p_m; r_r_{sm}; u
 t_ajccv_u e&pn; 0_g; y_gao_m tor_{sm}; u zew; l_uum rrc_p_m; r_t v_up_wu; r_{sm}; u
 aw; o_m; r_{sm}? p_um; v; r_{sm}; t_oi zew; cl_u&_mr aw; *woc_i; r_{sm}; ay:ay_gu_vmon[
 qEi_ygon/

oc_i; q_on_rm -

]] talumi; t_jci; t&mw_u ou; py_qx_m; aom tE_vu&_m}}¹

[jr_rem t b"me t u₀; c_ywi zi_qx_m; ygon/ x_jyi y*0e_ax_muri; 0; wiu -

]] oc_i; q_on_rm aom w&u om, m_rjzpay: a t_mi p_umy_wu; a_jy_aj_yp_jy_p
 zE_x_m; aom t&my_i jzpayon}}²

[zi_qx_m; ygon/

a': a_pm_rn_i; u_vn; -

']] p_wv_y&_m; r_al_um_i jzpay: v_maom t_ow_up_n; 0_g; E_i om, m_em_ay_sm_z,
 jzpa t_mi zew; E_ir}}³

[zi_qjy_x_m; ygon/

0; j_ril_un_uv_n; -

]] aw; *w tE_pmay_qo_nr_m oc_oom_w; u_uw; v_uw_jzi p_n; v_u
 0_g; v_u r_r; rzE_x_m; aom *P&o&E_i x_rp_ma&_o_m; x_m; on v_b0
 v_av_mu o&y_jp_my_iwn;}}⁴

[zi_qx_m; y_gao; on/

oc_i; E_iy_wou í pE, m; v_xw_uv_n; -

]] oc_i; [on_rm, a_et_r_{sm}; e_m; v_n a_el_uon t_wi; q&v_i p_mom; E_i
 t_oay_gi; py_x_m; aom t_zt_py_jzpon/]o} q_on_rm p_mom; y_gao_m *w
 t_ot_zt_py_uE_wz_{sm}; r x_wv_yj_{ci};? j_rn_wr; j_{ci};? &w_qj_{ci}; jzpon}}⁵

[zi_qjy_x_m; on_u aw&ygon/

j_rer_mp_maye, y, w_i aw; oc_i; p_may_r_{sm}; on wez; &aom p_may_r_{sm}; jz_ply; p_mom;?
 t_ot_qt_ii? *w_op_or_{sm}; j_zi v_w\p_wu n_l, z_r; p_m; E_ip_r; &a_lu_mi; o&E_iygon/

¹ jr_rem_pm t z? 2010? 45/

² w_i? 0; (y*0e_ax_muri; -)? 1921? 72

³ a_pm_rn_i? 1961? 110/

⁴ j_ril_un? 0;? 2001? p/

⁵ v_xw(pE, m; -)? 1996? 3

xalumi oci;qonrm &opmaytE, 0iwpr&;jzply; pmay&xmirlunv(i uAsmrsm;
[rw, Eiygon/ aw;oci;rsm;rwpi pmq\ vyaom taw;Ei xraom ta&;wu
qe;ppavv mEirn jzpygon/

2/ wuovau smi;u aivri;oci;\ talumi;t&mt cly

wuovau smi;u aivri;oci;u armiaqE, a&;zly; cly; oqcon/
wuov tail touyg 0iaom oci;wpy' jzply;? wuovuaemucum vr;armz,
t c pZmwvr;wpy' u azm u s; xm; on [qEiygon/ wuovwi cpoEia wq
c p u u cly; talumi; alumi; alumi cpoEia u u i; c&aom re; rom; wp0; \ cpm; c u u
ay: via t m i p y q x m; y g o n /

3/ armiaqE, \ u, a&; t u s O;

wuovau smi;u aivri;oci;\ aw;a&; pmqrm armiaqE, jzpygon/ aw;a&;
armiaqE, on oci;a&; & mwi pmom; tEt vrsm; jzi uAsm qe qez o a&; wwo t jzp
xi&; o jzpygon/

aw;a&; armiaqE, u 1944 cEpwi tz0; v? tra':oe; & i w u 0g; c, rlrle, ?
i u a y s m a c s m i ; & m w i a r ; z m ; c o n / i , e m r n r m a r i p ; w i j z p l y ; t o u (1 3) E p c e l u y i
u A s m r s m ; p w i a & ; o m ; c o n / 1 9 6 2 c E p ? t o u 1 8 E p t & , w i * w a v m u o p w i
0 i a & m u c l y ; 1 9 6 4 c E p w i a w ; o & i j r i x e ; E i o q a o m] t n m) o c i ; j z i p w i a t m i j r i
v m c o n / 1 9 7 0 w i p w & , a w ; a v m u o 0 i a & m u c o n / a w ; o c i ; a y g i ; 1 5 0 a u s m
c e a & ; o m ; c l y ; t r s m ; p r m e m r n a u s m i o c i ; r s m ; j z p o n / & y & i u m ; r s m ; w i v n ; Z m w 0 i a w ;
r s m ; u a & ; o m ; c o n /

aw;quwivi? uoe;vi? pE, m; cpaq? rrmrat;? cly; powoqaomoci;
trsm;pon aw;a&;armiaqE, \ vu&m rsm; jzpygon/ xlyipw&, \ acw0; tqawm
rsm; jzpaom pevi? jrermjynoe;we? p;yi? yav;bi;oe;Ei? yvpowonvn;
armiaqE, \ oci;rsm;Ei *wavmuwi av(m u vr; clu o r s m ; j z p o n / a w ; a & ;
armiaqE, \ emrnausmoci;rsm;rm tre; cet m; ay; oem; yg? wuovau smi;u
aivri;? pum; ajymaumi; wrot? arb0b, o, ygr, ? pypo; av; aw clygw, ?
a, m u s m ; r m v n ; t o n ; e y g ? r , o w m c ; w m b , o v ? u r m t j i b u ? a e u , & i
v x u r , ? r ; a y : r m a e c s i w , ? a 0 ' e m j y y ? & m ; & m ; y g ; y g ; r s u & n p o n o c i ; r s m ; j z p y g o n /

aw;a&;armiaqE, on 14-9-1984 cEpwi u, vecly; Ze;a':wiwi& (c)
apmEi;q (c)r&av;Ei om; or; (3)0; use&pcalumi;o&&ygon/

4/ wuovau_{smi};u aivri;oci;u pmay&axmiravvmjci;

oci;qonrm &opmayE,0iwpr_{sl};jzp&m pmay¹/₂axmirunv_qi uAsm_{rm};[
rw,Eiygon/ uAsmEioci;paom tEynmyn_{rm};on oabmobm0t& twwyi
jzpygon/ a¹/₂ua&pycluaom tci;? tci;i,? tci;u;? tci;? tici;? umci;?
{ci;? omci;? ywys_{sl};? abmv,ponuAsm tr_{sl};tpm;wrmvn; oci;tE,0i uAsm
rsm;? wpen;t_m;jzi *wEiwzuí oqcluaom pmayrsm;[rw,Eiygon/ jrermmay
e,y,wi aw;oci;pmayrsm;on wez;¹/₂aompmayrsm;jzply; pmom;? totqtii?
*wop0rsm;jzi vw\pwu n^{ll},zr;pm;Eipr;¹/₂alumi; o¹/₂Eiygon/

oijzp&m pmay&axmiravvm&mwi oci;wpy'v;u cjc_m;avvmjci;ry_b
wpy'ci;pom avvmwiyom;ygrn/ xoavvmjci;jzi aw;oci;rsm;rwpqi pmq
\vyaom taw;Ei xraom ta&;rsm;u qe;ppavvmEiygon/

wpacwwpcgu emrnau_{smll}um;caom wuovau_{smi};u aivri;oci;r
aw;jy\opmq\ taw;Ei ta&;u pmay&axmir ay:viatmi wijom;ygrn/

yxrty'

,cavvmwijyrn wuovau_{smi};uaivri; oci;yxrty'wi wuovü
c_{po}Eiaw_{qcl}y; talumi;wpccalumi c_{po}armijyera&mu vmaom t_{cg} c_{po}armi
jyev_{mE};Ei ar_{qm}viapmipm;aeaom vn; c_{po}ua&miye;aeojzi cpm;ae&aom re;ry_{sl}
wpa, mu\cpm;c_ut_m; wuov\ tailtouuaemucjy_{um} zew;a&;zxm;ygon/

oci;tpwi re;ry_{sl}av;on c_{po}armi u vr;ae&aom t_{jzpu} -

]]a&vi;cwo op&ua_uo au;iujrno

lum;jyeawm vn; armiuyow&ae}}

[aom t_{jzi}wijyx_m;ygon/ c_{po}uow&&etwu t_m;jznay;ontaejzi a&vi;
w_{vy&m};p;qi;luy? op&uav;rsm; ajro_au_uae_y? au;iuuav;rsm; jrnwr;aeluy
pojzi wuovau_{smi};om; au_{smi};ocpopwwtwu trww&ae&mwpcjzpaom
ti;v_{sm};ue\ umva'oaemuctzu xnoi;a&;zxm;ontwu re;uav;\
tvr;onyí yjiay:vivm&ayon/ ti;v_{sm};ue\ om, mlunE;z, obm0jriui;
u wpa, muwn; tx;usepmjriawae&aom re;ry_{sl}av;wpa, mu\ oem;pz,
jzptiu ye;c_{um};wpcyoz, o&yazma&;zxm;on [qEiygon/

wuov\ tailtou? wuov\ aemucobm0u azmu_{sl};&mwivn;

]]uaumyi&m i0gyi&m peye;yi&m

wuovau_{smi};awmrav}}

[aomtzi wuovaemuc0e;usi ay:viatmi azm uL;xm;yg on/ wuov \
y&yu uaumye;? i0gye;? peye;wjzi erwyjy\um zew;a&z\xm;onu aw&yg on/
wuov uye;rm;jzi 0aoojy\xm;on/ wuovwi tre½aomye;rm;alumi em;q i
ow \pwu xcuvy½m;vmapygon/

re;ry\av; \cspou]armi} [aomemrpm;jzi to;jy\xm;ly;

]]c\pum;oE qzavo}}

]]b0ay; ícsp&avaomo}}

]]ton;ay; ícsp&avaomo}}

]]ouv;y ícsp&avaomo}}

pojziypwtly\iz [eji a&z\xm;&m cspotay: cpciluiemve;vaom re;uav;
wpa, mu \ pwuoEiygon/ x\yi]]c\pum;oEqzavo}} [aomtzaumi
re;ry\av; \cspoarmion re;ry\av; oabmuavmuatmi wwwwmjzi pum;
ajymvrur;uiaom a, mu sm;wpa, mu jzpEialumi;aumucu cEiygon/ x\tz
wi b0wpcv;uay; ícsp&o? ton;Ev;uay; ícsp&o? rrtouuyi y"me rxm;b
csp&o [aomt"ym, jzi]]b0ay;? ton;ay;? ouv;y}} [ío;Ee;xm;&m re;ry\av;
 \ pwcpm;cuu yíay:vi vmapygon/ aw;oci;yytlyizrm;u to;jy\xm;on
twu toom, mruyg ay;pr;Eialumi; aw&yg on/

re;ry\av;ucspou rnr\vr;ae ygaomvn; cspoarmirm re;uav;x o
jyervmb a&miye;aeomtcg oo, pwrsm; trsk;rk;0ir&onoabmu-

]]b, rEupm; íwr;a&mirawu?

b, ovnzsm; ípr;a, mijy\aeov

p;wxwxwra0cEiay}}

[aomtzi wijyxm;yg on/ cpou rruwr;a&miae on t jzprm rnon talumi;
alumi jzprnen;? bmallumi v? b jzpv\vpao m ar;ce;rm;pmjzi p0;pm;r&jzpaem?
xwvewevyaeom re;ry\av; \ oem;p&m t jzpu ay:viapygon/]]b, rEupm;}}
]]b, ovnp m;}}?]]wr;a&mirawu}}]]pr;a, mijy\aeov}} [í ypw tly\izypji eab
xyum&eu, um a&z\xm;ozi toc\omajyypontji re;uav;cpm;ae&aom
cpm;cuuyg yíav;eu vmapygon/

cspoua&miye;aeozi p;&rpwrsm;jzi xwveae&y? trsk;rk;xijri, qum
' [pwrsm;jzpaey? aom utyr;awmuavmiaey? pwEv;romr, mji ray smEijzpaey
&rysm;u -

]]p;wxwxw ra0cEiay}}

]]A smayvuv arwpa, muwn; ray smEiay}}

[aom t z r s m ; j z i a y : v i a t m i w i j x m ; y g o n /] p ; w x w x w } [í 0 p m v ; x y p u m ; v ;
u t o ; j y x m ; & m w x w x w w v e l e i a w ; a w m a e a o m r e ; r y s l a v ; \ c p m ; c s u u
a y : v i a p y g o n / c s p o a r m i a l u m i a o m u t y r ; r s m ; a v m i r l u c p m ; a e & y u v n ;] A s m a y
v u v } [a o m t o ; j z i a o m u A s m y g & r s m ; u t a y : , r l c p m ; & o n r [w b & i x r
v u v u v v c p m ; a e & a l u m i ; a y : v i x r p m o ; E e ; x m ; & m r e ; r y s l a v ; c p m ; a e & a o m a o m u
c p m ; c s u u e m ; v n p m e m v m r a p y g o n /

v r ; a q ; a e a o m c p m ; c s u y g a t m i t o r s m ; t a e j z i v n ; o v i ? o a v ; r s m ; u
t r s m ; q ; t o ; j y x m ; o n / 0 g u t q ; o w r s m ; w i] a e ? o ? u ? v ? a y ? & m ? a y } p a o m
o v i r s m ; u t o ; j y x m ; o j z i E ; n r ? a y m a y s m i ; r ? n i o m o r a r r o a b m r s m ; x i [y a e
o n u w y g o n / x j y i a w ; o c i ; y y o a v ; a e & m r s m ; w i q i i o q & o n t w u
t v r ; c p m ; c s u o n y í a y : v i x i & m ; v m a p o n u a w & y g o n /

'w , t y'

o c i ; 'w , t y ' w i w u o v a u s m i ; o m ; a u s m i ; o b 0 j z p a v j z p x & a o m o b m 0
u 0 ; p m w i j y u m r r \ t j z p u , u s l ; r & [e j z i a l u u a e & a o m r e ; u a v ; \ c p m ; c s u u
z q x m ; y g o n / v w p a , m u E i w p a , m u r n r y i c & ; u m a 0 ; l u a o m v n ; a & p u & y g u
q a w w w l u a l u m i ; ? r w n a o m t & y a ' o r s m ; r a u s m i ; o m ; a u s m i ; o r s m ; o n w u o v
w i r w a q t a y g i ; t o i ; o i , c i ; t j z p E i q a w l u y ; w p c s l r m c s p o r s m ; j z p o m ;
l u a l u m i ; ? x t j z p o n x ; j c m ; q e ; j y m ; a o m t j z p r [w b j z p a v j z p x & a o m o b m 0
j z p a l u m i ; ? o a o m r e ; r y s l a v ; t w u r m c s p o & c a o m v n ; c s p o r m r r u a & m i y e ; o m ;
a o m a l u m i c s p o u a r l m v i w r ; w a e r a l u m i ; ? r r c s p o r m r r u r e ; o m ; a v o v m ; [a o m
t a w ; r s m ; j z i c p m ; a e & a l u m i ; z p y x m ; y g o n /

w p l r l w p e , p r v r s m ; w u o v w i q a w w w o n t j z p u -

] j w p a , m u E i w p a , m u w p l r l p w p e , p a e l u a o m v n ; a v

t v & e ; p o m a r m & m j r u l e ; n l u A s m a w m r m

w p 0 ; e w p 0 ; r w a q t a y g i ; t o i ; j z p o m ; l u w m a w

p w a e a j y m i ; & i ; c s p o m ; l u w m a w

' g a w w u , a w m r q e ; a y }

[í 0 g u s & n l u ; o z , a & ; z x m ; y g o n / x t z w i w u o v a e m u c 0 e ; u i u] t v & e ; p
o m a r m & m j r u l e ; n l u A s m a w m r m } [í t v t y r s m ; j z i o m , m a y s m & i p & m a u m i ; v a o m
w u o v e , a j r j z p a l u m i ; a y : v i a p o n e r w y u t o ; j y l u m a & ; z x m ; y g o n /] t v }
[a o m p u m ; v ; w i] & e ; p } [a o m p u m ; v ; u w p y t o ; j y l v u j c i ; a l u m i w u o v
e , a j r \ t v o n o m r e v & r [w a w m b y r a w m u y a y : v i v m a p o n u a w & l y ;
] o m a r m } q a o m p u m ; a l u m i v n ; o m , m l u n a r z , a e & m w p c t j z p x i & m ; v m a p o n u

aw&ygon/ wuove, ajru }jrue; n(ua&mawm}} [í oauwerwyjy/um a&z'xm;
oizi om, m(unE; z, aumi; aom wuov \y&yu yji vmapygon/

vi, w\ jzpavjzpx&aom obm0u wpa, muwpe, pwi aeluaom vn;
wuovwua&mu&jci; u talumi; jy í rwaq taygi; toi; rsm; oi, ci; rsm;
jzpo; luy? rwaq taygi; toi; b0r pwrsm; ajym i; vum c: pob0o u; ajym i; om; luy
wu-

}rwaq taygi; toi; jzpo; l uwmaw

pwa&ajym i; &i; c: po; l uwmaw}}

[í eabxytz oabmut o; jy/um &&i; aom pum; to; tEe; rsm; jzi zpyx; on
twu jzpavjzpx&aom obm0u em; vnvmapygon/

xjyi xtjzptyur sm; uvn; }'gawwu, awmrqe; ay}} [í pum; ajym [eizi
zpyx; on twu aw; oc i; u em; axmiotaeizi qv&i; u uuuuui; ui;
em; vnvmapygon/

xaemu rqe; u, aom xtjzptyur sm; xr re; ry&av; ß u&aw&aom Zmwvr;
onx; jcm; aealumi; ? c: pou ccmom; aom alumi 0r; en; p&m tjzp ty: u u cpm; ae&
aom re; ry&av; \ &iwi; cpm; c: u u quvuzqx; ygon/ re; ry&av; \ cpm; c: u u
ay: viapaom pum; to; tEe; rsm; tjzp -

} 'v tjzpr sk; xrm c: pu sl; en; &rm vm; av

wuovau sm i; uai vri; a&

b, urm om; um omaeovav}}

[aomtjzi ay: viatmizpyjyx; ygon/ rrwir t: cpuraumi; ru ß u&avjci;
[aom 0r; en; pwu } c: pu sk; en; }} [aom to; jzi upuspvpv sp xxrro; Ee;
xm; ly; 0gu: tq; owwi } rm vm; av}} [í o; Ee; xm; &m rrwirjzp&avjci; ? rrwir
ß u&avjci; [aom , u sk; r&aom cpm; c: ur sm; u xi&m; vmapygon/

c: poarmi u } wuovau sm i; uai vri; }} [í c: pou ai vri; ß u; Ei wipm; um
o; Ee; xm; on twu vn; c: potay: c: jrwe; wez; xm; r? c: pourrtwu tvi;
a&miay; pr; Eir? c: pourrtwu at; jrruay; pr; Eir paom*Pr sm; u ay: vi vmapy
gon/ wpquwn; yi rrt em; wi at; jrray; pr; Eiaom? tvi; a&mir sm; ay; pr; Ei
aom c: por&awmontjzpu } b, urm om; um omaeovav}} [aom tar; pum; jzi
zpyx; on twu re; ry&av; \ cpm; c: u u xywcpm; r&apygon/

aemu q; e*; wi c: poarmi u rrxjyervmaom t c g cpm; &aom cpm; c: u u

} t ceweora&mu&i jzi ty aEm u&ly&ia&

aumi; uiu ai vri; yrm aeburm ye; ov rsm;

aru u&m re;avlyvm;av}}

[í cpou apmipm; aeygaomvn; cpou rrxra&mu vmaomtcgwi Ev;om; xwi
yavmiru cpm;ae&alumi;? cpou rruure;w;um wriarxm;&pcavovm; pojzi
taw;aygi;rm;pmjzi aluuae&aomtjzpu ay:viatmizpyxm;ygon/ &ixü
yavmiru cpm;ae&alumi;u]]tyaEmu}} [aom to;zi xrpmo;Ee;xm;ygon/
]]aEmu}} [aom v;csi;u, mto;alumi e*uyiyavmi ae&ci;rs;r [wb llunviae
aoma&u aEmuvuouo wppwp&m \ ya, m*alumi yavmi&ci; [aom tjzpu
yíyji vmapygon/ wpquwn; rmyi]]&i a&}} [íav;av;aq;aq; nn;wm;
vuav [e o;Ee;xm;aom pum;v;to;tEe;alumivn; re;rylav; \cpm;ru yí
u&Pm ourvmapygon/

cpou aivri;Eici;Ei;um vri;on nbuwiromwwly; ae buwi
u , aysmuwwouo cpouvn; rruwria&miye;aeon oabm&alumi; -

]]aumi;uiuaivri; yrm aeburm ye;ovrm;}}

[í tvumoabmou0iatmi a&z;xm;ygon/ xola&z;xm;aomalumi cpou \
a&miye;ae aomtjzpon yíay:vixi&m;vm&ly; re;rylav; \apm iarmae&aom
cpm;cuuvn; yí em;vnvmapygon/

xíyí]]aeburm ye;}}]]aru u&m re;}} [í eabxyum&eu, um zpyxm;
ojzi aeburmye;a&miaeaom erwyEi arcia, miaqmiwwaom cpou \ pw
tajctaeu xi&m;vmapygon/ wriarcia, miaqmiaeontjzpu]]aru u&m}} [í
upv;pxrpm o;Ee;xm;aomalumivn; qv&i;uyí xi&m;ay:vivmaponu
aw&ygon/

ocsi;wpy'v;wi oav;rm;? ovirm;uom trsm;q;to;jyxm;ly; niom
oraraom av, avor;rm;zi oqralumi re;rylav; \cpm;cuon ay:vixi&m;
vmly; ocsi;em;axmiouyg cpm;cuu;puapalumi; awjri&ygon/]]cpus;en;&rm
vm;av}}]]re;avlyvm;av}} [aom ae&mrm;wi pum;to;tEe;t&vn; tar;pum;
]]vm;}}Ei tw oajyzpaom]]av}} uwo;um qiioqvuralumi cpou a&miye;ae
aomtjzpu &ieiatmi cpm;ae&aomvn; cpoutjyprwiaom avorm;xi [yae
alumi; re;qo&Eiygon/

jclio;oycu

tEynmyn;wpcu zew;xwvyaom tvyon cucvygon/ x|xu x
tEynmyn;u a0zeo;oyci;uycuygon/ pmua^{1/2}aqmien;on aemuvu
qouo &ly;om; tEynmajrmurwp&yu en;trrsk;jzic0;uyum cjr;pwjzm
avvm&ontwu tEynm \ &oaysmurvn; p;&rr&ygon/

, cavvmwijxm;aom wuovau^{smi};u aivri;oci;on aw;a&
armiaqE, \ emrnu;aw; wpy'jzpygon/ avvm&mwi oci;wpy'ci;pü
aw&aom pum; to;tEe;? 0guzew;r? teut"ym, ? tvumajrmur? erwyto;jy|r?
tozew;rpojzi aw&&ontwi; avvmwijxm;ygon/

cpo \ xm;&pcjci;uc&aom re;ryslav;wpa, mu \ cpm;cuuxraom pum;
to;tEe;rs;jzi ay:viatmia&zxm;ygon/ ta&tztajzi eabxyum&ersm;u
to;jy|x;m;ly; uAsmuo um&epn;ur;u waorwr; vuemjci;rjylb e&pn;0g;t&
vtyaomae&mrsm;wi um&euvtiov to;jy|x;m;on/ totajzi vn; vr;aq;
ae&aom cpm;cuuay:viapon oav;rs;uom trsm;q;to;jy|x;m;ygon/ vty
aomae&mrsm;wi 0guνrs;oz, zew;o&yazmxm;onu awjri&ygon/

wuovu aemucjy|x;m;aom orm;&us tcpZmwvr;wpy'u azmusl;xm;
aomvn; aw;jy|pmq \ taw;pwu;aumi;r? ta&tzyiEirwalumi vw \ Ewzsm;
wi woopxiue&pae&allumi;u awjri&ygon/ pmqo \ ta&tzalumi avmu
wi jzpavjzpx&aom obm0uem;vnvucum cpo \ a&miye;aeru bmalumi
[aomtaw;rs;jzi yaq;0r;en;ae&aomvn; cpoutjypwiaom avorsm;u
raw&b re;ryslav; \ cpm;cuu pmem;vn&ly; u&Pm&ouyg cpm;&apygon/

aw;jy|pmq armiaqE, \ wuovau^{smi};uaivri;oci;u avvmjci;jzi
aw;jy|pmq \ taw;Eita&alumi wuov \ taitouucpm;&ly; , ctctetx
emrnau^{smaom} aw;oci;wpy' jzpa&allumi; o;oyrygon/

e*;

&opmaytE, 0iaw;oci;rs;on em;aomwuay;Ei&rru pmqo \ taw;
ta&aumi;ralumi vw \ Ewzsm;wi puse&papao tmeoiuay;pr;Eialumi;
avvmwijxm;ygon/ xoavvmjci;jzi jrermmayavvmvupm; vowntwu
wpaxmiwpae&mr tus;jyEivrrn [, llunarpmvirygon/

u;r;u;p;m;&i;

ciri? armi("EjzL)/ 1968/ *pmayor'&üvuypu;ji; &eue? t m;rneoppmay/*

c;p0;n/(2008)/*rr/rir;Ei*v/b , /vuaZ;&i;aw;oci;cpm;rpmpm; &eue? pwu;c;c;p m tywu/*

apmrni;/ (1961)/ **w[onl &eue? pmayArneyEywul*

wi?0; (y*0eaxmuri;-)/ (1969)/ *uAmAEom&ur; &eue? v , wr@i/*

azarmiwi? 0;/ (1987)/ *jrermmayori; &eue? py , 0;yEywul*

jrilun? 0;/ (2001)/ *jrernaw;*wtEpmayori; tr;om;vpr;t m;t&i;tjrp0;p;Xme/*

jrilun? 0;/ (2011)/ *pmaiEi/ *w *wEi/ pmai &eue? &mjynyEywul*

jrermptz/ (2010)/ *jrerm t b"me ('ur)/ &eue? jrermptz0;p;Xme/*

v xw(pE , m;-)/ (2011)/ *jrerm*wa&p;alumi; ('ur)/ &eue? cr;omyEywul*

a'guwmeErmb0o \ pwwnaqmurqi&m w&m;pmayrsm; av vmcsu

at;at;pe;*

pmwr; t u:0;

bpwmr;on a'guwmeErmb0o \ pwwnaqmurqi&m w&m;pmayrsm;u
av vmwijxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ q&mawm \ e, vna[mlum;jrww&m; tw
(2)pm tyr pw \ taw;rsm;? pw \ xuaygursm;? a[moemopwxm;jzlw&m;pmay
(3)y'u tav vmctjzpxm;um wijxm;yg on/ xowijy&mwi talumi;t&myi;?
ta&t om;yi;[í yi;jcm;xm;yg on/ jrwa' \ w&m;awmvm pwaepwxm;
wnaqmuren;vr;rsm;u vuawb0wi vucvuem uio;wwap&e a[mlum;
xm;aom q&mawm \ apwemEiwijyu ojriEirn jzpygon/
aomcsua0g [m&rsm; / / talumi;t&m? ta&t om;? pum;t o;tEe;? Ogus? apwem/

e'je;

w&m;mpum;ajyon owtav;uaom pmaywpr&sl;jzpon [qEiygon/
w&m;pm pum;ajyqonrm q&mawm u;rsm;a[mlum;caom w&m;"rrsm;u jyevnyEy
xwa0xm;aom pmrsm;uqvygon/ q&mawm u;rsm; a[mlum;aom w&m;awmwi;u
remlum;Eiowtwu w&m;mpum;ajyrm;wi pppn;pn;zw½Eiygon/ q&mawm
a'guwmeErmb0o \ w&m;mpum;ajytrsm;tjym; xu&vu&yg on/ q&mawm on
b&m;a [mur;*evmw&m;awm u wwo? Epy? u:io;? a[majymycawmraom &[e;
awmjrwpyg;jzpon/ q&mawm \ w&m;pmrsm;on vwjzpvjzpx&aom pw \
obm0u av;euaomw&m;awmji wnaqmuEi&e taw;toreueap&e jyjiEipr;
&yg on/ q&mawm u;a[mlum;xm;on avotwi;zw½&í emlum;ae& ouolay:vi
yg on/ w&m;awm \ tEpom&ulunn&o& qijcirap&evn;ကောင်း၊ ဆရာတော်၏

စေတနာနှင့်ပညာကို ဖော်ထုတ်လို၍လည်းကောင်း ဤစာတမ်းကို ပြုစုရခြင်းဖြစ်ပါသည်။ ဤစာတမ်းတွင်
ဆရာတော်၏ နယ်လှည့်ဟောကြားမြတ်တရား အတွဲ(၂)စာအုပ်လာ စိတ်၏အတွေးများ၊ စိတ်၏
ထွက်ပေါက်များ၊ ဟောသူနာသူစိတ်ထားဖြူ တရားစာ(၃)ပုဒ်ကို စကားပြေရှုထောင့်မှ လေ့လာတင်ပြသွား
ပါမည်။ ထိုသို့တင်ပြရာတွင် အကြောင်းအရာပိုင်း၊ အရေးအသားပိုင်းဟူ၍ ပိုင်းခြားတင်ပြသွားပါမည်။

1/ a'guwmeErmb0o \ tw\yw t u:0;

q&mawmavmi;vsmu ou&mZ(1301)c waygi;vjynae? (1940 cEp rwv (22)
&u) paeae'wi rEav;wi;a'o'u;? p0u;lrll&,? anniya&mü crn;awm 0;pv?
r ,awma':ciwr zm;jriawmron/ ar;ci;(12)a ,muwi (11)a ,muajrmu om;jzp

* a'guwm? wzuygarmu? jrermpmXme? rtyiwuov/

on/ i , rnrmarixe;0i;jzpon/ ou&mZ1305 cEp(5)Epm; t& , wianmiyi&m
ay:awmrau smi;q&mawm 0;au v m o (0;av;be;u;)xwi jrerm p m Ei A'p m a y r s m ; u
p w i o i l u m ; c o n / o u & m Z 1310 cEp (10)E p t & , w i p p u i ; a w m i 0 y ó e m * E m 1/2
a u s m i ; ü p u i ; q & m a w m u 0 y Z l m , j y í & i o m r a P j y l c o n / & i t r n r m & i e E r m v m j z p
o n /

ou&mZ 1314 cEpwi t b " r m p m a r ; y o ; q i a t m i j r i o n / o u & m Z 1317
cEpwi*P x ; 2 - u r ; E i t w " r m p & , a t m i j r i u m o m o e " Z o & y 0 & " r m p & , b l u
& & c o n / o u & m Z 1317 cEpwi o m r a P o u s o [w w , q i u t q i (1) z i a t m i j r i
í o ; q i v ; w i y x r * P x ; j z i o m o e m v u m & o m r a P a u s m b l x ; u q w c ; E i c o n /
o u & m Z 1324 cEpwippui ; r l u r [m o a A m " m 1/2 a u s m i ; w u ü p u i ; q & m a w m 0 y Z l m , j y í
& [e ; t j z p o l a & m u & c o n / o u & m Z 1324 cEpwipm c s w e ; u a t m i j r i a w m r í
a p w , * P t b 0 o " r m p & , b l u & & c o n / o u & m Z 1325 cEpwi o m o e " Z " r m p & ,
0 e , y g V y g & * b l u & & c o n /

1326 cEpwirEav;ou s o [t b 0 o " r m p & , b l u & & o n / x E p w i y i w y # u
y g V j r e r m t b " m e p m j y l w m 0 e x r ; a q m i c o n / 1339 cEpwi p p u i ; r l u e , o C e m , u
t z (a & u i) t z 0 i j z p c o n / 1348 cEpwi t E , E i i ? o & v u m E i i r s m ; o l o m ; a & m u
y n m o i c o n / 1350 cEpwi o & v u m E i i a u v P , w u o v r M . A b l u & & o n /
1355 cEpwi t a r & u e E i i r m a e x i c o n / 1357 cEpwi t * r [m * E 0 g p u y @ w b
& o n / 1360 cEpwi & e u e t j y n j y n q i & m a x & 0 g ' A ' o m o e m j y l w u o v w i { n
y g a r m u ? 1361 cEpwi t * r [m y @ w b l a w m r o n / 1364 cEpwi t E , E i i
r * " w u o v r P h . D a ' g u w m b l a w m r o n / 1367 cE p r p í , a e t x t j y n j y n q i & m
a x & 0 g ' A ' o m o e m j y l w u o v w i y g a r m u c y t j z p a q m i & u a w m r v u & o n /

q & m a w m \ w & m ; r s m ; u e , v n a [m l l u m ; j r w w & m ; t w (1) ? t w (2) ? e A m e w c g ;
b u ; z i a w m r y g ? a u m o v t y r u E i , a e u r m ? & i & m [v m \ b 0 E i j r w A ' \ t q ; t r
p o n w j z i y E y x w a 0 x m ; a o m p m t y r s m ; p m & y g o n / t * v y b m o m j z i t b " r m q i & m
u r ; (2) u r ; ? y g V b m o m j z i u r ; (1) u r ; j y l p c o n /

2/ a ' g u w m e E r m v m b 0 o \ p w w n a q m u r q i & m w & m ; p m a y r s m ; a v v m c s u

a ' g u w m e E r m v m b 0 o \ p w w n a q m u r q i & m w & m ; p m r s m ; u a v v m & m w i
j p w \ t a w ; r s m ; } j p w \ x u a y g u r s m ; } j a [m o e m o p w x m ; j z l } w & m ; p m (3) y ' j z i w i j y y
r n /

2? 1/ p w \ t a w ; r s m ;

p w \ t a w ; r s m ; p u m ; a j y u t a l u m i ; t & m y i ; ? t a & ; t o m ; y i ; [í y i ; j c m ; w i j y o m ;
y g r n /

2^o 1^o 1/ talumi; t&m

pw\ taw; rsm; w&m; pm on 2008 cEpwi rEav; r [mat mi ajr r l l u e ,]] & w e m a p s ;
au sm u 0 i ; & w e m v i , ? jr w A ' a ' o e n a w m jy e l y m ; a & ; t z } } (2) Epjyn t x r ; t r w
"ro bi ü a [m l u m ; a o m w & m ; p u m ; a j y j z p y g o n /

pw&m; pmwi taw; rpw? aw; oi w m e l r a w ; o i w m ? r e u e w t a w ; e r m ; , i ;
w t a w ; ? a v m b e a w ; w t a w ; ? a ' g o e a w ; w t a w ; ? 0 [o m 0 w u ? a e u r 0 w u ?
a r w m e a w ; w t a w ; ? u ½ P m e a w ; w t a w ; ? 0 w u o P m e o w ? t m ½ a j y m i ; a j z & i ; e n ; ?
o u & t a y : w , w m r ? o u r t a y : w , w m r ? o u & t a y : r e ; w ; r ? o u r t a y : r e ; w ; r ?
a r m [e a w ; w t a w ; ? t a w ; u x e ; c l y E i j c i ; t u s l ; [í a c g i ; p 0 i , (17) c c u m & i ; v i ;
a [m l u m ; x m ; o n /

pw\ taw; rsm; u pwia [m l u m ; & m w i p w E i t a w ; w o n a q m i & u r c i ; r w y ?
t a w ; q o n r m a p w o u w p c \ t r n j z p y ? t a w ; o n y g V v 0 w u u q v j c i ; j z p y ?
o u y j z p y ? p w u j z l p i a t m i v y & m w i w c s l u t a w ; r s m ; x e ; c l y & e v t y y t m ; a u m i ;
a t m i v y a y ; & e v t y y w u a [m l u m ; x m ; o n /

taw; rpwu a [m l u m ; & m w i a w ; a w m r E i , O l y ; j z p w p w (55) r s l ; ? t a w ; r p w
(66) r s l ; & y ? t a w ; r p w & a l u m i ; u e u @ y w 0 g ' (, c * e ;) u v u r c y ? A ' j r w p m b & m ; E i
p w o k u , u v u c y ? o , w y g V a w m v m t u ; t u m ; j z i & i ; j y x m ; o n /

] a w ; o i w m E i r a w ; o i w m } } w i r e u e a o m t a w ; o n e A m e & a l u m i ; j z p í
a w ; o i y ? r m ; r m ; , i ; , i ; t a w ; o n t y g , i & u a p í r a w ; o i y u w i j y x m ; o n /

] r e u e w t a w ; e r m ; , i ; w t a w ; w i } } r e u e o n t a w ; r a w ; r j c i ; o n t u s l ;
r j y (½ o m & y ? r m ; , i ; o n t a w ; o n t u s l ; r j y (½ o m r u ' u a & m u o m ; a p E i y w u c j c m ;
j y x m ; o n /

] a v m b e a w ; w t a w ; w i } } v c i p w E i a w ; o n t a w ; u u m r 0 w u v l a c : y ?
u m r * P t m ½ E i y w o u o n t a w ; r s m ; o n t i y p & y t o Ó P j z p r v m E i y ? a u m i ; o n
w & m ; r s m ; r j z p a y : a t m i q l y w x m ; y ? Ó P y n m u t m ; a y s m o m ; a p y ? x x u r u a v m b
B u ; x m ; v m o n t w u a e m u q ; w i & m Z 0 w r u s l ; v e v m o n t x j z p a p w w y ? o j z p í
y p n ; v c i r y * v c i r i r p o n a v m b E i a w ; o n t a w ; r e o r l q i ; & ' u t u s l ; u a y ; y
w u w p q i c i ; & i ; v i ; w i j y x m ; o n /

] a ' g o e a w ; w t a w ; } } u w i j y & m w i y * v u r a u e y j c i ; ? o u r u r a u e y j c i ;
[í & y ? y * v u r a u e y j c i ; (9) r s l ; & y ? , i ; (9) r s l ; r m i g & u t u s l ; r j c i ; u ? i g e c i r i w y * v
u ? i g e r w n o n y * v u t & i ? t c ? a e m i j y l v y j c i ; w j z p í o u r E i y w o u r w i
c v w w u í c v w u p w q ; y ? p w w o (2) 0 ; y * v t a l u m i ; E i o m " u j y x m ; o n /

] 0 [o m 0 w u } } q o n r m o w p y g ; u n i ; q z ? o w j z w z p o n ' u a & m u a t m i
v y j c i ; j z p y ? a u m i ; u s l ; c s r ; o m & & e t a l u m i ; r & y ? z , & m ; o i y [í c j c m ; j y x m ; o n /

]]aeur0wu}}qonrm umr0wu\ qeui bujzpy? ruputvulunz
v\mut&omcz| pontaw;rs;z, &m;ly; aumi;ontvyrsm;om vyrnqon taw;
rs;jzpy? tavmbqon obm0w&m;e, 0wly; vLz? unz? uovpwrsm;0ivmy
wu qvalli; i;jyxm;on/

]]arwmeaw;wtaw;}}on reueontaw;jzpy? tAsmyg'0wu[ac:y? trsm;
ow0gaumi;u\$;cr;omu ar\mu;ontaw;jzpy? rru,wi aumi;u\$;cr;om&&y
taw;jzpalumi; wijyxm;on/

]]u½Pmeaw;wtaw;}}on luiempwEiaw;ontaw;jzpy? owpyg;u &u&u
pupu vy&eraw;b 'ua&muaeonu]b, vtm;ay;&rv} ponvtyonur[a0
cpm;&eomaw;yr\$;jzpalumi; u½PmEiaw;ontaw;\ tu\$;w&m;rs;u vr;jyxm;
on/

]]0wu o@meow}}wi arm [Eiaw;aom taw;rs; tE&m, bu;aomallumi jrwpm
b&m;u xe;csyen;(5)rs; a[mxm;yu wijyxm;on/

]]tm½ajymi;ajz&i;en;rs;}}wi rb? om;or? ar;xm;aomac? allumiwu cpci
jci? ypn;vu0w&wem t0wtpm;rs;tay: w,wmjci;won avmbjzpywu
axmujiyxm;on/

ou&tay:rmw,wmru tobur|me; tm½Eiazsmu&y? vwpa,mu\ qyi?
om? talum? t½; ponwpcp(32) aum|moEicjr;unv\i w, wmp&mr&awmy?
oa, mZ0w,wmrurazsmuygu b0y;uatmiavmiur;om;Eiy? pm;aumi;aomuz,?
waw? qyiponwon cEmu,rvwom;onEiwy|ieu &p&maumi;y? von[
xiaeontaw;u rvb;[aom taw;Ei tpm;x;oiy? xen;rs;jzitm½ajymi;ygu
avmb llir;om;y? vaeraumi;v\i aq;aomuouo| pwaeraumi;v\ivn;
tm½ajymi;ly; aq;x;oiywu vr;jyjiyiax;xm;on/

ourtay:w,wmru tm½ajymi;&mwi to;taqmirms;urrb;? wcPy
o;&jci;qon taw;Eiz, &m;oiy? t0wtpm;a[mi;om;y? ye;Er;om;y taw;rs;jzi
z, &m;oiy? xtcgrpm;&u? rx&u? r0w&uon pwr&awmywu vr;ñexm;on/

ou&tay:re;w;ru tm½ajymi;ywi a'goEire;w;ontaw;u arwmym;
oiy? otu\$;uvvm;onpw xm;Eiatmiu\$;pm;oiy? tre;pwji;xevmv\i arwm
ym;oiy? arwmym;r&&i u½Pmxm;oiy? u½Pmxm;r&&i uu\ tu\$; oluEio
iguEiig[aw;oiy? r&yguarypoi ywji zi ajazsmu&ea[mxm;on/

ourtay:re;w;ru tm½ajymi;&mwi opyi;u;ut&uaw cPcPa<uw
tay: re;w;rwy? jrwpmb&m;u "mwreoum& "mwoabmu aw;un&ea[m
lum;cy? yx0"mwu re;wmvm;ponji zi tre;wn&mu&moi y? tre;wn&mr&b
aysmuviom;Eiywji zi tm½ajymi;um wnaqmuoiyu ñejyxm;on/]]arm[e
aw;wtaw;}}wi arm [taw;rs;z, &m;atmi bu\$;pm;oiyu vr;jyxm;on/ t|uxm

q&m̂u;u en;vr;ig;o ,ay;xm;y? q&maumi;xĉO;uyí A[owqn;y;&e? ynm
oi&e w&m;em&e? talumi;[wr[w q;jzwEiatmivvy&e[íjzpy? aw;ont&m
\\tjypuqijcioiy? taw;\\tactjrpuoatmivuooy? pwupwezEyly;r& &
atm̂îBuk;pm;oiyu tao;pwvr;ñe a[m̂lum;xm;on/

]]taw;uxe;ĉyEijci;t u\$;}} wiaw;ĉiontaw;aw;Eiy? wP̂mEiw ,wmr
tm;v;uz , &m;Eiy? oa ,mZOrsm;ui;om;Eiy? rmermersm;z , &m;ypEiy? aem uq;wi
'u[orv;0 vwui;om;Eiy? pw\\taw;rŝm; talumi;u jrwpm̂b&m;a[m̂lum;aom
0wu oP̂meowvm w&m;a'oemjzpywu cirmpmre|qcon/

pw\\taw;rŝm;a[m̂lum;ĉupum;ajywi aw;oiaom taw;? raw;oiaom taw;
rŝm;u em;v̂nvucrapon/ av̂mb taw;? a'gotaw;? arm[taw;rŝm;u owjy/
qijcirapon/ av̂mb taw;? a'gotaw;arm[taw;rŝm;\\ q;u\$;rŝm;u ojriapum
arwm taw;? u^{1/2}P̂m taw;rŝm; ue;atm̂i;apon/ av̂uiiBuk;pm;jci;jzi 'u taygi;r
vwajrm̂uom;apvaom q&mawm̂u; \\apwem u aw|jri&ygon/

2? 1? 2/ ta&; t om;

pw\\taw;rŝm; w&m;a[m̂pum;ajy\\ta&; t om;u pum;t o;tEe;? 0gu\$[í
cjcm;wiiyygrn/

pum;t o;tEe;

]]pum;t o;tEe;av̂vmron pum;v;rŝm;u rnonae&m̂wi rnornyo;Ee;
alumi; av̂vmryijzpon}}¹ bpum;ajyr pum;t o;tEe;u pmayo;? v;ĉi;t o;?
v;wt o;? 0pm̂t o;? tv̂um̂t o;wu av̂vmwiiyygrn/

]]pmayo;pum;v;q̂onrm A'pmayr ygVouwar;pm; pum;v;rŝm;jzpygon}}² p
pum;ajyon w&m;a[m̂pum;ajyjpí w&m;awm̂Eiqav̂smaom pmayo;pum;v;rŝm; u
t o;jy\\xm̂;alumi;aw|&on/

taw;\\t"ym , ua[m̂m̂wi-

]]ygVbm̂mjzi te;pyq;ajym̂v̂v|i 0wu v̂ajym̂w , }}

]]ouy qwm̂ taw;yjzpw ,? reuepmaw;awmjci;u ormour̂ v̂
qwm̂jzpw , }} (pm-199)

[í aw|&on/

¹ ĉiri ? arm̂i("Ejzl-) ? 1985 ? 117 /

² ĉiri ? arm̂i("Ejzl-) ? 2011 ? 76 /

umr*P t m^{1/2}e ywou on taw;u]]urpEe0&P m v\ac:w , }} t o
 ynmr&Eiat mi a [m'avmbuywq\wwwmr' o\u]]e0&P}}umr0b u
 &\qel u; i b u u b mwe; q&i aeur0wu}}

(pm-207)

ponji b&m;a [mw&m;awm v m ygV t o;rsm; uaw\&on/ ziq&i;jyta& t o m;u
 o;xm;on/ taw;talum i;? taw;trsk; tpm;wu&i;jy^{1/2}omru ygV teuu jrerm
 teu o jyeq í ygVa0g [m&rsm;u &i;jyon oabm jzpygon/

u spv;pxraom v;ci; } u , m t o;rsm; uaw\&on/

]]waygi; wec;qawm av u jrL; wwwu}} (pm-206)

]]reuw taw; [m umr*P t m^{1/2}awxrm aysm vwtaw;r [w b;}}
 (pm-208)

]]' taw;u w , wmr u Ei o m;ly}}

]]w , wmv mlyq&i 'en;e azsm u&r , }} (pm-212)

ae&mw i;ü ygVu ro;b jrerpum;pppprsm;jzi&i;vi;ly; o v , at mia&on/
 avmu \ oabmu&i;&mw i avmu \ t m^{1/2}rsm;tay: w , liwwon talumi;Ei vuzu
 on aysm? jrL; Ei? azsm u qonpum;v;rsm;u ae&mwu o;xm;on/ qvcuu
 xxrray:viam t o;rsm;jzpon [qEiygon/ w&m;oabmu ojriv , at mi
 xraompum;o;jz i jyon/

pum;t o;tEe;wi v;w t o;rsm;u v n; aw\&ygon/

]]pum;v;aw trsm; t jym;y;wum y't&n u;jzpv mat mi o;yrsk; t x
 y;wytrsk;rsk;&ygon/ p opum;v;rsm;y;wly; t o;jy\&onu v;w
 t o; [qvjci;jzpon}}³

]]xpwu rw , ly;jzpay:vmw apwo u}}⁴

[aom t o;wi r Ei w , on teuci;qupyr&on/ y&ow\&iwi;o
 a&muat mia&om;&mü v;wrsm;u o;jci;jzi jywawm uawmua&jci;xuyí pm [e
 wnliiron/ pmom;onw&m;oyly; w&m;a [majym onpum;ajyEi vuzuon/ w&m;
 "ravoay:on/

]]pwupwe zEyly; r&&at mi u\;pm;ygw}}⁵

]]pwupweznpum raumi;wtaw;awuz , &m;ypygw}}⁶

³ ciri ? armi ("EjzL-") ? 2011 ? 107 /

⁴ eErnmvmb0o ? a'guwm ? cEpryg ? 199 /

⁵ - , i; - ? 218 /

⁶ - , i; - ? 219 /

[íaw&on/ , i;wi zEy? znpqon v;wrsm;on teuci;ujym;r&ygon/
pum;v;wrsm;u ae&mwua&c, o;wwon/ v;wto;rs;on talumi;t&m
av;euru t;m;aumi;apygon/ raumi;ontaw;w\ q;u&rs;? raumi;on
taw;z , &en;rs;u xixi&m&m; ojri vmapygon/

aep0o;pum;rs; u to;jy&xm;allumi;aw&on/

'Zi; v vav;e (pm-211)

zu&it op xixm;wma v;q&i (pm-211)

ypn;tay:wi ciw , roabmEi vuzuaom to;rs;jzpon/ xltw-

ta&mitr&rs;q;ly;awm woovyaew (pm-214)

v;0aumi;om;atmi (pm-215)

oa , mZ0aw oy&u;aw , (pm-215)

tirwevyw ye;uav;aw (pm-215)

[aom to;rs;onvn; bu , m tx;jy&oabmaqmiaom aep0o;pum;rs;jzpygon/
aygyg;ou v u aom to;rs;u llum;nyo;ay;jci;jzi li;ai lrrjzpygy/

wipm;rt o;rs;u vn; uir;uipm o;xm;on/

]avmb [m lir; om;vrr , / 'gaq;aem}} (pm-214)

]umr&m*r;av;lir;om;r , }} (pm-214)

avmb taw;rs;u t m½ajymi;en;taw;rs;jzi tpm;x;xecyEiyu r;lir;om;y?
pwu uoay;onaq;jzpyEi wipm;o;xm;on/ eueaomw&m;oabmu a [majym
&mwi wipm;c u u o;jci;jzi qvcu u ov , apon/

q&mawmon pum;to;tEe;rs;u to;jy&mwi cnm;rEi aygyg;ou v ur w
[ecur[atmiur;uipm to;jy&xm;allumi;awljri&ygon/

Ogus

Ogus [on]qvaom t"ym , a&muatmi pepwuspp0xm;aom y'tptaygi;
jzpon}}⁷ pma&owon talumi;t&mu v u í Ogus [etr&rs; to;jy&av&on/
q&mawm \ w&a [mpum;ajywivn; em;v n vucz , jzpatmi Ogusz [etr&rs;u
to;jy&xm;allumi;aw&on/ pw&a [mpmvm Ogurs;u Ogusw? Ogus&n? [ecu
n Ogus? ypwtyiOgurs; [í avvmwiyom;ygrn/

Oguwto;rs;allumi;aw&on/ taw;rpwu bnomwi;vurcyu-

⁷ jrerm t b"ne ? 1991 ? 354 /

]]taw;rpwqwm u b m o w i ; u v u r c b ; / A ' j r w p m v u x u a w m
t c g u A ' j r w p m e w p a c w w n ; a y : w e u P e m # y w q w q & m u ; & w , /
' u a e a c w r m o & u g ' u * e ; 0 g ' v a c : w , / t E , r m x e ; u m ; a e q b m o m
w & m ; w p c y / e m # y w u o w p m a y t &]] 0 ¹ r m e r [m 0 & } } v a c : w , / y g V
p m a y t & e u P e m # y w v a c : w , / e * P e m # y w u] t a w ; r p w } q w m u
v u r c b ; / p w r e & i t a w ; & w , v , q w , } } ⁸

[í a & ; o m ; x m ; o n / 0 g u w r s m ; j z i & i ; & i ; v i ; v i ; a & ; o m ; x m ; o n / t a l u m i ; t u s ; u
e m ; v n v u c z , j z p a p o n / 0 g u w r s m ; a l u m i p m [e o n o u v u v m o n / t c w
t q u r a o m 0 g u w r s m ; j z i t a l u m i ; t & m u o v , a p o n /

0 g u & n t e n ; i , o m a w & o n / t a l u m i ; t & m u t r i r j y w a j y m v a o m t c g
0 g u & n o ; x m ; a l u m i ; a w & o n /

]] a t ; - a ' g o e a w ; a e w t a w ; o n v & u p w l i r ; c r ; r u r a y ; E i w t j y i u ,
r a u e y w y * v w p a , m u u t l r w r ; & e v y z y a w ; w , } } ⁹

[í a & ; o m ; x m ; o n / a ' g o p w \ l i r ; c r ; j c i ; r & y u a ' g o p w & o \ o b m 0 u a y : v i
a t m i 0 g u q u o r E o ; u m a & ; o m ; x m ; o n /] a ' g o e a w ; a e w t a w ; } ?] v p w & u l i r ; c r ; r ?
] u , r a u e y w y * v w p a , m u } [a o m t x ; j y i ' r s m ; j z i j z n q n ; í c s u x i 0 g u t j z p
z e w ; x m ; o n / q v c u t m ; v ; p p p n ; p n ; a z m j y E i o n 0 g u & n j z p o n /

e * ; w i -

]] ' g a l u m i w & m ; c p c i o a w m p i y & o w w o n a e p 0 E i t r \ r r w o E m e r m
j z p a v j z p x & w p w & u t a w ; r s m ; ? t a w ; r p w ? t a w ; e p w E p c t e u t a w ;
e p w a w x u x t a w ; a w u r e u e p m a w ; j c i ; j z i v n ; a u m i ; ? r m ; , i ; w
t a w ; a w u e n ; v r ; (5) o , j z i a j z & i ; j c i ; j z i v n ; a u m i ; x e ; c s y E i l y ;
q i ; & ' u a w u u , p u , i t q ; o w a t m i b u ; p m ; t m ; x w E i l u y g a p
u e o w n ; } } ¹⁰

[í a & ; o m ; x m ; o n / a w ; o i a o m t a w ; ? x e ; c s y o i a o m t a w ; r s m ; u q i j c i u m ' u r
t q ; o w a t m i b u ; p m ; a p v a o m q & m a w m \ a p w e m u a w l j r i & a o m 0 g u & n j z p y g o n /
] w & m ; c p c i o a w m p i y & o w } ?] a e p 0 E i t r \ r r w o E m e r s m ; j z p a v j z p x & w p w t a w ;
r s m ; } ?] t a w ; r p w } ?] t a w ; e p w } ?] r m ; , i ; w t a w ; } p o n e m r 0 a o o e y ' r s m ; j z n p u u m
l y ; j y n p a o m 0 g u & n t j z p z e w ; x m ; o n /

y p w 0 g u t z l r s m ; u v n ; a w & o n / x t z l r s m ; o n a z m j y v a o m t a l u m i ; r s m ; u
p m z w o w \ p w t m 1 / 2 w i p l i o m ; a p l y ; t a v ; t e u r w r a p y g o n /

]] r s u p u v w m l u n c i w ,

⁸ e E r m v m b 0 o ? a ' g u w m ? c E p r y g ? 200 /

⁹ e E r m v m b 0 o ? a ' g u w m ? c E p r y g ? 201 /

¹⁰ - , i ; - ? 209 /

em;u om ,mwtoav;u em;axmiciw ,
 Emacgi;u ar;u kiwteav;u er;½lciw , }¹¹
]u...w , } ypjzi a&;om;xm;on/ umr*Pt m½Ei ywouontaw;rsm;u owjy/r
 apon/ ourrsm;tay:tjypri í a'gojzpaom taw;u azm&jy&mwí-
]aeyv&&ivn; aey&rvm; pwq;w ,
 avwu&ivn; wu&rvm; pwq;w ,
 r;y&ivn; y&rvm; pwq;w , }¹²
 [ía&;om;xm;on/]aey&rvm; }]wu&rvm; }]y&rvm; } qaomy'prsm; }]pwq;w , }
 [aom y'prsm;u ypw[ecunzxm;&m w&m;t&omoru pum;t&omuygcpm;
 &apon/
 ypw0guusz [ersm;on talumi;t&mav;euay:vily; pum;ajy[eajyypvy
 apyg on/
 q&mawm on pmzwow \&ixwi ue;atmi;aeaom pw \ taw;rsm;u tao;
 pwcjcm;jyum vb0wit"uuaom pw \wnaqmuru cirmapcon/ b&m;a[m
 w&m;awm u vu&b0wijzpavjzpx&aom pwtajctaersm;Eiaxm uijyum vr;ñe
 wnrway;aom q&mawm \apwemav orsm;u lum;a ,mivmapyg on/ ta&;tom;rsm;
 &i;vi;ajyyply; talumi;t&mav;euay:víaom a&; [ejzpon [q Eiygon/

2? 2/ pw \ x uaygur sm;

စိတ်၏ထွက်ပေါက်များတရားစာသည် စိတ်တည်ဆောက်မှုကို လမ်းညွှန်ထားသော စကားပြေ တစ်ပုဒ် ဖြစ်ပါသည်။

2? 2? 1/ talumi;t&m

pw \ x uaygur sm; w&m;pm on 2009 cEpwi ui;we;vr;rom;p tEi;r
 tvlawm "ryZmw&yü a[m lum;aom w&m;awmjzpygon/ pw&m;pm tpwi reue
 aomxuaygu \ oabmwuwijxm;on/ vwwipwzp;r&luon/ vw on wpp
 wpctcutctuytwn;Ei awu laom tçg xuaygu&mav&luon/ reueaom
 xuayguwpc&&e tveta&;u;on/ ,aeacwwi ßu;ym;w;wuatmi? Eiiwum
 tqiratmißu;pm;luaom tçg pwzp;rrsm;jzpv mwwon/ jrermvr;w \ pwzp;ru
 A'w&m;awm rsm;u av (mu som;ap Eiywu t u s;oi talumi;oi wijxm;on/

¹¹ eErnmvb0o ? a'guwm ? cEpryg ? 204 /

¹² - , i; - ? 206 /

xaemu tre;pw\ xuayguu wijyxm;on/ tvruraumi a'goAsmyg'
 jzpwwon/ xa'gou xuaygutjzprauyeyonvtay: wpccEitEi, wwy
 luon/ jrwpmb&m;u Asmyg'\ xuaygutpprm arwmy;m;ji;onjzpon [a[mum;
 awmrygon/ &eu&eci;wEi;ygu rlr;Eiay/ wPm&m*Eiarwm jcm;em;yuowij/
 oion/ arwmpwcirmatmiavuiioion/ avusi&mwi yxrq;u, cpcion
 y*v\ ly;ly;&i&irsuEm uyazmí arwmxwvvyo&on/ xaemu cpvn;rcp
 re;vn;rre;on y*v tay:ajymi;lun&on/ arwmtajctaeu, Olun&m rajymi;v
 alumi;oygu rre;w;ou ajymi;lun&on/ xaemu wpavmu v;& ow0grsm; tay:
 arwmjzeu&on/ xotm;jizitre;pw\ xuaygu&& arwmcilratmi avusi
 oialumi; en;vr; tqiqiay;xm;on/

arwmpwtajctaeon enrwm;jzpon/ arwm\wn&mEv;om;on ½yw&m;
 ½yemrEpyg;u½&i; rronoabm u, qEtwi;rjzponoabmrsm; ovmeiapon/
 jzpyu\ Eypuron w, wmp&mraumi;alumi; tjyp[jrivumqijciron/
 aemuq;wi tem*gr*ÓP? tem*grzÓP&&vmon/ xtcg a'gotre;w&m;on
 Ev;om;wi v;0ruseatmi&i;ypEií xuaygutpp&&om;on/ xotm;jizit
 re;pw\ xuayguu tao;pw wpqily;wpqi &i;jyxm;on/

quvuí &upur? ni;ye;Eypurpwrsm;jzpygu u½Pmw&m;ym;rjzi xu
 aygu&Eion/ tqirajyo oem;p&maumi;ou tajctaeq;qi;&'ur vwajrmu
 ygap[tm½jy\um avuiioion/ xtcg &upur oabmw&m;rm;v;0r& vwajrmu
 om;Eion/ xoabmu tu0;r\wijyxm;on/

remvpw\ xuayguu wijy&mwi owpyg;u;ym;w;wuly; u, xuom
 om;ontay: remvpwjzpwwon/ xpwur'wmxm;ji;Ei xuaygu&m&on/
 atmijri;u;ym;ouulunly; &xm;onpn;prtajctaersm; atmijrirrsm; rnon tgr
 rqw, wygapEi [r'wmym;um avusiay;&rnjzpalumi; en;vr;ay;xm;on/

xlyicpji;re;ji;tpe;Epzuxuaeaom pw"mwu vwajrmu&e Oayumym;
 oion/ Oayumon tpe;Epzuu wnrwwnlirapon/ pwwnlirron rwn
 liraom&m*? a'gorsm;\ xuaygujzpon/ Oayumpwu vn; avuiym;rm;&evr;ñe
 xm;on/

lron[xijripwu Oyóemtm;xwji;jzi avsmcsEion/ w&m;uuii
 bu;uwtm;xwji;jzi ajymi;vyup;apwwaom talumi;u awljriEiy? xtcg
 aomuen;om;ly; w, wmrsm;u avmcsvmEionwu wijyxm;on/

rme\ xuayguu vn; wijyxm;on/ rmeqonrm rr\ t&ntao;ay:wi
 tajcpuly;jzpay:vmaom oabmw&m;jzpon/ rru, uigem;rvnygb;[aom taw;
 on erusonrmejzpon/ igtwuv, ygon [aom taw;on t&n tci;ay:rm
 txia&maomrmejzpon/ xrmepwrsm;on w&m;x;w&m;jrw&&e t[etwm;

wpcjzpon/ , i;u 0y ó em u:ip0u:ijci;jzi x uaygu&&rnjzp alumi;u aemuq;
x uaygu t jzp wijyxm;on/

2? 2? 2/ ta& t om;

pw \ x uaygur;m;w&m;pmwi pw \ jzppwon oabm rsm;uaxmujiy;
avusi&een;vr;ay;um vucvuemz , jzpat mia&om;xm;on/ pw&m;pmr ta&
t om;uwijy&mwi pum; t o; t Ee;Ei 0gu s [í u@(2)rsl;jziwijyygrn/

pum; t o; t Ee;

pu;m; t o; t Ee;wi pmayto;? v;ci;t o;? v;wto;? 0pmto;? wipm;r
t o;wuawl&ygon/ b&m;a [mw&m;awm u a [mlum;xm;aomw&m;pmjzp í (ygV)
pmayo; rsm;uawl&on/

]]'gawu tew oabmw&m;awy}} (pm-97)

]]a'g oAmyg' qw emotion u ajzazm uci&iawm arwmqw
x uaygu u om;&r , w}} (pm-101)

]]qvwm u]&m*earwm} [m qiqiww , }} (pm-102)

ponjziawl&on/

q&mawm t o;jy/xm;aom ygV t o;rsm;wit rsm;pr m em;vno&ly;jzpaom t o;rsm;
jzpygon/ w&m;awmEipr;orm;twu r&i;E;aom t o;rsm;ygEiaomvn; ygV t o;Ei
wv u teut"ym , u&i;jyxm;onrsm;u awl&ygon/ A'w&m;awmrsm;Ei e;pyap½
omru ygVpmaya0g [m&rsm;Ei vn; e;pyapon/

v;ci;t o;rsm;u vn; xxrrt o;jy/xm;&m taumi;t&m &i;vi;rqvcu
ay:v iru azmaqm iay;yg on/ vrm;aom x uaygu \ oabmuwijy&mwi-

]]ur;a&maq;vya&m Epcpv; pom;w , }} (pm-100)

]]rsuEm taet xm;yg ajymi;vmw , }} (pm-100)

]]wPmearwm uatmi t&i lunz/vw , }} (pm-102)

]]orm"pr; t m;aw jr i v uwt cg u:awm}} (pm-107)

ponjzi v;ci;βu , m rsm;u upv;pxrpm o;xm;allumi;awl&on/

v;w t o;rsm;u vn; taumi;t&mav;eur? t"ym , xi&m;ay:v iru yy;
ay;allumi;awl&on/

]]½rwqijcily;}} (pm-109)

]]qw , wy:up;}} (pm-114)

]]av u:iym;rm;ji;}} (pm-115)

]]u:ib u:u; uwt m; xw}} (pm-115)

ponji awl&ygon/ bu , mv;wrsm;alumi qv&i;teuu jynpay:viaply;v|i
w&m; t&om u yiojriEion/ w&m;pmaypm [eEit n vuzucnm;vmon/

Opmt o;rm;u t o;jy\xm;alumi;awl&on/

]]ououomom tcewav;twi;rm}} (pm-96)

]]aysmay&i&iruEm lunlunvivie}} (pm-97)

]]xyxyxyxy ly;awmjzpaewm}} (pm-106)

[íawl&on/ Opmt o;rm;alumi taijypum;ajy [eon yíajyypniomvmon/
q&mawm \E;naom w&m; taw; torm; jynvr;aeonavoay:vmygon/ azmjy
vaom tajaetaEi t oioPmewu yíay:viav;euapygon/

wipm;rt o;rm; awl&on/ ou&rm;wio;aom t o;u ourrm;wiwpy
t o;jy\xm;on/

]]arwmply;awm y\;awmr , }} (pm-105)

t o;wi oabmw&m;jy jarwm} uou&rm;wio;aom jy\;Eiwpyt o;
jy\xm;on/

]]pwu xruEmav;ay:rm &p0aew , }} (pm-107)

t o;wi oabmjypum;v;pwu taumitxnjypum;v;]&p0} Eiwo;jci;jzi qv
cuu ojriv , apon/

pum; t o;tEe;yi;wi cnm;rEiouvuaygyg;rw r\wwwyg0iaeon/ w&m;
oabmu avmutrt&mrm;wio;aom t o;Eiwo;xm;on t o;tEe; [ejzpon [i
qEiygon/

Ogus

pw\ xuaygursm;w&m;pmwi Oguswt o;jy\rrsm;alumi;awl&on/ Ogus&nu
talumi;t&mEiqavsmatmi t o;jy\xm;on/ [ecun0gus? ypwtyi0gust o;
rm;u v n; t o;jy\xm;alumi; awl&on/

Oguswt o;rm;on upvpxrí w&m;awmu &i;&i;vi;vi;ojriapygon/

]]avmuu;rm jrwpmb&m;u a[mxm;w , ? &eu&eci;rw\Ei;e/ &eu
&eewjye&i b , awmrrir;b;w Oyrmay;xm;w , ? rpi t nptau;

awayae&mu a&e'omaq;v&w, ? xrpit nptalu;e aq;alum
v|r&b;w? yly;awm om npax;om;r, / a&pia&oea;alumrom
v|i pilu, Ei w, }} (pm-101)

[í&ejy/vm ou &ewriyeoiaumi; a[m lum;xm;ji;jzpon/ jrwpmb&m;a [m
w&m;awm u om" uijy0guwrm;jzi ww&i;&i;Ei ojri v, atmia&om;xm;on/

Asmyg'(a'go)jzpo \ cpm;r? trt&mrsm;u-

]]Asmyg'qw a'go [m vwi;jzpz;luw, ? jzpw tcerm b, v cpm;&
ov? pwwn lraeraw v;0y;up;om;w, ? Ev;ceraw jyi;xevm
w, / rsuEmawe&vmw, ? ao;ceraw ajymi;v vm w, }} (pm-112)

[í a'goalumijzpvmaom u, ? pw? trt&mrsm;u ojri v, atmi ½&i;ao m0gu
wrm;jzi tao;pwo ½yazm xm;on/

talumi; t&m tr i riyw azmijvaom t c g 0gu&nu t o;jy alumi;aw l&on/
ocg&w&m; o í pwwn l iro \ t o ÓPuazmijy&mwi-

]]jyev np0;pm;ae&i;u ocg&w&m;aw l obm0ay: rmaeom;wu
jzpo m;ly; pwvy&m;raw en;om;ly; wn l i rraw&vmly; t o ÓPaw
vr;r;vmlyq&i ocg ½u m ÓP v lac:w, }} (pm-111)

[í 0gu&nu o;xm;alumi; aw l&on/ orE]ly; u quwuo;jci;jzi wpcly;
wpcjzpy;uajymi;vroabmwu cpm;Eion/ ziq ½i;jy ta&t om;jzi ½i;jyxm;on/

rme \ oabmu wijy&mwi-

]]qygp ... t b"rmw&m;a [m v l&i igem;rvnyg b;um? em;vnEirm
r [wyg b;? w ÓP rryg b;v t'vaw;wmuvn; eru swrmeyw}}
(pm-115)

[0gu&njzi a&om;xm;on/ rrt&ntci;tay:wi aw;aom taw;onyi rme
jzpalumi; ojriapygon/ xlyi]qygp} qonpum;uy&owu aE;aE;ax;ax;
w&m;ay;aeon avoay:on/

[ecun0gu srm;u vn; t o;jy/xm;onuaw l&on/

]] [ecun0gu: on ypyw' rsm;jzizpn;xm;ji;jzp í ajyypvyly; pmzw
o \ t m ½u qa q miEipr;&ygon}}

arwmy/o&mwi rry/v&m qEwpcy/oEialumi;u-

]]u;e;rm ygapv/ajymajym? cr;omygapv/ajymajym? t&mcyor;t q i ajyygap
v/ajymajym? at m i jri u;ym;ygapv/ajymajym bmyajymajymayg t' taw;av;
u xy*v tay: rmys;&r, w}} (pm-106)

[í a&;z|x;m;on/ emr + ygapv| + ajymajym [aom ypw(4)cjzi 0gu:rs;m;u [ec:u
nn a&;z|x;m;on/ pmzwo \ t m½u qaqmiEiaom 0gu:z [ejzpygon/ y&owt m;
pw&n v u&nEi pwygvuyg w&m;a [mijyaeaom q&mawm \ avoay:viygon/
y&ow \ pwu qaqmiEipr;&on/

u½Pmw&m;y;m;rs;m;&rny*vrs;m;uwijy&mwi-

]]a&m*gjzpv| 'ua0'emcpm;ae&wy*v? p;y;m;a&;t qirajyv| pwnpaew
y*v? pm;p&maomup&mrv| 'ua&muaewy*v? aep&mrv| tw'u
a&muaewy*v? avmurm t qirajyv| 'ua&muaewy*vaw [m
oem;p&my*vawy}}¹³

[í a&;om;x;m;on/ 0gu:s&ntwi;ü ypw[ec:uny'prsm;u xnoi;a&;z|ci;zi
tajympum;ajyon yíououvvuvujzpaen/ pwygvuyga [maeom q&mawm
\unniz , avouyg lum;&on/ qaqmir&aom tajympum;ajya&; [ejzpon/

]]pma&;owapwemoua&muralumi ta&;tzlyiEiei;ur;u:iaom pma&;o
\vuwi ypwtyi|itzuav;rs;m; pum&umay:vmwwygon}}¹⁴ [ynm&iwqre
cygon/ pw&m;pmpum;ajywi ypwtyi|i 0gu:rs;m;uawu&ygon/ arwm tpr; xu o
on rr? cpo? re;o [í tyi;tjcm;r& arwm"mwwnyu-

]]u , u , v|v n; rjriawmb;

u , rwaqv|v n; rjriawmb;

u , erowy*v|v|v n; rjriawmb;

u , &eov|v n; rjriawmb;}}¹⁵

[í a&;z|x;m;on/ oabmci;waomtc:ur;m;u ypwtyi|iz|x;m;í pm [eajyypvy ly;
pmzwo t m½wi pliom;apygon/ tajympum;ajya&; [eon y&oww \ t lum; t m½ü
xyumxyum½ucwvmat mia&;Eiaomallumi pmt&omEitw w&m;t&omonvn;
yíay:vivm&ygon/

q&mawmon pw\xuaygur;m;u em;vnvuemwwapvaom apwemou
a&muralumi w&m;awmuli;airrjzpab talumi;t&mEivuzuaom 0gu:[e
trsl;r;u to;jy|x;m;allumi;awu&ygon/

¹³ eErmvmb0o ? a'guwm ? cEpryg ? 112 /

¹⁴ ciri ? arni("EjzL-") ? 1997 ? 93 /

¹⁵ eErmvmb0o ? a'guwm ? cEpryg ? 109 /

2? 3/ a [moemopwxm;jzL

pw&m;pm pum;ajyon pwxm;jzLpiatmiwnaqmuenu a&;om;xm;jci;
jzpygon/ a [moemopwxm;jzLw&m;pmu talumi;t&m? ta&;tom;(2)yi;jzi wijyyg
rn/

2? 3? 1/ talumi;t&m

a [moemo pwxm;jzLw&m;pm on ou&mZ 1372 (2010)cEpwi ui;we;vr;
rom;p oC'ge qr;avmi;toi; \ tEi;rtvL"ryZm tx;w&m;yü a [mlum;aom
w&m;awmjzpygon/

w&m;pmpum;ajytpwi a [moemo pwxm;jzL&evtyyu jrwpmb&m;a [m
lum;aom w&m;a'oemawmr xwEwxm;y? jrermEiwi y#uw 3-yon y*acw
uyia&mu&y? y#uw3-yEiywouí 'um'umrrsm; toÓPtm;en;y? , i;rm
ygVva [mxm;í ygVrwwjci;alumijzpy? 'um'umrrsm;twu w&m;a [mytqiqi
ajymi;vvmy? ygVva [mjci;? ygVw teujyeqa [mjci;? w&m;&yomrrsm;ay:vmaom
tcg uAsmvumrrsm;pu;ly; rwrv , atmia [mjci; [í tqiqiajymi;vvmywu wijy
xm;on/

w&m;a [mjci;w&m;emjci;rm omoemawmnEi&ejzpalumi; w&m;a [mo? w&m;y
ui;yow/ xm;oiaompwxm;? vuenc , oiaomtcursm;u vr;ñexm; ygon/
& [e;awm? ov&i? tr&om;Oygoum? tr&;or;Oygoumav;0;on omoem \
axmuwiu;rs;jzpy? "ryZmyrsm;jyvy&mwi apwem∨om vloiy? aiaumuc
jci;rjy/b apwemjzivilapjci;uom vucoiywu wijyxm;on/ xjyi be;u;rs;
vn; tvlc&mwi aqr&;&i;Ei]tv&&i wynawmq tvlcymb& } [zwxm;o
wüom awmi;aumi;y? apmi;yg;&yajcriyoiy? &iom&yw&m on avema&m*gtwu
yiv/i rpilu , aomECemxri;u ro;cy? w&m;a [my*vrsm; Ev;oi;oi ontcu
(5)c&u&y? b&m;a [mtwi; a [mp0rzsua [mjci;? a [mon talumi;t&m wpcu
cirmontalumi;w&m;rs;jyEijci;? w&m;"roapvaom pwxm;&jci;? vmbvmbu
rar[mu;jci;? rrEitjcm;ou xyg;rywcwji;wjzpy a [mopwxm;jzLoiyrsm;u
om"ursm;u , awljzp&yrs;jzi vucvuemz , &i;jyxm;on/

w&m;emorsm; pwxm;jzLoiyuwijyxm;on/ w&m;pum;tay:rm tjyp&m
½wcjci;? w&m;a [m"ruxuy*v u½wcjci;? rru , u ½wcjci;rs;a&mi&y? [aw;
onaw;raw;b rereueue Ev;oi;oiyalumi jrwpmb&m;u orwe , mrowwi
a [mxm;y? w&m;emopwxm;jzLv/i r*zv&x&Eiy? aemuq;wi a [moEi emotwu
tusk;rs;yu wijyxm;on/ a [moon emoEivuavsmnaxjzpatmi a [moiy?
ovr&ou ov talumi;ra [moiy? ov&ouom ov talumi;a [mygu 0r;om

au^{ey}uy? a[mou, wi t^{m½}puly; a[mí w&m;x&om;y? a[m^{oem}opwxm;jzLyg
uw&m;"ro&uio;jci;jzi oo&m0#qi;&r vwajrmurnjzpyjzi t q;owxm;on/

2? 3? 2/ ta&t om;

]]a[m^{oem}opwxm;jzL}} w&m;pm \ ta&t om;u pum;t o;tEe;? Ogus[í
yi;jcm; wijyygrn/

pum;t o;tEe;

pum;t o;tEe;wi pmayo;pum;v;rsm;? Opmt o;rsm;? wipm;t o; x;jcm;aom
t o;rsm;aw&on/

pmayo;rsm;aw&aomvn; w&m;pmjzpí vtyaomae&mwiom t o;jy&alumi;
aw&on/ pmayo;rsm;on pm[ecnm;apygon/

]]jrmijnrm y#uw 3-y a&mu&aeaoomvn; A'? "r? oCmu
lunnuw 'um'umraw& y#uweywouw toÓP[m t m;aysm
aeao;w , }} (pm-282)

]]0uw pw pwawu [a&mu'a&mue}} (pm-301)

]]ru qwm *Pau;Zu acz:uw , }} (pm-302)

ponziaw&on/ av;euapvaomtcgwi ygV(pmayo;)rsm;u t o;jy&xm;alumi;
aw&on/

tav;teuajymvaom talumi;t&muwiy&mü Op(mv;xy)t o;rsm;u qavsm
pm t o;jy&xm;alumi;aw&on/

]], y^u;uaxmily; , yersuEywly;a[mwacwrm , yawmiw&m;qly;
&wmaw t ue&wly;a[mvuwmayg a0a0qm qm r[w b;}} (pm-283)

]]oweawu ussee a[m^{ll}uw , }} (pm-284)

]]rereueue jrivmw , }} (pm-296)

[íaw&on/ ygarmucyq&mawm \ tav;teuajymvaom apwemavoay:vi
vmlly; w&m;em o? w&m;pmzwowtaeEivn; avoallumi t^{m½}p;puvmlu&on/
bu , muav;euapaom bu , m tx;jy'y'rsm; [vn; qEiygon/

wipm;rt o;rsm;u vn; aw&on/ omoemtwu &[e;awm? ov&i?
Oygoum? Oygoum av;0;wly;aygi; t m;xw&rnjzpalumi;u-

]]omoem&u axmuwiiu;av;&y}} (pm-287)

[o;xm;on/ taqmut0wpctwu]axmuwi} on ta&u;ouo| ourwi
to;jyru ou&wiwipm;xm;alumi; awl&on/ omomemtwu ta;ygrtwi;
tqu xixi&m;o;riapaom to;jzpygon/

pm[evyí t"ym, av;eurujzapaom x;jcm;aom to;rsm;u v n; awl&
on/

b&m;a [mygVawme v om;w\ a0;uml r a0;u maejci; oabmu-
]]a0;lra0;}} (pm-284)

[a&on/ to;upv;ply; xron/

av;0;u omoem u wunvunlu;yr;oiyu-
]]0;xr;yxr;}} (pm-287)

w&m;pum;eml u m;ow\ taeEi t jrit m½rwpqi aqmi&uoion oabmu
xi&m;o;riapon/

vL'ge;luyg to;u-

]]vLluyg we;luyg}} (pm-289)

t m;ygw& vu'vu'v' v\ aqm vaomav oay:vily; w&m;emow t m; 'get&mü t m;&
wu'uvmapon/ apwenE;l u m;vmapon/

xi;ri;ly; toynmr&wy*v u-

]t , we , w y*v}} (pm-301)

[aom to;rsm;awl&on/ w&m;emow\ taeEi rrwu, u qijcirapaom avojzp
on/ t"ym, xry; pmzwo twu tow&m;rsm;u Epou vucrapygon/

pum; to;tEe;rsm;on taumi;t&mEiqavsmatmi cnm;r? to;x;r? xrr
pon [etrsl;rs;u ae&mwuo;Ee;xm;on/ a[moemo pwxm;jzlapvaom q&mawm
\apwemu ay:vivuzuaom to;rsm;jzpygon/

0gu;to;wi 0gu;w? 0gu;s&n? [ec;un0gu;s? ypw tly\i0gu;rsm; to;jy\
xm;alumi;awl&on/

0gu;wrsm;o;í v n; tajympum;aiya& [eu ou0iapon/ w&m;a [mici; tay:
vmbv mbrar\on q&mawm \c, c;u u avouazmijaeon/ omoem tay:xm;
&on q&mawm \apwemu azmijyEiaomallumi q&mawm u o'gym;vmapon/ apwem
reonav oay:ap&e jywom;wu:on 0gu;wrsm;u t m;jy\xm;on/

w&m;a [my*v on w&m;em o twu omru rryg t u\ww&m;&&y u-

]]bme0yrmwwē;q u;wōrm; ferry man e 0yrmww, / u;wōrm;u
 avavmly;awm c&;onu [buyw, ? ywmuawm c&;onu ywmy?
 'gayr, | o v n; a& m u o m; wmyayg}}¹⁶

[í 0g u s r s m; j z i a&; z x m; o n / a [m o u] u; w o r m; } ? e m o u] c &; o n } [í c i; E i;
 x m; a o m 0g u w t z r s m; j z p o n / q v c u u o a b m a y g u u m p w r u p w i j r i a , m i v m
 a p y g o n /

0g u s & n t o; r s m; u v n; a w l & o n /

]]'gal u m i r v w & m; y u i; y w m u o v p p p p & y; a w m w & m; e m w y * v
 a w [m p w c r; o m u , c r; o m e w & m; e m l u & z 'g u t " u u y g w , }

[í w & m; y u i; y j c i; \ t u s; a u s; Z; u 0g u s & n j z i a&; z x m; o n / q & m a w m \ a p w e m
 a v o x i [y a e a o m 0g u s & n t z j z p y g o n /

[e c u n 0g u s r s m; u t o; j y l x m; í q v c u a y: v i l y; p m [e v y o n / q & m a w m \
 p w t m; x u o e a p w e m r e o n a v o u a y: v i a p o n / y & o w ü o 'g
 p w j z p a y: a p o n /

]]'gaw i g o z; w m y? i g l u m; z; w m y? i g r w x m; z; w m y? i g t u e o l y; o m; y
 a w q l y; t m ½ r x m; & b; }} (pm-302)

b 0g u s w i e m r p m; + ß u , m y p j z i 3 c q u w u t o; j y a &; o m; x m; o n / w & m; e m
 y * v r s m; \ j z p a v j z p x & a o m p w t a w; r s m; u 0g u s w r s m; u q u w u o; í p m [e
 o u v u a p o n / v u v a o m a v o a y: a p o n /

w & m; a [m o o n w & m; e m o y * v E i v u z u a o m w & m; a [m o i a l u m i; w i j y & m
 w i -

]]'awm w & m; e m y * v q w m u v n; o 'g r w y * v & w , ? o v r & w y * v
 & w , ? A [o w r & w y * v & w , ? p e ß u r p m * r & w y * v & w , ? y n m r w
 y * v & w , w }} (pm-303)

[í a &; o m; x m; o n / (e m r + ß u , m) y p w y ' p r s m; j z i [e c u n n a &; z x m; o n / y * v
 t r s; r s; u j y m; y u x i & m; a p & e] y * v & w , } q o n y ' p u t x y x y a &; z j c i; j z i y p w
 [e c u n 0g u s w r s m; t o i a q m i v m o n / y * v q o n e m r a & U r e m r 0 a o o e t r s; r s; u
 a j y m i; í a &; z o n / 0g u s w r s m; a y g i; z v u a o m t c g x p m y ' w i w n a o m y p w y * v r s m; E i
 r w n a o m y p w y * v 2 r s; a y g i; p y a e o n o a b m u & i; & i; v i; v i; e m; v n v m a p o n /
 y & o w \ p w w i; o q & m a w m ñ e j y v a o m w & m; t o r s m; t & e t [e E i x; a z g u 0 i a & m u
 o m; a t m i v n; a j y m o n / y & o w ü w & m; t o ? w & m; t a w; r s m; E; E; l u m; l u m; j z p v m a p a o m
 t a j y m p u m; a j y a &; [e j z p o n /

¹⁶ eEr m v m b 0 o ? a 'g u w m ? c E p r y g ? 304 /

w&m;a [m&mwi | awmia&muajrmua&mura [mb | a [mp0ry:ua [m&allumi;u
jrwpm b&m;w&m;a [myEi wijyxm;on/

]]jrwpm b&m; w&m;a [m&i yxr'get allumi;a [mw , |

'gely;&i ova [mw , ?

ovly;&i o*ewjynt allumi;a [mw , ?

ewjynt allumi;ly;&i umr*P t m^{1/2}aw&U

tjypt em tqm u a [mw , }} (pm-297)

[í ypw ty\i0gursm;jzi a&;om;xm;on/

w&m;em oEi vuzuaomw&m;? n nwaomw&m;a [mygu Ep0;Epzu t u sl;&y
u-

]]A [ow&wou A [owqi&mawa [m&i aueyw , | oabmuw , }}

]]peß uwwwy* v? vL'ge;wwwy*u pm* t allumi;ajm&iaueyw , ?
oabmuw , }}

]]ynm&wy*v u ynm talumi;ajm&i aueyw , | oabmuw , }}

[í a&;z\xm;on/ jrwpm b&m;a [mllum;aom 'uxmowevm a [mllum;cuu
rwom;ci z , jzpat mi ypw0gursm;jzi uir;uipma&;om;xm;on/ q&mawm \
apwem u yr\un nkrapygon/

a [moem opwxm;jzL w&m;pmpum;aiyu a&;z&mwiv trsm; em;v n vucz , |
jzpat mi pm oilum;ay;ouo wpqily;wpqi &i;vi;rellum; vr;ñexm;on/
pum;t o;tEe;yi;wi tcsU to;rs;wi t*vya0g [m&nyo;xm;allumi;awU&on/
ygV to;rs;u w&m;awmEit n vtyoavm uten;i , om to;jy\xm;on/ aygyg;
aomaep0 to;rs;u vn;awU&on/ pm [ecnm;r aygyg;ou v urjz papaom to;
rs;m;jzpon [qEiygon/ 0gus u@wivn; talumi;t&mEi vuzuat mi? \i;aiUr
r&at mi 0gus [et r sl;r sl; to;jy\xm;on/ a [moem oEp0;Epzu t u sl;&apvaom
apwem xi [yaeaom 0gus zU [er sm;jzpygon/

lci o;oycu

ppmwr;wi q&mawma'guwm t&ieErmb0o \]pw \ taw;rm;?]pw \
x uaygur;rm;?]a [moem opwxm;jzL} w&m;pmpum;ajy(3)y' u talumi; t&m?
ta&; t om; [í yi;jcm;avvmwiiyly;jzpygon/

]pw \ taw;rm;} w&m;pmwi taw;rpwEi taw;epw(2)r&;&y? taw;epwu
reuepmaw;oiy? rm; , i;ontaw;rm;u en;vr;(5)o , jzi ajz&i;oiy?
jrwpm b&a [mllum;aom 0wu oPmeowvm w&m;a'oemawm u a [mllum;ici;jz
ywuwijyxm;on/ pw \ taw;rm;u wiiy&mwi taw;rpw? aw;oiwmeraw;
oiwmp onjzi acgi;p0i , (17)cjzi wiiyxm;on/ aep0Eitr vwjzpay:aeaom
avmb? a'go? arm [? re;w;r? w , wmr ponraw;oiaom taw;rm;?
arwm u ½ Pmp on aw;oiaom taw;rm;u ruarum v lavmu tzpty;ur;rm;jzi Oyr
ay;um taw;xe;cyen;rm;u vr;ñexm;ygon/

]pw \ x uaygur;rm;w&m;pm}wi w;wur? tqijrijaexivr ponwallumi
pwzp;rr;rm;jzpl u&y? xpwpz;ru jrwpm b&a [mllum;caom e ó &Powvm pw \
x uaygu(6)r&;jzi avu ium pwwnaqu oiyu &i;vi;a [mllum;xm;on/
]a [moemo pwxm;jzL} w&m;pmwi tajctaeuvu íacwtququ w&m;
a [mypaiym i;vmy? omoentwu &[e;awm? ov&i? tr&;om;Oygoum? tr&;or;
Oygoum av;0;bu;yr;ron axmuw iu;av;&yoz , jzpy? "ryZmr;rm;wi w&m;a [m
y*v? w&m;emy*vwtwu tu&;atmivyoiy w&m;a [my*vbuu vn;
q , w&m;rm;? apmi;yg;&yajcoabmr;rm;rygb b&m;a [mw&m;u a [mp0rysua [m oiy?
w&m;"rr;rm;ouygappwxm;jzi a [mllum;oiy? w&m;em or;rm;u vn; w&m; pum; tay:?
"ruxu tay: rru , u , tay: ½wcjci;rm;ryjoiy? taw;rr;rm;b w&m;wi
tm ½puoiy? pwxm;jzLpipmxm;ly; w&m;emjci;on to Ó P&ly; r*zv a&m uEiy?
a [moonvn; u;worm;uo rrygw&m;oom;on om"u&ywu jrwpm b&a [m
w&m;awmvm om"ur;rm;? vu&tajctaersm;jzi yaqmi vr;ñexm;on/ oo&m0#
qi;&r vwajrm uapvaom q&mawm \ apwemu lun nlav;pm;r apygon/

ta&; t om;yi;wi w&m;awm(3)y'v;wi tpyi;üacgi;p0u&i;vi;jyxm;ly;
w&m;awm tq;tx acgi;p0i , rsm;cum &i;&i;vi;vi;wiiyxm;on/ pum; to; tEe;
wi pmayo;(ygV)to;? v;ci;bu , m? v;wu , mto;? Opmt o; wipm;rto;rm;u
to;jyxm;on/ Ogusyi;wi Ogusw? Ogus&n? [ecun? ypwtyi0gur;rm;u
talumi;t&mEi vuzuatmi to;jyxm;on/ Ogus [etr&;r&;jzi pm [eli;aiUrr&b
w&m;awm \ tEpom&tay: Ev;oi;wwapvaom q&mawm u; \ apwemavou
lum;a , mirapygon/

e*;

w&m;pm pum;ajyon v trsm;em;vnapvaom talumi;t&mu toay;wiiyaom
 owtav;uao m pmaywp&yjzpygon/ pmayEivrsl;twu t"utce;u@r yg0i
 aeon[qEiygon/ q&mawma'guwm t&ieErmvmb0o a[mum;caomw&m;pmrsm;
 rsm;pmay:xuv;u&ygon/ q&mawm \apwemEitoynmut&i;cxm;aom w&m;pm
 rsm;on cnm;ouvu xujruaeygon/ pmzwow \Ev;trtwi;o &i;&i;
 vi;vi; &i;&i;E;E;x;azm u 0ia&m uom;apEipr;&on/ xalumivn; q&mawm \
 w&m;pmrsm;on jrwpmA'Eiw&m;awm tay: lunnio'g w;apygon/ ppmwr;on
 w&m;pm pum;ajyavvmorsm;twu taxmutujyEivrrn[, lunarpmviryg
 on/

ur;u;pm&i;

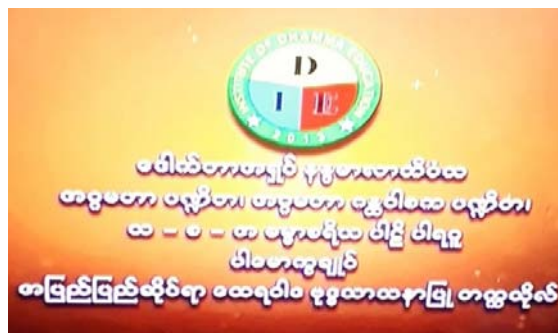
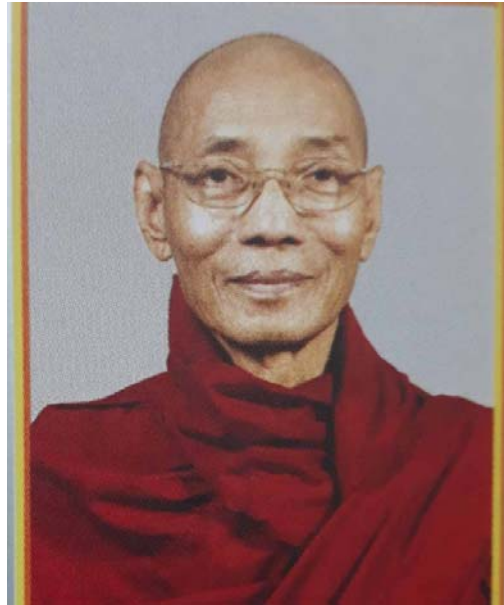
ciri? armi("Ejzl-)/ (1985)/ *pum;ajyoabmw&m; pum;ajytwwynm* ('-bur)/ &eue?
 c&aw;o yEywul

ciri? armi("Ejzl-)/ (1997)/ *pmayor'&müvuypu;ji;!* &eue? t m;rmeopyEywul

ciri? armi("Ejzl-)/ (2011)/ *a&[eynme'ge;!* &eue? pwu;c&c&pmayl

aZm*/ (2004)/ *&opmaytziEie'ge;* ('-bur)/ &eue? t ilui;0;yEywul

eErmvmb0o? a'guwm / cEprygl e, /vna[mum;jrww&m;? tw(2)/&eue? atmiZrlyEywul



&euebaq \ pp0w\ rsm; r o½yazm t z rsm; av v mcs u

ri;armoe^{*}

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr; on &euebaqa&om; caom 0w\ rsm; xr pp0w\ rsm; uavvm xm; on
pmwr; jzpon/ jrerneii vwvya&; j; cgpwi jzpay: vmaom a& mipoyersm; t m;
wucuac: re; on taumi; u &euebaqu pp0w\ rsm; t jzpzew; xm; ygon/
pma&; o \ 0w\ t jzpzew; xm; yEi pma&; o \ o& yazm ta&; t om; wu ppmwr; wi
avvmwijy xm; ygon/

aomc: ua0g [m&/ wuy? aomi; ue; o? ppom;? tyc\ ya&;

e' qe;

&opmaytztErsm; wi yg0iaom0w\ &non pmzwy&ow\ pw0ipm; rt&q;
pmayyoPeizpon/ jrerpma&; q&mw\ on vwvya&; u; yr; r umvuwn; u
0w\ rsm; a&; z\ cl uon/ vwvya&; &&on aemuyi; wivn; 0w\ rsm; uquvu a&; om;
uon/ ppjy; acw pma&; q&m rsm; xwi xi&; aom pma&; q&mwp0; rm &euebaqjzp
on/ &euebaqon u, awtjzptyursm; uaom vn; aumi;? pmaw\ totjri
rsm; uaomvn; aumi; 0w\ &n rsm; t jzp zew; a&; zygon/ &euebaqa&; om; aom
pp0w\ rsm; on pmzwy&owu pw0ipm; apygon/ ppmwr; on &euebaq \
pp0w\ rsm; r o& yazm t z rsm; u t "u xm; í avvmwijy xm; ygon/

1/ pma&; o \ t w\ yw t u:O;

&euebaqu {&m0wwi;? a'; ' &jr\ Ue , ? a&y0&mwi tz0; \ umz;? tr a': ao; ao;
wr 1916 c? puwibmv 21 &uaewi zm; jricon/ 15 Epom; t & , wi ajrmi; jrjr\ Uü
ye; cynmu oilum; c \ / 1932 cEpwi &euejr\ Uo a&mu&cjy; aemu ouapmir*Zi;
wi0w\ wrsm; azmjyc&avon/ 1940 jynEpwi e*g; e*me , ü pmwn; tz0ijzpv m
on/

'w , urmpptwi; u &euebaqon zuqpqe u: ia&;? ajratmu , ep
wm0ecwp0; t jzp zsmc&i twi; vy&m; c \ / 1964 cEpwi pma&; q&m toi; 0u\ t jzp
wm0e , cygon/ &euebaq \ xi&; aom0w\ rsm; rm]cavaomvn; } (1963)?]wu í
, &aom ru&nwpaygu} (1964)?]ee; [mA} (1964)?]onr; onav} (1964)?]aoaomr
wn alomaumi; \ } (1964)?]jrernjynom; } (1966)wjzpon/]ulu; aumi; } (1959)
jyZmwu vn; a&; om; con/

^{*} a'g uwm? ygarmu? jrerpmaXme? ppawwuov

EiiawmEi vrs;twu xr;aqmicrrsm;alumi 1981 cEpwi Eii*P&n (yxr
qi) c;jriji;c&avon/ &euebaqon 1986 cEp? puwibm 17 &uaewi
u ,vecon/

2/ 0w&n [on

&opmaytzrsm;jzpon jyZmw? &opmwr;? 0w&w? 0w&ntzrsm;wi 0w&
&non y&owpw 0ipm;rt&q;jzpon/ 0w&nEiywouí wiw , \0w&a&en;
tajcyipm tywi -

]]0w&qonrm plu0Vmlu;wpcv;ü yg0iíaeluaom ou&our
talumi;rm;teur rrpwEiaw&m talumi;&ywpccu pmzwo\ tz
ü zwc:ipz ,vn;jzpavatmi zwívn; en;vnv ,apatmiEio
zw&jy;aemu en;vnaom tcgwi pmzwoü&ou;yg;wteu wpyg;yg;
jzpay:avatmi pump0uma&;om; pu;íxm;aom tijptyutalumi;&y
wpccyi jzpavon/}} (1974? 17-18)

[ziqxm;yg on/

0w&non 'javmuu tajcc&alumi;u q&maZm*s uynmya' ompmapmiwi -

]]aemA , [ac:aom 0wtzrsl;qonrm 'l"rvlavmuu xi[y&aom
tzrsl;jzpon}} (1968?133)

[relqcygon/

xuo 'javmuu tajccaomvn; pma&q&m\pwu;Ei rui;Eiay/ pma&
q&mon'javmu\ yuwjzp&yu pwu;jziaygi;pyí zwc:ipz ,jzpatmia&;&m
üvn; pmzwowi vuc , unatmi a&zoiyuwup;u

jrermpmrwzpm tywi -

]]0w&[on wu , tijptyur[w? 0w&a&q&muzwí aumi;
atmiZmwaqmi? yw0eui? Zmwvvr; ponwu aygi;pyzew;xm;
on re\ / oiaom wu ,jzpyuon[xi&atmi ze;w;eir
avmuobm0? vobm0Ei xawrom qijciwwaom t&,yi;u
0w&[ívuc rnjzpon}} (1985?362)

[qxm;yg on/

ausmatmibomjyeaom urmausmpma&q&mlu; qrm;qure\ 0w&aumi;Ei
ywouontqu *E0iwpq , pm tywi -

]]0w&aumi;wpy'qonrm pojzpon/ 0w&q&m;a&;cs , on0;wncsu
onus , jye&rn/ trsm;pw0ipm;Eion us , us , jyejyejzp&rn/

v|avmuwpcv; u\$, u\$, iye|ye| pw0ipm;r&on0w| r\$;jzp&rn/
a&;c\$, |oam taumi;t&mon wm&nc&rn}} (2006?12)

[re|qxm;yg on/

]]0w|aumi; \oabmrm urmt&y&y& rnonvrs;r|qEpou cpm;ap&rn/
x|ojzp&e u\$;ajrmi;aom y*v|uqeon &n&, cuxu vrev|i rnorqcpm;
em;vnEion v|oabm v|obm0tzrsm;yg&rn/ *sme, ausrav; \ |re;ír[}u|urml
Eiitc|u b|omjyeqzw&|uci;rm vom;wi;rui;umeion tcpei traxmia&;
ueueu&i;&i;Ei tEynm*Pajrmuatmi a&;zEiaomalumijzpon/ t|cpEi
traxmia&;wi x|tceuacwpm;aeaom e, c|rEi taemuwi; , 0;r a&max; , uE ,
vmr \ tE&m , rsm;u ae&mwuxnoi;eiruvn; yg0ion [q&yg rn/}}

0w|&n|Zmwaqmirms;on ' |avmuEi wpxywn;rusEiy? Zmwaqmi
Zmwvr;w|uzew;&mü pma&;q&m u tEynmajrmuatmi zew;a&;ay;&y? x|ojzpon
tav|mu pma&;ozew;aom0wwi o \pwae oabmxm;rm; yg0iaewwyw|u
pmayEi pmayoabmw&m; tzi pmtyiwi -

]]&opmay& Zmwaqmirms;on ' |avmuw|aw|&aom y*v|vrsm;Ei
rwyg/ &opmayv|Zmwaqmirms;rm a0g [m&rsm;? 0gursm;jzi o½yazm
c|uomjzpon/ pmaytEynm&iu rrajymvaompum;rm;u Zmwvr;yg
Zmwaqmirms;t m; tajymci;ji;jzpygon/ ajymci;onpum;v;rm;?
0gursm;on *P? &oajrmu&yg on/ teynmoabm yg&yg rn/
Zmwvr;yg Zmwaqmirms;on tEynm \ ze;w;rjzpojzivr; pmay
ynm&iEi o \ twon wpxywn;u|aeyg on/}} (2002? 11)

[qcygon/ rr;ajruvn; 0w|&n|oabmw&m; 0w|&n|twwynm pmtyiwi -

]]0w|on ' |avmuEi pma&;o \pwu;teynmw| aygi;pyjc , re;
xm;on Zmwvr;Zmwaqmiw|yg0iaom &opum;ajytz| ypwpr\$;}}
(2009? 11)

[zi|qxm;yg on/

x|tqrsm;t&|unvi 0w|&nwi toi,w&r? obm0ur&ouo| &o
cpm;rjzpatmivr; a&;&evyg on/ pma&;q&m taeji ' |avmuEi pwu;avmuu
teynmji orrwatmi aygi;pn;qupy ay;Eipr;&&ev tyon [em;vn&yg on/

3/ &euebaq \ pp0w|krsm;

&euebaq on b0r\$;puiivncojzpon/ ye;c\$&q&m? jyZmw'g&uwm? pma&;
q&m? jrermvwvya&;twu touay;wuy0ico wp0;ponji b0r\$;p uiivnc
yg on/ ou;ivnc&aom b0taw|tlu|krsm;u tajccí0w|krsm;u a&;om;av&yg on/

oa&;caom 0w/rsm;xr vwvya&;&jy;aem u au t i' t oyersm;ei wuy jzpy^m;on
 talu^mi;rsm;u a&;om;xm;on pp0w/rsm;u pmzwy&owrsm; BuluEpouluon/
 x0w/o;y'r^m —

1/ wuy [on

2/ cavaomvn;

3/ wu í , &aom rsu&nwpaygu

jzpon/

3/ (u) wuy [on0w/ Zmwvr; t u:0;

wuy [on0w/on jnaxmip &euetp;&uaemucjyí a&;om;xm;aom
 0w/jzpon/ jrermvwvya&; &jy;aem u au t i' t oyersm;on jnaxmip t p;&u
 vueuui awmveluygon/ au t i' twon jrermEiijr^u;rsm;u wucu
 or;yuxm;aomallumi &euetp;&[ac:qci;c&on tcevn;jzpon/ xtcewi
 au t i' t rsm;on xm;0,jrEiijrwr^u or;yuawmrn[aomowi;u jnaxmip
 t p;&uo&xm;aomallumi &euebaqt m; &abm(139)0;weitw xm;0,jr^u
 umu,&e wmoey;jci;c&on/ xm;0,jr^u? uveatmiaus;&mei a&;jr^ursm;u
 au t i' t Ei reoyersm; \vuatmuo rusa&muatmi umu,cygon/ o&mwi
 jnaxmip t p;& \ nelum;csursm;ei airjiwi wuy0iumu,aeaom wyr^u;wum;
 oabmxm;ujm;rrsm; &aeaomvn; xm;0,jr^u au t i' tw vuatmu rusa&mu
 atmi umu , Eicygon/

3/ (c) cavaomvn; 0w/Zmwvr; t u:0;

cavaomvn;0w/on awmiijr^uwi au t i' t rsm; \ zr;q;jci;c&aom
 ppqia&;rl;cy Avrl;csyarmiarmiEi ppAv^u;rsm;uu,wi&e pepm;ce;rsm;
 yg0iaom0w/jzpon/ rxvmjr^uwi a&we;pprsuEmoppaq;&e om;a&muao
 Avrl;csyarmiarmiEi ppAv^ursm;u au t i' t rsm;uawmiijr^uwi zr;q;xe;or;xm;
 ygon/ xtcewi awmiijr^u au t i' t rsm;u v n;aumi;? ys0;rem;jr^u uejrleprsm;
 uvn;aumi; or;yuxm;aom tcejzpon/ zr;q;xm;aom ppAv^ursm;u u,wi&e
 rm v , uon r [way/

&euebaqon jrermvwvya&; lu^u;yr;r^umv twi; t&mjzpcz;aom
 Avrl;csyarmiarmiu u ,wivon/ xtcgjrermwyrawmr ppacgi;aqm^ursm;xr
 cijy;cuji ppwyzi u ,wi&e lu^u;pm;luon/ arjr^uwippynmrsm;u oi,jy;/
 rxvmjr^uraei pp0;p;&; \ treuapmion/ xaemu rxvmjr^ur yiavmi;jr^uo xucm

jy; yia vmi; jr r ajc v i c & ; l u r ; j z i a w m i i j r o l c w u u o n / a w m i i j r o a & m u c g e ;
 w i a w m i i j r u w y r a w m r o r ; y u i j ; j z p o n / a w m i a x m i w i z r ; q ; x m ; a o m
 A v r l ; c y a r m i a r m i w u a u t i ' t w u q u v u a c : a q m i o m ; o n / x t c g p m a & ;
 q & m u q u v u u , w i & e l u ; p m ; a o m v n ; A v r l ; c y a u s m a z m \ c i j y ; c u r & o j z i
 v u a v s m c & o n /

3/ (*) wu í , & a o m r s u & n w p a y g u

wu í , & a o m r s u & n w p a y g u 0 w o n c a v a o m v n ; 0 w \ t q u i z p o n /
 a u t i ' t w v u x w i u s a & m u a e a o m A v r l ; c y a r m i a r m i E i A v l u ; a j c m u a , m u
 w u a u t i ' t w u a o ' P a y ; r n [a l u n m v u a o m o w i ; u l u m ; a o m t c g p m a & ; o u
 u , w i & e l u ; y r ; j c i ; u 0 w t j z p a & ; o m ; j c i ; j z p o n / j r e r m w y r a w m p p t & m & l u ; r s m ; \
 p p 0 r l j z i p m a & ; o o n p p w y l u ; w p c z p n ; j y ; u , w i & e l u ; p m ; y g o n /

p m a & ; o \ w y z w i w y r a w m r t & m & r s m ; ? a x m u v r ; a & ; w y z r t & m & r s m ; ?
 q u o , a & ; w y r t & m & r s m ; y g 0 i o n / p m a & ; o o n w y r a w m r t & m & w p 0 ; r [w
 a o m v n ; p p a & ; t a w t l u r s m ; o j z p o n / x t a w t l u u r r x u i , a o m p p A v r s m ; u
 t o t r w r y i c i ? a v m i a j y m i c i l u y g o n / & e o E i & i q i & a o m t c e w i p m a & ; o w
 w y z u & i q i a p o n / a t m i j r i a o m t c g e m r n a u m i ; & v l u y g o n / p m a & ; o w
 w y z o n & e o E i & i q i w u c u j y ; a e m u A v r l ; c y a r m i a r m i w t m ; u , w i E i c y g
 o n / & e o l e , a j r r a w m i i j r o t 0 i j r w a p m n a e m i b & m ; u z ; & i ; p m a & ; o l u n E ; a e p 0
 A v r l ; c y a r m i a r m i o n A ' b m o m r c & p , m e b m o m o u ; a j y m i ; a w m r n [a j y m l u m ;
 v u y g o n / x t c g p m a & ; o o n r a z m j y E i a o m c p m ; c u j z i r s u & n u c & j y ; 0 w u
 t q ; o w x m ; y g o n /

4/ o ½ y a z m t z

0 w a & ; q & m w o n r r w a w l u l c p m ; & a o m y w 0 e ; u s i o b m 0 t v t y r s m ; u p m z w
 o r s m ; c p m ; v m e i a t m i o & y a z m a & ; z a v & l u y g o n / o & y a z m t a & ; t z l a u m i ; a v a v
 p m z w o o n 0 w t a l u m i ; t & m r s m ; u p w 0 i p m ; a v a v j z p o n / o & y a z m t z E i y w o u
 í a r m i c i r i (" E j z l) \ p u m ; a j y o a b m w & m ; p u m ; a j y t w w y n m p m t y w i —

]] o & y a z m t z o n r s u p j z i j r i E i a o m & y q i ; o i j y i r s m ; u t " u x m ; í
 z a o m t z r s ; j z p o n / o u & o u r t a u m i t x n w \ y o P e u
 p m z w o \ p w x w i j r i a , m i v m a t m i a z m & j c i ; o n o & y a z m t z l \
 t " u w m 0 e j z p o n / } (2 0 0 4 ? 1 9 4)

[o & y a z m t z l \ o a b m u z i q x m ; u y g o n /

&euebaqon o\pp0w\rm;wi o&yazm tz\rm;u yjyatmia&z\rm;on
uaw&on/ &euebaq\ o&yazm tz\rm;u avvmlunvi atmuygtwi; aw&&
ygon/

1/ jriui; o&yazm tz\rm;

2/ wuyo&yazm tz\rm;

3/ pwcpm;r\o&yazm tz\rm;

4/ taxaxo&yazm tz\rm;

[í aw&&ygon/

4? 1/ jriui;o&yazm tz\rm;

pma&ow\tzon awmiiaxmi& Avrl;c\yarmiarmiwu u ,wi&etwu
arjr\wippoiiwe;rsm; wulu&on/ ppoiwe;jy;aomtcg rxvmwiaexijy;
txuray;vmrn treuapmi&ygon/ &eoe, o\om;&rn jzpaomalumi c&;&n
cwujci;u avu:iluon/ nbuwi &eoe, ajro\ om;a&muyu avu:iluon/
xol avu:ip0 jriaw&aom jriui;u]]cavaom vn;}} 0w\wi —

]]vru&ujzpavon/ \u , a&miut m;jy\vu om;aelu&on/ rxvm
jr\on/ r;a&miuav;rsm; jy\jy\;ajymuajmuji ta0;wiuse&pconrm
vr\unrvuwi; vr;p&m\vv jzpael\}} (2016? 54)

[rxvmjr\jriui;u o&yazm\rm;on/ &eoEi&iqiwyu jzpym;Eion taic
taewi obm0w&m; \ tvulun&i; vr;ovcpm;cujzi jzpay:vmapaom
jriui;u ay:viatmi a&z\rm;ygon/

pma&owwyzon yiavmi;jr\raeíawmiijr\o\ ajcvic&jziom;\uon/
vr;wi&m\rm;u jzwau smjy;aem u a&acsmi;&m o\ a&muvmluon/ a&acsmi;&mwi
pma&owwyzr &abmau smoe;u &mre;ry\wp0;u \u\ uEpouaeon/ xre;ry\<
av;on pma&ow\ cwurnc&p0u vu&etwujyiqion/ xtcg pma&ou
rvu&ewm;jrpon/ xowm;jrpaomalumi re;ry\av;on pwraumi;jzpaomvn;
pma&ow\ pm;aomu&etwu xri; [i;rsm;u cujywau;on/ pma&ourpm;awm
b quvucwuvon/ xtcgre;ry\av;u pma&otm;pm;aomu&etwu tajy;
vmíac:ygon/ tajy;vmac:aeaom re;ry\av;\ toitjiu]]cavaom vn;}}
0w\wi —

]]Av\u;Av\u;}} [aom re;roallumi ajcvr;wom;&on/ vn\unvu
aomtcgcya0;a0;aeí apmapmu tr\;or; ajy;vmonuaw&\ tr\;or;
\ zm;vsm;c\rm;aomqyiwr xyq;ay:& qEuav;on aea&mijcn

allumi a&em;uyxm;ovjzpon/ aiy;vmaeaomallumi jynarmuaeygvu
 vupmwtaom &ionoraomcg; \ / txuraeí jriowi; ovravmu
 atmi vy, r;vuygvmon/ vyaomwituEi vuavsmu;xm;on
 aygiwtpon a&lv;wi;aea&miEi xvuunvn? &vn yg
 zwac:aebouo tceaeatmi wpzuptvjyae \ /

Ei;a0aeaomjymn\ aemucawmiwe;? a&&ncs;xm;aom Og;&awmpy?
 jrirm;aom opyixu& op&uopcuwu npcsvuozi ,;p; vm[e
 waoma&&n ai&nriuo we;aeon aea&mi jcn? xaea&miri
 rsm;atmu& a&&nqr;xm;aom ue;ajymiajymiwi xvyxm;aom
]]a&mrausmuqp&y}} \ [er\;ziajy;vmaeon re;rylav;}}

[ojriaw&aomjriu;u o&yazma&zxm;ygon/ pma&oon quvucwu&
 rnc&vr;twu vn;aumi;? &abmwp0; \ tij\tralumivn;aumi;? pwrsm;
 &wax;vu&aomvn; re;rylav; \ alum&i;aomt vEi obm0t vw&m;u ay:vi
 atmio&yazm a&zxm;Eion/ pp\ur;wr;aom ½ci;xwi qeui bujriu;u
 xnoi;o½yazmji;ji t m½tajymi;t v jzpapon/

Avrl;csyarmiarmiEi ppAvlu;rsm;u u ,wia&on yxrtur lu;yr;p0u
 tptp0rsm; vacsmralumi; ratmijricac/ tceru ,wir rjyeivi auti'tw\
 owjzwruvn;c&Eion/ xalumi'w ,tlur u ,wi&elu;yr;on/ pma&o
 0;aqmí wyrawmr t&m&rsm;Ei twcwuluon/ pma&owcwuon tceon
 r;umvjzpaomallumi luaw&aom tajaetau —

]]r;uyíon;vm \ / vr;onwjzn;jzn;Ei Og;&awmlu;twi;o a&mu
 ae \ / Og;&awmrsm;u r;a& \ tav;c&alumí vr;wpzuwpcuo
 [buonbu yici; , 0íz;tyxm; \ / pma&owon vP*lu;
 twi; 0i&ouo&ae \ / rrvuu rraxmiluní rri&/ (2015? 59)

[pma&ow awlu&aom &mooobm0u o&yazma&z xm;ygon/ &eoe , ajrtwi;
 wwwqwcsu&i; &m0owq;&m;r'Pucpm;&aom pma&ow wyz \ vy&m;r/ u
 jria , mivmapygon/ Oguwrm;u tcswtqurr a&ji;ji Zmwuuaemucu
 o½yay:apon/

pma&owwyzon on;xepm&maeaom r;a&puatmuwi typu&e jyi qi
 luon/ pojyiqiyu —

]]r;um;on;v \ /pma&ow/ &abmrsm;on awmio v ,orm;awm om;
 ppppw \ om;awcsn;jzplu \ / xalumi tcsucuci;Og;cw \ /
 tcsuzuc; \ / tcsuzuy p \ / ausmuzsmu;rsm; \ ab;ywvnü
 tcsuwtrmcu Og;jziaqu \ / jy;vliypxm;aom zuypwjzi

Oi;0e;r;lu? umlu \ / repEpq , twi; avvr;v zur;wi ,
uav;r;m; zeqi;vuov ajrrayguvmlu \ / (2015? 122)

[o&yazma&z;x;m;yg on/ r;a&pursm;vjclap&e waqmuaeaom jriui;u tao;pw
o&yazmxm;onrm pmzwo \ pwr;upxwi jria , mi vmapon/ waqmuaeaom
&abmw \ vyuiaqmi&uaeyrsm;u Og uwrsm;jzi wpuuci; wpuuci; ay:vi
atmizqxm;eion o&yazm tzaumi;wpcjzpygon/ pma&ow&abmrsm;on
awmio v , orm; awm om;ppppw \ om;awcn;jzplu \ qaom ta&u wyrwmEi
jynolum;ü aE;ax;rujzpapon/

4? 2/ wuyo&yazm t z rsm;

pma&oon wuyrsm;u qiEcojzpon/ vwvya&lu;yr;r umvEi
zuqp*yeawmvea&umvrsm;wi wuyaygi;rsm;pmu qiEz;ojzpon/ vwvya&
&jy;aom tcgwivn; jynwi;aomi;ue;r;rsm;u jrermwyrwmEi twwuy
0icjzpon/ , cpp0w/rsm;wivn; u , wiwuyqiEonu tao;pw o&yazm
a&z;x;m;yg on/

auti'twon xm;0 , jr'u or;yu&elu;pm;luon/ xm;0 , jr'u ror;yu
ci uveatmi&mu 0ia&uwucurnjzpon/ xtcgpma&owon uveatmi
&mwil uwiwipxmx;on/ auti'trsm; \ vy&m;r;rsm;u luwiowi;&aomvn;
&eu pwiwucurovijiyeí wiyewucu&rn [0elu;cyu trelay;xm;
on/ xtcg pma&o \ wyzon rr \ wypce;rom &eo \ tajctaeu apmilunae
lu&ygon/ xalumi auti'trsm;u pma&owwyzt m; pwiwucuaom tcg wuy
rsm;jzpy m;cygon/ wuy [on0wwi –

]]ab;ywywvnr]vueuc: vueuc:} [aomtolu;um;yí
us , us , vm on [xi&on/ te;wi&aom talumuveaeon
&abm \ rsEm on aqmuwn&mr&atmiyuae \ / Ewcr;uav;rsm;Ei
wu vuzm;uav;rsm;ygweae \ /}}

]]&abm om;pr;? t'gigb&i;*e;? t'gjye , om; igre;ruaiym? tjreq;
wujy;qxnxm;v usnuyawvn; tqioivyxm;v jy;awm
armawmEi? tycst;Epuy ay;vuygvlawmi;c? jreirevm}} (2016? 164)

[wuyjzpay:yu pma&o \ ta&jzivn;aumi;? ajympum;rsm;jzivn;aumi; o&yazm
xm;on/ wuytawtlu r&aom&abmav; \ trt&mEi pma&o \ trelay;aeaom
towu jria , mi? lum;a , mi vmapon o&yazm tzjzpygon/

pma&oon wuytawtlu rsm;ojzpon/ wuyatmiEia&twu vn; pep
wu: trelay;wwojzpon/ wpzuawmiue;wi wypxm;aom &eor sm;u tEiwu

&etwu|vuatmAvrsm;u| rno|vyui&rnu| &i;vi;jy; u, wilu;|uyo|zpon/|wuy| [on]} 0w|wi —

]]ajy;uejya| [x v|u? x v|u? vuygv|? bmv|yaewmv}}]

[aom|Av|oe;ax;\ t|oEi|tw pma&;ow| &ab|mrsm;\ q|qnn|at|mv|uaom| tor|sm;u|um;&\| tor|sm;on| cuc|;yi a0;om;|u|on/| pma&;oon| Av|azc|pu vr;at|mv|u\|]

]]a| [;Av|azc|p? wu| wu| aw|miay:u|wuraee? aw|miab;|u|eaw|mw|bu| Ew|cr;u|ajy;wu? ae&m, |xm;? ci|As|;w|vu|rom;e|}} (2016? 179)

[o&yazma&;z|x|;ygon/| pma&;ow|wyz|r wu|cua|omal|umi| &e|or|sm;qw|cm|x|u|ajy;ae|y? pma&;ow|wyz|r to|mp;&ae|a|omal|umi| t|m;wu|om;|uy? &e|or|sm;qw|cm&ma|em|uo| tajy;v|u|uy? pma&;o\| tre|ay;ae|ywu| ay:v|iat|mi o&yazma&;z|x|;ei|ygon/| pm|zwo\| pwr|up|xwi| j|ria, m|iv|map|jy; tre|ay;or|sm;u|yi|um;a, m|iv|map|on| t|za|umi;v|n;j|zpon/|]

pma&;ow|on| Av|rl;c|y|armi|armi|Ei| pp|Av|u;|rsm;u|u, w|&etwu| cw|u|uon/| ab|m*v|u;|&m|te;o| a&m|ua|om|tc|gwi| au|ti'|tw|Ei| wu|y|z|pym;on/| wu|y|z|pym;yu|]w|u|í, &on| ru&n|w|pay|gu|}} 0w|wi —

]]ww|m; te;&op|yi|u, ü yq;jc|v|u&a|om| tap|mi|u&i|tr|s|;om;on| rra&w|i| j|A|e;ceay:v|mon| Ar|m&ab|mu| aw|v|u&o|zi| &ww&u|t|t|m;o|ia|e&mr| cuc|i;ao|ew|armi;u| w|iv|uon/| &ab|mu| to|i|armi;w|i|x|m;a|om| aw|mr|ao|ew|Ei|yp|v|u\| ac|sm|uce| to|x|u|v|m|jy;|u|n|qr|x|ub&ae|on/| x|tc|g| ae|mu|x|y|ao|ew| armi;w|i|ra|eb|v|ux&ao|ew|Ei|0|i&u\| &ab|m|tc|s|u| 4|i;ua|us|m|v|u| ww|m;u|j|zwa|jy;\| u&i|tr|s|om;\| ao|ew|u|n|qon| 0|i&uon| &ab|m|ur|x|r;ay:o|ajr|m|u|v|u|wu\| ae|mu|&ab|m|w|pa, m|u|u| v|v|v|z|p|ae|a|om|u&i|tr|s|om;u|yp|v|u\| wp|zu|ur;r| qo|at|mo| tre|ay;ow|Ei|tw| *y|ep|ua|o|ew|u|to|Ei| b&i;p|ua|o|ewo? &&&iz, or|sm;|wp|jy|i|e|u|x|uay:v|m|u\| ra&;ra|E|i;yi| u|azc|pw|\| aw|mr|armi;j|ye|ao|ew|or|sm;| t|q|ur|jyway:v|m|\| }}(2016? 186)

[o&yazma&;z|x|;on/| pma&;ow|wyz|on| www|qw|c|wu|v|my? &eo|Ei| wp|0;|c|i;paw|q|luy? ypcw|luy? ao|ew|ei&u|ywu| wp|cc|i;pp|wi| a&;z|on/| xa|em|u|wp|zu|Ei|wp|zu| tre|ay;or|sm;Ei| q|na|ey? ao|ew|r|s|;p| j|zi|yp|c|ww|ucu| ywu|o&yazma&;z|x|;on|rm| xray:v|iv|ygon/| pm|zwo\| t|j|rit|m|½? t|lum;|t|m|½|ü|xi| [y|v|map|on/|]

4? 3/ pwcpr;ro&yazm t zrm;

0wzew;a&zao m pma&q&rsm;on Zmwaqmirms; \ pwcpr;rsm;u ay:vi
atmi a&zav&ygon/ Zmwaqmitci;ci; qeui bu taw;tac: t, tqrsm;
pwcpr;cursm;u a&zav&ygon/ taw;tac:Ei pwcpr;cutzrm;on pma&o \
oabmxm;u ay:viapontzrm; jzpaomallumi pmzworsm;u pw0ipm;pm
zw&av&ygon/ &euebaq \ pp0wrm;wi vn;pwcpr;r&o&yazm t zrm;on
pmzworsm; \ pwuqaqmirms; ay:Eiygon/

pma&oonwyrwrm wmo&orsm; \ apci;cut &abm(139) a, muEitw
xm;0, jr'uuum, &e a&u&aeygon/ a&jr'e, \ vjca&aqmi&uEiy; &eo
auti'trsm;Ei &iqiwuyjzpyum tEi&&cygon/ xaemu t"uwm0e jzpaom
xm;0, jr'e, \ umu, a&wmoersm;u quvuwm0e, &on/ &eorsm;on
xm;0, jr'u rwucur uveatmiu wucuEion jzpaomallumi uveatmi&m
cc&eapmiqi;ygon/ uveatmi&mte; auti'trsm; vy&m;aeonu awjriae
&aomvn; 0ellu;cy \ tret& wucucir&ay/ auti'trsm;u pwirwucuv
rrw \ wytwi;üae&e treay;xm;on/ &eorsm;vy&m;aeonu jriae&ygv;u
rwucuici;on &eow \ titm;u w;ym;apygon/ xtcg vuawvly&m;ae&aom
pma&o \ &iwi;ü pwcpr;cursm; jzpvmc on/]wuy [on} 0wwi —

]prus, aomjr'u prt titm;puav;Ei r0iEiatmi rno lapmiyg
rnen;/ 0ivmij;vsiu; jyewuxwujzpon/ o&mwi t0ic&yg
onqonEiwpjyieu jrojr'om;rm; pw"mwy;uiym;rnjzp \/
tp;&wpzv;Eiwu pma&owwyrsm;uyg tm;u;r? , lunr? avsmyg;
om;lurnjzp \ / tre [onum; ay;&orsm; tzv, u \ / yeumav
atmu& cuvm;xilu;ay:wi tveououomxi&i; yg;pyr
cyaygayguav; ajymvuEi \ /} (2016? 135)

[pma&o \ pwcpr;r u o&yazma&zxm;on/ auti'tw \ vly&m;rsm;u
o&jci;r&b txurwu&utray;rallumi tcutcaw&y uay:viatmi o&yazm
xm;Eiygon/

pma&oon t z r;cae&aom AvrL;cyarmiarmi wu u, wi&e &r;ijne,
yiavmi;jrr awmiijr'o c&ur;Eicuon/ pma&owwyzu treay;xm;onrm
wyrwrm AvrL;yausmaZmEi AvrL;u;xe;pew awmiijr'or0ir awmii axmiu
azmu&rn/ pma&owwyzon v, a0;jr' ola&mu&vmaom t c g AvrL;yausmaZm on
awmiijr'u or;yuyj; jzpon/ qwc om;aom auti'twyrsm;on AvrL;cy
armiarmi w t m; quvuac:aqmiom;ojzi pma&o \ u, wia& tptp0rsm;
y;uiym;c&ygon/ xtcgpma&owwyzu wmo&ívwvuaom Avatmilu;Ei
pma&ou, wiom;awon/ awqaom t c g Avatmilu;on pma&ou txivae

aomallumi tqc&avon/ pma&oon Avatmilu; \ pum;rm;u em;rvnawmb
&ix&aom cpm;c;uu xwazmajymon/]wuy [on }}pm tywi –

]]u:seawmpwxrmpaewmwp&w, AvcslyausmaZm [m uarmiarmi
vwvmrm p;&r;jy; useawmw tvyvyz tcer&atmi writptp0
awu wuue;c;jy; yuatnizuw, v| useawm pwxrm paew, /
useawmw 'awmiiu 0izvn; rv, b;? rjzpeib;? wpccvly&m;
vur, q&i auti'tawu oway;vuov jzpm;rmr twu&
ycuvrv| AvcslyausmaZm ajymw, qwm useawmum;w, ?
awmiiu0iz r0izqwm? rvy& ao;beb, E, vyjy; ou lu\wi
ajymEirv}} (2016?257)

[o\pwwi; cpm;c;uu o&yazmxm;ygon/ pma&owwyzon Avrl;csly
armiarmitm; u, wiEijci;r&onrm aemu u, r talumi;rm;&alumi;u pma&ou
o&con/ xtc&ewi Avatmilu;on pma&outxivjy; qyaomallumi pma&o
on pwxucupm;&on/ xtcgpm&oon a'goxucjy; rr\cpm;c;uu xwazm
ajymqonu a&zxm;onrm pwcpm;rtm; ay:viapaom o&yazmtzaumi;wpc
jzpon/

pma&owwyzon Avrl;cslyarmiarmi tzu u, wi&e 'w, t lurxyr
cswuluon/ pma&ow wyzwi tzto;o;r yg0iluon/ wyawm? axmuvr;
a&? quo, a&wyEi pma&owwyzyg0ion/ ppaygi;v (400)ceygaom wyzlu;
jzpon/ pma&owwyzon &&om;om; aqmi&uav&aomvn; tcsaomwyz
acgi;aqmirsm;on r&rom;jyionu pma&oo&cygon/ xolo&aomtcg pma&o \
&iwi;r yitexucygawmon/]wuí, &aom ru&nwpaygu }}ow\wi –

]]t'rm useawmw wyawmxrm t'vtaw;tac: &wAvrsl;aw&aev?
tcxaomi;use;oawu Ereí; v| rjy;Eiwm}}

]]b, t&yom; umu, a&? b, &wyz? b, pp0exr;? b, pp&tzr
wyawmewjy; rwucsilub; trsm;p &vuatmurm&w &w? pp&w?
umu, a&wu wyawm;om;awe| ausaueyeyvuw wucucilu
w, qayr, t'g [m cirsm;wv| Avawuce opmrsl;aw&aejy vlayg}}

[vn;aumi;

]]ciAsm;w wyawmu opmapmioluwmr[wb; r&om;w| vyaqmir
awe|wyawmu cpcilunnnjy; 0i;0e;vyaeluw wyawm& tw
vyazmvyzuawtay:rm o&abmallumilumie opmazmujy; ciAsm;w
emrn&atmi? *P&atmi vyaelluwm}}(2015? 174)

[vn;aumi; cpm;c:uuo&yazma&z;xm;on/ pma&oEi vwvya&lu; yr;r\umv
wi touay; wuy0icaomrwaq rom;pci;&i;E;aom Avciarmicpu pma&o
pwx&or\ xwazmcjci;jzpon/ c:wu&mvr;alumi; wpav\muwi &um0uxm;jci;
tE&m , r&aoma'owi acgi;aqmiaomvn; tE&m , &aoma'owiaemucejci; wuy
jzpy;m;aomtcg pma&owwyzu 0;aqmiapci;wu0&con/ xtcgpm&ou yiyi
xwazmajymqionua&; om;onrm pwcpm;ray:viapaom o&yazmtzaumi; jzpyg
on/

4) 4 / taxax o&yazmtz

pma&owlon xm;0,jr\uumu ,&etwu uveatmi&mwiwyq xm;yg
on/ &eo\ tajctaeu apm\un&i; &abrm;on tcejn avu:iaeluygon/
xtajctaewi &abmp;oe;on a&;jr\re;ryav;wp0;Ei vuxy&eci , om;c
on/ xciu pma&o\vuatmur wyprL;uciawmi;í om;jci;jzpon/ pma&o
on ciay;aomwyprL;u tjypay;ontaeji nbuwi vjcia&wm0e ,apon/
&abmp;oe; jye vmaomtcgwi tjypay;rn [lu;0g;xm;on/ ci(5)&uapí &abm
p;oe;jye vmaomtcgwi tjypray;&uEiyu]]wuy [on}} 0w\wi —

&abmp;oe;on jzljzLawmiawmi vylayguuav;r\omjzpbouo
&abm\re;uav;rm tou (14)Ep ausmrsm&[e&\ / &abmuoyi
jzljzL00 ue;rmoepr;ontavsmu &iom;rm;on rEirei;pn;
aEmixm;buo&\ / vuarmi;uav;rm;u v n;ww\ / t&yarmi;
u v n; &abmEirwr;r , r; vuavsm \ /

pma&oon x&abmijevmvi tawmuav; tjypay;vu0;r , [
pwxwi&np;xm;aomvn; puoEpa , muw&yaeon i , EEr\uEm
uav;tpujri&aomtcg tjypray;&uEiatmi&o;ji bmr\rajymb
tomxuc\ } (2016? 147)

[o&yazma&z;xm;yg on/ i , & , aom\ui p0; tluivir , m;Ep\ toiyyiu
o&yazmxm;onrm ay:vivayon/ tjypui;piaom vi ,armiEep0;u lun&i;
tjypray;&uEiaom pma&o\pwcpm;c:uu ay:viatmia&; o&ya&zxm;onrm
pmzwo\pwulu nE;apygon/

pma&oon yiavmi;rwpqi awmiio:cwucluon/ vr;c&wion/
pma&owtztm; eeye&mr xri;[i;rm;jzi{ncon/ xri;wpy? [i;wpy?Ei
i&wo;ajcmurewpye;ueji {ncjci;jzpon/ xri;on aumuni;u0jzpaom
alumiyawe;tceüom pm;í tqiajon/ at;v\irmvon/ pm;&onrmraumi;v
ay/ pma&ow/pm;&aom [i;u]]c:avaomvn;}}0w\wi —

[i;cuqwmuluny0;? pma&owrawz; rjriz;aom [i;cur;pu
qryg? qm;ryg? tom;rygb [i;&uu i&wo;jzicwí a&jzialumxm;
aom [i;csallumcsujzpon/ xri;pm;&onrm tmaicmuoau [i
tqyg [i;csrsm;u om;raomu avEii&wo;pyvu em;xiem;&i;rm;
yom;jy;vi rsuEmwpcv;&vmapí ziyg&iygyom;Eiaom tmeoi
Eijynpon/}} (2016? 96)

[o&yazma&zxm;yg on/ pma&owtztm; apwemEiwncaom xri;Ei [i;on
eeye&m&om;rm;twu taumi;q;jzpon/ o&mwi pma&owtwu pm;aomu&
onrm tvecucvon/ pxri;Eip [i;u pm;aomu&aom eeye&m&om;rm;
b0u u , csipmpwrsm; jzpay:vmapon o&yazm tzwpcjzpon/

lci o;oycu

&euebaq \ pp0w\rm;on vwvya&&jy;aem u a&mipoyersm;ucc umu ,
Erei;on tallumi;rm;ua&zxm;aom 0w\rm;jzpon/ jrermEiia&ori;wi ta&yg
aom tjzptyur;u aemucxm;í a&zxm;aomalumi pmzwor;pw0ipm;aom
0w\rm;jzpon/ pma&ou ,wi awlu\wucupepm;í wuyaygi;rm;pmr jzpay:
vmaom 0w\rm;vn; jzpon/

pma&oon o \ tawtlu\rm;u tao;pwrwwr;wixm;jci;r&ay/ 0w\ tjpz
zew;aom tcgwi rr \ tawtlu\rm;u tao;pwrwwr;wixm;jci;r&b Ev;om;
xwi rwom;xm;onu0w\ tjpz zew;xm;jci;jzpon/ tx;ojzipma&o
awlu\on &m&obm0? vobm0? wuyobm0? wuo&yazma&om;&mwi xr
ay:vivygon/ pma&o \ o&yazm ta&tom; aumi;reralumi pmzwy&oww
pw0ipm;rjzpapygon/ xallumi pma&o \ 0w\rm;u , aewi &uEyxwa0aeluq
jzpon [o; oyrygon/

e*;

jrermori;jzpp0wi pma&oyg0icaom tce;u@u tao;pwrwwr;wixm;
on pp0w\rm;on pmzwy&owu pw0ipm;apygon/ 0w\wp'y' avvm&mwi
pma&o \ o&yazm ta&tom;rm;u avvmjci;on y"meu:aomavvmr\jzpon/
pma&o \ o&yazm tzaumi;reralumi pp0w\rm;ay:vivm&onu awjri&ygon/
o&yazm tz\rm;allumi pmzwy&ow\&ixwi pp0w\rm;u pve;ae&jci;jzpon [
, qrygon/

u:r;u;pm&i;

ausmat^{mi}/ (1991)/ *E0/ 10(' - lur)/ a , mri;l u;pmay/

ciri^{armi}("Ejzl)/ (2004)/ *pum;ajyoabmw&m;? pum;ajytwwynm*(pww-lur) &euewu o v?
jrerm^{pm}Xme/

aZ^{m*}/ (2009)/ &opmay/ oab^m/ &eue? "0pm tywu/

wup;eiri; , a0/ (1985)/ *jrerm^{pm}rwzl* &eue? "0pmay/

wia&? 0;(ygarm u -)/ (2002)/ *pmayEipmayoabmw&m; tzil* &eue? "0pm tywu/

wiw , / (1974)/ *0wa&en; t ajcyl* aomlumpm tywu/

baq(&eue)/ (2015)/ *wu^f , &on/ ru&nwpaygu*(' - lur) &eue/ igwpmaypm tywu/

baq(&eue)/ (2016)/ *wuy[onl*(' - lur) &eue/ igwpmaypm tywu/

baq(&eue)/ (2016)/ *ca^{va}omvn; /*(' - lur) &eue/ igwpmaypm tywu/

r;ajr^{ri}/ (2009)/ *0w&n oabmw&m; 0w&n twwynm* &eue/ a&uaumpmay/

oe; [e⁰/ (1968)/ *jrerm^{um} vay:0w/jzpay: vmyav/vmc:ulwu o vynmya'* ompmapmi? tw
(3)? tyi;(3/) wu o vrsm;yeywu/

&m o b v;w m; u A s m r s m; r 0 a o o r s m;

j r i j r i c i *

p m w r; t u s O;

p p m w r; o n j r e r m * E 0 i p m a y a v m u r u A s m u @ w i y g 0 i a o m j j & m o b v; w m;
u A s m r s m; r 0 a o o r s m; a v v m c s u j p m w r; j z p y g o n / p p m w r; \ & n & , c u r m
& m o b v; w m; u A s m r s m; w i 0 a o o r s m; & y u a z m j y v j c i; j z p y g o n / p p m w r; u
a v v m & m w i & m o b v; w m; u A s m (3) y ' u t a v v m c t j z p o w r w í x; j c m; a o m
t a l u m i; t & m u a y: v i a p & e p p 0 w i j y r a u m i; r s m; u y y; a y; x m; a l u m i; p p 0 w i j y r
q i & m e n; y n m j z i c s O; u y a v v m r n j z p o n / x o a v v m j c i; j z i t j c m; & m o b u A s m
r s m; E i r w a o m t z l c t a l u m i; t & m E i x t a l u m i; t & m u o & y a y: a t m i u n y y;
a y; a o m p p 0 w i j y r w u o & a p l y; a & u A s m w u a v v m v o w t w u v n;
t a x m u t u j y E i y g o n /

e ' q e;

t p 0 a j y m i; v a e w w a o m a v m u o b m 0 u; w i & m o o b m 0 w o n v n; & y w e
r a e a j y m i; v a e a y o n / j r e r m E i i w i a E r; a q m i; & m o 3 y g; [a , b , s t m; j z i o w r w
a o m v n; 1 E p w i & a o m 1 2 v v; w p v E i w p v y i a o m y e; ? a u m i; u i e u w ? a e n
t c s e p o n j z i o b m 0 j c i; r w a j y m i; v j z p y u a e í 1 2 v & m o [o w r w u o n / x o
a j y m i; v a e a o m 1 2 & m o \ t a j c t a e u a & ; p m q w u u A s m p m a y y o P m e t r r s l; r s l; j z i
r w w r; w i a & ; z l c l u a y o n / x t z l w w i v; w m; u A s m w v n; t y g t 0 i j z p o n /
a & ; a [m i; o a w o 0; x e; & p a q m i; w i j y a o m u A s m & y j r (p m y e; & * e *; p m t y w i & m o b
v; w m; u A s m 5 y ' a w u & & m l l r u E i & m o u z l a o m u A s m 3 y ' y g & c a y o n / x 3 y ' r m
q o n & m p m; 0; a t m i u; \ t i; 0 l r u b u 1 2 & m o v; w m; ? 0; , m \ t r & y & l r u b u 1 2 & m o
v; w m; E i t r n r o a & ; p m q w p 0; \ t r & y & l r u b u 1 2 & m o v; w m; w j z p a y o n /
, c p m w r; w i t y c s y a o m r i; ? z a o m p m q w t x i & m; & a o m v; w m; 2 y ' r x; j c m; r & a o m
t z l w u v; w m; r s m; r 0 a o o r s m; a c g i; p 0 j z i w i j y x m; j c i; j z p y g o n /

* a ' g u w m ? w z u y g a r m u ? j r e r m p m X n e ? r E a v; w u o v

1/ pmq w \ t wlyw t u:0;

1/ 1/ q on&mpm; 0;a t m i u; \ t wlyw t u:0;

q on&mpm;0;a t m i u;on 'w , t i;0acw (anmi&r;acw) ou&mZ 1060wi
ee;wu aom o&r [mo [o&b l c paeri; 0;uizi tcr;tem;wi vu , ma&awmib
ay;ji; cc&on/ 1069wi nawmp0u;ri;t m; y*r u p m;apí y*r u o v n v n
un&&mwi vu , ma&awm i uay;vu on/ ou&mZ 1076wi paeri;ew&mpí
om;awm reee;qijz&i b l c we*aEri;ee;wuv i y*ri;Eippjzplu&m y*ri;&erc
on/ x t c g vu , ma&awm i b l c q on&mpm;0;a t m i u;on reee;qijz&iri;x
vma&mucpm;ly; } ompav}} c s t 0 r u b u 12&m o v ;wm;u a&;om; q u o i ;c j c i ;jzpyg
on/¹

1/ 2/ 0; , m \ t wlyw t u:0;

0; , m on ue;abmiacw ip0u;ri;vuxuwi ajrmuee;rz&m; \ t i u;awm
t jz p c e x m ;j c i ;c&on/ b ;awmri;w&m; ee;wucsewi nawmyi;wvri;x t r x r ;
&m ur;a&awm u i &m x ;&&con/ ip0u;ri;vuxuwi nawmri;eey u a&;om;c
on/ b ;awmri;w&m;vu ou&mZ 1144 cEpwi t r &y&r u b u 12&m o v ;wm;u
a&;om; calumi; v ;wm; t q ;ty'wi

}}ou&mZ {u? 'g&m b ue;? pe;ue;pw? xi;cwi

Ow*rme? waygi;vwi? qe;v i w p q , ? ae0 , pae}}

[azmjyxm;on/

x a e m u b ;awmri;w&m; \ om;awm tra&Uri;xwi quvutrxr;on/
x t c e w i u u a c m i ;t&yr q i a w m q u o í &wa&;om;q u o i ;con/ wpze
b ;awmri;w&m;u r w r r u 0 e c e í o a u m i ;j y j c i ;c&jyeon/ pmq on t c i ;a&;
a o m a l u m i t a r m i , m [x i &m ;o v n ;jzpon/ ou&mZ 1147 cwi u , vetep
a&mucygon/²

2/v ;wm;a0g [m&? oabm o b m O E i o r i ;t u:0;

2/ 1/ v ;wm;a0g [m&

j r e r m p m a y e , y , & o c i ;u A s m w p r s ;jzpaom v ;wm;u A s m on p m a y u @ w i
w p a x m i w p a e & m r & y w n c o n / p m q w o n v ;wm;u A s m u t a l u m i ;t & m t r s ;r s ;e i
z i E l o q u o n / v ;wm; [a o m a 0 g [m & u p m a y y n m & i w u t r s ;r s ;z i q c u o n /

¹ ow:arni/ 2002/ 120/

² - , i;- / 173/

v;wm;a0g [m&u a0g [m&vew'ye ur;wi-
]]v;wm; [í ac:a0:a&;om;luonrm y\wo'gon ay:ay:vivi
 &n&nvv tou pí ywü y tu&mu ajcly;v\i (vw)jzpon/
 xvwuyi]0} u]0} 'Ciy\ jw} üvn;]tm} 'C a&muvmojzi
 0oZeoEi (v;wm;) ac:a0: a&;om;luueon³ }}
 [í ziqxm;on/ avoi;twi;0e 0;cse\ , qcurm ay:ay:vivi &n&nvv
 toupí oqjci; [aom oqyu tajcí ziqxm;on/
 u0bm&wur;wir yym;0;au&sm&iu-
]]ay:vixi&m;? &nvsm;jyeu, aom teu u a [maom y\w o'g
 [on rm*"bmomü&on/ v;wm; [aom pum;on yw [aom
 ygVr qi;ou vmaom pum;jzpon/ x\alumí ay:vixi&m;
 &nvsm;jyeu, ?emay&mb, &m? vepm qiií &wzwt yaom
 talumi;uprojzi v;wm; [ac:a0:on⁴ }}
 [í ziqazmjyxm;on/ xziqc&ut& y\won rm*"bmomjzpalumi; ay:vi xi&m;
 aom teu&alumi;? vepmqiií &wzw&aomalumi v;wm; [ac:on/
 jrermmayori;wi-
]]rsupEprw? v\yEpjyuce umvEinr\atmiqí&wq tyao
 tooon 'Crn\ rsupo;rw? v\yo;jyuceumvxuyrom;
 v\ivn; ylw oyi jzpawmon}}⁵
 [í ziqxm;on/ x\alumí v;wm;on ygVEi ouwwr ajymi;vvmjci;jzpalumi;?
 rsupo;rw? v\yo;jyuce llumceEinr\atmi&wq&ojzi v;wm; [ac:alumi; orw
 &on/
 ynm&i to;o;\ ziqc&ur&m; t& v;wm; [onrm y\w [aom pum;r a&lav&sm
 vmon/ y\wr]y} uací vw? vwr v;wm; jzpvmon [qEion/ oq&mwi
 ay:vixi&m;aom tojzi &nvsm;pmqiií emay&mz, aumi;atmi oqtyon [qEiygon/

³ cse? 0;? avoi;twi;0e? 1963? 381-382/

⁴ au&mi? 0; (yym;-) 2016? 307/

⁵ azarmiwi? 0;? 2013? 16/

2/ 2/ v;wm; oabm o b m 0

jrerm payavm uwi ay:xe;caom uAsm t o;o;ü oabm o b m 0won trsk;rsk;
ujym;v u&on/ v;wm;uAsmwi vn; x;jcm;aom oabm o b m 0&on/ v;wm;
a&zlon taumi;t&m trsk;rsk;&on/ &m o b U? be;awmb U? llU U? azmiawmb U?
ycuwib U? b&m;*Pawmb U? tarmi;a&; (37)ci;? wua&; (37)ci;? "m;a&; (37)ci;
ponji trsk;tpm;pvion/ a&zlon mwi &m o o b m 0yw0e;uiEi x;ee;0e;ui
qi&m taumi;t&m rsm; jzpluon/ v;wm; oabm o b m 0u uAsmAEom&ur;wi-

jjrerm b m o ayg&m Puxmouou v;wm;rm tq;rwzetpiyeí
jyvyonuqvon/ a&p;w iav qeontcg ouomatmi jyvy
qeo m;&onu v;wm;ayguon[ac:a0:luon/ v;wm;aygu yrm
avEi tweum a&n mwi c n o m c s y o m o n a e&m r m c i r m a o m l u k;Ei
jrjrmjy/vy cy;v i av vn;ai;ßu;u trwu qiiqewuon/
ai;ßu;q;jyev i wzejy/vy/rjy/vy qewuon/ onu o qii
qewuaom ßu;k;q;on ae&m o l u s w i;u w i;tpjy í v;wm; ayguon
yrm v;wm;[aom uAsm r m vn; at m u y g t w i; tq;pum;rsm;u tpxm;
í a&om;pyq x;&on⁶ }

[í azmjyxm;on/ uAsmAEom&ur;wi azmjyxm;c u t& v;wm;uAsm z l q y o n
avorm;w avu jrpnmo qewuyEi won/ v;wm; a&&mwi yxry'\ tq;
pum;u aem uy'wi tpxm;um z l q a v&a l u m i; azmjyxm;on/

v;wm;uAsm z l q&mwi y'a& (3) y'r trsm;q; (37) y'x z l q a v&onu
awl&on/ a&zlon taumi;t&m u v u í ty'ta&twu ujym;v u&on/

v;wm;uAsm z l q p u; y E i y w o u í v n; p m q r s m; u & i; v i; w i j y c l u o n/ u A s m
om&wo l l* [wi-

(u) yXrtcuü vuma&en;twi; av;v;pyo;y'y;v i t m v y e
um&uü jzpaom t m v y t e u j z i c e p v; u t w i; x m; & r n/

(c) 'w, t c u j z p a o m] 0 r; p m } r m a e m u u j y c a o m p y e n; r s m; t w i; /
av;v;pyuAsm o m j z p a p&r n/

(*) ww, t c u j z p a o m t q; c r m? c e p v; w y' E i c e p v; / o r [w
& p v; w y' t m; j z i & u e ü u o l c s&r n/⁷

[í v;wm;a&zlen;u &i;vi;wi j y x m; o n/

v;wm;uAsm r s m; \ t p c y t q; c y u a v v m l u n v i o a b m o b m 0 (4) r s k; a w l u y g
on/

⁶ wi? 0;? 2013? 42/

⁷ ve;? q&m? 1981? 246/

(1) &wuo| tcn? tcnjci;/

(2) tpc&mwi av;v;y' rsm;u av;-ig;-ajcmu y'jzi tpcsum tq;csu cepv;
y'? &pv; y' rsm;jzi tq; cav&jci;/

(3) yxry' \ tq;cs pum;v;u aemuy' \ tpcpum;v;tjzp a&zlav&jci;/

(4) ay:vi&n vsm; xi&m;aom ywojzi (3) rlwmEi txu oq&jci; wijzpyg
on/

v;wm;uAsm a&zU&mwi &m oobm0 yw0e;u:italumi;Ei b&iri;jrw \
be;awm talumi;? ||rUbtalumi;? xuawmr tcr;tem;rsm; \ cr;em;xn0gy talumi;
wu a&zUxm;í &mZ0o0m Pu ay;pr;on/ &m oobm0 yw0e;u:italumi;rsm;r
jrerma&ajrobm0 awmawmiw \ &motvujriui;? z:yiaomye;? xe;aom euw
wm&mEi jrermw \ &&m"av t& u:yaom yawm talumi;wu A[owjzpz, awl&
on/ tarmi;a&? "m;a&? wua& v;wm;rsm;rmvn; A[owym;apon tjiyi a&jrerm
wyrwm \ pr;&nxujrwru o&Eion/ v;wm;uAsmon cr;em;jrijrwaom
tcr;tem;rsm;wi oqav&aom oabmu awUiygon/

2/ 3/v;wm;ori; talumi;

v;wm;uAsmu awmiiacwwi tapmq;a&zUcalumi; awl&&on/ awmiiacw
jyne0a';u; a&zUcaom &m obUv;wm;3y'on tapmq;yijzpon/ a&a[mi;
oawo0;xe;&u]]uAsm&yirpmye;&* (e*)wi v;wm;pmqe0a';u awmiiacw
e0a';u;vu&mtjzp ovrwxm;yg on/⁸ pmqyc;rz&m;onvn; v;wm;a&zUc
alumi;u xpmty \ tce;zi e'ge;wi⁹ azmjycygon/

anmi&r;acwpmq &iu&0uon y*bUv;wm;u a&zUcalumi; jrermpay
ori;wi azmjyxm;on/ &iu&0uon ti;0aⅇ&i omveri;w&m;bu; vuxu
u ay:aygucon/¹⁰ olaom &iu&0u \ y*v;wm;u rawl&ay/ 0;atmiu; \
q, Ep&m obU v;wm;on we*aEri;vuxu (1076-1095)wi a&zUcici;jzpon/

ue;abmiacwo a&muaom tcg v;wm;uAsmquvu xe;um;vmon/
pEau sm o0;oon ue;abmir*v m v;wm; [aom be;awm bUv;wm;u zUqcon/
qijzL&i vuxuwi pmqyc;a&awmion &wema&azmiawm bUv;wm;u zUqon/
qijzL&io*w&o peqi;&mrtjyewi &wema&azmiawmq&m trnropmqu v;wm;
wpy' a&zUcon/

⁸ xe;& (a&a[mi;oawo)? 2014? 197/

⁹ -, i;-/

¹⁰ azarmiwi? 0;? 2003? 171/

O; , mon q , Ep&mobv;wm;? Z0Z;azmiawmbv;wm;wu zUqcon/
jrermptm neaygi;ur; ww , wwi O; , m \ v;wm;u wp&owpy'Ei 12y'¹¹
azmjyxm;on/ q , Ep&mozlaygi;cy¹² Ei a&a [mi;oawo O;xe;& \ uAsm&y\rk
pmye;&*wir e'ge; (5)y'tygt0i (17)y'¹³ &alumi;azmjyxm;on/ tr&y&lr\ub
rsm;yq0ion/

b;awmb&m;vuxu (1170)cEpwi ri;e0a';('w , e0a');¹⁴ on "m;a&;(37)
ci; talumi;u v;wm;zUqxm;on/

ri;wiyitrw r[m"ro!uon tarmi;a&; (37)ci; v;wm;u v n; a&;zlc
on/ tarmi;va&;jy [eEi jri;p; [eu zUqxm;ci;jzpon/

oaygri;vuxu rEav;acwwi jrycuwi v;wm;rsm; ay:xuvmon/ oayg
ri; \ om;awmbu; a&u , awmbu; jrycuwi r*v m v;wm;u ui;0eri;βu;u 1241
cEpwi a&;zUcon/ oaygri;or;awm xypjrwz&m;vw jrycuwi r*v m v;wm;u
ri;ow;o"rmr [m ouawm&non 1243 cEpwi a&;zUcon/

oaygri;vuxurmyi xypjrwz&m;av; jrycuwir*v m v;wm;Ei xypjrw
z&m;ax; jrycuwir*v m v;wm;wu 0urpwir\Upm;ri;βu; ri;xir [mpnou a&;zU
con/ 0urpwe0a';on be;awmbv;wm; (3)y'Ei awmiwi;βu;lr\ubU &mZ0o
v;wm; (3)y'wu a&;zUcon/

v;wm;uAsmrsm;on awmiacwwi pwiay:ayguum ue;abmiacwaEmi;
yi;t x a&;zUcalumi; aw\&on/ pmq trnro v;wm;rsm; aw\&ouo pmu , raw\&
aom v;wm;rsm;u v n; aw\&&on/

3/ &mobv;wm;rsm;r 0ao orsm;

3/ 1/ &mobuAsm \ 0ao orsm;

tcewlon &ywe\raeb a&Uvsm;ajym;vaewwon obm0&ontwi;
&owonvn; tirajym;vaeon/ omreqv\i avmuü (3)&mo&on [ajymv\i
&aomvn; 1Epv\i 12v &í 12&mo [vn; tao;powrweion/

&moEi ywou í

]]we*aE*v ae \ om;&mvr;twi; wpywjynatmi vnywom;
vmaeaom tceumvu ty'tpcjcm;owrwxm;aom tceyi;jzpon/

¹¹ jrermptm t z\? 1992? 58-65

¹² vore? 1962? 15/

¹³ xe;& (a&a [mi;oawo)? 2014? 215-229/

¹⁴ jrermptm t z\? 1992? 65-68/

aewpyw ywcse umv tyi;tjcm;u 12yi; cpwrwom;í q , Ep&m o
(or [w) q , Epv [ovrw cluon/}}¹⁵

[í azmjyxm;yg on/ jrermq , Epv q , Ep&m oon wpvEi wpv wp&m oEi
wp&m o rwnb ajymi;vvu&yg on/ xq , Ep&m o talumi;u rrEpou&m uAsm
yo@mejzi pmzlcu&m av;cs;? v;wm;? aw;xy? tci; ponjzi &m obUuAsmrsm;
ay:aygucon/ &m obUuAsmrsm; \ oabmobm0Ei ywou í

]]&m otaictae talumi;t&mrsm;wi &m otvupe;Ei , Olyi om;vmae
aom ll*K [? wm&m? ll u , euwrsm;? ae? vw \ om;vm xu0i&m vr;allumi;?
&m otvu z;yiyo;iaom ye;rersm;? &m otvu ci;ui;iaom &m o
yawmrsm;u yg0iatmizUq& avon/}}¹⁶

[í relqxm;yg on/ xalumi &m obUuAsmrsm; \ oabmobm0wi &m oajymi;wi;
ajymi;vaeon euwwm&mrsm;? ye;rs;? B oumoavmu? owavmuw \ talumi; t&m
rsm;? &m otavsmu ui;yluon yawmrsm;ponwyg0iatmi zUqou;av&lu ygon/

xo &m obUuAsmrsm; \ oabmobm0wi euwwm&m? y? ye; pontcursm;
yg0ir wnon [a, b, s ajym í&aomvn; pmqw \ cpm;rtavsmu zUElyci;
yg0ion talumi;tciuci; umjcm;aeluygon/ , cpmwr;wi wijyrn&m obU
v;wm; uAsm2y'rm llruU? &m obU? zUEon uAsmyoPeci; wnuaomvn; yg0i
on talumi;tciuci; ujym;rrsm;&ayon/ llruUv;wm;jzpí wnrrsm;vn;&ay
on/ xwnr ujym;r rsm;ay: rwn í x;jcm;rrsm;u wijyrnjzpygon/

3/ 2/ pp0wijyy 0ao o rsm;

jrUawmEi &m outajccí zUqaomv;wm;uAsmwwi tjcm;&m obEirwao m
pp0 wijyrrsm;&onuawEion/ , i;wrm e'ge;tzrsm;yg&jci;? &m ozqr x;jcm;
c:ur; yg&jci;wjzpon/

3/ 2/ 1/ e'ge; t z pp0wijyy

jrUawmEi &m outajccí zUqaomv;wm;uAsmwwi yg0iaome'ge;wwi
b&m;&iEi tycyaomb&iw \ be;awmbrsm;? jrUawmbrsm;xnoi;zqav&luon/

¹⁵ jrermpt z? 1970/ 78/

¹⁶ cr;jr? O;? 1965? e'ge;/

3/ 2/ 1/ 1/ be;awmbUrm; av vmcsu

&mobuAsmrm; \ t0;tpjzpaom &i0wrauSm \ awmvM;Ei &ite;n \ *gxM
60 yllwWi b&m;a'opm&uawmryutaiccí zUqí b&m;&i \ be;awmu xnoi;
xm;aomvn; &mobuAsmwwi xnoi;ren;yg;onu awU&on/

qon&mpm;0;atmiu; ti;0lrUbuV;wm;wi b&m;&i \ be;awmu

]]oajyríL? Zrla&mure;? jra&mixe;om; p ule;xyaA? aomi;&yajrxu?
av;axr*0mP? av;weopm? ig;jzrm&atmi? ajcmua&min;vi;
wwci;om;? &i&i b&m; o;vjrm;}}¹⁷

[zUqxM;yg on/ jrwpmb&m;&ion Zrl'ygvu, m awmiule;wi rm&ig;yg;
atmiawmrí r*0mP(4)yg; &&cy? a&mijcnawmajcmuo, xe;awmucyu zUqxM;yg
on/

0; , m \ v;wm;wi

]]aomi;ajrv, &? rZa'o? aomVowi? vbapmx;? be;u;uie;
yvlee;xu? ig;ce;rm&pp? &etnpu? y, vpowoi? aumi;uib0*?
atmuxurui;? vi;vi;xixi? ojriawmr? cyor;otm;? arsmg;
u, , ? yawmron/}}¹⁸

[í zUqxM;yg on/ xtzlwi rm&ig;yg;u atmiawmry ow0gcyor;u u, wi
awmrywu zUqxM;on/ b&m;&i \ *Pawmuyí tao;pwly; zqxM;ru awUei
on/

v;wm;wwi pmqW a&zUcaom tceumvü typ;aom b&iw \ be;awm
uvn; zUqxM;uon/ 0;atmiu; \ v;wm;wi

]]xwcí;ajrr;? xe;&uU;r? wec;t mPm? ynmvu&; Ev;wrw?
veU;jrwvsu? aqmi;rw&yjrl? &mx;qw? rnorc? rae&wn?
0;pe;xyzsm;? apmw&m;v? wi;um;or; , ? p;awmru? qijzLpum?
&wem on? a&muvmv(i)}}¹⁹

[í zUqxM;yg on/ xtzlwi xacwu tycyaom we*aEri; \ ynm0mPu;rm;
yu]]ynmvu&;}} pwoabmxM;jrijrwyu]]Ev;wrw}}? ri;w&mw/vma&mu cpm;&
yu]]&mx;q}} [aomto;wUjzi upvply; tvumajrmuatmi a&zUxm;on/ b&i
ri;w&m; \ be;wec;vn; ay:vixi&m;vmygon/

0; , m \ v;wm;uAsmwi b;awmb&m; \ be;awmu

¹⁷ atmiu;? 0;? 2014? 208/

¹⁸ atmiu;? 0;? 2014? 208/

¹⁹ , m? 0;? 2014? 215/

]]ceoi;x;wp&m? awZmwñxe0i;? av;ule;ci;? be;wec;awaZm?
be;awmae0e;? av;ule;oci? apmewo|i}}²⁰

[í zqxm;on/ xtzwi b&i\ be;awmu ule;av;ule; \ t&ioci[
upv;pxrpmz qxm;on/

xuo b&m;i\ be;awm? &ib&i\ be;awmu &mobuAsmwwi xñí
zq&jci;rm ñru taicwní zqjci;jzpEion/ ti;0acway: wwm;0;on r*v
apw armue; 2apmiwi plu0Vm? Zrl'ygvu smawmiue; b&m;i? ponji zqly;r
zlvon wwm;0;t&yEi b&m;wnyu zqcon/ x v;wm;wwi ta&u;
ont&mu wzn;jn;jci; e;atmi zqjci;rm ti;0acw pmqw\ en;u, í zq
jci;jzpEiayon/

3/ 2/ 1/ 2/ ñruawmbu

&mobuAsmwwi pmqw aexiuivnaom? trxr;aom aejnawm? ñruawm
rsm;u xnoi;zqr en;yg;uaomvn; v;wm;uAsmwwi jynbu ñrubrsm; xnoi;
a&zcl uayon/ 0;atmiu; \ &mobu v;wm;uAsm e'ge;wi

]]omoeu? ocsmrsm;ajrmi? Epig;axmiw? apatmiwn&m? Asm'wrmom;
&wemy&? a&ti;0on jynrsm;xw ñuie;wnav? yive;pnon}}²¹

[í zqxm;on/ xtzwi ti;0ñruon b&m;i\ Asm'waciy? tjcm;jynw\
txwtxyjzpywu zqxm;on/

0; , m \ v;wm;uAsmwi jrwpmb&m;i wr'ywi;o <ucsvmly; pEu;eUom
aumi;awm&mü owi;o;y? ly;v|i opmawmixyEi erEmjrpü puawm&m 2q
c;xm;cywu zqcon/ xaemu b&m;i oemy&Ewi;o <uvmly; wellunawmir
t&rEey& y*jynjzpvmrñ Asm'wacawmryu zqxm;ly;r pmqzvaom tr&y&
aejnawmu

]]rzvpea&mi? a&awmiri;p? wr'y? wi;cur[? ye; , jripi;? ppui;
ti;0? &ua&n jrva&miajy; rEav;u ay;a&Asm'w}}²²

]]r [m tr&? y&a&jyn? omarmponon? ewjynwn , ;rm; b , wnav;}}²³

[í vn;aumi;?

²⁰ , m? 0;? 2014? 217/

²¹ atmiu;? 0;? 2014? 209/

²² , m? 0;? 2014? 216/

²³ - , i;- ?/

]]a&ajr awmuxe? wm0weo? Ei;cewr? pnyivon? b&m;omoem?
xutmuu? pEma&v? xe;0i;yo tr&y&m? a&jynom}}²⁴

[ívn;aumi; zlxm;ygón/ xtzwí tr&y&aejynawm\ om, mpnum;yu
wm0womewjynEi ci;Ei;wijxm;on/ pmq0; , mon zUvaom tr&y&aejynawm
twu jrwpmb&m;&iucsz;aom xi&m;aomae&mrm; Asm'way;acicaom ae&mrm;u
a&0;pm zlxm;on/ xozlxm;ralumi tr&y& aejynawm\ om, mpnum;yrn
yí xi&m;vmon/

pmqw\ v;wm;uAsmrm;wi b&m;&ibe;wec;? b&ibe;awmbUrm;? jynbU
nrUrm; xnoi;zlxm;ji;rm nrUutajccí zUqaom &mobUuAsmjzpaomallumi [
 , qEion/ xtZrm;on armue;wwi ygav&aom zU[er;? {ci;wwi ygav&
aom zU[er;Ei wnaeon [, qEiygon/ tqygtbUrm;u e'ge; y'rm;zi
o;jcm;zlxm;ji;jzpon/ xoe'ge;y'rm;zi xnoi;zlxm;ji;on v;wm; uAsm \
0aoowp&yyijzpon/

3/ 2/ 2/ 12&mo t zU pp0wijyy

&mobUv;wm;uAsmwwi wijyxx;jcm;r&onuawU&on/ pmqw\ wijyyu
cjc;wijyom;ygrn/

3/ 2/ 2/ 1/ 0;atmiu; \ v;wm;uAsmr pp0wijyy

pmq0;atmiu; \ v;wm;uAsmon (ti;0nrU \ 12&moysm;) 12&owi yiaom
ye;rm;? xe;vi;aom euwrsm;Ei ponwu zlxm;on/

pmq\ (wec;vr waygi;v tx) wijyrwi]ompav} [tpcxm;ly;]yivi;
pnon a&jyna&0 ee;wnav;} [tq;cjzittq;ow zlxm;onu awU& on/

wpy'ci; \ tpü]omavp} [tpczlvuonEi xv\ om, my nrU\ om, m
yu ocipway:vmatmi qaqmidxm;Eiayon/ wec;vblwi ompav [
tpc;ly;aemu

]]u:uoa&be;we;? aeE , xe;í? t ule;ule;ewru#rwom;? rEwwom?
pay&m&on? &wemy& a&0nrUu;? &yU;ompn? atmicmlyn}}²⁵

[quí zlxm;&m acwtququtycslycaom b&iw\ be;awmEi? ti;0jynbu; \
om, mpnum; txwtxyjzpyu u;pvppm wijxm;onu awU&ygon/

²⁴ , m? 0;? 2014?217/

²⁵ atmiu;? 0;? 2014? 209/

xaemu &mobzll&;zlp0 euw? &mo? ye;wlu tptp0wu: u:pv:ppm zllq
xm;on/

xaemu &mozlu zllq&m wp&moci; ti;0aejynawmü yawmu:;yyu jri
a, miivmatmi o&yazm zllqxm;on/ annia&oe;y ui;yyu

]]rllv&m? ye;wumu jrlwmwaumi;? roi;awmi;0, oe;avmi;a&jyn?
jzll;rxnvu? ywvunmallu? &iawmaru? &aocci? ylu; , ií?
llunvio'g? jir;allumi;&mon/}}²⁶

[í zllqxm;yg on/ xtzlwi anni&r;acw ti;0aejynawmu;\ annia& oe;
yawmu:;yyu o&yay:apaom pum;v;wjizllq&m jria, miivmaply;v(i yui;yon
&n&, cuuyg o&vmapon/ pmqon llrbu? yopm wp&moci; ui;yao
yawmrsm;u jynpatmizllqxm;Eiru awll&&on/

xaemu ty'\ tq;tcwi;wi]]yivi;pn on a&jyna&0ee;wnav}} [í
cxm;onu awllEion/ xtq;cwu llunv(i vn; llrblyoao tq;crsm;
yijzpon/

pmq 0;atmiu;\ pp0wijyywi llru\om, myEi tpcí llru\om, my
pnun;y jziom tq;cxm;í tp tv, tq; nnwaom wijryijzpon/

3/ 2/ 2/ 2/ 0; , m\ v;wm;u smr pp0wijyy

pmq0; , m\ v;wm;u sm on b;awmb&m;vuxuwi ay:ayguaom uAsmjzpí
tr&y&aejynawmu zllqxm;ji;izpon/ pmqon e'ge; 5 y'wi b&m;&iEi b&i
be;awm? tr&y&llrawmbur;u zllqxm;on/ wp&moci;zllq&mwi vEiae, O?
euw? &mo? tceu ovrwaom wm&m? ye;? yawm? aeri;\ vnvnEe;wll pvipm
zllqxm;on uawllEion/ vEi , Oaom euw? aeEi , Oaom euw wlu azmij&mü
wec;vwi xe;vi;yu

]]t ó0eü , ? aeEiq, vlu? ni, plw? aomwmvEi? vnlurcw
au0#wm&m , Oly(i v m om;}}²⁷

[í vn;aumi;? uqevwi xe;vi;yu

]]jynw0i;0g? 0omcgEi? pEmv0e;? wly(i xe;aom? av;ule;vnyw?
[wmm&m? xywyg í? aeromo , ll u , lluwum? o& , mEi}}²⁸

[í vn;aumi; ponji vp0tvuijnpatmi zllqxm;on/ ae\vnvnom;
vmEe;u vn; wp&moci;azmij&mwi 0gqvü vnvnEe;u

²⁶ atmiu;? O;? 2014? 210/

²⁷ , m? O;? 2014? 218/

²⁸ , m? O;? 2014? 219/

]]puaeEpoē;? ue;ce;oc_{sm}? pe;ygi;ao_{mi};? cīaygi;t n}}²⁹
 [í v n; a u m i;? ewawm v & m o \ v n v n E e; u
]]puaeoc_{sm}? & m o uae? x u p i g; a o m i? oe;aygi;Ep v}}³⁰
 [í v n; a u m i; z l q x m; o n/ wpze aetce ntce u z l q & m ü u qev & m o \ ae?
 n em & u
]]em & ae 0 , ? o; q , t a u _{sm}? Epcay: v u? n 0 a o m Ep q , ? & p c u , \ }}³¹
 [í v n; a u m i;? 0 g q v \ a e n em & u
]]on & m o w i em & ae u o; q , q & i? pe;yaicm uc? < u i; pem &? n 0 z
 paom? rn t a & Ep q , a v; }}³²
 [í v n; a u m i;? re;wncē z 0 g; o w r w y u azm j y & m ü o w i; u w v \ o w r w y u
]]r s u & i e 0 & w? v n v n v i v _{sm};? o; z 0 g; []}}³³
 [í v n; a u m i;? ewawm v \ o w r w y u
]]re;wn & u m;? i g; z 0 g; }}³⁴
 [í v n; a u m i; z l q x m; o n/
 x t j y i a r m i r , w \ t c p u
 p v _{sm}; y w & p? q , a u _{sm} E p u? t c p u r;? q i q i w; í? & c; 0; y e? & i y i x w i³⁵
 [í v n; a u m i;? t v r; " m w c & a o m a z m u m a 0; a e a o m a r m i r , w t v r; c p m; a e & y u
 v r; y v a z m u r , 0 r; e/ E i; z y w v n a 0/ o n; a u v w e c r;? a r m r v r; ³⁶
 [í v n; a u m i; p o n j z i a & z l x m; o n/ x t z w w i a r m i r , w p q y e a c y? t v r;
 ' P c p m; & y w r m a y: v i a e a y o n/
 p m q 0; , m \ & m o b u v; w m; u A s m z l q r w i v E i a e w \ p e; , 0 e u w? a e o m; & m
 v r; a u m i;? a e \ v n v n E e;? a e n em & o w r w r? a e r e; w n c ē z 0 g; o w r w r w u
 j n p p m w i y x m; E i o n r m v; w m; u A s m \ 0 a o o w p c y i j z p o n/ x o a o m t c u
 p v i a t m i & m o b u A s m w w i z l q a v r & u a y/ x o w i y r o n p m q w \ u r; * e
 A [o w j n p r t a y: r w n a e o n [, q r y g o n/

²⁹ , m? 0;? 2014? 220/

³⁰ - , i; - ? 225/

³¹ - , i; - ? 219/

³² - , i; - ? 220/

³³ - , i; - ? 223/

³⁴ - , i; - ? 225/

³⁵ - , i; - ? 220/

³⁶ - , i; - ? 225/

v;wm; 2y' \ pp0wiiyyu avvmlunv'i pmq0;atmiu;on wp&moci;
 rrUbxn'í rrU bUEi &mobu r'watmi zUqx;on/ &mobwi 0; , m \ v;wm;uo
 talumi;tcuijynpr&ay/ oaoxawu ti;0rrU \ om , mpnum;yu jrionatmi
 zUqEipr;&ayon/

pmq0; , m \ v;wm;wi wp&moci; &mobu tajtaew/ pviatmi zUqx;
 ly; rrUawm \ om , mpnum;yu 0;pm;ay;í zUqx;m;ji;r&ay/ oaoymawmrm;u
 azmijryzi tr&y&jyn \ om , myu cere; , v'i &Eiayon/ oao pmqon e'ge;
 5y'wi tr&y&aejynawmEi b&i be;awwu ay:viatmi zUqx;m;Eionu awl&
 ygon/

lci o;oycu

ajymi;vwwaom avmuobm0twi; &ow \ jzpy:uajymi;vrwu zUq
 x;m;aom v;wm;uAsmr 0aoowu avvwmijyx;m;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ p v;wm;
 uAsmwon &mobuzponomru rrUbv jzp'í rrUba&m &moblyg avv m wijyx;m;
 ygon/

qon&mpm; 0;atmiu; \ v;wm;uAsmr 0aoou xwunv'i e'ge;? pmu , ?
 e*;wji zi zUqx;m;on/ e'ge;wi b&m;&i*Pawm? tycyonb&i be;awm? tzlc
 rrUbwzUqx;m;on/ 12&mobwi rrU \ om , myEitpc'í rrU \ om , myEi tq;ow
 zUqx;m;ly; euw? lu , wm&? ye;wtalumi;uygzUq'í ti;0rrU \ yawm ui;yywu
 jynpatmi zUqx;m;ygon/ e*;y'wivn; b&i \ be;awm? ti;0rrU om , mpnum;
 yu zUqx;m;ygon/ p'v , ?q; nnwatmi zUqx;m;Eir? rrUbyoatmizUq
 x;m;ruawl&&on/ anmi&r;acwyawmrm; ui;yruavvmvo? v;wm;uAsm \ pp0
 wiiyywu avv mowtwu taxmutu jyiEiayon/

0; , m \ v;wm;u avvmlunv'i e'ge;wi b&m;&i \ *Pawm? b&i \ be;awm
 wEi jrermEiio b&m;&iomoem pwia&m u&vmaom ausmi;awm&m? a&puawm
 Epq talumi;? b&m;&i Asm'wac'caomae&mwu tu0;rm;jzi Epyatmi wijyzU
 qx;m;on/ xaemu tr&y&rrUbu a&zUcon/ 12&mobu aenxe;vi;aom
 euw? wm&mae \ vnvnom;vmEe;? ae n em& cjc;m;y? re;wnce? z0g;owrwy
 ui;yaomywu A[owElpypm zUqwiyx;m;on/ x v;wm;uAsmr 0aoowu
 avvmlunv'i rrUbwaw&onxu &moEiywowaom tajtae? b&m;&i omoem
 xe;um;caomae&mrm; ponwu avv m vlowtwu taxmutu jyiEiayon/

e*;

**ppmwr;on &mobv;wm;uAsmwr 0aowu avvmwijxm;aom ppmwr;
jzpon/ tcsewtwi; avvmxm;í vtycursm; &Eiayon/ olaom &mobv; rrbv;
uAsmu avvmvowEi jrermpaytwu taxmutujyEiviyi ppmwr;jypo
taeji aueyaerrm treyijzpon/**

ur;u;pm&i;

**au&i? 0; (yym;-) (2016)l u0bm&wur; ('w , t!ur)? &eue? pwu;c!cyEywul
ce? 0;? avoi;twi;0e? 1963l a0g[m&vew'yeur;? &eue? [om0wyEywul
cr;jr? 0;? wn;? 1965l 0; , m l q , Ep&mob/v;wm;? &eue? [om0wyEywul
wi? 0;? y*0eaxmuri; 2013l uAsmAEom&ur;? &eue? pwu;c!cyEywul
xe;& (a&a [mi;oawo)? 2014l uAsm&yir/pmye;&* (e*)? &eue? &mjynpm tywul
azarmiwi? 0;? 2003l jrermmayori;? (y0rt!ur)? &eue? o'lr!iyEywul
jrermptz? 1970l jyermt b''ne? &eue? pmayArmeyEywul
jrermptz? 1992? jrermptneaygi;ur;-ww, tw('w , t!ur)? &eue?
ve;? q&m? 1981l uAsm&wo/*? [/ &eue? o& , mowi;pmwul
vore?(wn;jzwo) 1962l q , Ep&m ozaygi;c!y/ &eue? [om0wyEywul
ow!armi/ 2002l pmqawmr; twyww/ &eue? &mjynpm tywul**

rEav;lr& vurvyie;rm; avvmcsu

Orn*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on rEav;lr& vurvyie;tcu avvmxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/
ppmwr; \&n&,csm aysuu,ve;yg;jzpaom vyie;rm;tallumi;Ei
r;c;rxuao pu^{1/2}vyie;twu taxmutu jyiapvji;jzpygon/ ppmwr;u
avvm&mw i vurvyie; ig;cu tavvmctjzpxm;um vyie;vyytqiqiu
avvmaomen;jzi avvmxm;yg on/ ppmwr;on u;u, ,lunr? ,Oau;ru
tajcaom vyie;rm;tallumi;rwpqi ori;tp0tvmuyg o&Eiygon/
aomcsua0g [m&rm;/ vurvyie;? a&q i;? x;? a&x;? x;jzL? ur0g? a&c:nx;

e'ge;

b&m;iu,awmwi Asm'way;caom? bomomoemxe;um;aom? ,Oau;r
tartEpaygrsm;aomlr on rEav;lr&jzpon/ obm0yw0e;u:i vyaom? rrrlr
c:pciw, wmpw B u;rm;aom orsm;aexiaom lr&vn;jzpon/ a&acwtququ
vurvyie;xe;um;aom lr&vn;jzpon/ ye; (10)rsk;wiyg0iaom vurvyie;rm;
omru u;u, ,lunr? ,Oau;rtEynmu tajcaom vurvyie;rm;vn; xe;um;
on/ xvurvyie;rm;r a&q i;vyie;? a&x;vyie;? x;jzLvyie;? ur0gvyie;Ei
a&c:nx; vyie;rm;u avvmwiyxm;yg on/

1/ pmaya vvmqe;ppcsu

vurynmrm;u avvm&mw i jyvyytqiqi? tac:ta0:? pum;t o;tEe;
,Oau;rjy ,*wu avvmqe;pprygon/

2/ oawoear;ce;Ei jy ó em tcsu

ppmwr;jyp&mw i u,wiui;q i;avvmcygon/ xoavvm&mw i tcsuao
vyie;&irm;on &i;vi;jyovpw en;yg;yg on/ xoljzp&jci;rm vyie;&irm;
twu vyie;ce? 0iaicerm; xr;aqmi&rnu p;&raomallumi;jzpygon/ tcsuao
vyie;&irm;rm vyie;vnyw&ecucojzi vyie;vyaomae&m? ypn;tcutcrsm;Ei
&iqiaellu&yg on/

* a'guwm? uxu? jrermxmne? rEav;wuov

3/ rEav;rrori;tu0;

yíro*g, emwiri;jzpaom ri;we;ri;w&m;u;on tr&y&x;ee;u aeniawm
y*ri;xr&, con/] touu, &napv re;awmi&yc}} [aom wabmionvn;
ay:xuvmygon/ xalumi ri;we;ri;u;on b;awmab;awmrsm;uo rrup
ee;opwn&e qEawm&con/

ee;oprrupu ww, jrermEiiawmu wnaxmicaom tavmi;ri; w&m;u;
uoyi &wemoC a&brwiwnvcon/ wi;a&? jyna&? tajtaersm;t&
rEav;rrut&ywi rrupwn&e talumi;wuqi ajymi;pawmrcon/ olaom rrup
wnawmrjci;? &[e? yPm; jyno tclwu ruuEpouluay/ xolaom ta&alumi
ri;we;ri;w&m;u;on rEav;rrupwn&e treu 1856 cEpwi crwcalumi;u -

*&[e;ynm&? ynm&w oi;pmu/ 1218-c? jymovqe; 4 &uae/ n/vmc
reee;awm pEaqmiawmwi oawmqi a&jynv, ty ri;voco?
&wemavum;awmrl; ri;vo&aZ, owu bwavmuonumv t&i
b0&i ri;w&m;u;b&m; 0r;ajrmuawmrí rrutcr;tem;? p&ici; p&iz, /
rsm;u/ ta[mí;pmwr;ur;*eEitn ly;ajyatmi p&i&rn treawm&on/
treawmu/vn; oawmqi a&jynv, ty ri;voco/ bw&rn/*

[treawmc:rwcygon/ ynm&rsm;Eivn; aq;aE;wiyicygon/

ri;we;ri;u;on twwwabmirsm;t&aomvn;aumi;? wi;a&;jyna&rsm;
t&aomvn;? &wemyrEav;rrup ee;opawmawmr&e jrermou&mZ 1218-cEp?
wywvqe; 7 &u? paeaewi treawmxwjecon/ xaewiyi rrup ee;op
wnrnae&mwi q&mawm? oCawmrsm;t; yizwí y&ww&m;emcygon/ rrup
wn&mu 0;aqmiorsm;r; rau;rrupm;ri;u; r[mri;vo[o? jrawmirupm;ri;u;
ow;ri;u; r[mri;vausmo tp&owjzpon/

ri;we;ri;u;on 1221-cEp? uqevqe; 13&u n0 2cuw;ausm (14)&u
we*aEae t0iwi tajrmuolum; tcgawmEi

1/ a&rruawm;u;

2/ us;awm

3/ r[mavmur&Zeapwawm

4/ orawm

5/ r[mtwva0, eau sm i;awm

6/ y#uwwuawm

7/ o"rmZ&yawm ¹

wu wplyiwn; twjrpui;w; aqmi&uapcygon/

||r\\awmav;r;uEm? "mwwcg;av;&ywi jy ó 'wirsm;puxon/ xjy ó 'wirsm
bcepqí? rwwcg; 8 &ywi jy ó 'big;qi? axmijy;av;c? jyí , 32 cwwi
jy ó 'b ig;qipvyaqmion/ wcg;awmrsm; wixrwonaewi wcg;awmrsm;u
tr&yⅇawm \ trnrsm;u rac:apb urn;opom ac:a0:apygon/ ee;||rU½; \
||rU0i||rUxuwcg; 12&y&ygon/ wcg; 12&y trnawmwu wcg;ayguwpcí;p \
t0ivuo? txuvu, mbu r;untwwwi;u;rsm;te;ü twyvio;qicí
armue;wicon/

ri;we;ri;w&m;u;on A [&pnawm? yviawm u;&y? reee;awm topwu
topaqmu vyly;aem u av;ule;at miajree;||rUawm? jree;pau smaⅇawmwu urn;
owrwy;aem u rz&m;acg i u;Ei tw ee;or;yobicum py , awm rcon/

rEav; &wemy||rUop rwnaqmuruyi qijzl&iri;w&m; , ;' , m;u Eicp0
u ac:aqmicaom , ;' , m;oye; vurynm&irsm;? tr&y&acw b;awm ri;w&m;ae&m
c;xm;caom vurynm&irsm;alumí vurympwixe;um xtxr jrermAoum ynm
&irsm;u ajryqcl uon/ ajryrsm;wi a&u k;owe , ajr tuursm;yg&ygon/
ee;awm u; \ jyt;rsm;Eiwi;wm í jyuursm;owrwcon/ ||rUjyia v;&ywi tr0i;
rsm; tuucay;ly;aem u 1224-c waygi;vjynausm 4&uaewi &yuu(0i;) trnrsm;
ay;con/

]]0i;}} [onrm wpt r? wplc? wpci;u qvjci;r [wyg/ wpjyywvn twi;
wi wn&aom &yuaetrsm;u qvjci;jzpon/ , aewi rEav;o? rEav;om;rsm;
Epoupvr;pm ac:a0:o;paeao m to;jzpon/ x0i;trnemrrsm; avvm&mwí

- 1/ tE , awmrsm;aexijci;u tpjy í ac:aom trn
- 2/ ri;rxr;rsm;taexijci;u tpjy í ac:aom trn
- 3/ vyie;u tpjy í ac:aom trn

[awU&&on/

x trnrsm;r vyie;u tpjy í ac:aom trnrsm;rwpqi vurvyie;rsm;u
avvmxm;on/ rEav;||rUwi a& , cirí;rsm; vuxur , aeacwwiatmi vyuia
aom vurvyie;rsm;&on/ , i;vyie;rsm;r

- 1/ a&qí;vyie;
- 2/ a&x;vyie;
- 3/ x;jzlvyie;
- 4/ ur0gvyie;
- 5/ a&c;n x;vyie;

wu avvmwijyxm;ygon/

4/ rEav; rEav; vurvyie; rsm; av vmcsu

41/ a&qivye;

jrermvr; rsm; on a&uEpouluon/ Epououo wez; xm; jrwe; luyg
on/ jrwe; wez; xm; on twu b&m; apwyx; rsm; ? ½yym; awmrsm; ? b&m; aumi; ue
rsm; ? be; awm u; aumi; rsm; wi a&c; vl'ge; av&ygon/ b&m; ½yym; awmrsm; u a&oue;
uyvlaomtavu y*acwawmuu pwix; um; con [rwom; &ygon/ xola&c
&mwi a&uyg; vmatmi tyg; cwívl'ge; ygon/ a&c; vl'ge; &mwi a&q; i; rsm; jy/vyí
vlygon/ a&uyg; atmi a&q; i; jzpatmi cwvyonu a&q; i; cwon [ac: qon/
a&q; i; cwvyon vyie; on ½&m , Oau; rutajccí jzpay: vmjci; jzpon/ rEav;
&wemyacwwi a&q; i; ? a&cwon twwynmu q&mreupwivyuicon [tp0
t qurwom; cluon/ , cwiq&mretm; &np; aomyu a&q; i; vyie; rsm; wi yoxm;
ygon/ q&mre lynnmu yaZmaomyjzpygon/ a&q; i; vyie; vyuiaomorm; ? Aexi
&m t&yu ruyg; &y [ac: on/ ri; we; ri; vuxu uwn; u 4i; wu ae&may;
aexi apc; i; jzpon/

vurynmo; oejiom jy/vy&aomynmjzpon/ a&q; i; jy/vy&mwi 128 * &r
tav; ce&aoma&wu r; ao; r; zwixní tyay; &on/ vwixnum tyay; jci;
jzpon/ tyay; ly; aemuee; qon/ vtyaomt&n 5 ayEi t xr&ao; citx
tyay; jci; ? ee; qjci; wu jy/vy&on/ xaemu tpi , av; rsm; (20) jzwon/ ly; aemu
oEypulwpxy a&wpxyxyly; oriom; a&Eijy/vyxm; aom twwixnum wEi
x&on/ xox&mwi tav; ce 3kg (7lb) av; aomwEi em&0ulumatmi x&on/
orion; a&u to; jy/jci; rm xon' PucEijci; ? ty' PucEijci; walumijzpon/
lumceem&0uur a&em&jziowrwon/ a&em&qonrm te; rwcuu taygui,
azmuí a&tiwwic; xm; on/ xtaygui, rwpqi a&0ia&muly; a&jynaomtcg
cuon tiwatmuajco epiyom; on/ wpiurepijryygu o; replumygon/
em&0uxly; ygu tcyi , av; rsm; &&ygon/ &&aomtcyi , u tcyi , ajcmupw
pwon/ a&c; yaygi; (1200) &ygon/ xtcy (1200) u oEypul(0g; pul) wpxy
a&c; ywpxyxyí oriom; a&twwixní em&0ulumxyx&ygon/ xtcy (1200)
r ig; cyvli o; cytjzpijvyon/ tcy (720) &&on/ oEypul (0g; pul) u vn;
tao; rtu; ajymi; ly; om; a&twwixnum ig; em&umatmixon/ &&vmaom
a&q; i; u'e [ac: aom ulc; jizjzwon/ xojzw&mwi a&q; i; a&rersm; vuwi ruy
ap&e ajrre [ac: aom uelq trejziui&on/ 'e jizjzwy; aoma&q; i; u a&c; &mwi
to; jy/aom aumu ½; pulwiuyum tycnu; r; i; zi cnaEmily; ygu to; jy/ &etoi
jzpaom a&q; i; u&&ygon/ a&q; i; wpxywi a&q; i; tcy& (720) yg&ygon/ a&q; i;
wpxy&&&e o; &ulumygon/

a&q; i; jy/vy&mwi to; jy/aompulrm oEypul(0g; pul) jzpon/ xpul&&
taygurygaom ri0g; u to; jy/ &on/ ri0g; u tccmly; tpwi , av; rsm; pw&on/

0g;pwav;rsm;u x;a&Eio;Eppr&on/ x;a&prly;aom t c g 0g;tr|i&on/ x0g;
 triua&Ei r;rjywx;um o;&ujy/w&on/ jy/wzw rsm;u axmi;aom t c g aysmzw&
 on/ aysmzwua&Eia&me, í abmiuyxm;aom abmitwi;xní aewp&u vr;&
 on/ aevr;ly;aom t c g ajcmuvurywvn jzw&on/ xaemu al u;jym;ay:wi í
 em&0uumatmix&on/ xly;yguto;jy/&e 0g;puLu&&on/ 0g;puLwpcyon
 tur 20 ausm to;jy/í&on/

a&c&mwi a&qí;Eitwxyí to;jy/aompulu aumu½;to;jy/í jy/vyon/
 0g;puL jy/vyonen;ynmEi wnr&on/ olaomjy/vyon&u ovrwcu rwn
 ac/ &&vmaom aumu½;puL\ ruEmjyibuwi a&qí;uxm;&on/ olrom
 a&oue;uyvL&m? a&c&mwi tqiajyv , uapygon/

4/2/ x;

x;on omrejyno to;jy/or sm;u av'P? ae'P? r;'Ppon &mo0w'Pr
 umu , ay;aom t&mjzpon/ x;wi x;jzl? a&x; ponjzi trs;tpm;rsm; ujym;ygon/
 x;jzlonri;w\ to;taqmitjzp a& , ciu to;jy/cluon/ ,ctcgwi b&m;
 yiaqmi&m w&m;yiaqmi&m oCmawmrsm;yiaqmi&mwi to;jy/uygon/ a&x;u
 &[e;avmi;rsm;? &[e;r,awmrsm; &iavmi;rsm;? &iavmi;r,awmrsm;yg aqmi;av&
 on/ olaom,cacwwi &iavmi;r,awmrsm; aqmi;avr&awmyg/ b&m;'g,um?
 'g,umr &[e;crn;awm? r,awmrsm; u ,veaom t c gwi eAme, m0ü a&x;aqmi;
 av&on/

4/2/1/ a&x;vyie;

a&x;jy/vy&mwi x;\c½irsm;u 0g;jzjy/vyav&on/ ,ciouo0g;u
 to;jy/av&aom vn; &m;yg;vmaomallumi ,ctcgwi;0g;u to;jy/&ygon/ 0g;v;u
 jy/vyrn x;t& , tpm;tay: rwníjzw&ygon/ jzwxm;aom0g;u c½it& ,av;rsm;
 py&ygon/ pyxm;aom 0g;acsmi;av;rsm;u tacsmow&ygon/ tacsmow&mwi
 "m;armujzi tacsmow&ygon/ tacsmowly;aom 0g;acsmi;av;rsm;u taygui ,azmu
 &ygon/ xotayguazmu&mwi 0g;acsmi;av;rsm;ua&prly;r azmu&ygon/ a&rpryg
 u 0g;acsmi;av;rsm; uwwygon/ tayguuvn; tqpae&mwi azmu&ygon/
 xotaygui ,azmu&jci;rm x;vuuv; rsm;u tycsnbu;jzi w ,o&ejzpon/

xaemu x0g;acsmi;av;rsm;u wpzucleay&ygon/ polvyjci;u vuzsm;cie
 on[ac:ygon/ vuzsm;cl exm;aom0g;acsmi;u tzm;jzway&on/ ponu
 Zuizwon[ac:ygon/ x;ui;u tv ,rcay&ygon/ xolvyjci;u cg;con[
 qygon/ xol tqiqijy/vyxm;aom 0g;c½iacsmi;rsm;u x;acgi;wi w ,&ygon/
 w ,&mwi ywx;xm;aom tom;u vuoapmi;Ei xp&ygon/ xp&mwi v;yw

wpav_mu_v;rxp&y_g/ c¹/₂iEiw, í&&e ywv;t_om;u vEipwom;c&yg_on/
pwom;Ei vuoapm_i;xpx_m;aom x;acg_i;wi x;c¹/₂iac_mi;rsm; w&ygon/ xen;w
ywx;x_m;aom tjc_mwi 0g;ac_mi;rsm;w&ygon/ tjc_mwiwaom 0g;ac_mi;u Zujzw&m
wi xy0i;jzw&on/ xo_ijzwci;u xyx;on[ac:ygon/ xyx;&ci;rm tjc_m;Ei
x;acg_i;w&mwi aygurnp;aomallumi_jzpygon/

x;acg_i;Eic¹/₂irsm;? tjc_mEi0g;ac_mi;rsm; o;jcm;pw, oly;ygu tjc_mEix;acg_i;u
w&ygon/ wly;aomx;acg_i;Ei c¹/₂iay:wi ywjlur;&ygon/ r;ly;aomywjlur
omuaumEia&m_x;aom aq;euuow&ygon/ ponu aq;jc, on[ac:ygon/
aq;eujc, x_m;aom x;rsm;uaeywi em&0urwpem&txvr;í tajcmuc&ygon/
x;tr;ajcmuygu a&mipc:nrsm;Ei ye;x;&ygon/ ye;x;&etwu x;c¹/₂iwi taygu
i,av;rsm; azmuay;&ygon/ olromye;x;cnu vypm&uvyEirn_jzpon/ ye;x;
x_m;aom x;eursm;u a&c&ygon/

a&c&mwi a&ppc:onxu u&;, m;Ei w¹/₂wEiiwr wioi;aom 'ppua&[
ac:ona&pul_jzi aumuto;jy_um uyji;jzpon/ a&pulu aumowum txyom;
ay:wi uyx_m;ygon/ x;t¹/₂;u_vn; aumowx_m;ygon/ xaemu a&pulu
x;t¹/₂;ay:wi uyygon/ xo_uy&mwi a&pulplrap&e yvypwp_jzi yway;&ygon/
tr;wi a&uyly;yg u tem;oway;&ygon/ a&c&ly;aom x;utay:r a&pulwi
yweuauumuyx_m;aom a&ywp_jzityr;ay;&ygon/ ponu em;&uwyon[
ac:ygon/ em;&uwyly;yg u a&x;wpvu twu tr;ly;p;jzpygon/

x;¹/₂;uaemu_yi;wi wyqiygon/ ywwx_m;aom opom;v;cepayu x;tjzp
wyqiygon/ x;¹/₂;ygwyqily;yg u vywiw,aom to;jy/&etoijzpaom a&x;
wpvu u &&lyjzpygon/

a&x;jy_vy&mwi x;t¹/₂;u 5 vur r 20vurtx jy_vvygon/ x;tr;
t&, tpm; umjcm;aomv_n; jy_vvytqi_qirm wnygon/ a'gu[ac:aom tcc¹/₂i
ac_mi;a& uelowc_ur&y_g/ x;acg_i;Ei tjc_m;acg_i; \ v;yway:rwní xnoi;&
ygon/ jy_vvyly;aom a&x;rsm;u oma&ema&tcr;tem;rsm;wi to;jy_uuaomv_n;
r*v&aom oma&tcr;tem;rsm;wi to;jy_uonursm;ygon/

4¹/₂2/ x;jzlvyie;

x;jzlu b&m;q_i;wawmrsm; yiaqmi&mwi_vn;aumi; w&m;awm? oCmawmrsm;
yiaqmi&mwi_vn;aumi;? &[e;corqi&mwi_vn;aumi; to;jy_uuygon/ wi;jyn
tyc_yyaom ri;wonv_n; x;jzlaqmi;uygon/ x;aqmi;ri; 101 yg;&ly; ri;w
aqmi;aom x;jzLav;pi;&ygon/ x;jzlonri;ajrmuweqmi_g;yg;wi yg0iygon/

ur0gjzpon/ alu;ur0gu owur0g [vn;ac: on/ alu;jym;owjym;ay:wi jyvy
aomalumijzpon/

ur0gjy\vy&mwi (21)csjy\vy&ygon/ orom t*gpon [ajymq\uygon/
, i;wrm

1/	& [e;c	-	6 cy
2/	orEw? ororw	-	6 cy
3/	yAmZe ,	-	3 cy
4/	teE&m , u	-	3 cy
5/	uxe	-	3 cy

wjzpygon/ yAmZe , qonrm

yAmZe , ? (yAmZe+£ ,)(w) Eixwxuaom Eixwoiaom/³

[y'wrÍlom [aom ygV-jrerm t b"mewi jyqxm;on/ aetrlc0i;ae&mwi rwi;
aexiaom y&om;rm;u Eixwontcgwi &wqav&on teE&m , uon
tE&m , ui;&e &wqjci;jzpon/] teE&m , y'on ab;tE&m , r&jci;}}¹ [t"ym , &
on/ a&jrermri;rm; vuxurpwií ur0gujy\vy v'ge;av&ygon/ ur0g
v'ge;aomorm;on tE&m , ui;ajcmucyu trsm;q;jy\vyv'ge;av&ygon/ v'ge;
&e &wzw&etwu ur0guatmuygtwi; jy\vyav&ygon/ v'ge;&e &wzw&e
twu ur0gu atmuygtwi; jy\vyav&ygon/

ဝတ်လဲကမ္ဘာ

0wvur0g jy\vy&Etwu ziputo;jyon/ xzipu um;u;y&on/
um;u;yly;aemu opap;ow&on/ xopap;ay:wi zjymuací xyrow&on/ zip
taygutlum;r& ywonxjy\vy&on/ zipty(yw)ontcgwi zipwi zxpae
aom opap;Eizjymwu "m;armuEi jcpc&on/ xlaemu opaptE&e pply;aemu
xyrow&ygon/ opap;ty&e ajrwuwixm;&on opap;tyontcg (5" _21")
t& , jzwon/ xlaemu tom;ao (talumao)ap&e z:Oprsm;u xyí ayjym;ay:wium
aumuw;rm;Ei wpvc? Epvavmuzay;&on/ orom talumaoí ur0ga&;ontcg
vyaooyr&ygon/ opap;ow&mwi wyw? waygi;vEi o&uz;aomvrsm;wi
opap;rtwywyg/ opap;ty&e umv\umjriwwygon/ xalumí p&mowi
opaq;owavr&yg/ opap;ty&eo;ne;yg;ce lumav&ygon/ ur0ga&;&etwu
opap;uav;a&? ig;a&celow&ygon/

t^{1/2};urOg

t^{1/2};urOgu 0wvurOg [vn; ac:qyg on/ t^{1/2};urOgqonrm u, veom;
aomorm; uovaumi;r&ap&e&n&, í use&poron;prsm;u jy\vyay;aom t&m
jzpon/ u, veo\ t^{1/2};Eijy\vyao m urOgjzpon/ u, veo\ u, cEmu
r;ol*[í t^{1/2};o;oeaum u, &on/ aum u, aom t^{1/2};az;jzL&etwu te;&nEi
yuize;ay;&on/ u, veo\ t^{1/2};u oqwi nuae&eaxmi;on/ t^{1/2};reu
opap;owxm;aom 0wvurOgay:o ZumEic&on/ xlaemu opap;xyrowum
ajrwuwi tyatmixm;&on/ ajrwuwioyon t&cg urOgu yviayguazmu í
oyon/ opap;tyon t&cg aumyweipm;ly; rsEmjiyacsmarU&ejy\vyon/ rsEmji
acsm;yu a&;&et oijzpaom urOgu&&on/

ow\urOg

ow\urOgqonrm alu;jym;? oijm;Eijy\vyxm;aom urOgjzpon/ xow\ijm;
rsm;u (5' _21'') t&, jzwí 0wvurOg? t^{1/2};urOgjy\vyouo jy\vy&on/
urOg tr&;trnujym;ji;on jy\vyon ypn;tr&;tpm;vuí uijm;ji;jzpon/
jy\vyonypEi tqiwnon/ a&;, ciu qip, urOguvn; jy\vycluon/

urOga&;om;y

urOgc:yay:wi uavmijzia&;om;on/ urOgpma&;om;aomaq;tjzp aq;'e;Ei
wrmap;uto;jy\on/ aq;'eEiwrmap;u ausmuy;0wiao;um uavmijzi a&;om;
on/ ao;&mwi rjypru:ao;&on/ usygu ria&uwwon/ jypygu ricwwon/
pmra&;om;r opap;Ei [ojy'g;azsmly; ie;uu(ayr)urOgc:yay: owvr;&on/
xlaemu a&;om;&etwu rO;yp&on/ urOgwpc:ywi rO;ajcmualumi;? cepalum;
yp&on/ xlaemu pma&;on/

pma&;tom;ly;aom t&cg ye;a&;&e rO;jyeny? (rO;xyyp)on/ rO;yply;ygu
ye;a&;on/ xlaemu Z0gpw(Zaumya&;)on/ Z0gpyly;ygu a&c&on/ a&c&mwi
Epvurtjyn tacgua&q;rom a&a&;í&on/ a&c&ly;ygu a&aq;&on/ a&aq;
onqonrm c&xm;aoma&rsm;u a&Eiaq;ji;jzpon/ orom Z0gpyxm;on ye;a&;
xm;on t&mrm;ay:wia&om;rsm; useaernjzpon/ xlaemu opap;Ei teujyexy&
on/ pma&;om;&mwi reun;ap urOga&;om;ygu tu&mrm;u ajcmuvurca&;
&on/ opapxyly;rom ly;jynpaom urOgpm &&ygon/ urOgrsm;u trwp0wy&m
wi um? um? u? ujzi wyav&on/

xurOgrsm;u ur;z;Ei z;tyay;&on/ ,ciurOgq&mrm; vuxuwi urOg
ur;z;wi ew? bv;? acgi;aqmi;Ei oevsuxr;yu a&;qcluaomvn; ,ctc

a&wwor&awmyg/ xlaumi bu;ye;uom to;jy||uon/ ur;z;Eiur0gu ur0g
aowmwi xnygon/ p t q ion ly;jynpaom ur0gwppu &&yjzpon/

ur0gu jy\vyvL'ge;||ujci;rm &[e;awmrsm;&wzwyazm or rruovaumi;r
&&on[vuc,||unaomallumijzpon/ tc||aomt v&irms;on ur0gu? apw
yx;rm;wi Xmyem||uon/ ponrm "rapwwnjci;yijzpon/ ,cacwwi uey:Lwm
yEyur0grsm;u to;jy\vm||uygon/

4/4/ a½c:n x;vyie;

rEav;&wemyacwrpí xe;or;vmaom ,Oau;rtEynmwp&yrm a½c:n x;
vyie;jzpon/]] a½wu0e? 0ept r xr; - a½wu0e? a½wut&m½w qiq&mencí
a½wuawmrsm t qiweq mawmrsm;u a½c:n x;vyxr;½u&on/}}¹ [aomt q t &
ri;? rz&m; tp&aom ee;wi;oe;wi;om;w\ t0wweqmrsm;wi a&c:njzi clyvy
tvqiaiy;&aom vyie;jzpygon/ ,cacwwi a&c:nrm;u t0wt xnrsm;wi
clyvytvqiaiy;ji;xu a&c:n x;ye;csm;cyrsm;? v to;taqm iypn;rm;tjzp
to;jy\vm||uygon/

a&c:n x;ye;csm;cyrsm;? a&c:n x;ypn;rm;on jrerm u:uoa&aqmijzply;
jrerm ,Oau;rtEynm u azmaqmiay;aomt&mrsm;jzpon/ a&c:n x;vyie;on jrerm
vurtE ynmvyie;jzpon/ a&c:n x; um;cylx;rnqygu 0;pm uwygp? oue;
a&mitp ponwu opom;abmiwi abmiusy&on/ abmiusyly;aom txnpwi
tv&aom Epou&myu y|ur;a&q|uon/ y|ur;a&q|y;yg u vi;abmi? uEw
abirms; x;cyl&on/ vi;abmix;ly;aomtcg um;cylwi Epou&myu a&c:n?
abmlu ,tp&onwjzi clyvy&on/

rrtv&aomyon ½y\ujzpygu t ½yu o;jcm;cyl&ygon/ o;jcm;x;cylxm;
aom ½yysm;u clyvyrntxnwi uycylon/ uycyl&mwi *r;xn&etwu
cylpmae&mtc|| cexm;&on/ xae&mr*r;xnum azmi;&on/ *r;xny;aemu
v tyonae&mrsm;u clyay;&on/ yazmay;&ygon/ ly;jynppm x;cylly;aom um;cyl
u aum buwi aum½u(ow) umaevr;&on/ xoljy\vyjci;rm txnpu wi;usy
pmqí um;usyxm;aomallumijzpon/ aum½ujci;rjyb abmirjzwygu um;cylon
,iwwaomallumi aum½uí aevr;jci;jzpon/ aevr;ly;yg u abmirjzlwum
a&c:n x;um;cyl\ aum buwi txnpjzi z;ty&on/ xaemu reabmioi;ji;?
tem;cyljci; ponwjy\vyon/ xtqily;yg u jrerm ,Oau;r tEynmvu&m
ajrmuaom a&c:n x;um;wpcyo a&mu&ly;jzpon/ jrerm ,Oau;rtEynm vu&mjzp
on a&c:n x;ye;csm;cylon urmuvor*½;cyl\ {nce;raqmiwi 0ixnpm
&aeygon/

, aeacwwiatmi tEynmvu&m a&c:nx;ye;cum;rsm;omru &ijy?
en;otvl r*vmyrsm;? Zmwri;om;? ri;or;rsm; ponwtwu a&c:nx;luon/

lcio;oycu

rEav;rlon tuuuus pepwuswnaqmuxm;aomlrjzpon/ jyt;wpcEi
wpc tumta0;twi;rsm;Ei wi;wmowrwcontwu avaxmituuuao
wpjyywn0i; rsm;jzpon/ rEav;o? rEav;om;rsm;on , Oau;ru azmjyaeao?
ZmwEi tp0tvmu ne;jyaeao vyie;rsm;u tpjyí rnac:caom 0i;trnrsm;?
&yuursm;u tjrwWE; wez;xm;luon/ wwpr;oavmu vuqiur; xe;or;lu
on/ olaom ur;uiaom ynm&irsm;&m;yg;vmjci;? , Oau;rajymi;vvmjci;? ap;uu
p;ym;a&pepajymi;vvmjci;walumi tcuao mvurvyie;rsm;? aysmuu , vjzp&on/
ten;i , ajymi;vom;on tcu vyie;rsm;on a0g [m&topji ajymi;vvuiaom
vyie;rsm;jzpon;on/

a&q;vyie;on acwtququvyuicaom vyie;jzpon/ trs;bom
omoem wnaeo&u &ioeaern vurvyie;jzpon/ a&q;vyie;on 0g;pul
vyie;? aumu^{1/2};pulvyie;wyg , 0wwn&apon vyie;jzpon/ a&x;vyie;on
quvuwn&aeao vyie;jzpon/ olaom a&q;vyie;uo to;jyrrrsm;jym;aom
vyie;jzpon/ x;vyie;wi , ciutrawm&x; [jrwrWE;E; to;jycaom
vaqmi;x;vyie;? &[e;? oCmawm aqmi;x;vyie;rsm;&con/ olaom 4i;x;rsm;
on &mo0w'PcEiren;yg;aomalumivn;aumi;? Eiiwumrvyciceao x;rsm;
0ia&umvmaomalumivn;aumi; aysmuu , con/ en;ynmoprsm;Ei jyevn
wxivyaqmioiaom vyie;jzpon/ x;jzlvie;onvn; vyuio ten;
i , om&on vyie;tjzp &ywnaeygon/

ur0gvyie;on aEmi;vrsm; o&ren;yg;aom vyie;jzpon/ wez;jrirm;jci;?
vyui rlu&njci;walumi jzpEiygon/ xlyi yEyur0gpmrsm; ay:ayguvmjci;
onvn; talumi;wp&yjzpon/ ur0gvyie; ar;revmaomvn; ur0g&wqron
trs;bom omoemwn&orquvwywv; wn&aernjzpon/

a&c:nx;vyie;on ye;cum;rsm;? vo;ueypn;rsm;u vyaqmi vmon/
olaom jrerm , Oau;rtEynmu azmne;aom ynm&yztzp quvuwn&aeon/
jrerm , Oau;r a&c:nx; tEvu&mon uvor*^{1/2};cŷy\ {nce;raqmiwi xn0gpm
wn&aeygon/

jrermvurvyie;rsm;on , Oau;rEi u;u , , lunrtay: taiccu jzpxe;
vyuivmaom vyie;rsm;jzpon/ acwpeprsm;t&? urmjzpp0rsm;t& aysmuu , om;
aomvyie;rsm;? aysmuu , vvyie;rsm;&ygon/ jzpay:vmaom ajymi;vr? w;wurrsm;

Ei v u a v s m n a x r n , O a u s ; r u t a j c c o n v y i e ; r s m ; u x e ; o r ; u m Z m w E i t p 0 t v m u j y o o i y g o n /

e*;

p p m w r ; o n r E a v ; r r w i v y u i a q m i & u a e a o m v u r v y i e ; r s m ; r v y i e ; t e n ; i , u o m w i j y x m ; a o m p m w r ; j z p o n / t j c m ; a o m a v v m p & m v u r v y i e ; r s m ; u e & a o ; o n / t a v v m v y i e ; r s m ; u r w w r ; r w & m r s m ; r v n ; a u m i ; ? u , w i o m ; a & m u a r ; j r e ; r w r ; w i i v n ; a u m i ; a v v m x m ; y g o n / v t y c u r s m ; & y g u t u j y a q ; a E ; a y ; l u y g & e y e l u m ; t y y g o n /

u ; r ; u ; p m & i ;

" r o m r b 0 o ? t & i l (2 0 1 5) l a c w r y g V - j r e r m t b " m e l & e u e ? c i c s l x e ; p m a y l

a r m i a r m i w i ? 0 ; l K S M A T A , (1 9 7 5) l a & e e ; o ; a 0 g [m & t b " m e - y w ? & e u e ? o m o e m a & ; 0 ; p ; X m e l

a r m i a r m i w i ? 0 ; ? r [m 0 Z m l () E i i o r i ; o a w o e p m a p m i -

j r e r m p m t z i l (1 9 7 8) l j r e r m t b " m e t u ; 0 ; c l y ? t w - 1 ? u - p l & e u e ? p m a y A r m e y E y w u l

l o b m o m b 0 o ? t & i ? t * r [m y @ w l 2 0 1 2 l o a w o e o ½ y j y t b " m e l & e u e ? p w u ; c s l c p m a y l

a v v m z w ½ a o m p m t y r s m ;

q ; i u l (2 0 1 5) l { & m 0 w x u r E a v ; l & e u e ? " 0 p m a y l

q ; i u l (2 0 1 6) l r E a v ; a ' g u r e x & l & e u e ? j c l ; j c l ; p m t y w u l

x e ; & e (e w a r m u) l (2 0 0 9) l 0 i ; a w e w n c o n / r i ; a e j y n / l w - l u r ? r E a v ; ? r i ; r a [m p m a y l

j r o e ; w i l 2 0 0 3 l o r i ; x u r E a v ; ? r E a v ; x u o r i ; l ' - l u r ? & e u e ? p p o n a w m p m a y l

awllqar;jre;o ny*llv rsm;

- **b'EawZE? llrllle , lo0g'p& , ? llumeueZrlawZmatni urmawiausmi;wu llumeueau; &m?**
yorlu;llle , /
- **b'Eore(tp;&"rmp& ,) llumeueZrlawZmatni urmatniausmi;wu? llumeueau; &m?**
yorlu;llle , /
- **b'EÓP"r? tp;&"rmp& , ? B.A rEav;/ ow*A'wuov/**
- **O;Av-a&ur0g0Zm(or;)a':ci0i;ar? ur0gq&mr? ur0gwe;? rEav;/**
- **a&penl x;vyie;? 840 &yu u? ajrmu&mop? rEav;/**
- **ree0i; x;vyie;? 840 &yu u? ajrmu&mop? rEav;/**
- ***Viri; a&q i;vyie;? ruyg;&y? rEav;/**
- **r;aomuye; vurynm? ruyg;&y? rEav;/**
- **a':uel a&c:nx;? 78vr;? 34vr;Ei 35vr;llum;? rEav;/**

½r;e(0g)wi;v i v rsl;pw \ pum;yEiq ½;pum; rsm; av v mcsu

cirmatmi*

pmwr; t u:O;

ppmwr;on ½r;e(0g)wi;v i v rsl;pw t o;jy|ajym qael|uaom pum;yEiq ½;pum; rsm;
u av vmazm xwxm;aom pmwr;jzpygon/ ½r;e wi;&i;om;w| ajym qo;p|uaom
pum;yq ½;rsm;u rwwr;wivji;Ei wi;&i;om;pum;yrsm;u av vmv ow|twu
taxmutyjzp&e &n ½, ygon/ xolavvm&mwi ½r;evrsl;pw|trsm;q; aexi
aom uciijyne, |tv, yi;? r;aumi;|r|e, twi;½ ½r;evrsl;pw \ tajym pum; rsm;
u tav vmctjzpowrwum av vmwijxm;ygon/ppmwr;u wijy&mwi
pum;yq ½;pum; rsm;u av vmxm;aomp tyrm;? a'ocrsm; \ ½i;vi; ajym|um;c|ursm;
Ei bompum;ynm ½iw \ en;emrsm;utjccum wijxm;ygon/ xol av vm&m
wi pum;yq ½;rsm;on vrb0tajctae trsl;rsl;urwní ay:ayguvmEialumi;
av vmaw ½;ygon/ pum;yEiq ½;pum; rsm;u av vmv orsm;twu tu;|au;Z;
&½Eirn jzpygon/

aomcsupum;v;-&mo0w? , lunr? v , ? tpm;taomu? vrtajctae trsl;rsl;/

e'ge;

ppmwr;on ½r;ewi;&i;om;w \ pum;yEiq ½;pum; rsm;u av vmwijxm;
aom pmwr;jzpygon/ 2018cEp? E0ibmvwi u;|y|vycaom (18)urajrmu jrerm
Eii0Zmoyynm&i tzpmwr;zwywi ||r;aumi;|r|e, twi;½ ½r;evrsl;pw \ aep0
o;a'o , pum;}} acgi;p0Eipmwr;wpapmi wioi;zw|um;cygon/ xpmwr;wi
½r;ew|ajym qaom pjrermpum;Eiu v aompum;orsm;? av oursm;? a'o , tac:ta0:
rsm;? o'g t o;rsm;u av vmcyg on/

, cpmwr;wi pjrermt o;Eiujym;aom ½r;evrsl;w|t o;jy|ajym q|uaom pum;y
Eiq ½;pum; rsm;u xyrav vmwijyrnjzpygon/ ppum; rsm;on ½r;evrsl;w \
tp0t quxe;or;vmcaom ½;&mx;wr;"av x;prsm;? cpm;c|u? c , c|u? oabmxm;?
b0aexiryp? jzwoe;vmcaom b0tawt u|aygi;rsm;pmu tajccxm;alumi;aw ½;yg
on/

||vrbomaA'rwqu}} pmt ywi q&m u;a'guwmat mijri0;u ||bompum;
on vralu;rjiwpcsjzp}} (2003? pm-23)alumi;azmijxm;ygon/ xazmijy cu|u o|
yi;½r;evrsl;w \ b0&ywnr tajctaersm;u 4i;w|t o;jy|ajym q|uaom pum;yEi
q ½;pum; [aom bompum;al u;rjiirwpqi awjriEiygon/

* uxu? jrerm p m Xme? '*wuov

pu m; yEi q^{1/2}; pu m; rsm; uav v m& mwi
 1/ pjrerm b m ompu m; rwu jym; aom pu m; yEi q^{1/2}; pu m; rsm;
 2/ pjrerm pu m; Ei teu w t ac: u aom pu m; yEi q^{1/2}; pu m; rsm;
 [í tyi; (2) yi; Ei av v mwi jym; ygon /

& r; e v rsk; pwy; Eae x i r

& r; e (0g) wi; vi (xevi; 0; pi; ? 1992? pm-4) v rsk; rsm; on & r; v rsk; wprsk;
 jzply; ? t x ujrerm jyn ? ti; awm b u; a'o ? r; ni; a'o ? r; aumi; a'o ? jrp b u; em; a'o ?
 ywm t a'o ? Ae; arma' o ? um ri; a'o ? 0i; arma' o ? zm; uela' o ? Aearmu a' ow r m
 aex ilu ov ppui; wi; a'o u; ? cE; c^{1/2} i ? u om c^{1/2} i ? uav; c^{1/2} i twi; r m v n;
 aex ilu alumi; & r; er sm; u q on / x j y i r Eav; wi; Ei & euewi; twi; r m v n;
 aex i v; u & alumi; o & on / (The voice of Shan-Ni, Sep, 2, 2018)

& r; rsk; E , paygi; (33) rsk; teur uci yne , wi wi; q m & r; (ri; om & r;) ? wi;
 ae & r; (t x u & r;) ? wi; v (& r; b u;) ? wi; cE; (cE; & r;) ? wize; (ze; & r;) ? wi; vi (& r; e)
 [aom & r; rsk; E , p (6) pw t r sm; q; aex ilu on / (xevi; 0; ? pi; ? 1992? pm-4)

t c u t v u a u m u , r

r; aumi; rle , twi; & aus; & m r sm; jzpaom j y i v au s; & m ? t i l u i; u e; au s; & m ?
 o u 0 g; u e; au s; & m ? y i; u s k i; au s; & m ? ee; ciaus; & m r sm; } } u a' o c r sm; \ & i; vi; ajym l u m;
 c u r sm; u t c u t v u & , u m av v mwi jym; ygon / a & ; t p 0 t q u r p í , ae
 t c e t x ajym q o; paeaom pu m; yEi q^{1/2}; pu m; rsm; \ jzpay: v my ? q v c u E i r n o
 t o; j y a l u m i; r sm; u t a o; p w & i; v i; ay; ygaom a' o c r sm; u v n; t x; au s; Z; w i
 alumi; rwwr; wi tygon /

1/ pu m; yq^{1/2}; pu m; w \ t "ym , Ei oab m o b m 0

jrerm b m ompu m; u c j c r; p w j z m a v v m l u a o m p m w r; p m a p m i ? p m t y r sm; w i jrerm
 b m ompu m; \ o i j y i v u P m t r sk; rsk; 1/2 alumi; ynm 1/2 i t o; o; w u a z m j y x m; l u y g
 on / x v u P m r sm; x r b m ompu m; ajym q & m w i j pu m; yEi q^{1/2}; pu m; r sm; } t o; j y
 ajym q j c i; on jrerm b m ompu m; \ x i & m; a o m o i j y i v u P m w p & y t j z p y g 0 i y g on /

pu m; yq^{1/2}; pu m; w \ t "ym , Ei oab m o b m 0 u av v mwi jym & m w i p u m; y \
 t "ym , z i q c u ? q^{1/2}; pu m; \ t "ym , z i q c u [í c j c m; w i j y y g r n /

pu m; y \ t "ym , u jrerm t b "mewi-

]]pum;y^Z*Ae^ev trsm; qijcirwom;z ,jzpatni pijyci; ajymqav^{1/2}
aom xa&muupvspajyponpum;}} (jrermptz?2008 c?pm-91)

[íziqxm;ygon/

q^{1/2};pum; \ t"ym , u jrerm t b"mewi-

]]q^{1/2};pum;^q , ;Z*g;^e- tp0tvm ajymqcluaom rwom;z , &mpum;}}
(jrermptz?2008?pm-121)

[í t"ym , ziqx m;ygon/

pum;yEi q^{1/2};pum;rsm; \oabmu wuovynm ya'ompmapi pmay
aqmi;yg;rsm;(1966-1984) pm tywi azmjyxm;aom q&mú;0;atmioe; \]]jrerpum;
yEiq^{1/2};pum;rsm; jzpxe;w;ym;y qe;ppc;u}}pmwr;wi q&mú; u-

]]xpum;t m;v;on wwEiv&i;aμly; bompum; \ t qiweqm
(tvum)tjzp taxmutujay;aom Epouz , aumi;on pum;a[mi;
pum;x;rsm;om jzpluon/}}(2018?pm -611)

[ívn; ziqjyxm;ygon/

xziqcur;sm;t& pum;yEiq^{1/2};pum;w\ oabmobm0rm vtrsm; qijci
rwom;z , jzpatni xa&muupvspaompum;rsm;jzi wwEiv&i; pijyci;Ei; ajymqc
aompum;? tp0tqurwom;vmlly; tp0tvm twi; vuenrwom;caom pum;rsm;
jzply; Epouemvz , aumi;aom pum;rsm;vn;jzpalumi; o^{1/2}&ygon/

pum;yEiywouí pum;ajymq&mwijzpap? pma&;om;&mwijzpap rnr to;
0ir^{1/2}alumi;u jrerpum;ypm tywi-

]]talumi;t&mwpcu ajymqa&;om;&mú wwEixrap&epum;yu to;jy
av^{1/2}uygon/ rbuom;or;u q;rontcgüjzpap? q&mwynu
oeoiontcgüjzpap? tc;ci;ci; ajym^{1/2};ajymp0 ajymq&müjzpapqvc;uu
xray:viap&e pum;yuto;jy íajymq av^{1/2}uygon/ pmaywivn;
talumi;oion tcgoiavsm on pum;yziweqmqií a&;om;
av^{1/2}uygon/}} (jrerm bompum;0;p;?2016?pm-e'ge;)

[í azmjyxm;ygon/

p oazmjyxm;cut& rnonvr; rnonbompum; tout0e;wirq
yci;ajymqrrsm;^{1/2}aernjzpon/ tb , alumiqaom pum;yq^{1/2};w\ oabmobm0on
pum;ajymq&müjzpap? pma&;&müjzpap txa&muq;Eitjreq; v&i;a&muatni ajymq
Eiontjyi us , us , jyejye em;vnvucEion oabmrsm; yg0iaeaom alumi jz
ygon/

2/½r;e(0g)wi;v i v r;pw \ pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm; av v m c u

**pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;Ei ywou í q&m un0;u pum;y t vi;jyur;wi]x
pum;y rsm;on talumi;rajym q o;Ee;vmjci;um; v;0r [wac/ pum;ywpcwi;ü
o \ talumi;&i; A sywpon tcur sm;ygp l rjzpon/} (un0;? pum;vure) [í
q x m;ygon/**

**q&m u; O;at m ioe;u v n;]j rerpum;yEi q½;pum;rsm; jzpxe;w;wu
vmy qe;ppc s upmwr;}}wi pum;y q½;pum;rsm; jzpay:w;ym;rEi ywou í]pum;y
Ei q½;pum;rsm; tyg t 0i b m o pum;u zew;w;ym;apcaom talumi;&y rsm;p m w/
teu ½;&m vyie;rsm; \ taxm u t uon t "u talumi;wp&yjzpayon}}(2018?
pm-612) [í q x m;ygon/ &r;ew \ pum;yEi q½;pum;wu av v m on t c g
yn&iw \ t q t r e rsm;u t a jccum av v m w i j r n j z p y g o n /**

2'1/ pjrerm b m o pum;rwuijym;aom pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;

**pjrerm b m o pum;wi t o;jy ajym q l u a o m pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;Ei rwuijym;
aom pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;u av v m w i j y & m w i -**

1/ , l u n r u t a j c c x m;aom q½;pum;rsm;/

2/ &m o 0 w t a e t x m; t a y: t a j c c x m;aom q½;pum;rsm;/

3/ v , , m v y i e;rsm; t a y:w i t a j c c x m;aom pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;/

4/ t p m; t a o m u t a y: t a j c c x m;aom pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;/

5/ t j c m;v r t a j c t a e t r r s l; t a y: t j c c x m;aom pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;/

**[í a c g i;p 0 i , r s m;Ei u @ r s m;c u m t y i;v u av v m w i j y x m;y g o n / x o a v v m & m
w i a c g i;p 0 w p c c i;p w i y g 0 i a o m o u q i & m pum;yEi q½;pum;rsm; u]] a y: a y g u v m
o n t a j c c t a l u m i;&i;? q v c u? t o;jy y } } [a o m ½ a x m i (3) c E i c e x; a v v m
o m; r n j z p y g o n /**

2'1'1/ , l u n r u t a j c c x m;aom q½;pum;rsm;

, l u n r u t a j c c u m a y: a y g u v m a o m pum;y q½;pum;rsm; t j z p -

- i g o m; a & a w m i a & u a & m i? a t m i p l z l; a & c s l; & u
- p a e A ' [; ½; a w m i x r i; r i w b;
- a q m i; 10 a E 9 r; 8
- e w j y m w a w m i? a y g i; u; q e a e m u? e 0 g 0 g a j r m u? w o a & a q m i
- a , m u s m; r m 0 g q? r e; r r m j y m o

- ve;yom 0 , ygav? at mipau:maE mi; r0 , aumi;
- t *gA' [; zuc;awmi rom; ty

ponji &r;evr;pw/ r;1/2;p0qu vuem u:io;aeluqjzpon , lunru azm ne;
aeaom q 1/2;pum;rsm;u/vn; aw 1/2&ygon/

1/2r;evr;won aA' iynmu t ve , unt m;xm;luor sm; jzpluygon/
c&;xujci;Ei traxmia&;tajctae? ta&m i;t0 , ? use;rma&; ponji t&m
awmawmrsm;rsm;wi aA' i \ t q rsm;Einum vyaqmiav 1/2ygon/

igom;a 1/2awmi a&ua 1/2mi? at mipz; a&c&;&u

rue;rmonor sm;tajzi a&c&;&rnae&ur sm;u ovrwxm;aom q 1/2;pum;
jzpygon/

[we*aE? t *g?umoyaw;}}wp&u&uwi a&c&;&etaumi;q&ur sm;jzpon/]
wevm? aomlum? A' [;? paeaer sm;wi a&urc&;ao;b a 1/2mi&ygrn [í qvygon/

xo &uaumi;&ujrwa 1/2;ly; a&c&;&rno (tr sm;t m;jziaeaumi;ly;cgp vem
wpa , mu) jyely;aeraumi; rjzpapvvi p t q twi;vuemEi&e q 1/2;jy\xm;jci;
jzpygon/

paeA' [; 1/2;awmixri;riwb;

traxmibu taeji vuzuru ci;Ei;xm;aomq 1/2;pum; jzpygon/

paeom;or;Ei A' [;om;or;won aeet m;jzivuuum p;ym;a&;?
traxmia&; tqiajyvuzurn traxmizur sm;jzpluly; tceroi í 1/2;om;on tx
jzpo m;cviiyi xri;riwEialumi; q 1/2;jy\xm;aompum;jzpygon/

traxibua 1/2;&e vuzuon aeersm;ua 1/2;c , ontcg p t q Ei n , lu
aomtav&ygon/

aqmi; 10? aE 9? r; 8

a&c&;&rnem&tceut qEirwom;xm;on q 1/2;pum;jzpygon/

aqmi;&mo cr;at;cier sm;wi eeu (10em&)wia&c&;cejzpon/ aE&mo jzpyg
u (9em&)wia&c&;í r;&moqv i (8em&)wi a&c&;cejzpon/ xa&c&;cewEit n
a&c&;ay;ygu use;rma&;einnwrn [aom , luncujzi rwom;xm;aom q 1/2;pum;
jzpygon/

&m00wt aet x m; t & m o t v u aerjyi; ao; aom? tat; "mwen; o m; aom
t cser; w wia & c; y g u use; rma & Ei nnwontwu x t cser; u rwrap & eq ½; jy
x m; jci; jzpygon/

ewjymw awmi? aygi; u; qe aemu

e0g0g ajrmu? woa ½ aqmi

**p t q on c & x ujci; Ei r* v maqmi Ei; jci; w twu v t v u om; & rn
t & yruEmwu q i jci Ei; q Ei at mi oway; x m; aom q ½; pum; jzpon/**

**e* g; acgi; (o) e* g; cwi; v n ont & yu trw t om; jy x m; aom pum; jzpygon/
q i; & jci;? yyeaomua & m u & jci;? ruse; rmjci; rsm; u e* g; cwi; Ei Ei; , 0 x m; jci;
jzpon/ x vwi x t & y (e* g; cwi; v n & m t & y? e* g; cwi; Ei ruEmci; q i t & y) o
om; v i yyeaom u a & m u & w won [aom t , t q r ay: aygu v maompum; jzpygon/**

**(ewjymw awmi) [aom t qrm-ewawm? jym o wy w v rsm; wi e* g; acgi; on
awmibu o v n alumi;? (aygi; u; qe aemu) [aom t qrm waygi; v? wec; v?
u qevwi e* g; acgi; on ajrmubu o v n alumi;? (e0g0g ajrmu) [aom t qrm
e, ev? 0 g q v? 0 g acgi v rsm; wi e* g; acgi; on ajrmubu o v n alumi;? (woa ½
aqmi) [aom t qrm awm o vi;? owi; u w? weaqmire; v rsm; wi e* g; acgi; on
t a ½ bu o v n alumi; trw t om; jy x m; aom q ½; pum; jzpygon/**

**, luncut & rom; o ion t & y [, q x m; aom t & ya' oo rom; apv
on t cg b q ½; pum; jzi oway; ajymqav & uygon/**

a , m u sm; rm0g q? re; rrmjymo

**traxmizu t jzp vuzuaom orsm; jzpalumi; jy q x m; aom q ½; pum; jzpyg
on/**

**0g q vwi zm; jriaoma , m u sm; av; Ei jym o v w izm; jriaom re; u av; w t ae Ei
traxmijy v i p; ym; a & w; w u aumi; rely; jynjynppc r; c r; omom aeEion [aom
t , t q jzpalumi; o & ygon/**

ve;? y? om 0 , ygav? at mi? pau sm? aemi; r0 , aumi; /

ypn; 0 , & rnae & ur sm; u trw t om; jy x m; aom q ½; pum; jzpygon/

**aelecepewi A' [;? l u moyaw? aom l u mae rsm; ü ypn; 0 , , ygu t ve
t u s; jy y;? ay sm uy u jci; r r ½ Ei alumi; t , t q t & xae rsm; wi a ½; c; , 0 , , av & yg**

on/ t x;ojzi(puypn;? a $\frac{1}{2}$ xnypn;ponjzi)u;u;rm;rm; 0, , jci;jy/aom
tcgwi p t q twi; vuemuisi u u m 0, , paqmi;wwu ygon/

t*gA' [; zuc;awmi rom;ty

t*geom;or;Ei A' [;eom;or;w traxmizu rjzpoialumi;Ei rwaq t jzp
z&eyi roialumi; neyxm;aom q $\frac{1}{2}$;pum;jzpygon/

zu? e-1? xy&mü t o;0iaom ti&u? iuaysm&upon jym;jyeaom
op&ur;sl;

xlaeom;won aygaygrsm;rm; $\frac{1}{2}$ ly; v, v, uu&on zu&uc;&eyi tww
om;&eroialumi;? t b, alumiqaom cPav;twi;ryi tci;rm;wwu y;
&ejzp&i;tcueum t vyaEiaE; lu&ontwujzpon [qon/

traxmijyrluyguvn; tqirajzpv m v i x t q Ei ne;qjypw iav&aom
pum;vn;jzpygon/

2?1?2/ &m oOw tae t x m; tay: t ajcc x m;aom q $\frac{1}{2}$;p u m; rsm;

&m oOw tae t x m; tay: t ajcc x m;aom q $\frac{1}{2}$;p u m; rsm; t jzp-

- reur; $\frac{1}{2}$ m a&A;yg? reuaey carmu , /
- v trz&i aeyw , ? aet rz&i r;&mw , /

ponjzi aw&ygon/

reur; $\frac{1}{2}$ ma&A;yg reuaeycarmu ,

&m oOwajymi;vrtajctaeu buw iumu, Ei&e trwtom;jy/xm;aom
q $\frac{1}{2}$;pum;jzpygon/

t x;ojzi r;wi;(r;&m o)tcetcgwi reuyi;r; $\frac{1}{2}$ maomvn; naeyi;wi
aeywwy;reuyi;wi aeyyguvn; naeci;tcewi r; $\frac{1}{2}$ moe;wwygon/

xlaumi tvyvy&e jyi yjivio om;ovi, vu;wi;t m; p t ajc taeu
owjyEi&e &m oOwcere;yu q $\frac{1}{2}$;jy/xm;jci;jzpygon/

]]v trz&iaeyw , aet rz&i r; $\frac{1}{2}$ mw , }}

ae? v? wrw \ ajymi;vrtajctaeurwn í &m oOwajymi;vrtajctaeu
trwtom;jy/xm;aom q $\frac{1}{2}$;pum;jzpygon/

aeEi v w \ a b ; r o u w e a & m i u o a & m i p t 0 i ; u ; w p c j r i a w & c e u] v t r z
j c i ; }] a e t r z j c i ; } [a c : l u y g o n / n t c g v t r z l o n u j r i y g u a e y w w a l u m i ; E i
a e t r z y g u r ; ½ m w w a l u m i ; p q ½ ; p u m ; j z i t r w t o m ; j y x m ; j c i ; j z p y g o n /

r ; & m j c i ; a e y j c i ; u c e r e ; l u o n t c g r s ; w i p q ½ ; p u m ; u t o ; j y a j m q l u y g
o n /

2? 1? 3/ v , , m v y i e ; t a y : t a j c c x m ; a o m p u m ; y E i q ½ ; p u m ; r s m ; /

v , , m v y i e ; t a y : t a j c c u m a y : x u v m a o m p u m ; y E i q ½ ; p u m ; r s m ; u a v v m & m w i -

- a w m i a v w a 0 g a 0 g p m & i ; i m ; a o l m i w a c s m a c s m
- E m ; y i ; a o ; a y g u v y i ; a & a o m u
- a z s m u q y r e ; v E r ; u ; u
- v u p m ; r a u : v i a o r i t m ; p o n j z i a w & y g o n /

a w m i a v w a 0 g a 0 g p m & i ; i m ; a o l m i w a c s m a c s m

r ; & m o (r ; w i ;) t c e r ; a c g i o n t j z p E i B u l B u u w w j c i ; u t r w t o m ; j y l & m r
a y : a y g u v m a o m q ½ ; p u m ; j z p o n /

a w m i a v = a w m i b u r a v w u c w r /

p m & i ; i m ; = o & i ; i m ; ^ p , i ; i m ; ^ e - (t x ; o j z i v , , m v y i e ; w i) t c a l u ; a i , í
t v y v y o / (j r e r m p m t z ? 2008 ? p m - 375)

½ r ; e v r s ; a w m i o r s m ; o n t r s m ; t m ; j z i r ; p y g ; u o m p u y s ; l u a v ½ o n / w p r ; v ;
r ; a c g i a v r ½ a o m v n ; w p c g w p & t c e a w m a w m l u m l u m r ; r ½ m b j z p a e w w o n /
x a ' o ½ a w m i o a w m a w m r s m ; r s m ; o n r ; w r j z p x e ; r ? a v w u c w r t a j c t a e w u
l u n í r ; ½ m j c i ; ? r ½ m j c i ; u o w r w a v ½ l u o n / r ; w i ; t c e t c g w i a w m i b u u
a v r s m ; w u c w v m y g u r ; a c g i o n t j z p E i B u l w w l u o j z i a w m i o r s m ; o n r ; w i ; c e
a v w u j c i ; u r E p o u l u a c s /

r ; a c g i o n t w u p y g ; p u y s ; & e a e m u u r n u v , ½ i r s m ; u p ; & r y y e a e l u
a o m v n ; o & i ; i m ; r s m ; r m r a o l m i (q y i a u) a v ; w o o j z p u m a y s m ½ i a e v r r n [l
q v j c i ; j z p o n /

r ; p y g ; p u y s ; c e a w m i a v w u c w v m v l i p q ½ ; p u m ; j z i w i p m ; a j y m q a v & y g
o n /

E m ; y i ; a o ; a y g u v y i ; a & a o m u

v , , m v y i e ; w i t o ; j y a v ½ a o m E m ; r s m ; \ t r t u i w p c u t a j c c x m ; l y ;
a y : a y g u v m a o m p u m ; j z p o n /

$\frac{1}{2}$ r;ewon 0&, tveaumi;or;m;jzpon/ Zaumi;ly;u;pm;uor;m; jzpon
 twu tvywpcvyqvi tirely;atni Zbu;pmvyaqmiav $\frac{1}{2}$ on/ tcvr;m;on
 tvyvyae&i;u (tx;o;zi pyg;&waumupu x, x; v, xe qi;ae&i;u)
 tanmi;ajyt nma;yoabm;ji a&ucPcPaomuly; tem;, wwuon/ Em;r;m;on
 vn; tvyci;ae;ewi arnye;lyqonEi tcelumjripmq;peav $\frac{1}{2}$ uon/ Em;r;m; \
 use;rma&;taictaeuiiuuum xtcers;wi quvuarmi;Eijci;rjyib &yapmi&av&
 on/ tb, alumiqaom Em;r;m;on q;cly0r;clyjzpv mvi touq; $\frac{1}{2}$;rr;m;
 jzpwwaom alumi; jzpon/ tvyvyae0 tcelumjripmq;peav&aom Em;r;m; alumi
 tvyaEmiaE;&on/ xuolaomEm;r;m;u Em;yi; [owrwí tvyvyae&i; a&
 rlumcP aomuwwor;m;u vy;i; [owrwyon/

rnontvyr;s;uvyaep0 tcewijzpap rlumcP a&aom uav $\frac{1}{2}$ or;m;t;m;
 ppum;yEi ci;Ei;umrccsijzply; tvyu;pm;vmatmi E;aqmry/aomtcg to;jy/
 av&aom pum;jzpon/

azsmuqyre;v Er;u;u

o;Epuy;s;ru lu, euway:xe;ceEi trwtom;jy&mr ay:xuvmaom q $\frac{1}{2}$;
 pum;jzpon/

azsmuqy²elu, i, poPmecepv; tp $\frac{1}{2}$ aomlluwumeuw/(2008? pm246)

bu? bu-1? tEltjym;a&muatmiypon/(2008?pm-34)

awmio v, orm;r;m;taeji o;Eyir;m;u &motcsetcgEinum puy;s;av $\frac{1}{2}$ ygon/
 vtvuajymi;vav $\frac{1}{2}$ aom lu, wm&mr;m; \ ta $\frac{1}{2}$ tajymi;ulunum rwom;aom
 tavvn;&ygon/ pq $\frac{1}{2}$;pum;on Er;u; (Er;r? Er;euuyuceu rwom;xm;
 aom q $\frac{1}{2}$;pum;jzpygon/ awmovi;v r;v, umvwi azsmuqylu, \ wnae&m
 on aere;wnceae&mwi xuay:av $\frac{1}{2}$ ygon/ xtceon Er;u;u& tceauri;
 [owrwxm;luygon/

v, pully;ce ue;ajrtjzpu;useaaeaom? (or[w) cexm;aom ajr $\frac{1}{2}$ i;uu
 uuvyr;m;wi Er;u;ucge;tceü pq $\frac{1}{2}$;pum;ji tvyvy& E;aqma vvn;
 $\frac{1}{2}$ on [o&ygon/

vupm;raus viaoritm;

v, , mvyie;cir tx;o;ziaumupuce? aumupuui;r ay:xuvmaom
 pum;jzpon/

aumupucea&muyq\i aewucay;um aumupuvyom;rsm;u im;&r;í
vn;aumi;? vupm;vupuji;zi vn;aumi; rr\ v ,puui;rsm;u tcer
puy;ly;p;atmi puy;av&uon/]vupm;vu}u jrerm t b"mewi]vupm;vu?
u-rrvyie;wi wjyevyt m;&&e owpyg;vyie;wi yg0ivyuia;on/} [
ziqxm;yg on/ (2008? pm-335)

v i?e- traxmizua , m u sm;/(2008?pm-340)

vupm;ac: , ly; rr\ v ,wi tuujynpuy;ly;om;onEi xvupm;u alu
atmijyely; puy;ay;u&ygon/ wpzu v ,&itaeji owu ,wi vupm;taeji
vma&mupuy;xm;yg u rrwbuuvn; u ,wio m;ly; vupm;aluatmi ajzay;&y
on/ oromwpzu v ,&iu aueyr½u ygon/ xalumi]vupm;raluygu viao
cewiyi rit m;Eiyg} [q½;ay:v nji;jzpygon/

v , , mvyie;ciwionru tjc m;vyie;ci tr r;? tjc m;oma&ema&;? &ya&
½ma&;wiyg to;jyiajmq oway;av½aom pum;yjzpygon/

2'1'4/ t pm; taom u tay: t ajccxm;aompum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;

t pm; taom u tay: t ajccxm;aompum;yEi q½;pum;rsm;u avvmon t cg-

- ajcpvup yg;pypon/ ajcajcmu v uajcmu yg;pyajcmu on/
- [i;a&m&mcs? to m;a&m&mi
- t vyq\i u sm;valumuw , ? t pm;q\i vn;Eiwuc
- {non , ;u; qewpt;ue

ponji aw&ygon/

ajcpvupyg;pypon/ ajcajcmu v uajcmuyg;pyajcmu on

bpum;yon r;zacsm iray:xu vmaom q½;pum;jzpon/]vu vyr yg;pyvy
&w , } [aomoabmr; jzpon/

½r;evr;r;won to m;ig; [i;u] [i;aumi; } [ovrwxm;uon/ ½r;ew
0 , pm;onxu u ,wi½maz pm;aomuwluon/ xalumi] to m;ig;}wu u ,wi
½mazly; aumi;aumi;pm;&ontcgwi;]ajcpvupawm yg;pypwmy} [ajymqav&y
on/ ½mazrr½í rpm;aomEion t cgr;wi]ajcajcmu v uajcmu yg;pyajcmu w , } [
ajymqwwluon/

vr0e;uiwi pm;0waea& t qiajypm aumi;aumi;rere aexipm;aomu aeEi
or sm;uawv i vn; bpum;jzi rwcujywwuygon/

[i;a&m&mcsl t o m;a&m&mi

þ q^{1/2};pum;onvn; xri;pm;y0i;r ay:xu vmaom q^{1/2};pum;jzpon/

[i;? e- xri; ponjzi wzupm;&aompm;z ,/(2008? pm-394)

cs? e0-1? xe;vu? olum;w\ t&omrsl;&aom/(2008? pm-60)

^{1/2}r;evrsl;wowerwxm;aom] [i; } qonrm xri;Eipm;Eiaom [i;o; [i;^{1/2}u
tygt0i t o m;ig; [i;rm;t m;v;u qvygon/]cs} on&r;ea'o ,wi pm;íre
onuqvygon/ þ q^{1/2};pum;xr] [i; } rm to;t^{1/2}uaygi;pu a&maEmumc:uxm;
aom [i;jzpon/ ^{1/2}r;evrsl;w\ ^{1/2};&m [i; rnrsm;xwi] [i;paygi;? [i;^{1/2}upavm?
[i;^{1/2}upoy}won [i;a&m&m [i;rsl;jzply; ruarmcslrepm pm;aomuav^{1/2}uon/
t&ompa&ma&maEm cupm;ygu pm;irevon [qvygon/

[i;^{1/2}utpcupm;ouo t o m; [i;rm;u trnpa&maEmc:ujy\w pm;aomuygu
tjriwi] [i;aumi; [i;vsm} [qEiaomvn; pm;írbjzpwwallumi;u] t o m;
a&m&mi} [aompum;jzi oway;xm;ici;jzpon/ tcs\ a'owi]om;a&m&mi} [ívn;
ajymqluon/ uav;rm; paygi;r\uví &ejzppum; rsm;wwluonu talumi;jy\í
]om;a&m&mi} [ívn; q\ualumi; o&ygon/

[i;paygi;pm;&ontcgrsl;wi] [i;a&m&mcsl} [aompum;jzi o;oyajymq
av^{1/2}uygon/

tvyq&iu sm;valumuw , tpm;q&ivn;Eiwuc

rrEpou&mwio m o m , maeww? aysmar\aewwly; yiye;q i;&ru allumuw
lluaom vp^{1/2}uobm0u tajccumay:aygu vmaom pum;yjzpon/

tpm;ururuarmarmpm;wwly; tvycuyrae&e (tx;o;izivi , rsm;u) ow
ay;xm;aom pum;yjzpon/

tpm;qv\i vn;Eiyiwuvmc&atmi rsm;jym;vaom pm;p&myijzpviupm;
ueatmipm;Eiluon/ t vyvy&awmrnqv\i usm;wpaumi u aw&ouo
allumuvely; cyaeluorm;u oway;vontcg þpum;yuto;jy\ajymq q;r
oway;av&ygon/

{non , ;u; qewpt;ue

xri;pm;y0i;r ay:xu vmaompum;yjzpon/

] , ;}u]jrermt b"mewi- , ;? þu-pypon/ (2008? pm-300)) [ziqxm;
on/

½r;evrsl;trsm;pon awmiov,orm;rm; jzpluon/ tvy\yiye;r'Pu
cEi&n&ap&e xri;utm;jy\pm;aom uav&y; aumi;aumi;vn; pm;Eiluor;rm; jzplu
on/ [i;[q&müvn; to;t½u?to;tErsm;uom tlr\rvv cujy\w pm;aomu
wwluon/ {nonvmromv\i tom;ig;rm;u 0,, cujy\wluon/ xtcgrsl;wi
{nonutalumi;jy\umtr&iw\ xri;ulrea&,ua& pm;aomuluon uqvaom
q½;pum;jzpygon/

] {non,; u;qewpt;ue}q½;pum;on wppwpa,mutwu (aeraumi;
o? {non) ponjizixow\tm; &n½,xm;aom pm;p&mrs\;uxowEi {nc
au\ar;owaygi;um tuepm;aomuvuraom tajctaers\;wi to;jy\ajymqaom
q½;pum;jzpygon/

၂၁၁၅။ အခြားလူမှုအခြေအနေအမျိုးမျိုးအပေါ်အခြေခံထားသော စကားပုံဆိုရိုးများ

vrtajctaetrsl;rs\;u tajccxm;aompum;yEi q½;pum;rm;on rwom;z,
aumi;ygon/ xo'avvmwijy&mwi-

- aumi;wpxn \rewpvvy
- qnay:uig;
- aygonypn;uaqmi? ½m;onypn;ua&mi
- r;u\vn;t<ui;rxm;e? c&u\vn;tji;rom;e\
- reuns;cwtt? q;cwys\
- a, musm;rm"m;? re;rrm;om;
- viu, r, m ajcmuq, ig;
- txnrsm; t, m;ajy
- tviv twEinm;

ponjiziawl&ygon/

aumi;wpxn \rewpvvy

p q½;pum;on]] txnrsm;t, m;ajy}}pum;Ei qeuiibuq½;pum; jzpon/
t&n\tao; aumi;aumi;wpxn½v\i 0wqi&onrm pwauseyr&Eiouo\ tpm;
taomupm;ontcgvn; rrpm;c\iaomt&omu wpvyr\ pm;vu&v\i pwauseyr
&Eialumi; qxm;aompum;jzpygon/

rnontajctaers\;urq pwauseyru &m8u,wwlu&e nejyxm;aom q½;
pum;jzpygon/

q nay:u ig;

u , c i ; p m w & m ; x m ; & w w & e j y q x m ; a o m q $\frac{1}{2}$; p u m ; j z p y g o n /

q n u j r e r m t b " m e w i j e - 1 ? a & u q n & e z v y x m ; a o m u e a y g i $\frac{1}{2}$; ? a & u q n x m ; a o m u e (2 0 0 8 ? p m - 1 2 5) } } [í z i q x m ; y g o n /

a & x w i t x u a t m u p e q e o m ; v m a e a o m i g ; a v ; r s m ; E i v w \ u l u r m t v n t a j y m i ; r s m ; r u c i ; E i ; x m ; a o m p u m ; j z p o n / o w p y g ; \ c s l , i ; c u w p c u u & j y p w i c g e ; w i j j i g w v n ; q n a y : u i g ; y g w j c m ; o u r a j y m o i b ; } } [í o w x m ; u m a j y m q w w l u o n / q n a y : u i g ; o n q n a t m u o t c e r a $\frac{1}{2}$; o u q i ; E i o u o r r w t a e j z i v n ; r r w u & a e a o m v \ t j z p u o t c e r a $\frac{1}{2}$; j z p o m ; E i a l u m i ; q i j c i o w x m ; r a p a o m q $\frac{1}{2}$; p u m ; j z p y g o n /

r r w p w x & o n p u m ; t w i ; a j y m r a w m r n q v i x p u m ; a v ; j z i x e ; c l y E i a t m i y c i ; a j y m q x m ; a o m p u m ; j z p y g o n /

a y g o n y p n ; u a q m i $\frac{1}{2}$ m ; o n y p n ; u a $\frac{1}{2}$ m i

b p u m ; o n v , , m v y i e ; c i u t a j c c u m a y : a y g u v m a o m q $\frac{1}{2}$; p u m ; j z p o n /

$\frac{1}{2}$ m ; o n a u m u y o ; E a p s ; a u m i ; & o n t c g t j c m ; o r s m ; y g t w v u í p u y s l ; l u o j z i $\frac{1}{2}$ m ; o n y p n ; o n a y g r s m ; v m l y ; , c i a y g r s m ; c a o m o ; E r s m ; $\frac{1}{2}$ m ; y g ; o m ; w w i y e o n / x t a j c t a e u q i j c i a w ; q a p v a o m a l u m i b p q $\frac{1}{2}$; p u m ; u q c l u j c i ; j z p o n / x a l u m i j a y g o n y p n ; u a q m i & m ; o n y p n ; a & m i } [q $\frac{1}{2}$; j y i c j c i ; j z p o n /

r n o n t a & m i ; t 0 , j y l r r s l ; ? o a v m i x m ; r r s l ; u r q o w w & m ; E i q i j c i w i ; x m l y ; v y u i w w u a p & e o w a y ; v o n t c g b p q $\frac{1}{2}$; u t o ; j y a j y m q a v $\frac{1}{2}$ l u y g o n /

r ; u v n ; t u i ; r x m ; e c & ; u v n ; t j y i ; r o m ; e

t v y v y & m w i t o w & m ; E i q i j c i w i ; x m E i & e o w a y ; & m r a y : a y g u v m a o m p u m ; y j z p o n /

r ; u t u i ; x m ; v i r ; a v m i w w o u o c & ; a 0 ; u o m ; o n t c g w i v n ; y r e r o m ; b j y i ; j y i ; x e x e o m ; r y g u a j c u e v u y e ; u s u m v & m c & ; r a & m u E i j z p w w a o m a l u m i b p u m ; y j z i o w a y ; x m ; j c i ; j z p o n /

t j c m ; v r t a j c t a e r s l ; (y r e x u 0 & , v e o n t c g ? & e n l ; & e p r s m ; u t p o w a p v o n t c g p o n j z i) w w i b p u m ; j z i o w i y l q i j c i E i a t m i q x m ; c j c i ; j z p y g o n /

reun;cw t q;cwys

tyiw\obm0u trwtom;xm;&mr ay:ayguvmaom q^{1/2};pum;jzpon/

reun;yion cwcxi vulyqonEi tui;opxuv&e tcelumjripm
apmi&wwly; trsm;paom reun;yiwrw cwvulyqonEi wzn;jzn; tri;
&ia&mly; aoom;wwygon/ q;yirmr tyi\atmuajctx cwjzwvuvlyi
toptopaom tptanmiav;rm;on tv,wuxuvwwly; tjre!u;&ivmww
on obm0^{1/2}ygon/

x!alumi reun;yiEi q;yiwl\obm0u rwom;Eiatmi q^{1/2};jy\xm;jci;
jzpygon/

a, m u sm;rm" g; re;rrm om;

jzpvEion tE&m, u buwiumu, oialumi; jyqxm;aom q^{1/2};pum;jz
on/

awm om;a, m u sm; wpa, mutaezi tcer a^{1/2};tE&m, buawEion twu
toutE&m, uumu, & "m;uaqm ixm;oiygon/ xen;wom;or;&ly;aom
traxmion re;rwpa, mu? trs\or;wpa, mutaezi rnonae&mo om;on
jzpap om;or;u vuEiqumac:om;rom wiw, rnjzpygon/ tvjiqiwwaom
re;uav;wobm0t& om;or;rygv\i tyav;Eiwaewwly; owpyg; \ aEmu, ur
uc&wwalumi; oway;xm;aom pum;yjzpygon/

a, m u sm;jzpap? re;rjzpap tjio!xucge;wi; p q^{1/2};pum;zi oway;av&
aom pum;yjzpygon/

viu, r, m;ajcmuq, ig;

v, or;ly;cewi wpEppm twupm;a&&um (0r;pmpyg;) cexm;onyrm Pu
q^{1/2};jy\xm;aompum;jzpon/

viEir, m;Ep0;wn;twu wpEppmcexm;&rn pyg;wi;a&rm ajcmuq,
ig;wi;jzpon/ viu, r, m;q&mü om;or;Eiuserom;prsm;r&aom viEir, m; Ep0;
wn;uqvyygon/ pyg;wi;(50)rm viu, r, m;Ep0;wn;twu pm;0waea&u
ajz^{1/2}i;ay;Eiaomyrm Pjzply;? uewpq, ig;wi;rm vla&we;a&Ei r^{1/2}qi;&or sm;tm;
unay;Eia&twu t&exm;^{1/2}ci;jzpalumi; o&ygon/

wpEppm pm;a&&um uwuculy; cexm;Eilu&e q^{1/2};jy\xm;jci;jzpygon/

t x n r s m ; t , m ; a j y

a & m i & w i ; w r w w a o m p w " m w u a r ; j r l w w a t m i q q ; r & m r x u a y : v m a o m q ¹/₂ ; p u m ; j z p o n /

a p s ; ß u ; a o m t x n r s m ; u 0 , , v q i w p x n o m & r n j z p a o m v n ; o i w i a o m t 0 w t p m ; r s m ; u 0 , , 0 w q i j c i ; t m ; j z i t x n r s m ; r s m ; p m ; p m ; 0 w & E i o n t w u v v , p & m r s m ; r s m ; & l y ; p w a u s e y r & & a p a l u m i ; u p p u m ; a v ; j z i n e ; q a e j c i ; j z p y g o n / x j y i]] & w m a v ; E i v a t m i 0 w ? & w m a v ; E i 0 a t m i p m ; } } [a o m p u m ; v n ; ¹/₂ o n / a & m i & w i ; w r w w a o m p w " m w x m ; & a t m i n e j y q x m ; a o m q ¹/₂ ; p u m ; j z p y g o n /

t v i v t w E i n m ;

t r u p r s m ; u t a & ; w ß u ; a q m i & u & m r j z p a v & w w a o m o a b m w u t a j c c u m a y : a y g u v m a o m p u m ; y j z p o n /

] t v i v } o n q o n r m] t a & ; ß u ; } o n u q v y g o n /

n m ; ? ß u - a w ß u q p n ; o n / (j r e r m p m t z ? 2008 ? p m 137)

t a & ; ß u ; o n t c e w i j r e j r e q e q e a & m u c i o n a z m l y ; c i o n a z m E i j z w v r ; e n ; o ; r o j z i c & ; r a & m u r l y ; a j r m u v u o n t a e t x m ; u q ¹/₂ ; j y l x m ; a o m p u m ; j z p y g o n /

t a & ; ß u ; u p r s m ; u a q m i ¹/₂ u o n t c g o w x m ; E i a t m i q q ; r a v & a o m p u m ; y j z p o n /

3 / p j r e r m p u m ; E i t e u w t a c : u a o m p u m ; y q ¹/₂ ; p u m ; r s m ;

¹/₂ r ; e v r s l ; w o n v n ; ' p j r e r m p u m ; u t r s m ; q ; a j y m q l u o n t w u j r e r m p u m ; E i t o ; w a o m p u m ; r s m ; v n ; ¹/₂ y g o n / o m " u -

p (j r e r m p u m ;) - r b p u m ; e m ; r a x m i o m ; w p a u m i E i w ; v w v

¹/₂ r ; e - r b p u m ; e m ; r a x m i o m ; w p a u m i E i w a v m i ; a v m i ;

p (j r e r m p u m ;) - e m ; w p x i ? o m ; w p x i

¹/₂ r ; e - x i v l i c P o m ; v l i w p w i

p (j r e r m p u m ;) - i g ; y w y y y y i ¹/₂ w p y p y

¹/₂ r ; e - i g ; & y y y y i ¹/₂ w p y p y

p(jrerpum;)-yZetau; ig; taE;
 ½r;e -iyrmaE;ap ig;rmau;ap

p(jrerpum;)-lcr;ve;onr;r½m
 ½r;e -r;lcr;r;r½m r; tmcg;um(r;au sm om;jci;)
 ponziaw&ygon/ to;waompum;rsm;pm ½Eiygao;on/ ppmwr;wi ten;i,
 om azmijxm;ygon/

lcio;oycu

ucijyne, twi;½ ½r;evr;w\pum;yEi q½;pum;wu avvwmijxm;
 jci;jzpygon/ ½r;ew\pum;yEiq½;pum;wu avvmlunontcg aEmi;vw
 twu rwom;z, &m rsm;pm yg0iaompum;rsm; tjzp avvmau&&ygon/

]vtrz&iaeyw,? aetrz&i r;&mr,}[í &mo0w tajctaeu rwom;
 av&aom tp0tvrmrsm;on rwom;oivon trwtom;wpcjzpon/]a, mu sm;rm
 0gq? re;rrmijmo}uolaom, llunru tajccxm;aom t, tq rsm; onvn; w;wu
 vmaom acwtaetxm;t& vi,wi;uta&;, um vuemren;yg;vmaomvn;
 wc&u, ctctetx vuemuisuaeq q½;pum;rsm; vn;jzpluon/]azsmuqyre;v
 Er;βu;βu}[aompum;jzi o;Epuys;ceu rwom;xm; wwaom"av? tpm;pm;Ei
 ouo tvyvn; vyEiatni yci;ajmqxm;aom]tvyq&iusm;valumuw,
 tpm;q&ivn;Eiwuc} [aompum;jzi tvytay: tav;teuxm;apvaom oabm
 xm;? u, ci;pmw&m; xm;&&etwu oway;av½aom]qnay:uig;}[aom yci;pum;
 ponzi rwom;z, &m rsm;u q½;jyyci;ajmq||uaom ½r;ew\pum;yq½;pum;rsm;rm
 pw0ipm;z, aumi;vygon/ tzuzuaom vrb0½xm;iaygi;pr ay:xuvmlly; vrb0
 xmyi to;wn vuemcivmatni ajmqo;Ee;xm;Eiaom pum;rsm; tjzp avvmau
 aw½&ygon/

½r;evr;wlon pjrerpum;u trsm;q;to;jy|ajmqaoom vrsk;rsm;jzpon
 twu pjrerpum;Ei teuwtac:uaom pum;rsm;u vn; a'o, pum; tjzpavvm
 o&&ygon/

pum;yq½;pum;wu avvmon t cg &r;evr;w\ "avx;pEic, cu? Oabm
 xm;rsm;? u;io;vuemvu&aom q;rpum;rsm;? , llunrrsm;u pw0ipm;z, aw&yg
 on/ pum;yEiq½;pum;u avvmyjpor;sm;twu tu sk;au;Z; jzpxe;vrrn [ar
 m v irygon/

e*;

**ppmwr;wi½r;evr;pw t o;jyajymqaeluaom pum;yEiq½;pum;rsm;u
 avvmwijxm;yg on/ b pum;rsm;rw pqi ½r;evr;w \ t , t q rsm;c , cu?
 oabmxm; , lunrrsm;u awjriEivrrn [xijri , qrygon/ ½r;evr;w \
 pmay? bompum;? "avx;p ponwuvn; quvuy; oawoejyEi&e B uK;pm;ygO;
 rn/ ppmwr;yg tcutvur;wi r½i;vi;rrsm; t m;en;cur;½cv|i ppmwr;½i \
 wm0eomjzpygon/**

ur;u;pm&i;

**lun0;l(2004)l pum;yt vi;jyur;uaum0w&npmay?&eue/
 ciat;?a'guwm?EiatmijriO;?a'guwm/ (2010?'w , t ur)l oawoetajccoawoeyp/ &eue
 wuov? jrerm pXme/
 pi;xevi;0;l(1992)l1993cEp tr;om;nvmcolwioi;on/ ppmwr;lAe;arn/
 jrerm pmt zI(2016? t |rt ur)l/jrerpum;y/jrerm pmi bompum;ynma&O;p;Xme/
 jrerm pmt zI(2011-ww , t ur)l/jerm q½;pum;jrerm pmt zO;p;Xme?aejynawm/
 jrerm pmt zI(2008-'w , t ur)l/jerm t b"me&eue?aevi;yEywu/
 atmijriO;?a'guwm/(2003)l vrbmomaA 'rwqul&eue?ynmw eqm iyEywu/
 atmioe;?0;l(2018)l jrerpum;yEiq½;rsm; jzpxe;w;y;y qe;ppc:u?
 wuov/vynmya'om pmapmi/ pmayaqmi;yg;rsm;(1966-1984)
 wuovbm omjyeEi pm tyxwa0a&Xme?&eue/**

tiwmeu t u; t um;

The voice of Shan-Ni **wi;vi&r;et oowi;*me , l (2018) /&r;er;ajymw&r;e
 vr;rm; talumi;/** September, 2, 2018, Facebook.

awqar;jre;or;m;

a':oe;ci	76Ep	yi vau;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
a':ci0i;	67Ep	yi vau;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
0;vai	57Ep	yi vau;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
0;uabm	55Ep	yi vau;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
a':jriu n	55Ep	yi vau;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
0;xe;a&	75Ep	ou0g;ue;au;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
0;br	67Ep	ou0g;ue;au;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
a':rr	65Ep	yi;u si;au;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /
a':jrar	60Ep	t ilui;ue;au;s;&m? r;aumi;lrlle , /